

















THE  
HISTORY  
OF THE  
REFORMATION  
OF THE  
Church of England.

---

The Third Part.

---

BEING A  
SUPPLEMENT  
TO THE  
Two Volumes formerly published.

---

By the Right Reverend Father in God,  
GILBERT Lord Bishop of SARUM.

---

L O N D O N :

Printed for A. MILLAR, at *Buchanan's Head*, over-  
against *Catharine-street* in the *Strand*.

---

M DCC LIII.



THE  
HISTORY  
OF THE  
REFORMATION  
OF THE  
Church of England.

The Third Part.

BEING A  
SUPPLEMENT  
TO THE  
Two Volumes formerly published.

By the Right Reverend Father in God,  
GILBERT Lord Bishop of SARUM.

L O N D O N :  
Printed for A. MILLAR, at Bucklers' Head, over-  
against Catherine-Street in the Strand.

MDCCLIII.



DEDICATION

TO THE

K I N G.

S I R,



HIS Work, which is designed to Finish the History of Our *Reformation*, seems reserved to be laid at Your M A J E S T Y ' s Feet ; who, we trust, is designed by God, to Compleat the *Reformation* it self.

To Rectify what may be yet amiss, and to Supply what is defective among us ; to Oblige us to Live, and to Labour, more suitably to our Profession ; to Unite us more firmly among ourselves ; to Bury, and for ever to Extinguish, the Fears of our Relapsing again into *Popery* ; and to Establish a Confidence and Correspondence, with the *Protestant* and *Reformed Churches* Abroad.



---

## DEDICATION.

---

The Eminent Moderation of the most *Serene House* from which Your MAJESTY is descended, gives us Auspicious Hopes, that as God has now raised Your MAJESTY, with Signal Characters of an amazing Providence, to be the Head and the Chief Strength of the *Reformation*; so Your MAJESTY will, by a Wise and Noble Conduct, form all these Churches into One Body: so that tho' they cannot agree to the same Opinions and *Rituals* with us in all Points, yet they may join in One Happy Confederacy, for the Support of the Whole, and for every Particular Branch of that Sacred Union.

May this be the Peculiar Glory of Your MAJESTY's Reign; and may all the Blessings of Heaven and Earth rest upon your Most August PERSON, and upon all Your Royal Posterity.

This is the Daily Prayer of him, who is  
with the Profoundest Respect,

S I R,

Your MAJESTY'S

*Most Loyal, most Obedient,*

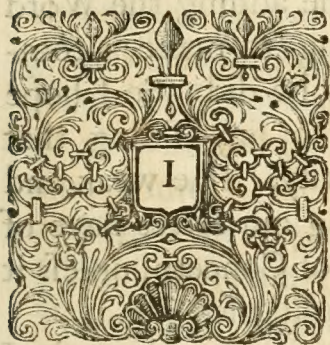
*and most Devoted*

*Subject and Servant,*

G I. S A R U M.



# THE PREFACE.



H A D in my Introduction to this Volume, which I publish'd a Year ago, said all that then occurred to me in the way of Preface : But some Particulars coming to my Knowledge since that Time, give me an Occasion to add a little to what was then copiously deduced.

I begin with Mr. *Le Grand*, who I understand is now in a considerable Post in the Court of *France*. He being lately at *Geneva*, explained himself to my Friends in these Terms, *That he was Young when he wrote against me ; and that the Heat of Youth had carried him to some Expressions, from which he would abstain, if he were to write now : He was glad to hear that I was upon the Reviewing the History of the Reformation ; and named to them a Life that he had seen in Spain, of Bartholomew Caranza, Archbishop of Toledo, who was King Philip's Confessor, and went with him to England, and was particularly employed in Reforming (as they called it) the Universities. And, as he said, he died when he was to be delivered out of the Prison of the Inquisition. He added, that he had also seen a Collection of Cardinal Pole's Letters, with an Account of what passed in England after the Death of King Edward, which he believed I had not seen, and that could inform me of many Particulars ; but that he himself had other Employments than to think of the Affairs of England. If I had received this Civil Message from Mr. Le Grand before I had published my Introduction, I would have said nothing at all with relation to him : But what is passed cannot be recalled : So I hope he will accept of this for all the Reparation I can now make him.*

As for *Anthony Harmer*, some have doubted if he could be capable of making Three Capital Errors in one Line :



And since Mr. *Strype* has suggested to me that, in which I was under some Reserve before, as having it from another Hand, I am now free to set it down. For *Capitulum Ecclesiæ Cathedralis*, he has printed, *Epistolam Conventus Ecclesiæ Catholicæ*. If the Abbreviations may seem to excuse the Reading *Epistolam* for *Capitulum*, and *Catholicæ* for *Cathedralis*, nothing can excuse the adding the Word *Conventus*, which he thought wanting to make a compleat Title; having read the others as he did: So I hope I have Reason to have no Regard to any Thing that comes from him upon his bare Authority. The weak and ill-natured Attempts that some among our selves have of late made upon me, give me no sort of Concern, unless it is to pray for those who have despitefully used me.

There was also a great Poem lately prepared, and, I suppose, designed to be published, when that which our Enemies hoped was near accomplished, should have been effected: It was written in imitation of *Hudibras*, and so was a Mock-Poem on the Reformation, composed by one *Thomas Ward*, of whom I can give no other Account, but that it is said he is a Priest. In it, *Sanders's* Work was made the Plot of the Fable: It was full of impious Abuse, put in a Strain apt enough to take with those who were disposed to divert themselves with a Shew of Wit and Humour, dressed up to make the Reformation appear both Odious and Ridiculous; not doubting of equal Success with *Butler's* admired Performance. It was no wonder, if upon such a Design, my History was treated with all the Characters of Scorn and Contempt. This was what I might justly expect from those of that Side: But I was sorry to find so much Censure from those from whom I had no Reason to expect it; and which seemed to be the Effect only of Envy and Ill-Nature: God forgive them for it.

I must say a little more, with Relation to a Learned, and Copious Writer of our *Ecclesiastical History*, who finds my History often in his way: He treats me decently as to his Expressions, but designs all through to set such Remarks on my Work, as if they were well grounded, must destroy the Credit that it has hitherto obtained.

I will



I will First give some Instances to shew what the Spirit, the Principles, and the Design of that Writer must be : I will name but Four out of a great many.

When he sets forth King *Henry* the VIII's Proceedings against the Memory of *Thomas Becket*, he has these Words, *And though his Conduct in this Dispute was not altogether defensible, he was far however, from being guilty of that gross Mismanagement with which he is charged.* I will leave the Judgment that must be passed upon this Period, to all who are in any sort acquainted with the History of that Time. P. 150.  
II. Vol.  
I. Col.

When he gives the Character of King *Edward* the VIth immediately before he tells of his Death it is in these Words, *His Conscience was not always under a serviceable Direction,* (the Meaning of this dark Expression I do not reach :) *He was tinctured with Eraſtian Principles, and under wrong Preposſeſſions as to Church Government : He ſeems to have had no Notion of Sacrilege : — And which is ſomewhat remarkable, moſt of the Hardſhips were put upon Eccleſiaſticks, in the latter End of his Reign, when his Judgment was in the beſt Condition :* And without adding one Word of his Good Qualities, or to correct thoſe ſevere Reflections, he concludes with the Account of his Death. P. 332.  
II. Col.

He gives a very different Account of the Death of *Mary* Queen of Scots, in theſe Words, *Her Fortitude and Devotion were very remarkable. She ſupported her Character with all imaginable Decency : She died like a Chriſtian, and like a Queen.* P. 601.  
II. Col.

And to mention no more, when he comes to *Queen Elizabeth's* Death and Character, he runs a Parallel between the Two Siſters *Mary* and *Elizabeth*, in theſe Words, *The one made Martyrs, the other made Beggars : The one executed the Men, and the other the Eſtates : And therefore, reſerving the Honour of the Reformation to Queen Elizabeth, the Queſtion will be, Whether the Reſuming the Firſt Fruits and Tenths, putting many Vicarages in a deplorable Condition, and ſettling a Perpetuity of Poverty on the Church, was not much more prejudicial than Fire and Faggot ? Whether deſtroying Biſhopricks, was not a much greater Hardſhip than the deſtroying Biſhops ? Be-  
cauſe* P. 671.  
II. Col.



*cause this Severity affects Succession, and reaches down to future Ages : And lastly, whether as the World goes, it is not more easy to recruit Bishops, than the Revenues to support them ? These Words give such an Indication of the Notion that the Author has of the Happiness, or Misery of a Church, that they want no Commentary.*

II. Vol.

*Hist. of the  
Refer.*

P. II. Book

I. P. 149.

I will add this one Remark of a Fact upon a Passage that I had writ concerning the Book of Ordination, publish'd in the 3d Year of King Edward, which was in these Words, *Another Difference between the Ordination Book set out at that Time, and that we now use, was, that the Bishop was to lay his one Hand on the Priest's Head ; and with his other to give him a Bible, with a Chalice and Bread in it, saying the Words that are now said at the Delivery of the Bible. In the Consecration of a Bishop, there is nothing more than what is yet in use, save that a Staff was put into his Hand with this Blessing, Be to the Flock of Christ a Shepherd. Upon this, his Remark is in these Words, But here, as it happens, this Learned Person has been led into a Mistake : For the Two First Editions of the Ordinal made in King Edward's Reign, have none of the different Rites mentioned by this Gentleman. I was indeed surprized when I read this, and went to look into the First Edition of that Ordinal, which I knew was in the Lambeth Library; for by Archbp. Sancroft's Order, I had the free Use of every Thing that lay there. There I went to examine it, and I found indeed a small Variation from my History ; the Whole is in these Words : In the Ordination of a Priest, after the Imposition of Hands, with the Words still used, follows this Rubrick : *Then the Bishop shall deliver to every one of them the Bible in the one Hand, and the Chalice, or Cup, with the Bread in the other Hand, and say, Take thou Authority, &c. In the Consecration of a Bishop, this Rubrick is, The Elected Bishop having upon him a Surplice, and a Cope, shall be presented by Two Bishops, being also in Surplices and Copes, having their Pastoral Staves in their Hands. And after the Form of the Consecration, this Rubrick follows, Then shall the Archbishop lay the Bible upon his Neck, saying, Give heed to reading. The next Rubrick is, Then shall the Archbishop put into his Hand the Pastoral Staff, saying, Be to the**

*Flock*

P. 290.

II. Ccl.



*Flock of Christ a Shepherd* ; on to the End of the Charge now given all together, but then divided in Two. This Book was printed by *Richard Grafton*, the King's Printer, in *March* 1549 ; or by the *Roman Account*, 1550. I have given this full Account of that Matter in my own Justification : I am sorry that I cannot return this Learned Person his Compliment to my self, *That he was led into a Mistake*.

The next, and indeed the last Particular that out of many more I will mention, is the setting down the Explanation that was made upon the Order for Kneeling at the Sacrament in King *Edward's* Time, wrong in a very material Word : For in that, the Words were, *That there was not in the Sacrament any Real, or Essential Presence of Christ's Natural Flesh and Blood* ; but he instead of that puts, *Corporal Presence*. It seems in this he only looked at the Rubrick, as it is now at the End of the Communion Service, upon a Conceit that it stands now as it was in King *Edward's* Book ; though it was at that Time changed ; and we know who was the Author of that Change, and who pretended that a *Corporal Presence* signified such a Presence as a Body naturally has, which the Assertors of Transubstantiation it self do not, and cannot pretend is in this Case : Where they say the Body is not present Corporally, but Spiritually, or as a Spirit is present. And he who had the Chief Hand in procuring this Alteration, had a very extraordinary Subtilty, by which he reconciled the Opinion of a Real Presence in the Sacrament with the last Words of the Rubrick, *That the Natural Body and Blood of Christ were in Heaven, and not here ; it being against the Truth of Christ's Natural Body, to be at one Time in more Places than One*. It was thus ; a Body is in a Place, if there is no intermediate Body but a *Vacuum* between it and the Place : And he thought that by the Vertue of the Words of Consecration, there was a *Cylinder* of a *Vacuum* made between the Elements and Christ's Body in Heaven : So that no Body being between, it was both in Heaven and in the Elements. Such a solemn Piece of Folly as this, can hardly be read without Indignation. But if our Author favours this Conceit,

P. 310.  
II. Col.



yet when he sets down that which was done in King *Edward's* Reign, he ought not to have changed the Word, especially such an important one. I shall say no more of that Work, but that there appeared to me quite thro' the II<sup>d</sup> Volume, such a constant Inclination to favour the Popish Doctrine, and to censure the Reformers, that I should have had a better Opinion of the Author's Integrity, if he had professed himself not to be of our Communion, nor of the Communion of any other Protestant Church.

But as I thought my self bound to give this Warning to such as may have heard of that Work, or that have seen it ; so there is another History lately written in *French*, and which, I hope, is soon to appear in our own Language, which I cannot recommend more than it deserves. It is Mr. *L'Enfant's* History of the Council of *Constance* ; in which that Excellent Person has with great Care, and a Sincerity liable to no Exception, given the World in the History of that Council, so true a View of the State of the Church, and of Religion, in the Age before the Reformation, that I know no Book so proper to prepare a Man for Reading the History of the Reformation, as the attentive Reading of that Noble Work : He was indeed well furnish'd with a Collection of Excellent Materials, gathered with great Fidelity and Industry by the Learned Doctor *Vander Hordt*, Professor of Divinity in the University of *Helmstadt* ; and procured for him by the Noble Zeal, and Princely Bounty of that most Serene and Pious Prince *Rodolph August*, the late Duke of *Brunswick Wolfenbuttle*, who set himself with great Care, and at a vast Charge, to procure from all Places the Copies of all Papers and Manuscripts that could be found, to give Light to the Proceedings of that Great Assembly. The Collection amounted to Six Volumes in *Folio*. From these Authentick Vouchers, the History of that Council is now happily compiled. And if that Learned Author can find Materials, to give us as full, and as clear a History of the Council of *Basil*, as he has given of that of *Constance*, I know no greater Service can be done the World : For by it, Popery will appear in its  
True



True and Native Colours, free from those palliating Disguises which the Progress of the Reformation, and the Light which by that has been given the World, has forced upon those of that Communion. We have the celebrated History of the Council of *Trent*, first published here at *London*, written with a true Sublimity of Judgment, and an Unbyassed Sincerity ; which has received a great Confirmation, even from Cardinal *Palavicini*'s Attempt to destroy its Credit ; and a much greater of late from that Curious Discovery of *Vargas*'s Letters. But how well, and how justly soever the History that *P. Paulo* gave the World of that Council is esteemed, I am not afraid to compare the late History of the Council of *Constance*, even to that admired Work ; so far at least as that if it will not be allowed to be quite equal to it, yet it may be well reckoned among the best of all that have Written after that Noble Pattern, which the Famous *Venetian* Fryar has given to all the Writers of Ecclesiastical History.

Since I published my Introduction, I fell on many Papers concerning the Reformation in *Scotland*, which had escaped the Diligence of that Grave and Judicious Writer Archbishop *Spotswood*, of which I have given a full Account, and have used the best Endeavours I could to be furnished with all the other Materials that I could hear of : It is true, I never searched into a lately gathered Famous Library in this Place, but yet I had from some, on whose good Judgment and great Care I might well depend, who had carefully looked through it, every Thing that they found material to my Purpose.

No Curiosity pleased me more than that Noble Record of the Legate's Proceedings in the Matter of King *Henry*'s Divorce ; of which I had the free Use, as of every Thing else that was in the Library of my Learned, and Dear Brother, the late Bishop of *Ely* ; in whose Death the Church, and all his Friends, and none more than my self, have had an Invaluable Loss. I read that Record very carefully twice or thrice over, and gave a full Abstract of it, but did not then reflect on what has occurred to me since : For though upon the Credit of so Noble a  
Record,



Record, I have said that the King and Queen were never together in Court, yet I find the contrary is affirmed by that King himself, in a Letter bearing Date the 23d of *June*, to his Ambassadors at *Rome*, in these Words, *Both We and the Queen appeared in Person* : And he sets forth the Assurances the Cardinals gave of their proceeding without Favour, or Partiality, *yet she departed out of Court, though thrice called to appear, and was denounced Contumacious*. The only reconciling of this apparent Contradiction seems to be this, that they were indeed together in the Hall where the Court sate ; but that it was before the Cardinals sate down, and had formed the Court : For as it is not to be imagined that in the Record so material a Step could have been omitted, so highly to the Honour of the Court ; so it is not likely that the Queen after her Appeal, would have owned the Court, or have appeared before those Judges ; therefore the most probable Account of that particular is this, That the King intending to appear in the Court, the Queen went thither after him, and made that Speech to him in the open Hall that I mentioned in my former Work : But all this was over, and they were both gone before the Court was opened, or that the Cardinals had taken their Places ; so that their Appearance could be no Part of the Record of the Court.

I am now to give an Account of some Papers that I add as an Appendix, for they relate to the former Volumes. The First of these was sent me by one Mr. *Thomas Granger*, of whom I can give no other Account, but that I understood he was a Clergyman. He dated his Letter from *Lammerton* near *Tavistoke* in *Devon*. the 7th of *February*, 168<sup>3</sup><sub>4</sub>. I wrote him such a Civil Answer, as so kind a Censure deserved : And I promised that I would make my Acknowledgments more publickly to him whensoever I review'd that Work. Upon my settling at *Salisbury*, I enquired after him, but I was told he was Dead : So I lost the Occasion of returning my Thanks to him in a more particular Manner, which I now express thus publickly.

I had



I had another Letter writ in another Strain, full of Expostulation, from *Anthony* (who affected to write himself) *a Wood*. He thought it incumbent on him to justify himself, since I had reflected on him : So he gave this Vent to it. I wrote short Remarks on it ; one of these I find is in the Bishop of *Worcester's* Hand ; they were sent to Bishop *Fell* to be communicated to him, but whether they were or not, I cannot tell. The Thing has escaped my Memory, but the Paper still remains with me ; and therefore I have thought it a Justice to Mr. *Wood's* Memory, and to his Writings, to insert it here.

The Third Paper was drawn by me at *Paris*, in the Year 1685. My History being then translated into *French* was much read ; and as to the main Conduct of our Reformation, it was approved by some Men of Great Name. At that Time there was an Imbroilment between the Court of *Rome* and that of *Versailles* : And the Propositions that passed in the Year 1682, seemed to threaten a greater Rupture to follow. Upon that, the Scheme of the *English* Reformation was a Subject of Common Discourse : And that was so much magnified by those who were called the *Converters*, that the Hope of a Reformation in *France*, was one of the Artifices that prevailed on some, who knew not the *Depths of Satan*, and were easily wrought on to make their Court by changing their Religion, in hope, that a great Reformation of Abuses among them was then projected : But one of the Learnedest Men that ever I knew of that Communion, said then to myself, that all that was only done to fright Pope *Innocent* the XIth, who was then in the Interests of the House of *Austria*, but that whensoever they should have a Pope in the Interests of *France*, their Court would not only declare him Infallible in Points of Doctrine, but even in Matters of Fact : And he added, that it was an Abuse that People put upon themselves, to imagine that with what Pomp or Zeal soever the Court seemed to support those Articles passed in the Assembly of the Clergy, that this could have any other Effect but to bring the Court of *Rome* into their Interests. He said this had been Cardinal *Mazarine's* Practice during his whole Ministry. When he could not



carry Matters to his Mind at *Rome*, he shewed such Favour to the *Jansenists*, as let many of them into great Dignities ; but when he had brought that Court to what he designed, he presently changed his Conduct towards them.

A Person of Distinction at *Paris*, finding my History so much liked, wrote a Censure upon it. This run through many Hands, but was never printed. It fell into Mr. *Auzout's* Hands, and from him I had it. I wrote an Answer to it, and got it to be translated into *French* : It was favourably received by many in *Paris*. I do not find the Copy of that Censure among my Papers : But I have still the Copy of my Remarks on it, from which the Substance of that Censure may be gathered : So I have thought fit to add this to my Appendix.

The 4th Paper is a large Collection of many Mistakes, (descending even to Literal ones) in both the Volumes of my History, and in the Records published in them, which a Learned and Worthy Person has read with more Exactness than either my Amanuensis, or my self had done. I publish these Sheets, as that unknown Person sent them to me, whom I never saw, as far as I remember ; and who will not suffer me to give any other Account of him, but that he Lives in one of the Universities. His Copy of my Work being of the 2d Edition, only some very few of the Errors marked that had crept into the 2d, but that were not in the 1st Edition, are struck out. In several Particulars I do not perfectly agree with these Corrections ; but I set them down as they were sent to me, without any Remarks on them ; and I give my hearty Thanks in the fullest Manner I can, to him who was first at the Pains to make this Collection, and then had the Goodness to communicate it to me, in so obliging a Manner : For he gave me a much greater Power over these Papers than I have thought fit to assume.

The next Paper is a much shorter one. It is indeed the Abstract of a larger Paper, but I have taken out of it only that which relates to my History : And have not meddled with some Remarks made on *Harmer's* Specimen, and many more made on the *Rights of an English Convocation*.



cation. These did not belong to my Subject, so I have not copied them out. The Writer has not let me know his Name ; he sent the Sheets to me in an unsubscribed Letter, to which I wrote an Answer by the Conveyance that he marked out to me, but I have heard no more of him.

The 6th and last Paper was sent me by the Sincere and Diligent Mr. *Strype*, who has descended to such a full and minute Correction, both of my History, and of my Copies of the Records, that I confess it gave me great Satisfaction : Many of his Corrections may seem so inconsiderable, that it may be suggested that they were not worth the while. But my whole Concern in Writing, being to deliver the Transactions of a former Age, faithfully down to Posterity, nothing could please me more than to have every Error I have fallen into discovered : And it was no small Satisfaction to me, to find that a Writer who has been now above 30 Years examining all that passed in that Age, and has made great Discoveries of many Secrets hitherto not known ; and who was so kind as to pass over nothing how small and inconsiderable soever it may appear to be, that was liable to Correction ; yet did not touch upon any one Thing that is of any Moment in my whole Work. This I look on as a very Authentick Confirmation of it all, except in the Places thus censured by one who has searched into all the Transactions of that Time with so much Application and Success.

This Work was composed above a Year ago ; and after it was read and corrected by some proper Judges, it was put in the Press, and was printed off to the End of King *Edward's* Reign, before the 1st of *August* last : Nor has any Thing been added to it since that Time, except some very few Particulars in the last Book relating to *Scotland*.

I cannot conclude this Preface, and so dismiss this Work out of my Hands, without some Reflections on what has appeared among us of late, but too evidently, in a Course of some Years. Many who profess great Zeal for the Legal Establishment, yet seem to be set on  
forming



forming a New Scheme, both of Religion, and Government : And are taking the very same Methods, only a little diversified, that have been pursued in Popery, to bring the World into a blind Dependence upon the Clergy, and to draw the Wealth and Strength of the Nation into their Hands.

The Opinion of the Sacrament's being an Expiatory Sacrifice ; and of the Necessity of Secret Confession and Absolution ; and of the Church's Authority acting in an Independence on the Civil Powers, were the Foundations of Popery, and the Seminal Principles, out of which that Mass of Corruptions was formed. They have no Colour for them in the New Testament, nor in the First Ages of Christianity ; and are directly contrary to all the Principles on which the Reformation was carried on ; and to every Step that was made in the Whole Progress of that Work : And yet these of late have been Notions much favoured, and written for with much Zeal, not to say Indecency : Besides a vast Number of little Superstitious Practices, that in some Places have grown to a great height, so that we were insensibly going off from the Reformation, and framing a New Model of a Church, totally different from all our former Principles, as well as from our present Establishment : To all which they have added that singular and extravagant Conceit, of the Invalidity of Baptism, unless ministered by One Episcopally Ordained ; though this not only cuts off all Communion with the Foreign Protestant Churches ; of which, perhaps, they make no great Account, but makes Doubtings to arise with relation to great Numbers, both among ourselves, and in the *Roman* Communion.

This I lament ; not that I think that there is such a Sacredness in any Human Constitution, that it is never to be called in question, or altered : For if we had the same Reasons to alter any Thing established at the Reformation, that our Fathers had to alter the former Establishment in the Times of Popery, I should acknowledge we had now as good Grounds to change the present, as our Ancestors had then to change the former Constitution. The Scriptures are the only sure Foundation of  
our



our Faith that is unalterable : All other Constitutions being always to be governed by that perfect Declaration of God's Holy Will with relation to Mankind. But it gives a just Indignation, to see the same Men make wide Steps to great Alterations on the one Hand, and yet make heavy Complaints where there is no just occasion given, and that about Points of meer Speculation ; whereas the other relate to Matters of Practice, which had been in former Ages so managed, that the whole Complex of the Christian Religion was totally depraved by them.

We have also Rules and Rubricks for Worship that are our Standards, fixed by Law : And yet we see a Humour of Innovation making a great Progress in these, without the least Complaint, by the same Persons who are apt to make Tragical Out-cries on the smallest Transgressions on the other Hand.

Both are very culpable : But of the Two, we find the Growth of Superstition has been so spreading, as well as so specious, that the Extrems of that Hand may be justly reckoned the more Dangerous : One of the worst Effects of Superstition being that with which our Saviour charged the *Pharisees* of his Time, that while they were exact in *Tything* Mint, Anise, and Cummin, *they omitted the weightier Matters of the Law, Judgment, Mercy, and Faith* : In opposition to which, he gives a standing Rule applicable to all such Cases, *These Things ye ought to have done, and not to leave the other undone*. This relates to Practices of a lower Order, but such as are commanded ; whereas voluntary and assumed ones, like the Washings among the *Jews* in our Saviour's Time, eat out the Sense of the great Duties of Religion ; instead of which, some trifling Performances are set up, and are highly magnified, while the others are spoken of more coldly : Nor does any Thing feed a Censorious and Uncharitable Temper more than these voluntary and distinguishing Practices, which as they are the Badges of different Parties, so they are Engines to keep up that Wrath, Emulation, and Hatred, that has made such Havock among us, of the Great and Indispensible Duties of *Peace, Brotherly-Kindness, and Charity*.



These have been but too visibly the Arts of Satan to divide and distract us ; and have oftner than once brought us near the Brink of Ruin. God has often rescued us, while the Continuance and Progress of these Evil Dispositions have as often made us Relapse into a broken and disjointed State. Oh that we may at last *see the Things that belong to our Peace, and follow after those Things that make for Peace, and the Things wherewith we may Edify one another.* In this Prayer I will continue as long as I Live, and I hope to End my Days with it. We must ask it of God, and of him only : It is in vain to ask it of some Men, who when we *speak to them of Peace, make them ready to Battle* ; we must look for it only to him who said, *Peace I leave with you, my Peace I give unto you ; not as the World giveth give I unto you.* The World will only give it to those of their own Knot and Party. But *the Wisdom that is from above, is first Pure, then Peaceable, Gentle, and easy to be intreated ; full of Mercy and good Fruits, without Partiality, and without Hypocrisy : And the Fruits of Righteousness are sown in Peace, of them that make Peace.*





# THE INTRODUCTION.

**I** Come, after a long Interval of Three and Thirty Years, to give all the Finishing to the History of Our REFORMATION, that I have been able to Collect, either from New Discoveries that have come in my own way, or the Kind Advertisements of Friends, and the Severe Animadversions of Criticks; of which I have endeavour'd to make the best Use that I could. It has been objected to me, That I wrote in Haste, and did not reflect enough on the Matters I wrote about. That may be very true; and I will give an Account how it happen'd to be so. When Sanders's History was published in France, it had so ill an Effect there, that some of our best Divines were often called on, to hasten such an Answer to it, as might stop the Course of so Virulent a Book. Those, to whom these Advices were sent, thought me a proper Person to be engaged in it.

The Ancient, the Learned, and the Pious Bishop of Worcester, is the only Person now alive, that was concerned in the Choice: And he having read all the Printed Books that he could hear of, relating to those Times, had taken the Dates of every Remarkable Thing that pass'd, out of them; which he caus'd to be Copied out for me. They are about Eight Sheets of Paper. Upon this Stock I set out, and search'd all the Publick Offices about the Town, with a Labour and Diligence, that was then looked on as no contemptible Performance. I mark'd every Thing as exactly as I could. I might, in such a Variety, make some Mistakes; for which, Men of Candor will make just Allowances. But when I had gone thro' all that lay thus open to me, I knew what Treasures were still in the Cotton-Library,

The present Bishop of Worcester carried me to Sir John Cotton, to ask Admittance: But a great Prelate had been beforehand with us; and had possess'd him with such Prejudices against me, as being no Friend to the Prerogative of the Crown, nor to the Constitution of our Church, that he said, (as he was prepared) That unless the Archbishop of Canterbury, and a Secretary of State would Recommend me, as a Person fit to have Access to his Library, he desir'd to be excus'd. And tho' that Worthly Prelate said, He would be answerable for the Use that I should make of it; yet he could not be prevail'd on, to depart from the Answer he had made us. Nor could that Reverend Person prevail with Archbishop Sancroft, to interpose. And tho' I offer'd to deliver up all the Collections I had made, to any Person that would undertake the Work, yet no Regard was had to that: So I saw it was resolv'd on, either not to let the Work go on; or at least, that I should not have the Honour to be employ'd in it.

With



*With this we were at a full Stop, when accidentally meeting with Sir John Martham the Younger, I told him how I was deny'd Access to the Cotton Library; but he told me he was by Marriage a Nephew to the Family, and that for many Years he had free Access to it, and he might carry with him whom he pleas'd: So I, with a Copier, went thither under his Protection; and we were hard at Work from Morning to Night for Ten Days; but then the Owner, with his Family, coming to Town, I could go no further. In that Time, and in the Haste we were in, I did make such a Progress, that the good Bishop, together with the late Archbishop of Canterbury, Tillotson, and the late Bishop of Worcester, Stillingfleet, thought I was sufficiently furnish'd with Materials for composing the First Volume. Every Part of it, as I wrote it, pass'd through their Hands, and under their Censure, and I submitted to their Judgment in every particular.*

*I have been told, One that was much practis'd in that Library, who is now Dead, has censured me for not comparing what my Copier wrote, carefully with the Originals: To this, all I can say is, that, as my Copier by much Practice was become pretty exact; so I made him read all over to me, having the Originals in my Hands. I cannot say in such dull, though necessary Work, as the Collating those Things, I carried along with me all the Attention that was requisite; but I did it as well as I could. And when I was lately in the Cotton Library, I read over several of the Originals, but found no Material Differences from the Copies I had printed. One indeed runs through all those in the English Language, which might perhaps offend a severe Critick, that the Old Spelling is not every where exactly copied. I did recommend it to my Copier, and he observed it often; but he said when he wrote quick, it was impossible for him to carry an antiquated Spelling along with his Pen.*

*The First Volume lay a Year after I wrote it, before it was put in the Press, and was offer'd to be read and corrected by all who were willing to give themselves that Trouble. When it was brought to Secretary Coventry for his Licence, he was pleas'd to say that he dipped into it out of Curiosity, but added, that he found such an Entertainment in it, that he could not part with it 'till he had read it quite through. The Earl of Nottingham, Lord Chancellor, took Time to read and examine it, and to add many Remarks in several Parts of it, in all which I submitted to his Censure: And some smaller Matters coming in my way, they were added; so when those under whose Direction I made every Step in it, advis'd me to put it in the Press, I went on with it.*

*It happened to come out a few Months after the Discovery of the Popish-Plot; and the Ferment of that working powerfully over all the Nation, the Work was favourably received; and as I had the Thanks of both Houses of Parliament for it, with a Desire to finish what I had begun, so those who were the most Zealous against Popery, press'd me to make all possible haste with the IId Volume, when they understood that I had made considerable Discoveries, with Relation to Queen Mary's Reign. By that Time Sir John Cotton seeing the good Use I had made of his Library, was pleas'd to acknowledge the Injustice of the Suggestions that had been made to my Prejudice, and allow'd me*



*free Liberty to examine every Thing in it : In which I ought to have been more exact than I was, in searching into the Matters set forth in my First Volume ; but the repeated Importunities of my Friends, for my Publishing the Second Volume, so far prevail'd, that I only examin'd what belonged to that Period. I took indeed some Papers relating to the former Reign, that accidentally fell in my way, and insert-ed them. I had also other Materials, brought me from several Hands ; upon the Publick Notice that I gave of my Design in the First Vo-lume.*

*That Primitive Bishop, Fell, of Oxford, engaged an Acquaintance of his Mr. Fullman, to make Remarks on it : Which he did with a particular Acrimony of Stile ; for which the Bishop had prepared me. I bore it, and drew out of it all that was Material ; and sent it to him, to see if he did not find in it the Substance of all his Remarks on the First, at the End of the Second Volume. It has been publish'd over and over again, that he complain'd, that I did not Print a full Account of his Censure. The Fact was thus : I sent it to him by the Carrier ; and begg'd of him, That if he had any Exception to the Abstract I had made of his Remarks, he would return it back to me, as soon as was possible ; for the Press was to be stopp'd till it came. I stay'd for it till the Second Return of the Carrier : And when no Answer came, I reckoned he acquiesced in my Abstract ; so I put it in the Press. But before it was printed off, his Answer came by the Third Return of the Carrier : And I, finding that he excepted to some few Parts of my Paper, was at the Charge of Reprinting it exactly to his Mind ; and he afterwards received the Present that I made him, with-out any Insinuation of any Complaint.*

*Thus this Work was sent abroad into the World. Nor do I yet see, what more I could have done, to procure me better Information, nor what other Steps I could have made. It took quiet Possession of the Belief of the Nation at Home, and of a great Part of Europe abroad ; being Translated into Four Languages : And for some Years, I heard of neither Censure, nor Answer.*

*When I went to Paris, in the Year 1685, I found there was a Cen-sure going about, written, but not printed. It came into my Hands, and I presently wrote an Answer to it ; which I got to be put into French : And all who read both Papers, seem'd fully satisfy'd with my Answer ; which will be found at the End of this Volume. I was told, that it was writ by Mr. Le Grand ; who had given out in many Companies, that he had great Objections, ready to be made to my Hi-story. Upon that, Two Learned and Worthy Men, Mr. Auzont, and Mr. Thevenot, designed to bring us together, and to hear what Mr. Le Grand had to object. We din'd at Mr. Thevenot's : And after Din-ner, for the Space of Three Hours, Mr. Le Grand propos'd his Obje-ctions, and I answer'd them on the sudden ; far from Charming them with my Eloquence : Which Mr. Le Grand must certainly mean as a Jest ; for I pretend to no more French, than to be understood, when I speak it. What he said was mean and trifling ; and yet it was so fully answered by me, that we parted Civilly, and (as I thought) good Friends. And when he was gone, both Thevenot and Auzont said,*



*They were ashamed to bear such Poor Things objected, (Pauvretes was their Word) after the Noise that Mr. Le Grand had made. But two Days after, Mr. Auzont came to me, both in his own Name, and in Mr. Thevenot's, and desired me not to speak of that Matter to any Person. The Court was then so set on Extirpating Herefy, that they apprehended any Thing said by me, might bring me into Trouble: They would do me Justice, so I needed not be concern'd to do it to my self.*

*I must also add, that Mr. Le Grand said, after he had offer'd his Objections, That as to the Main of my History, he could furnish me with many Materials to support it. And he made me a Present of a very Valuable Book, published by Camusat at Troyes, 1613, with the Title of Melanges Historiques; of which I have made good Use in the following Work. The Matter rested thus till the Year 1688, that Mr. Le Grand published the History of King Henry the VIIIth's Divorce. And soon after that, Two other Volumes of his appeared: One was a severe Inveective against me and my History; the other was, a Collection of Letters, by which his History was justified. In this last, there are some very Valuable ones; to which I have had Occasion oftner than once to refer my Reader. In the Two First of these Tomes, Mr. Le Grand thought fit to lay aside all Sort of Good Manners, and to treat me more in the Stile of an angry Monk, than of one that had lived long in the Company of well-bred Men. I imputed this to a Management he was under by some of the Court of that Unfortunate Prince, who soon after felt the Tragical Effects of such Unhappy Counsellors, as had then the Ascendant. To these, I did believe, Mr. Le Grand had dedicated his Pen; and that drew from me a severe Postscript, to a Censure that I published upon the Bishop of Meaux's Book of Variations; for which I am heartily sorry, and ask his Pardon.*

*The Truth is, the first Paper in his Third Tome, seemed to justify any Thing that could have been said, to expose a Man that could offer such an Abstract as he gave of it in his History, and them that judged so ill, as to think fit to Print that Letter, that does plainly contradict the Sense he gave of it. The Letter is writ by Pace, Dean of St. Paul's, to King Henry, (said by him to be written in the Year 1526; but in that he is mistaken, as will appear afterwards) on the Subject of the Divorce. He owns that he writ the Book, which had been brought to the King the Day before, by the Advice and Assistance of Dr. Wakefeld; who was ready to defend it all, either in Writing, or in a Publick Disputation. “ \* And since he heard from the King, that some of his Learned Counsellors wrote, that Deuteronomy ab-*  
*“ rogated*

---

\* Et quoniam Majestas tua mihi significavit, nescio quos è suis literatis Consiliariis scripssisse Deuteronomium abrogare Leviticum, diligenter perquisivi quid id sibi vellet; & tandem inveni id indubitato falsum esse: Est Compendium, ac Repetitio, seu, ut ita dicam, Recapitulatio Legis Mosæ. Et illud Græcum nomen *Deuteronomium*, quantum ad sensum rei attinet illud, idem significat quod habetur in Hebræo; id est, Liber, in quo continetur secunda Lex, vel Repetitio primæ Legis. Post meum à Majestate tua discessum, D. R. *Wakefeldus* unice me rogavit, ut sibi significarem, an placeret tibi veritatem hac in re intelligere, utrum staret à te an contra te? Ei ita respondi, Te nihil velle quod esset alienum à Nobili Principe, & singularibus



“ rogated Leviticus, he shews him how false that was. It was only  
 “ a Recapitulation of the Mosaick Law; it seems they thought this  
 “ was the Importance of the Greek Word Deuteronomy, (or a Second  
 “ Law) but he shews that it imported only a Repetition of the former  
 “ Law, and the Book had another Title in the Hebrew. Then he says  
 “ that Wakefield desired him to let him know whether the King had a  
 “ Mind to know the Truth in that Matter, whether it stood for him,  
 “ or against him: To this Pace answer’d, That the King desired no-  
 “ thing but what became a Noble, and a Vertuous Prince; and that  
 “ he would do a most acceptable Thing to him, if he would take Pains  
 “ to let him know what was the Pure Verity: Then he being under  
 “ some Fear, said he could not set about it, unless his Majesty would  
 “ Enjoin and Command it; but when he received his Commands, he  
 “ would set forth such Things both against him, and for him, as no  
 “ other Person within his Kingdom could do.” There is nothing here  
 but what is Honourable both for the King, for Pace, and for Wake-  
 field.

Mr. Le Grand has made a very particular Abstract of this: He says,  
 “ † Pace designing to flatter his Prince’s Passion, thought they should  
 “ not stand either on the Vulgar, or the 70 Translators, but have re-  
 “ course only to the Hebrew, which he maintained was more favour-  
 “ able to the King. He had written to Wakefeld, and shewed him  
 “ the Trouble the King was in, and desired he would clear up the  
 “ Matter; Wakefeld ravished to be thus employ’d, said he would  
 “ justify all that Pace had said to the King; but then apprehending  
 “ that Pace might deceive him, or be deceived himself; or perhaps  
 “ that the King might change his Mind, he desired that the King him-  
 “ self would let him know what he would have him to do; whether he  
 “ should defend the one side, or the other; and he should do accord-  
 “ ing to the Orders he should receive, and make such Discoveries for  
 “ or against it as should pass the Capacity of all English-Men. Thus  
 “ (ends he) Wakefeld, who had more Vanity than Religion, was  
 “ driving a Traffick with his Sentiments.”

I have put in the Margin the Latin of Pace’s Letters, and the Ac-  
 count that Mr. Le Grand gives of it in French, that the Reader may  
 judge what can be thought of a Man that represents Things so unfair-

---

laribus Virtutibus prædito; Illum Majestati tuæ rem gratissimam facturum si laboraret ut pu-  
 ram veritatem tibi declaret. Tum ille nescio quo ductus timore negavit se hoc posse facere,  
 nisi Majestas tua id sibi injungeret & mandaret; & si mandares se producturum in medium  
 tam contra te quam pro te illa quæ nemo alius in hoc tuo regno producere posset.

† Nos avons la lettre de ce darnier (Pace) qui cherchant à flatter la Passion de son Prince,  
 vouloit que sans s’arreter ni à la Vulgata ni à la Traduction des septante, on eut recours au  
 texte Hebrew; qu’il soutenoit luy estre plus favorable. Il en ecrivit à Robert Wakefeld, & luy  
 decouvrit l’embarras ou le Roy se trouvoit, le priant de luy vouloir éclaircir cette matiere.  
 Wakefeld ravy de travailler pour le Roy, repondit d’abord, qu’il appueroit ce que Pace avoit  
 dit à Henry. Puis faisant reflexion que Pace pouvoit le tromper ou se tromper luy meme, ou  
 que le Roy changeroit peut estre, Il alla trouver Pace, & luy temoignoit, qu’il souhaitoit  
 que sa Majeste luy ecrivit elle meme, ce qu’elle Vouloit qu’il fit, & si il devoit defendre le  
 pour ou le contre, & qu’ alors selon les ordres qu’il recevroit, il donneroit, des éclaircissements  
 ou pour ou contre, qui passeroient le capacité de tous les Anglois. C’est ainsi que Wakefeld,  
 qui avoit plus de Vanité que de Religion, trafiquoit de ses sentimens.



ly, and makes such Inferences from them. I confess this raised in me too much Indignation to be governed as it ought to have been: I therefore thought such a Writer deserved not to be followed in every Step. I likewise employ'd at several Times, some who went to Paris, to try in what Esteem that Performance was; and if I was not much deceived in the Accounts sent me from thence, the Book had lost the Esteem of all Persons there, so that it was no more talked of, nor read. I cannot therefore bring my self to examine it minutely, yet where any Matter of Weight requires it, I shall either justify, or retract what I had delivered in my History. I shall say no more of that Work in this Place, save only that the Original Judgment of the Sorbonne, about which Mr. Le Grand seemed to be chiefly concerned, both in the Conference I had with him, and in his Book, is now found by Mr. Rymer, among the other Judgments of the Universities in the secret Treasury, out of which that Laborious Searcher into our Original Treaties, has already published 15 Great Volumes in Folio: Of this I shall give a more particular Account in its proper Place.

The next Attack that was made on my Work, was in the Year 1693, under the Title of, A Specimen of some Errors and Defects in the History of the Reformation of the Church of England: By Anthony Harmer. It is well known that was a disguised Name, and that the Author was Mr. Henry Wharton, who had published Two Volumes with the Title of Anglia Sacra: He had examined the dark Ages before the Reformation, with much Diligence, and so knew many Things relating to those Times beyond any Man of the Age; he pretended that he had many more Errors in reserve, and that this Specimen was only a hasty Collection of a few, out of many other Discoveries he could make: This consisted of some trifling and minute Differences in some Dates of Transactions of no Importance, upon which nothing depended; so I cannot tell whether I took these too easily from printed Books; or if I committed any Errors in my Notes taken in the several Offices. He likewise follows me through the several Recapitulations I had made of the State of Things before the Reformation, and finds Errors and Omissions in most of these; he adds some Things out of Papers I had never seen. The Whole was writ with so much Malice, and such Contempt, that I must give some Account of the Man, and of his Motives. He had express'd great Zeal against Popery, in the End of King James's Reign, being then Chaplain to Archbishop Sancroft, who, as he said, had promised him the First of those Prebends of Canterbury that should fall in his Gift; so when he saw that the Archbishop was resolv'd not to take the Oaths, but to forsake his Post, he made an earnest Application to me, to secure that for him at Archbishop Tillotson's Hands: I pressed him in it as much as was decent for me to do, but he said he would not encourage these aspiring Men, by promising any Thing before it should fall; as indeed none of them fell during his Time. Wharton upon this Answer thought I had neglected him, looking on it as a Civil Denial, and said he would be revenged; and so he published that Specimen. Upon which, I, in a Letter that I printed, address'd to the present Bishop of Worcester, charged him again and again to bring forth all that he pretended to have reserv'd at that Time; for 'till that was done, I would not enter upon the Examination of that Specimen. It was  
received



received with Contempt; and Tillotson justified my pressing him to take Wharton under his particular Protection so fully, that he sent and asked me Pardon: He said he was set on to it, and that, if I would procure any Thing for him, he would discover every Thing to me: I despis'd that Offer, but said that I would at any Price Buy of him those Discoveries that he pretended to have in reserve; but Mr. Chiswel (as whose House he then lay, being Sick) said he could draw nothing of that from him, and he believed he had nothing: He died about a Year after: So I will say no more of him, only this, that where I see a Voucher for any Thing that he Objects, I will submit and own my Error, but I have no Reason to take any Thing on his Word. I have a Work lying on my Table, which shews how little Regard is due to his Collections. It was sent me by a worthy Person in one of the Universities, and is a Collating of Ten Pages of his *Anglia Sacra*, with the Manuscript that he Vouches: It swells indeed to a Book. Wharton omits the most Material Passage of an Instrument that blemished one of his Heroes. In some Places there are Errors in every Line; and there are Three Capital Errors in One Line, and about 50 in that small compass; I have shewed the Book to a great many Persons, and will shew it to any who desire to see it, but do not descend here to further Particulars, for that perhaps might discover the Author, and expose him to the Malice of an ill-natur'd Cabal. Since that Time, a Writer of a greater Name, has with abundance of ill-natur'd Scorn, pretended to under-value my Work. I name him not, for I love not to transmit the Remembrance of such Things to Posterity. Where he gives such Vouchers as can be come at, I will be ready to retract; but when he appeals to some Nameless Manuscript in his own Possession, I will have no Regard to this; for a Writer that has been found too faulty in citing such Vouchers as can be examined, ought not to expect Belief, when he has Recourse to such as are kept by him as Secrets, not to be communicated but to a few Confidants, nor entirely to these, as I have been informed. All that has been hitherto objected to me, though with Airs of great Assurance and Scorn, has been so trifling, that some good Judges have thought I shewed them too much Respect to take any Notice of them: They thought it was enough to mark down such small Mistakes as I saw had been made by me, without so much as mentioning those who made such Reflections: I would have complied with their Advice, if I had not a just Zeal to maintain the Credit of that Work; which I cannot do better than by acknowledging the Discoveries that had been made, even in the minutest Matters, though with all the Indecency and Contempt possible.

A very Worthy Person in one of the Universities, has sent me a Copious Collection of Remarks on both my former Volumes, but upon Condition not to name him; which I will observe religiously, because I promised it; though it is not easy to myself, since I may not own to whom I owe so great an Obligation; but I suppress none of them, and give them entirely as he offered them to me. I have had Assistance from some other Hands, which I will gratefully own as I come to mention them, in their proper Places.



I have chosen rather to publish all that is of new offer'd to me, in a Volume a-part, than to reprint my former Volumes with these Corrections, as some have advis'd me to do. There are some Thousands of the former Impressions abroad in the Nation, that would be of little Value, if any such New Edition should appear. I have ever looked on such new enlarged Editions, as little less than a robbing the Publick; besides that, in so doing, I should only drop those Errors of my former Work, without that formal disowning and retracting of them, which I think I owe the Publick. I have ever looked on Falshoods in History, when fallen into deliberately, as the worst sort of Lying, both the most publick, and the most lasting. But if they are more innocently committed, and are yet persisted in after a Discovery, they are as bad as when done on Design. I writ before as well and as carefully as I could; and if in so great a Variety of Materials, some are Spurious, and others appear Doubtful; and if in the Haste in which the Circumstances of that Time almost forced me to publish that Work, without looking out for more Aid, and without waiting for further Discoveries, there are some inconsiderable Errors and Defects in the less important Parts of my Work, that relate not to the Main of Things, I hope the World will be so just, and so favourable, as to make fair Allowances for them, and to accept all the Reparation I can make for past Errors, when I own my Failing, and set my Readers right.

I come next to give an Account of the Reasons that moved me to set about this Work at this Time. The Reasons of my engaging in it at first, seemed now to return upon me; and have determined me to delay the doing of it no longer. The Danger of a Popish Successor then in view, and the dreadful Apprehensions we had of the Power of France, and of the Zeal with which the extirpating that which some called the Pestilent Heresy, that had long infested those Northern Kingdoms, was then driven on, made it seem a proper Time to awaken the Nation, by shewing both what Popery, and what the Reformation was; by shewing the Cruelty and Falshood of the former, and what the Patience and Courage of our Reformers was; and the Work had generally so good an Effect then, that if the like Dangers seem to revert, it may not be an improper Attempt to try once more to awaken a Nation that has perhaps forgot past Dangers, and yet may be nearer them than ever.

If there is any Difference between the present State of Things, and that we were in above 30 Years ago, it is that we are now more naked and defenceless, more insensible and stupid, and much more depraved in all Respects than we were then. We are sunk in our Learning, vitiated in Principles; tainted, some with Atheism, others with Superstition; both which, though by different ways, prepare us for Popery. Our Old Breaches are not healed, and new ones, not known in former Times, are raised and fomented with much Industry and great Art, as well as much Heat: Many are barefacedly going back to that Misery, from which God with such a mighty Hand rescued us; and has hitherto preserved us with an amazing Chain of Happy Providences; but the deaf Adder stops her Ear, let the Charmer charm never so wisely.

All



*All Books relating to those Controversies lie dead in Shops, few calling for them; many of them (as Men of the Trade have told me) being looked on as Waste Paper, and turned to Pasteboard. There are, after all, some Real and Sensible Arguments, that may perhaps have some Effect on those, who let not themselves be moved with Matters of dry Speculation, or with cold Reasoning. I have made many Discoveries, that may awaken some, on whom the clearest Demonstrations will perhaps make no Impression.*

*In Queen Mary's Time, beside all that Scene which I had formerly opened, of a perfidious Breach of solemn Promises, of the corrupting and packing of Parliaments, and of that unrelenting Cruelty, which was pursued to the End of that Reign without Intermision; I have had Occasion to see much farther into the Spirit which then prevailed. I have had the Perusal of the Original Council-Book, that went from the Beginning of her Reign to the last Day of the Year 1557; in which such a Spirit of Cruelty and Bigottry appears, thro' the whole Course of that Reign, that I was indeed amazed to find a poor harmless Woman, weak tho' learned, guilty of nothing but what her Religion infused in her, so carried to an Indecence of Barbarity, that it appears that Bonner himself was not cruel enough for her, or at least for her Confessor. She believed her self with Child, and when the Time came in which she expected to be delivered, she continued looking for it every Day above a Month; then a Conceit was put in her Head, that she could not bear her Child, as long as there was a Heretick left in the Kingdom.*

*It was a great Part of the Business of the Council, to quicken the Persecution every where: Letters were writ to the Men of Quality in the several Counties, to assist at the Execution of those who suffered for Heresy, and to call on all their Friends to attend on them. Letters of Thanks were writ to such officious Persons, as expressed their Zeal, ordering them to commit all to Prison, who came not to the Service, and to keep them in Prison till the Comfort of their Amendment appeared. Directions were given to put such as would not discover others, to the Torture: Thanks were in a particular Stile sent to some Gentlemen, who (as it is expressed) came so honestly, and of themselves, to assist the Sheriffs at those Executions. Pretences of Conspiracies were every where under Examination; many were committed, and tried for Words. Letters were writ to Corporations, about the Elections of Mayors: And the Lords had many Letters, to look carefully to the Elections of Parliament-Men, and to engage the Electors, to reserve their Voices for such as they should name. Sheriffs began to grow backward, and to delay Executions, in Hopes of Reclaiming Persons so condemned: But they were order'd to do so no more.*

*Letters were on one Day wrote to the Sheriffs of Kent, Essex, Suffolk, and Staffordshire, and to several Mayors, to signify what had moved them to stay the Executions of such Persons as had been delivered to them by the Ordinaries, being condemned for Heresy. One Letter of a more singular Strain, was wrote to the Lord-Mayor and the Sheriffs of London, to give Substantial Orders, (I give the Words in the Council-Book,) " That when any obstinate Man, condemned by  
" Order of the Law, shall be deliver'd to be punish'd for Heresy, there  
" be*



“ be a good Number of Officers and other Men appointed to be at the  
 “ Execution ; who may be charged to see such as shall misuse themselves ;  
 “ either by comforting, aiding, or praising the Offenders, or otherwise  
 “ use themselves to the ill Example of others, to be apprehended and  
 “ committed to Ward ; and besides, to give Commandment that no  
 “ Householder suffer any of his Apprentices, or other Servants to be  
 “ abroad, other than such as their Masters will answer for ; and that  
 “ this Order be always observ’d in like Cases hereafter”. Such Pains  
 were taken to extinguish all the Impressions of Humanity, or at least  
 to punish every Expression of it ; and this was so constantly pursued, that  
 Three Men and Two Women were burnt at Canterbury on the 10th of  
 November, a Week before her Death ; for she died on the 17th.

Cox Hist. of  
 Ireland.

Nor were they satisfied with all these Arts of Cruelty in England ;  
 but hearing that there were some of that sort in Ireland, one Cole  
 was sent over with a Commission to set a Persecution on foot there.  
 When he was at Chester, the Corporation waited on him, in respect to  
 his being sent by the Queen ; he shewed them his Powers and Letters to  
 the Government of Ireland, but leaving his Papers on the Table, when  
 he went in Respect to this Body to conduct them down Stairs, the  
 Mistress of the House being secretly a zealous Woman, did with a  
 particular Address made up a Pacquet like his, in which she put a  
 Pack of Cards, the Knave of Clubs being turned uppermost ; and so  
 she took away his Papers, putting this instead of them. He suspecting  
 nothing, nor looking into them, went over to Dublin, and deliver’d  
 his Message and Pacquet to the Council there, which was certainly re-  
 ceived with Scorn and Indignation. He came back to London, and  
 got new Powers, a few Days before the Queen’s Death ; for the News  
 of it overtook him before he had his Passage. The Levity of this Sto-  
 ry made me at first suspect it, till I found it in several Books, in which  
 it is said that the Woman had for this Service a Pension from Queen  
 Elizabeth.

I have in my former History shewed what Steps were made in that  
 Reign, towards the setting up an Inquisition in England ; which was  
 very probably suggested by King Philip, and some of his Spaniards, as  
 the only sure Method to extirpate Herefy : But I have since seen some  
 further Steps made towards it. Ratcliffe, Earl of Sussex, was in  
 high Favour ; and he, who saw what was the Method to secure and  
 advance it, moved, that instead of the dilatory Proceedings in the  
 Ordinary Courts, such Offenders should be proceeded against by Martial  
 Law. To this the Council wrote Answer, They commended his Zeal,  
 and acknowledged that such Persons deserv’d to be so us’d : Yet it was  
 not thought the best Way, but they were to be punish’d as the Laws  
 did order. But when they had had their Punishment, he was order’d  
 to keep them in Prison and in Irons, till they came to know themselves  
 and their Duty. I have also found what he did towards the setting up  
 an Inquisition. I did formerly print the Instructions that were sent to

2d. Volume of  
 H. R. Coll. of  
 Rec. p. 283.

the County of Norfolk. Of these the 6th did run thus : “ They shall  
 “ procure to have in every Parish, or Part of the Shire, as near as may  
 “ be, some one or more honest Men secretly instructed, to give Informa-  
 “ tion of the Inhabitants amongst or about them”. I find in a Regi-  
 “ ster



ster of the Earl of Suffex, that to the 6th Article it is agreed, " That  
 " the Justices of the Peace, in every of their Limits, shall call se-  
 " cretly before them, One or Two honest and secret Persons, or more,  
 " by their Discretions, and such as they shall think good; and com-  
 " mand them by Oath, or otherways, as the same Justices shall think  
 " good, that they shall secretly learn and search out, such Person or  
 " Persons, as shall evil-behave themselves idly at Church, or despise  
 " openly by Words the King and Queen's Proceedings; or go about  
 " to make or move any Stir, Commotion, or unlawful Gathering toge-  
 " ther of the People; or that shall tell any Seditious, or Lewd Tales,  
 " Rumors or News, to move or stir any Person or Persons, to rise, stir,  
 " or make any Commotion or Insurrection, or to consent to any such In-  
 " tent or Purpose. And also, that the same Persons so to be appoint-  
 " ed, shall declare to the same Justices of the Peace, the Ill Behaviour  
 " of lewd, disorder'd Persons; whether it shall be for using Unlawful  
 " Games, Idleness, and such other Light Behaviour of such suspected  
 " Persons, as shall be within the same Town, or near thereabouts.  
 " And that the same Information shall be given secretly to the Justi-  
 " ces: And the same Justices shall call such accused Persons before  
 " them, and examine them, without declaring by whom they be ac-  
 " cused. And that the same Justices shall, upon their Examinations,  
 " Punish the Offenders, according as their Offences shall appear to  
 " them upon the Accusment and Examination, by their Discretion,  
 " either by open Punishment, or good Aberring." Here are sworn Spies  
 appointed, like the Familiars of the Inquisition: Secret Depositions  
 not to be discovered; and upon these, further Proceedings are or-  
 der'd. If this had been well settled; what remained to compleat a  
 Court of Inquisition, would have been more easily carried.

Here is that, which those who look towards a Popish Successor,  
 must look for, when that Evil Day comes. All this will make little  
 Impression on those, who have no fixed Belief of any Thing in Religi-  
 on themselves, and so may reckon it a small Matter, to be of any Re-  
 ligion, that comes to have the Law and the Government on its Side;  
 and resolve to change with every Wind and Tide, rather than put any  
 Thing to Hazard by Struggling against it. Yet some Compassion to  
 those, who have a more firm Belief of those great Truths, might be  
 expected from Men of the same Country, Kindred, and who have hi-  
 therto professed to be of the same Religion. The Reviving the Fires in  
 Smithfield, and from thence over the whole Nation, has no amiable  
 View, to make any Haste to it; and least of all to those, who, if  
 they have any Principles at all, must look for nothing less than the  
 being turned out of their Livings, or forced to abandon their Families,  
 and, upon every Surmise or Suspicion, to be hunted from Place to  
 Place, glad if they can get out of the Paw of the Lion, into Parts  
 beyond the Seas: And then they may expect to meet with some of that  
 Haughty Contempt, with which too many have treated Foreigners, who  
 took Sanctuary among us.

But when this Fatal Revolution comes upon us, if God, for our  
 Sins, abandon us into the Hands of Treacherous and Bloody Men;  
 whither can we hope to fly? For, with us, the whole Reformation



must fall under such an Universal Ruin, that, humanly speaking, there is no View left beyond that.

Yet since that Set of Men is so impiously corrupted in the Point of Religion, that no Scene of Cruelty can fright them from leaping into it, and perhaps from acting such a Part in it, as may be assign'd them; there are other Considerations of another Sort, arising from some Papers (put in my Hands since I wrote the History) that may perhaps affect them deeper, because they touch in a more sensible Part.

It is well known, how Great and how Valuable a Part of the whole Soil of England, the Abbey-Lands, the Estates of the Bishops, of the Cathedrals, and the Tythes are. I will not enter into any strict Computation of what the whole may amount to. The Resumption of these would be no easy Matter to many Families: And yet all these must be thrown up; for Sacrilege in the Church of Rome is a Mortal Sin. And therefore Cardinal Pole, even in that pretended Confirmation of the Grants that were then made, laid a heavy Charge on those who had the Goods of the Church in their Hands, to remember the Judgments of God that fell on Belshazzar, for Profaning the Holy Vessels; tho' they had not been taken by himself, but by his Father. It is true, this may be supposed to relate only to Church-Plate: Tho' there is no Reason to restrain such a Solemn Charge, to so Inconsiderable a Part of what had been taken from the Church; no doubt, he had the whole in his View, And this shewed, that tho' he seemed to secure them from any Claim that the Church might have, or any Suit or Proceeding upon that Account; yet he left the Weight of the Sin on their Consciences; which a dextrous Confessor might manage so, as to make the Possessors yield up their Rights, especially when they themselves could hold them no longer. The Thing was still a Sin; and the Possession was unjust. And to make it easy to restore in the last Minutes, the Statute of Mortmain was repealed for 20 Years; in which Time, no doubt, they reckon'd, they would recover the best Part of what they had lost. Besides that, the Engaging the Clergy to renew no Leases, was a Thing entirely in their own Power; and that, in 40 Years Time, would raise their Revenues to be about Ten times their present Value.

But setting all this aside; it appeared evidently to me, from some Papers sent me, some Years after I wrote my History, that all that Transaction was fraudulent, and had so many Nullities in it, that it may be broke through, whenever there is a Power strong enough to set about it. In the First Powers that are in that Collection, all the Grace and Favour that the Pope intended to the Possessors of those Lands, was to indemnify them for the Mean Profits they had received, and for the Goods that had been consumed: They Restoring first (if that shall seem expedient) the Lands themselves, that are unjustly detained by them. This was only the Forgiving what was past: but the Right of the Church was insisted on, for the Restitution of those Lands. The Reservation in these Words, [If that shall seem expedient to you,] can be understood in no other Sense, but that it was referred to his Discretion, whether he should insist to have the Restitution first made, before he granted the Indemnity for the Mean Profits, or not.

It



*It is true, the Council in England who were in that supported by the Emperor, thought these Powers were too narrow, and insisted to have them enlarged. That was done, but in so Artificial a Manner, that the Whole Settlement made by Pole signified nothing, but to lay the Nation once asleep, under a false Apprehension of their being secured in those Possessions, when no such Thing was intended; nor was it at all granted, even by the latest Powers that were sent to Cardinal Pole. In these, after the Pope had referred the settling that Matter to him, that he might transact it with such Possessors, for whom the Queen should intercede, and dispence with their Enjoying them for the future without any Scruple, a Salvo is added, by which the Whole Matter is still reserved to the Pope for his final Confirmation, in these Words, Salvo tamen in his quibus propter rerum magnitudinem & gravitatem hæc sancta sedes merito tibi videretur consulenda, nostro & præfatæ Sedis beneplacito & confirmatione. " Saving always in " such Things, in which for their Greatness and Importance it shall " appear to you, that this Holy See ought in Reason to be consulted, " our and the said See's good Pleasure and Confirmation. By these Words it is very plain, that as in the Powers granted, they seem'd to be limited to a few, to such for whom the QUEEN should intercede, since it is not expressed that the Pope thought that she should intercede for all that possessed them; so they were only Provisional: And therefore since no Bull of Confirmation was ever obtained, all these Provisional Powers were Null and Void, when the Confirmation was ask'd and deny'd: As all the Historians of that Time agree it was: And this was so suitable to P. Paul the IVth's Temper and Principles, that no Doubt is to be made of his persisting stedfastly in that Resolution.*

*I know there was a Mercenary Writer found in King James's Reign, who studied to lay all People asleep, in a secure Persuasion of their Titles to those Lands. He pretends there was a Confirmation of all that Pole did, sent over to England. He brings indeed some Proof that it was given out and believed, which might be a Part of the Fraud to be used in that Matter. But as no such Thing appears in the Bullary, so he does not tell us who saw it, or where it was laid up. He indeed supports this by an Argument that destroys it quite: For he tells us, that Two Years after this, Secretary Petre had a particular Bull, confirming him in his Possession of some Church-Lands. This shews, that either that Person, who was Secretary of State, knew that no Confirmation was sent over; so that it was necessary for him to procure a particular Bull for securing his own Estate; or whatever might be in Pole's Powers, he might think such a General Transaction, which the Necessity of that Time made reasonable, would be no longer stood to, than while that Necessity continued.*

*General Treaties and Transactions have had such a Fate that few will trust to them. The Spirit of the Church, as well as the Spirit of a Treaty, will be prefer'd to the Words of all Transactions. Have not we seen in our own Days an Edict that was passed with all Solemnity possible, and declared perpetual and irrevocable, yet recalled with this very Preamble, That it was made in Compliance to the Necessity of that Time, and on Design to bring those, that were promised to be for ever tolerated by it, into the Bosom of the Church. There is so much in the*  
*Canon*



Canon Law against all Sacrilege, and all Alienations of what is once dedicated to God; that though some Canonists may have carried the Plenitude of the Papal Power so far, as to reach even to this, which this hired Writer builds on; yet there is so much affirmed to the contrary by others, that it is certain whensoever the Papacy has Strength enough to set aside all the Settlement then made, they will find sufficient Grounds in Law to proceed to the Overturning all that was then done. The Princes of Germany, whose Settlements he appeals to, do not trust to any Treaty, with either Emperor, or Popish Princes, with relation to the Church-Lands, of which they possessed themselves; but to the Treaties and Guaranties into which they enter'd with one another: And so they are engaged by their Faith, and by their mutual Interests to maintain one another and themselves in their Possessions: Nor does it appear that a Papal Bull was ever obtained to confirm them. On the contrary, the Pope's Legates protested against them; and, as will appear afterwards, Charles the 5th's Confessor refus'd to give him Absolution for his consenting to Edicts of that sort. If the Necessity of the Time makes it necessary to maintain that Settlement, so long it will be maintained, and no longer.

But to put this Matter out of all Doubt, that some Pope did soon after our Ambassadors were sent to him, by a Bull dated the 12th of July, 1555, within Three Weeks after the English Ambassadors had their Audience, condemn all the Alienations of Church-Lands, and even all Leases, for one or more Lives; or for a Term longer than Three Years: This he extends to all Cathedrals, Monasteries, and Hospitals, and annuls all Leases, Grants, Exchanges, Mortgages, and Obligations of Lands, Castles, Towns, and Cities, even though made by Popes themselves, or by their Authority and Order; and by the Presidents, Prelates, or Rectors of Churches, Monasteries, or Hospitals, of what Rank and Dignity soever, Cardinals by Name being expressed, that were done to the Prejudice of the Church, the Solemnity by Law required, not being observed: And that which was Null in the first making, but supply'd by subsequent Contracts, in what Form soever made, though by Proofs upon Oath, and by what length of Time soever it may claim Prescription, is all rescinded, and made void and null. And the Detainers of Goods, upon those Titles are required to quit Possession, and to make full Satisfaction for what they have receiv'd, and to be thereto compelled, if they obey not, both by Ecclesiastical Censures, and Pecuniary Punishments.

It is true, in all this, England is not expressly named, and perhaps the Pope had the recovering from the Family of the Farnese, that which Paul the III<sup>d</sup> had alienated to it, chiefly in his Eye: But the Words of this Bull do plainly take in the late Settlement in England: For though the English Ambassadors were then newly come to Rome, demanding the Confirmation of what Pole had done, yet no Exceptions are made for England: So it seems, it was intended by these General Words, put in on Design, to overthrow it. Now because this Matter is of such great Concern, and every one has not a Bullary to examine into this Bull; I will begin my Collection of Records with it, as no small Piece of Instruction, to all who are possessed of any Estate so alienated from Churches, Monasteries, or Hospitals.



Upon the Conclusion of this Head, I cannot but take notice of one Insinuation, that I hear some are not ashamed to make : That such a Resumption may be indeed a Prejudice to the Laity, but that the Clergy will be enriched by it. If this had been brought me by an Ordinary Hand, I should not have thought it worth mentioning ; but since some have the Impudence to set it on foot, I must add, That these are vain Hopes, as well as they are suggested on black Designs : For though the Church, take it in the Bulk, has immense Riches in the Roman Communion ; yet in no Church that ever I saw are the Parochial Clergy kept poorer, and made more despicable ; they are as the Hewers of Wood, and Drawers of Water, kept at hard Labour, on a very poor Subsistence. The several Orders among them, the governing Clergy, and the outward Magnificence of their Churches, and Services, devours all that Treasure : So that the poor Clergy, even in that State of Celibate, have scarce necessary Sustenance, unless it be in some Capital Cities, and in very vast Parishes in them : They are starved, to maintain the Luxury and Vanity of others : This was the true Occasion of all the Poverty of the Parochial Clergy among us, to which some Remedies have been sought for, and to some Degree found, ever since the Reformation was first settled among us.

But none of these Things will move an insensible and degenerate Race, who are thinking of nothing but present Advantages : And so they may now support a Luxurious and Brutal Course of irregular and voluptuous Practices, they are easily hired to betray their Religion, to sell their Country, and to give up that Liberty, and those Properties, which are the present Felicities and Glories of this Nation. The giving them up, will be a lasting Infamy on those who are guilty of it, and will draw after it the heaviest Curse of Posterity on such perfidious Betrayers of their Trust : By this they will bring Slavery on themselves (which they well deserve, being indeed the worst sort of Slaves) and entail it on the succeeding Generation.

I return to prosecute the Account of my Design in this Work. I went through those Volumes in the Cotton Library, of which I had only a transient View formerly ; and laid together all that I thought necessary to compleat it. I saw a great and a fair Prospect of such a Change ready to be made in France, as King Henry had made in England. Mr. Le Vassior has, out of an Invaluable Collection of Original Papers that are in Sir William Trumball's Hands, published Instructions sent by the Duke of Orleans to the Princes of Germany ; by which, as he declared himself a Protestant, so he gave in General Words good Hopes of his Father Francis. I found also, both in Papers, and printed Books, that King Henry often reproached Francis for not keeping his Word to him ; and in a long Dispatch of a Negotiation that Paget was employ'd in with the Admiral of France, I saw further Evidence of this. I was by these Indications set on to see how far I could penetrate into that Secret.

I was by the Favour of the Earl of Dartmouth admitted to a free Search of the Paper-Office, which is now in much better Order and Method than it was above 30 Years ago, when I saw it last : And there, among other very valuable Papers, I found the Copy of that solemn Promise that Francis made to Henry, minuted on the Back by Cromwell's Hand as a true Copy, in these Words, An Instrument devised from the French King, for his Justification and Defence of the Invalidity of the King's Highness's First Marriage, and the Validity of the Second.



“ By this, he in exprefs Words condemns the Pope’s Bull dispensing with  
 “ the Marriage with Queen Catherine, which he, by the Unanimous  
 “ Consent of those Learned Men whom he had appointed to examine it,  
 “ condemns as Incestuous and Unlawful; and reputes the Daughter born  
 “ in it, Spurious and Illegitimate: And that the Second Marriage with  
 “ Anne, then Queen, was Lawful and Just; and that Queen Eliza-  
 “ beth born of it, was lawfully Born. And he promises to assist and  
 “ maintain the King in this against all the World. In this Instrument  
 “ he owns King Henry to be, under God, the Supreme Head of the  
 “ Church of England: And he affirms, that many of the Cardinals, in  
 “ particular the late Cardinal of Ancona, and even Pope Clement the  
 “ VIIth himself, did both to his Ambassador, and to himself at Marseilles  
 “ plainly confess, that the Pope’s Bull, and the Marriage made upon it,  
 “ were null and void; and that he would have given a Definitive Sen-  
 “ tence, if some Private Affections, and Human Regards had not hin-  
 “ der’d it. This makes me conclude, that he gave other Instruments  
 of a further Extent to King Henry; for failing in which, I find he  
 was often reproached, though this single Instrument is all that I could  
 find out: But the Lord Herbert reckons among the Chief Causes of King  
 Henry’s last Rupture with Francis, That he had not deserted the Bishop  
 of Rome, and consented to a Reformation as he once promised.

I saw when I passed through Zurich, a Volume of Letters that passed  
 between Bullinger and those English Divines that had been so kindly en-  
 tertained by him in that Noble Canton: And by the Interposition of my  
 Learned, Judicious, and Pious Friend, Mr. Turretin of Geneva, Mr.  
 Otto, a Worthy Professor there, has taken such Care, that Copies of them  
 are procured for me; in which we may see the Sense of those who revived  
 our Reformation in Queen Elizabeth’s Time. Men who had been Abroad,  
 and had seen all Things about them in a true Light, that saw in what  
 the Strength of Popery lay, and what fortified, or weakened the Body  
 of the Reformed, were liker to have truer Views than can be expected from  
 retir’d, or sullen Men, who have lived in a Corner, and have but a small  
 Horizon.

It has been objected to me, that I have said little of Proceedings in  
 Convocation, and of the Struggle that the Clergy made before they were  
 brought to make the Submission, which brought those Bodies under Re-  
 straints, that seem now uneasy to the Advocates for Church Power. I  
 must confess I have been very Defective here: I understood that the Books  
 of Convocation were burnt: None of those Great Men, under whose Di-  
 rection that Work went on, knew any Thing of those Discoveries that have  
 been of late made; so no wonder if I passed over what was then so little  
 known. Yet now I have examined all that I could find of those Matters,  
 I confess I am not inclined to expect much from the Assemblies of Clergy-  
 men. I have seen nothing in Church History to incline me to depart from  
 Gregory Nazianzen’s Opinion of those Assemblies: What has happened  
 among our selves of late, has not made me of another Mind: And I will  
 not deny, but that my Copiousness on these Matters, is in my own Opi-  
 nion, one of the meanest Parts of my Work. The Wisest and Worthiest  
 Man in that Convocation, Archbishop Warham, was the Person that pro-  
 moted the Submission the most. It was no Wonder if a corrupt Clergy, that  
 made such ill Use of their Power, had no Mind to Part with any Branch  
 of it. Yet, since these Things have been of late such a Subject of Debate  
 among



among us, I have taken what Pains I could, to gather all that is left of those Times, in such Copies, or rather Abstracts, as have been of late found in Private Hands: Only I will set down the Opinion of Sir Thomas More, the best Man of the Popish Side in that Age, of those Meetings. “ It is More's Apol. 1533. Fol. 241. true, he says, the Clergy's Assembling at the Convocation, was call'd by the Name of Confederacies. But, he adds, if they did assemble often, and there did such Things, for which such Assemblies of the Clergy in every Province thro' all Christendom, from the Beginning, were instituted and devised, much more good might have grown thereof, than the long Disuse can suffer us now to perceive. But all my Days, as far as I have heard, nor (I suppose) a good Part of my Father's neither, they came never together to Convocation, but at the Request of the King; and at such their Assemblies, concerning Spiritual Things, have very little done. Wherefore that they have been in that Necessary Part of their Duty so negligent, whether God suffer to grow to an unperceived Cause of Division and Grudge against them; God, whom their such Negligence hath, I fear me, sore offended, knoweth.

The Affinity of the Matter, has led me to reflect on a Great Transaction, 1532. with relation to the Church of France, which was carried on, and finally settled, in the very Time that K. Henry was Breaking with the Court of Rome. It was the Concordate, that Francis I. made with Pope Leo X. The King and the Pope came to a Bargain, by which they divided the Liberties of the Gallican Church between them, and indeed quite enslaved it. There are so many Curious Passages in the Progress of that Matter, that I hope the Opening these, will be a very acceptable Entertainment to the Nation. And the rather, because in it this Nation will see, what it is to deliver up the Essential Liberties of a Free Constitution to a Court, and to trust to the Integrity and Firmness of Courts of Justice, when an Assembly of the States is no more necessary to the Raising of Money, and the Support of the Government. I know nothing writ in our Language, with Relation to this Matter, besides that Account I gave of it, in a Book concerning the Regale. It was taken from a very Exact History of that Transaction, that was written by Mr. Pinsons, printed Anno 1666; and that seemed to some very Proper Judges, to relate so much to our Affairs, that, as they thought, it very probably disposed the Nation, more easily to throw off the Papal Authority. They saw, what a filthy Merchandise the Court of Rome had made of the Liberties of the Neighbouring Church; taking Care only to secure their own Profits, and delivering up the rest to the Crown. The best Writers of that Church have, on many Occasions, lamented the Loss of their Liberties by that detestable Bargain, into which Francis's Necessities, wrought on by the Practices of the Court of Rome, drew him. “ By this, the Church of France, from being a Queen, became (as Bishop Godeau expresses it) a Slave. And he adds, Our Fathers have groaned, and all that love the Order of the House of God will still groan, as long as Elections continue to be put down: So that we must needs enter into the Sanctuary, by the way of the Court. In another Place: “ These Promotions have been always fatal to the Church; and the Bishops that the Court has made, have been ordinarily the Chief Advancers of Schisms, Heresies, and of the Oppression of the Church. And he concludes, “ One cannot read Nazianzen's Verses, of the Prelates of his Time, without being struck with Horror, and forc'd to acknowledge, that a Secular Temper is entirely contrary to the Episcopal Spirit.”



*“ rit. Of this, a Greek Writer makes a severe Remark, in the History of Andronicus’s Reign; which may perhaps be as justly apply’d to other Reigns, telling what Sort of Bishops were then made. “ Princes chuse “ such Men to that Charge, who may be their Slaves, and in all Things “ obsequious to what they prescribe: and may lie at their Feet, and have “ not so much as a Thought contrary to their Commands. This Change in their Constitution, has put an End not only to National, but even to Provincial Synods in that Kingdom. Some were indeed held, upon the Progress that Luther’s Doctrine was beginning to make in France; and others, during the Civil Wars, in order to the getting the Council of Trent receiv’d in France. But now in the Space of 90 Years last past, these are no more brought together. The Assemblies of the Clergy meet only to give Subsidies, and to present their Grievances; but do not pretend to the Authority of a Regular Synod. And tho’ in the Year 1682 they drew up some Articles, yet these had their Authority only from the Severity of the King’s Edict, till by a Transaction with the Court of Rome that was let fall.*

*I have now gone over all the Matters, that do properly fall within this Introduction. It remains, that I leave the Sense of the Subject of this, and of my Two former Volumes, upon the Consciences of my Readers. Can it be possible, that any are so depraved, as to wish we had no Religion at all; or to be Enemies to the Christian Religion? Would these Men reduce us to be a Sort of Hottentots? And yet this must grow to be the Effect of our being without all Religion. Mankind is a Creature, by his Make and Frame disposed to Religion; and if this is not managed by true Principles, all the Jugglings of Heathenism would again take Possession of the World. If the Principles of Truth, Justice, Temperance, and of Universal Love, do not govern Men, they will soon grow Curses and Plagues to one another: And a Crew of Priests will grow up, who will teach them to compound for all Crimes, and to expiate the Blackest Practices by some Rituals.*

*Religion has so much to struggle with, that, if it is not believ’d to be reveal’d by God, it will not have Strength enough to resist those ill Inclinations, those Appetites and Passions, that are apt to rise up in our Minds, against its Dictates. What is there in the true and unsophisticated Christian Religion, that can give a Colour to Prejudices against it? The whole Complex of that Rule of Life which it prescribes, is so plainly suited to our Composition, both in our Souls and their Faculties, and in our Bodies, with Relation to good Health, to Industry and long Life; and to all the Interests of Human Society, to the Order and Peace of the World, and to the Truth and Love, that are the Cements and Securities of the Body Politick, that, without any labour’d Proof of its Divine Original, these are such Characters, that they may serve to prove, it is sent into the World by a Lover of Mankind, who knew our Nature, and what was proper both to perfect it, and to render it not only safe, but happy.*

*But when to all this, we add the Evidence that was given at its appearing in the World: That he, who was the first Author of it, and those whom he employed first to Propagate it, did, upon many Occasions, in full Day-Light, and in the Sight of great Multitudes, do Things so far above the Powers of Nature, in such uncontested Miracles, that by these it evidently appeared they were assisted by somewhat superior to Nature, that could command it at Pleasure. Here is the fullest Ground of Conviction possible. These Things were written, publish’d, and received in the Age,*



*in which they were transacted : And those Writings have been preserved with great Care, and are transmitted down to us, at the Distance of above Sixteen Ages, Pure and Uncorrupted. In these we have the fixed Standard of our Religion; and by them, we can satisfy our selves concerning all such Practices as have been made upon it, or such Inferences as are drawn from it. I wish those, who take to themselves the Name of Free-Thinkers, would consider well, if they think it is possible to bring a Nation to be without any Religion at all; and what the Consequences of that may prove; and then see, if there is any Religion so little liable to be corrupted, and that tends so much to the Good of Mankind, as the True Christian Religion Reformed among us.*

*As for those that do truly believe this Religion, and have an Ingenuous Sense and Taste of Liberty; can they admit a Comparison to be made, between a Religion restrain'd to a Fix'd Standard, (into which, every one is admitted to examine the Sense of it, in the best Method he can) and that which sets up another uncertain Standard, of which they pretend to be the Depositaries; I mean, Traditions; and pretend further, they are the Infallible Expounders of it; and that the True Standard it self is not to be expos'd to common View? That God is to be Worshipp'd in a Language not understood; That instead of a Competent Provision to those who Labour in this Work, the Head of them is to become a Great Prince, and may pretend to a Power to Dispose of Kingdoms and States, to Pardon Sins, and to Redeem Sinners out of the Miseries of a Future State: And that the Character derived from him is so Sacred, that, in Defiance to Sense and Reason, a Priest, by a few Words, can work a Miracle, in Comparison to which, the greatest of Miracles is nothing; and who, by these Means, have possessed themselves of an Immense Wealth, and a Vast Authority.*

*These are all things of so strange a Nature, and so contrary to the Genius and Design of the Christian Religion, that it is not easy to imagine how they could ever gain Credit and Success in the World: But when Mens Eyes have been once open'd, when they have shaken off the Yoke, and got out of the Noose; when the Simplicity of true Religion has been seen into, and the Sweetness of Liberty have been tasted; it looks like Charm and Witchcraft, to see so many looking back so tamely on that Servitude, under which this Nation groan'd so heavily for so many Ages. They may soon see and know what our happy Condition is, in the Freedom we enjoy from these Impositions, and what their Misery is, that are condemn'd to them. It is not enough for such as understand this Matter, to be contented in their own Thoughts with this, That they resolve not to turn Papists themselves: They ought to awaken all about them, even the most ignorant and the most stupid, to apprehend their Danger, and to exert themselves with their utmost Industry, to guard against it, and to resist it: They ought to use all their Efforts to prevent it, and earnestly to pray to God for his Blessing upon them. If after all Mens Endeavours to prevent it, the Corruption of the Age, and the Art and Power of our Enemies, prove too hard for us, then, and not till then, we must submit to the Will of God, be silent, and prepare our selves for all the Extremities of Suffering and of Misery; and if we fall under a Persecution, and cannot fly from it, we must resolve to glorify God, by bearing our Cross patiently. Illegal Sufferings are no more to be born, than the Violences of a Robber: But if the Law comes once to be in the Hands of those wicked Men, who will not only revive the Repealed Laws against Hereticks, but, if they can, carry their Cruelty up to the Height of an Inquisition, then we must try by the Faith and Patience of the Saints, to go through Fire and through Water, and in all Things to be more than Conquerors.*

*I know some, who are either apt to deceive themselves, or hope to deceive others, have this in their Mouths, That Popery is not what it was before*



*the Reformation; Things are much mended, many Abuses are detected, and Things are not so gross as they were then: And they tell us, that further Corrections might be expected, if we would enter into a Treaty with them; in particular, they fancy they see the Error of Proceeding severely with Hereticks; so that there is no Reason to apprehend the Return of such Cruelties, as were practised an Age and a half ago.*

*In Answer to this, and to lay open the Falshood of it, we are to look back to the first Beginning of Luther's Breach: It was occasion'd by the scandalous Sale of Pardons and Indulgencies, which all the Writers of the Popish Side give up, and acknowledge it was a great Abuse; so in the Countries where the Reformation has got an Entrance, or in the Neighbourhood of them, this is no more heard of: And it has been taken for granted, that such an infamous Traffick was now no more practised. But of late, that we have had Armies in Spain and Portugal, we are well assured that it is still carried on there, in the most bare-fac'd manner possible. It is true, the proclaiming a Sale is forbid by a Bull: But there is a Commissary in every Place, who manages the Sale with the most infamous Circumstances imaginable. In Spain, by an Agreement with the Pope, the King has the Profits of this Bull; and it is no small Branch of his Revenue. In Portugal, the King and the Pope go Shares. Dr. Colbatch has given a very particular Account of the managing the Bull there: For as there is nothing so impudent, that those Men are ashamed to venture on; so they may safely do what they please, where the Terror of the Inquisition is so severe a Restraint, that Men dare not whisper against any Thing that is under that Protection.*

*A notable Instance of this has appear'd lately, when in the Year 1709, the Privateers of Bristol took the Galleon, in which they found 500 Bales of these Bulls, and 16 Reams were in a Bale: So that they reckon'd the whole came to 3840000. These Bulls are imposed on the People, and sold, the lowest at 3 Ryals, a little more than 20d. but to some at 50 Pieces of Eight, about 11l. of our Money; and this to be valued according to the Ability of the Purchaser, once in two Years: All are obliged to buy them against Lent. Beside the Account given of this in the Cruising Voyage, I have a particular Attestation of it by Captain Dampier, and one of the Bulls was brought me printed, but so, that it cannot be read. He was not concern'd in casting up the Number of them; but he says, that there was such a vast Quantity of them, that they careen'd their Ship with them.*

*As for any Changes that may be made in Popery, it is certain, Infalibility is their Basis: So nothing can be altered where a Decision is once made. And as for the Treatment of Hereticks, there has been such a Scene of Cruelty of late open'd in France, and continued there now almost 30 Years without Intermission; that even in the Kingdom, where Popery has affected to put the best Face on Things possible, we have seen a cruel Course of Severity, beyond any thing in History. I saw it in its first and sharpest Fury, and can never forget the Impression that made on me.*

*A Discovery lately made, shews what the Spirit of those at Rome, who manage the Concerns of that Religion, is, even in a mild Reign, such as Odischalci's was; and we may well suppose that because it was too mild, this was ordered to be laid before him, to animate him with a Spirit of Persecution. When the Abbey of St. Gall was taken in the late War in Switzerland, a Manuscript was found, that the Court of Propaganda ordered their Secretary to prepare for Innocent the XIth's own Use, which after his Death came into the Hands of Cardinal Sfondrato, who was Abbot of St. Gall, and so at his Death left this Book there. It gives a particular Account of all the Missions they have in all the Parts of the World; and of the Rules and Instructions given them, with which I hope those Wor-*



thy Persons, in whose Hands this Valuable Book is now fallen, will quickly acquaint the World. The Conclusion of it, is an Address to the Pope, in which they lay his Duty before him, from two of the Words in the New Testament, directed to St. Peter. The First was Feed my Sheep, which obliged him not only to feed the Flock that was gathered at that Time, but to prosecute the constant Increase of it, and to bring those Sheep into it that were not of the Fold. But the other Word was addressed to him by a Voice from Heaven, when the Sheet was let down to him full of all sorts of Beasts, of which some were unclean, Rise, Peter, kill and eat, to let all see that it is the Duty of the Great Pontiff to rise up with Apostolical Vigilance, to kill and to extinguish in the Infidels their present Life, and then to eat them, to Consubstantiate their false and brutal Doctrine into the Verity of our Faith. There is an Affection in these last Words suitable to the Genius of the Italians. This Application of these Two Passages, as containing the Duties of a Pope, was formerly made by Baronius, in a flattering Speech to encourage Pope Paul the Vth in the War he was designing against the Venetians.

By this we see, that how much soever we may let the Fear of Popery wear out of our Thoughts, they are never asleep, but go on steadily, prosecuting their Designs against us. Popery is Popery still, acted by a Cruel and Persecuting Spirit; and with what Caution soever they may hide, or disown some scandalous Practices, where Hereticks dark look into their Proceedings, and lay them open; yet even these are still practised by them, when they know they may safely do it, and where none dare open their Mouth against them; and therefore we see what reason we have to be ever watching, and on our guard against them.

This is the Duty of every single Christian among us; but certainly those Peers and Commoners, whom our Constitution has made the Trustees and Depositories of our Laws and Liberties, and of the Legal Security of our Religion, are under a more particular Obligation of watching carefully over this Sacred Trust, for which they must give a severe Account in the last Day, if they do not guard it against all Danger, at what Distance soever it may appear. If they do not maintain all the Fences and Outworks of it, or suffer Breaches to be made on any of them; if they suffer any Part of our Legal Establishment to be craftily undermin'd; if they are either absent or remiss, on Critical Occasions; and if any Views of Advantage to themselves prevail on them, to give up, or abandon the Establishment and Security of our Religion: God may Work a Deliverance for us another way, and if it seem good in his Eyes, he will deliver us; but they and their Families shall perish, their Names will rot and be held in detestation; Posterity will Curse them, and the Judgments of God will overtake them, because they have sold that which was the most Sacred of all Things, and have let in an Inundation of Idolatry, Superstition, Tyranny, and Cruelty upon their Church and Country.

But in the last Place, those who are appointed to be the Watchmen, who ought to give warning, and to lift up their Voice as a Trumpet, when they see those Wolves ready to break in and devour the Flock, have the heaviest Account of all others to make, if they neglect their Duty; much more if they betray their Trust: If they are so set on some smaller Matters, and are so sharpened upon that Account, that they will not see their Danger, nor awaken others to see it, and to fly from it; the Guilt of those Souls who have perished by their Means, God will require at their Hands, if they, in the View of any Advantage to themselves, are silent when they ought to cry out Day and Night: They will fall under the Character given by the Prophet, of the Watchmen in his Time. They are blind, they are ignorant, they are all dumb Dogs, they cannot bark, sleeping, lying down, loving to slumber: Yea, they are greedy Dogs, which can never have enough: And they are Shepherds that cannot understand; they all look to their own way, every one from his quarter: That say, Come, I will fetch



Wine, and we will fill our selves with strong Drink ; to-morrow shall be as this Day, and much more abundant.

*This is a lively Description of such Pastors as will not so much as study Controversies, and that will not know the Depths of Satan; that put the Evil Day far off, and as the Men in the Days of Noah or Lot, live on at their Ease, satisfying themselves in running round a Circle of dry and dead Performances ; that do neither awaken themselves, nor others. When the Day of Tryal comes, what will they say ? To whom will they fly for help ? Their Spirits will either sink within them, or they will swim with the Tide : The Cry will be, the Church, the Church, even when all is Ruin and a Desolation. I hope they will seriously reflect on the few Particulars that I have, out of many more, laid together in this Introduction, and see what Weight may be in them, and look about them, to consider the Dangers we are in, before it is too late : But what can be said of those, who are already going into some of the worst Parts of Popery. It is well known, that in Practice, the Necessity of Auricular Confession, and the Priestly Absolution, with the Conceit of the Sacrifice of the Mass, are the most gainful Parts of Popery, and are indeed those that do most effectually subdue the World to it. The Independence of the Church on the State, is also so contended for, as if it were on Design to disgrace our Reformation. The indispensable Necessity of the Priesthood to all Sacred Functions, is carried in the Point of Baptism further than Popery. Their Devotions are openly recommended, and a Union with the Gallican Church has been impudently proposed ; the Reformation and the Reformers are by many daily vilified ; and that Doctrine that has been most universally maintained by our best Writers, I mean the Supremacy of the Crown, is on many Occasions arraigned. What will all these things end in ! And on what Design are they driven ! Alas it is too visible.*

*God be thanked there are many among us that stand upon the Watch Tower, and that give faithful Warning ; that stand in the Breach, and make themselves a Wall for their Church and Country ; that cry to God Day and Night, and lie in the Dust mourning before him, to avert those Judgments that seem to hasten towards us : They search into the Mystery of Iniquity that is working among us, and acquaint themselves with all that Mass of Corruption that is in Popery. They have another Notion of the Worship of God, than to dress it up as a splendid Opera : They have a just Notion of Priesthood, as a Function that imports a Care of Souls, and Solemn performing the Publick Homage we owe to God ; but do not invert it to a Political Piece of Craft, by which Mens Secrets are to be discovered, and all are subdued by a Tyranny that reaches to Mens Souls, as well as their Worldly Concerns. In a word, they consider Religion in the Soul, as a secret Sense of Divine Matters, which purifies all Mens Thoughts, and governs all their Words and Actions : And in this Light they propose it to their People, warning them against all Dangers, and against all Deceivers of all sorts : Watching over them as those that must give an Account to the Great Bishop of Souls, feeding the Flock over which the Holy Ghost has made them Overseers, ready to lay down their Lives for them, looking for their Crown from the Chief Shepherd, when he shall appear.*

*May the Number of these good and faithful Servants encrease daily more and more ; may their Labours be so blessed, that they may see the Travail of their Soul and be satisfied ; and may many by their Means, and by their Example, be so awakened, that they may resist even to Blood, striving against Sin, and against the Man of Sin : And may I be of that Number, labouring while it is Day, and ready when the Night comes, either to lie down and rest in the Grave ; or if God calls me to it, to Seal that Doctrine, which I have been preaching now above Fifty Years, with my Blood : May his Holy Will be done, so I may but Glorify him in my Soul and Body, which are his.*



---

The Third Part  
OF THE  
HISTORY  
OF THE  
REFORMATION  
OF THE  
Church of England.

---

BOOK I.

---

*Of Matters, that happen'd in the Time comprehended in the First Book of the History of the Reformation.*



BEFORE I enter on the Affairs of *England*, I have thought it would be of great Use to prepare the Reader for what relates to them ; by setting before him the Progress of that Agreement, into which the *French* King's Affairs carried him ; by which he deliver'd up One Great Part of the Liberties of the *Gallican* Church to the Pope, and invaded the rest himself. This was carried on in a Course of many Years ; and the Scene lying next us, and it being concluded in the very Time in which the Breach of this Nation was far carried on, in the Year 1532, I thought it would not be an improper Beginning of my Work, to set out that Matter very copiously ; since it is highly probable, that it had a great Influence on all who were capable to reflect on it.



The greatest Transaction that happened in this Period, being the setting up the *Concordate*, in the room of the *Pragmatick Sanction*, by *Francis* the First, it will be necessary in order to the clear opening of the Matter, to look back into the former Ages.

The Progress  
of the Papal  
Usurpations

ANNO

1300.

The Progress the Papacy had made from Pope *Gregory* the VIIth, to Pope *Boniface* the VIIIth's Time, in little more than 230 Years, is an amazing thing: The one begun the Pretension to depose Kings, the other in the Jubilee that he first opened, went in Procession thro' *Rome*, the first Day attired as Pope, and the next Day attired as Emperor, declaring, That all Power, both Spiritual and Temporal, was in him, and derived from him: And he cried out with a loud Voice, *I am Pope and Emperor, and have both the Earthly and Heavenly Empire*; and he made a solemn Decree in these Words, *We Say, Define, and Pronounce, that it is absolutely necessary to Salvation, for every Human Creature to be subject to the Bishop of Rome*. The Holy War, as it was called, was a great Part of the Business of that Interval; by which the Authority and Wealth of the Papacy received no small Addition: It is true, the Removal of the Popes to *Avignon*, and the Schism that followed upon the Popes Return to *Rome*, did put no small Stop to that growing Power, and to the many and great Usurpations, and Inventions not known to former Ages, which were set on foot to draw all People into a servile Dependence on the Popes.

The Schism in  
the Papacy.

This long Schism between the Popes that sat at *Rome* and *Avignon*, was the best Conjunction the Bishops could ever have hoped for, to recover their Authority; which had been for some Ages oppressed; and indeed trodden under foot by the Papacy. And if that had happened in a less ignorant Age, it is very probable there would have been more effectual Provisions made against it. The Bishops that met at *Constance*, did not apprehend that the Continuance of that Breach was that in which their Strength lay: They made too much haste to heal it; but they soon found that when all was again united, none of the Regulations that they made, could restrain a Power that pretended to know no Limits. The greatest Security of the Church, as they thought, was in the Act for Perpetual General Councils; which were to meet after short Intervals; and in the Act for Subjecting the Popes to the Councils, requiring them to call them and the Council to meet at the End of Ten Years, whether the Pope summoned it, or not.

The Council  
of *Basil*.

But these proved feeble Restraints; yet the Council of *Basil* did fit pursuant to the Decree made at *Constance*: And the Bishops who met there, endeavoured as much as their low Size of Learning could direct then, to set forward a Reformation of those Abuses that were brought into the Church, and that supported the Despotick Power which the Popes had assumed. They reckoned a Regulation of the Elections of Bishops was the laying a good Foundation, and the setting of Pillars and Bases upon which the Fabrick of the Church might securely rest. Many Bishops were made by Papal Provisions; these they simply condemned: Others were promoted by the Power and Favour of Princes; to which Ambitious Men recommended themselves by base Compliances, and simoniacal Bargains; in Opposition

to these, they restored Elections to the Chapters, with as good Provisions as they could contrive, that they should be well managed. 1300.

A Contest falling in upon their Proceedings, between them, and Pope *Eugenius* the IVth, they addressed themselves to *Charles* the VIIth King of *France*, for his Protection. They sent him the Decrees they had made against *Annats*, that is, First-Fruits; a late Device of Pope *Boniface* the IXth, then about 50 Years standing, pretending to carry on a War against the *Turk* by that Aid. They also condemned *Gratias Expectativas*, or the Survivances of Bishopricks, and other Benefices; with all Clauses of Reservations in Bulls, by which Popes reserved to themselves at pleasure, such Things as were in a Bishop's Collation. They appointed Elections to be confirmed by the Metropolitan, and not by the Pope. They condemned all Fees and Exactions upon Elections, except only a Salary for the Writers Pains; and all Appeals, except to the immediate Superior; with all Appeals from a Grievance, unless it was such that the final Sentence must turn upon it: And when the Appeal rose up by all intermediate Steps to the Pope, it was to be judged by Delegates appointed to sit upon the Place, where the Cause lay, or in the Neighbourhood: Only the Causes marked expressly in the Law, as *greater Causes*, were reserved to the Pope. Provision was made for the Encouragement of Learning, and of the Universities, that the Benefices that fell in any Collator's Gift, should be in every Third Month of the Year, given to Men that had been, during a limited number of Years, bred in them; and had upon due Trial obtained Degrees in them. If a Bishop had Ten Benefices in his Gift, the Pope might name to One; and if Fifty, to Two, but to no more. Some of the Provisions relate to the Discipline and Order of the Cathedral Churches: But the main Thing of all was their declaring the Council to be above the Pope; that the Pope was bound to submit to it, and that Appeals lay to it from him.

The Pope and Council quarrel.

The First Breach between the Pope and the Council, was made up afterwards by the Interposition of *Sigismund* the Emperor: The Pope recalled his Censures, confessed he had been misled, and ratified all that the Council had done: But that lasted not long; for upon the Pretence of treating a Reconciliation with the *Greek Church*, some moved for a Translation of the Council to *Ferrara*; but the Majority opposed it: Yet the Pope did translate it thither. Upon which the Council condemned that Bull, and proceeded against *Eugenius*. He on the other Hand declared them to be no Council, and excommunicated them: They on their Part deposed him, and chose another Pope, *Amedee* Duke of *Savoy*, who took the Name of *Felix*: He had retired from his Principality, and upon that, they again begged the Protection of *France*.

1438.

The King being thus applied to by them, summoned a great Assembly to meet at *Bourgos*; where the *Dauphin*, the *Princes* of the *Blood*, many of the Nobility, and many Bishops met. They would not approve the Deposition of the Pope, nor the new Election of *Felix*: But yet they rejected the Meeting of *Ferrara*, and adhered to that at *Basil*. The Decrees past at *Basil* were by them reduced into the Form of an Edict; and published under the Title of the *Pragmatick Sanction*:

The Pragmatick Sanction made in *France*.



1438.

*Sanction*: Which the King declared he would have to be inviolably observed; and he resolved to moderate Matters between the Pope and the Council.

The Effects it had.

There are very different Relations made of the Effects that this Edict had: Some say that the Church of *France* began to put on a new Face upon it, and that Men were advanced by Merit, and not as formerly by Applications to the Court of *Rome*; nor Solicitations at the Court of *France*: "Others give a most tragical Representation of " Elections, as managed by Faction, indirect Arts, the Solicitations " of Women, and simoniacal Bargains; and in some Places by open " Violence; out of which, many Suits were brought into the Courts " of Law. The Treasure of the Church was, as they said, applied " to maintain these; the Fabrick was let go to Ruin; and Bishops " Houses dilapidated. Pope *Leo* the Xth in his Bull that abrogates " this Sanction, enumerates many Evils that arose out of these Ele- " ctions, and that in particular, Simony and Perjury prevailed in " them, of which he says he had undeniable Evidence, in the many " Absolutions and Reabilitations that were demanded of him. This might be boldly alledged, because it could not be disproved, how false soever it might be.

There might be some Instances of Faction, which were no doubt aggravated by the Flatterers of the Court of *Rome*: For the Profits which came from *France* being stop'd by the *Pragmatick*, all Arts were used to disgrace it.

The Pope condemns it.

*Eneas Silvius* was counted one of the ablest Men of that Time. He was Secretary to the Council of *Basil*, and wrote copiously in Defence of it against the Pope: But he was gained over to the Interests of the Court of *Rome*; he had a Cardinal's Hat, and was afterwards advanced to the Popedom, and reigned by the Name of *Pius* the IIId. He retracted all his former Writings, but never answered them: Yet he was so barefac'd in setting himself to Sale, that when he was reproached for changing Sides, he answered, The Popes gave Dignities, Abbies, Bishopricks, and Red Hats to their Creatures; but he asked, how many such good Things did the Council give.

In a Council at Mantua.

1458.

He distinguished himself as Deserters are apt to do, by railing at all that the Council of *Basil* had done, and against the *Pragmatick Sanction*. He branded it as a *Heresy*: And in a Council that he held at *Mantua* 20 Years after, he inveighed severely against it. He said, Bishops thought to have established their Power, but on the contrary their Authority was ruined by it: For Ecclesiastical Causes were brought into the Secular Courts, and all Things were put into the King's Hands: Yet that *Sanction* was observed in *France* till the King's Death; and though some were persuaded to go to *Rome*, and to procure Bulls, these were esteemed no better than Traitors and Enemies to the Country. It is true, upon this the Courts of Parliament took upon them to judge in all Ecclesiastical Matters, and to examine whether the Ecclesiastical Courts had proceeded according to the Laws of the Church or not: And that the Sentences of the Temporal Courts might be executed, they ordered the Revenues of Bishops, if they stood out in Contumacy, to be seized into the King's Hands, and their Persons to be arrested.

When

When *Danefius* the Attorney-General heard how Pope *Pius* had arraigned the *Pragmatick Sanction*, and that he was designing to proceed to Censures against the King and his Ministers, he protested against all he had said, referring the Decision of the Matter to a General Council.

1458.

Upon that King's Death he was succeeded by *Lewis* the XIth; *Lewis* the XIth abrogates it. and the Bishop of *Arras* having great Credit with him, the Pope gained him by the Promise of a Cardinal's Hat, to use his Endeavours to get the King to abrogate the *Sanction*; and because he thought that which might work most on the King, was the Apprehension that much Money which was now kept within the Kingdom, would upon the laying it aside, be carried to *Rome*; this Expedient was offered, that there should be a Legate Resident in *France*, with Powers to grant such Bulls as were necessary: Though this was never done, and it seems it was only offered as a Specious Concession to gain their Point. King *Lewis* the XIth's Character is given us so fully by *Philip de Comines*, who knew him well, that none who have read him, will wonder to find, that when he needed any Favour from the Court of *Rome*, he made the fullest Submission that any King perhaps ever made: He in a Letter that he wrote to the Pope, owns *the Pope to be God's Vicar on Earth, to whose Words he will always hearken and obey: And therefore, though the Pragmatick Sanction was received* Councils Tom. 14. p. 97. *upon long Deliberation, in a great Assembly, and was now fully settled, yet since the Pope desired that it might be abrogated, and since the Bishop of Arras had put him in mind of the Solemn Promise that he had made by him, before he came to the Crown, he reckoning that Obedience was better than all Sacrifice, since that Sanction was made in a Time of Sedition and Schism, so that by it his Kingdom was not conform to other Kingdoms; though many Men studied to maintain it, yet he resolved to follow and obey the Pope's Orders; therefore he abrogates it entirely, and does of his own accord, not compelled in any sort, restore him to the Authority that Martin the Vth, and Eugenius the IVth, did exercise in former Times: And bids him use the Power given him by God, at his Pleasure: And promises on the Word of a King, that he will take care that all his Commands shall be executed within his Kingdom, without Opposition or Appeal; and that he will punish such as are Contumacious, as the Pope shall direct.*

Here was an entire Submission, penned no doubt by the aspiring Cardinal. It was received at *Rome* with no small Joy; the *Pragmatick* was dragged about the Streets of *Rome*, the Pope wept for Joy, and at Mass on *Christmass-Eve*, he consecrated a Sword with a rich Scabbard, to be sent to the King. The Title of the *Most Christian King* had been given by former Popes to some Kings of *France*; but Pope *Pius* was the Person who upon this high Merit, made it one of the Titles of the Crown: Such as read *de Comines* History, will not find any other Merit in that King, to entitle him to so Glorious a Compellation. To the Pope's great joy.

The Court of Parliament of *Paris* interposed; they made a noble Remonstrance to the King, in which they pressed him to maintain the *Pragmatick Sanction*, which had its Original from a General Council, and they affirmed that the King was obliged to maintain it. The Parliament of Paris oppose it,



1458. Yet afterwards, that King's Project of engaging the Pope to assist his Son-in-Law to recover *Sicily*, then possessed by the Bastard of *Arragon*, did miscarry, the Pope refusing to concur in it ; upon which, the King was offended, and carried his Submissions no farther ; only he suffered Bulls of Reservations and Survivances to take place again.

The honest  
Courage of  
the Attorney-  
General.

This Matter was taken up again Six Years after by Pope *Paul* the IId. A new Minister was gained by the same Bait of a Cardinal's Hat, to procure the Revocation : So the King's Edict was sent to the Court of Parliament of *Paris* to be registred there, in Vacation Time. The Court ordered the Attorney-General to examine it. *St. Romain* was then Attorney-General, and he behaved himself with such Courage, that he was much celebrated for it. " He opposed the Registering it, and spoke much in the Praise of the *Pragmatick Sanction* ; " he shewed the ill Consequences of repealing it. That it would let " in upon them Abuses of all sorts, which were by it condemned : " All Affairs relating to the Church would be settled at *Rome* ; many " would go and live there, in hopes of making their Fortunes by " Provisions. He set forth that 10 or 12 Bulls of Survivances were " sometimes obtained upon the same Benefice ; and during Three " Years in Pope *Pius's* Time (in which the exact Observation of the " *Pragmatick Sanction* was let fall) 22 Bishopricks happening to fall " void, 500000 Crowns were sent to *Rome* to obtain Bulls ; and 62 " Abbies being then vacant, a like Sum was sent for their Bulls, and " 120000 Crowns were sent to obtain other Ecclesiastical Preferments. " He added that for every Parish there might be a Bull, of a *Gratia Ex-* " *pectativa*, or Survivance, purchased at the Price of 25 Crowns ; be- " sides a vast number of other Graces and Dispensations. He insisted " that the King was bound to maintain the Rights and Liberties of the " Church in his Kingdom, of which he was the Founder, and De- " fender.

For which he  
was turned  
out.

The aspiring Cardinal offended with this honest Freedom of the Attorney-General, told him he should fall under the King's Displeasure, and lose his Place for it. He answered, the King had put him " in the Post freely, he would Discharge it Faithfully, as long as the " King thought fit to continue him in it ; and he was ready to lay it " down whensoever it pleased the King ; but he would suffer all " Things, rather than do any Thing against his Conscience, the " King's Honour, and the Good of the Kingdom. The Favourite prevailed to get him turn'd out, but the Crafty King gave him secretly great Rewards ; he esteemed him the more for his Firmness, and restored him again to his Place.

The University of *Paris* also interposed, and the Rector told the Legate, that if the Matter was further prosecuted, they would Appeal to a General Council : But this notwithstanding, and tho' the Court of Parliament stood firm, yet the King being under the Apprehensions of some Practice of his Brothers of *Rome*, whom he hated mortally ; in order to the defeating those, renewed his Promises for abrogating the *Pragmatick Sanction* ; and it was for many Years let fall into Disuetude. Towards the End of this Reign an Assembly was held at *Orleans*, in order to the re-establishing the *Pragmatick Sanction* ;

*Sanction*; and the hindring Money to be carried to *Rome*. The King died 1583.

1458.

Upon *Charles* the VIIIth's succeeding, an Assembly of the States was held at *Tours*; in which the Observation of the *Pragmatick Sanction* was earnestly press'd; the Third Estate insisted on having it entirely restor'd. The Prelates, who had been promoted contrary to it under King *Lewis*, opposed this vehemently; and were in Reproach call'd the Court Bishops, unduly promoted; and were charged, as Men that aspir'd to Favour at *Rome*. *St. Romain*, now again Attorney-General, said, He knew no Ecclesiastical Law better calculated to the Interest of the Kingdom, than the *Pragmatick Sanction* was; and therefore he would support it. The King saw it was for his Advantage to maintain it, and so was firmly resolved to adhere to it. The Courts of Parliament not only judged in Favour of Elections made by Virtue of that Sanction, but by earnest Remonstrances, they press'd the King, to prohibit the Applications made to the Court of *Rome* for Graces condemned by it.

The *Pragmatick Sanction* re-established.

*Innocent* the VIIIth continued by his Legates to press the entire Repeal of the *Pragmatick*; yet notwithstanding all Opposition, it continued to be observed during *Charles* the VIIIth's Reign. *Lewis* the XIIth did, by a Special Edict, appoint it to be for ever observ'd. Thus it continued till the Council of *Lateran*, summon'd by Pope *Julius* the II<sup>d</sup>. to which *Silvester*, Bishop of *Worcester*, and Sir *Robert Wingfield*, were Commission'd by King *Henry* the VIIIth, to go "in his Name, and on Behalf of the Kingdom, to conclude every " thing for the good of the Catholick Church, and for a Reformation, both in the Head, and in the Members; and to consent to " all Statutes and Decrees for the Publick Good: Promising to ratify whatever they, or any of them should do. The King's Empowering Two Persons in such a manner, seems no small Invasion of the Liberties of the Church; but it was in the Pope's Favour, so it was not challenged.

But it was still complain'd of by the Popes.

1499.

*Rymer*, To. 13.  
17. Feb. 1511.

This Council was call'd by that angry Pope chiefly against *Lewis* the XIIth: And the *Pragmatick Sanction* was arraigned in it; both because it maintained the Authority of the Council to be Superior to the Pope, and because it cut off the Advantages that the Court had made by the Bulls sent into *France*. The Pope brought *Lewis* the XIth's Letters Patents, by which it was abrogated, into the Council; and the Advocate of the Council, after he had severely arraigned it, insisted to have it condemned. So a Monition was decreed, summoning all who would appear for it, to come and be heard upon it within 60 Days. The Pope died in *February* thereafter.

Pope *Leo* the Xth succeeded, and renewed the Monitory Letters issued out by his Predecessor. But the Personal Hatred with which *Julius* prosecuted *Lewis* being at an end, Things were more calmly managed. Some Bishops were sent from the *Gallican* Church, to assist in the Council: But before any thing could be concluded, King *Lewis* dying, *Francis* succeeded. He understood that the Pope and the Council were intending to proceed against the *Pragmatick Sanction*, so he resolv'd to bring the Matter to an Agreement; in which some Progress was made, in an Interview that he had with the Pope

Condemn'd by the Council in the *Lateran*.



1516.

at *Bononia*. It was concluded by a Sanction called the *Concordate* between the Cardinals of *Ancona* and of *Sanctorum Quatuor*, on the Pope's Side, and Chancellor *Prat* for the King. Some small Differences remained ; which were all yielded as the Pope desired : And in the Month of *December*, the Pope's Bull, condemning the *Pragmatick Sanction*, was read, and approved by that Council, such as it was.

The *Concordate* put instead of it.

The *Concordat* was put instead of it. The Truth was, *Francis* was young ; and was so set on pursuing his Designs in *Italy*, in which he saw the Advantage of having the Pope on his Side, that he sacrific'd all other Considerations to that, and made the best Bargain he could. " The King and the Pope divided the Matter between them. When any Bishoprick became vacant, the King was " within Six Months to Name to it, a Doctor, or one Licens'd in " Divinity, of the Age of 27. If the Pope did not approve of the " Nomination, the King had Three Months more to Nominate another ; but if he fail'd again, the Pope was to provide one to the " See. The Pope had reserv'd to himself the Providing of all that " became vacant in the Court of *Rome* : (A Pretension the Popes had " set on foot, in which by degrees they had enlarged the Extent of " it to very great and undetermined Bounds ; and did thereby dispose " of many Benefices.) And the King was limited in his Nomination, " by some Conditions, with relation to the Person so nominated ; " yet the want of these was not to be objected to the King's Kindred " or to other Illustrious Persons. The King was also to Nominate " to all Abbeys a Person of 23 Years of Age. *Gratie Expectativæ*, " or Survivances and Reservations in Bulls, were never to be admitted : Only One Benefice might be reserv'd from a Collator of 10 ; " and 2, from one of 50. Causes of Appeals were to be judged in " *Partibus*, in the Parts where the Matters lay ; excepting the Causes enumerated in the Law, as *greater Causes*. It was also provided, that in all Bulls that were obtained, the true Value of the Benefice was to be express'd ; otherwise the Grace was null and void. No Mention was made of Annats ; and in other Particulars, the Articles in the *Pragmatick Sanction* were insert'd. The Pope promised he would send a Legate to *France*, to Tax the Value of all Ecclesiastical Benefices. All former Excommunications were taken off, with an Indemnity for all that was pass'd.

King *Francis* carried it to the Parliament of *Paris*.

The King having the Two Instruments, the one abrogating the *Pragmatick Sanction*, and the other establishing the *Concordat*, sent in great Pomp to him, in order to their being Registred in Parliament ; resolv'd only to offer the latter, as that in which the other was virtually comprehended. So he went in Person to the Court of Parliament, to which many Great Men, Divines, and other Persons of Distinction were called. The Chancellor set forth the Hatred Pope *Julius* bore King *Lewis* the XIIth, and the Violence with which he had proceeded against him : The King succeeding when the Council of the *Lateran* was assembled ; which was compos'd chiefly of Members of the Court, or of Dependents on the Court of *Rome* ; who were all engag'd against the *Pragmatick Sanction*, as that which diminish'd their Profits : The King saw it was in vain to

to insist in defending it : But apprehending, if it were simply condemned, all the Old Oppressions would again take place, he being then engaged in a most dangerous War in *Italy*, saw no better way to gain the Pope than by agreeing to the *Concordat*. 1516.

The Ecclesiasticks who were present, said by their Mouth the Cardinal of *Basil*, that the *Concordat* did so affect the Whole *Gallican Church*, that without a General Consent it could not be approved. The King upon this said with some Indignation, that he would Command them either to Approve it, or he would send them to *Rome*, to dispute the Matter there with the Pope. The President answered in the Name of the Court, that he would report the King's Pleasure to the Court ; and they would so proceed in that Matter, as to please both God and the King : The Chancellor replied, The Court were Wise : The King said, he did enjoin them to Obey without delay. Then Letters Patents were made out, setting forth the *Concordat*, and requiring the Court of Parliament, and all other Judges to observe it, and to see it fully executed. It was there opposed by the Ecclesiasticks of that Court.

Some Days after that, the Chancellor, with some of the Officers of the Crown, came and brought the Whole Courts together, and delivered them the King's Letters Patents, requiring them to Register the *Concordat*. They upon that, appointed the King's Council to examine the Matters in it. The Advocate General did, in the Chancellor's Presence, represent the Inconvenience of receiving the *Concordats*, by which the Liberties of the *Gallican Church* were lessened, and said that by the Paying of *Annats*, much Money would be carried out of the Kingdom : So he desired they would appoint a Committee to examine it. Four were named, who after they had sate about it Ten Days, desired more might be added to them ; so the President of the *Enquets*, or Inquisitions, and Four more, were joined to them. A Week after that, the Advocate General moved the Court, to proceed still to judge according to the *Pragmatick*, and not to receive the Revocation of it, against which he put in an Appeal. Four Days after this, the Bastard of *Savoy*, the King's Natural Uncle, came into the Court, with Orders from the King, requiring them to proceed immediately to the Publishing the *Concordats* ; appointing him to hear all their Debates, that he might report all to the King. He told them how much the King was offended with their Delays : They on the other hand complained of his being present to hear them deliver their Opinions. They sent some of their Number to lay this before the King ; it looked like a Design to frighten them, when One, not of their Body, was to hear all that passed among them. The King said there were some Worthy Men among them, but others, like Fools, complained of him, and of the Expence of his Court : He was a King, and had as much Authority as his Predecessors. They had flattered *Lewis* the XIIth, and called him the *Father of Justice* : He would also have Justice done with all Vigour. In *Lewis's* Time some were banished the Kingdom because they did not Obey him ; so if they did not Obey him, he would send some of them to *Bourdeaux*, and others to *Toulouse*, and put good Men in their Places : And told them he would have his Uncle present, during their Deliberation : So they were forced to submit to it. Opposition made to it by the King's learned Council.



1517.

They resolve  
not to publish  
it.

On the 13th of *June* they began to deliver their Opinions, and that lasted till the 24th of *July*: And then they concluded that the Court could not, and ought not, to Register the *Concordats*: But that they would still observe the *Pragmatick Sanction*; and that the University of *Paris*, and all others that desired to be heard, ought to be heard. Therefore they said they must Appeal from the Abrogation of the *Pragmatick Sanction*; and if the King would insist to have the *Concordat* observed, a Great Assembly ought to be summoned, such as *Charles* the VIIth had called to settle the *Pragmatick*. They also charged the *Savoyard* to make a true Report to the King of their Proceedings.

The King was  
highly offend-  
ed at this.

Upon this the King wrote to them, to send some of their Body to give him an Account of the Grounds they went on: Two were sent, but it was long before they were admitted to his Presence: The King saying he would delay their Dispatch, as they had delayed his Business. When they were admitted, they were ordered to put what they had to offer in Writing: This they did, but desired to be likewise heard: But being asked, if they had any Thing to offer that was not in their Paper; they said they had not, but desired the King would hear their Paper read to him; the King refused it. They were a Body of One Hundred Persons, and had been preparing their Paper above Seven Months, but the Chancellor would answer it in less Time: And the King would not suffer them to have a verbal Process against what he had done. He told them there was but One King in *France*: He had done the best he could to bring all to a quiet State, and would not suffer that which he had done in *Italy*, to be undone in *France*; nor would he suffer them to assume an Authority like that of the Senate of *Venice*. It was their Business to do Justice, but not to put the Kingdom in a Flame, as they had attempted to do in his Predecessor's Time: He concluded, he would have them Approve the *Concordats*; and if they gave him more Trouble, he would make them Ambulatory, and to follow his Court: Nor would he suffer any more Ecclesiasticks to be of their Body. They were not entirely his Subjects, since he had no Authority to cut off their Heads: They ought to say their Breviary, and not to meddle in his Affairs.

They answered him, that these Things were contrary to the Constitution of their Court. He said he was sorry his Ancestors had so constituted it, but he was King as well as they were; and he would settle them on another Foot: So he bid them begone early the next Morning. They begg'd a short delay, for the Ways were bad; but the Great Master told them from the King, that if they were not gone by such an Hour, he would put them in Prison, and keep them in it Six Months, and then he would see who would move to set them at Liberty: So they went to *Paris*. The Duke of *Tremoville* was sent after them to the Parliament, to let them know that the King would have the *Concordats* to be immediately published, without any further Deliberation: They must Obey the King as became Subjects; he told them the King had repeated that Ten Times to him, in the Space of a Quarter of an Hour; and concluded, that if they delayed any longer to Obey the King, the King would make all the Court feel the Effects of his Displeasure.

The

The Court called for the King's learned Council, but they said they had received positive Orders from the King by *Tremoville*, to consent to the *Concordats*; otherwise the King would treat them so that they should feel it sensibly: The Advocate General said he was sorry for the Methods the King took; but he wished they would consider what might follow, if they continued to deny what was so earnestly pressed on them: The publishing of this could be of no Force, since the Church, that was so much concerned in it, was neither called for, nor heard; the Thing might be afterwards set right, for *Lewis* the XIth saw his Error, and changed his Mind. He offered Two Things to soften that which was required of them: One was to insert in the Register, that it was done in Obedience to the King's Commands often repeated: The other was, that they should declare that they did not approve the Abrogation of the *Pragmatick Sanction*, but were then only to publish the *Concordats*; and that they might resolve in all their judiciary Proceedings to have no regard to that; And in particular to that Clause, that all Bulls were void if the true Value of the Benefice was not expressed in them. On the 18th of *March* they came to this Resolution, that their Decree of the 24th of *July*, for observing the *Pragmatick*, was by them fully confirmed; but in Obedience to the King's Commands, they published the *Concordats*; adding a Protestation, that the Court did not approve it, but intended in all their Sentences to judge according to the *Pragmatick Sanction*.

The King's learned Council oppose it no longer.

1518.

The Court made these Protestations in the Hands of the Bishop of *Langres*, a Duke and Peer of *France*, setting forth that their Liberty was taken from them; that the Publication of the *Concordats* was not done by their Order, but against their Mind, by the King's express Order; and that they did not intend to approve it, nor to be governed by it in their Judgments, but to observe the *Pragmatick Sanction*. They ordered likewise an Appeal to be made from the Pope, to the Pope better advised, and to the next General Council: Upon all which the Bishop of *Langres* made an Authentick Instrument; so it was resolved to proceed to Publication on the 22d of *March*: But on the 21st, the Rector of the University of *Paris*, accompanied by some of that Body, and by some Advocates, appeared, desiring to be heard before they should proceed to such Publication. The Court received his Petition, and promised to consider it: But said if they made the Publication it should not prejudice any of their Rights, for they were resolved to judge as formerly, notwithstanding that: Yet they required him not to publish this. The Dean of *Nostredame* came on the 22d to the Court, and said they heard they were going to publish the *Concordats*, which both implied their condemning the Councils of *Constance* and *Basil*, and tended to the Destruction of the Liberties of the *Gallican Church*, which the Popes had always envied them. He desired they would not proceed to it, 'till the Whole *Gallican Church* was consulted in the Matter; and protested that what they were about to do, should not be to the Prejudice of the Church. After this was received, they proceeded to the Publication, as they had promised, adding these Words to it, *Read, Published, and Registered, by the Order and Command of the King*

The Parliament publishes it, but with a Protestation.



1518. *King often repeated to us, in the Presence of the Lord of Tremoville his First Chamberlain, specially sent to have it done.* And on the 24th of *March* they renewed their Protestation, that they did not approve of it; that they insisted in their former Appeals, and were resolved to proceed in all their Judgments without regard to it.

The University and Clergy oppose it.

On the 27th of *March*, the Rector of the University ordered a Mandat to be affixed, prohibiting their Printers to print the *Concordats*: He likewise appealed from the Pope, to a General Council, lawfully assembled, sitting in a safe Place, and in full Freedom. This was printed and affixed: And great Reflections were made by some Preachers in their Sermons, both on the King, and on the Chancellor. The King being informed of this, wrote to the first President, complaining both of the Rector, and of the Preachers: He ordered them to take Informations of all those Matters, and to get the *Concordats* to be printed as soon as was possible, and to punish the Authors of Sedition. But the Court said they knew nothing tending that way; for their Business took them up so entirely, that they could not attend on Sermons. The King complained likewise severely of the Appeal they had made; he was Monarch, and had no Superior, to whom an Appeal could lie: He also sent an Order to inhibit all Meetings in the University.

The Exceptions to the Concordat by the Parliament.

In the *Concordat* it was provided, that if it was not published within Six Months in *France*, it should be null and void: But the Delays that had been made, put the King on getting that Term prolonged a Year longer. “ The Three Chief Exceptions that the Parliament had to the *Concordats*, were, *First*, the declaring Bulls void, if the true Value of the Benefices was not set forth in them; which might put the Obtainers of them to great Charge and many Suits: “ The *Second*, was the carrying the *Greater Causes* to be judged at *Rome*: The *Third*, was concerning Elections. The *First* of these was given up, and was no further urged by the Court of *Rome*: “ But it was not settled what those *Greater Causes* were. By the *Pragmatick* they were restrained to Bishopricks and Monasteries; “ but the *Concordats* held the Matter in general Words: So the Number of these Causes was Indefinite; and on all Occasions it would increase as the Canonist pleased. They condemned that Device of the Court of *Rome*, of granting Provisions for all that was held by any who died in the Court, considering the great Extent to which that had been carried: they also found that by the *Concordats*, all Nunneries were left to the Pope’s Provision; and likewise all Inferior Dignities, such as Deanries, and Provostships. All Churches that had special Privileges, were exempted from the King’s Nomination; “ and at *Rome*, Exceptions might be unjustly made to the Persons named by the King: But above all, they stood on this, that the Right of Electing was founded on the Law of God, and on Natural Right: That this was established by the Authority of General Councils, by the Civil Law, and by many Royal Edicts, “ during all the Three Races of their Kings: This Right was now taken away without hearing the Parties concerned to set it forth. If there had crept in Abuses in Elections, these might be corrected: but they thought the King usurped “ that

“ that which did not belong to him, on this Pretence, that the Pope  
 “ granted it to him ; which was contrary both to the Doctrine and  
 “ Practice of the *Gallican Church*. They found many lesser Excep-  
 “ tions in point of Form, to the Method of Abrogating the *Pragma-*  
 “ *tick Sanction* : One was, that the Council of the *Lateran* did for-  
 “ bid all Persons that held Lands of the Church to observe or main-  
 “ tain that Sanction, under the Pain of Forfeiting those Lands ;  
 “ which was a plain Invasion of the King’s Prerogatives, who is Su-  
 “ preme Lord of all those Lands within his Dominions : The Pope  
 “ also took upon him to annul that Sanction, that then subsisted by  
 “ the Royal Authority : This might be made a Precedent in time to  
 “ come for annulling any of their Laws. They likewise thought  
 “ the taking away the *Pragmatick Sanction*, which was made upon  
 “ the Authority of the Councils of *Constance* and *Basil*, and had de-  
 “ clared the Subjection of the Pope to the Council, did set aside that  
 “ Doctrine, and set up the Pope’s Authority above the Council ; tho’  
 “ the *Pragmatick* was made while the Pope was reconciled to the  
 “ Council : And the Breach upon which *Eugenius* was deposed,  
 “ happened not till almost a Year after that ; it being published in *July*  
 “ 1438, and his Deposition was not till *June* 1439 : Besides, that 10  
 “ Years after that Pope *Nicolaus* the Fifth confirmed all the Decrees  
 “ made at *Basil*. They likewise put the King in mind of the Oath he  
 “ took at his Coronation, to maintain all the Rights and Liberties of  
 “ the *Gallican Church*. So they moved the King either to prevail  
 “ with the Pope to call a General Council, or that he would call a  
 “ National one in *France*, to judge of the whole Matter : And as  
 “ for the Threatnings given out, that the Pope would Depose the  
 “ King, and give away his Kingdom, if he did not submit to him,  
 “ they said the King held his Crown of God, and all such Threat-  
 “ nings ought to be rejected with Scorn and Indignation.

1518.

These were answered by the Chancellor.

To all these, the Chancellor made a long and flattering Answer ; for which he had the usual Reward of a Cardinal’s Cap. He set forth the Danger the King was in, being engaged in the War of *Italy* ; the Pope threatening him with Censures : for the *Pragmatick Sanction* was then condemned by the Pope, and that Censure was ratified by the Council in the *Lateran* ; upon which he would have re-assumed all the old Oppressions, if the King had not entered into that Treaty ; yielding some Points to save the rest. He said the King of the first Race nominated to Bishopricks : for which he cited Precedents from *Gregory of Tours*. So the Kings of *England* did name, and the Popes upon that gave Provisions : The Kings of *Scotland* did also name, but not by vertue of a Right, but rather by Connivance. He said Elections had gone thro’ various Forms ; sometimes Popes did elect, sometimes Princes with the People, sometimes Princes took it into their own Hands, sometimes the whole Clergy without the People, and of late the Canons chose without the Concurrence of the Clergy. That the King being in these Difficulties, all those about him, and all those in *France* who were advised with in the Matter, thought the accepting the *Concordats* was just and necessary. Pope *Leo* repented that he had granted so much : and it was not without great difficulty that he brought the Cardinals to consent to it : he went very copiously as a



1518.

Canonist thro' the other Heads, softning some Abuses, and shewing that others had a long Practice for them, and were observed in other Kingdoms.

The Matter  
finally settled.

And thus was this Matter carried in the Parliament of *Paris*, in which as the Court shewed great Integrity and much Courage, which deserve the highest Characters, with which such Noble Patriots ought to be honoured ; so in this Instance, we see how feeble the Resistance even of the Worthiest Judges will prove to a Prince, who has possessed himself of the whole Legislative Authority ; when he intends to break thro' Established Laws and Constitutions, and to sacrifice the Rights of his Crown, and the Interest of his People, to serve particular Ends of his own. In such Cases the generous Integrity of Judges, or other Ministers, will be resented as an Attempt on the Sovereign Authority : And such is the Nature of Arbitrary Power, that the most modest Defence of Law and Justice, when it crosses the Designs of an insolent and corrupt Minister, and an abused Prince, will pass for Disobedience and Sedition.

If the Assembly of the States in *France* had maintained their share of the Legislative Power, and had not suffered the Right they once had to be taken from them, of being liable to no Taxes, but by their own Consent, these Judges would have been better supported : and the Opposition they made upon this occasion, would have drawn after it all the most signal Expressions of Honour and Esteem, that a Nation owes to the Trustees of their Laws and Liberties, when they maintain them resolutely, and dispense them equally. And the corrupt Chancellor would have received such Punishment as all wicked Ministers deserve, who for their own Ends betray the Interest of their Country.

The Parlia-  
ment still  
judged by the  
*Pragmatick*  
*Sanction*.

The Court of Parliament shewed great Firmness after this : and it appeared that the Protestation that they made of judging still according to the *Pragmatick*, was not only a Piece of Form to save their Credit. The Archbishop of *Sens* died soon after ; and the King sent to inhibit the Chapter to proceed to an Election. It was understood that he designed to give it to the Bishop of *Paris* ; so the Chapter wrote to that Bishop not to give such a Wound to their Liberties as to take it upon the King's Nomination : But seeing that he had no regard to that, they elected him, that so they might by this seem to keep up their Claim. The Bishop of *Alby* died soon after that ; the King named one, and the Chapter chose another ; upon that *Alby* being within the Jurisdiction of *Tbolouse*, the Court of Parliament there judged in favour of him who was elected by the Chapter, against him who had obtained Bulls, upon the King's Nomination : at which the King was highly offended. The Archbishoprick of *Bourges* falling void soon after, the King nominated one, and the Chapter elected another. The Chapter pretended a Special Privilege to Elect, so the Pope judged in their Favour. Some Years after this, the King carried on his Wars in *Italy*, leaving his Mother Regent of *France* ; so the Court of Parliament made a Remonstrance to Her, setting forth the Invasions that had been made upon the Rights of the *Gallican Church*, desiring her to interpose, that the *Pragmatick Sanction*, and the Liberty of Elections might again have their full Force ; but that had no Effect.

1524.

Soon

Soon after this, the King was taken Prisoner by the Army of *Charles* the Fifth at the Battel of *Pavia*: and upon that his Mother declared, that she looked on her Son's Misfortunes as a Judgment of God upon him, for his Abolishing the *Pragmatick Sanction*; and tho' she would not take it upon her to make any Alteration during her Son's Absence, yet she promised, that when he should be set at Liberty, she would use her utmost Endeavours with him, to set it up again, and to abolish the *Concordats*. This was Registred in the Records of the Court of Parliament, yet it had no Effect upon the King's Return out of *Spain*: he finding the Parliament resolved to maintain all Elections, ordered that Matter to be taken wholly out of their Cognizance, and he removed all Suits of that sort from the Courts of Parliament, to the Great Council; upon some Disputes that were then on Foot concerning a Bishoprick and an Abbey given to Chancellor *Prat*, then made a Cardinal, in Recompence of the Service he had done the Court of *Rome*: so by that an End was put to all Disputes.

Upon the King's being a Prisoner, the Concordat was more condemned.

1527.

The Parliament struggled hard against this Diminution of their Jurisdiction: they wrote to the Dukes and Peers of *France*, to move the Regent not to proceed thus to lessen their Authority: On the other hand she said, they were taking all things into their own hands in prejudice of the King's Prerogative. But the King confirmed that, and settled the Chancellor in the Possession of the See and Abbey, and the Proceedings of the Parliament against him were annulled and ordered to be struck out of their Registers: and it appearing that some Chapters and Abbies had Special Privileges for Free Elections, the King obtained a Bull from *Clement* the Seventh, suspending all those during the King's Life: The Court of *Rome* stood long upon this, and thought to have gained new Advantages, before it should be granted: But the Pope was at that Time in a Secret Treaty with the Court of *France*, which was afterwards accomplished at *Marseilles*: So he was easier in this Matter, and the Bull was Registred in Parliament in *May* there-after. And upon this the Chancellor pretending that he would see and examine those Privileges, called for them all; and when they were brought to him, he threw them all into the Fire.

These Matters removed from the Parliament to the Great Council.

1532.

But to lay all that I have found of this Matter together, the Clergy of *France*, in a Remonstrance that they made to King *Henry* the Third, affirmed, That *Francis* at his Death declared to his Son, that nothing troubled his Conscience more, than his taking away Canonical Elections, and his assuming to himself the Nomination to Bishopricks. If this was true, his Son had no regard to it, but went on as his Father had done. Upon his Death, when the Cardinal of *Lorraine* pressed the Parliament to proceed in the vigorous Prosecution of Heresy, they remonstrated, that the Growth of Heresy flowed chiefly from the Scandals that were given by bad Clergymen, and ill Bishops: And that the ill Choice that had been made by the Court, since the *Concordats* were set up, gave more occasion to the Progress that Heresy made, than any other thing whatsoever. The Courts were so monstrously corrupt, during that and the two former Reigns, that no other could be expected from them.

Remonstrances made by the Clergy against this.

1585.

1560.



1560.

An Assembly of the States was called in the Beginning of *Charles* the Ninth's Reign. In it the first Estate prayed, that the *Pragmatick Sanction* might again take place, particularly in the Point of Elections; they backed this with great Authorities of Councils, Ancient and Modern: With them the Two other Estates agreed. The Court tried to shift this off, promising to send one to *Rome* to treat about it: But that did not satisfy; so a Decree was drawn up to this Effect, That an Archbishop should be chosen by the Bishops of his Province, by the Chapter of his Cathedral, and 12 Persons of the Chief of the Laity: and a Bishop by the Metropolitan and the Chapter. The Court of Parliament opposed this: They thought the Laity ought to have no share in Elections, so they pressed the Restoring the *Pragmatick Sanction* without any Alteration; yet, in Conclusion, the Decree was thus amended: An Archbishop was to be chosen by the Bishops of the Province, and the Chapter of the See; but a Bishop was to be chosen by the Archbishop, with the Bishops of the Province, and the Chapter, and by 24 of the Laity to be thus nominated: All the Gentry were to be summoned to meet, and to chuse 12 to represent them at the Election, and the City was to chuse other 12. All these were to make a List of Three Persons to be offered to the King, and the Man named by the King was to have the See. Thus they designed to bring this Matter into a Form as near the Customs mentioned in the *Roman Law*, as they could. But this Design vanished, and was never put in Practice.

The Clergy still called for Restoring the Elections: President *Ferrier* was sent to *Rome* to obtain it. He in a long Speech shewed, that neither the *Gallican Church*, nor the Courts of Parliament, had ever received the *Concordats*; that Shadow of Approbation given to it by the Parliament of *Paris*, being extorted from them by Force; and he laid out all the Inconveniences that had happened since the *Concordats* were set up: But that Court felt the Advantages they had by them too sensibly, to be ever prevailed with to give them up: And thus that great Affair was settled in the View of this Church and Nation, at the Time that King *Henry* broke off all Correspondence with it. It may be very reasonably presumed that Inferences were made from this, to let all People see what Merchandize the Court of *Rome* made of the most Sacred Rights of the Church, when they had their own Profits secured: And therefore the Wise Men in this Church at that time might justly conclude, that their Liberties were safer while they remained an entire Body within themselves, under a legal Constitution; by which, if Princes carried their Authority too far, some Check might be given to it by those from whom the Publick Aids were to be obtained, for Supporting the Government; than while all was believed to belong to the Popes, who would at any time make a Bargain, and divide the Spoils of the Church with Crowned Heads; taking to themselves the gainful Part, and leaving the rest in the Hands of Princes.

An Apology,  
with the Rea-  
sons for this  
Digression.

I hope, tho' this Relation does not belong properly to the History of the Reformation; yet since it is highly probable it had a great Influence on Peoples Minds, this Digression will be easily forgiven me. And now I turn to such of our Affairs as fall within this Period.

The First Thing that occurred to me in order of Time, was a Letter of Queen *Katharine's* to King *Henry*, who upon his crossing the Sea, left the Regency of the Kingdom in her Hands; the Commission bears Date the 11th of *June 1513*. King *James* the IVth of *Scotland* having invaded *England* with a great Army was defeated and killed by the Earl of *Surrey*. The Earl gave the Queen the News, in a Letter to her, with One to the King; this She sent him with a Letter of her own; which being the only One of hers to the King that I ever saw, I have inserted it in my Collection. The Familiarities of calling him in one Place *My Husband*; and in another, *My Henry*, are not unpleasant. She sent with it a Piece of the King of *Scots* Coat to be a Banner: She was then going to visit, as She calls it, Our Lady of *Walsingham*.

Sept. 16,  
1513.  
Coll. Numb.  
2.  
Queen Katharine's Letter to King Henry upon the death of the King of Scotland.

I will next open an Account of the Progress of Cardinal *Wolsey's* Fortunes, and the Ascendant he had over the King. The First Step he made into the Church, was to be Rector of *Lymington* in the Diocese of *Bath* and *Wells*; then on the 30th of *July 1508*, he had a Papal Dispensation to hold the Vicarage of *Lyde*, in the Diocese of *Canterbury*, with his Rectory. There is a Grant to him as Almoner, on the 8th of *November 1509*. The next Perferment he had was to be a Prebendary of *Windfor*: He was next advanced to be Dean of *Lincoln*. A Year after that, Pope *Leo* having reserved the disposing the See of *Lincoln* to himself, gave it to *Wolsey*, designed in the Bulls Dean of *St. Stephen's Westminster*. But no mention is made of the King's Nomination. This is owned by the King in the Writ for the Restitution of the Temporalities. On the 14th of *July*, that Year, Cardinal *de Medici*, afterwards Pope *Clement* the VIIth, wrote to King *Henry*, that upon the Death of Cardinal *Bembridge*, he had prayed the Pope not to dispose of his Benefices, till he knew the King's Mind, which the Pope out of his Affection to the King granted very readily. Perhaps the King did recommend *Wolsey*, but no mention is made of that in his Bulls. The King granted the Restitution of the Temporalities of *York*, before his Installment; for in the Writ, he is only called the *Elect Archbishop*: And it is not expressed that he had the King's Nomination. He had *Tournay in Commendam*, but resigned it into the Hands of *Francis*, who for that gave him a Pension of 12000 *Livres* during Life: At the same Time Prince *Charles*, afterwards *Charles* the Vth, gave him a Pension of 3000 Pound. It seems he afterwards desired to have it better secured: So in the End of that Year Prince *Charles* lodged a Pension of 5000 *Ducats* to him, on the Bishoprick of *Pace* in *Castile*. Above a Year after that, Pope *Leo* gave him a Pension of 2000 *Ducats* out of *Palencia*, instead of that which was charged on the Bishoprick of *Pace*. Besides all this, when *Charles* the Vth was in *London*, he gave him another Pension of 9000 Crowns, dated the 8th of *June 1522*. It seems he had other Pensions from *France*; for Five Years after this, there was an Arrear stated there as due to him, of 121898 Crowns. He had also Pensions from other Princes of a lower Order. The Duke of *Milan's* Secretary did by his Master's express Order, engage in the Year 1515, to pay *Wolsey* 10000 *Ducats* a Year, he on his Part engaging, that there should be a perpetual Friendship settled, between the Kings of *England* and *France*, with that Duke.

The Progress of Wolsey's rise.

July 14.  
1514.

Rymer Tom.  
13.  
August 5.

July 13.  
1518.

Decemb. 16.  
1518.

March 29.  
1520.

Novemb 18.  
1525.  
Rymer Vol.

12.



Decemb. 2. The French King being a Prisoner, his Favour was necessary in that Distress, so the Regent engaged to pay it in Seven Years Time. 1524. But whatever may be in *Wolsey's* Provisions, when the Bishoprick of *Salisbury* was given to Cardinal *Campegio* by a Bull, mention is expressly made in it, of the King's Letters, interceeding humbly for him.

King Henry's  
Book of the  
Seven Sacra-  
ments.

Coll. Numb.  
3.

1521.

Ut Spiritum  
affuisse San-  
ctum appa-  
reat.

Coll. Numb.  
4.

When King *Henry* wrote this Book of the *Seven Sacraments*, it seems it was at first designed to send it over in Manuscript: For *Wolsey* sent One to the King finely dressed, that was to be presented to the Pope: And he writes that he was to send him more, which were to be sent about with the Pope's Bulls to all Princes, and Universities: One in particular, as he writes, was far more Excellent and Princely: He also sent with it the Choice of certain Verses, to be written in the King's own Hand, in the Book that was to be sent to the Pope, and subscribed by him, to be laid up in the Archives of the Church, to his Immortal Glory and Memory. The Matter was so laid, that the Book was presented to the Pope on the 10th of *October*; and the very Day after, the Bull giving him the Title of *Defender of the Faith* bears Date: And in a private Letter that Pope *Leo* wrote to him, he runs out into copious Strains of Flattery, affirming, *That it appeared that the Holy Ghost assisted him in Writing it.*

The King was so pleased with the Title, that *Wolsey* directed his Letters to him with it on the back, as appears in a Letter of his, that sets forth the low State of the Affairs of *Spain* in *Italy*. It appears it was written (for the Year is not added in the Date) after that *Luther* wrote his Answer to the King's Book, at least after Letters came from him on the Subject; the Original of which he desires might be sent him, that he might send it to the Pope: And he intended to send Copies both of those, and of the King's Answers to the Cardinal of *Mentz*, and to *George Duke of Saxony*.

*Wolsey* sent to  
*Charles* the  
Vth, gained  
by him.

1521.

Coll. Numb.  
5.

After the King's Interviews both with the Emperor, and the King of *France* were over, new Quarrels broke out; by which the Emperor and *Francis* engaged in Hostilities: But King *Henry*, pretending to be the Umpire of their Differences, sent *Wolsey* over to compose them. He came to *Calais* in the Beginning of *August*. From *Dover* he wrote to the King, and sent Two Letters to him, which the King was to write in his own Hand to the Emperor, and to the Lady Regent of *Flanders*, which he desired the King would send to him: For he would move slowly towards him. Thus he took the Whole Ministry into his own Hands, and prepared even the King's Secret Letters for him. He was with the Emperor Thirteen Days, who gave him a singular Reception; for he came a Mile out of Town to meet him. The Town is not named, but it was *Bruges*; for in One of *Erasmus's* Letters, he mentions his meeting *Wolsey* in that Town, he being then with the Emperor. The Cardinal returned by the way of *Gravelin*, and from thence, beside the Publick Letter, in which he gave the King an Account of his Negotiation, he wrote a private One to him, with this Direction on it, *To the Kings Graceys own Hands only.* It seems he had no private Conversation with the Emperor formerly: "For in this he observes, that for his Age he was "very Wise, and understood his Affairs well. He was Cold and "Temperate

Coll. Numb.  
6.

“ Temperate in speech ; but Spoke to very good purpose. He reckon-  
 “ ed that he would prove a very Wise Man : He thought he was  
 “ much inclined to Truth, and to the keeping of his Promises : He  
 “ seemed to be inseparably joined to the King ; and was resolved to  
 “ follow his Advice in all his Affairs, and to trust the Cardinal en-  
 “ tirely. He twice or thrice in secret, promised to him by his Faith  
 “ and Truth, to abide by this : he promised it also to all the rest of  
 “ the Privy-Council that were with the Cardinal, in such a manner,  
 “ that they all believed it came from his Heart, without Artifice, or  
 “ Dissimulation. So *Wolsey* wrote to the King, that he had reason to  
 “ bless God, that he was not only the Ruler of his own Realm,  
 “ but that now by his Wisdom, *Spain, Italy, Germany, and the*  
 “ *Low-Countries*, should be ruled and governed. Whether the Em-  
 peror did by his Prudent and Modest Behaviour, really impose upon  
*Wolsey* ; or whether by other secret Practices he had so gained him,  
 as to oblige him to persuade the King to such a Confidence in him,  
 I leave it to the Reader to judge.

1521.

It passes generally among all the Writers of that Age, that he  
 aspired to the Poppedom : And that the Emperor then promised him  
 his Assistance ; in which he failing to him afterwards, *Wolsey* carried  
 his Revenges so far, that all the Change of Councils, and even the  
 Suit of the Divorce, is in a great Measure ascribed to it. I went into  
 the Stream in my History, and seemed persuaded of it ; yet some  
 Original Letters of *Wolsey's*, communicated to me by Sir *William Cook*  
 of *Norfolk*, which I go next to open, make this very doubtful. The  
 First was upon the News of Pope *Hadrian's* Death, upon which  
 he immediately wrote to the King, “ That his Absence from *Rome*  
 “ was the only Obstacle of his Advancement to that Dignity :  
 “ There were great Factions then at *Rome* ; he protests before God,  
 “ that he thought himself unfit for it, and that he desired much ra-  
 “ ther to end his Days with the King ; yet remembering that at the  
 “ last Vacation (Nine Months before) the King was for his being pre-  
 “ ferred to it, thinking it would befor his Service, and supposing that  
 “ he was still of the same Mind, he would prepare such Instructions,  
 “ as had been before sent to *Pace*, Dean of *St. Paul's*, then Ambassa-  
 “ dor at *Rome*, and send them to him by the next : With this he  
 also sent him the Letters that he had from *Rome*. The next Day he  
 sent the Letters and Instructions, directed to the King's Ambassadors,  
 who were the Bishop of *Bath, Pace*, and *Haniball*, for procuring  
 his Preferment ; or, that failing, for Cardinal *de Medici* : These he  
 desired the King to sign and dispatch. And that the Emperor might  
 more effectually concur, though pursuant to the Conference he had  
 with the King on that Behalf, he verily supposed he had not failed  
 to advance it, he drew a private Letter for the King to write with  
 his own Hand to the Emperor, putting to it the secret Sign and  
 Mark that was between them.

*Wolsey's Prac-  
tices to be  
chosen Pope.**Coll. Numb.*

7.

*Septemb. 30.**Septemb. 14.**Coll. Numb.*

8.

*Octob. 1.*

The Dispatch, that upon this, he sent to the King's Ambassador at  
*Rome*, fell into my Hands when I was laying out for Materials for  
 my Second Volume ; but though it belong'd in the Order of Time  
 to the First, I thought it would be acceptable to the Reader to see it,  
 though not in its proper Place. In it, after some very respectful

*Voll. II.**Coll.**Records**Numb. 48.**P. 192.*



1521. Words of Pope *Hadrian*, which, whether he wrote out of Decency only, or that he thought so of him, I cannot determine, “ he tells  
*Wolsey's Designs to be chosen Pope.* “ them that before the Vacancy, both the Emperor, and the King, “ had great Conferences for his Advancement, though the Emperor’s Absence makes that he cannot now join with them; Yet “ the Regent of the *Netherlands*, who knows his Mind, has expressed an earnest and hearty Concurrence for it, : And by the Letters “ of the Cardinals *de Medicis*, *Sanctorum quatuor*, and *Campegio*, he “ saw their Affections: He was chiefly determined by the King’s “ Earnestness about it, tho’ he could willingly have lived still where “ he was; his Years increasing, and he knew himself unworthy of “ so high a Dignity: Yet his Zeal for the Exaltation of the Christian “ Faith, and for the Honour and Safety of the King, and the Emperor, made him refer himself to the Pleasure of God: And in the “ King’s Name he sends them double Letters; the first to the Cardinal *de Medicis*, offering the King’s Assistance to him, and if it was “ probable he would carry it, they were to use no other Powers: But “ if he thought he could not carry it, then they were to propose “ himself to him, and to assure him, if he was chosen, the other “ should be as it were Pope: They were to let the other Cardinals “ know what his Temper was, not austere, but free: He had great “ Things to give, that would be void upon his Promotion: He had “ no Friends nor Relations to raise, and he knew perfectly well the “ Great Princes of *Christendom*, and all their Interests and Secrets: “ He promises he will be at *Rome* within Three Months, if they “ chuse him; and the King seems resolved to go thither with him; “ he did not doubt but, according to the many Promises and Exhortations of the Emperor to him, that his Party will join with “ them.

“ The King also ordered them to promise large Rewards and Pro-  
 “ motions, and great Sums of Money to the Cardinals; and tho’  
 “ they saw the Cardinal *de Medici* full of Hope, yet they were not  
 “ to give over their Labour for him, if they saw any hope of Suc-  
 “ cess: But they were to manage that so secretly, that the other may  
 “ have no suspicion of it. This was dated at *Hampton-Court* the 4th  
 of *October*.

To this a Postscript was added in the Cardinal’s own Hand, to the  
 Bishop of *Bath*: He tells him “ what a great Opinion the King had  
 “ of his Policy; and he orders him to spare no reasonable Offers,  
 “ which perhaps might be more regarded, than the Qualities of the  
 “ Person. The King believed all the *Imperialists* would be with him,  
 “ if there was Faith in the Emperor: He believed the Young Men,  
 “ who for most part were necessitous, would give good Ear to fair  
 “ Offers, which shall undoubtedly be perform’d. The King will-  
 “ eth you neither to spare his Authority, nor his good Money or  
 “ Substance; so he concludes, praying God to send him good Speed.  
 But all this fine Train of Simony came too late, for it found a Pope  
 already chosen.

*Coll. Numb.* His next Letter upon that Subject tells the King, “ That after great  
 9. “ Heat in the Conclave, the *French* Party was quite abandoned; and  
*Decemb. 17.* “ the Cardinals were fully resolved to chuse Cardinal *de Medicis* or  
 “ Himself;

“ Himself : That this coming to the Knowledge of the City of *Rome*,  
 “ They came to the Conclave-Windows, and cried out what Danger 1521.  
 “ it would be to chuse a Person that was Absent : So that the Cardi-  
 “ nals were in such Fear, that tho’ they were principally bent on  
 “ him, yet to avoid this Danger, they, by the Inspiration of the Holy  
 “ Ghost (so he writes) did on the 19th of *November* chuse Cardinal  
 “ *de Medicis*, who took the Name of *Clement* the 7th ; of which  
 “ good and fortunate News, the King had great Cause to thank Al-  
 “ mighty God ; since as he was his faithful Friend, so by his Means  
 “ he had attained that Dignity : And that for his own Part he took  
 “ God to Record, that he was much gladder, than if it had fallen on  
 “ his own Person. In these Letters there is no Reflection on the  
 Emperor, as having failed in his Promise at the former Election : Nor  
 is that Election any way imputed to him, but laid on a Casualty or-  
 dinary enough in Conclaves ; and more natural in that time, because  
 Pope *Hadrian’s* severe way had so disgusted the *Romans*, that no won-  
 der if they broke out into Disorders upon the apprehension of ano-  
 ther Foreigner being like to succeed. If it is suspected, that tho’  
*Wolfey* knew this was a Practice of the Emperor’s, he might disguise  
 it thus from the King, that so he might be less suspected in the Re-  
 venge that he was Meditating, the Thing must be left as I find it ;  
 only tho’ the Emperor afterwards charged *Wolfey* as acting upon pri-  
 vate Revenge for missing the Popedom, yet he never pretended that  
 he had moved himself in it, or had studied to obtain a Promise from  
 him ; which would have put that general Charge of his aspiring, and  
 of his revenging himself for the disappointment, more heavily on  
 him.

The King and the Cardinal continued in a good Correspondence The King of  
France taken  
Prisoner.  
 both with that Pope and the Emperor till the Battle of *Pavy* that  
*Francis’s* Misfortune changed the Face of Affairs, and obliged the  
 King according to his constant and true Maxim, to support the weaker  
 Side, and to balance the Emperor’s growing Power, that by that  
 Accident was like to become quickly superior to all *Christendom*. It  
 has been suggested that the Emperor wrote before to *Wolfey* in Terms  
 of Respect, scarce suitable to his Dignity, but that he afterwards chan-  
 ged both his Stile and Subscription : But I have seen many of his  
 Letters, to which the Subscription is either your *good* or your *best*  
*Friend* ; and he still continued that way of Writing. His Letters  
 are hardly legible, so that I could never read one compleat Period in  
 any of them, otherwise I would have put them in my Col-  
 lection.

But having look’d thus far into *Wolfey’s* Correspondence with the Lord Burgh-  
leigh’s Chara-  
cter of *Wolfey*.  
 King ; I shall now set him in another Light from a very good Author  
 the Lord *Burghly*, who in that Memorial prepared for Queen *Eliza-  
beth* against Favourites, probably intended to give some Stop to the  
 Favour she bore the Earl of *Leicester*, has set out the Greatness of  
*Wolfey’s* Power, and the ill Use he made of it. “ He had a Family  
 “ equal to the Court of a Great Prince. There was in it One Earl,  
 “ and Nine Barons, and about a Thousand Knights, Gentlemen, and  
 “ Inferior Officers. Besides the vast Expence of such a Household, he  
 “ gave great Pensions to those in the Court and Conclave of *Rome* ;  
 VOL. III. G “ by



1521. " by whose Services he hoped to be advanced to the Papacy. He  
 " lent great Sums to the Emperor, whose Poverty was so well  
 " known, that he could have no Prospect of having them repaid ;  
 " (probably this is meant of *Maximilian*.) Those constant Expences  
 " put him on extraordinary Ways of providing a Fund for their con-  
 " tinuance. He granted Commissions under the Great Seal to oblige  
 " every Man upon Oath to give in the true Value of his Estate ;  
 " and that those who had Fifty Pound, or upwards, should pay Four  
 " Shillings in the Pound. This was so heavy, that tho' it had been  
 " imposed by Authority of Parliament, it would have been thought  
 " an Oppression of the Subject : But he adds, that to have this done  
 " by the private Authority of a Subject, was what wants a Name.  
 " When this was represented to the King, he disowned it ; and said,  
 " No Necessities of his should be ever so great, as to make him at-  
 " tempt the raising of Money any other way but by the People's Con-  
 " sent in Parliament. Thus his illegal Project was defeated ; so he  
 " betook himself to another not so odious, by the way of Benevo-  
 " lence : And to carry that thro', he sent for the Lord Mayor and  
 " Aldermen of *London*, and said to them, That he had prevailed  
 " with the King to recall his Commissions for that heawy Tax, and to  
 " throw himself on their free Gifts. But in this he was likewise  
 " disappointed ; for the Statute of *Richard* the Third, was pleaded a-  
 " gainst all Benevolences : The People obstinately refused to pay it ;  
 " and tho' the demanding it was for some time insisted on, yet the  
 " Opposition made to it, being like to end in a Civil War, it was let  
 " fall." All this I drew from that Memorial. I found also a Com-  
 " mission to the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, the Lord *Calham* and Others,  
 " setting forth the great Wars that the King had in *France*, in which  
 " the Duke of *Bourbon*, called one of the greatest Princes in *France*,  
 " was now the King's Servant : They are by it required to practise with  
 " all in *Kent*, whose Goods amounted to Four Pound, or above, and  
 " whose Names were given to a Schedule to anticipate the Subsidy  
 " granted in Parliament. This is all that has occurred to me with rela-  
 " ting to *Wolsey's* Ministry. I will in the next place set out what he  
 " attempted or did in Ecclesiastical Matters, with the Proceedings in  
 " Convocation during this Period. When King *Henry* called his first  
 " Parliament by a Writ Tested *October* 17, 1509, to meet at *Westminster*  
 " the 21st of *January* following, he did not intend to demand a Sup-  
 " ply ; so there appears no Writ for a *Convocation* : But the Archbishop  
 " of *Canterbury* summoned one, as it seems by his own Authority : Yet  
 " none fate then at *York*. The House of Lords was sometimes adjourned  
 " by the Lord Treasurer ; because the Chancellor (*Warham*) and the  
 " other Spiritual Lords were absent, and engaged in Convocation : but  
 " it does not appear what was done by them.

Cotton Libr.

*Wolsey's* Pro-  
 ceedings as  
 Legate.

His Insolence  
 to *Warham*. In the Year 1511, on the 28th of *November*, a Writ was sent to  
*Warham* to Summon a Convocation, which met the 6th of *February* :  
 They had several Sessions, and gave a Subsidy of 24000*l*. but did  
 nothing besides with relation to Matters of Religion. There was  
 some Heat among them on the account of some Grievances and Ex-  
 cesses in the Archbishop's Courts. A Committee was appointed of Six  
 Persons, the Bishops of *Norwich* and *Rocheſter*, the Prior of *Canter-*  
*bury*,

bury, the Dean of *St Paul's*, and an Archdeacon; but without addition of his Place; these were to examine the Encroachments made by the Archbishop's Courts, and the Inhibitions sent to the Inferior Courts: But especially as to the Probates of Wills, and the granting Administrations to Intestate Goods, when there was any to the Value of Five Pound in several Diocesses: An Estimate first settled by *Warham*, for which he had Officials and Apparitors in every Diocese, three or four in some, and five or six in others, which was look'd on by them as contrary to Law. Cardinal *Morton* is said to be the first who set up this Pretence of Prerogative: Against these the Bishops alledged the Constitutions of *Ottobonus* and of Archbishop *Stratford*: It is also set forth, that when *Warham* was an Advocate, he was employed by *Hill*, Bishop of *London*, in whose Name he appeared against them, and appealed to P. *Alexander* against these Invasions made by the Archbishop on the Rights of his See. And when *Warham* was promoted to the See of *London*, he maintained his Claim against them, and opposed them more than any other Bishop of the Province, and sent his Chancellor to *Rome* to find Relief against them. But when he was advanced to be Archbishop, he not only maintained those Practices, but carried them further than his Predecessor had done. All this, with thirteen other Articles of Grievances, were drawn up at large in the State of the Case between the Archbishop and the Bishops; and Proposals were made of an Accommodation between them about the Year 1514; but the Event shewed that this Opposition came to nothing. This must be acknowledged to be none of the best Parts of *Warham's* Character. In the Year 1514, they were again Summoned by Writ; they met and gave Subsidies, but they were not to be levied till the Terms of paying the Subsidies formerly granted were out. In the Year 1518, *Warham* Summoned a Convocation to meet at *Lambeth* to Reform some Abuses; and in the Summons he affirmed that he had obtained the King's Consent so to do. At this *Wolfsey* was highly offended, and wrote him a very haughty Letter: In it he said, "It belonged to him as *Legate à latere*, to see to the Reformation of Abuses: and he was well assured, that the King would not have him to be so little esteemed, that he should enterprize such Reformation to the Derogation of the Dignity of the See Apostolick, and otherwise than the Law will suffer you, without my Advice and Consent." And he in plain Words denies that he had any such Command of the King, but that the King's Order was expressly to the contrary. So he orders him to come to him, to treat of some things concerning his Person. This it seems *Warham* was required to send round his *Suffragan* Bishops: So he recalled his Monitions in expectation of a Legatine Council: The Pestilence was then raging, so this was put off a Year longer; and then *Wolfsey* summoned it by a Letter, which he transmitted to the Bishops: That the Bishop of *Hereford* is in his Register. He desires him to come to a Council at *Westminster* for the Reforming the Clergy, and for consulting in the most convenient and soundest way, of what we shall think may tend to the Increase of the Faith. He hoped this Letter would be of as much Weight with him as Monitories in due Form would be.

1521.

Reg. Heref.  
Booth. fol. 37.Wake's State  
of the Church,  
Append. p. 208.Reg. Heref.  
Booth. fol. 41.



1521.

A Legatine  
Synod.

It appears not by any Record I could ever hear of, what was done in the Legatine Synod thus brought together, except by the Register of *Hereford*, in which we find that the Bishop summoned his Clergy to meet in a Synod at the Chapter-house, to consult about certain Affairs, and the Articles delivered by *Wolsey* as Legate in a Council of the Provinces of *Canterbury* and *York*, to the Bishops there assembled, to be published by them. All that is mentioned in this Synod, is concerning the Habits of the Clergy, and the Lives and Manners of those who were to be ordained; which the Bishop caused to be explained to them in *English*, and ordered them to be observed by the Clergy; and these being published, they proceeded to some Heads relating to those Articles: and he gave Copies of all that passed in every one of them.

May 4.

1519.

1523.  
He called the  
Convocation  
of *Canterbury*  
to sit with  
him.

The next Step he made was of a Singular Nature. When the King summoned the Parliament in the 14th Year of his Reign, *Warham* had a Writ to Summon a Convocation of his Province, which did meet Five Days after, on the 20th of *April*. The Cardinal summoned his Convocation to meet at *York*, almost a Month before, on the 22d of *March*; but they were immediately prorogued to meet at *Westminster* the 22d of *April*. The Convocation of *Canterbury* was opened at *St. Paul's*: But a Monition came from *Wolsey* to *Warkam*, to appear before him, with his Clergy, at *Westminster* on the 22d: And thus both Convocations were brought together: It seems he intended that the Legatine Synod thus irregularly brought together, should give the King Supplies: But the Clergy of the Province of *Canterbury* said, their Powers were only directed to the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and these would not Warrant them to act in any other Manner, than in the Provincial Way: So the Convocation of *Canterbury* returned back to *St. Paul's*, and sat there 'till *August*, and gave the Supply apart, as did also that of *York*. But *Wolsey* finding those of *Canterbury* could not act under him, by the Powers that they had brought up with them, issued out on the 2d of *May*, Monitory Letters to the Bishops of that Province to meet at *Westminster* the 8th of *June*, to deliberate of the Reformation of the Clergy, both of *Seculars* and *Regulars*, and of other Matters relating to it. In this he mentions *Warham's* summoning a Convocation, which he had brought before him; but upon some Doubts arising, because the Proctors of the Clergy had no sufficient Authority to meet in the Legatine Synod, he therefore summoned them to meet with him, and to bring sufficient Powers to that Effect, by the 2d of *June*: But it does not appear that any Assembly of the Clergy followed pursuant to this: So it seems it was let fall. This is the true Account of that Matter. I gave it indeed differently before, implicitly following some Writers that lived in that Time; more particularly that Account given of it by either Archbishop *Parker*, or *Josceline*, a Book of such Credit, that the following it deserved no hard Censure. The Grant of the Subsidy, is indeed, in the Name of the Province of *Canterbury*; but the other Relation of that Matter being too easily followed by me, it seemed to me, that it was a Point of Form, for each Province to give their Subsidy in an Instrument apart, though it was agreed to, they being together in One Body. It was indeed an Omission not to have

Reg. Here-  
ford. Fol. 84.

Antiq. Brit.

explained

explained that; but now upon better Evidence, the whole Matter is thus fully opened. I find no other Proceedings of *Wolsey's* as Legate, on Record, save that he took on him, by his Legatine Authority, to give Institutions at Pleasure into all Benefices in the Diocesses of all Bishops; without so much as asking the Bishop's Consent. In the Register of *London*, an Institution given by him to *South Wickington*, on the 10th of *December*, 1526, is entered with this Addition, that the Cardinal had likewise given Seven other Institutions in that Diocess, without asking the Consent of the Bishop: And on the Margin it is added, that the giving and accepting such Institutions, by the Legate's Authority, being Papal Provisions, involved the Clergy into the Premunire, from which they were obliged to redeem themselves. *Wolsey* did also publish a Bull, condemning all who married in the forbidden Degrees: And he sent Mandates to the Bishops to publish it in their several Diocesses: He also published Pope *Leo's* Bull against *Luther*; and ordered it to be every where published: He also required all Persons, under the Pain of Excommunication, to bring in all *Luther's* Books that were in their Hands: He enumerated 42 of *Luther's* Errors; and required a Return of the Mandate to be made to him, together with such Books as should be brought in upon it, by the 1st of *August*. The Date of the Mandate is not set down; and this is all that I find in this Period, relating to *Wolsey*.

1523.

Reg. Tonstal,  
Fol. 31.Fisher's Re-  
gist. Fol. 127.Reg. Hereford  
Fol. 66.

This last shews the Apprehensions they were under of the spreading of *Luther's* Books and Doctrine. All People were at this Time so sensible of the Corruptions that seemed, by common Consent, to be, as it were, Universally received, that every Motion towards a Reformation was readily hearkened to every where: Corruption was the Common Subject of Complaint: And in the Commission given to those whom the King sent to represent Himself, and this Church, in the Council of the *Lateran*, the *Reformation of the Head and Members*, is mentioned as that which was expected from that Council.

This was so much, at that Time, in all Mens Mouths, that One of the best Men in that Age, *Collet*, Dean of *St. Paul's*, being to open the Convocation with a Sermon, made that the Subject of it all, and he set forth many of those Particulars to which it ought to be applied. It was delivered, as all such Sermons are, in *Latin*, and was soon after translated into *English*. I intended once to have published it among the Papers, that I did put in the Collection; but those, under whose Direction I composed that Work, thought that since it did not enter into Points of Doctrine, but only into Matters of Practice, it did not belong so properly to my Design in Writing: Yet since it has been of late published twice, by a Person distinguished by his Controversial Writings on this Subject, I will here give a Translation of all that he thought fit to publish of it.

Collet's Ser-  
mon before a  
Convocation.

His Text was, *Be ye not conformed to this World, but be ye transformed in the renewing of your Mind*. "He told them, he came thither that he might admonish them to apply their Thoughts wholly to the Reformation of the Church. He goes on thus; Most of those who are Dignitaries, carry themselves with a haughty Air,

Rights of an  
English Con-  
vocation, in  
both Editions.



1523. “ and Manner ; so that they seem not to be in the humble Spirit of  
 “ Christ’s Ministers, but in an exalted State of Dominion : Not ob-  
 “ serving what Christ, the Pattern of Humility, said to his Disciples,  
 “ whom he set over his Church, *It shall not be so among you ;* by  
 “ which he taught them, that the Government of the Church is a  
 “ Ministry ; and that Primacy in a Clergyman, is nothing but an  
 “ humble Servitude.

“ O Covetousness ! From thee come those Episcopal, but charge-  
 “ able Visitations, the Corruptions of Courts, and those New Inven-  
 “ tions daily set on Foot, by which the poor Laity are devoured.  
 “ Oh Covetousness ! The Mother of all Wickedness ; from thee  
 “ springs the Insolence and Boldness of Officials, and that Eagerness  
 “ of all Ordinaries in amplifying their Jurisdiction : From thee flows  
 “ that mad and furious Contention about Wills, and unseason-  
 “ able Sequestrations ; and the Superstitious Observing of those Laws  
 “ that bring Gain to them, while those are neglected that relate to  
 “ the Correction of Manners.

“ The Church is disgraced by the Secular Employments, in which  
 “ many Priests and Bishops involve themselves : They are the Ser-  
 “ vants of Men more than of God ; and dare neither say, nor do any  
 “ Thing, but as they think it will be Acceptable and Pleasant to  
 “ their Princes ; out of this spring both Ignorance and Blindness :  
 “ For being blinded with the Darkness of this World, they only see  
 “ Earthly Things.

“ Therefore, O ye Fathers, ye Priests, and all ye Clergymen !  
 “ Awaken at last out of the Dreams of a Lethargick World ; and  
 “ hearken to *Paul* who calls upon you, *Be ye not conformed to this*  
 “ *World.* This Reformation and Restoration of the Ecclesiastical  
 “ State, must begin at you, who are our Fathers : And from you  
 “ must come down to us your Priests. We look on you as the  
 “ Standards, that must govern us : We desire to read in you, and  
 “ in your Lives, as in living Books, how we ought to live : There-  
 “ fore if you would see the Motes that are in our Eyes, take the  
 “ Beams first out of your own.

“ There is nothing amiss among us, for which there are not good  
 “ Remedies set out by the Antient Fathers : There is no need of mak-  
 “ ing new Laws and Canons, but only to observe those already made.  
 “ Therefore at this your Meeting, let the Laws already made be recited.  
 “ First those that admonish you Fathers, not to lay Hands suddenly  
 “ on any : Let the Laws be recited which appoint that Ecclesiastical  
 “ Benefices should be given to deserving Persons, and that condemn  
 “ Simoniackal Defilement. But above all Things, let those Laws be recited  
 “ that relate to you our Reverend Fathers, the Lords Bishops, the Laws  
 “ of Just and Canonical Elections, after the Invocation of the Holy Ghost.

“ Because this is not done in our Days, and Bishops are chosen,  
 “ rather by the Favour of Men, than by the Will of God ; we have  
 “ sometimes Bishops who are not Spiritual, but Worldly rather than  
 “ Heavenly ; and who are led by the Spirit of the World, rather  
 “ than by the Spirit of Christ. Let the Laws be recited for Bishops  
 “ residing in their Diocesses. Last of all, let those Laws be recited  
 “ for frequent Councils, which appoint Provincial Councils to  
 “ be

“ be more frequently called, for the Reformation of the Church ; 1523.  
 “ for nothing has happened more Mischievous to the Church,  
 “ than the not holding of Councils, both General and Provincial.

“ I do therefore with all due Reverence, address my self to you,  
 “ O Fathers ! for the Execution of Laws must begin at you: If you  
 “ observe the Laws, and Transform your Lives to the Rules set by  
 “ the Canons, then you Shine so to us, that we may see what we  
 “ ought to do, when we have the Light of excellent Examples set  
 “ us by you: We seeing you observe the Laws, will chearfully fol-  
 “ low your Steps. Consider the miserable Face and State of the  
 “ Church, and set about the Reforming it, with all your Strength.  
 “ Do not you, O Fathers, suffer this Famous Meeting to end in vain,  
 “ and in doing nothing: You do indeed meet often; but (by  
 “ your Favour suffer me to say what is true) what Fruit has the  
 “ Church yet had of all your Meetings? Go then with that Spirit  
 “ which you have prayed for, that being assisted by his Aid, you may  
 “ Contrive, Establish, and Decree such Things as may tend to the  
 “ Advantage of the Church, to your own Honour, and the Glory  
 “ of God.

This *Collet* had travelled through *France* and *Italy*, and upon his *Collet's Cha-*  
 Return, he settled for some Time at *Oxford*, where he read Divinity *rafter.*  
 Lectures, without any Obligation, or Reward for it. His Readings  
 brought about him all the Learned and Studious Persons in the Uni-  
 versity. He read not, according to the Custom that prevailed univer-  
 sally at that Time, of commenting on *Thomas Aquinas*, or on *Scotus*,  
 but his Readings were upon *St. Paul's Epistles*. He was brought  
 afterwards to the Deanry of *St. Paul's*, where Old *Fitz-James*, then  
 Bishop of *London*, was his Enemy, but he was protected both by  
*Warham* and by the King himself. He did in One of his Sermons reflect  
 on *Bosom-Sermons*, which *Fitz-James* took as a Reflection on himself,  
 for he read all his Sermons. He did not recommend himself at Court  
 by Strains of Flattery: On the contrary, he being to preach there,  
 when the King was entering on a War, preached on Christians Fight-  
 ing under the Banner of Christ, whom they ought to make their  
 Pattern, in all the Occasions of Quarrel that they might have, rather  
 than imitate a *Cæsar*, or an *Alexander*. After Sermon the King sent  
 for him, and told him, he thought such Preaching would dishearten  
 his Military Men; but *Collet* explained himself so, that the King was  
 well satisfied with him, and said, Let every Man chuse what Doctor  
 he pleased, *Collet* should be his Doctor. He Died in the Year 1519.

It seems this Sermon was preached in the Year 1513, though it is  
 printed as preached in the Year 1511; for the mention that he made  
 in it, of the Immunities of the Clergy, and of those Words, *Touch*  
*not mine Anointed*, seems to relate to the Opposition that the Clergy  
 made to the Act that passed in Parliament in the Year 1512, against  
 the Immunity of the Inferior Orders of the Clergy. It is true, in  
 the Translation I have given, there are no such Words; but I find  
 them in the Reflections that I made on that Sermon, when I intended  
 to have printed it: So I took it for granted, that the Sermon was not  
 fully printed in the Book, out of which I was forced to make my  
 Translation, the Copy that I had of it being mislaid, or lost. It had  
 been



1523.

been but a reasonable Thing for that Writer, either to have printed the Whole Sermon, or to have told the Reader that only some Passages were taken out of it, since the Title given to it would make him think it was all printed. I could not find either the *Latin* Sermon, or the *English* Translation of it, that was printed near that Time: And I cannot entirely depend on a late Impression of the *English* Translation; yet I will add some few Passages out of it, which deserved to be published by him that pick'd out a few with some particular View that it seems he had. Before the First Period printed by him, he has these Words.

“ How much Greediness and Appetite of Honour and Dignity is seen now a-days in Clergymen? How run they (yea almost out of Breath) from one Benefice to another, from the Less to the Greater; from the Lower to the Higher? Who seeth not this? And who seeing Sorroweth not?

Before the next Period, these Words are to be found. “ What other Things seek we now a-days in the Church, but fat Benefices, and High Promotions; and it were well if we minded the Duty of those, when we have them. But he that hath many great Benefices, minds not the Office of any small one. And in these our High Promotions, what other Things do we pass upon, but only our Tythes and Rents? We care not how vast our Charge of Souls be: How many or how great Benefices we take, so they be of large Value.

In the next Period, these remarkable Words are omitted. “ Our Warfare is to pray devoutly; to read and study Scriptures diligently; to preach the Word of God sincerely; to administer Holy Sacraments rightly; and to offer Sacrifices for the People.

A little before the next Period, he has these Words. “ In this Age we are sensible of the Contradiction of Lay People. But they are not so much contrary to us, as we are to our selves. Their *Contrariness* hurteth not us so much, as the *Contrariness* of our own Evil Life, which is contrary both to God, and to Christ.

After *Collet* had mentioned that of laying Hands suddenly on none, he adds, “ Here lies the Original and Spring-Head of all our Mischiefs: That the Gate of Ordination is too broad: The Entrance too wide and open. Every Man that offers himself is admitted; every where, without putting back. Hence it is that we have such a multitude of Priests, that have little Learning, and less Piety. In my Judgment it is not enough for a Priest to construe a Collect, to put forth a Question, to answer a Sophism; but an honest, a pure, and a holy Life, is much more necessary: Approved Manners, competent Learning in Holy Scriptures, some Knowledge of the Sacraments; but chiefly above all Things, the Fear of God, and Love of Heavenly Life.

A little after this, “ Let the Canons be rehearsed that command Personal Residence of Curates (Rectors) in their Churches: For of this many Evils grow, because all Offices now a-days are performed by Vicars, and Parish Priests: Yea, and these foolish, and unmeet, often times wicked.

At

At some distance from this, but to the same purpose, he adds, 1522.  
 “ You might first sow your Spiritual Things, and then ye shall reap  
 “ plentifully their Carnal Things. For truly that Man is very hard  
 “ and unjust, who will reap where he never did sow, and desires to  
 “ gather where he never scattered.

These Passages seemed proper to be added to the former, as setting forth the Abuses and Disorders that were then in this Church. I wish I could add that they are now quite purged out, and appear no more among us. *Collet* was a particular Friend of *Erasmus*, as appears by many very kind Letters that passed between them,

To this account of the Sense that *Collet* had of the State of Religion at that Time, I will add an Account of Sir *Thomas More's* Thoughts of Religion. Those of the Church of *Rome* look on him as one of their Glories, the Champion of their Cause, and their *Martyr*: He in this Period wrote his *Utopia*; the first Edition that I could ever see of it, was at *Basil* in the Year 1518; for he wrote it in the Year 1516; at which time it may be believed that he dressed up that Ingenious Fable, according to his own Notions. He wrote that Book probably before he had heard of *Luther*; the *Wicklevites* and the *Lollards* being the only Hereticks then known in *England*. In that short, but extraordinary Book, he gave his Mind full Scope, and considered Mankind and Religion with the Freedom that became a true Philosopher. By many Hints it is very easy to collect, what his Thoughts were of Religion, of the Constitutions of the Church, and of the Clergy at that time: And therefore tho' an Observing Reader will find these in his Way, yet having read it with great Attention, when I translated it into *English*, I will lay together such Passages as give clear Indications of the Sense he then had of those Matters.

Sir *Tho. More's*  
Thoughts of  
Religion in  
his *Utopia*.

Page the 21st, when he Censures the inclosing of Grounds, he ranks those *Holy Men* the Abbots, among those *who thought it not enough to live at their own Ease, and to do no good to the publick, but resolved to do it hurt instead of good*: Which shews that he called them *Holy Men* in derision. This is yet more fully set forth P. 37. where he brings in Cardinal *Morton's* Jester's Advice to send all the Beggars to the *Benedictines* to be Lay-Brothers, and all the Female-Beggars to be Nuns, reckoning the Friars as Vagabonds that ought to be taken up and restrained: And the Discourse that follows for two or three Pages, gives such a Ridiculous View of the Want of Breeding, of the Folly and Ill Nature of the Friars, that they have taken care to strike it out of the later Impressions. But as I did find it in the Impression which I translated, so I have copied it all from the first Edition, and have put in the Collection, that which the Inquisitors have left out. From thence it is plain what Opinion he had of those who were the most Eminent Divines and the most Fam'd Preachers at that time. This is yet plainer Page 56. in which he taxes the Preachers of that Age for *corrupting the Christian Doctrine, and practising upon it: For they observing that the World did not suit their Lives to the Rules that Christ has given, have fitted his Doctrine as if it had been a leaden Rule to their Lives, that some way or other they might agree with one another.* And he does not soften this severe Censure, as if

The Referen-  
ces are to the  
Pages of my  
Translation.

Coll. Numb.  
10.



1523. it had been only the Fault of a few, but lets it go on them all, without any Discrimination or Limitation.

Page 83. he taxes the great Company of *idle Priests*, and of those that are called *Religious Persons*, that were in other Nations; against which he tells us in his last Chapter how careful the *Utopians* had provided: But it appears there, what just Esteem he paid to Men of that Character, when they answered the Dignity of their Profession: For as he contracts the Number of the Priests in *Utopia*, p. 186. so he exalts their Dignity as high as so noble a Function could deserve: Yet he represents the *Utopians*, as allowing them to Marry, p. 114. And p. 130. he exalts a *solid Virtue much above all rigorous Severities*, which were the most admired Expressions of Piety and Devotion in that Age. He gives a perfect Scheme of Religious Men, so much beyond the Monastick Orders, that it shews he was no Admirer of them.

Page 152. He commends the *Europeans* for “observing their Leagues and Treaties so religiously; and ascribes that to the good Examples that Popes set other Princes, and to the Severity with which they prosecuted such as were perfidious. This looks like Respect; but he means it all Ironically: for he who had seen the Reigns of Pope *Alexander* the 6th, and *Julius* the 2d, the Two falsest and most perfidious Persons of the Age, could not say this, but in the way of Satyr: So that he secretly accuses both Popes and Princes for violating their Faith, to which they were induced by Dispensations from *Rome*. Page 192. his putting Images out of the Churches of the *Utopians*, gives no obscure Hint of his Opinion in that Matter. The Opinion, P. 175. that he proposes doubtfully indeed, but yet favourably, of the first Converts to Christianity in *Utopia*, who (there being no Priests among those who instructed them) were inclined to chuse Priests that should officiate among them, since they could not have any that were regularly Ordained; adding, that they seemed resolved to do it; this shews that in Cases of Necessity he had a Largeness of Thought, far from being engaged Blindfold into the Humours or Interests of the Priests of that time; to whom this must have appeared one of the most dangerous of all Heresies.

And whereas Persecution and Cruelty seem to be the Indelible Characters of Popery; he, as he gives us the Character of the Religion of the *Utopians*, that they offered not Divine Honours to any but to God alone, p. 173. so p. 177. he makes it one of the Maxims of the *Utopians*, that no Man ought to be punished for his Religion: The utmost Severity practised among them being Banishment, and that not for disparaging their Religion, but for inflaming the People to Sedition: A Law being made among them, that every Man might be of what Religion he pleased, p. 191. And tho’ there were many different Forms of Religion among them, yet they all agreed in the main Point of “Worshipping the Divine Essence; so that there was nothing in “their Temples, in which the several Persuasions among them might “not agree.

“The several Sects performed the Rites that were peculiar to them “in their Private Houses; nor was there any thing in the Publick “Worship that contradicted the particular Ways of the several Sects:

By

By all which he carried not only *Toleration*, but even *Comprehension* further than the most Moderate of our Divines have ever pretended to do. It is true, he represents all this in a Fable of his *Utopians*: But this was a Scene dress'd up by himself, in which he was fully at liberty to frame every thing at pleasure: So here we find in this a Scheme of some of the most Essential Parts of the Reformation: " He proposes no Subjection of their Priests to any Head; he makes " them to be chosen by the People, and consecrated by the College " of Priests; and he gives them no other Authority but that of ex- " cluding Men that were desperately wicked, from joining in their " Worship, which was short and simple: And tho' every Man was " suffered to bring over Others to his Persuasion, yet he was obliged " to do it by amicable and modest Ways; and not to mix with these, " either Reproaches or Violence; such as did otherwise, were to be " condemned to Banishment or Slavery.

1523.

These were his first and coolest Thoughts; and probably if he had died at that time, he would have been reckoned among those, who tho' they lived in the Communion of the Church of *Rome*, yet saw what were the Errors and Corruptions of that Body, and only wanted fit Opportunities of declaring themselves more openly for a Reformation. These things were not writ by him in the Heat of Youth; he was then 34 Years of Age, and was at that time employed, together with *Tonstall*, in settling some Matters of State with (the then Prince) *Charles*; so that he was far advanced at that time, and knew the World well. It is not easy to account for the great Change that we find afterwards he was wrought up to: He not only set himself to oppose the Reformation in many Treatises, that put together, make a great Volume: But when he was raised up to the chief Post in the Ministry, he became a Persecutor even to Blood; and defiled those Hands, which were never polluted with Bribes, by acting in his own Person some of those Cruelties, to which he was, no doubt, pushed on by the bloody Clergy of that Age and Church.

He was not governed by Interest; nor did he aspire so to Preferment as to stick at nothing that might contribute to raise him; nor was he subject to the Vanities of Popularity. The Integrity of his whole Life, and the Severity of his Morals cover him from all these Suspicions. If he had been formerly corrupted by a superstitious Education, it had been no extraordinary thing to see so good a Man grow to be misled by the Force of Prejudice. But how a Man who had emancipated himself, and had got into a Scheme of free Thoughts, could be so entirely changed, cannot be easily apprehended; nor how he came to muffle up his Understanding, and deliver himself up as a Property to the blind and enraged Fury of the Priests. It cannot indeed be accounted for, but by charging it on the Intoxicating Charms of that Religion, that can darken the clearest Understandings, and corrupt the best Natures: And since they wrought this Effect on Sir *Thomas More*, I cannot but conclude, that *if these things were done in the green Tree, what shall be done in the dry?*

His Friend *Tonstall* was made Bishop of *London* by the Pope's Pro-  
 vision; but it was upon the King's Recommendation signified by *Han-*  
*nibal*, then his Ambassador at *Rome*. *Tonstall* was sent Ambassador to  
*Spain*,

Reg. Tonst. fo.

1.




1523.

*Spain*, when *Francis* was a Prisoner there. That King grew, as may be easily believed, impatient to be so long detained in Prison: And that began to have such Effects on his Health, that the Emperor fearing it might end in his Death, which would both lose the Benefit he had from having him in his Hands, and lay a heavy Load on him thro' all *Europe*, was induced to hearken to a Treaty, which he pretended he concluded chiefly in consideration of the King's Mediation. The Treaty was made at *Madrid*, much to the Emperor's Advantage: But because he would not trust to the Faith of the Treaty, *Francis* was obliged to bring his two Sons as Hostages, for the Observance of it. So he had his Liberty upon that Exchange: soon after, he came back to *France*, and then the Pope sent him an Absolution in full Form, from the Faith and Obligation of the Treaty. It seems his Conscience reproached him for breaking so solemn an Engagement, but that was healed by the Dispensation from *Rome*: Of which the Original was sent over to the King; perhaps only to be shewed the King, who upon that kept it still in his Secret Treasure; where *Rymer* found it. The Reason insinuated in it, is the King's being bound by it to Alienate some Dominions that belonged to the Crown of *France*. For he had not yet learned a Secret, discovered, or at least practiced since that time, of Princes declaring themselves free from the Obligations of their Treaties, and departing from them at their Pleasure.

*Rymer.*

## B O O K II.

*Of Matters, that happen'd during the Time  
comprehended in the Second Book of the Hi-  
story of the Reformation.*

 Will repeat nothing set forth in my former Work, but suppose that my Reader remembers how *Charles* the Vth had sworn to Marry the King's Daughter, when She should be of Age, under pain of Excommunication, and the Forfeiture of One Hundred Thousand Pounds: Yet when his Match with *Portugal* was thought more for the Interests of the Crown, he sent over to the King, and desired a Discharge of that Promise. It has been said, and printed by One who lived in the Time, and out of him by the Lord *Herbert*, that Objections were made to this in *Spain*, on the Account of the Doubtfulness of her Mother's Marriage. From such Authors I took this too easily, but in a Collection of Original Instructions, I have seen that Matter in a truer Light.

1525.

*Lee*, afterwards Archbishop of *York*, was sent Ambassador to *Spain*, to solicit the setting *Francis* at Liberty, and in reckoning up the King's Merits on the Emperor, his Instructions mention, "the King's late Discharge of the Emperor's Obligation to marry his Dearest Daughter, the Princess *Mary*; whom, though his Grace could have found in his Heart to have bestowed upon the Emperor, before any Prince living; yet for the more Security of his Succession, the Furtherance of his other Affairs, and to do unto him a Gratuity, His Grace hath liberally, benevolently, and kindly condescended unto it. There are other Letters of the 12th of *August*, but the Year is not added, which set forth the Emperor's earnest Desire, to be with all possible Diligence discharged of his Obligation to marry the Princess. At First the King thought fit to delay the granting it, till a General Peace was fully concluded, since it had been agreed to by the Treaty at *Windsor*; but soon after, a Discharge in full Form under the Great Seal was sent over by an Express to *Spain*: But from some Hints in other Papers, it seems there were secret Orders not to deliver it; and King *Henry* continued to claim the Money due upon the Forfeiture, as a Debt still owing him. The Peace was then treated, chiefly with a View to resist the *Turk*, and to repress Herefy, that was then much spread both through *Germany* and *Poland*.

Among the  
Manuscripts  
of the Bishop  
of *Ely*.  
Many Amba-  
sadors in  
*Spain*.

Another Original Letter was writ after *Francis* was at Liberty, setting forth that the Nobles, and Courts in *France*, would not confirm the Treaty that *Francis* had signed, to obtain his Liberty; and therefore earnest Persuasions were to be used to prevail with



1527. “ the Emperor to restore the Hostages, and to come into reasonable  
 “ Terms, to maintain the Peace, and to call his Army out of *Italy*.  
 By these it appears, that the League against the Emperor was then  
 made, of which the King was declared the Protector ; but the King  
 had not then accepted of that Title. He ordered his Ambassadors to  
 propose a Million of Crowns for redeeming the Hostages, to be paid  
 at different Times ; yet they were forbid to own to the Emperor,  
 that if the Offices, in which the King interposed, were not effectual,  
 he would enter into the League.

*Wolsey's Let-  
 ter to them.*

There are in that Collection some of *Wolsey's* Letters ; by One of  
 the 17th of *July* he claims his Pensions of 7500 *Ducats*, upon the  
 Bishopricks of *Palentia* and *Toledo* ; besides 9000 Crowns a Year,  
 in Recompence for his parting with the Bishoprick of *Tournay*, and  
 the Abbey of *St. Martin's* there ; for which there was an Arrear of  
 Four Years due. On the 29th of *September* he wrote over a severe  
 Charge to be laid before the Emperor for the Sack of *Rome*, the In-  
 dignities put on the Person of the Pope, the Spoiling the Church of  
*St. Peter*, and other Churches, and the Ignominious treating the  
 Ornaments of them : All the Blame was cast on the Cardinal *Colonna*,  
 and *Hugo de Moncada*, they being persuaded that it was done with-  
 out the Emperor's Knowledge or Order. He proposes the King to  
 be Mediator, as a Thing agreed on by all sides : He uses in this, that  
 bold way of joining himself with the King, very often saying, *the*  
*King and I* : And on the 20th of *October*, he presses with great ear-  
 nestness, the mediating a Peace between *France* and the Emperor ;  
 in all which, nothing appears either partial or revengeful against the  
 Emperor. The true Interest of *England* seems to be pursued in that  
 Whole Negotiation.

There was then in the Emperor's Court a very full Embassy from  
*England* : For in one or other of these Letters, mention is made of  
 the Bishops of *London*, *Worcester*, and of *Bath* ; of Dr. *Lee*, and  
 Sir *Francis Bryan*. But since the dismal Fate of *Rome*, and of Pope  
*Clement*, is mentioned in these Letters, I must now change the  
 Scene.

*Coll. Numb.*

11.

*The Sack of  
 Rome.*

Pope *Clement*, as soon as he could, after his Imprisonment, wrote  
 over to *Wolsey*, an Account of the miserable State he was in, which  
 he sent over by Sir *Gregory Cassal*, who saw it *all*, and so could  
 give a full Account of it. “ The Pope's only Comfort, and Hope,  
 “ was in *Wolsey's* Credit with the King, and in the King's own Piety  
 “ towards the Church, and himself, now so sadly oppressed, that he  
 “ had no other hope, but in the Protection he expected from him.  
 There were many other Letters written by the Cardinals, setting forth  
 the Miseries they were in, and that in the most doleful Strains possible.  
 All their Eyes being then towards the King, as the Person, on whose  
 Protection they chiefly depended. Upon this, *Wolsey* went over  
 to *France* in a most Splendid Manner, with a prodigious and magni-  
 ficent Train, reckoned to consist of a Thousand Persons, and he had  
 the most unusual Honours done him, that the Court of *France* could  
 invent, to flatter his Vanity. He was to conclude a Treaty with *Francis*,  
 for setting the Pope at Liberty, and to determine the Alternative of  
 the Marriage of the Princess *Mary*, either to the King of *France*, or  
 to

to the Duke of Orleans his Second Son, and to lay a Scheme for a General Peace. He came to *Compiègne* in the End of *September*, and from thence he wrote the First Motion that was made about the Divorce to the Pope : For the first Letter that I found relating to that Matter, begins with mentioning that which he wrote from *Compiègne*. Mr. *Le Grand* told me, he had seen that Dispatch, but he has not printed it.

1527.

Sept. 16.

*Le Grand,*  
To. 3. Num. 2.

From that Place, *Wolfey*, with Four Cardinals, wrote to the Pope, " setting forth the Sense that they had of the Calamity that he was " in, and their Zeal for his Service, in which they hoped for good " Success : Yet fearing, lest the Emperor should take Occasion from " his Imprisonment, to seize on the Territories of the Church, and " to force both him to confirm it, and the Cardinals now imprisoned " with him, to ratify it, which they hoped neither he, nor they, would " do ; yet if human Infirmary should so far prevail, they protested " against all such Alienations : They also declare, that if he should " Die, they would proceed to a new Election, and have no regard " to any Election, to which the imprisoned Cardinals might be forced. " In conclusion, they do earnestly pray, that the Pope would grant " them a full Deputation of his Authority ; in the Use of which, " they promise all Zeal and Fidelity ; and that they would invite all " the other Cardinals that were at Liberty, to come and concur with " them. This was signed by *Wolfey*, and by the Cardinals of *Bourbon*, *Salviati*, *Lorrain*, and Cardinal *Prat*. *Wolfey* wrote to the King, expressing the Concern he had for him, with relation to his Great and Secret Affair ; it seems expecting a General Meeting of Cardinals that was to be called together in *France*, which he reckoned would concur to the Process that he intended to make ; but apprehending that the Queen might decline his Jurisdiction, he would use all his Endeavours to bring the King of *France* to agree to the Emperor's Demands, as far as was reasonable ; hoping the Emperor would abate somewhat, in consideration of the King's Mediation : But if that did not succeed, so that the Pope was still kept a Prisoner, then the Cardinals must be brought to meet at *Avignon*, and thither he intended to go, and to spare no Trouble, or Charge, in doing the King Service. When he was at *Avignon*, he should be within a Hundred Miles of *Perpignan*, and he would try to bring the Emperor, and the French King's Mother thither, if the King approved of it, to treat for the Pope's Deliverance, and for a General Peace. This is the Substance of the Minute of a Letter writ in the Cardinal's Hand.

The Cardinals  
write to the  
Pope for a full  
Deputation.Coll. Numb.  
12.

The King at this Time intended to send *Knight*, then Secretary of State, to *Rome*, in point of Form to condole with the Pope, and to prevent any Application that the Queen might make by the Emperor's Means in his great Matter : So he appointed the Cardinal to give him such Commissions and Instructions as should seem requisite, with all diligence ; and he pressed the Cardinal's Return home, with great Acknowledgements of the Services he had done him. By this Letter it appears, that the Queen then understood somewhat of the King's Uneasiness in his Marriage. The King of *France* sent from *Compiègne* a great Deputation, at the Head of which, *Montmorancy*, then the Great Master, was put, to take the King's Oath, confirming the

Knight sent to  
Rome.

Numb. 13.



1527. the Treaties that *Wolfey* had made in his Name ; one in the Commis-  
 25 September. sion was *Bellay*, then Bishop of *Bayonne*, afterwards of *Paris*, and Car-  
 dinal.

*Pace* wrote to  
 the King of  
 his Divorce.  
 Tom. 3. Num.  
 1.

When that was done, the King's Matter that had been hitherto more secretly managed, began to break out. Mr. *Le Grand* has published a Letter that *Pace* wrote to the King, as he says in the Year 1526 ; but no Date is added to the Letter. The Substance of it is, " That the Letter and Book which was brought to the King the Day before, was writ by him ; but by the Advice and Help of Doctor *Wakefield*, who approved it, and was ready to defend every thing in it, either in a Verbal Disputation, or in Writing. The King had told him, that some of his Learned Counsellors had written to him, that *Deuteronomy* abrogated *Leviticus* ; but that was certainly false : for the Title of that Book in *Hebrew* was the two first Words of it : It is a Compend and Recapitulation of the *Mosaical Law* ; and that was all that was imported by the word *Deuteronomy*. He tells the King, that after he left him, *Wakefield* prayed him to let him know, if the King desired to know the Truth in that Matter ; whether it stood for him or against him. To whom *Pace* answered, " That the King desired nothing but what became a Noble and a Vertuous Prince ; so he would do him a most acceptable thing, if he would set the plain Truth before him. After that, *Wakefield* said, he would not meddle in the Matter, unless he were commanded by the King to do it ; but that when he received his Commands, he would set forth such things both for and against him, that no other Person in his Kingdom could do the like. The Letter is dated from *Sion*, but I have reason to believe it was written in the Year 1527 ; for this *Wakefield* (who seems to have been the first Person of this Nation, that was learned in the Oriental Tongues, not only in the *Hebrew*, the *Caldaick*, and the *Syriac*, but in the *Arabick*) wrote a Book for the Divorce : He was at first against it, before he knew that Prince *Arthur's* Marriage with Queen *Katherine* was consummated : But when he understood what Grounds there were to believe that was done, he changed his Mind, and wrote a Book on the Subject : And in his own Book, he with his own Hand inserts the Copy of his Letter to King *Henry*, dated from *Sion* 1527 ; which it seems was written at the same time that *Pace* wrote his : For these are his Words (as the Author of *Atb. Oxon* relates, (who says he saw it) *He will defend his Cause or Question in all the Universities of Christendom* : But adds, " That if the People should know that he, who began to defend the Queen's Cause, not knowing that she was carnally known of Prince *Arthur*, his Brother, should now write against it, surely he should be stoned of them to Death, or else have such a Slander and Obloquy raised upon him, that he would die a thousand times rather than suffer it.

*Kotser Collicis.*

He was prevailed on to Print his Book in *Latin*, with an *Hebrew* Title ; in which he undertook to prove, that the Marrying the Brother's Wife, she being carnally known of him, was contrary to the Decrees of Holy Church, utterly unlawful, and forbidden both by the Law of Nature, and the Law of God, the Laws of the Gospel, and the Customs of the Catholick and Orthodox Church.

It appears from the Letters writ in Answer to those that *Knight* 1528.  
 carried to *Rome*, that the Pope granted all that was desired. This A Bull sent to  
*Wolsey* to  
 Judge the  
 Marriage.  
 was never well understood till Mr. *Rymer* in his diligent Search, found  
 the first Original Bull, with the Seal in Lead hanging to it: He has  
 printed it in his 14th Volume, p. 237. and therefore I shall only give  
 a short Abstract of it. It is directed to Cardinal *Wolsey*, and bears  
 Date the Ides of *April*, or the 13th Day, in the Year 1528. " It  
 " empowers him, together with the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, or any  
 " other *English* Bishop, to hear, examine, pronounce and declare con-  
 " cerning the Validity of the Marriage of King *Henry* and Queen  
 " *Katherine*, and of the Efficacy and Validity of all Apostolical Dis-  
 " pensations in that Matter; and to declare the Marriage just and  
 " lawful, or unjust and unlawful, and to give a plenary Sentence  
 " upon the whole Matter; with License to the Parties to Marry  
 " again, and to admit no Appeal from them: For which End he  
 " created *Wolsey* his Vicegerent, to do in the Premises all that he him-  
 " self could do, with Power to declare the Issue of the first as well as  
 " of any subsequent Marriage legitimate: All concludes with a *Non*  
 " *obstante* to all General Councils and Apostolical Constitutions.

This rare Discovery was to us all a great Surprise, as soon as it was It was not  
 made use of.  
 known: But it does not yet appear how it came about, that no use  
 was ever made of it. I am not Lawyer enough to discover whether  
 it was, that so full a Deputation was thought null of it self; since by  
 this the Pope determined nothing, but left all to *Wolsey*; or whether  
*Wolsey* having no Mind to carry the Load of the Judgment on him-  
 self, made the King apprehend that it would bring a Disreputation on  
 his Cause, if none but his own Subjects judged it; or whether it was  
 that *Wolsey* would not act in Conjunction with *Warham*, or any un-  
 der the Degree of a Cardinal. I leave the Reasons of their not mak-  
 ing use of the Bull, as a Secret, as great as the Bull it self was, till  
 it was found out by *Rymer*. Another Bull was after that desired and  
 obtained, which bears Date the 8th of *June* (6to Idus) from *Viterbo*.  
 This I take from the License granted under the Great Seal to the Le- Rymer.  
 gates to execute the Commission of that Date; but it seems they did  
 not think they had the Pope fast enough tied by this: And therefore  
 they obtained from him, on the 23d of *July* following, a solemn Pro-  
 mise, called in their Letters *Pollicitatio*, by which he promised in *the*  
*Word of a Pope*, that he would never, neither at any Person's Desire,  
 nor of his own Motion, inhibit or revoke the Commission he had  
 granted to the Legates to judge the Matter of the King's Marriage.  
 This I did not publish in my former Work; because the Lord *Herbert*  
 had published it: But since that History is like to be confined to our  
 own Nation, and this may probably go further, I put it in the Col-  
 lection; and the rather, because the Lord *Herbert* taking it from a  
 Copy as I do, seems in some doubt concerning it: But probably he  
 had not seen the Letter that *Wolsey* wrote to *Gardiner*, in which he  
 mentions the *Pollicitation* that he had in his Hands, with several other  
 Letters that mention it, very frequently. The Copy that I publish Coll. Numb.  
 was taken from a Transcript, attested by a Notary, which is the Rea- 15.  
 son of the Oddness of the Subscription.



1528.

The Bishops  
think the  
King's Scru-  
ples reason-  
able.  
Rymer.

In the mean time *Warham* called such Bishops as were in Town to him, and proposed to them the King's Scruples; which being weighed by them, a Writing was drawn up to this purpose: That having heard the Grounds of the King's Scruples, relating to his Marriage, they all made this Answer, That the Causes which gave the King the present Agitation, and Disturbance of Conscience, were great and weighty; and that it did seem necessary to them all, for him to consult the Judgment of their Holy Father the Pope in that Matter. This was signed by *Warham, Tonstall, Fisher*, and the Bishops of *Carlisle, Ely, St. Asaph, Lincoln and Bath* on the First of July 1529.

1529.

Life of *Wolsey*.

And I incline to think, that this was the Paper of which *Cavendish*, whom I followed too implicitly in my former Work, gave a wrong Account, as brought out when the Legates were sitting on the King's Cause. There is no Reason to doubt of *Fisher's* signing this; and *Cavendish*, who wrote upon Memory almost 30 Years after, might be mistaken in the Story; for the false Account that he gives of the Battle of *Pavy* shews how little he is to be depended on. At this time the Pope in a Letter to *Wolsey* offered to go in Person to *Spain*, or to any Place where an Interview should be agreed on, to mediate a General Peace. This *Wolsey* wrote over to the King's Ambassadors at *Rome*, on the 19th of *December*; and in the same Letter he orders them to offer the Guard to the Pope in the Name of the Two Kings; and adds, that *Turenne* should Command that Part of it which was to have their Pay sent from *France*, and *Sir Gregory Cassall* that which the King was to pay.

Cotton Libr.  
Vitell. B. 11.

In prosecuting the History of the Divorce, I must add a great deal out of some *French* Authors. *Bellay*, the *Sieur de Langey*, has writ Memoirs of that Time with great Judgment, and very sincerely. I find also many Letters relating to those Transactions both in the *Melanges Historiques* and in *Le Grand's* 3d Tome. These I shall follow in the Series in which Things were transacted, which will be found to give no small Confirmation, as well as large Additions to what I formerly published in my History. The first of these was much employed in Embassies, and was well inform'd of the Affairs of *England*, both his Brothers being at different Times employed to negotiate Affairs in that Court. *John* in particular, then Bishop of *Bayonne*, afterwards of *Paris*; and Cardinal *Le Grand*, as Lord *Herbert* had done before, has given the Relation of the Answer that the Emperor gave by Word of Mouth, and afterwards in Writing, to *Clarencieux*, when he came with a *French* King at Arms, to denounce War in the Name of the Two Kings to the Emperor.

Page 38.

27 Jan. 1528.

The Emper-  
or's Answer to  
the King by  
*Clarencieux*.

Demand was made of great Debts, that the Emperor owed the King; among these, the Sum forfeited for his not Marrying the Princess *Mary* is one. To that the Emperor answered, That before he was Married, he required the King to send her to him, which was not done: And by Letters that he intercepted, he saw that the King was treating a Marriage for her with the King of *Scotland*, long before the Emperor was Married. It was farther said to that Herald, That a Report went current, that the King designed a Divorce, and upon that to Marry another Wife. "The Emperor said, he had in "his Hands ample Dispensations for the Marriage; nor could the  
" King

“ King go on in that Design, without striking at the Pope’s Authority; which would give great Scandal, and occasion much Disturbance, and give the Emperor just Cause of War. This would shew what Faith, what Religion, what Conscience, and what Honour the King had before his Eyes. He had offered his Daughter to him in Marriage, and was now going to get her declared a *Bastard*; he ascribed all this to the ill Offices done by the Cardinal of *York*, who was push’d on by his Ambition and Avarice, because he would not order his Army in *Italy* to force the Electing him to the Popedom; which he said, both the King and the Cardinal desir’d of him in Letters, that they wrote to him on that Occasion: And because he had not in that satisfied his Pride, he had boasted that he would so embroil the Emperor’s Affairs, tho’ *England* should be ruined by it, that he should repent his Using him so. This seems to be much aggravated; for it may be easily supposed, that the King and *Wolfsey* might, in the Letters that they wrote to the Emperor at the last Conclave, desire him to order his Troops to draw near *Rome*, to keep all quiet, till, if he was chosen, he might get thither. Yet it is not probable, that they could desire so barefac’d a thing, as the Emperor here fastned on them. He in that, perhaps, was no truer, than when he said he had in his Hands ample Dispensations for the King’s Marriage; tho’ it appears these were forged. For the Date of the Breve being the same with the Bull, both bearing Date the 26th of *December* 1503, it was plainly false. For *Rymer* has printed One Attestation from *Rome*, that the Year in the Breves begins on *Christmas-Day*; so if it had been a true Piece, it must have had the Date of 1504. He has likewise published an Authentick Attestation, signed by the Cardinal Chamberlain, that in the Register of the Breves, there was none to be found relating to the King’s Dispensation for his Marriage, but one dated the 6th of *July* 1504, and another the 22d of *February* 1505.

The Bishop of *Bayonne* made a bold Proposition to *Wolfsey*: He thought it might be a proper Method, to engage the Pope to depose the Emperor for such enormous Felony, as he had committed against him; which would secure that See from all such Attempts for the future. The Cardinal, after a little Reflection on it, swore to him that he would pursue that Thought; but, it seems, it was let fall.

*LeGrand*, p. 64  
Jan. 2.  
1528.  
A Proposition to Depose the Emperor.

When *Gardiner* and *Fox* were sent to *Rome*, they passed thro’ *France*, with Letters from *Wolfsey* to *Montmorancy*, for his Assisting them. It seems, the People were expressing their Uneasiness upon these Steps made in order to the Divorce; of which the Bishop of *Bayonne* wrote to the Court of *France*; which was, upon his Letters, so talked of at *Paris*, that *Wolfsey* reprimanded him for it; tho’ in his own Excuse he writes, that the Bishop of *Bath* had said it more openly, than he had written it.

*Le Grand*,  
p. 102.  
May 24.

On the 8th of *June*, it seems, Matters went not well at *Rome*; *Le Grand*, for *Wolfsey* complained to the Bishop of *Bayonne* of the Pope, for not doing them Justice; who had served him so well, both before his Advancement, and ever since. They also apprehended, that *Camp-*

*pegio*,



1529.

*pegio*, then named to come over as Legate, who was subject to the Gout, would, by that Pretence, manage Matters so, as to keep them long in Suspense.

Le Grand,

p. 148.

June 30.

At that time the Sweating-Sickness raged so, that the Court was in dread of it. It broke out in the Legate's House; some died of it: He, upon that, stole away privately, without giving Notice whither he went. The King made his last Will, and received all the Sacraments. He confessed himself every Day, and received the Sacrament every Holy-Day. The Queen did the same; and so did *Wolsey*.

Le Grand,

p. 164.

In another Letter, without Date, *Bayonne* gives an Account of a Free Conference he had with *Wolsey*; who told him, "he had done many Things against the Opinion of all *England*; upon which, many took Occasion to reproach him, as being wholly *French*; so he must proceed warily: The *French* would feel their Loss, if his Credit were lessened; therefore it was necessary, that the Bishop should make the King, and his Council here, apprehend, that this Alliance was not to their Prejudice. The King had of late (as *Bayonne* had from good Hands) said some terrible Words to the Cardinal, apprehending that he was cold in his Matter. *Wolsey* said to him, that if God gave him the Grace once to see the Hatred of the Two Nations extinguished, and a firm Friendship settled between the two Kings; and that he could get the Laws and Customs of the Nation a little changed, the Succession secured, and upon the King's Second Marriage an Heir Male born, he would immediately retire, and serve God all the rest of his Life. Here were many Things to be done before his Retirement: Yet the Bishop did believe he indeed intended, upon the first good Occasion, to retire from all Affairs; for he could not but see, that his Credit must lessen upon the King's Second Marriage. He was also making Haste to furnish his Episcopal Palaces, and to finish his Colleges; and he seemed to him to prepare for a Storm. *Gardiner* was at this time advancing the King's Business all that was possible at *Rome*. I did, in my Second Volume, publish among the Records, a Letter of his that was written in *April*, after his Coming to *Rome*. The Substance of it is; "He had acquainted the Pope with the Secret Message that the Princes of *Germany* had sent the King, to see if that would work on his Fears; for he says, the Pope was a Man of such a Nature, that he is never resolved in any Thing but as he is compelled by some violent Affection. He assures the King, the Pope will do nothing that may offend the Emperor; nor was it reasonable for him to do it, except he would remove his See to some other Place: For while he was at *Rome*, he was in the Emperor's Power. By his Words and Manner, the Pope seemed to Favour the King; but he was confident he would do nothing. He believed if the Cause were determined by the Legates, they at *Rome* would be glad of it: And if the Emperor should begin a Suit against that, they would serve him, as they now did the King, and drive off the Time by Delays: So he put the King on getting *Campegio* to judge for him, which should be a short Work, and he assures him nothing was to be expected from *Rome*, but  
" Delays.

Vol. 2. Coll.

Rec. Numb.

26. p. 297.

“ Delays. They had put the King’s Cause, if it should be brought to  
 “ *Rome*, in the Hands of Two Advocates, (the same that pleaded for  
 “ the King afterwards in the excusatory Plea.) The Pope would hear  
 “ no Disputation about his Power of Dispensing : But so the Pope did  
 “ not decide upon that Ground, he would not care whether the King’s  
 “ Cause were decided upon it, or not : And he believed the Pope  
 “ was resolved to meddle no more in the King’s Matter, but to leave  
 “ it with the Legates. He desired his Letter might not be shewed  
 “ to either of the Legates. With that Bearer he sent over the Pope’s  
 “ Promise, in which he had got some Words to be put, that he  
 “ thought favoured the King’s Cause, as much, and more, than if  
 “ the Decretal Commission, that was in *Campegio’s* Hands, should  
 “ be shewed ; so he thought the Pope ought to be no more moved  
 “ in that Matter. The Words he mentions are, *cum nos justitiam*  
*ejus Cause perpendentes, we considering the Justice of his Cause.*  
 These are in the Promise, or Pollicitation, which I do now publish,  
 and they prove this to be a true Copy, since we have an Authentick  
 Proof of the very Words that seemed the greatest Ground to doubt  
 of its Truth.

1529.

About a Fortnight after this, *Gardiner* wrote another Letter to *Coll. Numb.*  
 the King, which will be found in the Collection. A Motion was 15.  
 then made at *Rome* for recalling the Powers sent to the Legates ; but  
 he did not think it was made in earnest, but only to stop the Amba-  
 sadors in their other Suits. The Pope told them that the Emperor  
 had advertised him that the Queen would do nothing in the Matter,  
 but as the King should command her ; therefore he would look after  
 the Cause the more earnestly. This the Pope seemed to tell them, that  
 they should not enquire who was the Queen’s Proctor. The Amba-  
 sassadors were amazed to see by *Campegio’s* Letters that were shewed  
 them, that neither he, nor *Campanus*, had made any Promise in the  
 Pope’s Name to the King, but only in general Terms : considering  
 that they had mentioned the *Plenitude of the Pope’s Power*, which  
 they trusted he would use in that Cause. He writes he did not succeed  
 in that which he was ordered to move, which he did indeed apprehend  
 could not be obtained : He lays the Blame on the Pope, or some  
 other, but it became not him to fasten that on any (perhaps this  
 pointed at *Wolsey*) ; the rest relates to the Bulls, probably demanded  
 by the Cardinal for his Colleges : This was dated the 4th of *May* ;  
 he had a Letter writ to him a Month before this, by *Anne Bullen*,  
 in which she expresses a great Sense of the Service he was doing her :  
 It seems by it, that at his First coming to *Rome*, he had great Hopes  
 of Success, but these were then much abated.

At this Time King *Henry* was writing every Day Letters full of  
 Passion to that Lady. Some way or other, they fell into the Hands  
 of those who carried them to *Rome*, where they lie in the Library  
 of the *Vatican*. I saw them there, and knew King *Henry’s* Hand  
 too well, not to be convinced at first Sight, that they were writ by  
 him. I did not think it fit for me to Copy them out, but I prevailed  
 with my Worthy Friend Dr. *Fall* to do it for me. They were very  
 ill writ, the Hand is scarce legible, and the *French* seems faulty : But  
 since our Travellers are encouraged to look on them, I gave a Copy

King Henry’s  
Letters to Anne  
Bullen.



1529. of them to the Printer, to be printed apart; for I could not think it proper to put them in the Collection. Objections lay in my way, even as to this; they were trifling Letters; some Insinuations are not very decent, and little Wit occurred in them, to season them in any sort; yet they carry the Character of an honourable Love, directed all to Marriage: And they evidently shew that there was nothing amiss as to the main Point, in their Commerce: So since those at Rome make so ill an Use of them, as to pretend that they are full of Defilement, and in Derision, call them the true Original of our Reformation; all these Considerations prevailed on me to suffer them to be printed apart, for I did not think it fitting that such Stuff should be mixed with graver Matters. So I ordered them to be printed exactly from the Copy, and to take no other Care about them, but to give them as I had them. But since I mention that Lady, I must add some Passages of a Relation made by a Son of Sir *Thomas Wyat's*, of his Father's Concerns, marked on the Back by a Hand very like Lord *Burleigh's*. He shews how false that Story must be, of his Father's pretending to King *Henry* that he had corrupted her. He was then Esquire of the Body, and did continue still about his Person in that Post, except when he was employed in Embassies abroad. This shews how incredible that Fiction of *Sanders* was; since if he had pretended to make any such Discovery, he must have fallen either under the King's Jealousy, or the Queen's Power; or to avoid both, he would have withdrawn himself: And probably he would have been afterwards set up a Witness to disgrace her at her Tryal. That Relation adds that she was secretly tried in the *Tower*. Some of the Lords declared that her Defence did fully clear her; none of the Women that served her, were brought to witness the least Circumstance against her: And all the Evidence upon which she was convicted was kept so secret, that it was never known. This I know is put here out of its Place, but the Thread of other Things led me into it: I shall have Occasion to mention this Paper again in *Queen Mary's* Reign.

*E. & M. V. Gul.  
Petit.*

*Le Grand, p.  
169. 16 O<sup>a</sup>.  
The King and  
Queen seemed  
to live well to-  
gether.*

*Le Grand, p.  
175. 21 O<sup>a</sup>.*

The Bishop of *Bayonne* writes, that even after *Campegio* came into *England*, both King and Queen did eat at one Table, and lodged in one Bed. The Queen put on so good a Countenance, that to see them together, one could discern no Breach between them: He tells in that Letter, that the Earl of *Angus*, who was married to the Queen of *Scotland*, King *Henry's* Sister, was come up, being banished out of *Scotland*, because the Queen had taken another Husband, who was a handsomer Man than he was, (*plus beau Compagnon que luy*). In his next Letter he writes that *Wolsey* said to him, that the General of the *Cordeliers*, that good Prophet, then a Cardinal, had capitulated with the Pope in the Emperor's Name, when the Pope was set at Liberty. That *Cordelier* Cardinal was then to sail to *Spain*, he wished the *French* would set out some Vessels to seize on him, and draw from him the Particulars of that Treaty: For they knew that in the Articles of that Treaty, the Reason that obstructed the King's Matter, would appear. Upon this, after some Expostulation that the King of *France* did not help them in it as he might, *Wolsey* added, that the first Project of the Divorce, was set on Foot by himself, to create a perpetual Separation between *England*, and the House of *Burgundy*:

*Burgundy* : And he had told the King's Mother at *Compiègne*, that if she lived a Year to an End, she would see as great a Union with them, and as great a Disunion from the other, as she could desire, and bid her lay that up in her Memory. 1529.

In his next he writes, that both the Legates had been with the King and Queen. In *Campegio's* Speech to the King, he set forth his Merits upon the Apostolick See with great Pomp. *Fox* answered him decently in the King's Name : The Queen answered them more roundly : She spoke with respect to *Campegio*, but said, " She thanked the Cardinal of *York* for the Trouble she was put to : She had always wondered at his Pride and Vain-Glory ; she abhorred his Voluptuous Life, and abominable Lewdness, and little regarded his Power and Tyranny : All this rose from his Malice to her Nephew, the Emperor, whom he hated worse than a Scorpion, because he would not satisfy his Ambition, and make him Pope. She blamed him, both for the War, in which the King was engaged, and for the Trouble he put her to, by this new-found Doubt. The Cardinal blushed, and seemed confounded : He said, " he was not the Beginner nor the Mover of the Doubt ; and that it was fore against his Will, that the Marriage was brought into Question ; but since the Pope had deputed him as a Judge to hear the Cause, he swore upon his Profession, he would hear it indifferently.

*Le Grand*, p. 188.  
The Legates go to the King and Queen.

The Queen treats *Wolsey* very severely : *Vitellius*, B. 12.

On the first of *November*, the Bishop writes that the Queen had chosen for her Council the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, the Bishops of *London*, *Bath*, *Rocheſter*, *Ely*, and *Exeter*, with the Dean of the Chapel : But of these, the Bishops of *London* and *Rocheſter*, and the Dean of the Chapel, were the only Persons, that in their Opinion were of the Queen's Side. She expected an Advocate, a Proctor, and a Councillor from *Flanders*. It was not allowed her to bring any over from *Spain* ; for there was then War between *England* and *Spain*, but the *Netherlands* had a Neutrality granted them. " The Bishop reckoned that the Marriage must be condemned ; for tho' the Pope and all the Cardinals had approved it, they could not maintain it, if it was proved, as he was told it would be, that her former Marriage was consummated : For in that Case, God himself had determined the Matter.

*Le Grand*, p. 192.

On the 8th of *November* he writes, " that *Wolsey* had asked him if he could say nothing to invalidate the Pope's Dispensation, and to prove the Marriage unlawful, so that the Pope could not dispense in that Case ; since nothing could unite the Two Kings so entirely, as the carrying on the Divorce must do : He heard he was a great Divine, so he prayed him to speak his Mind freely. The Bishop excused himself ; but being very earnestly pressed, he put his Thoughts in Writing, referring for these to his last Letters : He sent over a Copy of it to *Montmorancy*, and desired he would shew it to the Bishop of *Bourges*, who would explain it to him. *Wolsey* desired that the King's Mother would write earnestly to *Campegio*, in Favour of the King's Cause. The Bishop makes great Excuses for giving his Opinion in the Matter ; he did not sign it : And he gave it only as a private Person, and not as an Ambassador.

*Le Grand*, p. 197.  
The Bishop of *Bayonne's* Opinion of the Pope's Dispensation.



1529.

*Le Grand,*  
p. 209:  
Apprehensions of Disorders on the Queen's Account.

On the 27th of *November*, the Bishop writes that he had been with *Campegio*, and had talked of the Pope's Dispensation. *Campegio* would not bear to have the Pope's Power brought into Debate: He thought his Power had no Limits, and so was unwilling to let that be touched, but he was willing to hear it proved, that the Dispensation was ill founded. He gives in that Letter a Relation of the King's sending for the Lord Mayor of *London*, to give the Citizens an Account of the Scruples he had concerning his Marriage: And he writes, that he had said, the Bishop of *Tarbe* was the First Person that made him entertain them; nor does the Bishop of *Bayonne* pretend to call the Truth of that in question.

*Le Grand,*  
p. 230.

The same Bishop in his Letter of the 9th of *December*, writes, "That *Anne Bolleyn* was then come to Court, and was more waited on than the Queen had been for some Years: by this they prepared all People for what was to follow. The People were uneasy, and seemed disposed to revolt. It was resolved to send all the Strangers out of the Kingdom; and it was reckoned there were above 15000 *Flemings* in *London*. So the driving all these away would not be easily brought about: Care was taken to Search for Arms, and to keep all quiet. *Wolfey* in a great Company, above an hundred Persons of Quality being present, reported that the Emperor had said he would drive the King out of his Kingdom by his own Subjects; one only of all that Company expressed an Indignation at it: The Advocates that the Queen expected from *Flanders* were come, but had not yet their Audience.

*Le Grand,*  
p. 245.

In one of the 20th of *December*, the Bishop writes, "That the King had shewed him what Presumptions there were of the Forgery of the Breve, that they pretended was in *Spain*; and upon that he went through the whole Matter so copiously with him, that he saw he understood it well, and indeed needed no Advocate: He desired that some Opinions of learned Men in *France* might be got, and be signed by them, if it could be obtained.

*Le Grand,*  
p. 259:  
Endeavours to gain *Campegio*.

By the Letter of the 25th of *December*, it appears there was an Argument of more Weight laid before *Campegio*, for he was offered *Duresme* instead of *Salisbury*. He said to them who offered it, that the Pope was about to give him a Bishoprick of that Value in *Spain*; but the Emperor would not consent to it. The Lawyers that came from the *Netherlands*, had an Audience of the King, in which they took great Liberties: For they said to him, They wondered to see him forsake his ancient Friends, and to unite himself to his mortal Enemies. They were answered very sharply. They applied themselves to *Campegio*, with respect, but neglected *Wolfey*; and after that they had lodged such Advices as were sent by them, with the Queen, they returned home.

*Le Grand,*  
p. 275:  
*Wolfey's* Credit is shaken.

On the 25th of *January* the Bishop of *Bayonne* writes, "That the Court apprehending the Pope was changing his Measures with relation to the King's Affair, had sent *Gardiner* to *Rome*, to let the Pope know, That if he did not order *Campegio* to proceed in the Divorce, the King would withdraw himself from his Obedience: He perceived *Wolfey* was in great Fear; for he saw, that if the thing was not done, the Blame would be cast wholly on him, and

" there

“ there it would end. Sir *Thomas Cheyney* had some way offended  
 “ him, and was for that dismissed the Court ; but by *Anne Boleyn’s*  
 “ means he was brought back ; and she had upon that occasion sent  
 “ *Wolsey* a severe Message. The Bishop had in a Letter sent him  
 “ from *Paris* a List of the College of the Cardinals, by which they  
 “ reckoned Fifteen of them were *Imperialists* ; and *Campegio* is rec-  
 “ koned among these : Eighteen was of the contrary Party : Three  
 “ had not declared themselves, but might be gained to either side,  
 “ and Six were absent. This Canvassing was occasioned by the Pope’s  
 “ Sicknefs, and it was writ as News from *France*, that an *Englishman*  
 “ passing through, and going to *Spain*, had reported with Joy, that  
 “ there would be no Divorce : That *Campegio* served the Pope well ;  
 “ that this was very acceptable to all the Great Men of *England* ;  
 “ and that the Blame of all was laid on *Wolsey*, whose Credit with  
 “ the King was sinking : That he was not at the Feast of *St. George*,  
 “ for which the King had chid him severely, he being the Chancel-  
 “ lor of the Order.

1529.

P. 299.

In a Letter of the 22d of *May* he writes, “ That *Wolsey* was  
 “ extreme uneasy. The Dukes of *Norfolk* and *Suffolk*, and others,  
 “ made the king believe, that he did not advance his Affair so  
 “ much as he could : He wishes, that the King of *France* and his  
 “ Mother would make the Duke of *Suffolk* desist ; for he did not  
 “ believe, that He, or the other Duke, could be able to manage the  
 “ King as *Wolsey* had done. They at Court were alarmed at the last  
 “ News from *Rome*, for the Pope seemed inclined to recall the Com-  
 “ mission : Upon which, *Benet* was sent thither, to use either Pro-  
 “ mises or Threatnings, as he should see Cause. They pressed the  
 “ Pope to declare the Breve from *Spain* Null ; but he refused to do  
 “ it. He adds, that in the Breve lay one of the most important  
 “ Points of the whole Matter : (Probably that was, that the Con-  
 “ summation of the former Marriage, was expressly affirmed in it.)  
 “ *Wolsey* had pressed the Bishop very earnestly, to move his Master  
 “ to concur zealously to promote the King’s Cause ; upon which  
 “ he pressed on *Montmorancy*, that the King of *France* should send  
 “ One to the Pope, to let him know, that he believed the King’s  
 “ Cause was just, and that both Kingdoms would withdraw from  
 “ his Obedience, if Justice was denied on this Occasion. To this  
 “ were to be added, all sorts of Promises when it should be done ;  
 “ which *Wolsey* protested, such was his Love to the King, he would  
 “ value much more, than if they made him Pope. The Point  
 “ then to be insisted on, was to hinder the Recalling the Commis-  
 “ sion.

P. 313.

The Dukes of  
*Norfolk* and  
*Suffolk* his E-  
 nemies.

By Letters of the 30th of *June*, it appears that *Gardiner* was  
 return’d from *Rome*, with the Proofs of the Breve’s being a For-  
 gery. *Campegio* was then forced to delay the Matter no longer.  
 The Bishop of *Bayonne* had pressed *Campegio* to it, by Authority  
 from the Court of *France*. On the 13th of *July*, *Cassali* wrote  
 from *Rome*, that the Pope had recalled the King’s Cause, at the Em-  
 peror’s Suit.

P. 333.

But I come now to give an Account of the Proceedings of the  
 Two Legates ; in which I must correct the Errors of all the  
 VOL. III. N Writers



1529.

Writers of that Time, whom I had too implicitly followed. I go upon sure Grounds; for I have before me the Original Register of their Proceedings, made up with such Exactness, that, at the End, the Register and Clerk of the Court do not only attest it with their Hands and Marks, but reckon up the Number of the Leaves, with the Interlinings that are in every Page; and every Leaf is likewise signed by the Clerk, all in Parchment. This Noble Record was lent me, by my Reverend and Learned Brother, Dr. *More*, Bishop of *Ely*, who has gather'd together a most invaluable Treasure, both of Printed Books and Manuscripts, beyond what one can think that the Life and Labour of one Man could have compassed, and which he is as ready to Communicate, as he has been careful to Collect it.

The Proceedings of the Legates.

The Legates sat in a Room called *the Parliament Chamber*, near the Church of the *Black Friars*. Their First Session was on the 31st of *May*. The Bishop of *Lincoln* presented to them the Bull, by which the Pope empowered them to Try and Judge the Cause concerning the King and Queen's Marriage, whether it was good or not, and whether the Issue by it was Legitimate or not. The Legates, after the Reading of the Bull, took it into their Hands, and saw it was a true and untouched Bull, so they took upon them to execute it: And they ordered the King and Queen to be cited to appear before them on the 18th of *June*; and appointed, that the Bishop of *Lincoln* should Cite the King, and the Bishop of *Bath* and *Wells* the Queen.

On the 18th the Form of the Citation was brought before them, in which the Bull was inserted at full length, and the Two Bishops certified, that they had served the Citation both on the King and Queen on the 15th; and *Sampson*, Dean of the Chapel, and Dr. *Bell* appeared, with a Proxy from the King in due Form: But the Queen appeared personally, and read an Instrument, by which She declined the Legates, as not competent Judges, and adhered to an Appeal she had made to the Pope: Upon Reading this She withdrew; and tho' she was required to return, She had no regard to it. Upon which they pronounced her contumacious; and on the 21st of *June*, they order'd the Bishop of *Bath* and *Wells* to serve her with a Monition and a peremptory Citation, certifying, that if She did not appear, they would proceed in the Cause. And on the 25th of *June*, the Bishop certified upon Oath, that he had served the Citation; but that the Queen adhered to her Protestation, so She was again judged contumacious: And as She never came more into the Court, so the King was never in it. And from this it is clear, that the Speeches that the Historians have made for them, are all plain Falsities.

The next Step made, was, that the Legates exhibited 12 Articles, setting forth the whole Progress of the Queen's First and Second Marriage, and of the Dispensations obtained from *Rome*, all grounded upon publick Fame; and the Queen was ordered to be cited again on the 28th of *June*. The Bishop certified upon Oath, that he had served the Queen with the Citation; but She not appearing, was again judged contumacious, and Witnesses were sworn to prove

prove the Articles. The King's Answer to the Articles was laid before them ; in which, by his Answer to the 7th, it appeared, that he was Married to the Queen, by Virtue of a Papal Dispensation.

1529.

On the 5th of *July*, the King's Proctors brought the Bull of Pope *Julius*, Dispensing with the Impediments in the Marriage, as likewise the Copy of the Breve, of which the Original was in *Spain*, but attested very solemnly from thence. The Legates ordered more Witnesses to be sworn on the 9th of *July*. In another Session, Additional Articles were offered ; in which it was set forth, that Impediments lay against the Marriage, as being prohibited both by the Divine and the Ecclesiastical Laws ; so that it could not be maintained by the Dispensations, and that they were of no Force, but were Null and Void. Then they set forth all the Objections formerly made against the Bull ; by which it appeared, that the Pope was surprized by the false Suggestions made to him, on which he had granted it ; and in particular, that there was no War, nor Appearance of War, between *England* and *Spain*, at that Time. They did also set forth the Presumptions, on which they concluded that the Breve was not a Genuine, but a Forged Piece. On the 12th of *July*, Commission was given to Examine the Witnesses. On the 14th, Additional Articles were brought in ; and on the 16th of *July*, the King's Proctors were required to bring all Instruments whatsoever, relating to the Articles, before the Legates ; and another Commission was given, to Examine some absent Witnesses.

On the 19th of *July*, Publication was made of the Depositions of the Witnesses : By which it appears, that *Warham* in his Examination said, He referred the Matter of the Lawfulness of the King's Marriage, to Divines ; but that he himself believed, that it was contrary both to the Laws of God, and to the Ecclesiastical Laws ; and that otherwise, there was no need of a Dispensation from the Pope. He confesses, there were great Murmurings against the Marriage ; for nothing of that Sort had ever been heard of in this Kingdom before ; and that he himself murmured against it, and thought it detestable and unnatural ; and that he had expostulated with the Bishop of *Winchester* for his Advising it, but he acquiesced when the Pope's Dispensation was obtained. The Bishop of *Ely* deposed, that he doubted concerning the Consummation of the Queen's Marriage with Prince *Arthur* ; for the Queen had often, upon her Conscience, denied it to him : Yet many Witnesses were brought to prove the Consummation ; Some, because the Prince and the Queen constantly lodged in the same Bed ; and that Prince *Arthur* continued in a State of good Health, till the Beginning of *Lent* : Some inferred it, from what they themselves had done, when they were of his Age. Some swore to Words that he spake next Morning after his Marriage, not decent enough to be repeated. Other Witnesses were brought to prove, that there was no War between *England* and *Spain*, when the Dispensation was granted ; but that a Free Intercourse had been kept up between these Nations for many Years. It was likewise proved, that the Matter set forth



1529. forth in the Preamble of the Bull, was false; and that the Breve was a Forgery. On the 21st, the Protestation the King had made, that he did not intend to Marry the Queen, was read and proved. With that, the King's Council closed their Evidence, and demanded a Final Sentence: So the 23d of July was assigned for Concluding the Cause.

On that Day, the King's Proctor moved, that Judgment should be given; but Cardinal *Campegio* did affirm, on the Faith of a true Prelate, that the Harvest Vacation was then begun in *Rome*; and that they were bound to follow the Practice of the Consistory; so he adjourned the Court to the 28th of *September*.

At the End of every Session, some of the Men of Quality then present are named; and at this Time, the Duke of *Norfolk*, and the Bishop of *Ely*, are only named; which seems to contradict what is commonly reported of the Duke of *Suffolk's* being there, and of what passed between him and Cardinal *Wolsey*. This Record is attested by *Clayberg* the Register, and *Watkins* the Clerk of the Court. And Four Years after that, on the 1st of *October*, Anno 1533, it is also attested by Dr. *Wootton*; which, he says, he does, being required to attest it by *Clayberg* and *Watkins*. How this came to be desired, or done at that Time, is that of which I can give no other Account, but that this is affixed to the Register. By this Extract that I have made of this great Record, it appears, that *Campegio* carried on this Cause with such a trifling Slowness, that if the King had not thought he was sure of him, he could never have suffered such Delays to be made; by which the Cardinal had a Colour from the Vacation, then begun in the Consistory in *Rome*, to put off the Cause, on the Day in which a present Sentence was expected. It is very Natural to think, that as the King was much surprized, so he was offended out of Measure, when he found he was treated with so much Scorn and Falsehood.

P. 136.

On the 23d of *August* a sad Embroilment happened upon the Duke of *Suffolk's* returning from *France*. *Wolsey* complained to the King that he had done him ill Offices at that Court. *Suffolk* denied it; the Cardinal said he knew it by the Bishop of *Bayonne*: Upon which *Suffolk* came and challenged him: The Bishop denied he had said it. *Suffolk* confessed indeed he had said some Things to his Disadvantage; but the Bishop prayed him that the Matter might be carried no further: Yet he offered to deny in *Wolsey's* Presence, that which was charged on him. But he saw the Duke of *Suffolk* intended to oblige him to deny it in the King's Presence. The Bishop apprehending the ill Effects this might have, resolved to keep out of the King's Way for some Time, and he hoped to avoid the being further questioned in the Matter: He found both the King and *Wolsey* desired that he might make a Journey to *Paris*, to get the Opinions of the Learned Men in the King's Cause: He would not undertake it, 'till he knew whether the King of *France* approved of it or not: He desired an Answer might be quickly sent him; adding, that if it was not agreed to by *France*, it would increase the Jealousies the King had of that Court. He saw they designed to hold a Parliament in *England*, and they hoped by that to make the Pope feel the Effects of his Injustice.

By the Bishop's Letter of the 18th of *September*, it appears that *Campegio* having got his Revocation, "resolved to go to Court that he might have his Audience of Leave; where it was thought best to dismiss him civilly: In the mean while, *Wolfey*, who seemed full of Fear, pressed the Bishop to get the Matter to be examin'd by the Divines: And though he disguised his Fears, yet he could not quite cover them. Some had left him whom he had raised; probably this was *Gardiner*: For he united himself to the Duke of *Norfolk* in all Things. The Bishop of *Bayonne* desired Leave to go over, on the Pretence of his Father's Old Age and Weakness; but really to know the Sense of the *French* Divines; and also desired, that his Brother, *William de Bellay*, might be sent to the Court of *England*, during his Absence.

1529.

P. 354.

"On the 4th of *October*, he writes, that he saw the Parliament was set to ruin *Wolfey*. *Campegio* was well treated by the King, and had good Presents at Parting; and the King desired that they would use him well, as he passed thro' *France*; and particularly, that they would suffer him to resign an Abbey he had there, in Favour of his Son. He was stopt at *Dover*; for it was suspected that he was carrying over *Wolfey's* Treasure.

P. 354.

On the 17th of *October*, he describes the Cardinal's Fall: "The Bishop thought it was the greatest Example of Fortune that could be seen: Both Heart and Voice failed him; he wept, and prayed that the King of *France* and his Mother would pity him, if they found that he had been true in all that he had promised to them: His Visage was quite altered; and the Disgrace was so sudden and heavy, that even his Enemies pitied him: The Bishop saw he would be hotly pursued, and that nothing but Intercession from *France* could save him: He did not pretend to continue either *Legate* or *Chancellor*; he seemed ready to quit all to his Shirt, so he might recover the King's Favour again. He was capable of no Comfort. He proposed, that the *French* King and his Mother should write to the King, to this Purpose; That they heard of his Disgrace, and of the Design to ruin him: That they pray'd him not to proceed too suddenly: He had been a good Instrument between them; if there was just Cause for it, his Power might be lessened; but that they prayed, the King would not carry Things to Extremity. The Bishop lays this before *Montmorancy*, without presuming to give Advice in it; only he thought this could do no hurt. Whatsoever was done, must seem to be of their own Motion, and not as coming from a Desire of the Cardinal; for that would precipitate his Ruin. It seems, he had received great Presents from the King's Mother, of which he hoped She would say nothing, that might hurt him. It was intended, as he thought, on his Ruin, to destroy the State of the Church, and seize on their Lands, which had been openly talk'd at some Tables. If the King of *France* intended to interpose in his Favour, no Time was to be lost. *Anne Boleyn*, as it was believed, had got a Promise of the King, that he would not admit him to a private Audience, lest that might beget some Pity in him.

P. 370.  
The Cardinal's Disgrace.



1529. " On the 22d of *October*, he wrote, that all his Goods were  
 P. 377. " feized on, and that his Spirit was quite funk. It was not known  
 All his Goods " who should have the Great Seal; it was believed it would no  
 feized on. " more be put into a Priest's Hands; but he saw, *Gardiner* was like  
 P. 379. " to have a great Share in Affairs. The Cardinal's Goods that were  
 " feized on, were valued at 500000 Crowns. *More*, who had been  
 " Chancellor of the Dutchy of *Lancaster*, was made Lord Chan-  
 " cellor. The See of *York* was to be left in his Hands; and some  
 " of his Goods were to be sent back to him. The Bishop did ap-  
 " prehend, that if the new Ministry did not agree, which he be-  
 " lieved they would not do long, he might be brought back to  
 " Court again.

I have given the Relation of this great Tranfaction more particu-  
 larly than was perhaps necessary; but finding so clear a Thread in  
 those Letters, I thought it not improper to follow them closely; the  
 rather, to shew, that none of the Papers that Mr. *Le Grand* has pub-  
 lished, do in the least contradict, but rather establish all that I had  
 written: And so punctual a Relation being laid before me, by those  
 who bore no good Will to me, nor to my Work, seemed an Invi-  
 tation to me to enlarge further than perhaps was necessary. I will  
 end therefore all that relates to Cardinal *Wolfey*, at once.

*Wolfey's good  
 Conduct in his  
 Diocese.*

Upon his going to *York*, he behaved himself much better than he  
 had done in the former Parts of his Life. In a Book that was print-  
 ed in the Year 1536, entitled *A Remedy for Sedition*, writ by One  
 that was no Friend to Popery, this Character is given of the last  
 Part of *Wolfey's* Life. " None was better beloved than he, after  
 " he had been there a while. He gave Bishops a good Example,  
 " how they might win Mens Hearts. There were few Holy-Days,  
 " but he would ride Five or Six Miles from his House; now to  
 " this Parish-Church, now to that; and there, cause one of his  
 " Doctors to make a Sermon unto the People: He sat among them,  
 " and said Mass before all the Parish. He saw why Churches were  
 " made, and began to restore them to their right and proper Use.  
 " If our Bishops had done so, we should have seen, that Preach-  
 " ing the Gospel is not the Cause of Sedition, but rather Lack  
 " of Preaching it. He brought his Dinner with him, and bad di-  
 " vers of the Parish to it. He enquired if there was any De-  
 " bate, or Grudge between any of them; if there were, after Din-  
 " ner, he sent for the Parties to the Church, and made them all  
 " one.

I had, in my Work, mentioned the concluding Character that  
 I found *Cavendish* gave him, that was left out in the Printed  
 Editions; which made me vouch the Manuscript, from which I had  
 it: But the last Edition agreeing with that Copy, I need say no  
 more to justify my Quotation, for it will be found in it.

It may seem strange, that when the Bishop of *Bayonne* first sug-  
 gested to *Wolfey*, that if the King's Marriage was against the Law of  
 God, the Pope's Dispensation could be of no Force; yet no Inferen-  
 ces were made from this. All our Writers give *Cranmer* the Honour  
 of having started that first; and they make that the Foundation of  
 his Advancement. I can see no other Way to reconcile all this, but  
 that

that it may be supposed *Wolsey* as true to the Interest of the Papacy, was unwilling to let it be moved in Publick; and that he kept this between the Bishop of *Bayonne* and himself, without communicating it to the King. Now the Cause was called away to *Rome*, and so a new Process followed with a very slow Progress: Delays upon Delays were granted, and yet all was precipitated in Conclusion.

In the mean while, the King sent his Question to the Faculties of Law and Divinity, in the several Universities of *Europe*: And understanding that *Martin de Bellay*, the Elder Brother of the Bishop of *Bayonne*, distinguished by the Title of *Sieur de Langey*, had great Credit in the Universities, both in *France*, *Italy* and *Germany*; he engaged him to procure their Opinions upon the Point of the Unlawfulness of his Marriage: Who in the View of this Service, prevailed with the King, to lend the King of *France* 150000 Crowns, being to be advanced as a Part of the Two Millions, that he was to pay for the Redemption of his Sons; which was to be repaid to King *Henry* in Five Years. Besides, he assigned over to him the Forfeiture due by the Emperor, for not Marrying his Daughter: And he sent in a Present to his Godson *Henry*, afterwards King of *France*, a Jewel, with some of that which was believed to be the True Cross, that had been left in Pawn with the King, by *Philip*, *Charles's* Father, for 50000 Crowns: So ready was the King to engage the King of *France* into his Interest, at no small Charge to himself.

1529.

The King consults the Universities.

*Mart. de Bellay's Memoirs*, p. 282.

I come next to open the Transactions in the Convocation that was summoned to meet on the 5th of *November* 1529, Two Days after the opening of the Parliament. At their First Meeting, a Reformation of Abuses was proposed: And with that an Enquiry was made concerning Heretical Books. A Committee of Bishops was appointed with relation to Hereticks. On the 19th of *December* Secrecy was enjoined, and that was again a Second Time enjoined under the Pain of Excommunication: Then the Prolocutor came up, and had secret Conference with the Upper-House. They remitted to the King the Loan that they had made him; and they put an End to that Work on *Christmass-Eve*, a Week after the Parliament was risen.

Proceedings in Convocation.

The Bishops were much offended at the Translations of the New Testament by *Tindall*, *Joyce*, and others; and proceeded severely against those who read them: Yet it was not easy to put a Stop to the Curiosity and Zeal of the People. The King came to the Star-Chamber, and conferred with the Bishops and other learned Men on this Subject: The Bishops said these Translations were not true, and complained of the Prologues set before them. So the King commanded by a Proclamation, issued and printed in *June* 1530, that these Translations should be called in, and promised that a New One should be made. On this Occasion it is not unfit to mention what Doctor *Fulk* writes, that he heard *Miles Coverdale* say in a Sermon he preached at *St. Paul's Cross*. After he had finished his Translation, some censured it: Upon which King *Henry* ordered divers Bishops to peruse it: After they had it long in their Hands, he asked their Judgment of it; they said there were many Faults in it: But he asked upon that, if there were any Heresies in it; they said they found none: Then said the King, In God's Name, let it go abroad

May 24.  
Translation of the Scriptures condemned.



1530.

abroad among my People. The Time is not marked when this was said, therefore I insert it here : For in the beginning of the following Year, the King ordered a Bible of the largest Volume to be had in every Church, but it does not appear to me by whom it was translated.

On the 19th of *September* 1530, another Proclamation was made, against all who should purchase any Thing from the Court of *Rome*, contrary to the King's Prerogative, or to hinder his intended Purposes. The Convocation was again brought together, about the 7th of *January* ; their greatest Business was to purchase their Pardon ; for as the Cardinal had fallen under a Premunire, by the Act of the 16th of *Richard* the IIId ; so they were generally involved, more or less, in the same Guilt : The Sum was soon agreed to, with the Consent of the Lower-House, One Hundred Thousand Pound was to be their Ransom.

The Steps in  
carrying the  
King's being  
declared Head  
of the Church.

On the 7th of *February*, some of the King's Councillors and Judges came and conferred with them about some Words that were proposed to be put in the Preamble of the Bill of Subsidy, which were these, *The King who is the Protector, and the only Supreme Head of the Church and Clergy of England*. Upon this the Prolocutor and Clergy were called up to confer about it : The Lord Chief Justice with others, came into the Convocation, and conferred with the Archbishop and his Brethren : The next Day the Prolocutor desired a further Time, and the Archbishop assigned them One a Clock : Then the Archbishop had some Discourse with them concerning the King's Pardon : Some of the Judges came and communicated to them a Copy of the Exceptions in the Act of Grace : This was in the 23d Session : In the 24th Session, there was yet further Talk about the King's Supremacy.

The Judges came and asked them whether they were agreed upon the Exceptions ; and added, that the King would admit of no Qualifications : When these were gone, the Prolocutor came up and asked yet more Time ; the Archbishop appointed Two a Clock the same Day : A long Debate followed. The next Day the Archbishop had a secret Conference with the Bishops, and *Cromwell* came and had some Discourse with him ; when he went away, the Bishops resolved to send the Bishops of *Lincoln* and *Exeter* to the King ; it seems, to soften him : But they came back, and reported that the King would not speak with them. The Judges told them, they had no Orders to settle the King's Pardon, till they did agree to the Supremacy. They were prorogued till the Afternoon, and then there was so great a Variety of Opinions, that no Agreement was like to follow. The Lord *Rockford*, *Anne Bullen's* Father, was sent by the King with some Expedients : The Archbishop directed them to consider of these, and that when they were come to a Resolution upon them, that they should send Three or Four of each House to treat with the King's Council and the Judges : But the King would admit of no Treaty, and asked a clear Answer. It was put off a Day longer, and on the 11th of *February*, the Article was thus conceived in Latin, *Ecclesiæ & Cleri Anglicani singularem Protectorem & unicum & Supremum Dominum, & quantum per Christi legem licet, etiam*

Rymer.

*Supremum Caput, ipsius Majestatem Recognoscimus.* In English thus, 1530.  
*We Recognize the King's Majesty to be our only Sovereign Lord, the singular Protector of the Church and Clergy of England, and as far as is to be allowed by the Law of Christ, likewise our SUPREME HEAD.*

The Form being thus agreed on, the Archbishop offered it to the Whole Body : All were silent ; upon which he said, whosoever is silent seems to consent : To this one answered, then we are all silent. The Meeting was put off till the Afternoon ; and then after a long Conference, all of the Upper-House agreed to it, none excepted : *Fisher* is expressly named as present ; And in the Evening the Prolocutor came and signified to the Archbishop, that the Lower-House had also consented to it : And thus the Bill of Subsidy was prepared and offered to the King on the First of *April*. Thus this Matter was carried, by adding this Limitation, which all Parties understood, according to their different Notions.

Though these Words of Limitation had not been added, the Nature of Things required that they should have been supposed ; since among Christians, all Authority must be understood to be limited by the Laws that Christ has given : But those who adhered to their former Notions, understood this *Headship* to be only a Temporal Authority, in Temporal Matters : And they thought that by the Laws of Christ, the Secular Authority ought not to meddle in Ecclesiastical Matters ; whereas others of the New Learning, as it was then called, thought that the Magistrate had a full Authority, even in Ecclesiastical Matters : But that the Administration of this, was so limited to the Law of the Gospel, that it did not warrant him to command any Thing, but what was conform to these. So that these Words were Equivocal, and differently understood by those who subscribed, and afterwards swore them.

It seems the King thought it was of great Advantage to him, to have this Matter settled with any Limitation : For that in Time would be dropt and forgotten, as indeed it was : This, no doubt, was intended to terrify the Court of *Rome* ; since it was published over all *Europe*, that it went Unanimously in the Convocation of this Province.

*Tonstall* was now translated to *Duresme* ; and being a Man of great Probity, he could not at first approve of a Thing in which he saw a fraudulent Management, and an ill Design ; so he protested against it : He acknowledged the King's Headship in Temporal Matters, but did not allow it in Spiritual : But the King who had a particular Friendship for him, wrote him a Letter, which from the printed Title to it, I too hastily thought was directed to the Convocation at *York* ; but it was writ only to *Tonstall* ; and it seems it so far satisfied him, that he took the Oath afterwards, without any Limitation.

I shall now go through the rest of the Abstract of that Convocation, by which it will appear what was the Spirit that prevailed among them. In the 49th Session, after all had agreed to the Preamble of the Bill of Subsidy, the Bishop of *London* laid before them a Libel against the Clergy : In the next Session, *Crome*, *Latimer* and *Bilney*,  
The Proceedings of the Clergy against Hereticks.



1530. were examined upon some Articles : It does not appear whether the Libel was laid to their Charge, or not ; only their Examination following the other Motion so soon, gives ground to apprehend that it might be the Matter under Examination. In the 55th Session, the King's Pardon was read to them ; and it seems Exceptions being taken to some Things in it, in the 58th Session, the Emendations that the King's Council had made, were read to them, in which it seems they acquiesced, for we hear no more of it.

Complaints of  
*Tracy's Testa-*  
ment.

After that, there was a long Conference, with Relation to *Crome's* Errors : But the Matter was referred to the Prolocutor and the Clergy. The Prolocutor had in the 45th Session, complained of *Tracy's* Testament, but no Answer being made, he renewed his Complaint in the 62d Session, and desired that it might be condemned, and that *Crome* should be proceeded against ; as also that *Bilney* and *Latimer* might be cited : But for some Reasons not expressed, the Archbishop thought fit to delay it. In the 64th Session, the Prolocutor repeated his Motion for condemning *Tracy's* Testament ; so in the 66th Session, on the 23d of *March*, the Archbishop gave Judgment against it. *Tracy's* Son was Examined about it : He said it was all written in his Father's own Hand ; and that he had never given a Copy of it to any Person, except to one only. In the 69th Session, the Archbishop examined *Lambert*, (alias *Nicolson*, who was afterwards burnt) before Two Notaries ; and in the 70th Session, the Sentence condemning *Tracy's* Testament was publicly read ; and, after Two other Sessions, the Convocation was prorogued to *October*.

P. 399.

It appears from all this, that the Convocation was made up of Men violently set against our Reformation. But I turn now to another Scene. The King seeing no Hope left of succeeding in his Suit at the Court of *Rome*, resolved to try the Faculties of Divinity in the several Universities : His chief Reliance was upon *France*, and on those Three Brothers formerly mentioned : He began to suspect there was some secret Negotiation between the Court of *Rome*, and the King of *France* ; yet though he opened this to the Bishop of *Bayonne*, he did on all other Occasions express an entire Confidence in that King : And the New Ministry seemed Zealous in the Interests of *France*, and studied to remove all the Jealousies that they apprehended *Wolsey* might have given of them.

The King's  
Proceedings  
at *Rome*.

P. 399.

At this Time the Bishop of *Tarbe*, then Cardinal *Grandmont*, was with the Pope, and had a particular Charge sent to him to assist the *English* Ambassadors : He wrote to the *French* King on the 27th of *March*, " that he had served *Bullen*, then Lord *Rockfort*, all he  
" could ; that he had pressed the Pope to shew the Regard he had  
" to the King of *France*, as well as to the King of *England* : He  
" writes that the Pope had Three several Times said to him in secret,  
" that he wish'd that the Marriage had been already made in *England*,  
" either by the Legate's Dispensation, or otherwise, provided it was  
" not done by him, nor in diminution of his Authority, under the  
" Pretence of the Laws of God. He also wrote that the Emperor  
" had pressed the Pope to create some New Cardinals upon his Re-  
" commendation : But that the Pope complained, that when he was  
" a Prisoner, he had made some Cardinals who were a Disgrace to  
" the

“ the College : The Emperor said, he was sorry for it ; but it was  
 “ not by his Order. The Pope said, he knew the contrary ; for he  
 “ saw the Instructions sent to the Cardinal *Cordelier*, signed by the  
 “ Emperor, in which they were named : So the Pope refused to  
 “ give the Two Caps that he desired.

1530.

There was then an *Italian*, *Joachim* Sieur de *Veaux*, at the Court of *England*, who was an Agent of *France* : He, in a Letter to the King of *France*, *March* the 15th, writes, That the King thought, that by his Means he might have the Opinion of the Faculty at *Paris*, in his Cause. On the 4th of *April* he writes, that the King expected no good from the Pope, and seemed resolved to settle his Matter at Home, with the Advice of his Council and Parliament. He looked on the Pope as Simoniacal, and as an Ignorant Man, and not fit to be the Universal Pastor ; and resolved not to suffer the Court of *Rome* to have any Advantage from the Benefices in his Kingdom, but to Govern it by a Provincial Authority, and by a Patriarch ; and he hoped other Kingdoms would do the same.

P. 411.  
 Applications  
 made to Di-  
 vines and  
 Lawyers.  
 P. 418.

After some Interval, the Bishop of *Bayonne*'s Letters are again continued. In one of the 29th of *December*, he writes, “ That  
 “ the King was marvelously well pleased with the Account his Am-  
 “ bassadors wrote to him, of what the Divines of *Paris* had done ;  
 “ tho' he understands there is one *Beda*, a dangerous Person among  
 “ them. That Declaration which their Divines had made, was  
 “ such, that all other Things were forgiven, in Consideration  
 “ of it.

An Opinion  
 given by some  
 in *Paris*, p.  
 421.

The next Letter is from his Brother *William* ; who writes, “ That  
 “ the good Answer that came from the Doctors and Universities of  
 “ *Italy*, made the King wonder that those of *Paris* were so back-  
 “ ward. It was suspected in *England*, that the King of *France*, or  
 “ his Counsellors, had not recommended the Matter effectually to  
 “ them. He had a Letter from one *Gervais*, a Doctor there, who  
 “ had much advanced the King's Affairs, for which *Montmorancy*  
 “ had made him great Acknowledgments. He shew'd this Letter  
 “ to King *Henry* ; who, upon that, carried him to his Closet where  
 “ his Books lay, and there he entertain'd him Four Hours : He told  
 “ him, he was in such Perplexity, that it was not possible for him  
 “ to live longer in it.

This *de Bellay* was to go to *Paris*, to talk with the Doctors ; therefore he prayed *Montmorancy*, that he might find a Letter from the King, empowering him so to do ; that so he might not seem to act without his Orders : And he promised to manage the Matter with Discretion.

Bishop of *Bay-  
 onne* sent to  
*Paris*.

In a Letter that the Bishop of *Bayonne* wrote from *Lusignion*, on the 13th of *April*, where he was then with the *French* King, he writes, That the Matter of the Divorce was entirely dispatch'd at *Paris*, as it had been before that done at *Orleans*, by his Brother's Means. But he adds, Some represented to the King, that he had shewed too much Diligence in Procuring it, as if he was Serving Two Masters. *Joachim* had before that, on the 15th of *February*, written to the King, that King *Henry* thanked him for his Com-  
 mands to the Doctors in *Paris* in his Matter, which he laid to Heart

P. 427.

P. 442.



1530.

Cardinal *Cajetan's* Opinion  
against the  
King.

2dus 2d.e.  
Quæst. 159.  
Art. 9.

more than all other Things ; and desir'd they would give their Opinions in Writing, that they might be laid before the Pope.

It does not appear, that the Pope took any other Pains to be well informed in the Matter, but by consulting Cardinal *Cajetan*, who was then justly esteemed the Learnedest Man of the College. He, when he wrote Commentaries upon *Thomas's* Summ, tho' that Father of the Schoolmen thought, that the Laws in *Leviticus*, concerning the Degrees of Marriage that are prohibited, were Moral, and of Eternal Obligation ; *Cajetan*, in his Commentary, declares himself to be of another Mind, but takes a very odd Method to prove it : For instead of any Argument to evince it, he goes only on this Ground ; That they cannot be Moral, since the Popes dispensed with them ; whereas they cannot dispense with a Moral Law. And for that he gives an Instance of the Marriage of the King of *Portugal* ; to which he adds, The present Queen of *England* had likewise consummated her Marriage, with the late Brother of the King of *England* her Husband. By which, as it appears that they took it then for granted at *Rome*, that her first Marriage with Prince *Arthur* was consummated, so he departed only from *Aquinas's* Opinion, because the Pope's Practice of Dispensing in such Cases, could not be justified, unless he had forsaken his Master in that Particular. And here he offers neither Reason nor Authority, to maintain his Opinion, but only the Practice of the Court of *Rome*. Which is, in plain Words to say, that what Opinion soever is contrary to the Practice of the Popes, must for that Reason be laid aside : For he offers no other Argument, but Three modern Instances, of which this of the Queen of *England* is one, of Popes Dispensing with those Laws. But now being required by the Pope to consider the present Case more particularly, he, on the 13th of *March* this Year, gave his Opinion in Writing to him. *Raynaldus* has inserted it in his Annals. In it, after he had compared the Laws in *Leviticus* and *Deuteronomy* together, he concludes, “ That the Marrying a Brother's Wife was simply unlawful ; but that in some Circumstances it might have been good, if a much greater Good should follow on such a Marriage, than that provided for in *Deuteronomy*, of continuing the Name of a Brother dead without Children. Now he argues, that the Reason of a Provision made in a private Case, would be much stronger in a Case of a publick Nature : So that a Marriage being made to keep Peace between Two Nations, must be held lawful, since a Dispensation was obtained for it. This was not only good in it self, but it was warranted by the Apostolical Authority. He confesses, that the Pope cannot in the least alter or derogate from the Laws of God, or of Nature. But in doubtful Cases, he may determine with Relation to the Laws of God, and of Nature. He insists chiefly upon *England's* being deliver'd from a War by the Marriage. He acknowledges that both Councils, Popes, and Holy Doctors, have condemned such Marriages, as contrary to the Laws of God and of Nature ; but they do not condemn them, when other Circumstances accompany them, when it is for the Good of both Parties, and for a common Good ; and therefore he justifies Pope *Julius's* Dispensation.

“ Who,

*Ad An.* 1530.  
Num. 194.

Who, as the same *Raynaldus* tells us, did it with the View of the Advantages that *Spain* and *England* would have; but chiefly, because it was hoped, that by this Conjunction of Force, they would be able to depress the *French*. 1530.  
Ad An. 1503  
N. 22.

This Opinion of so Great a Man, was sent over to King *Henry* signed by himself, bearing Date the 27th of *January* 1534; but this Date is perhaps only the Date of his Signing that Copy. It had not the Effect they expected from it; especially because it was defective in that way of Writing, that was then the most cried up against Hereticks. For he brought no Authority from any Ancient-er Writer, to confirm his Opinion: So that he argued, from his private way of Commenting on Scripture, against the Streams of Tradition; which was called the Hereticks Way of Writing. Cotton Libr.  
Vitell. B. 14.

The Pope made a new Step on the 7th of *March*; for he sent a Breve to the King, setting forth a Complaint made by *Queen Katharine*, "that King *Henry* intended to proceed to a Second Marriage; he therefore prohibited that, under the Pain of the severest Censures, threatening to put the whole Kingdom under an Interdict; and charged the King, in the solemnest manner, to live with the Queen as formerly. This was granted at *Bologne*, upon the Emperor's pressing Instances. This had been attempted before, but was afterwards disowned by the Pope. For when the Avocation was sent over to *England*, there was sent with it an Inhibition, to proceed further in the Matter; threatening Censures and Punishments, in Case of Disobedience. But Complaint being made of this, the Pope did by a Bull, dated the 5th of *October* 1529, declare, that the Censures threatned in the Inhibition, were added against his Mind, so he annuls them, and suspends the Cause to the 25th of *December*. The Popes  
1st Breve a-  
gainst the Di-  
vorce.  
  
Rymer,  
Vol. XIV.

In a Letter that the Cardinal *Grandmont* wrote to *Montmorancy*, he tells him, that the Emperor said he would have the Matter of the Marriage carry'd thro': If it was judged unlawful, he would not support his Aunt; but if otherwise, he would support Her. And when *Boleyn* once offer'd to answer him, he stop'd him, and said, He was a Party, and ought not to speak in the Matter. The Cardinal told *Boleyn*, he had Orders from the King of *France* to solicit that Matter as if it was his own; but *Boleyn* thought it was best to look on for some time, to see how Matters went; for if the Pope and the Emperor should fall into new Quarrels, then they might hope to be better heard. P. 454.

On the 12th of *June*, *Bellay* wrote to the King a long Account of his Proceedings with the Doctors of the *Sorbonne*; by which, it seems, what is formerly mentioned of their giving Opinion in the King's Favour, was only as Private Doctors, and not in a Body, as a Faculty. "The young Princes of *France* were yet detained in *Spain*; so it was necessary to proceed with such Caution, as not to irritate the Emperor. He had delay'd moving in it for some Days; but the *English* Ambassadors were impatient. He complains, that there were few Honest Men in the Faculty, but apprehending the Inconvenience of Delaying the Matter any longer, he presented the King's Letters to them. The Assembly was great; the Bishop P. 458.  
The Proceed-  
ings of the  
Sorbonne.



1530.

“ of *Senlis*, several Abbots and Deans, the Guardians of the Four Mendicant Orders, and many others, were present; so that of a great while there had not been so Numerous an Assembly. The Proposition was made on King *Henry's* Part, with great Advantage: An express Law in the Scripture was quoted; the Four Great Doctors of the Church, Eight Councils, and as many Faculties or Universities were of his Side: So, in Respect to them, the King desired they would determine the Matter in the Doctrinal way. The Emperor, on the other Hand, who was likewise the King's Ally, opposed the Divorce; the Queen of *England* being his Aunt: For he thought himself bound to interpose on her Account. So the King being pressed by Two Allies, who both were resolved to be govern'd by the Laws of God, and of Right Reason, laid the whole Matter before them, who were now assembled in an extraordinary manner, and enjoined them to recommend themselves to God, and, after a Mass of the Holy Ghost, to consider that which was to be laid out to them, without Fear or Favour; and after full Consideration, to determine it, as God should inspire their Consciences. This was the Substance of *Bel-lay's* Speech. *Beda* spoke next: He said, They all knew how much the King studied to please the King of *England*. Many Strangers that were of the Faculty seemed to applaud this. *Bel-lay* replied, There was certainly a great Friendship between the Two Kings: The Emperor was likewise the King's Ally. But they ought to have God only before their Eyes, and to search for the Truth. And having said that, he withdrew.

Great Heat in  
their Debates.

“ Those who spoke first, thought the King's Desire was reasonable, and that therefore they ought to Examine the Matter: This could not be refused, if asked on the behalf of the meanest Person. Others said, the Faculty was subject to the Pope, from whom they had their Privileges: And since this Question related to his Power, they ought not to speak to it, till they sent to know his Mind; or at least, till they sent to know how the King approved of it, and if he would ask the Pope's Leave, to suffer them to debate about it. Another Party moved, that while their Letters were dispatched to that Purpose, they should proceed to Examine the Question, but suspend the coming to a final Resolution, till an Answer was brought them. They said, they thought, that they had their Privileges from the King, as well as from the Pope; and that it was a Reflection on the Pope to imagine he would be offended, if they should examine a Case, in which the Conscience of a Christian was disquieted; and that even an Order from the Pope to the contrary, ought not to restrain them from Examining the Matter. Upon these different Opinions, the Beadle began to gather their Votes, whether they ought to proceed to Examine the Question, or not. But One of the Doctors rose from his Place, and plucked the Scroll out of the Beadle's Hands, and tore it in pieces: And so they all rose up in a Tumult, crying out, that nothing ought to be done, without writing first to the King and to the Pope. Thus the Meeting broke up in Confusion. The *English* Ambassadors were near enough

to

“ to see and hear all this. They said, they knew this was laid by *Beda* and his Party: *Bellay* did not then think so, and prevailed with them not to write to *England* till he tried what might be done. He went to *Lizet*, the First President of the Court of Parliament, to whom the King in especial Manner, had recommended the Managing that Affair. *Lizet* sent for *Beda*, and other his Complices, and prevailed with them to meet again the next Day, and to proceed according to the Third Opinion; which was, to discuss the Question provisionally, and to Seal up their Conclusion, and send it to the King: So next Morning they met, and appointed to begin the *Monday* following, to examine the Question.

1530.

“ This did not satisfy the *English* Ambassadors; they thought this was only an Artifice to gain Time; and indeed they had just ground of Suspicion from what several of the Doctors did openly talk. *Bellay* therefore desired the King would write to the Dean, that he would cut off impertinent Digressions, and bring the Matter to as speedy a Conclusion as was possible; for some said they would make it last a Year. *Beda* did give it out that he knew that what he did was for the King's Service: Of this he made no Secret. *Bellay* complaining of this to *Lizet*, he sent for *Beda*, and spake so earnestly to him, that he swore very positively he would be so far from hindring the Doctors from Obeying the King's Commands, that he would employ himself, as if it were for the saving of his Life, to get the Matter to pass without Noise or Scandal: But *Bellay* saw that the President trusted him, so he did acquiesce, though he knew that by the Noise he had already made, he had broke a Promise which he had made to *Montmorency*. The Bishop of *Senlis* was very sensible of the Disorder of that Body: It appearing that the *English* Ambassadors did suspect the Court of *France* was dealing doubly in the Matter; the Bishop of *Senlis* was resolved to go the King, and to let him see how Matters were managed in that Faculty, and to shew him the Necessity of reforming them.

The Jealousy  
of the Court  
of *France*;

At this Time the Duke of *Norfolk* wrote to *Montmorency*, that they wondred to find the Faculty was so much altered, that before this Time 56 Doctors were in their Opinion on the King's side, and there were only Seven against him: But that in the late Congregation, 36 were against it, and 22 only were for it. The King of *England* had reason upon this, to suspect some underhand Dealing; therefore he hoped they would so manage the Matter, as to clear all Suspensions.

P. 471.  
Upon the  
changing the  
Divines Opinions.

The next Letters of *de Bellay* did certainly give the Progress of the Deliberations of the *Sorbonne*; but we find nothing of that in *Le Grand's* Collection. It is somewhat strange, and may be liable to Suspicion, that after so close a Series of Letters concerning that Affair, no Letter is produced from the 12th of *June* to the 15th of *August*: Thus we have no Account given us of the Deliberations of the *Sorbonne*, and yet it is not to be doubted, but that a very particuar Relation was written to the Court of every Step that was made in it. The producing no Letters for these Two Months, must leave a very heavy Suspicion of unfair Dealing somewhere; for the First Letter

P. 473.



1530.

The Decision  
of the Sor-  
bonne.

Rymer.  
Vol. 14.

of *de Bellay's*, that is published by him, after that of the 12th of *June*, is of the 15th of *August*.

*Rymer* has published the Original Decision of the *Sorbonne*, on the 2d of *July* 1530, but he adds *avulso sigillo*; yet after that, he publishes an Attestation of the Notaries of the Court of *Paris* (*Curia Parisiensis*) of the Authenticalness of this Original Decision. The Attestation of the Notaries, dated the 16th of *July*, mentions both Seal and Subscription, free from all blemish, and liable to no Suspicion. It is probable this Precaution was thought necessary, in case the Messenger that was to carry it to *England*, had fallen into the Hands of any of the Emperor's Parties in their way to *Calais*, who, no doubt would have destroyed this Instrument: But this Notorial Attestation would have been a full Proof of it; for the Difficulties in obtaining it, might make those who had conducted the Matter, think it would be no easy Thing to procure a New Instrument from the *Sorbonne* it self. How it came that the Seal was pulled from the Instrument it self, must be left to Conjecture, perhaps it was pulled from it in *Queen Mary's* Time.

*Lizet* the Pre-  
sident, seemed  
to work a-  
gainst it.

“ *Bellay* in this Letter of the 15th of *August*, writes, that he  
“ had moved *Lizet* to send for *Beda*, and to let him know the  
“ King's Intentions: *Beda* talked as a Fool, he would not say as an  
“ ill Man: But the President was possessed with a good Opinion of him:  
“ The King of *France* had, at the Earl of *Wiltshire's* Desire, order-  
“ ed an Examination to be made of his Behaviour: He had also or-  
“ dered the President to demand of the Beadle an Authentick Copy  
“ of an Act that *Beda* had once signed; but then wished he had not  
“ signed it: But *Lizet* would not command the Beadle to do this,  
“ till he had the Consent of the Faculty to give it, though he had  
“ an Order from the King to require it. So *Bellay* having got the  
“ King's Letter, went to the President and delivered it to him: He  
“ promised he would execute it, and get the Authentick Copy into  
“ his Hands: Towards the Evening he went to the President to see  
“ what he had done: He said the Beadle told him, he could not  
“ give it without the Consent of the Faculty: Upon which, *Bellay*  
“ said, that might be a Rule, in case a private Person asked it; but  
“ when the Prince demanded it, he thought it was no just Excuse.  
“ The Act which was demanded, was approved by the Faculty, by  
“ the Dean, and the Students, and by all concerned in it: The Bea-  
“ dle pretended that it might be said, that he had falsified the Act:  
“ *Bellay* answered, that was the Reason, why they desired the Act:  
“ He was present when it passed, and had minuted it: But since  
“ *Beda* and his Complices repented that they had signed it, and that  
“ the Minute they had signed was in some Places dashed and inter-  
“ lined, they might make new Dashings and Interliniations, there-  
“ fore he prayed the President to command the Beadle to bring him  
“ the Minute, that he said was conform to the Original: For  
“ an Hour together, the President would do no more but desire the  
“ Beadle to do it; at last he commanded him, but so mildly, that  
“ the Beadle did not think fit to obey him; upon which *Bellay*  
“ said to him, if he suffered himself to be so treated, he was unwor-  
“ thy of the Character that he bore: This quickened *Lizet* so, that

“ commanded the Beadle, all Excuses set aside, to obey him. The  
 “ Act was brought and read, and he promised to bring him a Copy  
 “ of it by the next Morning: The President thought that *Bellay* had  
 “ spoken too boldly to him, and he would not let him have it, but  
 “ sent it directly to the King: *Lizet* had that Esteem for *Beda*, that  
 “ he thought him a Saint, and he would not believe him capable of  
 “ the Faults that he saw him guilty of, which were such, that *Bellay*  
 “ wrote, that if he had been to be charged with them, and had a  
 “ dozen of Heads, he had deserved to lose them all. He writes that  
 “ *Beda* was not the only bad Man of the Faculty, he had many  
 “ Companions, who seemed to desire an Occasion to provoke the King  
 “ to do that to them, which would make them pass for Martyrs  
 “ among the People. He had often heard of their wicked Designs,  
 “ under the Hypocritical Disguise of Sincerity, but could not have  
 “ believed the Tenth Part, if he had not seen it.

1530.

Next to this we have in *Le Grand's* Collection, the Letter that  
*Lizet* wrote to *Montmorency* of the same Date, “ mentioning, that  
 “ according to the King's Letters to him, he had procured the Copy  
 “ of the Act, which the King of *England* desired: for though the  
 “ Bishop of *Bayonne* asked it of him, that he might carry it to that  
 “ King, yet that not being ordered in the King's Letters to him,  
 “ he therefore thought it his Duty to send it directly to the King  
 “ himself: And as touching the Examination that the King had  
 “ ordered to be made of the Conduct of that Matter; he desired it  
 “ may be delayed, till he was heard give an Account of it: For  
 “ that Information would perhaps be a Prejudice, rather than a Ser-  
 “ vice to the King of *England*: In it he desires to know the King's  
 “ Pleasure, that he might follow it as carefully, as was possible.

P. 480.

His Letter of  
that Whole  
Matter.

The Bishop of *Bayonne* gives a further Account of this Matter: and writes, “ That after the Assembly of the *Sorbonne* was dis-  
 “ missed by the Dean, and that the Bishop of *Senlis*, with  
 “ many Abbots, and Nine or Ten, either Generals, Provincials,  
 “ Guardians, or Priors of the chief Convents of the Kingdom, and  
 “ others of great Rank and Credit were gone, *Beda* and his Com-  
 “ plices did by their own private Authority meet, and study to over-  
 “ turn that which had been settled in so great an Assembly. He  
 “ writes that this Disease was of a long continuance, and was still  
 “ increasing. This Company pretending they were a Capitular  
 “ Congregation, sent an Order to the Bishop of *Senlis*, who was  
 “ gone into his Diocese, and had carried the Original Act of the  
 “ Determination with him, requiring him under the Pain of Dis-  
 “ obedience, to send it to them: He wrote in Answer to them, that  
 “ he had Orders to deliver it to none but to the King; he was re-  
 “ solved to Obey the King's Orders, and advised them to do the same:  
 “ Upon which, they moved to deprive him as a Rebel to the Faculty:  
 “ He was not fright'ned with this, but wrote to them, that he was  
 “ bound to obey the Faculty as his Mother, but to obey the King  
 “ as his Father: Yet they resolved to proceed further after the Feasts.  
 “ In this Letter he tells what Pains his Brother had taken to prevent  
 “ the Scandal that such Proceedings would give, which were better  
 “ hindred than punished: But he complains that those who had

A Design to  
make a con-  
trary Decree.



1530. " Authority to restrain such Insolencies, did secretly encourage  
 " them. By which it is clear, he means *Lixet*. The Date of this Letter is printed the 14th of *August*: But it is more probable it was the 14th of *July*, some Days after the Determination was made: For this Matter has no Relation to the Business of the former Letter, that was written by his Brother a Day after this, if it is the true Date.

It is plain from this, that there were Two Instruments: The One was the Act of the Determination, which at the Time of the Writing this Letter, was in the Bishop of *Senlis*' Hands: The other was a Minute signed by them all; to which the former Letter relates, and that might have had Rasures and Glosses in it, which are not to be imagined could be in the Authentick Act: It seems the *English* Ambassadors desired both.

P. 500. There is another Letter on the 15th of *August*, of the Bishop of *Bayonne*'s to *Montmorency*; in which, " he complains that the Faction  
 " was going to make a Determination contrary to the Former; and  
 " had made an Order that none of the Faculty might sign against the  
 " Marriage, but left it free for any to sign for it. But that the  
 " King had ordered that the Determination already made should remain entire. The Bishop had pressed the President to obey the  
 " King's Orders: He had promised him to do it; but *Beda* promised the contrary to his Party. *Bellay* feared the King of *England* would suspect that the King did not act sincerely. He confessed  
 " that from the Appearances of Things, he should do so himself, if  
 " he had not seen the Concern that the King was in, upon this Occasion. When he pressed *Lixet* to obey the King's Orders, he  
 " spoke Two or Three Hours to him in bad *Latin* (he calls it the  
 " *Latin* of *Auvergne*) but he could not understand what he meant.  
 " He says the Beadle pretended there was One little Fault in the Act,  
 " upon which he might be accused of Forgery. Upon this the Bishop suspected *Beda*'s Practice more than he had done, and he  
 " had required the President to Obey the King's Orders, otherwise  
 " he would Protest, if he did not: And he secretly told him, he did say that, to justify him at their Hands, whom he saw he was  
 " resolved not to offend. The President then promised him the Act  
 " that Night; but then delayed it 'till next Morning at Five: When  
 " he sent for it, sometimes the Gate was not opened, and the Key  
 " was lost; sometimes the President was asleep; and then it was said  
 " that he had taken Physick, and that the Bishop must have Patience:  
 " But he understood that he had gone out by a Back-Door, to the  
 " Abbey of *St. Germain*s; thither he followed him, and asked for  
 " the Act: But he said he had sent it to the King. He reckons  
 " many other Impertinencies, that gave a mean Character of  
 " *Lixet*.

P. 307. But while this Matter was transacted thus at *Paris*, though the  
*Angiers* divided; the University of *Angiers* had determined against the Marriage, yet the Faculty of Divinity there did on the 7th of *May* 1530, determine  
 " that it was Lawful for a Christian to marry his Brother's Widow,  
 " he dying without Children; but having consummated the Marriage,  
 " that such Marriage was not contrary to the Law of God,  
 " and of Nature, and therefore the Pope might upon reasonable  
 " Grounds

the Divines against it.

“ Grounds dispense in that Case. This was the Judgment of the Faculty ; but that University did, in a Body, on that same Day, decree the quite contrary, without any mention of this Opinion of the Divines ; so, it seems, that was kept secret. 1503.  
P. 508.

Thus I have fully opened all that Mr. *Le Grand* has thought fit to publish concerning the Divines of *France*. By the Relation given of the Proceedings in the *Sorbonne*, it appears, that in the Opinion of the Bishop of *Bayonne*, and his Brother, that Body was then much corrupted ; that a few Incendiaries influenced many there, so that it was far from deserving the High Character that it had in the World. It is highly probable, they apprehended, that the carrying on the Divorce, might open a Door to let in that which they called Herefy into *England* ; which, considering the Heat of that Time, was enough to bias them in all their Deliberations.

I turn next Homeward, to give a more particular Account of the Proceedings both in *Cambridge* and *Oxford*. I begin with the former, because it was first ended there : and I have a sure Ground to go on. A worthy Person found among the Manuscripts of *Bennet-College*, a Manuscript of Dr. *Buckmaster*, then the Vicechancellor ; in which there is a very particular Relation of that Affair. It was procured to that House in Queen *Elizabeth's* Reign, by Dr. *Jegon*, then Head of that House, and was by him given to that College : For there is nothing remaining in the Registers of the University relating to it, as that Learned Person has informed me. Coll. Numb.  
16.  
The King's  
Letters to the  
University of  
Oxford.

The Vicechancellor was then a Fellow of *Peterhouse*, of which Dr. *Edmonds* was Head, who was then a Vicar and Prebendary in the Diocese and Cathedral-Church of *Salisbury*. The whole will be found in the Collection. “ It begins with a short Introductory Speech Coll. Numb.  
16. “ of the Vicechancellor's, upon which he read the King's Letter to “ them. It set forth, That many of the greatest Clerks in *Christen-* “ *dom*, both within and without the Realms, had affirmed in Wri- “ ting, That the Marrying the Brother's Wife, he dying without “ Children, was forbidden both by the Law of God, and by the “ Natural Law : The King therefore being desirous to have their “ Minds, to whom he had shewed a Benevolent Affection, did not “ doubt but they would declare the Truth, in a Case of such Im- “ portance, both to himself, and to the whole Kingdom. For this “ End, he sent *Gardiner* and *Fox*, to inform them particularly of “ the Circumstances of the Matter ; and he expected their Answer, “ under the Seal of the University. The King's Letter is dated the 16th of *February*.

“ After this was read, the Vicechancellor told them, they saw “ what the King desired of them. They were Men of free and “ ingenuous Tempers ; every one of their Consciences would dictate “ to them what was most expedient. After this, follows the Form “ of the Grace that was proposed and granted, that the Vicechan- “ cellor and Ten Doctors, and the two Proctors with Seventeen “ Masters of Arts, should have full Authority to determine the “ Question proposed, and to answer it in the Name of the whole “ University. And whatsoever Two Parts in Three of these Per- “ sons should agree in, that, without any New Order, should be re- “ turn-



1530.

“ turned to the King, as the Answer of the University: Only the Question was to be disputed publicly; and the Determination that they should make, was to be read in the Hearing of the University.

“ On the 9th of *March*, at a Meeting of the University, the Vicechancellor told them, that the Persons deputed by them, had with great Care and Diligence examined the Question, and had considered both the Passages in the Scriptures, and the Opinions of the Interpreters; upon which they had a Publick Disputation, which was well known to them all: So now, after great Labours, and all possible Industry, they came to the Determination then to be read to them. Then follows the Determination; in which they add to the Question proposed to them, these Words, after *Brother's Wife, She being Carnally known by her former Husband*: So, after above a Fortnight's Study or Practice, this was obtained of them. The Vicechancellor came to *Windſor*, and on the *Second Sunday of Lent*, after *Vespers*, he deliver'd it to the King. Of this he gave an Account to *Dr. Edmonds*, in a Letter; in which he tells him, He came to Court while *Latymer* was Preaching: The King gave him great Thanks for the Determination; and was much pleased with the Method in which they had managed it with such Quietness. The King praised *Latymer's* Sermon; and he was order'd to wait on the King the next Day. *Dr. Butts* brought 20 Nobles from the King to him, and 5 Marks to the Junior Proctor that came with him: scarce enough to bear their Charges, and far from the Price of Corruption; and gave him Leave to go when he pleased. But after Dinner, the King came to the Gallery, where *Gardiner* and *Fox*, with the Vicechancellor, *Latymer*, and the Proctor were, and no more; and talked some Hours with them. He was not pleased with *Gardiner* and *Fox*, because the other Question, *Whether the Pope had Power to dispense with such a Marriage?* was not likewise determined. But the Vicechancellor said, He believed that could not have been obtained. But the King said, He would have that determined after *Easter*. It appears by his Letter, that there was a great Outcry raised against *Cambridge*, for that which they had done. The Vicechancellor was particularly censured for it; and he had lost a Benefice, that the Patron had promised him, but had upon this changed his Mind. Those who did not like *Latymer*, were not pleased with his Preaching.

He heard, those of *Oxford* had appointed a select Number to determine the King's Question; and that *Fox*, when he was there, was in great Danger. But a more particular Account of the Proceedings in that University, I take from three of King *Henry's* Letters to them, communicated to me by my Learned Friend, *Dr. Kennet*; which, since they have not yet been printed, will be found in the Collection.

Colleg. Numb.  
17.

In the first Letter that the King wrote to the University, he sets forth, “ That upon certain Considerations moving his Conscience, he had already consulted many learned Men, both within the Kingdom, and without it; but he desired to feel the Minds of those among them, who were learned in Divinity, to see how  
“ they

“ they agreed with others : Therefore he hoped, they would sincerely and truly declare their Consciences in that Matter, and not give Credit to Misreports. He requires them, as their Sovereign Lord, to declare their true and just Learning in that Cause : Therefore, in a great Variety of Expressions, mixing Threatnings with Promises, if they should not uprightly, according to Divine Learning, handle themselves, he leaves the declaring the Particulars to the Bishop of *Lincoln*, his Confessor, to whom they were to give entire Credit.

1530.

“ By the Second Letter, the King tells them, he understood that a great Part of the Youth of the University, did in a Factious Manner combine together, in Opposition to the Wise and Learned Men of that Body, to have a great Number of Regents and Non-Regents to be joined in a Committee of the Doctors, Proctors, and Batchelors of Divinity, for the Determination of the King's Question : This he believed had not been often seen, that such a Number of Men of small Learning, should be joined with so Famous a Sort, to stay their Seniors in so weighty a Cause. The King took that in very ill Part, since they shewed themselves more unkind and wilful than all other Universities had done : He hoped they would bring those young Men into better Order, otherwise they should feel what it was to provoke him so heinously.

“ By his Third Letter, he complains, that they delay'd to send him their Determination. He tells them, the University of *Cambridge* had in a much shorter Time agreed upon the Manner of Sending their Answer ; and had sent their Answer under their Common Seal. He would have more easily born with a Delay in making the Answer, if they had so far obey'd him, as to put the Matter in a Method. He therefore being unwilling to proceed to Extremities, had sent his Counsellor, *Fox*, to them ; hoping that the Heads and Rulers would consider their Duty, in Granting his Request ; which was only, that they would *search the Truth*, in a Cause that so nearly concern'd both Himself, and his People. And therefore he desired, that the Numbers of private Suffrages might not prevail against their Heads, their Rulers, and Sage Fathers ; but that they would so try the Opinions of the Multitude, as the Importance of the Matter did require. Hoping that their Constitution was such, that there were Ways left to eschew such Inconveniences, when they should happen : as he trusted they would not fail to do, and so to redeem the Errors and Delays that were past. In Conclusion, the Matter was brought into the Method set forth in my History.

Here is no Threatning them, by Reason of any Determination they might give ; but on the contrary, all the Vehemence in those Letters, is only with Relation to the Method of Proceeding : And it was certainly a very irregular one, to join a great Number of Persons, who had not studied Divinity, with Men of the Profession, who could only by a Majority carry the Point against Reason and Argument.



1530.

Here I shall insert some Marginal Notes, that Dr. Creech wrote in his own Book of my History, which is now in my Hands. He says, that in the Determination of *Oxford*, they added the Words of the Brother's Wife, (*ab eadem carnaliter cognitam*) that the first Marriage was consummated; tho' this was not in the Question sent to the University, by their Chancellor, Archbishop *Warham*. He says further, that they mention the King's Letters, in which it was written, that an Answer was already made by the Universities of *Paris* and *Cambridge*. This of *Paris*, tho' not in the King's Letter, might have been written to them by their Chancellor; for it has appeared, from the Letters published by *Le Grand*, that tho' the Decision of the *Sorbonne* was not made till *July*, yet several Months before, the Doctors of *Paris* had given their Opinions for the Divorce. He also writes, that a Letter came from their Chancellor *Warham*, to remove all the Masters of Arts out of the Convocation, as unfit to determine so weighty a Question. *Warham* also, as he says, made the Proposal of Chusing 30, to whom the Question might be referred. In another Place, he quotes the Book that was published for the Divorce; which affirms, that the Determinations of the Universities were made, without any Corruption. The Questions were not proposed to all the Universities in the same Terms: For to some, as to the Faculty of the Canon-Law at *Paris*, and to those *Angiers* and *Bourges*, the Consummation of the Marriage is expressly asserted in it. And in the Book, in which the Determinations of the Universities are printed, those of the Universities in *England* are not mentioned. These are all the Strictures he wrote on this Part of my History.

Tom. XIV.  
The Decision  
made at Bo-  
logna.

Some more Particulars are given us by *Rymer*, concerning the Determinations of the Foreign Universities. A Copy of that made at *Bologna*, was carried to the Governor: Upon which, Five Doctors swore before *Crook*, that they had not carried it to him; and that they had kept no Copy of it. This is attested by a Notary; and the Clerks and Notaries swore the same, and that they did not know who carried it. By this, it seems, *Crook* had engaged them to Secrecy; and that the Matter coming some way to the Governor's Knowledge, they took these Oaths to assure him, that they had not broken their Word to him.

And at Padua.

The Decree in *Padua* was made *July* the 1st, and was attested by the *Podesta*, and afterwards, by the Doge of *Venice*, on the 20th of *September*; who affirm, that Eleven Doctors were present; and that the Determination was made with the Unanimous Consent of the whole Body. And this is attested by Notaries.

But now the Scene must be removed to *Rome* for some Time. The Pope had order'd a Citation to be made of the King, to appear before him, to hear his Cause judged. The King would not suffer any such Citation to be intimated to him; so it was affixed at some Churches in *Flanders*, at *Tournay* and *Bruges*. The King treated this with Contempt; while the Emperor, and his Ministers, were pressing the Pope to proceed to Censures. The King of *France* interposed, to obtain Delays; in Consideration of whom,

seve-

several Delays were granted, and the Pope said if King *Henry* would proceed no further in the Matter of the Supremacy, he would yet grant a further Delay : And whereas the *French* King pressed for a Delay of Four Months, the Pope said if the King of *England* would own him as his Judge, he would give not only the Time that was asked, but a Year, on more.

1530.

Here I shall give an Account of a long Letter that the King wrote to the Pope ; there is no Date put to it in the Copy from which I took it, but the Substance of it makes me conclude, it was writ about this Time. It will be found in the Collection.

“ In it he complains that no Regard was had neither to his just  
 “ Desires, nor to the Intercession of the Most *Christian* King: That  
 “ the Prayers of his Nobility were not only despised, but laughed  
 “ at. All this was far contrary to what he expected ; and was in-  
 “ deed so strange, that he could scarce think the Pope was capable of  
 “ doing such Things, as he certainly knew he was doing. The Pope,  
 “ against what all Men thought just, refused to send Judges to come  
 “ to the Place where the Cause lay. The Holy Councils of old had  
 “ decreed, that all Causes should be determined there where they  
 “ had their Beginning : For this he quotes St. *Cyprian* among the  
 “ Antients, and St. *Bernard* among Moderns ; who were of that  
 “ Mind. The Truth would be both sooner, and more certainly  
 “ found out, if examined on the Place, than could possibly be at a  
 “ Distance. The Pope had once sent Legates to *England*, and what  
 “ Reason could be given why this should not be done again ? But  
 “ he saw the Pope was so devoted to the Emperor, that every thing  
 “ was done as he dictated. The Queen’s Allegation, that *England*  
 “ was a Place so suspected by her, that she could not expect to have  
 “ Justice done her in it, must be believed, against the clearest Evi-  
 “ dence possible to the contrary. The King bore with the Liberties  
 “ that many took who espoused her Cause, more than was fitting ;  
 “ nor did he threaten any, or grow less kind than formerly, to those  
 “ who declared for the Marriage ; and yet the Pope pretended he  
 “ must give Credit to this, and he offered no other Reason for his  
 “ not sending Judges to *England*. This was to fasten a base Reflection  
 “ upon the King, and an Injustice, which he must look on as a great  
 “ Indignity done him.

Coll. Numb.  
 18.  
 Among Ry-  
 mer’s MSS.  
 The King  
 writes fully  
 to the Pope.

“ He further complains, that the Pope took all possible Methods to  
 “ hinder Learned Men from delivering their Opinion in his Cause ;  
 “ and tho’ after long and earnest Applications, he did give leave by  
 “ his Breves to all Persons to give their Opinion in it ; yet his own  
 “ Magistrates did, in his Name, threaten those that were against the  
 “ Power of Dispensing with the Laws of God : This was particu-  
 “ larly done at *Bologna*. The Emperor’s Ministers every where, in  
 “ Contempt of the Permission granted by the Pope, terrified all  
 “ who gave their Opinion for the King ; at which the Pope con-  
 “ veyed, if he did not consent to it. The Pope’s Nuntio did in *France*  
 “ openly, and to the King himself, declare against the King’s Cause ;  
 “ as being founded neither on Justice nor on Reason : He still  
 “ expected, that the Pope would have regard to the Prerogative of  
 “ his Crown, and to the Laws of *England*, which are as Ancient as  
 “ the



1530.

The Pope's  
Second Breve  
against the  
King's marry-  
ing another  
Wife.

Pleadings by  
an *Excusator*.

“ the Pope's Laws are ; and that he will not cite him to answer out of his Kingdom, nor send any Inhibitions into it: For he will suffer no Breach to be made on the Laws, during his Reign. He was resolved to maintain that which was his own, as he would not invade that which belonged to another : He did not desire Contention, he knew the ill effects such Disputes would have : Upon all which , he expected the Pope's Answer. This had no Effect on the Pope, so far from it, that upon a Representation made to him in Queen *Katherine's* Name, that King *Henry* seemed resolved to proceed to a second Marriage, the Pope sent out a Second Breve on the 5th of *January* 1531, declaring any such Marriage to be Null, and the Issue by it to be Illegitimate, denouncing the severest Censures possible, against all that should be any ways Assisting in it ; and requiring the King to live with the Queen in all conjugal Affection, 'till the Suit was brought to a Conclusion.

Something was to be done to stop Proceedings at *Rome* ; or upon this an immediate Rupture must follow. This brought on the sending an *Excusator* in the Name of the King and Kingdom, to shew that the King was not bound to appear upon the Citation ; nor yet to send a Proctor to appear in his Name. *Sigismund Dondalus*, and *Michael de Conrades*, Two Eminent Advocates, were brought to *Rome*, to maintain the Plea of the Excusator. They sent over the Substance of their Pleadings, which was printed at *London* by *Berthelet*. The Sum of it was, *Capisucki*, Dean of the *Rota*, had cited the King to *Rome* to answer to the Queen's Appeal : The Chief Instructions sent by *Carr*, were to insist on the Indignity done the King, to cite him to come out of his Kingdom : But it seems that was a Point that the Advocates thought fit to leave to the Ambassadors ; they thought it not safe for them to debate it, so they pleaded on other Heads.

They insisted much on that (*de loco tuto*) that no Man ought to be cited to a Place where he was not in full Safety. It could not be safe neither for the King, nor the Kingdom, that he should go so far from it. They shewed likewise, that to make a Place safe, all the intermediate Places through which one must pass to it, must be likewise safe. The Pope therefore ought to send Delegates to a safe Place, either (*in partibus*) where the Cause lay, or in the Neighbourhood of it. It was said against them, that a Cause once received in the Court of *Rome*, could never be sent out of it : But they replied, the Pope had once sent Delegates into *England* in this Cause, and upon the same Reason, he might do it again : Indeed the Cause was never in the Court, nor the King was never in it. But it was said the King might appear by a Proctor : They answered, he was not bound to send a Proxy, where he was not bound to appear in Person, but was hindered by a just Impediment : Nor was the Place safe for a Proxy. In a Matter of Conscience, such as Marriage was, he could not constitute a Proctor ; for by the Forms, he was to empower him fully, and to be bound by all that he should do in his Name. It is true, in a perpetual Impediment, a Proctor must be made ; but this was not perpetual : For the Pope might send Delegates.

An *Excusator* was to be admitted in the Name of the King, and Kingdom, when the Impediment was clear and lasting: They confessed if it was only Probable, a Proctor must be constituted. There was no Danger to be apprehended in the King's Dominions: The Queen's Oath was offered, that she could not expect Justice in that Case. They shewed this ought not to be taken, and could not be well grounded; but was only the Effect of weak Fear: It appearing evidently, that not only the Queen her self, but that all who declared for her, were safe in *England*. They did not insist on this, that the Court ought to sit (*in partibus*) in the Place where the Cause lay: It seems they found that would not be born at *Rome*: But they insisted on a Court being to sit in the Neighbourhood, They shewed, that though the *Excusator's* Powers were not so full, as to make him a *Proxy*; yet they were not defective in that which was necessary for excusing the King's Appearance, and for-offering the just Impediments, in order to the remanding of the Matter. The Book is full of the Subtilties of the Canon Law, and of Quotations from Canonists.

1530.

Thus this Matter was pleaded, and by a Succession of many Delays, was kept on Foot in the Court of *Rome* above Three Years; chiefly by the Interposition of *Francis*: For *Langey* tell us, that the King of *France* wrote once or twice a Week to *Rome*, not to precipitate Matters. That Court on the other Hand, pressed him to prevail with King *Henry* not to give New Provocations. He wrote to *Rome* from *Arques* in the beginning of *June* 1531, and complained of citing the King to *Rome*: He said Learned Persons had assured him that this was contrary to Law, and to the Privilege of Kings, who could not be obliged to leave their Kingdom; adding, that he would take all that was done for or against King *Henry*, as done to himself.

The French King obtains many Delays.  
P. 319.  
*Melange Hist. Lettres de Roy.*  
P. 1.

There is a Letter writ from the Cardinal of *Tournon* to King *Francis*, but without a Date, by which it appears, "that the Motion of an Interview between the Pope, and the King of *France*, was then set on foot: And he assures the King, that the Pope was resolved to satisfy him at their Meeting; that he would conduct King *Henry's* Affair so dextrously, that nothing should be spoiled: He must in point of Form, give way to some Things that would not be acceptable to him, that so he might not seem too partial to King *Henry*; for whom out of the Love that he bore to King *Francis*, he would do all that was in his Power, but desired that might not be talked of.

P. 8.

On the 4th of *May* he wrote to him, that the Emperor threat'ned, that if King *Henry* went on to do that Injury to his Aunt, he would make War on him by the King of *Scotland*: But they believed he would neither employ his Purse, nor draw his Sword in the Quarrel. *Langey* reports the Substance of King *Henry's* Letters to *Francis*; he complained of the Pope's citing him to answer at *Rome*, or to send a *Proxy* thither. In all former Times upon such Occasions, Judges were sent to the Place where the Cause lay. Kings could not be required to go out of their Dominions: He also complained of the Papal Exactions.



1530.

*Le Grand.*  
P. 553.

An Interview  
between the  
Two Kings.

The King  
Marries *Anne*  
*Bullen.*

Now there were Two Interviews set on Foot, in hopes to make up this Matter, that seemed very near a Breach. *Francis* had secretly begun a Negotiation with the Pope for the Marriage of the Duke of *Orleans*, afterwards King *Henry* the Second, and the Famous *Katherine de Medicis*: *Francis*, whose Heart was set on getting the Dutchy of *Milan* above all other Things, hoped by this means to compass it for his Second Son. He likewise pretended that by gaining the Pope entirely to his Interests, he should be able to make up all Matters between King *Henry* and Him. But to lay all this Matter the better, the Two Kings were to have an Interview first, in the Neighbourhood of *Calais*, which the Bishop of *Bayonne*, who was now again in *England*, was concerting. King *Henry* pressed the doing it so, that he might come back by *All-Saints*, to hold his Parliament. The Bishop saw King *Henry* would be much pleased, if *Francis* would desire him to bring *Anne Bullen* over with him, and if he would bring on his Part the Queen of *Navarre*. The Queen of *France* was a *Spaniard*, so it was desired she might not come; he also desired that the King of *France* would bring his Sons with him, and that no *Imperialists* might be brought, nor any of the *Raillieurs* (*Gaudifeurs*) for the Nation hated that sort of People. *Bayonne* writes he had sworn not to tell from whom he had this hint of *Anne Bullen*: It was no hard Thing to engage *Francis* into any Thing that looked like Gallantry; for he had writ to her a Letter in his own Hand, which *Montmorency* had sent over. At the Interview of the Two Kings, a perpetual Friendship was vowed between them: And King *Henry* afterwards reproached *Francis*, for Kissing the Pope's Foot at *Marseilles*, which, he affirms, he promised not to do; nor to proceed to marry his Son to the Pope's Niece, 'till he gave the King of *England* full Satisfaction; and added, that he promised, that if the Pope did proceed to final Censures against *Henry*, he would likewise withdraw himself from his Obedience; and that both the Kings would join in an Appeal to a General Council.

Soon after, that the King return'd from this Interview, He married *Anne Boleyn*; but so secretly, that none were present at it, but her Father and Mother, and her Brother, with the Duke of *Norfolk*. It went generally among our Historians, that *Cranmer* was present at the Marriage; and I reported it so in my History: But Mr. *Strype* saw a Letter of *Cranmer's*, to *Hawkins*, then the King's Ambassador at the Emperor's Court; in which he writes, *Notwithstanding it hath been reported throughout a great Part of the Realm, that I married Her, which was plainly false; for I my self knew not thereof a Fortnight after it was done: And many other Things be reported of me, which be mere Lyes and Tales.* In the same Letter, he says it was about St. Paul's Day. This confirms *Stow's* Relation. But to write with the Impartial Freedom of an Historian: It seems, the Day of the Marriage was given out wrong on Design. The Account that *Cranmer* gives of it, cannot be called in Question. But Queen *Elizabeth* was born, not, as I put it, on the 7th, but as *Cranmer* writes in another Letter to *Hawkins*, on the 13th or 14th of *September*: So there not being full Eight Months between the Marriage and that Birth; which would have opened a Scene of Raillery to the Court of *Rome*; it seems, the Day of the Marriage was

then said to be in *November*. And in a Matter that was so secretly managed, it was no hard thing, to oblige those who were in the Secret to Silence. This seems to be the only way to Reconcile *Cranmer's* Letter, to the Reports commonly given out of the Day of the Marriage.

1530.

The News of this was soon carried to *Rome*. Cardinal *Ghin-* Cotton Libr. Vitell. B 14.  
*muccius* wrote to the King, " That he had a long Converse-  
 " tion with the Pope, when the News was first brought thither.  
 " The Pope resolved to take no Notice of it; but he did not know  
 " how he should be able to resist the Instances that the Emperor would  
 " make. He consider'd well the Effects that his Censures would  
 " probably have. He saw, the Emperor intended to put Things past  
 " Reconciliation; but it was not reasonable for the Pope to pass  
 " Censures, when it did not appear how they could be executed.  
 " He could not do any thing prejudicial to the King, unless he re-  
 " solved to lay out a vast Sum of Money; which he believed he  
 " would not do, the Success being so doubtful. And he concludes,  
 " That they might depend upon it, that the Emperor could not  
 " easily bring the Pope to pass those Censures that he desired.

At this Time, the Third Breve was published against the King, on the 15th of *November*: But, it seems, it was for some Time suppressed; for it has a Second Date added to it, of the 23d of *December* in the Year 1532: " In which, after a long Expostulation upon  
 " his Taking *Anne* as his Wife, and his Putting away the Queen,  
 " while the Suit was yet depending; the Pope exhorts him, to  
 " bring back the Queen, and to put *Anne* away, within a Month  
 " after this was brought to him; otherwise he Excommunicates  
 " both Him, and *Anne*: But the Execution of this was suspended. Soon after this, *Benet* wrote a Letter to the King, all in Cypher; but the Deciphering is interlined. He writes, " The Pope  
 " did approve the King's Cause as just and good; and did it  
 " in a manner openly. For that Reason, he did not deliver the  
 " severe Letter, that the King wrote upon this Breve, lest that should  
 " too much provoke him. The Emperor was then at *Bologna*,  
 " and pressed for the speedy Calling a General Council; and among  
 " other Reasons, he gave the Proceeding against the King, for one.  
 " The King's Ambassadors urged the Decree of the Council of *Nice*,  
 " that the Bishops of the Province should settle all Things that be-  
 " longed to it; so by this, he said, the Pope might put the Matter  
 " out of his Hands. But the Pope would not hear of that. He  
 " writes further, That an Old and Famous Man who died lately,  
 " had left his Opinion in Writing, for the King's Cause, with  
 " his Nephew, who was in High Favour with the Pope. The Em-  
 " peror was taking Pains to engage him in his Interests, and had of-  
 " fer'd him a Bishoprick of 6000 Ducats a Year, likely soon to be  
 " void. The King's Ambassadors had promised him, on the other  
 " Hand, a great Sum from the King: They, upon that, ask Or-  
 " ders about it speedily, lest too long a Delay might alienate him  
 " from the King.

There is also a long Letter, but without a Date, written by one who was born in *Rome*, but was employed to Sollicit the King's Cause.



1531. Cause. He told the Pope, and was willing to declare it to all the Cardinals in the Consistory, "That if they proceeded further in the King's Cause, it would prove fatal to the See. They had already lost the *Hungarians*, with a great Part of *Germany*; and would they now venture to lose *England*, and perhaps *France* with it? The King thought his Marriage with *Queen Anne* was Firm and Holy, and was resolv'd to prosecute his Cause in that Court no more. The King said, He was satisfied in his own Conscience; but yet, if the Pope would judge for his present Marriage, both He and his Ministers said, it would be agreeable to him.

*Langey*,  
P. 317.  
P. 338. The Cardinals of *France* pressed the King of *France*, to use all Endeavours to bring King *Henry* with him to the Interview at *Marseilles*, or one fully empower'd to put an End to the Matter of the Divorce. *Langey* was sent to propose it to King *Henry*; but that King told him, since he saw such a Train of Dissimulation in the Pope's Proceedings, and Delays upon Delays, that had quite disgusted him. He had now obtained a Sentence in *England*, of the Nullity of his Marriage, in which he acquiesced: And upon that He was Married, tho' secretly. He was resolv'd to keep it Secret, till he saw what Effects the Interview had: If the Pope would not do Him Justice, He would deliver the Nation from that Servitude.

*Rymer*,  
June 22.  
1531. He had obtained the Judgment of some Universities, concerning the Citation to *Rome*. The University of *Orleans* gave their Opinion, That He was not bound to appear at *Rome*, neither in Person nor by Proxy; and that the Citation was Null; but that there ought to be a Delegation of Judges, in the Place where the Cause lay. Many Advocates in the Court of Parliament of *Paris*, gave their Opinions to the same Purpose. The Canonists in *Paris* thought, that the King could not be cited to go to *Rome*; but that Judges ought to be sent to determine the Matter, in some safe Place.

June 14.  
1531.  
Aug. 19.  
1531. King *Henry* wrote to his Ambassadors with the King of *France*, to divert him from the Interview with the Pope, as a Thing too much to the Pope's Honour. And whereas the King of *France* wrote, that his Chief Design in it was to serve the King: He wrote upon it, That He was so sure of his Nobility and Commons, that he had no Apprehension of any Thing the Pope could do. He therefore desired him to write to the Cardinals of *Tournon* and *Grandimont*, and to his Ambassadors at *Rome*, to press the admitting the Excusator's Plea; for that was a Point, in which all Princes were concerned.

K. Henry opposes the Interview with the Pope in vain.

*Rymer*, MS.

King *Francis* pretended, that the Breaking off the Project of the Interview could not be done: It had now gone too far, and his Honour was engaged. He was very sorry that the Excusator's Plea was rejected; yet he did not despair, but that all Things might be yet set right; which made him still more earnest for the Interview. And he was confident, if the King would come to the Meeting, all would be happily made up: But since he saw no Hope of Prevailing with the King for that, he desired that the Duke of *Norfolk* might be

be sent over, with some Learned Persons, who should see the good Offices he would do.

1531.

The Duke of *Norfolk* was sent over upon this, and he found the King of *France* at *Montpelier* in the End of *August*, but told him, that upon the last Sentence that was given at *Rome*, the King looked on the Pope as his Enemy, and he would resent his Usage of him by all possible Methods. He studied to divert the Interview, otherwise he said he must return immediately. King *Francis* answered, that the Sentence was not definitive; but though he could not break the Interview, that was concerted by King *Henry's* own Consent, he promised he would espouse the King's Affair as his own. He pressed the Duke of *Norfolk* so earnestly to go along with him, that once he seemed convinced, that it might be of good Use in the King's Cause, and a Memorial was given him of the Method of settling it: He upon this sent the Lord *Rochford* to the King, to see if he would change the Orders he had given him; and he stayed only a few Days after he had dispatched him. But he said his Orders for his Return were positive: If a Change of Orders should come, he would quickly return; if not, he would get some Learned Men to be sent to see what might be devised at *Marseilles*.

The Duke of *Norfolk* sent to *France*,

The King of *France* wrote to his Ambassador with King *Henry*, that if the Duke of *Norfolk* could have been allowed to go with him to *Marseilles*, much might have been done; and he sent with that, a Part of the Cardinal of *Tournon's* last Letter to him of the 17th of *August*, in which he wrote, "that he had spoke fully to the Pope, as the King had ordered him, about the King of *England's* Affair: The Pope complained that King *Henry* had not only proceeded to marry contrary to the *Breve* he had received, but that he was still publishing Laws in Contempt of his See; and that *Cranmer* had pronounced the Sentence of Divorce as *Legate*. This gave the Cardinals such Distaste, that they would have been highly offended with the Pope, if he had done nothing upon it: He therefore advised the King to carry the Duke of *Norfolk* with him to *Marseilles*: For if King *Henry* would but seem to repair the Steps he had made in the *Attentates*, as they called them, and do that which might save the Pope's Honour, he assured him such was his Love to him, that for his sake he would do all that was desired, with all his Heart. But he feared Expedients would not be readily found, if the Duke of *Norfolk* went not to *Marseilles*.

But soon recalled.

The King of *France* sent such Messages to King *Henry* by the Duke of *Norfolk*, and such Compliments to Queen *Anne*, as highly pleased them: For his Ambassador wrote to him, that since the Duke of *Norfolk's* coming, King *Henry* expressed his Confidence and Friendship for him in a very particular Manner: King *Henry* had asked him if he had no Order to stand Godfather in the King of *France's* Name, in Case the Queen should be delivered of a Son: He answered he had none, but he would write to the King upon the Subject: The Duke of *Norfolk* said, he had spoke to the King of *France* about it, who agreed to it, that either the Ambassador, or some other sent Express, should do it. The Child's Name was to be *Edward* or *Henry* (but the Birth proving a Daughter, this went no further). He

The King of *France* was to have been Godfather if Queen *Anne* had brought a Son.



1531.

adds in his Letter, that *Gardiner* then Bishop of *Winchester*, was sent to *Marfeilles*. The King of *France* sent from *Arles* on the 17th of *September*, an Order for the Christ'ning.

The Inter-  
view at *Mar-*  
*feilles*.

*Mel. Hist.*  
P. 142.

But now the next Scene is at *Marfeilles*: Where after the Ceremonies were over, the King of *France* set himself, as he writes, with great Zeal to bring the Pope to be easy in the King's Matter: He protested he minded no Business of his own, 'till he should see what could be done in the Matter of the King's Divorce. The Pope said he left the Process at *Rome*, so that nothing could be done in it. The *French* Ambassador wrote to his Master, that King *Henry* charged him with this, that he himself brought over Instructions, with Promises that *Francis* would not proceed to the Marriage of his Son, 'till the King's Matter was done: The Ambassador denied this, and offered to shew his Instructions, that it might appear that no such Article was in them. King *Henry* insisted that the *French* King had promised it both to himself, and to the Queen; and if he failed him in this, he could depend no more on his Friendship. When the Ambassador told the Duke of *Norfolk* how uneasy this would be to the King of *France*, who had the King's Concerns so much at Heart, and that all the Interest that he could gain in the Pope, would be employed in the King's Service; for if he should break with the Pope, that must throw him entirely into the Emperor's Hands: The Duke of *Norfolk* confessed all that was true: But said that the King's Head was so embroiled with this Matter, that he trusted no living Man, and that both He and the Queen suspected himself.

*Mel. Hist.*  
P. 174.  
Great Pro-  
mises made by  
the Pope.

The Bishop of *Auxerre*, the *French* Ambassador, had wrote from *Rome*, " that the Pope would do all that they asked, and more if he  
" durst or could: But he was so pressed by the Emperor's People,  
" that though it was against God and Reason, and the Opinion, even  
" of some of the Imperial Cardinals, he was forced to do whatsoever  
" Cardinal *Dosme* demanded. In a Letter to Cardinal *Tournon*, the  
Bishop of *Auxerre* complains, that the King of *England* was ill used;  
and in a Letter to the Pope's Legate in *France*, he writes, " That  
" the Pope was disposed to grant King *Henry's* Desire, yet he was so  
" pressed by the *Imperialists*, that he expected no good from him,  
" unless in the way of Dissembling: He firmly believed he would  
" do well if he durst: His Answer to the King of *France* was as good  
" as could be wished for, he hoped the Effects would agree to it:  
" Cardinal *Farnese*, the Antientest Cardinal (afterwards Pope *Paul*  
" the Third) was wholly for them: The Cardinal of *Ancona*, next  
" to him in Seniority, was wholly *Imperialist*: He writes that the  
" Ambassadors had an Audience of Three Hours of the Pope, when  
" they delivered the King of *France's* Letters on the King of *Eng-*  
" *land's* Behalf: The Pope said he was sorry that he must determine  
" the Matter; for he should have small Thanks on both Sides. The  
" Thing had been now Four Years in his Hands, he had yet done  
" nothing, if he could do as he wished, he wished as they all wished:  
" and he spake this in such a Manner, that they were much mistaken  
" if he spoke not as he thought. The Pope asked them what made  
" the King of *France* to be so earnest in this Matter; they answered,  
" that the Two Kings were so united, that they were both more  
" touched

*Mel. Hist.*  
P. 175.

“ touched with the Affairs each of the other, than with their  
 “ own. 1531.

In another Letter to *Montmorancy*, he writes, “ That there was  
 “ a new Delay granted for four Months. The Pope, upon his  
 “ granting it, pressed him to write to the King, to prevail with  
 “ King *Henry* to send a Proxy. He answered, He believed that  
 “ would not be done, unless Assurance was given, that the Cause  
 “ should be remitted. If the Matter had been then put to the Vote,  
 “ the Ancient and Learned Cardinals would have judged for the  
 “ King of *England*; but they were few, and the Number of the  
 “ others was great; so that the Cause would have been quite  
 “ lost.

At the same Time, the Cardinal of *Ancona* proposed to *Bennet*, Cotton Libr.  
 and to *Cassali*, that if a Proxy were sent to *Rome*, they should have Vitell. B. 12.  
 not only Justice, but all manner of Favour: For both the Pope and Practices  
 the Cardinals did very positively promise, that a Commission should upon Cardi-  
 be made to Delegates, to hear the Witnesses in *England*, reserving nals.  
 only the Final Sentence to the Pope. *Cassali* was, upon this, sent  
 to *England*; but his Negotiation had no Effect: Only he seems to  
 have known well the secret Method of Practising with the Cardi-  
 nals. For, upon his Return, he met the King of *France* at *Com-*  
*piègne*, with whom he had much Discourse about Managing the Car-  
 dinals; particularly Cardinal *de Monte* (afterwards Pope *Julius* the  
 Third). The King of *France* had sent 40000 Crowns to be distri-  
 buted in the Court of *Rome*; upon which, he offers some very pru-  
 dent Suggestions. The Letter to the King from thence, seemed Collect. Numb.  
 so considerable, that I have put it in the Collection. 19.

These were the Preparations on all Hands for the Meeting at  
*Marseilles*; where *Francis* protested that he set himself so earnestly  
 to get Satisfaction to be given to *Henry*, that he minded no Business  
 of his own, till he should see what could be done in that. The  
 Pope said indeed, that he had left the Process at *Rome*; but they  
 wrote over, that they knew this was false: Yet, by that, they saw  
 the Pope intended to do nothing in it. *Francis* indeed complained,  
 that there was no Proxy from the King sent to *Marseilles*: If there  
 had been one, he said, the Business had been ended. It was also Mel. Hist.  
 reported, that the King of *France* had said to the Duke of *Nor-*  
*folk*, he would be the King's Proxy; (Here, in the Margin, it is P. 19.  
 set down, *The Duke of Norfolk denies he said this*;) but the King  
 of *France* knew, that the King would never Constitute a Proxy,  
 that being contrary to the Laws of his Kingdom. The Pope con-  
 fessed that his Cause was just: All the Lawyers in *France* were  
 of that Mind. But the Pope complained of the Injuries done the  
 See by King *Henry*. *Francis* answered, The Pope begun doing  
 Injuries: But King *Henry* moved, that setting aside what was past,  
 without asking Reparation of either Side, Justice might be done  
 him; and if it was not done, he would trouble himself no more  
 about it.

He afterwards charged King *Francis*, “ That in several Particu- Ibid.  
 “ lars he had not kept his Promises to him. He believed, that  
 “ if he had pressed the Pope more, he would have yielded. It was  
 “ said,



1531.

“ said, King *Henry* was governed by his Council ; whereas, he said,  
 “ He governed Them, and not they Him. Upon this Audience,  
 “ the Duke of *Norfolk* seemed troubled that the King was so Pas-  
 “ sionate: He had advised the King, but in vain, to let the Annats  
 “ go still to *Rome*. This is put in the Margin.

P. 21.

In another Memorial set next to the former, and, as it seems, writ soon after it, it is said, That the Emperor had sent word to the Queen and her Daughter, not to come to *Spain*, till he had first got Right to be done them : And that the People were in a Disposition to join with any Prince that would espouse their Quarrel. This is said to be the general Inclination of all Sorts of People : For they apprehended a Change of Religion, and a War that would cut off their Trade with the *Netherlands* ; so that the New Queen was little beloved.

The Convo-  
cation meets.

But now I must return, and set out the Progress of Matters, that provoked the Pope and Court of *Rome* so much. I shall give first the several Proceedings of the Convocation.

The Parliament had complained of the *Oath ex Officio*, by which the Ordinaries obliged Persons to answer to such Accusations as were laid to their Charge, upon Oath : And as they answered, charging themselves, they were obliged either to Abjure, or to Burn. To this they added some other Grievances. When they presented them to the King, He told them he could give no Answer, till he heard what the Clergy would say to them. They also passed Acts, about some Points that the Clergy thought belonged to them ; as Mortuaries, Plurality of Benefices, and Clergymen taking Farms.

The first Motion made by the Lower-House, was, concerning *Tracy's* Testament ; who had left his Soul to God thro' Jesus Christ, to whose Intercession alone he trusted, without the Help of any other Saint : Therefore he left no Part of his Goods to any that should Pray for his Soul. This touching the Clergy very sensibly, they begun with it ; and a Commission was given for the Raising his Body.

In a following Session, the Prolocutor complained of another Testament, made by one *Brown* of *Bristol*, in the same Strain. So, to prevent the Spreading of such an Example, it was ordered, that *Tracy's* Body should be dug up, and burnt. In the 84th Session, the House being thin, an Order was made, that all the Members should attend, for some Constitutions were at that time to be treated of.

They treat  
concerning  
Residence.

In the 91st Session, which was in the End of *February*, the Prolocutor came up with a Motion, that those who were presented to Ecclesiastical Benefices, should not be obliged by their Bishops, to give any Bond obliging them under Temporal Punishment to Residence : But to this no Answer was given, nor was any Rule made against it. There had been Complaints made, of Clerks Non-Residents in the former Session of Parliament ; and it seems, some Bishops thought the surest way to stop that Clamour was, to take Bonds of Residence. And tho' this Complaint shews the Ill Temper of the Lower-House, since they did not offer any other better Remedy.

Remedy; yet the Upper-House offering no Answer to it, seems to imply their approving of it.

1531.

In the 93d Session, *Latymer*, who had been thrice required to Subscribe some Articles, refused to do it: He was excommunicated, and appointed to be kept in Safe Custody in *Lambeth*. Session 96, it was resolved, that if *Latymer* would subscribe some of the Articles, he should be absolved. Upon that he submitted, confessed his Error, and subscribed all the Articles except Two.

In the 97th Session, on the 12th of *April*, 1532, the Archbishop proposed to them the Preparing an Answer to the Complaints that the Commons had made to the King, against the Proceedings in their Courts.

An Answer to the Complaints of the Commons.

In the 98th Session, the Preamble of that Complaint was read by *Gardiner*, with an Answer that he had prepared to it. Then the Two Clauses of the First Article, with Answers to them, were also read and agreed to, and sent down to the Lower-House. *Latymer* was also brought again before them, upon Complaint of a Letter that he had written to one *Greenwood*, in *Cambridge*.

In the 99th Session, an Answer to the Complaint of the Commons was read and agreed to, and ordered to be laid before the King; with which He was not satisfied. *Latymer* being called to answer upon Oath, he appealed to the King, and said, he would stand to his Appeal.

*Peyto* and *Elsson*, Two Brethren of the House of the Observants in *Greenwich*, accused Dr. *Curren*, for a Sermon preached there: But the Archbishop ordered them to be kept in Custody, with the Bishop of *St. Asaph*, till they should be dismissed:

Proceedings against Heretics.

In the 100th Session, the King sent a Message by *Gardiner*, intimating, that he remitted *Latymer* to the Archbishop: And upon his Submission, he was received to the Sacraments. This was done at the King's Desire: But some Bishops protested; because this Submission did not import a Renunciation usual in such Cases. After this, Four Sessions were employed, in a further Consideration of the Answer to the Complaints of the House of Commons.

In the 105th Session, the Prolocutor brought up Four Draughts, concerning the Ecclesiastical Authority, for making Laws in order to the Suppressing of Heresy; but declared, that he did not bring them up as approved by the House; he only offered them to the Bishops, as Draughts prepared by Learned Men. He desired they would read them, and chuse what was true out of them: But added, that he prayed, that if they prepared any thing on the Subject, it might be communicated to the Lower-House. Some of these are printed: I shall therefore only insert one in my Collection, because it is the shortest of them, and yet does fully set forth their Design. It was formed in the Upper-House, and agreed to in the Lower, with Two Alterations. In it they promise the King, that "for the future, such was the Trust that they put in his Wisdom, Goodness and Zeal, and his Incomparable Learning, far exceeding the Learning of all other Princes that they had read of, that during his Natural Life, they should not enact, promulge, or put in Execution, any Constitution to

Rights of an English Convocation. Coll. Num.

20. The Petition to the King.



1531. " be made by them, unless the King by his Royal Assent did  
 " license them so to do. And as for the Constitutions already  
 " made, of which the Commons complained, they would readily  
 " submit the Consideration of these *to the King only*: And such of  
 " these, as the King should judge prejudicial and burthensome, they  
 " offered to moderate or annul them according to his Judgment. Sa-  
 " ving to themselves all the Immunities and Liberties granted to the  
 " Church, by the King and his Progenitors, with all such Provincial  
 " Constitutions as stand with the Laws of God, and *Holy Church*,  
 " and of the Realm, which they pray'd the King to ratify: Provi-  
 " ding that till the King's Pleasure should be made known to them,  
 " all Ordinaries might go on to execute their Jurisdiction as formerly.  
 This did not pass easily; there was great debating upon it: But upon  
 adding the Words, *during the King's natural Life*, which made it a  
 Temporary Law; and by adding the Words, *Holy Church*, after the  
 Laws of God, which had a great Extent, this Form was agreed to:  
 But what Effect this had, or whether it was offered to the King, does  
 not appear. The Alterations, that were afterwards made will appear  
 to any who compares this with the Submission; of which a parti-  
 cular Account will be found in my History.

The Bishop of *London*, presiding in the Absence of the Archbishop,  
 told them, that the Duke of *Norfolk* had signified to him, that the  
 House of Commons had granted the King a Fifteenth to be raised in  
 Two Years; so he advised the Clergy to be as ready as the Laity had  
 been to supply the King. The Prolocutor was sent down with this  
 Intimation; he immediately returned back, and proposed that they  
 should consider of an Answer to be made to the King, concerning  
 the Ecclesiastical Authority; and that some might be sent to the King,  
 to pray him that he would maintain the Liberties of the Church,  
 which he and his Progenitors had confirmed to them: And they  
 desired, that the Bishops of *London* and *Lincoln*, with some Abbots,  
 the Dean of the King's Chapel, and *Fox* his Almoner, would inter-  
 cede in Behalf of the Clergy; which they undertook to do.

The Submissi-  
 on made to  
 the King, one  
 Bishop only  
 dissenting.

In the 106th Session, which was on the 10th of *May*, the Arch-  
 bishop appointed a Committee to go and treat with the Bishop of  
*Rocheſter* at his House upon that Matter. In the 107th Session, the  
 13th of *May*, the Archbishop appointed the Chancellor of *Worceſter*  
 to raise *Tracy's* Body: Then they agreed to the Answer they were to  
 make to the King. In the 108th Session, on the 15th of *May*, the  
 Writ for Proroguing the Convocation was brought to the Archbishop:  
 At the same time, the Duke of *Norfolk*, the Marquis of *Exeter*, the  
 Earl of *Oxford*, the Lord *Sands*, Lord Chamberlain, and the Lord  
*Bullen*, and Lord *Rocheſford*, were in a secret Conference with the  
 Archbishop and Bishops for the Space of an Hour; when they with-  
 drew, the Prolocutor and Clergy came up. The Archbishop asked,  
 how they had agreed to the Schedule, which, as appears, was the  
 Form of the Submission. The Prolocutor told him, how many  
 were for the Affirmative, how many for the Negative, and how ma-  
 ny were for putting off the Three Articles (of the Submission.)  
 The Archbishop said, he expected those Lords would come back to  
 him from the King, and so sent them back to their House. These

Lords

Lords came back to the Chapter-House, and after some Discourse with the Bishops, they retired. After Dinner, the Schedule was read in *English*; and the Archbishop asked, if they agreed to it; they all answered they did agree to it, only the Bishop of *Bath* dissented. Then he sent it down by his Chancellor, to propose it to the Lower-House. After that, on the 15th of *May*, it seems, the Schedule was sent back by the Lower-House, tho' that is not mentioned in the Abstract that we have remaining. For that Day the Convocation was Prorogued, and the next Day the Archbishop delivered it to the King, as enacted and concluded by himself and others. The Convocation was Prorogued to the 5th of *November*.

1531.

And thus this great Transaction was brought about, in little more than a Month's Time: The first Motion towards it being made on the 12th of *April*, and it was concluded on the 15th of *May*. It appears by their Heat against *Tracy's* Testament, and against *Latimer*, that they who managed the Opposition that was made to it, were Enemies to every thing that looked towards a Reformation. It seems, *Fisher* did not protest; for tho' by their sending a Committee to his House, it may be supposed he was sick at that time; yet he might have sent a Proxy, and ordered a Dissent to be entred in his Name: And that not being done, gives ground to suppose that he did not vehemently oppose this Submission. By it, all the Opposition that the Convocations would probably have given to every Step that was made afterwards in the Reformation, was so entirely restrained, that the quiet Progress of that Work was owing chiefly to the Restraint under which the Clergy put themselves by their Submission: And in this the whole Body of this Reformed Church has cheerfully acquiesced, till within these few Years, that great Endeavours have been used to blacken and disgrace it.

I have seen no particular Account, how this Matter went in the Convocation at *York*, nor how Matters went there; save only that it was agreed, to give a Tenth. I have seen a Letter of *Magnus*, one of the King's Chaplains, who was required by *Cromwel* to go thither, where Dr. *Lee* was to meet him. There is no Year added in the Date of the Letter; but since he mentions the last Convocation, that had given a great Sum of Money, and owned the King to be the *Supreme*, that fixes it to this Session. He dates it from *Marybone* the 21st of *April*, as it will be seen in the Collection. "He was then in  
" an ill State of Health, but promises to be at *York* soon after the  
" Beginning of their Convocation. He complains, that he had no  
" Assistance at the last Meeting; and that the Books, which the King  
" had promised should be sent after him, were not sent: Which  
" made the King's Cause to be the longer in treating, before it came  
" to a good Conclusion. The Prelates and Clergy there, would not  
" believe any Report of the Act passed at *London*, unless they were  
" shewed them Authentically, either under Seal, or by the King's  
" Letters. He hopes both these things which had been neglected  
" formerly, would be now done; otherwise the Clergy in those Parts  
" would not proceed to any strange Acts: So he warns him that all  
" things may be put in Order.

The Proceedings at *York*.Coll. Numb.  
21.



1531.

Whatsoever it was that passed either in the one or the other Convocation, the King kept it within himself for Two Years: For, so long he was in treating Terms with *Rome*: And if that had gone on, all this must have been given up: But when the final Breach came on, which was after Two Years, it was ratified in Parliament.

Before the next Meeting, *Warham* died. He had all along concurred in the King's Proceedings, and had promoted them in Convocation; yet in the last Year of his Life, six Months before his Death, on the 9th of *February* 1531, he made a Protestation of a singular Nature, not in the House of Lords, but at *Lambeth*; and so secretly, that Mention is only made of Three Notaries and Four Witnesses present at the making it. It is to this Effect; That *what Statutes sever had passed, or were to pass in this present Parliament, to the Prejudice of the Pope, or the Apostolick See, or that derogated from, or lessened the Ecclesiastical Authority, or the Liberties of his See of Canterbury, he did not consent to them; but did disown and dissent from them.* This was found in the *Longueville* Library, and was communicated to me by Dr. *Wake*, the present Bishop of *Lincoln*. I leave it with the Reader, to consider what Construction can be made upon this; whether it was, in the Decline of his Life, put on him by his Confessor about the Time of *Lent*, as a Penance for what he had done; or if he must be looked on as a deceitful Man, that while he seemed openly to concur in those things, he protested against them secretly. The Instrument will be found in the Collection. Upon his Death, the Prior and Convent of *Christ-Church* of *Canterbury*, deputed the Bishop of *St. Asaph* to preside in the Convocation. On the 20th of *February*, in the 4th Session, the Bishop of *London* moved, that the Two Universities should be exempted from paying any Part of the Subsidy: The same was also desired for some Religious Orders, and it was agreed to, *Gardiner* only dissenting, as to the Exemption of the Religious Orders. It may reasonably be supposed, that his opposing this was in Compliance with the King, who began to shew an Aversion both to the Monks and Friars; seeing they were generally in the Interests of *Queen Katharine*; and *Gardiner* was the most forward in his Compliances of all the Clergy, *Boner* only excepted, tho' the old Leaven of Popery was deep in them both.

In the 11th Session, on the 26th of *March*, *Latimer* was again brought before them: And it was laid to his Charge, that he had preached, contrary to his Promise. *Gardiner* inveighed severely against him; and to him all the rest agreed. When the Prolocutor came up, the President spoke to him of the Subsidy: Then the Matter of the King's Marriage was brought before them. *Gardiner* produced some Instruments, which he desired them to read: They were the Judgments of several Universities. Some doubted, if it was safe to debate a Matter that was then depending before the Pope: But the President put an End to that Fear, by producing a Breve of the Pope's, in which all were allowed to deliver their Opinions freely in that Matter: So he exhorted them to examine the Questions to be put to them carefully, that they might be prepared to give their Opinions about them.

In

Coll. Numb.  
22.  
Proceedings  
during the  
Vacancy of  
*Canterbury*.

In the 112th Session, the President produced the Original Instrument of the Universities of *Paris, Orleans, Bologna, Padua, Bourges, and Thoulouſe*, (*Angiers* and *Ferrara* are not named;) and after much Disputing, they were desired to deliver their Opinions, as to the Consummation of the Marriage. Because it was a difficult Case, they asked more Time. They had till Four a Clock given them; then there were yet more Disputings: In Conclusion, they agreed with the Universities. This was first put to them; tho' in the Instrument made upon it, it is mentioned after that which was offered to them in the next Session.

1531.

The Convocation judges against the King's Marriage.

On the Second of *April*, 1533, *Cranmer* being now Consecrated, and present, Two Questions were proposed, and put to the Vote. The First was, *Whether the Prohibition to Marry the Brother's Wife, the former Marriage being Consummated, was dispensible by the Pope?* Or, as it is in the Minutes, *Whether it was Lawful to Marry the Wife of a Brother dying without Issue; but having Consummated the Marriage? And if the Prohibition of such a Marriage was grounded on a Divine Law, with which the Pope could dispense, or not?* There were present Sixty-six Divines, with the Proxies of 197 absent Bishops, Abbots, and others: All agreed to the Affirmative, except only Nineteen.

Rymer.

The Second Question was, *Whether the Consummation of Prince Arthur's Marriage was sufficiently proved?* This belonged to the Canonists; so it was referred to the Bishops and Clergy of that Profession, being Forty-four in all, of whom One had the Proxy of Three Bishops: All these, except Five or Six, affirmed it: Of these, the Bishop of *Bath* and *Wells* was one. Of all this, a Publick Instrument was made.

In the Account I formerly gave of this Matter, I offered a Conjecture concerning the Constitution of the Two Houses, that Deans and Archdeacons, who sat in their own Right, were then of the Upper-House; which, I see, was without any good Ground. I likewise committed another Error, thro' Inadvertence: For I said, the Opinions of Nineteen Universities were read; whereas, only Six were read. And the Nineteen, which I added to the Number of the Universities, was the Number of those who did not agree to the Vote.

These Questions were next sent to the Convocation of the Province of *York*; where there were present Twenty-seven Divines, who had the Proxies of Twenty-four, who were absent: And all these, Two only excepted, agreed to the First Question. There were likewise Forty-four Canonists present, with the Proxies of Five or Six: To them the Second Question was put; and all these were for the Affirmative, Two only excepted. The whole Representative of the Church of *England*, in the Convocation of the Two Provinces of *Canterbury* and *York*, did in this manner give their Answer to the Two Questions put to them; upon which *Cranmer* wrote to the King on the 11th of *April*, complaining, that the Great Cause of his Matrimony had depended long; and upon that, he desired his Licence to judge it: Which the King readily granted. So he gave Sentence, condemning it on the 23d of *May*: And then the King

The Archbishop, *Cranmer*, gives Sentence against it.



1531.

openly owned his Second Marriage ; for the New Queen's Big Belly could be no longer concealed.

With that the  
Court of Rome  
was highly of-  
fended.

This was highly resented at *Rome*, as an open Attempt upon the Pope's Authority ; and these Steps, in their Stile, were called the *Attentates* : So considering the Blind Submission to the Popes, in which the World had been kept for so many Ages, it was no wonder to find the *Imperialists* call upon the Pope, almost in a tumultuary Manner, to exert his Authority to the full, when he saw it so openly affronted. And it is very probable, that if the Pope had not with that violent Passion, that *Italians* have for the Advancing their Families, run into the Proposition for marrying his Niece to the Duke of *Orleans*, he would have fulminated upon this Occasion : But he finding that might be broke off, if he had proceeded to the utmost Extremities with King *Henry*, was therefore resolved to prolong the Time, and to delay the final Sentence ; otherwise the Matter would have been ended much sooner than it was.

Cotton Libr.  
Vitell. B. 14.  
Coll.  
Numb. 23.

*Gardiner*, *Bryan*, and *Bennet*, were sent as Ambassadors, to the King of *France*, to *Marseilles*. *Boner* was also sent thither on a more desperate Service ; for he was ordered to go and read the King's Appeal from the Pope, to a General Council, in the Pope's own Presence, at such Time, and in such a Manner, as the King's Ambassadors should direct. Of the Execution of this, he gave the King a very particular Account, in a Letter to him, bearing Date at *Marseilles*, the 13th of *November*, 1533. Which the Reader will find in the Collection, copied from the Original : In it he tells the King,

*Boner* intimates the  
King's Appeal  
to the Pope.

“ That being commanded by his Ambassadors, to intimate to the  
“ Pope in Person, the Provocations and Appeals that he had made to  
“ a General Council ; he carried one *Penniston*, who it seems was a  
“ Notary, with him, to make an Act concerning it. They came to  
“ the Pope's Palace on the 17th of *November*, in the Morning. He  
“ found some Difficulty in getting Access : For he was told that the  
“ Pope was going to hold a Consistory ; so that no other Business  
“ was to interpose : Yet he got into the Pope's Chamber, where the  
“ Pope was with the two Cardinals *de Medicis* and *Lorrain* : The  
“ Pope being appalled in his Stole, to go to the Consistory : The  
“ Pope quickly observed *Boner*, for he had prayed the Datary to let  
“ the Pope know he desired to speak with him : The Datary said it  
“ was not a proper Time ; but *Boner* was resolved to go immediately  
“ to him ; so he told the Pope of it : Who upon that dismissed the  
“ Cardinals, and going to a Window, he called him to him ; upon  
“ that *Boner* told him the Message he had from the King to read be-  
“ fore him ; making such Apology first in the King's Name, and then  
“ in his own, as was necessary to prepare him for it. The Pope  
“ cringed in the *Italian* way, but said, he had not time then to hear  
“ those Papers ; but bad him come again in the Afternoon, and he  
“ would give him a full Audience. When he came again, he was,  
“ after some others had their Audience, called in ; *Penniston* follow-  
“ ing him, whom the Pope had not observed in the Morning. So *Boner*  
“ told him, that it was he who had brought over his Commission  
“ and Orders ; upon that the Pope called for his Datary, and for *Si-*

“ *monetta*

“ *monetta* and *Capifuchi*. Till they came in, the Pope, in Discourse,  
 “ asked both for *Gardiner* and *Brian*, seemingly not to know that they  
 “ were at *Marseilles*; and he lamented the Death of *Binnet*: He com-  
 “ plained of the King’s using him as he did. *Boner*, on the other  
 “ Hand, complained of his unkind Usage of the King; and that he  
 “ had, contrary to his Promise, avocated the Cause, when it was  
 “ brought to the Point of giving Sentence; and had now retained the  
 “ Cause to *Rome*, whither the King could not come personally, nor  
 “ was he bound to send a Proctor: And he urged the Matter very  
 “ close upon the Pope. He also complained, that the King’s Cause  
 “ being just, and esteemed so by the best Learned Men in *Chriften-*  
 “ *dom*, yet the Pope kept it so long in his Hands: The Pope answered,  
 “ that had not the Queen refused the Judges as suspect, and taken  
 “ an Oath, that she expected no Justice in the King’s Dominions, he  
 “ would not have avocated the Cause: But in that Case, notwith-  
 “ standing his Promise, he was bound to do it; and the Delay of  
 “ the Matter lay wholly at the King’s Door, who did not send a  
 “ Proctor. While *Boner* was replying, the Datary came in, and the  
 “ Pope cut him short; and commanded the Datary to read the Com-  
 “ mission: Which he did: The Pope often interrupted the reading  
 “ it, with Words that expressed a high Displeasure: And when the  
 “ Appeal was read to the next lawful General Council to be held in a  
 “ proper Place, he expressed with some Rage, his Indignation; but  
 “ restrained himself, and said, All that came from the King was wel-  
 “ come to him: But by his Gesture and Manner, it appeared he was  
 “ much discomposed. Yet after that, he shewed how willing he was  
 “ to call a Council, but that the King seemed to put it off; he or-  
 “ dered the Datary to read it quite through; in the End mention be-  
 “ ing made of the Archbishop of *Canterbury*’s Sentence, he spake of  
 “ that with great Contempt. He also observed that the King in  
 “ Words expressed Respect to the Church, and to the Apostolick See,  
 “ yet he expressed none to his Person. While they were thus in Dis-  
 “ course, the King of *France* came to see the Pope, who met him at  
 “ the Door. That King seemed to know nothing of the Business, tho’  
 “ *Boner* believed he did know it: The Pope told him what they  
 “ were about; they Two continued in private Discourse about three  
 “ quarters of an Hour, and seemed very chearful: Then that King  
 “ went away, the Pope conducted him to the Door of the Anticham-  
 “ ber. When the Pope came back, he ordered the Datary to read out  
 “ all that remained: The Pope often interrupting him as he read.  
 “ When the first Instrument was read to an End, *Boner* offered the  
 “ two Appeals, that the King had made to a General Council; these  
 “ the Pope delivered to the Datary, that he might read them.

1531.

“ When all was read, the Pope said he would consider with the  
 “ Cardinals what Answer was to be given them; and seemed to think  
 “ that the Writings were to remain with him: But *Boner* pressing to  
 “ have them again; he said he would consider what Answer he was  
 “ to give to that. So the Pope dismissed him, after an Audience that  
 “ lasted three Hours. The Datary told *Boner*, there was to be a  
 “ Consistory next Day; after that he might come to receive his An-  
 “ swer. On the 10th a Consistory was held; in the Afternoon, the  
 “ Pope

It was re-  
 jected by the  
 Pope.



1531.

“ Pope was long taken up with the Blessing of Beads, and admitting  
 “ Persons of Quality, of both Sexes, to kiss his Foot. When that  
 “ was over, he called *Boner* in, and the Pope began to express his  
 “ Mind towards the King, that it was to do him all Justice, and to  
 “ please him all he could; and though it had not been so taken, yet  
 “ he intended to continue in the same Mind: But according to a Con-  
 “ stitution of Pope *Pius*, that condemned all such Appeals, he reject-  
 “ ed the King’s Appeal to a General Council, as frivolous and unlaw-  
 “ ful. As for a General Council, he would use all his Diligence to  
 “ have it meet, as he had formerly done: But the calling it belonged  
 “ wholly to him: He said he would not restore the Instruments;  
 “ and told *Boner*, that the Datary should give him his Answer in  
 “ Writing. *Boner* went to the Datary’s Chamber, where he found  
 “ the Answer already written, but not signed by him: Next Day he  
 “ signed it; adding the *salvo* of answering it more fully and more  
 “ particularly, if it should be thought meet.

“ The Pope left *Marseilles* the next Day, and went towards *Rome*.  
 “ *Boner* concludes that the *French* knew of their Design, and were  
 “ willing it should be done, two or three Days before the Pope’s De-  
 “ parture; yet when it was done, they said it had spoiled all their  
 “ Matters, and the King’s likewise”. He says nothing of any threat-  
 “ ning of bad Usage to himself. The King of *France* indeed when  
 he expostulated upon the Affront done the Pope, while in his  
 House, said, That he durst not have done that in any other Place:  
 This makes it probable that the Pope told him how he would have  
 used *Boner*, if he had served him with that Appeal in his own Terri-  
 tories. So whether this came to be known afterwards from the Court  
 of *France*, or whether *Boner* might have spread it in *England* at  
 his Return, to raise the Value of that Piece of Service, which he  
 was capable of doing, cannot be determined. It is certain it was re-  
 ported in *England* so, that in the Answer to *Sanders* it is set down;  
 and from him I took it: But I will leave it with the Reader, to con-  
 sider what Credit may be due to it.

Antisandens.

At the same Time *Cranmer* hearing the Pope designed to proceed  
 against him, did by the King’s Order appeal likewise to a General  
 Council, and sent the Instrument with a Warrant to execute it, to  
*Cromwell*, that it might be sent to the Bishop of *Winchester*, to get it  
 to be intimated to the Pope, in the best Manner that could be thought  
 of: He therefore by the King’s Command, sent this to him in a Let-  
 ter dated the 22d of *November*, which will be found in the Collection,  
 but it does not appear to me what was done upon it.

Coll. Numb.  
24.

Le Gr. p. 571.  
*Bellay* sent  
 over to the  
 King, by King  
*Francis*.

I shall in the next Place give an Account of the Instructions that  
 the King of *France* sent by *Bellay*, then translated from *Bayonne* to  
*Paris*, whom he dispatched immediately after he came back from  
*Marseilles*, as the Person in the Kingdom that was the most acceptable  
 to the King. The Substance of them is, “ That *Francis* had at the  
 “ Interview studied nothing so much as to advance *Henry*’s Matters:  
 “ Yet he heard that he complained of him as having done less than  
 “ he expected, which he took much amiss. It was agreed by the  
 “ Two Kings, that a Proposition should be set on Foot for the Duke  
 “ of *Orleans* marrying the Pope’s Niece; which had not been be-  
 “ fore

“ fore thought of. The Matter was so far advanced, and the Inter-  
 “ view so settled, that *Francis* could not afterwards put it off with  
 “ Honour; all being done pursuant to their first Agreement at *Calais*.  
 “ The Pope promised to make no new Step in King *Henry*’s Matter,  
 “ if he would do the same. But King *Henry* did innovate in many  
 “ Particulars, yet contrary to all Men’s Expectations, he had ef-  
 “ fectually restrained the Pope from shewing his Resentments upon  
 “ it: And he was in a fair way to have engaged the Pope against the  
 “ Emperor, if King *Henry* would have given him any Handle for it.  
 “ Once *Francis* hoped to have brought *Henry* to *Marfeilles*; but he  
 “ judged that was not fit for him, and promised to send the Duke of  
 “ *Norfolk* in his Stead: For notwithstanding the Sentence passed at  
 “ *Rome*, a Remedy was proposed, if a Person was sent with full  
 “ Powers, as was expected. When *Gardiner* came to *Marfeilles*, he  
 “ said he had Orders to do whatsoever *Francis* should direct him,  
 “ but indeed he brought no such Powers. The Pope was resolved to  
 “ do all that he could advise him for *Henry*’s Satisfaction: And *Fran-*  
 “ *cis* would enter upon none of his own Affairs, till that was first  
 “ settled: He still waited for Powers from *England*, but none were  
 “ sent. This might have provoked *Francis* to have been less zealous,  
 “ but it did not: Instead of sending what *Francis* expected, there  
 “ was an Appeal made from the Pope to a General Council, which so  
 “ highly provoked the Pope, that what he had been labouring to do  
 “ a whole Week, was pulled down in one Hour. It was also an In-  
 “ jury to *Francis* to use the Pope ill without his Knowledge, when  
 “ he was in his House, doing that there which they durst not have  
 “ done any where else. This gave great Joy to the *Spaniards*, and  
 “ though the Pope offered to put *Leghorn*, *Parma* and *Placentia*, with  
 “ other Places of greater Importance, into *Francis*’s Hand, yet upon  
 “ the Rupture with *Henry*, he would treat of nothing, so he con-  
 “ cluded the Marriage, with no Advantage to himself from it; and  
 “ yet for all this Zeal and Friendship that he had expressed to King  
 “ *Henry*, he had no Thanks, but only Complaints. He saw he was  
 “ disposed to suspect him in every Thing, as in particular for his treat-  
 “ ing with the King of *Scotland*, though by so doing, he had taken  
 “ him wholly out of the Emperor’s Hands. He proposes of new to  
 “ King *Henry*, the same Means that were proposed at *Marfeilles*, in  
 “ order to the reconciling him to the Pope, with some other Mo-  
 “ tions, which he will see are good and reasonable, and upon that all  
 “ that passed would be easily repaired: He perceived plainly at *Mar-*  
 “ *feilles*, that the King’s Ambassadors had no Intentions to bring  
 “ Matters to an Agreement; and when he told them that he saw there  
 “ was no Intention to make up Matters, they only smiled. It touch-  
 “ ed the King of *France* very sensibly, to see all his Friendship and  
 “ good Offices to be so little understood and so ill requited. He was  
 “ offered the Dutchy of *Milan*, if he would suffer the Emperor and  
 “ the Pope to proceed against the King of *England*. But he was now  
 “ to offer to King *Henry*, if he would reconcile himself to the Pope,  
 “ a League between the Pope and the Two Kings Offensive and De-  
 “ fensive. But if King *Henry* would come into no such Agreement,  
 “ yet he was to assure him that he would still continue in a firm and  
 “ bro-

1531.



1531.

“ brotherly Friendship with him ; and if by Reason of his Marriage,  
 “ and the Censures that might be passed on that Account, any Prince  
 “ should make War upon him, that he would assist him according to  
 “ their Treaties : And that he would so manage the King of *Scot-*  
 “ *land*, that he would engage him into a defensive League with him.  
 “ In Conclusion, he desired that some other better Instruments than  
 “ the Bishop of *Winchester* might be employed, for he thought he had  
 “ no good Intentions, neither to the one nor the other of them.

There is some Reason to suspect that these Instructions are not fully set forth by *Le Grand* : For the best Argument to persuade the King to come to Terms of Reconciliation, was to tell him what the Pope had said to him of the Justice of his Cause. It is certain that *Francis* owned that on other Occasions ; this makes it highly probable that it was set forth in these Instructions ; so that I cannot help suspecting, that some Part of them is suppressed.

Cotton Libr.  
 Nero B. 6.  
 A Representation made to the Emperor.

At this Time, the King in a Letter to his Ambassador that was at the Emperor's Court, after he had ordered him to lay open the Falseness of the Reports that had been carried to the Emperor, of *Queen Katherine's* being ill used ; and to complain of her obstinate Temper, and of her insisting on her Appeal to the Pope, after the Law was passed against all such Appeals : He adds, that as he had told the Emperor's Ambassador at his Court, the Pope had to the *French King* confessed that his Cause was just and lawful ; and that he had promised to him at *Marseilles*, that if the King would send a Proxy, he would give Sentence for him in his principal Cause : Which the King refused to do, looking on that as a Derogation from his Royal Dignity. The Pope it seems looked on his refusing to do this as a Contempt, and pronounced Sentence against him, notwithstanding his Appeal to a General Council, that had been personally intimated to him. This the King imputed to his Malice, and his Design to support his usurped Authority.

Memoirs de  
 Bell. p. 414.  
 He prevailed much on the King to submit.  
 A Letter of the King's to his Ambassadors at Rome.  
 Rymer MSS.  
 Coll. Numb.  
 25.

The Bishop of *Paris* coming to *London*, had very long and earnest Conferences with the King : In Conclusion the King promised, that if the Pope would supersede his Sentence, the King would likewise supersede the separating himself entirely from his Obedience : Upon that, tho' it was in Winter, he went immediately Post to *Rome*. At the same time the King sent a Letter to his Ambassadors at *Rome* : He tells them, “ That after the Interview at *Marseilles*, he had heard both  
 “ by *Boner* and *Sir Gregory*, that the Pope had in a lively Manner  
 “ spoken to the Emperor in Favour of the King's Cause, and seemed  
 “ more inclined than formerly to do him Justice. He had proposed  
 “ that the King should send a Mandate desiring his Cause might be  
 “ tried in an indifferent Place : Upon which he would send a Legate  
 “ and two Auditors to form the Process : Reserving the Judgment to  
 “ himself : Or, that the King of *France* and he would concur to procure a General Council, by concluding a Truce for three or four  
 “ Years, upon which he would call one, and leave the King's Cause  
 “ to be judged in it. The same Overtures were made to the King  
 “ by the Pope's Nuntio. He pretended that *Sir Gregory* had made  
 “ them to the Pope in the King's Name ; and that the Pope had  
 “ agreed to them : Yet the King had never sent any such Orders

“ to Sir *Gregory*, but rather to the contrary. Yet since the Pope in 1531.  
“ these Overtures shewed better Inclinations than formerly, which  
“ indeed he was out of Hope of, he ordered Thanks to be given  
“ him in his Name : The King asked nothing in Return for all the  
“ Service he had done him and the See, but Justice according to the  
“ Laws of God, and the Ordinances of the Holy Councils; which if  
“ he would now do speedily, setting aside all Delays, he might be sure  
“ that he and his Kingdom would be as loving to him and his See, as  
“ they had been formerly accustomed to be: But for the Truce,  
“ how desirous soever he was of outward Quiet, yet he could not  
“ set himself to procure it, till he had first Peace in his own Conscience,  
“ which the Pope might give him; and then he would use his  
“ best Endeavours for a general Peace with the King of *France*;  
“ from whom he would never separate himself. He therefore charges  
“ them to press the Pope to remit the Fact, to be tried within the  
“ Kingdom, according to the old Sanctions of General Councils. If  
“ the Pope would grant his Desire, he would dispose all his Allies to  
“ concur in the Service of that See. He could not consent to let  
“ his Cause be tried out of the Realm : It was contrary both to his  
“ Prerogative, and to the Laws of his Kingdom : And by his Coronation Oath, he was bound to maintain those. So without the  
“ Consent of his Parliament, he could not agree to it; and he was sure  
“ they would never consent to that. He hoped the Pope would not  
“ compel him to do Things prejudicial to the Papal Dignity, as it  
“ was then exercised, which unless he were forced to it, by the Pope’s  
“ Conduct towards him, he had no Mind to do. The Pope had  
“ said to Sir *Gregory*, that by their Laws, the Pope could not dispense  
“ in such a Marriage, unless there was an urgent Cause pressing  
“ it : And the clearing this Point, he thought would more certainly  
“ advance the King’s Cause, than the Opinion of Lawyers and Divines,  
“ that the Pope could not dispense with it. The Emperor  
“ had said to the Pope, that there was an extreme bloody War at  
“ that Time, between *England* and *Spain*; for the pacifying which,  
“ the Dispensation allowing the Marriage was granted : Whereas in  
“ the League signed by his Father, and by *Ferdinand* and *Isabella*, upon  
“ which the Dispensation was obtained, no such Thing was pretended;  
“ the Marriage was agreed to for the Continuance and Augmentation  
“ of their Amity; and upon the Account of the good Qualities  
“ of the Queen : It was also plainly expressed in that League,  
“ that her former Marriage was consummated. So the Dispensation  
“ was granted without any urgent Cause. And therefore by the  
“ Pope’s own Concession, it could not be valid : He sent to *Rome* an  
“ attested Transcript of that League : So if the Pope would refer  
“ the judging in this Matter, to the Church of *England*, and ratify  
“ the Sentence given in it, he will not only acquire the Obedience  
“ of us and of our People, but pacify the Disputes that have been raised,  
“ to the Quiet of all *Christendom*. He concludes, that if the Pope  
“ seemed disposed to be benevolent to the King, they were not to  
“ declare all this, as his final Answer, but to assure him that he would  
“ study by all honourable Ways to concur with the Pope’s towardly  
“ Mind, if he will earnestly apply himself and persevere in such Opinion



1531.

pinion as may be for the Acceleration of the said Cause". This is all that I can find of the Submission that he offered; but how much further his Promises sent by the Bishop of *Paris* went, does not appear to me.

D. of Norfolk's  
Letter to  
Montmorancy.

Le Grand, p.  
588.

To quicken the Court of *France* to interpose effectually with the Pope, to bring this Matter to the Conclusion that all the Papists of *England* labour'd earnestly for; the Duke of *Norfolk* wrote on the 27th of *January*, a very full Letter on the Subject to *Montmorancy*. "He was glad that the Bishop of *Paris* was sent to *Rome*, with Instructions expressing the entire Union that was between the Two Kings. He wished he might succeed: For if the Pope would persist in his Obstinacy to favour the Emperor, and to oppress the King in his most Just Cause, an Opposition to his Authority would be unavoidable: And it would give Occasions to many Questions, greatly to his Prejudice, and against his Usurpations. It began to be believed, that the Pope had no Authority out of *Rome*, any more than any other Bishop has out of his Diocese: And that this Usurped Authority grew by the Permission of Princes, blinded by Popes; who, contrary to the Laws of God, and the Good of the Church, had maintained it. To support this, many clear Texts of Scripture were brought, with Reasons founded on them: And many Histories were alledged, to prove, that Popes themselves were made by the Emperors; and that their Authority was only suffered, but not granted, nor confirmed by Emperors or Kings. Of all this, the Bishops, and other Doctors, had made such Discoveries, that he himself and other Noblemen, as well as the Body of the People, were so convinced of it, that if the King would give way to it, (which, if no Interposition saves it, probably he will do) this present Parliament will withdraw from the Pope's Obedience; and then every thing that depends on it, will be hated and abhorred by the whole Nation: And other States and Kingdoms may from thence be moved to do the same. He, out of the Friendship that was between them, gave him this Advertisement. He apprehended some ill Effects, from the Readiness the King of *France* had expressed to favour the Pope, even to the Prejudice of his own Authority. For he had taken a Bull, to do Justice in his own Kingdom; as if he had not full Authority to do that without a Bull. The Pope, and his Successors, might make this a Precedent for Usurping on the Royal Authority. He also complains, that tho' their King had promised to the Earl of *Rochford*, that *Beda*, who had calumniated the King so much, and was his Enemy in his just Cause, should be banished not only from *Paris*, but out of his Kingdom; yet He was now suddenly recalled. He wishes these Things may be considered in Time: He does not propose that the King of *France* should turn the Pope's Enemy; but if there came a Rupture between the King and the Pope, that he would not so favour the Pope, as to give him more Boldness in Executing his Malice against the King, or his Subjects: And that they might not be deceived by his Promises, as if he would

" ena-

“ enable *Francis* to recover his Dominions in *Italy*, if he should be  
 “ thereby engaged to lose the Friendship of the King, and his  
 “ Allies. 1531.

This came in time, to quicken the Court of *France*: For, by a Letter writ from *Rome* on the 20th of *February*, it appears, that the Pope was at that Time in great Anxiety. He was pressed hard by the *Imperialists*, on the one Hand; and he saw the Danger of Losing *England*, on the other Hand. To some about him, he expressed a great Inclination to be reconciled to the King: He sent secretly for some great Lawyers; they were positive that the King's Cause was just, and that his Second Marriage was good. But now the Matter being brought to a Crisis, I shall give it in the Words of *du Bellay*, who, no doubt, had his Information from his Brother. Cotton Libr. Vitell. B. 14. The Pope was in great Anxiety.

“ King *Henry*, upon the Remonstrances that the Bishop of *Paris*  
 “ made to him, condescended, that if the Pope would supersede the  
 “ Sentence, till he sent Judges to hear his Matter, he would super-  
 “ sede the Executing that which he was resolved to do; which was,  
 “ to separate himself entirely from Obedience to the See of *Rome*.  
 “ And the Bishop of *Paris* offering to undertake the Journey to  
 “ *Rome*, he assured him, that when he obtained that which he went  
 “ to demand there, he would immediately send him sufficient Pow-  
 “ ers to confirm that which he had promised; trusting in him,  
 “ by reason of the great Friendship that he had for so long a Time  
 “ born him; for he had been Ambassador in his Court for Two  
 “ Years. Mem. du Bel- lay. P. 414, 415, 416.

“ It was a very severe Winter; but the Bishop thought the Trou-  
 “ ble was small, so he might accomplish that which he went upon.  
 “ So he came in good Time to *Rome*, before any Thing was done;  
 “ and in an Audience in the Consistory, he gave an account of  
 “ that which he had obtained of the King of *England*, for the  
 “ Good of the Church. The Proposition was judged reasonable,  
 “ and a Time was assigned him for getting the King's Answer: So  
 “ he dispatched a Courier to the King, with a Charge to use such  
 “ Diligence, that he might return within the Time limited. Bel- lay was to go to Rome, in hopes to make up the Breach.

“ The Day that was set for the Return of the Messenger being  
 “ come, and the Courier not come back, the *Imperialists* pressed in  
 “ Consistory, that the Pope should give Sentence. The Bishop, on  
 “ the other Hand, pressed both the Pope in particular, and all the  
 “ Cardinals, that they would continue the Time only for Six Days;  
 “ alledging, that some Accident might have happen'd to the Cou-  
 “ rier: The Sea might not be passable, or the Wind contrary; so  
 “ that either in Going, or Coming, the Courier might be delay-  
 “ ed: And since the King had Patience for Six Years, they might  
 “ well grant him a Delay for Six Days. He made these Remon-  
 “ strances in full Consistory; to which many of those who saw  
 “ the Clearest, and judged the best of Things, condescended: But  
 “ the greater Number prevailed over the lesser Number of those,  
 “ who considered well the Prejudice that was like to happen to  
 “ the Church by it; and they went on with that Precipitation,  
 “ that they did in One Consistory, that which could not be done in  
 “ Three Consistories; and so the Sentence was fulminated. The final Sen- tence given in great Haste.



1531.

The Courier  
came Two  
Days too late.

“ Two Days had not passed, when the Courier came with the Powers and Declarations from the King of *England*; of which the Bishop had assured them. This did much confound those who had been for the Precipitating the Matter. They met often, to see if they could redress that which they had spoiled; but they found no Remedy. The King of *England* seeing with what Indignity he was used, and that they shewed as little Regard to him, as if he had been the meanest Person in *Christendom*, did immediately withdraw himself, and his Kingdom, from the Obedience of the Church of *Rome*; and declared himself to be, under God, the *Head of the Church of England*.

Le Grand, p.  
630, 631.  
Further  
Proofs of this  
Matter.

We have a further Account of this Transaction, in the Letters that Mr. *Le Grand* has published. On the 22d of *February*, *Raince*, the *French* Ambassador, wrote from *Rome* a Letter full of good Hopes: And it seems the Bishop of *Paris* wrote in the same Strain; but his Letter of the 23d of *March* is very different from that: It was on the same Day that the Consistory was held. “ There were “ Two and Twenty Cardinals present, when Sentence was given; “ by which King *Henry*’s Marriage with Queen *Katherine* was declared good and valid, and the Issue by it lawful. Upon hearing the “ News of this, he went and asked the Pope about it, who told him “ it was true; but that tho’ some would have had immediately in- “ timated, he had delayed the ordering that till after *Easter*. He “ with the other *French* Ambassadors made no Answer to the Pope, “ only the Bishop of *Paris* told him, he had no other Business there; “ so he must return home again. They did not put the Pope in mind “ of the Promises and Assurances he had given them to the contrary “ when they saw it was to no Purpose; and it was not easy to say “ such things as the Occasion required: But the Bishop intended to “ speak more plainly to the Pope, when he should take his Leave of “ him, which would be within three or four Days. He adds, that “ for some Reasons, which he would tell the *French* King, they were “ in doubt, whether that which was done, was not conform to a se- “ cret Intention of the King’s, that was not made known to them. “ He apprehended, if he stayed longer there, it might give the King “ of *England* Cause of Suspicion: For he had by his last Letters to “ him given him Assurances, upon which perhaps he had dismissed “ his Parliament; for which he would be much displeased with the “ Bishop. He desires the King will give Advice of this with all Di- “ ligence to King *Henry*: And then all the World would see, that “ the King had done all that was possible for him to do, both to serve “ his Friend, and to prevent the great Mischief that might follow to “ the Church, and to all *Christendom*: For there was not any one “ thing omitted, that could have been done. The *Imperialists* were “ running about the Streets in great Bodies, crying, *Empire* and *Spain*, “ as if they had got a Victory; and had Bonfires and Discharges of “ Cannon upon it. The Cardinals *Trevulce*, *Rodolphe*, and *Priane*, “ were not of that Number; others had not behaved themselves so “ well as was expected. *Raince*, one of the Ambassadors, said, He “ would give himself to the Devil, if the Pope should not “ find a way to set all right, that is now spoiled: He pressed “ the

“ the other Ambassadors to go again to the Pope for that End, it  
 “ being a Maxim in the Canon Law, that Matrimonial Causes are 1531.  
 “ never so finally judged, but that they may be reviewed: They  
 “ were assured that the Pope was surprized in this, as well as he  
 “ had been in the first Sentence passed in this Matter. The Pope  
 “ had been all that Night advising with his Doctors, how to find a  
 “ Remedy, and was in great Pain about it; upon the Knowledge of  
 “ this they were resolved to go to him, and see if any thing was to  
 “ be expected. In a Postscript, he tells the King that he ought not  
 “ to think it strange, if in their last Letters they gave other Hopes  
 “ of the Opinions of the Cardinals, than appeared now by their  
 “ Votes: They took what they wrote to him from what they said, *Mel. Hist. p.*  
 “ which they heard, and not from their Thoughts, which they <sup>117.</sup>  
 “ could not know. By a Letter that *Pompone Trevulce* wrote from  
*Lyons*, to the Bishop of *Auxerre*, it appears, that the Bishop of  
*Paris* pass’d through *Lyons*, in his Return on the 14th, Two  
 Days before: “ In it he gave him the same Account of the final Sen-  
 “ tence, that was formerly related: The Bishop said to him it was  
 “ not the Pope’s Fault, for he was for a Delay, and if they had  
 “ granted a Delay of Six Days, the King of *England* would have  
 “ returned to the Obedience of the Apostolick See; and left his  
 “ Cause to be proceeded in, according to Justice; but the *Imperia-*  
 “ *lists* and their Party in the Consistory, pressed the Matter so, that  
 “ they would admit of no Delay: but when after a Day the Courier  
 “ came, the *Imperialists* themselves were confounded: He adds one  
 “ Thing that the Bishop told him of his Brother the Cardinal, that  
 “ he pressed the Delay so earnestly, that he was reproached for it,  
 “ and called a *Frenchman*: He avowed that he was a Servant to the  
 “ most Christian King, and that the King of *France*, and his Prede-  
 “ cessors, had never done any thing but Good to the Apostolick  
 “ See.

And now I have laid together all the Proceedings in the Matters Reflections on  
 relating to the King’s Divorce, and his Breach with the Court of *this Breach.*  
*Rome*. In opening all this, I have had a great deal of Light given  
 me, by the Papers that Mr. *Le Grand* has published, and by the  
 Book that he gave me; for which, whatever other Differences I may  
 have with him, I return him, in this publick way, my hearty  
 Thanks. There appears to have been a signal Train of Providence  
 in the whole Progress of this Matter, that thus ended in a total  
 Rupture. The Court of *Rome* being over-awed by the Emperor,  
 engaged it self far at First: But when the Pope and the King of  
*France* were so entirely united as they knew they were, it seems they  
 were under an Infatuation from God, to carry their Authority so far  
 at a Time in which they saw the King of *England* had a Parliament  
 inclined to support him in his Breach with *Rome*. It was but too  
 visible that the King would have given all up, if the Pope would  
 have done him but Common Justice. But when the Matter was  
 brought so near a total Union, an entire Breach followed, in the  
 very Time in which it was thought all was made up: Those who  
 favoured the Reformation, saw all their Hopes as it seemed blasted;  
 but of a sudden all was revived again. This was an amazing Trans-  
 action;



1531.

action; and how little Honour soever, this full Discovery of all the Steps made in it, does to the Memory of King *Henry*, who retained his Inclinations to a great deal of Popery, to the End of his Life; yet it is much to the Glory of God's Providence, that made the Persons most concerned to prevent and hinder the Breach, to be the very Persons that brought it on, and in a manner forced it.

The Sentence was given at *Rome* on the 23d of *March*, on the same Day in which the Act of the Succession to the Crown of *England* did pass here in *England*: And certainly the Parliament was ended, before it was possible to have had the News from *Rome*, of what past in the Consistory on the 23d of *March*: For it was Prorogued on the 30th of *March*. So that if King *Henry's* Word had been taken by the Pope and the Consistory, he seems to have put it out of his Power to have made it good, since it is scarce possible to think, that a Parliament that had gone so far in the Breach with *Rome*, could have been prevailed on, to undo all that they had been doing for Four Years together.

All in *England*  
concur to re-  
nounce the  
Pope's Autho-  
rity.

Nothing material passed in Convocation before the 3<sup>rd</sup> of *March*, and then the *Actuary* exhibited the Answer of the Lower-House to this Question, *Whether the Bishop of Rome has any greater Jurisdiction given him by God in the Holy Scriptures, within the Kingdom of England, than any other Foreign Bishop?* There were 32 for the Negative, 4 for the Affirmative, and One doubted. It was a thin House, and no doubt many absented themselves on design: But it does not appear how this past in the Upper-House, or whether it was at all debated there: For the Prelates had by their Votes in the House of Lords, given their Opinions already in the Point. The Convocation at *York* had the same Position, no more made a Question, put to them on the 5th of *May*: there the Archbishop's Presidents, were deputed by him to confirm and fortify this. After they had examined it carefully, they did all unanimously, without a contrary Vote, agree to it; upon which an Instrument was made by the Archbishop, and sent to the King, which will be found in the Collection, as it was taken out of the *Register of York*.

Coll. Numb.  
26.

The King sent the same Question to the University of *Oxford*, and had their Answer. That Part of the King's Letter that relates to this Matter, and the University's Answer were sent me, taken from the *Archives* there, by the learned Mr. *Bingham*, which will be found in the Collection. The King required them to examine the Question sent by him to them, concerning the Power and Primacy of the Bishop of *Rome*, and return their Answer under the Common Seal, with convenient Speed; according to the sincere Truth. Dated from *Greenwich* the 18th Day of *May*. The Answer is directed to all the Sons of their Mother Church, and is made in the Name of the Bishop of *Lincoln* their Chancellor, and the whole Convocation of all Doctors, and Masters Regents, and Non-Regents. "It sets forth, that whereas the King had received  
"the Complaints and Petitions of his Parliament, against some  
"intolerable Foreign Exactions; and some Controversies being  
"raised concerning the Power, and Authority of the Bishop of  
"Rome, the King, that he might satisfy his People, but not break in  
"upon

Coll. Numb.  
27.

“ upon any Thing declared in the Scriptures, (which he will be  
 “ always most ready to defend with his Blood ) had sent this Que-  
 “ stion to them, (setting it down in the Terms in which it was pro-  
 “ posed to the Convocation.) They upon this, to make all the Re-  
 “ turns of Duty and Obedience to the King, had brought together  
 “ the whole Faculty of Divinity : And for many Days, they had  
 “ searched the Scriptures, and the most approved Commentators ; and  
 “ had collated them diligently, and had held Publick Disputations  
 “ on the Matter : And at last they had all unanimously agreed,  
 “ that the Bishop of *Rome* has no greater Jurisdiction given him by  
 “ God in the Holy Scriptures, in this Kingdom of *England*,  
 “ than any other Foreign Bishop. This Determination made ac-  
 “ cording to the Statutes of their University, they affirm and testify  
 “ as true, certain, and agreeing to the Holy Scriptures : Dated on  
 “ the 27th of *June* 1534. Here was a long Deliberation : It lasted  
 above Five Weeks after the King’s Letter, and was a very full and  
 clear Determination of the Point.

1531.

To this I shall add the fullest of all the Subscriptions, Instruments,  
 and Oaths that was made, pursuant to these Laws and Decrees of  
 Convocation. I have seen several others to the same Purpose : Of  
 which *Rymer* has published many Instruments, all from Page 487 to  
 Page 527, of *Ecclesiasticks*, *Regulars* as well as *Seculars*, *Mendicants*,  
 and *Carthusians* : But that from the Prior and Chapter of *Worcester*  
 being much the fullest of them all, I shall only insert it in my Col-  
 lection, and leave out all the rest, that I may not weary the Reader  
 with a heavy Repetition of the various Forms, in which some ex-  
 patiated copiously ; to shew their Zeal for the King’s Authority, and  
 against the Papacy : Which was looked on then as the distinguishing  
 Character of those who designed to set on a further Reformation ;  
 whereas those that did adhere to their former Opinions, thought it  
 enough barely to sign the Propositions, and to take the Oath pre-  
 scribed by Law.

Coll. Numbr.  
28.

There was likewise an Order published, but how soon it does not  
 appear to me : *Strype* says in *June* 1534 ; it was before Queen  
*Anne’s* Tragical Fall, directing the bidding Prayers for the King,  
 as the only and *Supreme Head* of this Catholick Church of *England*,  
 then for Queen *Anne*, and then for the Lady *Elizabeth*, Daughter  
 to them both, our Princesses : And no further in the Presence of the  
 King and Queen : But in all other Places they were to pray for all  
 Archbishops and Bishops, and for the whole Clergy, and such as  
 shall please the Preacher to name of his Devotion ; then for all the  
 Nobility, and such as the Preacher should name ; then for the Souls  
 of them that were dead, and such of them as the Preacher shall name.  
 Every Preacher was ordered to preach once, in the greatest Audi-  
 ence, against the usurped Authority of the Church of *Rome* ; and he  
 was left after that to his Liberty : No Preachers were in the Pulpit  
 to inveigh against, or to deprave one another : If they had Occasion  
 to complain, they were to do it to the King, or the Bishop of the  
 Diocese. They were not to preach for or against Purgatory, the ho-  
 nouring of Saints, that Faith only justifieth, to go on Pilgrimages,  
 or to support Miracles : These Things had occasioned great Disen-

An Order for  
the bidding  
of Prayers and  
Preaching.



1531.

tions ; but those were then well pacified ; they were to preach the Words of Christ, and not mix with them Mens Institutions, or to make God's Laws and Mens Laws of equal Authority ; or to teach that any Man had Power to dispense with God's Law. It seems there was a Sentence of Excommunication with relation to the Laws and Liberties of the Church published once a Year, against all such as broke them ; this was to be no more published. The Collects for the King and Queen by Name were to be said in all High Masses ; they were likewise to justify to the People the King's last Marriage, and to declare how ill the King had been used by the Pope, in all that Matter, with the Proofs of the Unlawfulness of his former Marriage ; and a long Deduction was made of the Process at *Rome*, and of all the Artifices used by the Pope, to get the King to subject himself to him, which I need not relate : It contains the Substance of the whole Cause, and the Order of the Process formerly set forth : I have put it in the Collection. All that is particular in it, is, that the King affirms, that a Decretal Bull was sent over, decreeing, that if the former Marriage was proved, and if it did appear, that as far as Presumptions can prove it, that it was consummated, that Marriage was to be held unlawful, and null. This Bull, after it was seen by the King, was, by the Bishop of *Rome's* Commandment, embezzled by the Cardinals. He adds another Particular, which I find no where but here ; that the Pope gave out a Sentence in the Manner of an Excommunication, and Interdiction of him and his Realm ; of which Complaint being made, as being contrary to all Law and Right, the Fault was laid on a new Officer lately come to the Court ; who ought to have been punished for it ; and the Process was to cease ; but tho' this was promised to the King's Agents, yet it went on, and was set up in *Flanders*. Perhaps the Words in the Bishop of *Paris's* last Letter, that the Pope was surprized in the last Sentence, as he had been in the first, are to be explained and applied to this. He also mentions the Declarations that the Pope had made to the *French* King and his Council, of what he would gladly do for the King, allowing the Justness of his Cause ; and that he durst not do it at *Rome*, for fear of the Emperor, but that he would come and do it at *Marsilles* ; and there he promised to that King to give Judgment for the King ; so he would send a Proxy, which he knew before, that he would not do, nor was he bound to do it.

Thus the King took Care to have his Cause to be fully set forth to all his own Subjects : His next Care was to have it rightly understood by all the Princes of *Europe*. I have found the Original Instructions that he gave to *Paget*, then one of the Clerks of the Signet, whom he sent to the King of *Poland*, and the Dukes of *Pomerania* and *Prussia*, and to the Cities of *Dantzick*, *Stetin*, and *Coningsburg* : And it is to be supposed that others were sent to other Princes and Cities with the like Instructions, tho' they have not come in my way. I have put them in the Collection. By these

Coll. Numb.

30.

Instructions  
given to *Paget*  
sent to some  
Northern  
Courts.

“ Their old Friendship was desired to be renewed ; the rather because the King saw they were setting themselves to find out the Truth of God's Word, and the Justice of his Laws ; and the Extirpation of such corrupt Errors and Abuses, by which the World

“ has been kept Slaves under the Yoke of the Bishop of *Rome*, more  
“ than the *Jews* were under the Ceremonies of *Moses's* Law. The  
“ King orders *Paget* to let them understand his great Desire to promote,  
“ not only a Friendship with them, but the Common Good of all  
“ *Christendom* : He orders him to give them an Account of the whole  
“ Progress of his Cause of Matrimony, with the intolerable Injuries  
“ done him by the Bishop of *Rome*, and the State in which that  
“ Matter then stood. He was first to shew them the Justice of the  
“ King's Cause, then to open the Steps in which it had been carried  
“ on. Here all the Arguments against his Marriage are stated, to  
“ make it appear to be contrary both to the Laws of God, of Na-  
“ ture, and of Men. In this the King did not follow his own pri-  
“ vate Opinion, nor that of the whole Clergy of his Realm ; but  
“ that of the most Famous Universities of *Christendom* : And there-  
“ fore, by the Consent of his whole Parliament, and by the Sentence  
“ of the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, he has, for the Discharge of his  
“ own Conscience, and the good of his People, and that he might  
“ have a lawful Successor to rule over them, separated himself from  
“ the Princess Dowager, and was then married to *Queen Anne* ; of  
“ whom follows a very exalted Character, setting forth the Purity of  
“ her Life, her constant Virginity, her Maidenly and Womanly  
“ Pudicity, her Soberness, her Chastness, her Meekness, her Wis-  
“ dom, her Descent of Noble Parentage, her Education in all good  
“ and lawful Shews and Manners, her Aptness to Procreation of  
“ Children, with her other infinite good Qualities, which were more  
“ to be esteem'd than only Progeny. If any should object to this  
“ Second Marriage, as contrary to the Pope's Laws ; he asserts, that  
“ every Man's private Conscience is to him the Supreme Court for  
“ Judgment : So the King was satisfied in his own Conscience ; that,  
“ being enlightned by the Spirit of God, and afterwards by the  
“ Means formerly set forth, he was judged to be at Liberty from his  
“ former Marriage, and free to contract a new one. The King also  
“ took great Pains to satisfy the World, by long Travel and Study,  
“ with inestimable Cost and Charges, tho' he had no Fruit from it all.  
“ Upon this Head, *Paget* was to set forth the Pope's ungodly De-  
“ meanor, in the whole Progress of the King's Cause ; keeping him  
“ off by Delays for Seven Years and more. At first the Pope, in-  
“ stead of judging the Matter himself, sent a Commission to *England*,  
“ to try it, with full Powers, pretending that it could not be judged  
“ at *Rome*. He gave with these a Decretal Bull, in which he pro-  
“ nounced Sentence, that the King might (*convolare ad Secundas*  
“ *Nuptias*) Marry another Wife ; yet he gave the Legate secret Di-  
“ rections not to proceed by Vertue of the Decretal Bull, nor to  
“ give Sentence. He wrote a Letter to the King with his own  
“ Hand, in which he approved of the King's Cause, and promised  
“ to the King, on the Word of the Pope, that he would not Advocate  
“ the Cause, but leave it in its due Course ; yet afterwards, contrary  
“ to his Conscience and Knowledge, he decreed several Citations  
“ against the King to appear at *Rome*, to the Subversion of the  
“ Royal Dignity ; or to send a Proxy, which cannot be justified by  
“ any Colour of Reason. He cites the Councils of *Nice*, *Africk*,  
“ and



1531. “ and *Milevi*, against Appeals to remote Places. It was not reasonable to send Original Instruments, and other Documents to a distant Place; nor in a Matter of Conscience, could a Man give such a Power to a Proxy, by which he was bound to stand to that which he should agree to: It was fit that all Princes should consider what an Attempt this made upon their Dignity, for the Pope to pretend that he could oblige them to abandon their Kingdoms, and come and appear before him; by which he might Depose Kings, or Rule them according to his own Pleasure. So that all this was not only unjust, but null of it self. Dr. *Karn* being then at *Rome*, as the King’s Subject, he offered a Plea Excusatory, yet this was not regarded by the Dean of the *Rota*, who in that acted as he was directed by the Pope: Pretending he had no Powers from the King, which by Law was not necessary for an Excusator. *Karn* had appealed to the Pope: To this *Capifucchi* gave an ambiguous Answer, promising to give a more determinate one afterwards, which yet he never did; but upon a Second Appeal, the Cause was brought into the Consistory, and there it was judged that *Karn* could not be heard, unless he had a Proxy from the King: And when *Karn* objected that such Proceeding was against Law; the Pope answered that he might Judge all Things according to his own Conscience: And so they resolved to proceed in the main Cause. At that Time the King’s Ambassadors at *Rome* shewed the Pope the Determination of the Universities of *Paris* and *Orleans*, with the Opinions of the most Learned Men in *France* and *Italy*, condemning the Pope’s Proceedings as unjust and null; the Words of their Opinion being inserted in the Instructions: Yet the Pope still went on, and sent out slanderous Breves against the King, and designed to Excommunicate him. To prevent that the King did order a Provocation and Appeal to be made from the Pope to a General Council, and caused it to be intimated to the Pope, but he would not admit it, and pretended that by a Bull of Pope *Pius’s*, that was condemned: And that he was Superior to all General Councils. He rejected it arrogantly, saying they were Hereticks and Traytors to his Person, who would Appeal from him to any General Council. It appeared evidently that the Pope for the Defence of his own Glory and Ambition, regarded not what Injuries he did to Christian Princes: So they were all obliged now to be on their Guard, against such Invasions of their Authority. For these Reasons the King was resolved to reduce that Exorbitant Power which the Pope had assumed, within due Limits: So that in his Dominions he shall Exercise no other Jurisdiction than what is granted to him by express Words of Scripture. *Paget* was to open all these Things to those Princes and States, desiring that they would adhere to the King in this Matter, ’till it should come to be treated of in a General Council: And in the mean time to give him their best Assistance and Advice, especially in some Articles, of which a Schedule was to be given him signed with the King’s Hand, which he was to communicate to them as he should find it convenient. They related to some Abuses and Customs which seemed necessary to be reformed: And  
“ if

“ if they would propofe any other, *Paget* was to receive their  
 “ Mind, and to affure them, that the King, as he defired their Af-  
 “ fiftance in his Cauſes and Quarrels, fo he would kindly admit of  
 “ whatfoever they ſhould propoſe; and would endeavour to extir-  
 “ pate all Abufes againſt God’s Word and Laws: And to do all that  
 “ lay in him, for the Reformation thereof, for the Maintenance of  
 “ God’s Word, the Faith of Chriſt, and the Welfare of *Chriſten-*  
 “ *dom*.

1534.

But becauſe the King did not know what the Mind of thoſe Prin-  
 ces might be, nor how far they were devoted to the Pope: *Paget*  
 was to try to find out their Inclinations, before he ſhould deliver  
 the King’s Letters to them; and ſo to proceed according to his Diſ-  
 cretion, to deliver, or not to deliver his Letters, or to ſhew his In-  
 ſtructions to them. What followed upon this, and how it was exe-  
 cuted, does not appear.

The Judicious and Diligent *Seckendorf*, in his *History of Luthe-*  
*ranism*, gives an Account of a Negotiation of *Paget*’s, 2 Years before  
 this. *Cranmer*, who was then the King’s Ambaſſador at the Empe-  
 ror’s Court, met with *John Frederick*, Elector of Saxony, at *Norem-*  
*berg*, who had ſecretly left the Diet of *Ratiſbon*; and there he de-  
 liver’d Letters from the King, both to the Elector, to the Duke of  
*Lunenbergh*, and to the Prince of *Anhalt*; which contained only a  
 General Offer of Friendſhip. *Cranmer* came the next Day to the  
 Elector, who had Two of his Miniſters about him; and asked him  
 many Queſtions concerning their Agreement with the State of Re-  
 ligion, the *Turkiſh* War, and the Church-Lands, which (as they  
 heard) they had ſeized on. He ſaid Great Things of the King,  
 and of the Aid he had offered the Emperor againſt the *Turk*, in  
 Conjunction with the *French* King. He asked where *Paget* was;  
 whom the King had ſent to the Elector. General Answers were  
 made to all his Queſtions; and for *Paget*, He had been with  
 the Elector the former Year. This paſſed on to the 15th of *July*  
 1532. Four Days after this, he came privately to *Spalatin*, one of  
 the Elector’s Secretaries; and aſſured him, that both the King, and  
 the *French* King, would aſſiſt the Elector and his Allies, in the Ma-  
 ter of Religion. In *Auguſt* after that, *Paget* came to the Elector;  
 who propoſed many Things to him concerning Religion: But the  
 Princes had then come to an Agreement with the Emperor; ſo they  
 could enter into no Treaty at that Time. Only *John Frederick* did,  
 in a Writing under his own Hand, offer the Scheme of that which  
 was afterwards propoſed in their Name to the King.

L. 3 §. 6.  
 Par. 16. Add.  
 Negotiations  
 in Germany.

All theſe Negotiations were ſet on Foot, purſuant to a Paper of  
 Advices offered to the King by *Cromwell*; in which there are divers  
 Marginal Notes writ in the King’s own Hand, which will be found  
 in the Collection. “ *First*, All the Biſhops were to be ſent for,

Advices offer-  
 ed the King.

Coll. Numb.

31.

“ eſpecially thoſe neareſt the Court; to examine them, Whether  
 “ they can prove, that the Pope is above the General Council, or  
 “ the Council above him? And whether, by the Law of God, He  
 “ has any Authority in *England*? Next, They are to be charged to  
 “ Preach this to the People; and to ſhew, That the Pope’s Autho-  
 “ rity was an Uſurpation, grown up by the Sufferance of Princes.



1534.

“ This ought to be preached continually at *Paul's Cross*; and the  
 “ Bishop of *London* was to suffer none to preach there, but those  
 “ who will set this forth. The same Order was to be given to all  
 “ other Bishops, and to the Rulers of the Four Orders of *Friars*,  
 “ particularly to the *Friar Observants*, and to all Abbots and Priors.  
 “ The King's Appeal was also to be set up on every Church-Door in  
 “ *England*, that so none may pretend Ignorance; as also the Act  
 “ against Appeals to *Rome*. It was also proposed, that Copies of  
 “ the King's Appeal might be sent to other Realms, particularly to  
 “ *Flanders*. A Letter was also proposed, complaining of all the In-  
 “ juries done the King by the Pope; to be written to him by all  
 “ the Lords Spiritual and Temporal. The King writes on the Mar-  
 “ gin, *Not yet done; nor can it well be done before the Parliament*.  
 “ To send Spies into *Scotland*, to see what Practices were there:  
 “ On the Margin the King's Orders; *Letters to be written to the*  
 “ *Lord Dacres, the Duke of Norfolk, and Sir Thomas Clifford*.  
 “ To send to the Kings of *Poland* and *Hungary*, the Dukes of  
 “ *Saxony* and *Bavaria*, the Landgrave of *Hesse*, and the Three Ec-  
 “ clesiastical Electors. On the Margin the King writes, *In the King's*  
 “ *Arbitrement*. This, it seems, gave the Occasion of Sending *Pa-*  
 “ *get*. The like proposed for the *Hans Towns*: On the Margin, in  
 “ the King's Hand, *To know this of the King*. To remember the Mer-  
 “ chant-Adventurers, chiefly those of *Brabant*. On the Margin, *This*  
 “ *is already done*. Then it is proposed, that an Order be given for  
 “ Establishing the Princess Dowager's House, and the Lady *Mary's*,  
 “ and for my Lady Princess's House: This was *Elizabeth's*. To  
 “ this, on the Margin, it is written by the King, *The Order is*  
 “ *taken*.

Coll. Numb.

32.

A Letter of  
 the King's to  
 the Justices, to  
 observe the  
 Behaviour of  
 the Clergy.

In *June*, in the Year 1535, after the Parliament had settled every  
 Thing demanded of them, the King published a Circular Letter,  
 which will be found in the Collection, taken from the Original.  
 “ In which, after he had set forth that both Clergy and Temporality  
 “ had abolished the Bishop of *Rome's* Usurpations, and had united  
 “ to the Crown the Dignity of *Supreme Head in Earth of the*  
 “ *Church of England*; which was also approved in Convocation,  
 “ and confirmed by their Oaths and Subscriptions: He adds, that  
 “ considering what Quiet would follow in the Nation, if the Bi-  
 “ shops and Clergy would sincerely, and without Dissimulation,  
 “ publish the many and great Abuses of the Pope's Usurpation; he  
 “ had sent Letters to all Bishops, charging them not only in their  
 “ own Persons, but by their Chaplains, to preach the true and sin-  
 “ cere Word of God to the People, and to give Warning to all Ec-  
 “ clesiastical Persons to do the same; and to cause the Pope's Name  
 “ to be rased out of the Books of Divine Service. He had al-  
 “ so required the Justices of Peace, to examine whether the Bishops  
 “ and Clergy did this sincerely; or whether they did it coldly, or  
 “ feignedly; or used any Addition, or Gloss to it. Upon all this,  
 “ the King requires them, at their Assizes and Sessions, to make di-  
 “ ligent Search, whether the Bishops and Clergy do their Duty sin-  
 “ cerely. Likewise, at their Meetings, they were to set the same  
 “ forth to the People; and also declare the Treasons committed by  
 “ the

“ the Bishop of *Rocheſter* and Sir *Thomas More*, who by diverſe  
 “ Secret Practices, intended to breed among the People moſt Miſchie- 1535.  
 “ vious Opinions; for which they, with ſome others, had ſuffered  
 “ as they deſerved. He requires them if they found any Fault, or  
 “ Diſſimulation in any Perſon, that they ſhould immediately ſignify  
 “ it to the King and his Council: As that which was of the great-  
 “ eſt Moment to the Quiet of the Kingdom, threatening ſuch Punish-  
 “ ment of thoſe who were negligent in this, as would make them  
 “ Examples to all others: And he charges them upon their Alle-  
 “ giance to obey all this punctually.

But it ſeems this had not the Effect that was expected, therefore *Coll. Numb.*  
 in *April*, after this, a New Letter, or Proclamation, was writ to 33.  
 ſome of the Nobility, ſetting forth that he had heard that ſome,  
 both *Regulars* and *Seculars*, did ſecretly extol the Authority of the  
 Biſhop of *Rome*, praying for him in the Pulpit, and making him a  
 God, preferring his Power and Laws to God’s moſt Holy Laws:  
 The King therefore out of his Deſire to maintain Unity and Quiet  
 among his People, and to bring them to the Knowledge of the Truth,  
 and to be no more blinded with Superſtition and falſe Doctrine,  
 required them that whereſoever they found any Perſon ſpreading  
 ſuch pernicious Doctrines to the Exaltation of the Biſhop of *Rome*,  
 to Cauſe them to be apprehended and put in Priſon without Bail or  
 Mainprife.

Among the Biſhops all were not equally Honest, nor Zealous. The Archbi-  
*Lee* Archbiſhop of *York*, and *Gardiner*, were thoſe in whom the Old ſhop of *York*  
 Leaven had the deepeſt Root: So the King being informed that is ſuſpected to  
*Lee*, though he had given in his Profeſſion, ſubſcribed and ſealed by Bope. favour the  
 him, yet did not his Duty in his Dioceſe and Province, neither in  
 Teaching himſelf, nor cauſing others to Teach the People, conform  
 to what was ſettled, both in Convocation and Parliament, ſent him  
 Orders both to preach theſe Things, and to order all other Eccle-  
 ſiaſtical Perſons in his Province to do the ſame: Upon this he wrote  
 a long Vindication of himſelf in *June* 1535, which will be found *Coll. Numb.*  
 in the Collection. 34.

“ He ſets forth in it the Complaints that the King ſignified had He juſtifies  
 “ been made of him, with the Orders that he had received from the himſelf.  
 “ King, and then ſets out his own Conduct. He acknowledges he had  
 “ received at the End of the laſt Parliament, a Book ſent from the  
 “ Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, as a Book of Orders for Preaching:  
 “ (Probably that which is the 28th Paper in the Collection.) Upon  
 “ his receiving it, he went on *Sunday* next to *York*, and there he  
 “ ſet forth the Cauſe of the King’s Marriage, and the rejecting the  
 “ Pope’s Authority very fully: And that this might be done the  
 “ more publickly, he had cauſed it to be published at *York* the *Sun-*  
 “ *day* before that he would be there, and ſo took care to have a full  
 “ Audience. So that there was a great Multitude there. His  
 “ Text was, *I have Married a Wife, and therefore I cannot come*:  
 “ And he ſo declared the King’s Matters, that all ſeemed ſatisfied. It is  
 “ true he did not touch the Title of the King as the *Supreme Head*,  
 “ for there was no Order given as to that, for it was thus only or-  
 “ dered to have it named in the Prayer. It is true he did not uſe



1535.

“ to bid Prayers, for the greater Haste to utter his Matter. But upon the receipt of that Book, he commanded his Officers to make out a great Number of them, to be sent to every Preacher in his Diocese: And by all that he ever heard, every one of his Curates followed that Book, and has done their Duty in every Particular enjoined in it: He took care that all who preached in their Churches should follow the Rules prescribed in it. He also sent a Book to every House of *Fryars*. And for the Religious, when any such Person came to him, naming particularly the *Carthusians*, and the *Observants*, for Counsel, he told them what he had done himself, and advised them to do the same. On *Good-Friday* last, he had ordered the Collect for the Pope to be left out; and also the mentioning him in other Parts of the Service: He desired the King would examine these Things, and he would find he was not so much in Fault as he imputed it to him. He had been hitherto open and plain, and had never deceived the King. He had also sent Letters to the Bishops of *Duresme* and *Carlisle*, pursuant to the Letters that he had from the King: And had charged his Archdeacons to see that all Obedience might be given to the King's Orders. He had since he received the King's last Letters, on the *Sunday* following, declared to the People every Thing comprised in them. He refers himself to *Magnus* and *Lawson*, Two of the King's Chaplains, who heard him, to make Report of what they thought of it. Whatever he promised to the King he would fulfil it; and he had done every Thing as the King commanded, and would still do it, so God were not offended by it. He besought the King not to believe any Complaints of him till he have heard his Answer. Some thought it was a high Sacrifice, when they could bring such a poor Priest as he was, under the King's Displeasure: But he trusted God would continue in him a Gracious Mind to his Priests and Chaplains, and that he would give their Enemies, who studied to provoke him against them, better Minds for the future.

Of the Sufferings of *Fisher* and *More*.

I have no Particulars to add to the Relation I gave of the Sufferings of *Fisher* and *More*. There are heavy Things laid to their Charge; but except *Fisher's* being too much concerned in the Business of the *Nun of Kent*, which was without doubt managed with a Design to raise a Rebellion in the Nation; I do not find any other Thing laid to his Charge: And it does not at all appear that *More* gave any Credit or Countenance to that Matter. Yet I have seen that often affirmed. In our own Days, when things have happened both together, though the one did not by any sort of Proof appear to be connected with the other, yet they have been represented as done in Concert: So the Conspiracy of the *Nun*, and those who managed that Imposture, was given out both at home and abroad, as having its Rise from *Fisher*, who indeed knew of it, and seemed to give Credit to it; and from *More*, though he had no share at all in it.

The King of *France* was not satisfied with this way of Proceeding: He thought it too violent, and that it did put Things past all possibility of a Reconciliation. He had answered for the King to the Pope at *Marseilles*, and he was in such a Concern for him, that the  
wrong

wrong Steps he made reflected on himself. He told the King's Ambassador that he advised the Banishing of all such Offenders, rather than the putting them to Death. That King confessed there had been extreme Executions and Cruelty lately exercised in his own Kingdom: But he was now putting a stop to it, and resolved to call Home all those that had fled out of his Kingdom. He had seen a Relation of *More's* Sufferings, by which it appeared that he exhorted his Daughter to all Duty and Respect to the King, which made the Proceedings against such a Man to be the more censured.

1535.

The Ambassadors wrote this to the King soon after *More's* Death. The King wrote on the 23d of *August* an Answer, from *Thornbury*, to this Purpose, "If the King of *France* had answered for the King, and had Justified his Cause, he had done what was Just and Suitable to their Friendship: The Conspiracies of *Fisher* and *More* to sow Sedition, and to raise Wars, both within and without the Kingdom, were manifestly proved to their Face: So that they could not avoid, nor deny it. The Relation he had seen concerning *More's* Talk with his Daughter at his Death, was a forged Story: The King took it in ill Part that King *Francis* should so lightly give Ear and Credit to such vain Tales. This ungrateful Behaviour shewed that the King of *France* had not that Integrity of Heart, that the King deserved and might expect from him. Then follows a Vindication of the Laws lately made, which indeed were only Old Laws revived. The Banishing of Traytors was no ways Convenient: That was to send them in Places where they might more safely and conveniently execute their Conspiracies. Upon all which the Ambassador was ordered to expostulate plainly, but discreetly, both with the King, and with the Great Master. There appears a Strain of Coldness in the whole Intercourse between the Two Courts of *France* and *England*, ever from the Interview at *Marseilles* to this Time.

*Rymer MSS.*  
An Expostulation with  
the Court of  
*France.*  
*Collect. Num.*  
35.

Pope *Clement* was now Dead, with whom the King of *France* was more closely united: And he found the King's Friendship was yet so necessary to him, that he resolved to remove all Jealousies: So to give the King a full Assurance of his Firmness to him, he sent him a Solemn Engagement to adhere to him. It is true, I have seen only a Copy of this; but it is minuted on the Back by *Cromwel's* Hand, and is fairly writ out. There is no Date set to it, but it was during Queen *Anne's* Life, and after Pope *Clement's* Death, so probably it was sent over about this Time. It will be found in the Collection.

The King of  
*France* engages himself  
to adhere to  
and defend the  
King in his  
Second Marriage.

*Collect. Num.*  
36.

It begins thus, "That both Friendship and Piety did require that he should employ his whole Strength and Authority to maintain the Justice of his Dearest Friend. The King of *England*, Defender of the Faith, Lord of *Ireland*, and, under God, Supreme Head of the Church of *England*, had by a Dispensation, granted by Pope *Julius*, contracted a Marriage in Fact with *Katherine* of *Spain*, Relict of the King's elder Brother *Arthur*, and had one Daughter yet living, of that Marriage: That King upon Great and Weighty Reasons well known to King *Francis*, had withdrawn himself from that Marriage; and had Lawfully and Rightfully Married



1535.

“ *Anne* now his Queen, of whom he hath Issue the Princess *Eliza-*  
 “ *beth*: And a Debate had arisen concerning the Dispensation, and  
 “ the First Marriage, and the Legitimacy of the Issue by it: In  
 “ which, King *Francis* by many Arguments did perceive, that the  
 “ Pope himself had not a due Regard to Equity: And that what by  
 “ the Iniquity of the Times, what by ill Practice against all Law  
 “ and Right, many Things were done. The King therefore con-  
 “ sulted the Men of the greatest Integrity in his Kingdom, and the  
 “ most Learned both in Divinity, and in the Laws of the Church;  
 “ whom he charged to make a Report to him according to their  
 “ Consciences, as in the Sight of God, having first conferred among  
 “ themselves fully upon the whole Matter: He does therefore upon  
 “ all their unanimous Opinion, clearly perceive that the Dispensa-  
 “ tion granted by the Pope, was in it self Null, both by Reason of  
 “ the Surprize put on him by the Grounds pretended in it, for ob-  
 “ taining it; but chiefly because the Pope could not dispense in  
 “ that Case: Since such Marriages are contrary to the Laws of God  
 “ and of Nature: For the Pope has no Authority to dispense in that  
 “ Case; so that the Marriage between King *Henry* and Queen *Kathe-*  
 “ *rine* was Incestuous and Null: As contrary to the Laws of God  
 “ and Man: And by consequence the Lady *Mary*, born of that  
 “ Marriage, was Illegitimate. And further, that the Marriage the  
 “ King has contracted with *Anne*, now his Queen, was Holy, Law-  
 “ ful, and Good: And that *Elizabeth*, born of that Marriage, and  
 “ all the other Issue that might come of it, was Lawful, and ought  
 “ so to be esteemed. He adds, that many of the Cardinals, naming  
 “ particularly the late Cardinal of *Ancona*, and even the late Pope  
 “ *Clement* himself, did declare their own positive Opinion to himself  
 “ personally at *Marseilles*, and frequently to his Ambassadors, that  
 “ the Dispensation granted by Pope *Julius*, upon which the first  
 “ Marriage was made, was null and void: And the Pope would  
 “ have declared this by a Final and Definitive Sentence, if Private  
 “ Affections, and Human Regards had not stood in his way. All  
 “ which that King did solemnly declare. He therefore looking on  
 “ that Dispensation as null and void, and by Consequence on the  
 “ Marriage contracted by that Authority, as Unlawful and Incestu-  
 “ ous; and on the Lady *Mary* as incapable to succeed, being born  
 “ in it, did judge and affirm that the Marriage with Queen *Anne*,  
 “ and the Issue come, or to come from it, was Lawful and Valid;  
 “ and that the just Right of succeeding to the Crown, was vested  
 “ in the Issue of that Marriage: And that all Judgments and Censures  
 “ either by the late Pope *Clement*, or by any other Judge, that  
 “ were made and published, or that might hereafter be made or pub-  
 “ lished, were and are null and void, unjust and unlawful: And  
 “ he promised on the Word and Faith of a King, and under the  
 “ Forfeiture of all his Goods, and of all the Goods of his Subjects, in  
 “ the Form of a Contract of Guaranty, both for Himself and his Heirs  
 “ Successors, that he, at all Times, and in all Places, particularly  
 “ in all Synods, or General Councils, and before all Persons, and  
 “ against all Men whatsoever that should oppose it, of what Rank  
 “ or Condition soever they might be, he would both by him-  
 “ self,

“ self, and by his Subjects, maintain and defend it, and (if need  
“ were) justify it, by a strong Hand, and with all his Forces. Nor 1535.  
“ would he ever, for the future, publickly or privately, directly or  
“ indirectly, go against it, or so much as attempt it, nor suffer it to  
“ be attempted by any other, as much as in him lay.

Here was as positive an Assurance, as could be put in Words. From which he never departed.  
And tho' Princes have, in former Times, as well as in our own  
Days, made bold with their Promises and Treaties; and have very  
easily thrown them off, or broke thro' them, without any Appearance  
of great Remorse or Shame; Yet it must be confessed, that *Francis*  
did never, even in the War that he afterwards had with King  
*Henry*, depart from, or falsify this Engagement.

---

BOOK

---



1535.

## BOOK III.

*Of what happen'd during the Time comprehended in the Third Book of the History of the Reformation; from the Year 1535, to King Henry's Death, Anno 1547.*

The King was much pleased with the Title of Supreme Head,



ING Henry seemed not a little pleased with his Title of the *Supreme Head* of the Church of *England*; of which it was enacted, in the Session of Parliament that sat after the Breach was made with *Rome*, that it should be for ever joined to the other Titles of the Crown, and be reckoned one of them. He ordered an Office for all Ecclesiastical Matters, and a Seal to be cut; which, in an Inhibition sent to the Archbishop, in order to a Royal Visitation of the whole Clergy of all *England*, is, for ought I know, first mentioned. It is dated the 18th of *September* 1535; and, at the End, these Words are added; 'Under our Seal, that we use in Ecclesiastical Matters, which we have ordered to be hereunto appended.

The Archbishop of *Cant.*'s Title changed.

The Archbishop of *Canterbury*'s Title was also in Convocation ordered to be altered: Instead of the Title of Legate of the Apostolick See, he was to be designed *Metropolitan*, and *Primate*. This last was one of his Ancient Titles. In that Session, there was some Discourse concerning Heresy, and of some *English* Books; in particular, of *Tindal's* Books. And there was a Book laid before them, with the Title of a *Primer*; of which there is no other Account given, but that from the Rubricks of it, they suspected it was a Book not fit to be published. This, it seems, produced a Petition to the King, that he would command all Heretical Books to be called in, within a Time limited; and that he would appoint the Scripture to be translated in the Vulgar Tongue; but that tho' the Laity might read it, yet they were to be required not to dispute concerning the Catholick Faith.

*Cranmer* and *Gardiner* oppose one another.

It is very probable, that a Breach was upon this Occasion begun between *Cranmer* and *Gardiner*. The Sharpness against Heresy was probably supported by *Gardiner*; as the Motion for the Translation of the Bible, was by *Cranmer*. But when *Cranmer*, in order to an Archiepiscopal Visitation of the whole Province, having obtained the King's Licence for it on the 28th of *April*, sent out his Inhibition, according to Form, to the Ordinaries during the Visitation; upon this, *Gardiner* complained to the King of it, for Two Reasons. He thought, the Title of *Primate* of *England*, did derogate from the King's Power. The other was, That since his Diocese had been

Visit-

Visited within Five Years last past, and was now to Pay for ever Tenth's to the King, it ought not to be charged with this Visitation. Of this *Cromwell* gave *Cranmer* Notice. He, on the 12th of May, wrote a Vindication of himself; which will be found in the Collection.

1535.

Coll. Numb.  
37.

Cranmer vindicates himself.

“ He believed that *Gardiner* (who wanted neither Law, Invention nor Craft, to set out his Matters to the best Advantage,) studied to value himself upon his Zeal for the King's Supremacy, that so he might seem more concerned for that, than for himself. *Cranmer* laid himself, and all his Titles, at the King's Feet : But he wrote, Why did not *Gardiner* move this sooner ? For he had received his Monition on the 20th of April. The Pope did not think it lessen'd his Supremacy ; that he had many *Primates* under him : No more did his Title lessen the King's Supremacy. *Gardiner* knew well, that if the Pope had thought those Subaltern Dignities had weakened his Supreme one, he would have got all the Bishops to be put on the Level ; there being many Contentions concerning Jurisdiction in the Court of *Rome*. But if all the Bishops of the Kingdom set no higher Value on their Stiles and Titles than he did, the King should do in those Matters what he pleased : For if he thought that his Stile was in any Sort against the King's Authority, he would beg Leave to lay it down. He felt in his Heart, that he had no Sort of Regard to his Stile or Title, further than as it was for the Setting forth of God's Word and Will ; but he would not leave any just Thing at the Pleasure of the Bishop of *Winchester*, he being no otherwise affectionate to him than he was. In the Apostles Days, there was a *Diotrephes*, who loved the Pre-eminence ; and he had more Successors than all the other Apostles ; from whom all Glorious Titles, and much Pomp was come into the Church. He wished, that he, and all his Brethren, might leave all their Stiles, and call themselves only the Apostles of *Jesus Christ* ; so, that they took not the Name vainly, but were such indeed ; and did order their Diocesess, so that not Parchment, Lead or Wax, but the Conversion of their People, might be the Seals of their Office ; as St. *Paul* said, the *Corinthians* were to him. He answers the other Part very fully ; but that will be found in the Letter it self ; it not being of that Importance, to deserve that any Abstract should be made of it.

It was soon observed, that there was a great Faction formed against any Reformation, in Doctrine or Worship ; and that those who favoured or promoted it, were ill used by the greater Part of the Bishops : Of which I shall give One Instance, and by it one may judge of the rest ; for I have seen many Complaints to the same Purpose. *Barlow* was, by Queen *Anne's* Favour, made Prior of *Haverford West*, in *Pembrokeshire*. He set himself to preach the Pure Gospel there, and found many were very desirous to hear it ; but he was in danger of his Life daily by reason of it ; And an Accusation being brought against him by a Black Friar there ; set on by *Rawlins*, then Bishop of St. *David's*, who both rewarded him for it, and recommended him to the Arches : For *Barlow* had appealed to the

Bishops proceed against those who desired a Reformation.



1535.

King. He owns, that by *Cromwell's* Favour, their Design against him was defeated : But he having sent a Servant home about Business, the Bishop's Officers cited him to their Courts, and ransacked his House ; where they found an *English* Testament, with an Exposition of the Sermon on the Mount, and of some other Parts of the New Testament. Upon this, they clamoured against him as a Heretick for it. They charged the Mayor of the Town, to put him and some others into Prison, seeking by all Means to find Witnesses against them ; but none appearing, they were forced to let them go, but valued themselves upon this their Zeal against Heresy. He sets forth the Danger that all were in, who desired to live according to the Laws of God, as became faithful Subjects : For in that Multitude of Monks, Friars, and Secular Priests, that was then in those Parts, there was not one that sincerely preached the Word of God, and very few that favoured it. He complains of the Enormous Vices, Fraudulent Exactions, and Heathenish Idolatry, that was shamefully supported under the Clergy's Jurisdiction ; of which he offered to make full Proof, if it should be demanded and received : But that being done, he desired Leave to remove from thence ; for he could neither go home, nor stay there safely, without a special Protection. This Letter will be found in the Collection.

Coll. Numb.  
38.

*Barlow* was that Year made Bishop of *St. Asaph*, and the Year after was translated to *St. David's* ; and was after that removed to *Wells*, but driven out by *Queen Mary* ; and was made Bishop of *Chichester* by *Queen Elizabeth*, in which he lived Ten Years.

The Arch-  
bishop of *York*  
much suspect-  
ed.

The secret Opposition that the Bishops gave to the Steps made towards a Reformation, obliged *Cromwell* to send many Agents, in whom he trusted, up and down the Nation, to observe all Mens Tempers and Behaviour. *Legh*, among others, being sent to *York*, did (in *January*) enjoin the Archbishop, by an Order from the King, to preach the Word of God, and to set forth the King's Prerogative. He also enjoined him, to bring up to the King all the Foundations of his See, and all Commissions granted to it. In these, he did not doubt, but they would find many Things fit to be reformed : And he advised, that every Bishop might be so ordered, that their Dioceses might be better instructed and edified. That would establish them in their Fidelity to the King, and to his Succession : But the Jurisdictions might be augmented, or diminished, as should seem convenient. This Letter, which will be found in the Collection, opens a Design that I find often mention'd, of Calling in all the Pope's Bulls, and all the Charters belonging to the several Sees, and Regulating them all. But, perhaps, the first Design being the Suppressing the Monasteries, it was not thought fit to alarm the Secular Clergy, till that was once done : Yet the Order for Sending up all Bulls, was at the same time generally executed. There is a Letter

Coll. Numb.  
39.

Coll. Numb.  
40.

of *Tonstall's*, writ soon after this to *Cromwell*, put in the Collection, in which he mentions the King's Letters to all the Bishops, to come up immediately after the Feast of the Purification, with all the Bulls they had obtained from *Rome*, at any Time. But the King considering that *Tonstall* had gone down but late, ordered *Dr. Layton* to write to him, that he needed not come up ; but advised, that he should write

to

to the King that he was ready to do as other Bishops did, and to deliver up all such Bulls as the King desired of him. *Layton* wrote to him that *Cromwell*, as his Friend, had assured the King that he would do it.

1535.

In answer to this, *Tonstall* thank'd him for his Kindness on that, and on many other Occasions. " He did not understand to what  
" Intent these Bulls were called for, (and it seems he apprehended it  
" was to have all the Bishops give up their Right to their Bishopricks)  
" yet he had sent them all up to be delivered at the King's Pleasure :  
" He adds, that he hoped by this Demand, the King did not intend  
" to make him leave his Bishoprick, and both to turn him out of his  
" Living, and to Ruin all his Servants, that had their Living only  
" by him ; in which he wrote he could not be thought, either Am-  
" bitious, or Unreasonable : So he desired to know what the King's  
" Pleasure was, not doubting but that the King would use him as  
" well as he used the other Bishops in the Kingdom, since as he had  
" obtained these Bulls by him, he had renounced every Thing in them  
" that was contrary to his Prerogative. He had but Five Bulls, for  
" the rest were delivered to those to whom they were addressed : So  
" he commits himself to the King's Goodness, and to *Cromwell's*  
" Favour. Dating his Letter from *Aukland* the 29th of *January*,  
which must be in the Year 153 $\frac{1}{2}$ .

Cotton Libr.  
Cleop. E. 4.

*Tonstall* might be under more than ordinary Apprehensions of some Effect of the King's Displeasure ; for as he had opposed the declaring him to be the *Supreme Head*, in the Convocation of *York* ; so he had stuck firmly to the asserting the Lawfulness of the King's Marriage to *Queen Katherine*. Before the Meeting of the Parliament, in which that Matter was determined ; he with the Proxy that he sent to the Bishop of *Ely*, wrote him a Letter, of which Mr. *Richard Jones* saw the Original, which he has inserted in his Voluminous Collections, that are in the *Bodleian* Library ; in which these Words are, after he had told him that he had given him full Power to Consent or Dissent from every Thing that was to be proposed : He adds,

" Yet nevertheless, I beseech you, if any Thing Harmful or Pre-  
" judicial in any Point, to the Marriage between the King's Highness  
" and the Queen's Grace shall be proposed, wherein our Voices shall  
" be demanded ; in your own Name say what you will, and what  
" God putteth in your Mind : But I desire you, and on God's Be-  
" half I require you, never in my Name to Consent to any such  
" Thing proposed, either Harmful, or Prejudicial to the Marriage  
" aforesaid ; but expressly to Dissent unto the same : And for your  
" Discharge on that Behalf, ye may shew, when you think it requi-  
" site, this my particular Declaration of my Mind, made unto you  
" therein : And what I have willed and required you to do in my  
" Name in this Point, praying your Lordship not to do otherwise in  
" my Name, as my singular Trust is in you, that ye will not. Dated  
from *Aukland* in *January*, but neither Day nor Year are men-  
tioned.

The Session of Parliament in which the Act of the Succession passed, by which the King's Marriage with *Queen Katherine* was condemned, meeting in *January*, this Letter seems to be written  
before



1536.

before that Session; and yet no Opposition was made to that Act in the House of Lords, either by the Bishop of *Ely*, or by the Bishop of *Bath*, whom he had made his Second Proxy as appears by the same Letter, in which he is also named: The Act passed so soon that it was read the First Time on the 20th of *March*, and passed on the 23d in the House of Lords, without either Dissent or Protest. It is also certain that *Tonstall* afterwards took the Oath enjoined by that Act. But how these Bishops came to be so silent upon that Occasion, being so solemnly required to do otherwise by *Tonstall*; and how he himself came to change, and to take the Oath, is that of which I can give no Account. It is certain King *Henry* had a very particular Regard for him; but yet by this Letter it appears, that he had some Fears of a Severity aimed at himself: But he was afterwards in all Things very compliant, even to the End of King *Edward's* Reign.

Cotton Libr.  
Cleop. E. 4.  
Complaints of  
the Monks and  
Fryars.

There came up from all Parts of the Kingdom, many Complaints of the ill Behaviour and bad Practices of the *Monks* and *Fryars*: Of the last chiefly, for the *Mendicant* Order being always abroad Begging, they had many more Occasions to shew themselves: And tho' the *Monks* had not those Occasions to be in all Publick Places, yet it was very visible that they were secretly disposing the People to a Revolt. So it was resolved to proceed against them all by degrees: And after the Visitations and Injunctions, which had no great Effect, they began with the smaller Houses, that were not above 200l. a Year: This swept away at once all the *Mendicants*, who were the most Industrious, and by Consequence the most Dangerous.

The Archbi-  
shop of *York*  
clears himself.

The Archbishop of *York* was much suspected; and if many Apologies look like Intimations of some Guilt, he had a great deal; for he took many Occasions to justify himself. Upon the Act for taking all the Lesser Monasteries into the King's Hands, he expressed great Zeal in serving the King, which appears in a Letter of his to *Cromwell* in *April* 1536. He gave a strict Commandment to his Archdeacons to warn all in the Monasteries within the Act, not to embezzle, or convey away any Thing belonging to the House: And if they had done any such Thing, to restore it. He ordered them to give warning to all others not to meddle with any such Goods. He had also warned the Mayor of *York* and his Brethren, and the Master of the Mint there, to receive none of the Goods or Plate of these Monasteries: Having thus expressed his Care in that Matter; he made an earnest Suit for Two Places that were of the Patronage of his See. The One was *S. Oswalds*, which was a Free Chapel; the Prior was removeable at the Archbishop's Pleasure, and he might put Secular Priests in it if he Pleased. The other was *Hexham* upon the Borders of *Scotland*, which was once an Episcopal See; and there not being a House between *Scotland* and that Lordship, if that House should go down, there would be a great Waste that would run far into the Country: Whether he obtained these Suits or not, does not appear to me: After that he adds, that he had given Order that no Preachers should be suffered that preached Novelties, and did sow Seeds of Dissention: Some after that they were forbid to preach, did go on, and preach still: He had ordered Process against them; some of them

Coll. Numb.  
41.

them said they would get the King's Licence, if that were done, he must be silent, but he hoped *Cromwell* would hinder that, and give him Notice if they had obtained the King's Licence: Some said they had the Archbishop of *Canterbury's* Licence; but none of these should be obeyed there, none but the King's Licences, and his.

1536.

Upon the many Complaints of Preachers of all Sorts, King *Henry* wrote a Circular Letter to all the Bishops on the 12th of *July*, letting them know, that considering the Diversity of Opinion in Matters of Religion; he had appointed the Convocation to set forth certain Articles of Religion, most Catholick: But to prevent all Distraction in the Minds of his People, he ordered that till that was published, no Sermons should be preached till *Michaelmas*; unless by the Bishop, or in his Presence, or in his Cathedral, where he is to take care to furnish such as he can answer for: Every Bishop is therefore required to call in all his Licences for Preaching, and to publish this in the King's Name. He is also required to imprison all those who acted against this Order; and not to suffer any private Conventicles or Disputations about these Matters: To this is added a Direction for the *bidding of Prayers*; that they should pray for departed Souls, that God would grant them the Fruition of his Presence: And a strict Charge is laid on Curates, that when the Articles of Religion shall be sent them, they should read them to their People, without adding or diminishing; excepting only such to whom he shall under his Seal give Power to explain them.

*Reg. Heref. Fox Fol. 6. All preaching is for some time prohibited.*

The blind Bishop of *Norwich*, *Nix*, was condemned in a Premunire and put out of the King's Protection, for breaking through a Custom that the Town of *Thetford* had enjoyed past all Memory, that no Inhabitant of that Town could be brought into any Ecclesiastical Court, but before the Dean of that Town: Yet that Old and Vicious Bishop cited the Mayor before him, and charged him under the Pain of Excommunication not to admit of that Custom. Upon this, Judgment was given in the Temporal Courts against the Bishop: But he was now received into the King's Protection: In the Pardon mention is made of his being convicted upon the Statute of Provisors. *Stokefly* Bishop of *London* was charged with the Breach of the same Statute, for which he took out a Pardon.

During these Years, *Cromwell* carried no higher Character, than that of Secretary of State: But all Applications were made to him in Ecclesiastical Matters; so whether this was only by Reason of his Credit with the King, or if he was then made *Vicar General*, does not appear to me. But as the King took care to keep all Things quiet at Home, so he set himself to cultivate a particular Friendship with the Princes of the Empire of the *Ausburgh* Confession; hoping by their Means to be able to give the Emperor a Powerful Diversion, if he should go about to execute the Pope's Censures. The King of *France* had been for some Time endeavouring to beget a Confidence of himself in the Minds of those Princes; pretending that he was neither for the Divine, nor the Unbounded Authority that the Popes had assumed, but only he thought it was reasonable to allow them a Primacy in the Church, and to set Limits to that. *Langey* was the Person most employ'd in the managing of this Matter. But when the

*Rymer.*  
A Treaty with the Lutheran Princes.



1536. King came to understand that the King of *France* had sent for *Melanchthon*, being then at *Langley*. He ordered the Duke of *Norfolk* and the Lord *Rochford* to write to *Cromwell*, commanding him to dispatch *Barnes* immediately to *Germany*; and to use such Diligence, that if it was possible, he might meet *Melanchthon* before he was gone into *France*, and to dissuade his going thither, since the *French* King was then persecuting those who did not submit to the Pope's usurped Authority: He was to use all possible Arguments to divert him from going, and to persuade him all he could to come over to *England*; shewing him the Conformity of the King's Opinions with his own, and setting forth the King's Noble and Generous Temper: But if he was gone into *France*, *Barnes* was to go on to the Princes of *Germany*, and *Cromwell* was to send a Messenger with him to be sent back with an Account of the State of Matters among them. He was to engage the Princes to continue firm in the Denial of the Pope's Authority; in which their Honour was deeply concerned: And they might depend upon the King in that Matter, who had proceeded in it with the Advice of the most Part of the Great and Famous Clarks in *Christendom*, from which he would never vary, nor alter his Proceedings. *Barnes* was to carry over a Book written on that Subject, and some Sermons of the Bishops, and to put the Princes on their Guard, as to the *French* King; for he assured them, that both he and his Council were altogether *Papists*.

*Barnes* sent to them.

*Barnes* was likewise directed to send *Hains* (afterwards Dean of *Exeter*) and *Christopher Mount* (an Honest German, who was long employed by the Crown of *England*) to Sir *John Wallop* the King's Ambassador in *France*, on Pretence that they went as his Friends to Visit him. If *Melanchthon* was in *France*, they were to go secretly to him, to dissuade his Stay long there; or his altering his Opinion in any Particular. Some Copies of the Book, and the Sermons, were to be carried by them to *France*. If it is true, that the King of *France* was so set to maintain the Pope's Supremacy, *Wallop* was to represent to him, how contrary that was to his Honour, to Subject himself to the Pope, and to persuade others to do the same; and to charge him that he would remember his Promise to maintain the King's Cause and Proceedings; and since the King did not move the Subjects of any other Prince, why should the *French* King study to draw the *Germans* from their Opinion in that Matter: Which the King thought himself much concerned in, since it was so much against the King's Interest and his own Promise. *Wallop* was to use all Means to incline him rather to be of the King's Opinion. They also ordered *Cromwell* to write to the Bishop of *Aberdeen*, that the King took it very unkindly, that his Nephew the King of *Scotland* was suing to marry the Duke of *Vendome's* Daughter without his Advice: He had proposed it to him before, and then he would not hearken to it. This Negligence the King imputed to that Bishop, and to the rest of the *Scottish* Council: The Letter concludes, that *Barnes* should not be stayed for further Instructions from the Bishop of *Canterbury*. These should be sent afterwards by the Almoner (*Fox*). This Letter will be found in the Collection.

This came soon enough to stop *Melanchthon's* Journey to *France*. 1536. The Great Master, and the Admiral of *France*, did not think of any thing with Relation to *Germany*, but of a Civil League, to embroil the Emperor's Affairs. They were against meddling in Points of Religion; and so were against *Melanchthon's* Coming to *France*. They were afraid, that the *French* Divines and he would not agree; and that might alienate the *German* Princes yet more from the Court of *France*. *Hains* and *Mount* wrote this over from *Rheims*, on the 8th of *August* 1535. It is true, *Langey* was sent to bring him, hoping to meet him at *Wirtemberg*: But He was not come thither; only the Heads of their Doctrine were sent to him. With these he came back to *France*. The King's Divines made some Emendations; which *Langey* said to *Mount*, he believed the *Germans* would submit to: And so he was sent back with a Gold Chain, and Letters to bring *Melanchthon*, and Six other Eminent *German* Divines with him. Of this, *Mount* gave the King Advice, the 7th of *September*, in that Year.

*Melanchthon's*  
going to  
*France* pre-  
vented-

*Paper-Office.*

This whole Matter came to nothing: For *Francis's* Sister, the Queen of *Navarre*, was the Person who pressed him chiefly to it; hoping by this, once to engage him in some Point of Doctrine, which, as She hoped, might draw on a Rupture with *Rome*: But his Ministers diverted him from all Thoughts of Engaging in Doctrinal Matters; and they put him on Entering into a League with the Princes of the Empire, only with Relation to their Temporal Concerns. Nor were the *German* Princes willing to depart in a Title from the *Augsburg* Confession, or enter upon new Treaties about Points that were settled already among them; which might give Occasion to new Divisions among themselves. And no doubt, the King's Interposing in the Matter with such Earnestness, had great Weight with them; so he was delivered from the Alarm that this gave him. But to go on with our King's Affairs in *Germany*.

The Fr. King  
fluctuates.

*Fox* with *Heath* (on whom *Melanchthon* set a high Value) was sent soon after *Barnes*, to Negotiate with the *Germans*. He had many Conferences with some of their Divines, and entered into a large Treaty about several Articles of Religion, with those of *Wittemberg*, which lasted three Months, to the Elector's great Charge, and the Uneasiness of the *Germans*.

See k. l. 3. § 13.  
par. 39.  
*Fox* sent to  
*Germany*.

*Melanchthon* had dedicated his Commentary on the Epistles to the King; who sent him (upon it) a present of 200 Crowns, and wrote a Letter to him full of particular Expressions of Esteem, and Assurances that he would always assist him in those his Pious Labours; dated from *Winchester* the 1st of *October* 1535. *Fox* seemed to assure them, that the King had already abolished the Popish Superstitions, which he called the *Babylonish* Tyranny; calling the Pope Antichrist. They of *Wittemberg* insisted on the Abuses of the Mass, and on the Marriage of the Clergy; and took notice, that the King had only taken away some smaller Abuses, while the greatest were still kept up. So that *Melanchthon* wrote on the Margin of their Paper, at this Part of it, in *Greek*, *Nothing Sound*. All this was sent over to the King; but did not at all please him. For, in an Answer writ-


writ-



1536. written by *Cromwell*, these Words are a Part of it. “ The King “ knowing himself to be the Learnedest Prince in *Europe*, he thought “ it became not him to submit to them; but He expected they “ should submit to him. They, on the other Hand, saw the great Advantage of his Protection and Assistance; so that they brought *Luther* to make an humble Submission to him, asking him Pardon for the Manner of his Writing against him; which I find intimated, tho’ it never came in my way. They studied also to gain both upon his Vanity, offering him the Title of the *Defender*, or *Protector of their League*; and his Interest, by Entering into a Close Confederacy with him.

It was an Opinion common enough in that Time, that the Emperor was the Sovereign of *Germany*. *Gardiner*, in several of his Letters, seems to be of that Mind: And upon that Account, he endeavoured to possess the King with a Prejudice against his Treating with them, that it was to animate Subjects, to revolt against their Prince: Whereas, by the Constitution and Laws of the Empire, the Princes had secured to themselves the Right of Coining, Fortifying, Arming, and Entering into Treaties, not only with one another, but with Foreign Princes, for their Defence. A Homage was indeed due to the Emperor; and a much greater Submission was due to the Diet of the Empire: But the Princes were Sovereigns in their own Territories, as the *Hanse* Towns were Free States. *Fox* pressed them to approve of all that the King had done in the Matter of his Divorce, and of his Second Marriage. To which they gave the Answer that I had inserted in my History, among the Transactions of the Year 1530: But the Noble *Seckendorff* shews, that it was sent in the Year 1536. In their Answer, as they excused themselves from giving their Opinion in that Matter, till they were better informed; they added, (which, it seems, was suppressed by *Fox*) “ Tho’ we do agree with the Ambassadors, that “ the Law against Marrying the Brother’s Wife ought to be kept; “ yet we are in doubt, whether a Dispensation might not take “ place in this Case; which the Ambassadors denied. For that Law “ cannot oblige us more strictly, than it did the *Jews*: And if a “ Dispensation was admitted to them, we think the Bond of Matrimony is stronger. *Luther* was vehemently against the Infamy put on the Issue of the Marriage. He thought, the Lady *Mary* was cruelly dealt with, when she was declared a Bastard. Upon Queen *Katherine’s* Death, they earnestly pressed the Restoring her to her former Honour. So true were they to that which was their Principle, without regarding the great Advantage they saw might come to them, from the Protection of so great a King.

His Ambassadors, at that Time, gave these Princes an Advertisement of great Importance to them, that was written over to the King by *Wiat*, then his Ambassador in *Spain*; That the Emperor had, in a passionate Discourse with him, called both the Elector and the Landgrave, his *Enemies*, and *Rebels*. The Truth was, the Elector did not entirely depend on all that *Fox* said to him. He thought the King had only a Political Design in all this Negotiation; intending to bring them into a Dependence on himself, without any sincere Inten-

Intentions with Relation to Religion. So he being resolved to adhere firmly to the *Augsburg* Confession, and seeing no Appearance of the King's agreeing to it, he was very cold in the Prosecution of this Negotiation. But the Princes and States of that Confession, met at this time at *Smalcald*, and settled the Famous *Smalcaldick* League; of which the King's Ambassadors sent him an Authentick Copy, with a Translation of it in *English*; which the Reader will find in the Collection. 1536. 

Coll. Numb.  
43.

“ By it, *John Frederick*, Elector of *Saxony*, with his Brother  
 “ *Ernest*; *Philip*, *Ernest*, and *Francis*, Dukes of *Brunswick*; *Ulric*  
 “ Duke of *Wirtemberg*, *Philip* Landgrave of *Hesse*, the Dukes of  
 “ *Pomeran*; Four Brothers, Princes of *Anbalt*; Two Brothers,  
 “ Counts of *Mansfield*; the Deputies of 21 Free Towns; which  
 are not named in any Order, for *Hamburg* and *Lubeck* are the last  
 save one; but, to avoid Disputes, they were named in the Order in  
 which they came, and produced their Powers. “ All these did, on  
 “ Behalf of themselves and their Heirs, seeing the Dangers of that  
 “ Time, and that many went about to disturb those, who suffered  
 “ the sincere Doctrine of the Gospel to be preached in their Terri-  
 “ tories; and who, abolishing all Abuses, settled such Ceremonies  
 “ as were agreeable to the Word of God: From which their Ene-  
 “ mies studied to divert them by Force and Violence. And since it  
 “ was the Magistrate's Duty, to suffer the sincere Word of God to  
 “ be preached to his Subjects, and to provide that they be not vio-  
 “ lently deprived of it; therefore, that they might provide for the  
 “ Defence of themselves and their People, which is permitted to  
 “ every Man, not only by the Law of Nature, but also by the  
 “ written Laws, they entred into a Christian, Lawful, and Friend-  
 “ ly League: By which they bound themselves to favour all of  
 “ their Body, and to warn them of any imminent Danger; and not  
 “ to give their Enemies Passage thro' their Territories. This was  
 “ only for their own Defence, and not to move any War. So if  
 “ any of them should be violently assaulted for the Cause of Reli-  
 “ gion, or on any Pretence, in which the rest should judge that Re-  
 “ ligion was the true Motive; the rest of the Confederacy were  
 “ bound, with all their Force and Power, to defend him who was  
 “ so assaulted, in such a manner, as for the Circumstances of the  
 “ Time shall be adjudged: And none of them might make any A-  
 “ greement, or Truce, without the Consent of the rest. And that  
 “ it might not be understood that this was any Prejudice to the Em-  
 “ peror their Lord, or to any Part of the Empire; they declare,  
 “ that it was only intended to withstand wrongful Violence. They  
 “ also resolved to receive all into this Confederacy, who received  
 “ the *Augsburg* Confession, and desired to be joined to it. And  
 “ whereas the Confederacy made Six Years before, was to deter-  
 “ mine on the *Sunday Invocavit* of the following Year; in which  
 “ the Princes of *Wirtemberg*, *Pomeran*, and *Anbalt*, and Six of the  
 “ Cities were not comprehended; they received them into this Con-  
 “ federacy; which was to last for Ten Years after the *Sunday Invo-*  
 “ *cavit*: And if any War should be begun, but not finished with-  
 “ in these Ten Years, yet it shall be continued till the War is



1536.

“ brought to an End : But at the End of the Ten Years, it shall be  
 “ Lawful to the Confederates to prolong it further. And they gave  
 “ their Faith to one another, to observe this Religiously, and set  
 “ their Seals to it.

Coll. Numb.  
44.

On the same Day, the King's Answer was offered to the Demands the Princes had made : Both which are in the Paper-Office ; and both will be found in the Collection. Their Demands were, “ That  
 “ the King would set forth the true Doctrine of Christ, according  
 “ to the *Augsburgh* Confession ; and that he would defend that  
 “ Doctrine at the next General Council ; if it be Pious, Catho-  
 “ lick, Free, and truly Christian : And that neither the King, nor  
 “ the Princes and States of that Union, should, without mutual  
 “ Consent, agree to any Indiction of a General Council made by  
 “ the Bishop of *Rome* ; but that if such a Council should be called,  
 “ as they had desired in their Answer to *Vergerius*, the Pope's Am-  
 “ bassador, it should not be refused : And that if a Council shall  
 “ be celebrated, to which the King and these Princes do not agree,  
 “ they shall (to their Power) oppose it : And, that they will  
 “ make Protestations against it ; that they will not obey any Con-  
 “ stitution made in it, nor suffer any Decrees made in it to be obey-  
 “ ed ; but will esteem them Null and Void, and will make their  
 “ Bishops and Preachers declare that to their People. That the  
 “ King will associate himself to the League, and accept the Name  
 “ of the *Defender*, or *Protector* of it. That they will never suffer  
 “ the Monarchy of the Bishop of *Rome* to take place ; nor grant  
 “ that it is expedient, that he should have Pre-eminence before all  
 “ other Bishops, or have any Jurisdiction in the Dominions of the  
 “ King, and of the Princes. That upon these Grounds, they En-  
 “ ter into a League with one another. And in Case of any War,  
 “ either for the Cause of Religion, or any other Cause whatsoever,  
 “ that they should not assist those who begin any such War.  
 “ That the King shall lay down a Hundred Thousand Crowns ;  
 “ which it shall be Lawful to the Confederates to make use of, as  
 “ a Moiety of that which they themselves shall contribute : And  
 “ if need be, in any Cause of urgent Necessity, to contribute Two  
 “ Hundred Thousand Crowns ; they joining as much of their own  
 “ Money to it. And if the War shall end sooner, than that all  
 “ the Money is employed in it, what remains shall be restored to  
 “ the King. And they assured him, that they should not convert  
 “ this Money to any other Use, but to the Defence of the Cause of  
 “ Religion, together with their own Money. And since the King's  
 “ Ambassadors were to remain some Time in *Germany* ; dispu-  
 “ ting with their Learned Men about some Points ; they de-  
 “ fire, that they may know the King's Mind ; and that he will sig-  
 “ nify it to the Elector of *Saxony*, and the Landgrave of *Hesse*.  
 “ And then the Princes will send their Ambassadors, and a Learned  
 “ Man with them, to Confer with the King, about the Articles of  
 “ Doctrine, and the Ceremonies of the Church.

Coll. Numb.  
45.

To these the King sent Two different Answers one after another.  
 “ The First, that will be found in the Collection, was, That the King  
 “ intended to set forth the True Doctrine of Christ, which he was  
 “ ready to defend with Life and Goods : But that he being reckon-

“ ed

“ ed somewhat Learned, and having many Learned Men in his  
 “ Kingdom, he could not think it meet to accept at any Creatures 1536.  
 “ Hand what should be his Faith, or his Kingdoms; The only  
 “ Ground of which was in Scripture; with which he desired they  
 “ would not be grieved: But that they would send over some of  
 “ their Learned Men to confer with him, and his Learned Men, to  
 “ the Intent that they might have a perfect Union in Faith: He  
 “ would also join with them in all General Councils, that were Ca-  
 “ tholick, Free, and held in a Safe Place, for the Defence of the  
 “ True Doctrine of the Gospel: And as for Ceremonies, there may  
 “ be such a Diversity in these used thro’ the Whole World, that he  
 “ thought that ought to be left to the Governors of the several Do-  
 “ minions, who know best what is convenient for themselves: He  
 “ agreed that neither he, nor they, should accept of the Indiction of  
 “ a General Council, but by all their Mutual Consent; but that if  
 “ such a Free Council may be held in a Safe Place, it shall not be re-  
 “ fused. The King did not think fit to accept the Title offered by  
 “ them till first they should be thoroughly agreed upon the Articles  
 “ of Doctrine: But that being once done, he would thankfully ac-  
 “ cept of it. To that of a Defensive League, he added One Clause,  
 “ that they should not suffer any of their Subjects to serve those who  
 “ set on them in any such War: He thought it not reasonable that  
 “ he should bear any Share of the Wars already past, (which it seems  
 “ was secretly mentioned, though not expressed in their Demands)  
 “ but for the future, he was willing to contribute 100000 Crowns as  
 “ they desire. Upon further considering their Demands, the King  
 “ sent a Second and fuller Answer, which will be likewise found in Coll. Num.  
 “ the Collection. 46.

“ It begins with very tender Expressions of the Sense the King had  
 “ of their Benevolence to him, and of their Constancy in adhering  
 “ to the Truth of the Gospel: He acknowledges the Goodness of  
 “ God in giving them such Stedfastness and Strength. Their won-  
 “ drous Vertues had so ravished the King, that he was determined to  
 “ continue in a Correspondence of Love with them on all Occasions.  
 Then follow some Explanations of the former Memorial, but not  
 very important, nor differing much from it: Only he lets them know,  
 “ That it was not for any private Necessity of his own, that he was  
 “ moved to join in League with them: For by the Death of a Wo-  
 “ man, all Calumnies were extinct (this is meant of *Queen Anne*)  
 “ so that neither the Pope nor the Emperor, nor any other Prince,  
 “ had then any Quarrel with him: Yet that they might know his  
 “ good Affection to them, he would contribute the Sum they desired,  
 “ and upon the Terms they proposed: Only on his Part he demand-  
 “ ed of them that in Case any Prince invaded his Dominions on the  
 “ Account of Religion, that they would furnish him, at their Ex-  
 “ pence, with 500 Horsemen compleatly armed, or 10 Ships well  
 “ arrayed for War, to serve for Four Months: And that it should  
 “ be at the King’s Choice whether Horse, or Ships: And that they  
 “ should retain at the King’s Charge such a Number of Horse and  
 “ Foot as the King should need, not exceeding the Number of 200  
 “ Horse, and 5000 Foot: Or instead of the Foot, 12 Ships in Or-  
 “ der, with all Things necessary: Which the King might keep in  
 “ his



1536.

“ his Service, as long as he pleased : And last of all, that the Confederates will promise in all Councils, and every where else, to promote and defend the Opinion that Dr. *Martin* (so they named *Luther*) *Justus Jonas*, *Cruciger*, *Pomeran*, and *Melanchton* had of his Marriage. This Negotiation sunk to a great Degree upon Queen *Anne*'s Tragical Fall : And as the King thought they were no more necessary to him, so they saw his Intractable Humour, and had no hope of succeeding with him, unless they would have allowed him a Dictatorship in Matters of Religion ; yet to end all this Negotiation at once.

Coll. Numb.  
47.

The Elector of *Saxony*, and the Landgrave of *Hesse* wrote a Letter to the King, which will be found in the Collection, taken from the Original, occasioned by Pope *Paul* the III<sup>d</sup>'s summoning a General Council to meet at *Mantua* on the 23<sup>d</sup> of *May*, upon which the Emperor had sent Messengers to them, to give them Notice of it, and to require them to come to it, either in Person, or by their Proctors : But though they had always desired a Council for the Reforming of those Abuses, that had continued so long, by the Negligence, or Corruption of Popes and Prelates ; yet in this Bull, the Pope clearly insinuates that he will not suffer the restoring of True Doctrine, or the correcting of Abuses, to be treated of, but that their Doctrine without any Examination was to be condemned with Infamy : He also endeavoured to oblige all by the receiving of his Bull, without taking Cognizance of the Matter, to extirpate and destroy the Doctrine they professed : So that if they had accepted the Bull, they had seemed to be involved in that Design. They therefore told the Emperor's Minister, that they looked on that Bull as Unjust and Pernicious ; and they desired he would let the Emperor know that they could not accept of it. They did not doubt but the Pope, or his Party, about the King, would upon this Occasion pretend, that the Pope had done his Duty, and would study to load them with ill Characters : So they thought it necessary to justify themselves to the King, and other Princes on this Occasion.

“ They sent over with this a full Vindication of their Proceedings, which they desired the King would read, and that he would consider not only the present Danger of the *Germans*, but the Common Concern of the Whole Church, in which it was visible that all good Discipline was lost, and that Great and Worthy Men had wished and desired that some received Abuses, that could not be denied, might be amended : Therefore they recommend the Cause of the Church, and their own Cause to his Care. This is dated the 25<sup>th</sup> of *March* 1537.

Coll. Numb.  
48.

I have in my other Work given an Account of the Ambassadors whom they sent into *England*, of the Representations they made, and of a full Paper that they offered to the King : To all which I have nothing now to add, but that I have found a Letter of *Cranmer*'s to *Cromwell*, which I have put in the Collection, in which he complains of the backwardness of the Bishops. The Ambassadors had been desired to tarry one Month, that their Book might be considered ; but though he moved them to treat about it, as they had done upon other Articles ; they answered him they knew the King had

had taken it on himself to answer them ; and that a Book to that End was already devised by him : Therefore they would not meddle with the Abuses complained of. The Bishops desired that the Archbishop would go on to treat of the Sacraments of Matrimony, Orders, Confirmation, and Extream Unction, in which they knew certainly that the *Germans* would not agree with them, except only in Matrimony. “ He saw the Bishops were seeking an Occasion to break the “ Concord : And that nothing would be done, unless there came a “ special Command from the King. They saw they could not defend “ the Abuses, and yet they would not yield that Point: He complains likewise that the Ambassadors were very ill lodged : Multitudes of Rats were running in their Chambers Day and Night, “ and their Kitchen was so near their Parlour, that the Smell was “ offensive to all that came to them. He wishes that a more convenient House might be offered them.

It is true the King used them with a particular Civility, and spoke to them before all his Court in a most obliging Manner : And often wished that *Melanchton* might be sent over to him. *Cranmer* and *Cromwell* used them with all possible Kindness. *Cranmer* wrote often by them to the Elector, exhorting him to continue firm and zealous for the Truth and Purity of the Gospel : But under all the Shews of the King’s Favour, they understood that his Heart was turned from them. He wrote, when he dismissed them, to the Elector, in Terms full of Esteem for their Ambassadors: “ Not doubting but “ good Effects would follow on this Beginning of Conferences “ with them : But the Matter being of the greatest Importance, it “ ought to be very maturely considered. He again desired that *Melanchton* might be sent over to him, that he might treat with “ him, promising that he would apply himself wholly to what became “ a Christian Prince to pursue. Dated the First of October, 1538. During this Embassy there was an Anabaptist seized by the Landgrave of *Hesse*; in whose Papers they found that he had some Followers in *England*; that he had Hopes of great Success there; and was designing to go thither, but he said he was forbidden by the Spirit. Upon this they wrote an Account of all they found to the King, and gave him a Description of the Anabaptists of *Germany*. They were much spread through *Frisia* and *Westphalia*, and in the *Netherlands*; chiefly in those Places where none of their Preachers were tolerated. The not baptizing Infants was the known Character of the Party; but with this, they were for a Community of Goods: They condemned all Magistracy, and all punishing of Crimes, which they thought was a Revenge forbidden by Christ: They condemned all Oaths, and were against all Order and Government. They seemed to be *Manicheans* in Religion: They despised the Scriptures, and pretended to particular Illuminations; and allowed both Polygamy and Divorce at a Man’s Pleasure: And where-soever their Numbers increased, they broke out into Sedition and Rebellion. They wrote all this to the King in a Letter, that by the Style is believed to be penned by *Melanchton*, both to let him see how far they themselves were from favouring such Corruptions, and to put the King on his Guard against them.

1536.

Seck. L. 3.  
Par. 66.

Here ends this Negotiation; for I find no Mark of any further



1536.

Commerce between them : And though this run out far beyond the Year 1535, in which it was began, yet I thought it best to lay it all together, and so to dismiss it. The unlooked for Accidents that happened in *England*, had wrought much on the King's Temper ; his own Inclinations were still byassing him to adhere to the Old Opinions and Practices ; and the Popish Party watched and improved all Advantages, of which a very signal one happ'ned soon to their great Joy.

Cott. Libr.  
Otbo. C. 10.

Queen *Katherine*, or as she was called the Princess Dowager, died First. I have nothing to add concerning her, but that I fell on a Report of a Conversation that Sir *Edmond Bedingfield*, and Mr. *Tyrrel*, had with her ; in which she solemnly protested to them, that Prince *Arthur* never knew her Carnally, and insisted much on it ; and said many others were assured of it. But on the contrary, *Bedingfield* urged very fully all the Probabilities that were to the contrary : And said, that whatever she said on that Subject, it was little believed, and it seemed not credible. The Tragedy of Queen *Anne* followed soon after this : It broke out on the First of *May* 1536, but it seems it was concerted before ; for a Parliament was summoned, at least the Writs were tested the 27th of *April* before.

*Meteren Hist.*  
*des Pays bas*  
L. 1. F. 20.

There is a long Account of her Sufferings given by *Meteren*, in that Excellent History that he wrote of the Wars in the *Netherlands*, which he took from a full Relation of it, given by a *French* Gentleman, *Crispin*, who was then in *London*, and as *Meteren* relates the Matter, wrote without Partiality. He begins it thus. " There " was a Gentleman who blamed his Sister for some Lightness that " appeared in her Behaviour: She said the Queen did more than she " did ; for she admitted some of her Court to come into her Chamber " at undue Hours: And named the Lord *Rockford*, *Norris*, *Weston*, " *Brereton*, and *Smeton* the Musician: And she said to her Brother, " that *Smeton* could tell much more: All this was carried to the King.

When the Matter broke out on the First of *May*, the King who loved *Norris*, sent for him, and said, if he would confess those Things with which the Queen was charged, he should neither suffer in his Person, nor his Estate ; nor so much as be put in Prison: But if he did not confess, and were found Guilty, he should suffer the Extremity of the Law. *Norris* answered, he would much rather Die than be guilty of such Falshood: That it was all False, which he was ready to justify in a Combat against any Person whatsoever: So he was sent with the rest to the *Tower*: The Confession of *Smeton* was all that was brought against the Queen: He, as was believ'd, was prevailed on to accuse her: Yet he was condemned contrary to the Promise that had been made him: But it was pretended that his Crime was, that he had told his Suspicions to others, and not to the King: and when it was alledg'd that one Witness was not sufficient, it was answered that it was sufficient. He adds that the Queen was try'd in the *Tower* ; and that she defended her Honour, and Modesty, in such a way, as to soften the King (for she knew his Temper) by such Humble Deportment, to Favour her Daughter. She was brought to her Trial without having any Advocate allow'd her ; having none but her Maids about her. A Chair was set for her, and she looked to all her Judges with a chearful Countenance, as she made her Curtsies to them, without any Fear: She behaved

her self as if she had been still Queen: She spoke not much in her own Defence; but the Modesty of her Countenance pleaded her Innocence, much more than the Defence that She made; so that all who saw or heard her, believed her Innocent. Both the Magistrates of *London*, and several others who were there, said, they saw no Evidence against her; only it appear'd, that they were resolv'd to be rid of her.

1536.

She was made to lay aside all the Characters of her Dignity: Which She did willingly; but still protested her Innocence. When She heard the Sentence, that She was to be beheaded, or burnt, She was not terrified; but lifted up her Hands to God, and said, "O Father! O Creator! Thou, who art the Way, the Truth, and the Life; thou knowest that I have not deserved this Death. And turning her self to her Judges, (her Uncle, the Duke of *Norfolk*, being the Lord High Steward) She said, "My Lords, I will not say that your Sentence is unjust; nor presume, that my Opinion ought to be preferred to the Judgment of you all. I believe you have Reasons, and Occasions of Suspicion and Jealousy, upon which you have condemned me: But they must be other, than those that have been produced here in Court; for I am entirely innocent of all these Accusations; so that I cannot ask Pardon of God for them. I have been always a Faithful and Loyal Wife to the King. I have not, perhaps, at all times shewed him that Humility and Reverence, that his Goodness to me, and the Honour to which he raised me, did deserve. I confess, I have had Fancies and Suspicions of him, which I had not Strength nor Discretion enough to manage: But God knows, and is my Witness, that I never failed otherwise towards him: And I shall never confess any other, at the Hour of my Death. Do not think that I say this, on Design to prolong my Life: God has taught me to know how to Die; and he will fortify my Faith. Do not think that I am so carried in my Mind, as not to lay the Honour of my Chastity to Heart; of which I should make small Account now in my Extremity, if I had not maintained it my whole Life long, as much as ever Queen did. I know, these my last Words will signify nothing, but to justify my Honour and my Chastity. As for my Brother, and those others, who are unjustly condemned, I would willingly suffer many Deaths, to deliver them: But since I see it so pleases the King, I must willingly bear with their Death, and shall accompany them in Death, with this Assurance, that I shall lead an Endless Life with them in Peace. She said all this, and a great deal more: And then, with a modest Air, She rose up, and took Leave of them all. Her Brother, and the other Gentlemen, were executed first. "He exhorted those who suffered with him, to Die without Fear; and said to those that were about him, that he came to Die, since it was the King's Pleasure that it should be so. He exhorted all Persons; not to trust to Courts, States and Kings, but in God only. He had deserved a heavier Punishment for his other Sins; but not from the King, whom he had never offended. Yet he prayed God to give him a long, and a good Life. With him, all the rest

"suffer'd



1536.

“ suffer’d a Death, which they had no way deserved. *Mark Smeton*  
 “ only confessed, he had deserved well to die : Which gave Occasion  
 “ to many Reflections.

“ When the Queen heard, how her Brother and the other Gentle-  
 “ men had suffered, and had sealed her Innocence with their own  
 “ Blood ; but that *Mark* had confess’d, he deserved to die ; She broke  
 “ out into some Passion, and said, has he not then clear’d me of  
 “ that publick Shame he has brought me to ? Alas ! I fear, his Soul  
 “ suffers for it, and that he is now punished for his false Accusa-  
 “ tion. But for my Brother, and those others, I doubt not, but  
 “ they are now in the Presence of that Great King, before whom I  
 “ am to be To-morrow.

It seems, that Gentleman knew nothing of the Judgment, that  
 passed at *Lambeth*, Annulling the Marriage : For it was transacted  
 secretly. It could have no Foundation, or Colour, but from that  
 Story mentioned in *Cavendish’s* Life of *Wolsey*, of the Lord *Percy’s*  
 Addresses to her. He was now examined upon that : But it will  
 appear from his Letter to *Cromwell*, that he solemnly purged both  
 Himself and Her, from any Precontract ; being examined upon Oath  
 by the Two Archbishops : And that he received the Sacrament upon  
 it, before the Duke of *Norfolk*, and some of the King’s Council that  
 were learned in the Spiritual Law ; assuring them by his Oath, and  
 by the Sacrament that he had received, and intended to receive, that  
 there was never any Contract, or Promise of Marriage, between  
 Her and Him. This he wrote on the 13th of *May*, Four Days  
 before the Queen’s Execution ; which will be found in the Col-  
 lection.

*Coll. Num.*  
49.

This shews plainly, that She was prevailed on, between Fear and  
 Hope, to confess a Precontract, the Person not being named.

The *French* Gentleman gives the same Account of the Manner of  
 her Death, and of her Speech, that all the other Writers of that  
 Time do. “ When She was brought to the Place of Execution, with-  
 “ in the *Tower*, he says, her Looks were Chearful ; and She never ap-  
 “ peared more Beautiful, than at that Time. She said to those about  
 “ her, Be not sorry to see me die thus ; but pardon me from your  
 “ Hearts, that I have not expressed to all about me, that Mildness  
 “ that became me ; and that I have not done that Good, that was  
 “ in my Power to do. She prayed for those who were the Pro-  
 “ curers of her Death. Then, with the Aid of her Maids, She un-  
 “ dressed her Neck with great Courage, and so ended her Days.

This long Recital I have translated out of *Meteren* ; for I do not  
 find it taken Notice of by any of our Writers. I leave it thus,  
 without any other Reflections upon it, but that it seems all over cre-  
 dible.

*Cosmog. L.* 16.

*Thevet*, a *Franciscan* Fryar, who, for 17 or 18 Years, had wan-  
 dered up and down *Europe*, to prepare Materials for his *Cosmogra-*  
*phy*, (which he published in the Year 1563,) says, that many *Eng-*  
*lish* Gentlemen assured him, that King *Henry* expressed great Repen-  
 tance of his Sins, being at the Point of Death ; and, among other  
 Things, of the Injury and the Crime committed against Queen  
*Anne Bullen*, who was falsely accused, and convicted of that which  
 was

was laid to her Charge. It is true, *Thuanus* has very much disgraced that Writer, as a vain and ignorant Plagiary : But he having been of the Order that suffered so much for their Adhering to Queen *Katherine*, is not to be suspected of Partiality for Queen *Anne*. We must leave those Secrets to the Great Day.

1536.

It may be easily believed, that both the Pope and the Emperor, as they were glad to be freed from the Obligation they seemed to be under to protect Queen *Katherine*, so Queen *Anne's* Fall, gave them a great deal of ill-natured Joy. The Pope, upon the first News of her Disgrace, sent for *Cassali*, expressing a great deal of Pleasure upon the Queen's Imprisonment ; and, at the same time, spoke very honourably of the King. " He hoped, upon these Emergents, all " Matters would be brought to a good Agreement ; and that the " King would reconcile himself to the See, by which he would become the Arbiter of all *Europe*. He told *Cassali*, that he knew " how good an Instrument he was in Pope *Clement's* Time ; and " what Pains he took, both with the Pope and the Emperor, to prevent the Breach. He added, that the Naming of *Fisher* to be a " Cardinal, was so pressed on him, that he could not decline it. " He desired, *Cassali* would try, how any Messenger that he might " send to the King, would be received : For, as soon as he knew " that, he would send one immediately. Of all this, *Cassali* wrote an Account to the King.

At the same Time, *Pace* gave him an Account of a long Conversation he had with the Emperor on the same Subject : For he was then the King's Ambassador in that Court. " The Emperor excused " his Adhering to his Aunt, whom he could not in Honour forsake : But at the same time, he said, he abhorred the Pope's Bull, " for Deposing the King ; and he was so far from any Thoughts of " Executing it, that he commanded it to be suppressed in his Dominions : Nor did he encourage, as was suspected, the King of *Scotland* to undertake to execute it. He imputed the Breach that " had been made between him and the King, to the *French* King ; " who, he said, was like an Eel in a Man's Hand, ready to forsake " him, and even to renounce God, who, he believed, had given him over " to a Reprobate Mind. He was resolved now to return to his Old " Friendship with the King, and he would not hearken to Intimations given him by the Agent of *France*, that the King had poisoned his Aunt. He pressed him to Legitimate the Princess *Mary*. " He might do that, without Owning the Lawfulness of the Marriage ; which was a Point, in which he would stir no more. She " was born in a Marriage in Fact, and *bona fide* ; and in many " Cases, in which Marriages had been dissolved, yet the Legitimacy " of the Issue was often secured.

Cotton Libr.  
Vitell. B. 14.

Of all this *Pace* gave the King an Account ; and pressed, with some Vehemence, the Legitimizing the Princess. The Emperor was then going to *Rome* ; so King *Henry* intended to join *Cassali* with *Pace*, in his Embassy to the Emperor. *Pace* begged that might not be done ; expressing a great Aversion to him, as being a base and a perverse Man. It is plain, *Pace* pressed the King much, to think of being reconciled to the Pope. Cardinal *Ghinucci* offered

Cotton Libr.  
Vitell. B. 14.



1536.

Paper-Office.  
Col<sup>d</sup>. Numb.  
50.

his Service again to the King with Expreffions full of Zeal. *Grandwill* also entered with *Cassali* upon the same Subject: But *Cassali* wrote to the King, that he did not at all meddle in that Matter. The Emperor went to *Rome*, and *Pace* followed him thither. The King sent a Dispatch to *Pace*, which will be found in the Collection: Telling him of the Motion that the Emperor's Ambassador made to him for returning to the old Friendship with their Master: They also made him some Overtures in order to it. First, The Emperor would be a Mean to reconcile him to the Bishop of *Rome*: He also hoped that the King would contribute towards the War against the *Turk*; and that since there was an old Defensive League between them, and since it seemed that the *French* King intended to invade the Dutchy of *Milan*, he expected the King would assist him according to that League.

The King answered that  
boldly.

To all this the King answered, " That the Interruption of their  
" Friendship proceeded from the Emperor, who had made him ill  
" Returns for the Services he had done him. For he pretends he  
" made him first King of *Spain*, and then Emperor: When the Em-  
" pire was at his Disposition, he had furnished him with Money; so  
" that he ought to thank the King only for all the Honour he was  
" advanced to: But in lieu of that, he had shewed great Ingratitude  
" to the King, and had not only contemned his Friendship, but had  
" set on all the ill Usage he had met with from the Bishop of *Rome*;  
" which, as he understood, he owed chiefly to him: Yet such was  
" the King's Zeal for Concord among Christian Princes, and such  
" was his Nature, that he could continue his Displeasure against no  
" Man, when the Cause of it was once removed: So if the Emperor  
" would desire him to forget all that was passed, and would purge  
" himself of all particular Unkindness to him, he would be willing  
" to return to their old Friendship: But he having received the Inju-  
" ries, would not sue for a Reconciliation, nor treat upon the Foot  
" of the old Leagues between them, till the Reconciliation should  
" be first made, and that without any Conditions: When that was  
" done, he would answer all his reasonable Desires.

Here refuses any  
Treaty with  
the Pope.

" But as for the Bishop of *Rome*, he had not proceeded on such  
" slight Grounds, that he could in any sort depart from what he had  
" done: having founded himself on the Laws of God, of Nature,  
" and Honesty, with the Concurrence of his Parliament. There  
" was a Motion made to him from that Bishop for a Reconciliation,  
" which he had not yet embraced, nor would he suffer it to be com-  
" passed by any other Means: And therefore he would not take it in  
" good part, if the Emperor would insist in that Matter, for the Sa-  
" tisfaction of the Bishop of *Rome*, that was his Enemy; or move  
" him to alter that, which was already determined against his Au-  
" thority. When there was a General Peace among Christian Prin-  
" ces, he would not be wanting to give an Aid against the *Turk*;  
" but till the Friendship between the Emperor and him was quite  
" made up, he would treat of nothing with Relation to the King of  
" *France*: when that was done, he would be a Mediator between  
" them. This was the Answer given to the Emperor's Ambassador;  
" which

“ which was communicated to *Pace*, that in Case he had any Dis-  
 “ course with the Emperor on the Subject, he should seem only to  
 “ have a General Knowledge of the Matter, but should talk with  
 “ him suitably to these Grounds; encouraging the Emperor to pur-  
 “ sue what he had begun, and extolling the King’s Nature and Cou-  
 “ rage, with his Inclination to satisfy his Friends, when he was  
 “ not too much pressed: That would hurt and stop good Purposes;  
 “ And he Orders him to speak with *Grandvel* of it, of whom it  
 “ seems he had a good Opinion, and that he should Represent to the  
 “ Emperor the Advantage that would follow, on the Renewing their  
 “ Old Friendship, but not to Clog it with Conditions; for what-  
 “ ever the King might be afterwards brought to upon their Friend-  
 “ ship, when made up, the King would not suffer it to be loaded  
 “ with them: For the King had suffered the Injury: But he was  
 “ ordered to say all this, as of himself, and *Pace* was ordered to go  
 “ to Court and put himself in *Grandvel*’s way, that he might have  
 “ Occasion to enter upon these Subjects with him. Thus that Mat-  
 ter was put in a Method; so that in a little Time, the Friendship  
 seemed to be entirely made up.

1536.

The King would never hearken to a Reconciliation with the Pope. On the contrary, he went on in his Design of Reforming Matters in *England*. In the Convocation, in the Year 1536, *Cromwell* came and demanded a Place as the King’s Vicar-General; the Archbishop assigned him the Place next above himself: On the 21st of *June*, the Archbishop laid before the House the Sentence Definitive of the Nullity of the King’s Marriage with Queen *Anne*, which *Cromwell* desired they would approve: It was approv’d in the Upper-House, and sent down to the Lower, in which it was also approved. On the 23d of *June*, the Prolocutor with the Clergy, offered a Book to the Upper-House, in which they set forth a Collection of many ill Doctrines that were publicly preached within the Province: On the 28th of *June*, the Confirmation of the Decree concerning the King’s last Marriage was subscribed by both Houses. On the 11th of *July*, the Book concerning the Articles of Faith, and the Ceremonies, was brought in by the Bishop of *Hereford*, and was signed by both Houses. These were also signed by the Archbishop of *York*, and the Bishop of *Duresme*. On the 20th of *July*, the Bishop of *Hereford* brought another Book, containing the Reasons why the King ought not to appear in a Council, summoned by the Pope to meet at *Mantua*: This was likewise agreed to, and subscribed by both Houses. I have nothing New to add to the Account I have given in my History of the other Proceedings in Matters of Religion this Year; in which no Convocation sate at *York*. There are several Draughts of these Articles that are in several Places corrected by the King’s own Hand: Some of the Corrections are very long and very material: Of these only it was that I meant, and not of the engrossed, and signed Articles themselves, when I said they were corrected by the King; as I have been misunderstood.

By these Steps it appearing clearly, that the King had no Thoughts of a Reconciliation with *Rome*, the Pope on his part resolved to create him as much Trouble as he could. *Pole* had been sent over from

Proceedings  
in Convoca-  
tion.*Pole* made a  
Cardinal.



1536.

from *England* to *Paris*, while the Suit of Divorce was in dependance: He was particularly recommended by the Bishop of *Bayonne*, in one of his Letters to *Montmorency*, as a Person of great Hopes, and much favoured by the King: He came after that to *England*: For he tells himself that he was in *England*, while the Point of the *Supreme Headship* was in Debate. He says he was then absent, which shews that at that Time he was contented to be silent in his Opinion, and that he did not think fit to oppose what was doing. He was afterwards suffered to go and settle at *Padua*, where the Gravity of his Deportment, that was above his Age, and the Sweetness of his Temper, made him be very much considered. He was still supported from *England*, whether only out of his Deanry of *Exeter*, or by any farther special Bounty of the King's, is not certain. In several Letters from *Padua*, he acknowledges the King's Bounty and Favour to him, and in one he desires a farther Supply. He being commanded by the King to do it, wrote over his Opinion concerning his Marriage: The King sent it to *Cranmer* before his being sent out of *England*: For that Faithful and Diligent Searcher into the Transactions of those Times, Mr. *Strype*, has published the Letter that he wrote upon it; the Year is not added, but the Date being the 13th of *June*, it must be before he was sent out of *England*, this being writ before he was consecrated; for he subscribes *Cranmer*, and upon his Return he was consecrated long before *June*. It is Written to the Earl of *Wiltshire*: He mentions *Pole's* Book, and commends both the Wit and Eloquence of it very highly: He thinks if it should come abroad, it would not be possible to stand against it. *Pole's* chief Design in it, was to persuade the King to submit the Matter wholly to the Pope. In it,

He Wrote  
First against  
the Divorce.

“ He set forth the Trouble that might follow upon the Diversity  
“ of Titles to the Crown, of which the Wars upon the Titles of  
“ *Lancaster* and *York*, had given them a sad Warning. All that, was  
“ now healed, and therefore Care should be taken not to return to  
“ the like Misery. He could never agree to the Divorce, which  
“ must destroy the Princess's Title, and accuse the King of Living so  
“ long in a Course of Incest, against the Law of God and of Nature.  
“ This would increase the Hatred the People began to bear to Priests,  
“ if it should appear that they had so long approved that which is  
“ found now to be unlawful. As for the Opinions of the Univer-  
“ sities, it was known that they were often led by Affections: And  
“ that they were brought over with great Difficulty to declare for the  
“ King: But he sets in Opposition to them, the King's Father and  
“ his Council, the Queen's Father and his Council, and the Pope  
“ and his Council: It could not be expected that the Pope would  
“ condemn the Act of his Predecessor, or consent to the Abridging  
“ his own Power, and do that which would raise Sedition in many  
“ Kingdoms, particularly in *Portugal*. He next shews the Empe-  
“ ror's Power, and the Weakness of *France*, that the prohibiting our  
“ Trade to the *Netherlands* would be very ruinous, and that the  
“ *French* were never to be trusted: They never kept their Leagues  
“ with us: For neither do they Love us, nor do we Love them:  
“ And if they find their Aid necessary to *England*, they will charge  
“ it with intolerable Conditions. This is the Substance of that Let-  
ter.

ter. So that at this Time *Pole* wrote only to persuade the King by Political Considerations to submit wholly to the Pope's Judgment. 1536.  
 The Matter rested thus for some Time: But when the Breach was made, and all was past reconciling, then *Cromwell* wrote to him by the King's Order, to declare his Opinion with relation to the King's Proceedings. Upon this Reason only he wrote his Book, as he set forth in a Paper of Instructions given to one to be shewed to the King, which will be found in the Collection. In which he writes, *Coll. Numb.*

“ That he thinks if it had not been for that, he had never meddled 51.

“ in the Matter, seeing so little hope of Success; and that he had

“ Reason to think that what he should write, would not be acceptable.

“ They had sent unto him from *England* the Books Written on the

“ contrary Part: But he said he found many Things suppressed in Sends one to  
the King with  
Instructions.

“ these; and all the Colours that could be invented were set upon

“ untrue Opinions. Besides, what had followed was grievous, both

“ in the Sight of God, and in the Judgment of the Rest of *Christen-*

“ *dom*: And he apprehending yet worse Effects, both with Relation

“ to the King's Honour, and the Quiet of his Realm. did upon that

“ resolve to employ all the Wit and Learning that God had given

“ him, to set forth the Truth, and to shew the Consequences of those

“ ill Opinions. He hoped that what he wrote on the Subject would

“ fully satisfy all that would Examine it. This he did, in hopes

“ that the King, whom God had suffered to be carried away from

“ those Opinions that he had the Honour formerly to maintain,

“ would yet by the Goodness of God, be recovered out of the Evil

“ Way he was then in.

“ There were great Instances of such Cases in Scripture, in the

“ Stories of *David* and *Solomon*; the last particularly, who not-

“ withstanding the Gift of Wisdom, that he had from God, yet fell

“ into Idolatry. So though the King was not fallen from the true

“ Doctrine of Christ, yet as *David*, when in a State of Sin, was by

“ a Prophet sent to him from God, brought to true Repentance, and

“ restored to the Favour of God, he hoped he might by the Grace

“ of God, be an Instrument to bring the King to a better Sense of

“ Things. Therefore as he set himself to study the Matter, so he

“ prayed earnestly to God to manifest the Truth to him: In which

“ he hoped God had heard his Prayer; so he looked for good Success:

“ And that he might make the King apprehend the Danger he was in,

“ both from his own People, who hated Innovations in Religion,

“ and from other Princes, to whose Honour it belongs to defend the

“ Laws of the Church against all other Princes who impugn them;

“ and to make the King more apprehensive of this, he had as in his own

“ Person brought out all such Reasons as might provoke People, or

“ Princes against him, since he was departing from the Course in

“ which he had begun. These Reasons, if read a-part, without

“ considering the Purpose he proposed, of representing to the King

“ the Danger to which he was exposing himself, might make one

“ think, from his Vehemence of Style in that Argument, that he

“ was the King's greatest Enemy; but the Reading the whole Book

“ will shew what his Intent in it all was. The Book was too long

“ for the King to read: He desired therefore that he would order



1536.

“ some Learned and Grave Man to read it, and to declare his Judgment upon it, he being bound with an Oath of Fidelity, first to God, and then to the King, to do it without Affection on either Part. He named particularly *Tonstall* Bishop of *Durresme*, whom he esteemed both for Learning and Fidelity to the King, above any other he knew. After *Tonstall* had first examined it, the King may refer the further Examination of it, to such other Persons as he may think fit; he was likewise resolved that his Book should never come abroad, till the King had seen it.

“ In these Instructions, he mentions that he had sent another Book to the King concerning his Marriage: But in that he was disappointed of his Intent, as the Bearer might inform him, who knew the whole Matter. And since God had detected her, who had been the Occasion of all the Errors the King had been led into; it was the Hope of all who loved him, that he would now come to himself, and take that Discovery as a favourable Admonition of God, to consider better the Opinion of those who dissented from that Marriage, as seeing the great Dishonour and Danger like to follow on it: He wished the King would look on that, as a Warning to return to the Unity of the Church: He was sensible nothing but the Hand of God could work a Change in the King's Mind; and when that should be done, it would be one of the greatest Miracles that the World had seen for some Ages; with the most signal Characters of God's Favour to him, which would deliver him out of those very great Dangers, that must follow upon the Meeting of a General Council: Whereas, if he should Return to the Unity of the Church, no Prince would appear in that Assembly with more Honour, than would be paid to him, if he should return: Even his Fall would prove a great Blessing to the Church, and tend to the Reformation of the Whole, and to the Manifestation of the Honour of God. It would then appear that God had suffered him to Fall, to make him Rise with more Honour, to the greater Wealth, not only of his own Realm, but of the Whole Church besides: With these Instructions he sent a private Letter to *Tonstall* from *Venice*, dated *Corpus Christi* Eve.

When his Book against the Divorce came first to *England*; he was written to in the King's Name, to come over and explain some Things in it: But he excused himself; he pretended the Love of Retirement, and of the Noble Company with whom he lived, in an easy and learned Friendship there. Eloquence seems to be that which he turned his Mind most to; for in every thing he wrote, there is much more of Declamation than of Argument.

*Tonstall* being thus provoked by *Pole*, and commanded by the King, wrote a full and solid Answer to him, on the 13th of July 1536, which will be found in the Collection. “ He acknowledged he had received his Letter, as the King has received his Book; in which he desired that the Reading of it, might be first put upon him: He had read both his Letter and his long Book, and was truly grieved as he read it: Seeing both the Vehemence of his Stile, and that he misrepresented the whole Matter, as if the King was separated from the Church. He wished he had rather

“ written

Coll. Numb.  
52.

*Tonstall* writes  
Copiously to  
him.

“ written his Opinion privately, in a Letter to the King, which  
“ might have been read by himself, and not have enlarged him-  
“ self into so great a Book, which must be communicated and seen  
“ of others. What Stupidity was it, to send so long a Book so great  
“ a Way, by one who might have miscarried in it; and so the Book  
“ might have fallen into the Hands of those, who would have pub-  
“ lished it to the Slander of the King and the Kingdom; but most  
“ of all to his own; for his Ingratitude to the King, who had  
“ bred him up to that Learning, which was now used against him;  
“ in whose Defence he ought to have spent both Life and Learn-  
“ ing; he advised him to burn all that he had written on that Subject.  
“ There appeared a Strain of Bitterness in his whole Book, that was  
“ very unbecoming him. He then comes to the Argument, to shew  
“ that the King, by the Title of the *Supreme Head*, did not separate  
“ himself, nor his Church, from the Unity of the whole Body.  
“ The King did not take upon him the Office belonging to Spi-  
“ ritual Men, the Cure of Souls; nor that which belongs to  
“ the Priesthood, to Preach the Word of God, and to Minister the  
“ Sacraments. He knew what belonged to his own Office as King,  
“ and what belonged to the Priest's Office: No Prince esteemed Spi-  
“ ritual Men, that were given to Learning and Virtue, more than he  
“ did. His only Design was, to see the Laws of God sincerely  
“ preached, and Christ's Faith (without Blot) observed in his King-  
“ dom; and to reduce his Church out of the Captivity of Foreign  
“ Powers, (formerly usurped) into the State in which all the  
“ Churches of God were at the Beginning; and to put away all the  
“ Usurpations, that the Bishops of *Rome* had, by undue Means, still  
“ increased, to their own Gain, but to the Impoverishing of the  
“ Kingdom. By this he only reduced things to the State that is  
“ most conformable to the Antient Decrees of the Church, which  
“ the Bishops of *Rome* solemnly promise to observe at their Creation;  
“ naming the Eight General Councils; and yet any one, who consi-  
“ ders to what a State the Bishop of *Rome* hath brought this Church,  
“ would soon see the Diversity between the one and the other. At  
“ *Venice* he might see these in *Greek*, and they were already publish-  
“ ed in *Latin*: By which it appears, that the Bishop of *Rome* had  
“ then no such Monarchy, as they have usurped of late.

“ If the Places of Scripture which he quoted did prove it, then  
“ the Council of *Nice* did err, which decreed the contrary; as the  
“ Canons of the Apostles did appoint, that the Ordinations of Priests  
“ and Bishops, should be made in the Diocese, or at most in the  
“ Province where the Parties dwelt. These Canons *Damascen* reck-  
“ oned Holy Scriptures. Nor can it be thought, that the Four Ge-  
“ neral Councils would have acted as they did, if they had under-  
“ stood those Passages of Scripture as he did: For above a Thou-  
“ sand Years after Christ, the Customs were very contrary to those  
“ now used by the Bishop of *Rome*: When the Blood of Christ and of  
“ the Martyrs were yet fresh, the Scriptures were then best under-  
“ stood, and the Customs then used in the Church must be better,  
“ than those that thro' Ambition and Covetousness had crept in since.  
“ Light and Darkness may be as well reconciled, as the worldly Au-  
“ thority



1536.

“thority in Temporal Things now usurped can be proved from  
 “*St. Peter's* Primacy, in preaching the Word of God. He refers  
 “him to Cardinal *Cusa's* Second Book, in which he will find this  
 “well opened.

“The King going to reform his Realm, and to reduce Things to  
 “the State in which they were some Ages ago, did not change, but  
 “establish those Laws, which the Pope professes to observe. If  
 “other Princes did not follow him in this, that ought not to hinder  
 “him from doing his Duty: Of which he did not doubt to be able  
 “to convince him, if he had but one Day's Discourse with him,  
 “unless he were totally addicted to the contrary Opinion. *Pole*  
 “wrote in his Letter, that he thought the King's Subjects were of-  
 “fended at the Abolishing the Pope's Usurpations: But *Tonstall* as-  
 “sured him, that in this he was deceived: For they all perceived  
 “the Profit that the Kingdom had by it; since the Money that was  
 “before carried over to *Rome*, was now kept within the Kingdom.  
 “That was become a very heavy Burden, and was daily increasing:  
 “So that if the King would go about to restore that abolished Au-  
 “thority, he would find it more difficult to bring it about, than any  
 “Thing he had ever yet attempted in his Parliament. *Pole* had in  
 “his Letter blamed *Tonstall*, for Fainting in his Heart. and not Dy-  
 “ing for the Authority of the Bishop of *Rome*. He assures him,  
 “that from the Time that he understood the Progress of Christ's  
 “Church from the Beginning, and had read Ecclesiastical History,  
 “he never thought to shed one Drop of Blood in that Cause. None  
 “of those who had Advantage by that Authority, would have lost  
 “One Penny of it, to have saved his Life: He would do what in  
 “him lay, to cool that Indignation, which his Book had raised in  
 “the King. He desired him, not to fancy (from what he saw in  
 “*Italy*, or in other Places) that it was so from the Beginning. The  
 “Councils would shew him, how that Dignity was given to the Bi-  
 “shops of *Rome*. The Emperors called those Councils; and the  
 “Dignity that was given him, was, because he was Bishop of the  
 “Chief City of the Empire, and not for the Sake of *Peter* and  
 “*Paul*. The Second Place was given to the Patriarchs of *Constan-*  
 “*tinople*; because it was called *New Rome*, and so was preferred to  
 “*Antioch*, where *St. Peter* was Bishop, and where the Name *Chri-*  
 “*stian* first began; and it was set before *Alexandria*, and likewise  
 “before *Jerusalem*, where Christ himself preached, and the whole  
 “College of the Apostles after him, and where *James* (the Bro-  
 “ther of our Lord) was the First Bishop. That Church was called  
 “the Mother of all the Churches. It was also set before *Ephesus*,  
 “where *St. John* wrote his Gospel, and died. To all these, *Constan-*  
 “*tinople* was preferred: And yet this was fully settled in the Coun-  
 “cil of *Chalcedon*, where 630 Bishops met. If he read the *Greek*  
 “Fathers, *Basil*, *Nazianzen*, *Chrysostome*, and *Damascent*, he would  
 “find no mention of the Monarchy of the Bishop of *Rome*. He  
 “desired him to search further into this Matter, and he would find,  
 “that the Old Fathers knew nothing of the Pope's late Pretensions  
 “and Usurpations. He wished therefore, that he would examine  
 “these Matters more carefully, which had been searched to the Bot-

“ tom

“ tom in *England*. The Learned Men here thought, they were  
 “ happily delivered from that Captivity, to which he endeavours to  
 “ bring them back. He tells him, how much all his Family and  
 “ Kindred would be troubled, to see him so much engaged against  
 “ his King and his Country ; whom he might comfort, if he would  
 “ follow the Establishment of the whole Church of God from the  
 “ Beginning, and leave the supporting of those Usurpations. He  
 “ refers him to *Gregory* the Great, who wrote against the Bishop of  
 “ *Constantinople*, pretending to the like Monarchy. *St. Cyprian*  
 “ writes, that all the Apostles were of equal Dignity and Authori-  
 “ ty ; which is also affirmed by the Third Council of *Ephesus*. He  
 “ begged him, not to trust too much to himself, but to search fur-  
 “ ther, and not to fancy he had found out the Matter already. He  
 “ prayed him to burn all his Papers ; and then he hoped, he should  
 “ prevail with the King, to keep that which he had sent him, se-  
 “ cret. He concludes all, with some very kind Expressions,

1536.

This I have abstracted the more fully, for the Honour of *Tonstall's*  
 Memory ; who was a Generous and Good-natured, as well as a very  
 Learned Man. *Pole*, who was then a Cardinal, wrote no Answer  
 to this, that I could find ; but he wrote a long Letter, either to  
*Tonstall*, or to *Cromwell*, in May 1537, which will be found in the

Coll. Numb.  
53.

“ He begins it with Protestations of his Affection to the King,  
 “ tho' the King had taken such Methods to destroy him, as the like  
 “ had not been known in *Christendom*, against any who bore the  
 “ Person that he did at that Time ; yet he still maintained a deep  
 “ Affection to him. He knew well all that the King had designed  
 “ against him ; which, if he bore the King a small Degree of Love,  
 “ would be enough to extinguish it. He saw, what he did for the  
 “ best, was taken in the worst Part. He did not think it possible,  
 “ that the King should conceive such Indignation against him, as to  
 “ break thro' all Laws, to have him in his Hands, and to disturb  
 “ the whole Commerce of Nations, rather than not have his Person  
 “ in his Power. But he still adhered to his former Principles, and  
 “ maintained his former Temper towards the King.

Cardinal  
*Pole's* Vindi-  
cation of  
himself.

“ Upon his Arrival in *France*, he was ashamed to hear, that he  
 “ coming thither in the Quality of an Ambassador and Legate, one  
 “ Prince should desire of another to betray him, and deliver him  
 “ into the King's Ambassador's Hands. He himself was so little dis-  
 “ turbed at it, when he first heard of it, that he said upon it, (to  
 “ those who were about him) that he never felt himself in full  
 “ Possession of being a *Cardinal*, till then ; since he was now perfec-  
 “ cuted by him, whose Good he most earnestly desired. Whatever  
 “ Religion Men are of, if they would observe the Law of Nati-  
 “ ons, the Law of Nature alone would shew how abominable it  
 “ was to grant such a Request ; and it was no less to desire it. So  
 “ that if he had the least Spark of an Alienation from the King,  
 “ in him, such Proceedings would blow it up into a Fire. He  
 “ might, upon this, be justly tempted to give over all Commerce  
 “ with the King, and to procure (by all honest ways) the Means  
 “ to repay this Malignity, by doing him the utmost Damage he



1536.

“ could devise : But he did not, for that, abstain from trying to do  
 “ all he could for the King’s Honour and Wealth. He acknow-  
 “ ledges, that the Bishop of *Verona* was sent by him to the Court  
 “ of *France*, to intimate that the Pope (for the Common Good of  
 “ *Cbristendom*) had committed some Affairs to him, to treat with  
 “ the King. That Bishop passed thro’ *Abbeville*, when the Bishop of  
 “ *Winchester* and Mr. *Brian* were there : So he could not but wonder  
 “ at the King’s acting towards him ; the whole Design of his  
 “ Legation being for the King’s Honour. Upon which, that Bishop  
 “ desired to confer with the King’s Ambassadors, that he might de-  
 “ clare to them the whole Truth of the Matter, which was made  
 “ known to them. They, it is true, had no Communication with  
 “ him ; but they sent their Secretary after the Bishop had declared  
 “ the Effect of his Legation, as far as it related to the King, to  
 “ him.

“ It seemed visible to all, that the King (in what he had done  
 “ against him) was abused by false Reports, and by the false Con-  
 “ jectures of some ; so it was hoped, that the Matter being once  
 “ cleared, the King would have changed his Mind. All this he  
 “ understood from the Bishop of *Verona*, at his Return ; and he  
 “ readily believed it. That Bishop had been the King’s true Ser-  
 “ vant, and had shewed (when he was in a Capacity to serve him)  
 “ the sincere Love that he bore him. He had been also *Pole*’s parti-  
 “ cular Acquaintance, ever since he came out of *England*. He  
 “ would have been ready, if the King had consented to it, to have  
 “ gone and given the King full Satisfaction in all Things. For, the  
 “ chief Reason of his being sent into *France*, was, the Pope’s in-  
 “ tending to gain the King, knowing the Friendship that was be-  
 “ tween him and the *French* King : So the Bishop of *Verona* was  
 “ thought the fittest Person to be first employed, who had great  
 “ Merits on both Kings, for the Services he did them when he  
 “ was in Office : And being esteemed the best Bishop in *Italy*, it  
 “ was designed that he should accompany *Pole*, as well as he was  
 “ sent before, to prepare Matters for his Coming ; which he, out of  
 “ his Zeal to do God and the King Service, undertook very willing-  
 “ ly ; and resolved to try how he could get Access to the King’s  
 “ Person : So now having fully explained himself, he hoped it  
 “ would not be thought possible, that he had those Designs, of  
 “ which the King’s Proceeding against him, shewed he suspected  
 “ him, (which was, that he came on purpose to animate the People  
 “ to Rebel.)

“ Upon his first Coming to *Rome*, he acquainted the King with  
 “ the Design, for which he was called thither : And he had ac-  
 “ quainted him with the Cause of his Legation. These were not  
 “ the Methods of those who intended to rebel. He had then pro-  
 “ cured a Suspension, in Sending forth the Censures, which at that  
 “ time might have caused the King more Trouble : And he sent  
 “ his Servant purposely, with the Offer of his Assistance, anima-  
 “ ting the chief of his Kindred to be constant in the King’s Ser-  
 “ vice. If any had been at *Rome* in the King’s Pay, to do him  
 “ Ser-

“ Service, they could not have done more than he did ; so that some  
 “ began to reflect on him, because he would not consent to diverse 1536.  
 “ Things that would have been uneasy to him : And particularly  
 “ because he had the Censures in his Hand, which were instantly  
 “ called for by those who had Authority to command : Yet they never  
 “ came into their Sight, nor Hands : And to that Hour he had sup-  
 “ pressed them. He would go no further in justifying himself, if  
 “ what he had already done, and what the Bishop of *Verona* had said,  
 “ did not do it ; he would take no more Pains to clear himself : He  
 “ rather thought he had been Faulty in his Negligence in these Mat-  
 “ ters. But there was nothing now left to him, but to pray for the  
 “ King.

This Letter is dated from *Cambray* : For upon the King's Message  
 to the *French King*, to demand him to be delivered into his Hands,  
*Francis* could in no Sort hearken to that, but he sent to him not to  
 come to his Court, but to go with all convenient Haste out of his Do-  
 minions : So he retired to *Cambray*, as being then a peculiar Sove-  
 reignty. The King had a Spy, one *Throckmorton*, secretly about  
*Pole*, who gave him an Account of all his Motions : But by what  
 appears in his Letters, he was faithfuller to *Pole*, than to the King.  
 He wrote over that his Book was not then printed, tho' he had been  
 much pressed to print it by those at *Rome* ; but he thought that would  
 hinder the Design he went on : He believed indeed that upon his  
 returning thither, he would print it. He tells him that he had pro-  
 cured the Suspensions of the Pope's Censures, to try if it was possible  
 to bring about a Reconciliation between the Pope and the King : And  
 he adds, that many wonder'd to see the King so set against him, and  
 that he did not rather endeavour to gain him. He intended to have  
 stay'd some time in *Flanders*, but the Regent sent him Word, that  
 it could not be suffered : He went from thence and stay'd at *Licge*,  
 where he was on the 20th of *August* ; for the last of *Throckmorton's*  
 Letters is dated from thence : He writes that the Pope had called him  
 back, having named him to be his Legate to the Council that he had  
 summoned to meet the first of *November* ; though it did not meet for  
 some Years after this.

The King's Indignation upon his Advancement, and for his Book,  
 carried him to a great many Excesses, and to many Acts of Injustice  
 and Cruelty : Which are not the least among the great Blemishes of  
 that Reign. *Wyat* was then the King's Ambassador at the Emperor's  
 Court ; and by his Letters to the King, it seems an entire Confide-  
 nce was then settled with the Emperor. The King pressed him  
 much not to suffer the Pope to call a Council, but to call one by his  
 own Authority, as the *Roman Emperors* had called the first General  
 Councils : And he proposed *Cambray* as a proper Place for one ; but  
 he was not like to succeed in that, so he only insisted on a Pro-  
 mise that the Emperor had made, that nothing should be done in the  
 Council, whensoever it should meet, against him or his King-  
 dom.

The King was  
 reconciled to  
 the Emperor.



1536.

The King was at this Time under much Uneasiness, for he sent both *Bauer* and *Hains* over to the Emperor's Court in Conjunction : The one seems to have been chosen to talk with those who were still Papistical ; and the other had great Credit with the Protestants. Our Merchants in the Emperor's Dominions were threatened by the Inquisition, for owning the King as *Supreme Head* of this Church : Upon this *Wyat* complained to the Emperor. But tho' that Prince vindicated the Inquisitors, he promised to give such Order, that they should not be disquieted on that Account : And when *Pole* applied himself to the Emperor, for leave to affix the Pope's Bull against the King in his Dominions, he would not consent to it.

Dr. London's violent Proceedings in suppressing the Monasteries.

I cannot add much to what I wrote formerly, with Relation to the Suppression of the Monasteries. There are many Letters setting forth their Vices and Lewdness, and their Robberies, and other ill Practices ; and now that the Design against them was apparent, many run beyond Sea with their Plate and Jewels : But I must not conceal that the Visitors give a great Character of the Abbess and Nuns of *Pollewerth* in *Warwickshire*. Dr. London, that was afterwards not only a Persecutor of Protestants, but a Suborner of false Witnesses against them, was now zealous even to Officiousness in suppressing the Monasteries. In the first Commission that the Visitors had, there was no Order for the removing *Skrines*, yet he in his Zeal exceeding his Commission, had done it ; upon which, *Leighton*, *Legh*, and others, desired that a Commission for that end might be sent after them, of the same Date with their other Commissions. He also studied to frighten the Abbess of *Godstow* into a Resignation. She was particularly in *Cromwell's* Favour ; so she wrote a plain honest Letter to him, complaining of “ *London's* Violence, of his Artifices to bring  
“ them to surrender their House, and of the great Charge he put  
“ them to : She writes that she did not hear that any of the King's  
“ Subjects had been so handled : She insists on her Care to maintain  
“ the Honour of God, and all Truth and Obedience to the King ;  
“ therefore she was positively resolved not to surrender her House,  
“ but would be ready to do it whensoever the King's Command or  
“ his should come to her, and not till then”. The great Character I gave of that Abbess and of her House in my former Work, made me resolve to put this Letter in the Collection.

Collect.  
Numb. 54.

Cheats in Images discovered.

Coll. Numb.  
55.

The Discovery of the Cheats in Images and Counterfeits in Relicks, contributed not a little to their Disgrace. Among these, that of *Boxley* in *Kent* was one of the most enormous. Among the Papers that were sent me from *Zurick*, there is a Letter written by the Minister of *Maidstone* to *Bullinger* that describes such an Image, if it is not the same, so particularly, that I have put it in the Collection. He calls it the Dagon of *Ashdod*, or the *Babylonish Bell*. It was a Crucifix that sometimes moved the Head, the Eyes, and did bend the whole Body to express the receiving of Prayers ; and other Gestures were at other Times made to signify the rejecting them ; great Offerings were made to so wonderful an Image. One *Partridge* suspected the Fraud, and removing the Image, he saw the whole Imposture evidently. There were several Springs within it, by which all these Motions were made. This was brought to *Maidstone*, and exposed to all the People there :

there : From thence it was carried to *London*, and was shewed to the King and all his Court, and in their Sight all the Motions were performed. The King's Council ordered a Sermon to be preached at *Paul's*, by the Bishop of *Rocheſter*, where this Impoſture was fully diſcovered, and after Sermon it was burned.

1536.

Upon the Birth of Prince *Edward* Matters had a better Face : Here was an undoubted Heir born to the Crown ; it is true the Death of his Mother did abate much of the Joy, that ſuch a Birth would have given otherwiſe : For as ſhe was of all the King's Wives much the beſt beloved by him, ſo ſhe was a Perſon of that humble and ſweet Temper, that ſhe was univerſally beloved on that Account ; ſhe had no Occaſion given her to appear much in Buſineſs, ſo ſhe had no ſhare of the Hatred raiſed by the King's Proceedings, caſt on her. I fell into a Miſtake from a Letter of Queen *Elizabeth's*, directed to a big-bellied Queen, which I thought belonged to her ; but I am now convinced of my Error, for it was no doubt written to Queen *Katherine*, when, after King *Henry's* Death ſhe was with Child by the Lord *Seimour*. Upon Queen *Jane's* Death, *Tonſtall* being then at *York* wrote a Conſolatory Letter to the King, which will be found in the Collection. It runs upon the common Topicks of Affliction, with many good Applications of Paſſages of Scripture, and ſeems chiefly meant to calm and cheer up the King's Spirit. But the Truth is, King *Henry* had ſo many groſs Faults about him, that it had been more for *Tonſtall's* Honour, and better ſuited to his Character, if he had given Hints to awaken the King's Conſcience, and to call upon him to examine his Ways, while he had that Load upon his Mind : Either *Tonſtall* did not think him ſo faulty as certainly he was, or he was very faulty himſelf, in being ſo wanting to his Duty, upon ſo great an Occaſion.

*Tonſtall* wrote  
a Conſolatory  
Letter to the  
King when Q.  
*Jane* died.  
Coll. Numb.  
56.

But I go on to more publick Concerns. The King had by the Lord *Cromwell* ſent Injunctions to his Clergy in the Year 1536, as he did afterwards in the Year 1538, which I have printed in my former Work. There was alſo a circular Letter written to the Biſhops ; that to the Biſhop of *Hereford* is dated on the 20th of *July* 1536, requiring them to execute an Order abrogating ſome Holy-Days : The Numbers of them were ſo exceſſively great, and by the People's Devotion, or rather Superſtition, were like to increaſe more and more, which occaſion'd much Sloth and Idleneſs, and great Loſs to the Publick in Time of Harveſt. It ſets forth that the King, with the Advice of the Convocation, had ſettled Rules in this Matter. The Feaſt of the Dedication of Churches was to be held every Year, on the firſt Sunday in *October*; but the Feaſt of the Patron of the Church was to be no more obſerved. All the Feaſts from the firſt of *July* to the 29th of *September*, and all Feaſts in Term-time, were not to be obſerved any more as Holy-Days, except the Feaſts of the Apoſtles, of the Bleſſed Virgin *Mary*, and of St. *George*, and thoſe Days in which the Judges did not uſe to ſit ; but the Four Quarter Days were ſtill to be offering Days. Theſe are all the publick Injunctions ſet out about this Time. But after the firſt of theſe, I find the Biſhops ſent likewiſe Injunctions to their Clergy round their Dioceſſes, of which a Copy printed at that time was given me by my worthy Friend Mr. *Tate* Miniſter

Reg. Heref.  
Fox fo. 9.  
Orders about  
Holy-Days.



1536.  
Injunctions  
given by the  
Archbishop of  
York.  
Coll. Numb.  
57.

of *Burnham*. The first was by *Lee*, Archbishop of *York*, which will be found in the Collection.

“ He begins with the abolishing of the Bishop of *Rome*’s Authority, and the declaring the King to be *supreme Head* of the Church of *England*, as well Spiritual as Temporal. He requires his Clergy to provide a New Testament in *English* or *Latin* within Forty Days, and to read daily in it Two Chapters before Noon, and Two in the Afternoon : And to study to understand it : He requires them also to study the Book to be set forth by the King, of the Institution of a Christian Man. They were to procure it as soon as it should be published, that they might read Two Chapters a Day in it, and be able to explain it to their People. All Curates and Heads of Religious Houses were required to repeat the *Lord’s Prayer* and the *Ave Maria* in *English*, and at other Parts of the Service, the *Creed* and the *Ten Commandments* also in *English*, and to make the People repeat these after them : And none were to be admitted to the Sacrament at *Easter* that could not repeat them. All Parishes were required within Forty Days to provide a great Bible in *English*, to be chained to some open Place in the Church ; that so all Persons might resort to it, and read it for their Instruction. Priests were forbidden to haunt Taverns or Ale-houses, except on necessary Occasions. The Clergy that did belong to any one Church were required to eat together, if they might, and not to play at prohibited Games, as Cards and Dice. They must discourage none from reading the Scriptures, exhorting them to do it in the Spirit of Meekness, to be edified by it : They were required to read to their People the Gospel and Epistle in *English*. Rules are set for the frequent Use of Sermons, proportioned to the Value of their Livings : Generally Four Sermons were to be preached every Year, one in a Quarter. None were to preach but such as had a Licence from the King or the Archbishop : nor were they to worship any Image, or kneel or offer any Lights or Gifts to it : But they might have Lights in the Rood-Loft, and before the Sacrament, and at the Sepulchre at *Easter*. They were to teach the People that Images are only as Books to stir them up to follow the Saints ; and tho’ they see God the Father represented as an Old Man, they were not to think that he has a Body, or is like a Man. All Images to which any resort is used, are to be taken away. They are to teach the People that God is not pleased with the Works done for the Traditions of Men, when Works commanded by God are left undone ; That we are only saved by the Mercy of God, and the Merits of Christ ; That our good Works have their Virtue only from thence. They were to teach the Midwives the Form of Baptism : They were to teach the People to make no private Contracts of Marriage, nor to force their Children to marry against their Wills ; and to open to their People often the Two great Commandments of Christ, *To love God and our Neighbour*, and to live in Love with all People, avoiding Dissention.

The rest relate to the Matters set out in the King’s Injunctions.

There

There were about the same Time Injunctions given by *Sampson* Bishop of *Coventry* and *Litchfield*, for his Diocese, which will be found in the Collection. He begins with a Charge to his Clergy, "To instruct the People concerning the King's being the *Supreme Head* of the Church of *England*, by the Word of God; and that the Authority used by the Bishop of *Rome*, was an Usurpation: Then he charges them to procure by the next *Whitsontide* a whole Bible in *Latin*, and also one in *English*; and to lay it in the Church, that every Man may read in it. Then with relation to the reading the Scriptures, and the having Sermons every Quarter, he gives the same Charge that *Lee* gave. As to their Sermons he charges them that they be preached purely, sincerely, and according to the true Scriptures of God. He next requires them in the King's Name, and as his Minister, to teach the People to say the Lord's Prayer, and the *Ave*, and the Creed in *English*: And that four Times in every Quarter they declare the Seven deadly Sins, and the Ten Commandments. And because some out of Neglect of their Curates, and to hide their lewd Livings, used in *Lent* to go to Confession to Friars, or to other religious Houses; He orders that no Testimonial from them shall be sufficient to admit one to the Sacrament, called by him *God's Board*; till they confess to their own Curates, unless upon some urgent Considerations of Conscience, that he or his Deputies should grant a special Licence for it: That on Holy-Days, and in Time of Divine Service, none should go to Ale-Houses or Taverns, nor be received in them: And that the Clergy should go in such decent Apparel, that it might be known that they were of the Clergy.

1536.  
Injunctions by  
the Bishop of  
*Coventry* and  
*Litchfield*.  
Coll. Numb.  
58.

The last of the Injunctions in that Book was given by *Shaxton*, Bishop of *Salisbury*, for his Diocese, which will be found in the Collection; they are said to be given out from the Authority given him by God and the King.

Coll. Numb.  
59.

"He begins with Provision about Non-Residents and their Curates, in particular, That no *French* or *Irish* Priest that could not perfectly speak the *English* Tongue should serve as Curates. They were at high Masse to read the Gospel and Epistle in the *English* Tongue, and to set out the King's Supremacy and the Usurpations of the Bishop of *Rome*: The same Rules are given about Sermons as in the former, with this Addition, that no Friar nor any Person in a Religious Habit be suffered to perform any Service in the Church: As for reading the New Testament, the Clergy are only required to read one Chapter every Day, and that every Person having a Cure of Souls, should be able to repeat without Book, the Gospels of Saint *Matthew* and Saint *John*, with the Epistles to the *Romans*, *Corinthians*, and *Galatians*, and the Acts of the Apostles, and the Canonical Epistles: so that every Fortnight they should learn one Chapter without Book and keep it still in their Memory: and that the 28th Chapter of *Deuteronomy* should be read every Quarter instead of the general Sentence. He gave the same Orders that the others gave about Images, Pilgrimages, and other Superstitious Observances, and for teaching the People the Elements of Religion in *English*; only he does not join the *Ave-*

And by the  
Bishop of *Salisbury*.

*Maria*



1536. " *Maria* with the *Lord's Prayer* as the others did : he requires the  
 " Curates to exhort the People to beware of swearing and blaspheming the Name of God, or of Christ's precious Body and Blood, and of many other Sins then commonly practised ; he dispensed with all Lights before Images, and requires that every Church should be furnished with a Bible : He complains of the Practice of putting false Relicks on the People, naming stinking Boots, mucky Combs, ragged Rockets, rotten Girdles, Locks of Hair, Gobbets of Wood, as Parcels of the Holy Cross, of which he had perfect Knowledge ; besides the shameful Abuse of such as were perhaps true Relicks : he prays and commands them by the Authority he had under God and the King, to bring all these to him, with the Writings relating to them, that he might examine them, promising to restore such as were found to be true Relicks, with an Instruction how they ought to be used : he also orders, that the *Ave* and *Pardon Bell*, that was wont to be Tolled three times a Day, should be no more Tolled.

These are all the Injunctions set out by Bishops, that have fallen into my Hands. Here I must acknowledge a very great Omission made in the Copy that I printed in the Collection added to my History, of a very important Paragraph, in the Second Injunction given by *Cromwell*, which will be found in the Collection, together with an Omission of a few Lines in Bishop *Boner's* Injunctions that were passed over by a very common Fault of Transcribers, who seeing the Words that they wrote last in the Original before them, do not enough examine, whether the same Words did not belong to a new Portion, and so write on without examining whether there are no Words or Lines between the one and the other : for *Churches and Chapels* being in two different Places, my Copier wrote on from the Second Place, and so omitted some Lines between the one and the other. I am very ready to correct what I find amiss ; I rather wonder that there is no more occasion for such Reprehensions. I know I am not to expect either Favour or common Civility from some Hands. I do not enter into Faults of a worse Nature made by others, but am very ready to confess my own when I see them.

I find nothing to add with Relation to the Dissolution both of the smaller and the greater Monasteries ; nor of the several Risings that were in different Parts of the Kingdom ; only I find a Letter of *Gresham* then Lord Mayor of *London*, I suppose he was the Father of

*Gresham's Letter to the King for putting the great Hospitals in the Hands of the City.*  
*Coll. Numb.*  
 61.

him who was the famed Benefactor to the City ; but by the Letter which will be found in the Collection, his Father was the occasion of procuring them a much greater Benefaction. He begun his Letter with a high Commendation of the King, who as he writes, " Seemed to be the chosen Vessel of God, by whom the true Word of God was to be set forth, and who was to reform all Enormities. This encouraged him, being then the Mayor of the City of *London*, to inform him, for the Comfort of the Sick, Aged, and Impotent Persons, that there were Three Hospitals near or within the City, that of Saint *George*, Saint *Bartholomew*, and Saint *Thomas*, and the New Abbey on *Tower-Hill*, Founded and Endowed with great Possessions, only for the helping the Poor and

" Impotent,

" Impotent, who were not able to help themselves ; and not for the  
 " Maintenance of Canons, Priests and Monks, to live in Pleasure,  
 " not regarding the Poor who were lying in every Street, offending  
 " all that pass by them : he therefore prayed the King, for the Re-  
 " lief of Christ's true Images, to give Order that the Mayor of *Lon-*  
 " *don* and the Aldermen, may from thenceforth have the Disposition  
 " and Rule both of the Lands belonging to those Hospitals, and of  
 " the Governours and Ministers which shall be in any of them. And  
 " then the King would perceive that whereas now there was a small  
 " Number of Canons, Priests, and Monks in them for their own  
 " Profit only ; that then a great Number of Poor and Indigent Per-  
 " sons should be maintained in them, and also freely healed of their  
 " Infirmities : And there should be Physicians, Surgeons, and Apo-  
 " thecaries with Salaries to attend upon them : And those who were  
 " not able to Labour should be relieved ; and Sturdy Beggars not  
 " willing to Labour, should be punished : In doing this, the King  
 " would be more Charitable to the Poor, than his Progenitor *Edgar*  
 " the Founder of so many Monasteries ; or *Henry* the IIIId, the Re-  
 " newer of *Westminster* ; or *Edward* the IIIId, the Founder of the  
 " New Abbey ; or than *Henry* the Vth, the Founder of *Sion* and  
 " *Shene*, and he would carry the Name of the Protector and Defen-  
 " der of the Poor.

1538.

How soon after this, these Hospitals were put under the Govern-  
 ment of the Lord Mayor and Aldermen of *London*, will be found  
 in the History of the City. But I thought this Letter was worth  
 remembring, since probably it gave the rise to the putting those En-  
 dowments in such Hands, in which to the Wonder of all the World,  
 we see such a noble Order and Management, and such an overflow-  
 ing of Charity, that not only all their Revenues are with the exactest  
 Management possible applied wholly to the Use for which they were  
 designed ; but that the particular Bounties of those whom God has  
 blessed in the City, that are Annually given to them, do far exceed  
 their stated Revenues : Of which there are Yearly Accounts pub-  
 lished in *Easter* Week ; and which no doubt do bring down great  
 Blessings on the City, and on all its Concerns.

The State of Matters began to turn about this Time. The King  
 seemed to think that his Subjects owed an entire Resignation of their  
 Reasons and Consciences to him : and as he was highly offended with  
 those who still adhered to the Papal Authority ; so he could not bear  
 the haste that some were making to a further Reformation, before or  
 beyond his Allowance. So in the End of the Year 1538, he set out  
 a Proclamation on the 16th of *November*.

The King  
 grows severe  
 against the  
 Reformers.

In it he prohibits the Importing of all Foreign Books, or the Print-  
 ing of any at Home without Licence, and the Printing any Parts of  
 Scripture, till they were examined by the King and his Council, or  
 by the Bishop of the Diocese : He condemns all the Books of the  
*Anabaptists* and *Sacramentaries* ; and appoints those to be punished  
 who vented them : He requires that none may argue against the  
 Presence of Christ in the Sacrament, under the Pain of Death, and  
 of the Loss of their Goods ; and orders all to be punished who did  
 disuse any Rites or Ceremonies not then abolished ; yet he orders



1538.

Cell. Numb.  
62.He set out a  
long Procla-  
mation.An Account  
set forth by the  
King of *Tho-  
mas Becket*.

them to be observed without Superstition only as Remembrances, and not to repose in them a trust of Salvation by observing them. He requires that all married Priests should no more Minister the Sacrament, but be deprived, with further Punishment or Imprisonment at the King's Pleasure. What follows after this, will be found in the Collection; for the Whole did not seem so important as to be all set down, it being very long. "The King considering the several  
 " Superstitions and Abuses, which had crept into the Hearts of ma-  
 " ny of his unlearned Subjects, and the Strife and Contention which  
 " did grow among them, had often commanded his Bishops and  
 " Clergy to preach plainly and sincerely, and to set forth the true  
 " Meaning of the Sacramentals and Ceremonies, that they might be  
 " quietly used for such Purposes as they were at first intended: But  
 " he was informed that this had not been executed according to his  
 " Expectation; therefore he requires all his Archbishops and Bishops,  
 " that in their own Persons they will preach with more Diligence,  
 " and set forth to the People the Word of God, sincerely and purely;  
 " declaring the difference between the Things commanded by God,  
 " and these Rites and Ceremonies commanded only by a lower Autho-  
 " rity, that they may come to the true Knowledge of a lively Faith  
 " in God and Obedience to the King, with Love and Charity to  
 " their Neighbours. They were to require all their Clergy to do  
 " the same, and to exhort the People to read and hear with simpli-  
 " city; and without Arrogance, avoiding all Strife and Contention,  
 " under the Pain of being punished at the King's Pleasure.

To this he adds, "That it appearing clearly that *Thomas Becket*,  
 " sometime Archbishop of *Canterbury*, did stubbornly withstand  
 " the Laws established against the Enormities of the Clergy, by King  
 " *Henry* the II<sup>d</sup>, and had fled out of the Realm into *France*, and to the  
 " Bishop of *Rome* to procure the Abrogating of these Laws: From  
 " which there arose great Troubles in the Kingdom. His Death,  
 " which they untruly called his *Martyrdom*, happ'ned upon a Rescue  
 " made by him, upon which he gave opprobrious Words to the  
 " Gentlemen who counselled him to leave his Stubbornness, and not  
 " to stir up the People who were risen for that Rescue: He called  
 " one of them Bawd, and pulled *Tracy* by the Bosom almost down to  
 " the Pavement of the Church: Upon this Fray one of the Com-  
 " pany struck him, and in the Throng he was slain. He was Cano-  
 " nized by the Bishop of *Rome*, because he had been a Champion to  
 " maintain his usurped Authority, and a Defender of the Iniquity  
 " of the Clergy. The King with the Advice of his Council, did  
 " find there was nothing of Sanctity in the Life, or Exterior Con-  
 " versation of *Becket*, but that he rather ought to be esteemed a  
 " Rebel and a Traytor; therefore he Commands that he shall be  
 " no more esteemed, nor called a *Saint*, that his Images shall be  
 " every where put down; and that the Days used for his Festival  
 " shall be no more observed, nor any Part of that Service be read,  
 " but that it should be razed out of all Books. Adding, that the  
 " other Festivals already abrogated, shall be no more solemnized,  
 " and that his Subjects shall be no more blindly abused to commit  
 " Idolatry, as they had been in Time past. I will leave it to our  
 " Historians

“ Historians to compare the Account here given of *Becket's* Death, 1538.  
 “ with the Legends, and to examine which of them is the  
 “ truest.

Soon after this, the King understanding that very malicious Reports were spread about the Country, poisoning Peoples Minds, with relation to every Thing that the King did; saying they would be made pay for every Thing they should Eat; and that the Register of Births and Weddings was ordered for this End, that the King might know the Number of his People, and make Levies; and send, or rather Sell, them to Foreign Service: He sent in *December* following, a Circular Letter to all the Justices of *England*, which will be found in the Collection; in which, after he had set forth his good Intentions for the Wealth and Happiness of his People; He added, “ That  
 “ he hoped that all the Maintainers of the Bishop of *Rome's* Authority, should have been searched for, and brought to Justice: And  
 “ that all the Inventors and Spreaders of false Reports to put the  
 “ People in Fear, and so to stir them up to Sedition, should have  
 “ been apprehended and punished; and that Vagabonds and Beggars  
 “ should have been corrected according to the Letters he had formerly written to them. The King understood that sundry of them  
 “ had done their Duty so well, that there had been no Disquiet till  
 “ of late; that some malicious Persons had by Lies and false Rumours  
 “ studied to seduce the People; and that among these, some Vicars  
 “ and Curates were the Chief: Who endeavoured to bring the People again into Darkeness; and they did so confusedly read the  
 “ Word of God and the King's Injunctions, that none could understand the true Meaning of them: They studied to wrest the King's  
 “ Intentions in them to a false Sense: For whereas the King had  
 “ ordered Registers to be kept for shewing Lineal Descents, and the  
 “ Rights of Inheritance; and to distinguish Legitimate Issue from  
 “ Bastardy; or whether a Person was born a Subject or not; they  
 “ went about saying that the King intended to make new Examinations of Christ'nings, Weddings, and Buryings, and to take away  
 “ the Liberties of the Kingdom: For preserving which, they pretended *Thomas Becket* died: Whereas his Opposition was only to  
 “ the punishing of the Offences of the Clergy, that they should not  
 “ be justified by the Courts and Laws of the Land, but only at the  
 “ Bishops Pleasure: And here the same Account is given of *Becket*,  
 “ that was in the former Proclamation. *Becket* contended with the  
 “ Archbishop of *York*, and pretended that when he was out of the  
 “ Realm, the King could not be Crowned by any other Bishop,  
 “ but that it must be stayed till he returned. These detestable Liberties were all that he stood for, and not for the Common-Wealth  
 “ of the Realm. To these Lies they added many other Seditious  
 “ Devices, by which the People were stirred up to Sedition and  
 “ Insurrection, to their utter Ruin and Destruction, if God had not  
 “ both enabled him by Force to subdue them, and afterwards move  
 “ him mercifully to pardon them. The King therefore required  
 “ them in their several Precincts, to find out such Vicars and Curates  
 “ as did not truly declare the Injunctions, and did confusedly mumble the Word of God, pretending that they were compelled to  
 “ read

A Circular  
Letter to the  
Justices of  
Peace.

Coll. Numb.  
63.



1539.

“ read them ; but telling their People to do as they did, and live  
 “ as their Fathers had done, for the Old Fashion was the best.  
 “ They were also required to search out all the Spreaders of Sedi-  
 “ tious Tales ; and to apprehend and keep then in Prison till the  
 “ Justices came about to try them ; or till the King’s Pleasure was  
 “ known : The Justices of the Peace are very earnestly pressed to  
 “ do their Duty diligently, and to take care likewise that the In-  
 “ junctions and Laws against the *Anabaptists* and *Sacramentaries*  
 “ be duly executed : Dated from *Hampton-Court* in *December* in the  
 30th Year of his Reign.

New Signifi-  
 cations put on  
 the Old Rites.

Among the Letters sent me from *Zurick*, I find one written to  
*Bullinger* on the 8th of *March* in the Year 1539, by *Butler*, *El-  
 liot*, *Partridge* and *Traberon*, who had studied for some time under  
 him, and were then entertained either by the King, or by *Crom-  
 well*. They write, “ That many of the Popish Ceremonies were  
 “ still tolerated ; but that New Significations were put on them :  
 “ Such as, That the *Holy Water* did put us in mind of the Blood  
 “ of Christ, that cleansed us from all Defilement : The *Pax* was  
 “ carried about, to represent our Reconciliation to God thro’ Christ.  
 “ Things that were visible, were thought fit to be preserved, to  
 “ prevent Commotions. This Correction quieted some : But tho’  
 “ these Rites were ordered to be kept up, till the King should think  
 “ fit to alter them, yet some preached freely against them, even  
 “ before the King.

Many Execu-  
 tions in Eng-  
 land.

“ They write of the Executions of the Marquis of *Exeter*, the  
 “ Lord *Montague*, and Sir *Edward Nevil*, who (they add) was a  
 “ very brave, but a very vicious Man. Sir *Nic. Cary*, who had  
 “ been before a Zealous Papist, when he came to suffer, exhorted  
 “ all People to read the Scriptures carefully. He acknowledged,  
 “ that the Judgments of God came justly upon him, for the Hatred  
 “ that he formerly bore to the Gospel. The King was threatned  
 “ with a War, in which the Emperor, the *French*, and the *Scots*  
 “ would attack him on all Hands ; but he seemed to despise it, and  
 “ said, He should not sleep the less quietly for all these Alarms.  
 “ The Day after these Tidings were brought him, he said to his  
 “ Counsellors, that he found himself moved in his Conscience, to  
 “ promote the Word of God more than ever. Other News came  
 “ at the same time, which might perhaps raise his Zeal, that Three  
 “ *English* Merchants were burnt in *Spain* ; and that an Indul-  
 “ gence was proclaimed to every Man, that should kill an *English*  
 “ Heretick. *Cranmer* was then very busy, in instructing the People,  
 “ and Preparing *English* Prayers, to be used instead of the *Litany*.  
 I can go no further on these Subjects ; but must refer to my History  
 for the Prosecution of these Matters.

Tom. XIV.  
 from p. 717,  
 to p. 736. and  
 from p. 748,  
 to p. 758.  
 The Project of  
 Endowing the  
 Church of  
 Canterbury.

The Foundation of the New Bishopricks was now settled. *Rymer*  
 has given us the Charters, by which they were founded and endow-  
 ed. The New Modelling of some Cathedrals, was next taken Care  
 of. I have found the Project that *Cromwell* sent to *Cranmer*, for the  
 Church of *Canterbury*. It was to consist of a Provost, 12 Preben-  
 daries, 6 Preachers, 3 Readers, one of Humanity and of *Greek*,  
 another of Divinity and of *Hebrew*, and another of Humanity and  
 Divi-

Divinity in *Latin*, a Reader of Civil Law, another of *Physick*; 20 Students in Divinity, 10 to be kept at *Oxford*, and as many at *Cambridge*: 60 Scholars were to be taught Grammar and Logick, with *Hebrew*, *Greek*, and *Latin*: For these, a Schoolmaster and an Usher were to have Salaries. Besides these, there were 8 Petty-Canons, 12 Singing-Men, 10 Choristers, a Master of the Children, a Gospeller, an Epistler, and 2 Sacristans: 2 Butlers, 2 Cooks, a Carterer, 2 Porters; 12 Poor Men, a Steward, and an Auditor: In all 162 Persons, with the Salaries for every one of these; together with an Allowance, for an Annual Distribution of 100*l.* for the Poor, and as much for Reparations; and 40*l.* for Mending the High-Ways: In all, amounting to about 1900 Pound a Year. This I have put in the Collection, together with the Letter that *Cranmer* wrote to *Cromwell*, after he had consider'd of it: Tho' perhaps this will sharpen some Men's Spirits, that are of late much set to decry him, as much as any of his other Opinions may have done: But a true Historian, that intends to glean all that he could find relating to those Transactions, must neither alter, nor suppress Things, but set them out as he finds them

1539.

Disapproved  
by *Cranmer*.  
Coll. Numb.  
64.  
Coll. Numb.  
65.

“ He proposes the Altering the Prebendaries to somewhat more  
“ useful: For, by all the Experience that he had, the Prebendaries  
“ had spent their Time in much Idleness, and their Substance in superfluous Living; so he thought it was not a State to be maintained. Commonly they were neither Learned, nor given to teach others; but only good Vianders: They look to be the Chief, and to bear the whole Rule; and by their ill Example, the younger Sort grew idle and corrupt. The State of Prebendaries hath been so excessively abused, that when Learned Men have been advanced to that Post, they desisted from their Studies, and from all Godly Exercises of Preaching and Teaching: Therefore, he wished, the very Name of a Prebendary might be struck out of the King's Foundations. The first Beginning of them was good, so was that of Religious Men; but both were gone off from their first Estate; so, since the one is put down, it were no great matter, if both should perish together. For, to say the Truth, it is an Estate which *St. Paul* did not find in the Church of Christ; and he thought, it would stand better with the Maintenance of the Christian Religion, that there were in their stead 20 Divines, at 10*l.* a-piece, and as many Students of the Tongues, and of *French*, at 10 Marks a-piece. And indeed, if there was not such a Number there resident, he did not see for what use there were so many Lectures to be read; for the Prebendaries could not attend, for the making of good Cheer; and the Children in Grammar, were to be otherwise employed. He, in particular, recommends Dr. *Crome* to be Dean.

But I leave this invidious Subject, to turn now to a very Melancholly Strain. The King had thrown off all Commerce with the *Lutherans* in *Germany*; and seemed not to think himself secure in the Emperor's Friendship: Yet he did not break with *France*; tho' on many Occasions he complained, both of the Ingratitude and Inconstancy of that King. The Dutchy of *Milan* seemed to be the

The Design of  
the Six Articles.



1539.

Object of all his Designs; and he was always turned, as the Prospect of that seemed to come in View, or to go out of Sight. All the King's Old Ministers still kept up his Zeal for his admired Book *Of the Sacraments*, most particularly for that Article of Transubstantiation; so that the Popish Party prevailed with him, to resolve on Setting up the Six Articles, which (they said) would quiet all Men's Minds; when they saw him maintain that, and the other Articles, with Learning and Zeal. It is certain, he had read a great deal, and heard and talk'd a great deal more of those Subjects; so that he seems to have made himself a Master of the whole Body of Divinity. I have seen many Chapters of the *Necessary Erudition of a Christian*, much altered by him, and in many Places so interlined with his Hand, that it is not without some difficulty that they can be read; for he wrote very ill.

Coll. Numb.  
66.

Upon the Carrying the Six Articles, the Popish Party were much exalted. This appears by the End of a Letter written to the Ambassadors abroad; which will be found in the Collection. It sets forth, "How the King had shewed himself in that Parliament so Wise, Learned, and Catholick, that no Prince ever did the like: so it was no more doubted, but the Act would pass. The Bishops of *Canterbury, Ely, Salisbury, Worcester, Rochester*, and *St. David's*, defended the contrary Side: Yet, in the End, the King confounded them. The Bishops of *York, Duresme, Winchester, London, Chichester, Norwich*, and *Carlisle*, shewed themselves Honest and Learned Men: He writes as one of the Peers, for he adds, we of the Temporalty have been all of one Opinion. The Lord Chancellor, and the Lord Privy Seal had been of their side. *Cranmer*, and all the Bishops came over, only he adds that *Shaxton* continued a lewd Fool: For this Victory, he writes that all *England* had reason to bless God.

The King  
marries *Anne*  
of *Cleve*.

Vol. II. Coll.  
Rec. Book 2.  
N. 29. p. 303.  
Commission to  
*Cromwell*, to  
Constitute  
some under  
him.

*Cromwell*, though he complied with the King's Humour, yet he studied to gain upon him, and to fix him in an Alliance, that should certainly separate him from the Emperor, and engage him again into a closer Correspondence with *France*, on design to support the Princes of *Germany* against the Emperor, whose uneasiness under the Laws and Liberties of the Empire began to be suspected: And all the Popish Party depended wholly on him. I did in my Second Volume publish a Commission to *Cromwell*, thinking it was that which constituted him the King's Vicegerent, which I upon reading the Beginning of it, took to be so, but that was one of the Effects of the haste in which I wrote that Work: It does indeed in the Preamble set forth, "That the King was then in some sort to exercise that Supreme Authority he had over the Church of *England*, under Christ; since they who pretended that that Authority ought to be lodged with them, did pursue their own private Gains, more than the Publick Good; and had brought Matters, by the Negligence of their Officers, and their own ill Example, to such a State, that it might be feared, that Christ would not now own his own Spouse. Therefore, since the Supreme Authority over all Persons, without any Difference, was given him from Heaven, he

" was

1539.

“ was bound (as much as he could) to cleanse the Church from all  
 “ Briars, and to sow the Seeds of Virtue in it. Those who before  
 “ exercised this Authority, thinking themselves above all Censure,  
 “ had (by their own bad Examples) laid Stumbling-blocks before  
 “ the People. He therefore, designing a General Reformation of his  
 “ Kingdom and Church, resolved to begin with the Fountains; for  
 “ they being cleansed, the Streams would run clear: But since he  
 “ could not be personally present every where, he had deputed *Tho-*  
 “ *mas Cromwell*, his Principal Secretary and Master of the Rolls, to  
 “ be in all Ecclesiastical Causes his Vicegerent and Vicar-General;  
 “ with a Power to name others, to be authorized under the Great  
 “ Seal. But he being so employed in the Publick Affairs of the  
 “ Kingdom, that he could not personally discharge that Trust;  
 “ therefore he deputed *A, B, C, D*, to execute that Trust. The  
 “ King being pleased with this Deputation, did likewise empower  
 “ them to Visit all Churches, both Metropolitane, Cathedral, and  
 “ Collegiate Churches, Hospitals and Monasteries, and all other  
 “ Places, exempt or not exempt, to correct and punish what was  
 “ amiss in them, by Censures of Suspension and Deprivation, to  
 “ give them Statutes and Injunctions in the King’s Name, and to hold  
 “ Synods, Chapters or Convocations, summoning all Persons con-  
 “ cerned to appear before them, and presiding in them, giving them  
 “ such Rules as they shall judge convenient: Calling such Causes as  
 “ they shall think fit from the Ecclesiastical Courts, to be judged by  
 “ them; and to force Obedience, both by Ecclesiastical Censures,  
 “ and Fines, and other Temporal Punishments: With several other  
 “ Clauses, of a very extended and comprehensive Nature. How far  
 this was put in Practice, does not fully appear to me. It certainly  
 struck so deep into the whole Ecclesiastical Constitution, that it  
 could not be easily borne. But the Clergy had lost their Reputation  
 and Credit; so that every Invasion that was made on them, and  
 on their Courts, seemed to be at this Time acceptable to the Nation;  
 one Extreme very naturally producing another: For all did acqui-  
 esce tamely, in Submitting to a Power that was now in High Ex-  
 altation, and that treated those that stood in its way, not only with  
 the utmost Indignation, but with the most rigorous Severity.

But to return to *Cromwell*. He, in Concurrence with the Court of  
*France*, carried Matters so, that the Marriage with *Anne of Cleve* was  
 made up: This occasioned one of the most Injustifiable Steps in all that  
 Reign. Among the Papers that were sent me from *Zurick*, there is a  
 long and particular Account of many Passages in this Matter, with some  
 other Important Transactions of this Year, writ by one *Richard Hille*,  
 who writes very sensibly, and very piously; and he being zealous  
 for a further Reformation, went out of *England* as a Man concerned  
 in Trade, which he pursued only as a just Excuse to get out of the  
 way: But before he went over, he wrote a long Account to *Bullin-*  
*ger* of the Affairs in *England*: He tells him, “ That before *Whit-*  
 “ *sunday* Three Persons were burned in *Southwark*, because they  
 “ had not received the Sacrament at *Easter*, and had denied Transub-  
 “ stantiation. There was after that one *Collins*, a crazed Man, like-  
 “ wise burned, all by *Gardiner*’s Procurement. A little before *Mid-*  
*summer*

He is in Love  
 with *Katherine*  
*Howard*.



1539. *summer* it began to be whispered about, that the King intended a Divorce with *Anne*, who had been married to him above Five Months. It was observed that the King was much taken with a Young Person, a Niece of the Duke of *Norfolk's*, (whom he afterwards married) *Gardiner* took Care to bring them together to his Palace, where they dined once, and had some Meetings and Entertainments there. This went on some Time before there was any Talk of the Divorce: It was indeed believed that there was an ill Commerce between them. *Cromwell's* *Cromwell* was newly made Earl of *Essex*: *Bourchier*, in whom that Fall. Line was extinct, who had been a severe Prosecutor, falling from his Horse, and breaking his Neck, died without being able to speak one Word. The King gave *Cromwell*, not only his Title, but all that fell to the Crown, by his dying without Heirs: Yet he enjoyed not this long; for in the beginning of *June* he was sent to the *Tower*: He did not know the secret Cause of his Fall; it was generally believed it was because he did not flatter the King enough; and that he was against the Divorce, as thinking it would neither be for the King's Honour, nor the Good of the Kingdom. Some suspected that his late Advancement, and great Grants, the King had given him, was an Artifice to make People conclude, when they saw him disgraced, after such high Favour, that certainly some very black Thing was discovered: And it was also thought, that the King restored to his Son, (who was so weak, that he was thought almost a Fool,) much of his Father's Estate and Goods, (as he made him a Baron in *December*, after his Father's Death) on design to make the Father more silent, for fear of provoking the King to take from him what he had then given him. Here I stop the prosecuting the Rest of the Letter, till I have added somewhat more concerning *Cromwell*.

He had many Offices in his Person; for besides that he was Lord Vicegerent in Ecclesiastical Matters, and Lord Privy Seal, he was Lord Chamberlain, and Chancellor of the Exchequer. *Rymer* has published the Grants that the King made of those Offices, in which it is said, that they were void upon his Attainder; but which was more, he was the Chief Minister, and had the King's Confidence for Ten Years together, almost as entirely as Cardinal *Wolsey* had it formerly. *Mount* had been sent to *Germany* to press a closer League Defensive against the Pope, and any Council that he might summon: When the Princes did object the Act of the Six Articles, and the Severities upon it: He confessed to one of the Electors Ministers, that the King was not sincere in the Point of Religion: He had therefore proposed a double Marriage of the King with *Anne* of *Cleve*, and of the Duke of *Cleve* with the Lady *Mary*: For he said, the King was much governed by his Wives. The Elector of *Saxony*, who had married the other Sister of *Cleve*, had conceived so bad an Opinion of the King, that he expressed no heartiness, neither in the Marriage, nor in any Alliance with *England*: But he yielded to the Importunities of others, who thought the Prospect of the Advantage from such an Alliance was great.

There are great Remains that shew how exact a Minister *Cromwell* was; there are laid together many Remembrances of Things, that he

*Rymer.*  
T. 14.

A New Treatise with the German Princesses.

Cott. Libr.  
Titus B. 1.

he was to lay before the King: They are too short, to give any Light into Affairs; yet I will mention some of them. In one, he mentions the Abbots of *Glassenbury* and *Reading*, who were then Prisoners, and were examined. The Witnesses, with the Council, were ordered to be sent to *Berkshire* and *Somersetshire*. Mention is made of their Complices, who were to be tried, and to suffer with them. To this I must add, that in one of the *Zurick* Letters, it is written to *Bullinger*, that Three of the Richest Abbots in *England*, had suffered, for a Conspiracy into which they had entered, for Restoring the Pope's Authority in *England*.

1539.  
Some of  
*Cromwell's*  
Memoranda.

The Learned Dr. *Tanner* has sent me the Copy of a Letter, that Three Visitors wrote to *Cromwell* from *Glassenbury*, concerning that Abbot, on the 22d of *September*; but they do not add the Year. It will be found in the Collection, signed by *Richard Pollard*, *Thomas Moyle*, and *Richard Layton*. “ They give him an Account of their  
“ Examining the Abbot upon certain Articles. He did not seem to  
“ answer them clearly; so they desired him, to call to his Memory  
“ the Things which he then seemed to have forgot. They searched  
“ his Study, and found in it a written Book against the King's Di-  
“ vorce. They found also Pardons, Copies of Bulls, and a print-  
“ ed Life of *Thomas Becket*; but found no Letter that was mate-  
“ rial. They examined him a Second Time upon the Articles that  
“ *Cromwell* had given them; and sent up his Answer, signed by  
“ him, to Court: In which they write, That his Cankered and  
“ Traiterous Heart, against the King and his Succession, did appear;  
“ so, with very fair Words, they sent him to the *Tower*. They  
“ found he was but a weak Man, and sickly. Having sent him  
“ away, they examined the State of that Monastery: They found  
“ in it above 300 *l.* in Cash; but had not the Certainty of the rest  
“ of their Plate; only they found a fair Gold Chalice, with other  
“ Plate, hid by the Abbot, that had not been seen by the former  
“ Visitors; of which, they think, the Abbot intended to have made  
“ his own Advantage. They write, That the House was the No-  
“ blest they had ever seen of that Sort: They thought it fit for  
“ the King, and for none else. This I set down the more particu-  
larly, to demonstrate the Falsity of the extravagant Account that *Sanders* gives of that Matter, as if it had been, without Notice given, that the Abbot was seized on, tried and executed, all of a sudden. But to return to *Cromwell*.

Coll. Numb.  
67.

In another Note, he mentions the Determinations made by *Day*, *Heath*, and *Thirleby*, of the Ten Commandments, of Justification, and of Purgatory. Another is about *Fisher* and *More*. The Judges Opinion was asked, concerning *More* and the Nun. Another is, Whether the Bishop of *Rockester*, and the Monk, who wrote the Letter as from Heaven, should be sent for? In another, that *Bocking* printed the Nun's Book, and took away 500 Copies, but left 200 with the Printer. In another, He proposed to send *Barnes* for *Melanchthon*. In another, He asks, who shall be Prolocutor in the Convocation. In another, He proposes the making Lady *Mary* a Considerable Match for some Foreign Prince, the Duke of *Orleans*, or some other. This is all that I could gather, out of a vast Num-



1539.

ber of those Notes, which he took of Matters, to move the King in.

The Matters at  
first charged  
on him, from  
which he  
clears himself.

Coll. Numb.  
68.

Upon *Cromwell's* Imprisonment, the Comptroller was sent to him, and he order'd him to write to the King, what he thought meet to be written concerning his present Condition: and, it seems, with some Intimations of Hope. Upon that, *Cromwell* wrote a long Letter to the King, which will be found in the Collection. "He begins it with great Thanks to the King, for what the Comptroller had said to him. He was accused of Treason; but he protests, he never once thought to do that which should displease him, much less to commit so High an Offence. The King knew his Accusers: He prayed God to forgive them. He had ever loved the King, and all his Proceedings: He prays God to confound him, if he had ever a Thought to the contrary. He had laboured much, to make the King a Great and a Happy Prince; and acknowledges his great Obligations to the King. So he writes, that if he had been capable to be a Traitor, the greatest Punishment was too little for him. He never spoke with the Chancellor of the Augmentations (*Baker*) and *Throckmorton* together, but once: But he is sure, he never spoke of any such Matter," (as, it seems, was informed against him.) "The King knew what a Man *Throckmorton* was, with Relation to all his Proceedings: And what an Enemy *Baker* was to him, God and he knew: The King knew, what he had been towards him. It seems the King had advertised him of them; but God, who had delivered *Susan* when falsely accused, could deliver him. He trusted only in God, and in the King. In all his Service, he had only consider'd the King; but did not know that he had done Injustice to any Person: Yet he had not done his Duty in all Things; therefore he asked Mercy. If he had heard of Conventicles, or other Offences, he had for the most part revealed them, and made them to be punished, but not out of Malice. He had meddled in so many Things, that he could not answer them all; but of this he was sure, that he had never willingly offended: and wherein he had offended, he humbly begged Pardon. The Comptroller told him, that Fourteen Days ago the King had committed a great Secret to him, which he had revealed: He remembered well the Matter, but he had never revealed it. For, after the King had told him what it was that he misliked in the Queen; he told the King, that She often desired to speak with him, but he durst not: Yet the King bad him go to her, and be plain with her, in declaring his Mind: Upon which, he spake privately with her Lord Chamberlain, desiring him, not Naming the King, to deal with the Queen to behave herself more pleasantly towards the King; hoping thereby to have had some Faults amended. And when some of her Council came to him, for Licence to the Stranger Maids to depart; he did then require them, to advise the Queen, to use all Pleasantness with the King. Both these Words were spoken, before the King had trusted the Secret to him, on design that She might render herself more agreeable to the King: But after the

" King

“ King had trusted that Secret to him, (which it seems was his Design to have the Marriage dissolved) he never spoke of it, but to the Lord Admiral; and that was by the King’s Order on *Sunday* last; who was very willing to seek Remedy for the King’s Comfort: He protests he was ready to die to procure the King Comfort: He wishes he were in Hell if it was not true. This was all he had done, (it seems the King thought the Change in the Queen’s Deportment towards him, was the Effect of his discovering the Secret of the King’s Purpose, and in order to prevent it) but for this he humbly begs Pardon: He understood that it was charged upon him, that he had more Retainers about him than the Laws allowed: He never retained any, except his Household Servants, but against his Will: He had been pressed by many, who said they were his Friends, he had retained their Children and Friends, not as Retainers, for their Fathers and Friends promised to maintain them: In this, God knows, he had no ill Intent, but begs Pardon if he had offended, (for that was represented as the gathering a Force about him to defend himself.) He concludes he had not behaved himself towards God and the King, as he ought to have done: And as he was continually calling on God for Mercy, for Offences committed against him, so he begs the King’s Pardon for his Offences against him, which were never wilful; and he assures him he had never a Thought of Treason against him, either in Word or Deed: And he continued to pray for him and the Prince, ending, indeed, with too abject a Meanness.

1539.

These were all the Particulars that were charged on him upon his First Imprisonment: Other Matters were afterwards added to throw the more load on him; but it seems they were not so much as thought on or mentioned at first: But now I return to the Letter writ to *Zurick*. *Hill* adds, that they heard they once designed to burn *Cromwell* as a *Heretick*, and that these Considerations made him confess that he had offended the King. What he said that way at his Execution, was pronounced coldly by him; upon that the Writer runs out very copiously, and acknowledges that their Sins had provoked God to bring upon them that great Change that they saw in Affairs: They had wholly trusted to the Learning of some, and to the Conduct of others: but God by the taking these away, was calling on them to turn sincerely to him, to trust entirely in him, and to repent with their whole Heart. There was at that Time a great want of Sincere Labourers, so that from *East* to *West*, and from *South* to *North*, there was scarce one Faithful and Sincere Preacher of the Gospel to be found.

Reflections on  
the State of  
Affairs at that  
Time

The Act of dissolving the King’s Marriage, did set forth that some Doubts were raised concerning the King’s Marriage, which as he writes, was manifestly false, for no Body thought of any Doubtfulness in it: Nor did they pray, as is in the Act, that it might be enquired into: For no Body spoke of it till the King was resolved to part with the Queen, that he might be married to Mrs. *Hward*, whom in his bad *Latin* he calls, *Parvissima Puella*, A very little Girl. The Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and the rest of the Bishops, judged she was yet a Virgin, which nonethat knew the Man could believe. Here again I must leave my Letter

Of the King’s  
Divorce from  
*Anne of Cleve*.

There



1539.

What passed  
in Convo-  
cation.

There had been no Convocation for Two Years, for *the Institution of a Christian Man*, was prepared by a Commission, given to some Bishops of both Provinces, and to some Arch-Deacons, but no Deans were summoned with them : A Convocation sate in both Provinces in *May*, in the Year 1539, to which Abbots and Priors were summoned ; but though there were eight Abbots, and Nine Priors, in *Exeter* Diocese, yet the Return from thence says, there were none in the Diocese. I do not know how to reconcile that, with the Abbot of *Tavestocke's* sitting in the House of Lords, as appears by the Journals of that Parliament.

Paper-Office.

Upon this Occasion there was a particular Summons for both Provinces, to meet in a National Synod, to judge of the King's Marriage. When I wrote of this in my History, I did not at all reflect on the Doctrine of the Church of *Rome*, that makes Marriage a Sacrament, in which the Two Parties are the Ministers, who transfer their Persons to one another : And according to the Doctrine of the Necessity of the Intention in him that Ministers the Sacrament, how vile soever this Decision in the Matter of the King's Marriage may seem to be, yet it was a just Consequence from that Doctrine : For without a true, free, and inward Intention, which the King affirmed he had not, the Marriage could be no Sacrament : So that the heaviest Part of the Shame of that Decision falls indeed on that Doctrine. When the News came to *France* of the King's dissolving his Marriage with *Anne of Cleve*, King *Francis* himself asked the Ambassadors upon what Grounds it went : The Cardinal of *Ferrara* did also send one to ask what was alledged for it by Divines and Lawyers. *Wallop* and others were then the Ambassadors from *England* at that Court : They sent to the Council an Account of this ; and *Wallop* wrote over to know what he should say upon the Subject. The Answer which the Council wrote to him was, that the Queen herself affirmed, her Person had not been touched by King *Henry*. That a Learned Convocation had judged the Matter : That the Bishops of *Duresme*, *Winchester*, and *Bath*, were known to be great and learned Clerks, who would do nothing but upon just and good Grounds : So that all Persons ought to be satisfied with these Proceedings, as she herself was ; and here this Matter ended, to the great Reproach of that Body, that went so hastily, and so unanimously into that Scandalous Decision.

Exceptions in  
the Act of  
Grace.

But to return to my *Zurich* Letter ; after he had related the Manner of that Judgment of those called Spiritual, who indeed were very Carnal : He mentions the Exceptions in the Act of Pardon, for besides particular Exceptions, all *Anabaptists* and *Sacramentaries* were excepted, and all those that affirmed, there was a Fate upon Men, by which the Day of their Death was unalterably determined.

A Design a-  
gainst *Crome*.

There was at this Time a great Design against Dr. *Crome*, whom *Cranmer* had recommended to be Dean of *Canterbury*, in these Words :  
 “ I know no Man more meet for the Dean's Room in *England*,  
 “ than Dr. *Crome*, who by his Sincere Learning, Godly Conversa-  
 “ tion, and Good Example of Living, with his Great Soberness,  
 “ hath done unto the King's Majesty as good Service, I dare say,  
 “ as

“ as any Priest in *England*: And yet his Grace daily remembreth  
 “ all others that doth him Service, this Man only excepted, who 1539.  
 “ never had yet besides his Gracious Favour, any Promotion at his  
 “ Hands. Wherefore if it please his Majesty to put him in the  
 “ Dean’s room, I do not doubt but that he should be a Light to all  
 “ the Deans and Ministers of Colleges in this Realm: For I know  
 “ that when he was but a President of a College in *Cambridge*, his  
 “ House was better ordered than all the Houses in *Cambridge* besides.  
 Certainly this Good Opinion that *Cranmer* had of him, made him, in  
 the State in which Things were at this Time, to be the worse thought  
 of, and the more watched: So when he heard that he was to be search-  
 ed for, he went to the King, and on his Knees begg’d he would put  
 a stop to the Severities then on Foot, and that he would set many  
 then in Prison on the Account of Religion, at Liberty: The King  
 had such a Regard for him, that upon this, he ordered a stop to be  
 put to further Prosecutions: And he set those at Liberty who were  
 then in Prison, they giving Bail to appear when they should be called  
 for. The King seemed to think that by this small Favour, after some  
 Severities, People would be more Quiet, and more Obedient. But  
 after the Parliament was dissolved, Six Persons suffered. Three of  
 these were Popish Priests, who suffered as Traytors, for denying the  
 King’s Supremacy: And *Barnes*, *Gerrard*, and *Jerom*, were the other  
 Three. They were tied to one Stake and suffered without crying  
 out, but were Quiet and Patient, as if they had felt no Pain. He  
 could never hear any Reason given for this their Suffering, unless it  
 was to please the Clergy: They were not condemned by any Form  
 of Law. They had been so cautious, ever since the Act of the Six  
 Articles passed, that they had not opened their Mouths, in Opposi-  
 tion to them in Publick: And by the Act all Offences done before  
 it had passed, were pardoned. *Barnes* himself said at the Place of  
 Execution, that he did not know for what Cause he was brought  
 thither to be burnt; for they were attainted by Act of Parliament,  
 without being brought to make their Answers.

The Bishop of *Chichester*, *Sampson*, though a Man compliant in  
 all Things, and Dr. *Wilson*, were exempted out of the General  
 Pardon, for no other Crime, as he heard, but that *Abel* who suffered  
 for denying the King’s Supremacy, being in the greatest Extremity  
 of Want and Misery in Prison, where it was said he was almost eat  
 up by Vermin, they had sent him some Alms: From this *Hill* goes  
 on to give an Account of *Crome*, whose constant way had been, when  
 he saw a Storm rising, to preach with more Zeal than Ordinary a-  
 gainst the prevailing Corruption: So on *Christmas-Day* his Enemies  
 that were watching to find Matter to accuse him, fram’d some Ar-  
 ticles, which they carried to the King against him: He had condemn-  
 ed in his Sermon all Masses for the Dead; and said, “ if they were  
 “ profitable to the Dead, the King and Parliament had done wrong  
 “ in destroying the Monasteries endowed for that End: He also  
 “ said, that to pray to the Saints, only to pray for us, was a  
 “ Practice neither necessary, nor useful: He added, you call us  
 “ the Seditious Preachers of a New Doctrine, but ’tis you are the  
 “ Seditious Persons, who maintain the Superstitious Traditions of



1539.

“ Men, and will not hear the Word of God himself. The Church  
 “ of Christ will ever suffer Persecution as it has done of late  
 “ among us.

These and some other Complaints being carried to the King, *Crome* was commanded to answer them : He in his Answer explained, and justified all he had said. The King had no Mind to carry Matters further against so Eminent a Man ; so he passed a Sentence, in which he set forth, that *Crome* had confessed the Articles objected to him ; but the King out of his Clemency, intending to quiet his People, appointed *Crome* to preach at Saint *Paul's*, and there to repeat all the Articles objected to him, and then to read the Judgment that the King gave in the Matter : And it concluded, that if ever he fell into the like Offence again, he was to suffer according to Law : The King's Judgment was, “ That private Masses were Sacrifices, profitable both to the Living and to the Dead, but yet “ that the King's Majesty with his Parliament had justly abolished “ Monasteries : Upon this *Crome* preached, and at the End of his Sermon, he told the People he had received an Order from the King to be read to them ; which he read, but said not one Word upon it ; and with a short Prayer dismissed the Congregation : Whereas the King expected that he should have applauded his Judgment, and extolled his Favour to himself, as Dr. *Barnes* and his Two Companions were unhappily prevailed on to do, and yet were burned afterwards. *Hill* was therefore afraid that *Crome* might be brought into further Trouble. There was an Order sent to him from the King to preach no more, as he had before forbidden both *Latimer* and *Shaxton* to preach any more. They were not excluded from the General Pardon ; but were still prohibited to preach : And when they were set at Liberty, they were required not to come within Ten Miles of either of the Universities, or the City of *London*, or the Dioceses in which they had been Bishops. Thus, says he, Faithful Shepherds were driven from their Flocks, and Ravenous Wolves were sent in their stead : He concludes, hoping that God would not suffer them to be long oppressed by such Tyranny. Thus I have given a very particular Account of that long Letter writ with much good Sense and Piety, but in very bad *Latin*, therefore I do not put it into the Collection.

*Sampson*, though he fell into this Disgrace for an Act of Christian Piety, yet hitherto had shewed a very entire Compliance with all that had been done : He had published an Explanation on the first 50 Psalms, which he dedicated to the King : In which as he extolled his Proceedings, so he run out into a severe Invective against the Bishop of *Rome*, and the Usurpations and Corruptions favoured by that See, and he reflected severely on *Pole*. *Pole's* Old Friend *Tonstall* did also in a Sermon at Saint *Paul's* on *Palm-Sunday* in his grave way set forth his unnatural Ingratitude. But now the Popish Party upon *Cromwell's* Fall, and the Exaltation of the Duke of *Norfolk* by the King's Marrying his Niece, broke out into their usual Violence ; and they were as we may reasonably believe, set on to it by *Boner*, who upon *Stokefly's* Death a Year before, had been brought to *London*, and immediately upon *Cromwell's* Disgrace changed sides ; and from having

acted a forced Part with Heat enough, now came to act that which was natural to him.

1539.

Prosecutions  
upon the six  
Articles.

There were so many Informations brought in the City of *London*, that a Jury sitting in *Mercers-Chapel*, presented 500 Persons to be tried upon the Statute of the Six Articles; which, as may be easily imagined, put the City under great Apprehensions: But *Audley*, the Lord Chancellor, represented to the King, that this was done out of Malice: so they were all dismiss'd, some say, pardon'd. Informations came against Papists, on the other side: A Letter was sent from the Council to *Cranmer*, to send Dr. *Benger* to the *Tower*. Two of *Boner's* Chaplains were, by Order of Council, sent to the Archbishop, to be examined by him. A Vicar was brought out of *Wiltshire*, out of whose Offices *Thomas Becket's* Name was not yet rased: but he was dismiss'd; for it was believ'd to be the Effect only of Negligence, and not of any ill Principles. There was a Letter of *Melanchthon's*, against the King's Proceedings, printed in *English*; (perhaps it was that, which I published in the *Addenda* to my First Volume.) *Goodrick* Bishop of *Ely's* Chaplain and Servant were examined, and his House was searched for it. Many were brought into Trouble for Words, concerning the King and his Proceedings. Poor *Marbeck*, of *Windſor*, was imprisoned in the *Marshalsea*. Many Printers were prosecuted, for bringing *English* Books into the Kingdom, against the King's Proceedings. In one Council-Day, (for all these Particulars are taken out of the Council-Books) Five and Twenty Booksellers were examined, as to all Books, more particularly *English* Books, that they had sold these last Three Years. *Hains*, the Dean of *Exeter*, was oft before the Council; but Particulars are not mentioned. Articles were brought against him, and they were referred to the King's Learned Council. The Bishops of *Ely*, *Sarum*, *Rockeſter* and *Wefminſter*, were appointed to examine him, and to proceed with all Diligence. He was also sent to the *Fleet*, for *Lewd and Seditious Preaching*, (the Words in the Council-Book) and sowing many Erroneous Opinions; but, after a good Lesson and Exhortation, with a Declaration of the King's Mercy and Goodness towards him, he was dismissed, under a Recognisance of 500 Marks, to appear (if called for) any time within Five Months, to answer to such Things as should be laid against him.

On the 4th of *May* 1542, an Entry is made, *Cranmer* being present; that it was thought good, if the King's Highness shall be so content, that a General Commission shall be sent to *Kent*, with certain Special Articles; and generally, that all Abuses and Enormities of Religion, were to be examined. This was laid, on design to ruin *Cranmer*; but there is no other Entry made in the Council-Book, relating to this Matter; unless this was a Consequence of it, that on the 27th of *June*, *Hards* of *Canterbury*, a Prisoner for a Seditious Libel, was, after a good Exhortation, dismiss'd. And this is all the Light, that the only Council-Book of that Reign, for Two Years, affords as to those Matters. Mr. *Strype* has helped us to more Light.

While



1539.  
Ch. 25. Mem.  
*Cranmer.*  
A Conspiracy  
against *Cran-*  
*mer.*

While *Cranmer* was Visiting his Diocese, there were many Presentments made of a very different Nature. Some were presented, for adhering still to the Old Superstitions condemned by the King, and for Insinuations in Favour of the Pope's Authority. Others, again, were, on the other Hand, presented for Doctrines, either contrary to the Six Articles, or to the Rites still practised. This created a great Confusion thro' that whole Countrey; and the Blame of all was cast on *Cranmer*, by his Enemies; as if he favour'd and encourag'd that, which was called the *New Learning*, too much.

A Plot was contrived, chiefly by *Gardiner's* Means, with the Assistance of *Dr. London*, and of *Thornden*, (Suffragan of *Dever*, and Prebendary of *Canterbury*) who had lived in *Cranmer's* House, and had all his Preferment by his Favour. Several others engaged in it, who had all been raised by him, and had pretended Zeal for the Gospel; but, upon *Cromwell's* Fall, they reckoned, that if they could send *Cranmer* after him, they would effectually crush all Designs of a further Reformation.

They resolved to begin with some of the Prebendaries and Preachers. Many Articles were gathered out of their Sermons and private Discourses, all terminating in the Archbishop; who, as was said, shewed so partial a Favour to the Men of the *New Learning*, and dealt so harshly and severely with the others, that he was represented to be the Principal Cause of all the Heat and Divisions, that were in *Canterbury*, and in the other Parts of *Kent*. These Articles went through many Hands; but it was not easy to prevail with a proper Person to present them. The Steps made in the Matter, are copiously set forth by *Mr. Strype*. At last they came into the King's Hands: And he, upon that, passing by *Lambeth*, where the Archbishop stood, in respect to him, as he passed by, called him into his Barge; and told him, he had now discover'd who was the greatest Heretick in *Kent*. With that, he shewed him the Articles against himself, and his Chaplains. The Archbishop knew the Falshood of many Particulars; so he prayed the King, to send a Commission to examine the Matter. The King said, he would give him a Commission, but to none else. He answered, it would not seem decent, to appoint him to examine Articles exhibited against himself. The King said, he knew his Integrity, and would trust it to no other Person: Nor would he name above one, (tho' pressed to it) that should be joined in Commission with him: And he even then seemed persuaded, it was a Contrivance of *Gardiner's* to ruin him.

His great  
Mildness.

The Archbishop went down himself into *Kent*; and then the Conspirators seeing the King's Favour to him, were struck with Fear. Some of them wept, and begged Pardon, and were put in Prison: But the rest of the Commission, in whose Hands the Archbishop left the Matter, being secretly Favourers of that Party, proceeded faintly: So it was writ to Court, that unless *Dr. Legh* were sent down, who was well practised in Examinations, the Conspiracy would never be found out: He was, upon that, sent down; and he ordered a Search to be made at one and the same Time, of all suspected Places; and so he discover'd the whole Train. Some of the Archbishop's

shop's Domesticks, *Thornden* in particular, were among the Chief of the Informers. He charged them with it. They, on their Knees, confessed their Faults, with many Tears. He, who was gentle even to Excess, said, he did forgive them, and prayed God to forgive them, and to make them better Men. After that, he was never observed to change his Countenance, or alter his Behaviour towards them. He expressed the like readiness to pardon all the rest: Many were imprisoned upon these Examinations, but the Parliament granting a Subsidy, a general Pardon set them all at Liberty; which otherwise the Archbishop was resolved to have procured to them. This Relation differs in several Particulars from the Account that I gave of it, in my History: But this seems to be the exacter and the better vouched, and therefore I acquiesce in it. Another Instance is given by the same Writer of the King's Zeal for *Cranmer*. Sir *John Gostwick*, Knight for *Bedfordshire*, did in the House of Commons charge him for preaching Heresy, against the Sacrament of the Altar, both at *Feverham* and *Canterbury*: The King hearing of this, did, in his rough way, threaten *Gostwick*, calling him *Varlet*, and charged him to go and ask *Cranmer* Pardon, otherwise he should feel the Effects of his Displeasure. The King said if he had been a *Kentish-Man*, he might have had some more Shadow for accusing him; but being of *Bedfordshire*, he could have none. *Gostwick*, terrified with this Message, made his Submission to *Cranmer*, who mildly forgave him, and went to the King and moved him for his Favour; which he did not obtain without some Difficulty.

It appears plainly, that the King acted as if he had a mind to be thought infallible; and that his Subjects were bound to believe as much as he thought fit to open to them, and neither more nor less. He went on this Year before he took his Progress, in finishing *the necessary Doctrine and Erudition of any Christian Man*: A great Part of it was corrected by his own Hand, particularly in that Article of the Creed, *the Catholick Church*, where there are several Reflections added on the Bishops of *Rome*. Here I found likewise some more of the Answers made to the 17 Queries upon the Matter of the Sacraments that I published in my First Volume. I set them out again in my Collection; that by these the Reader may better understand the Two following Papers, that I print separately; and not intermixed with one another, as I did before, which I thought to be an Ease to the Reader: But since that was made a great Offence, I will do it no more. One of these is only an Answer to the Queries; the Writer of the first is not named, it is probably *Tonstall's*; he is plainly of the same Side with the Archbishop of *York*. It will be found in the Collection, as also another Paper, with several Marginal Notes in the King's Hand, by which it appears that the King was much shaken from his former Notions: He asked for Scripture in several Particulars that could not easily be brought. On the Margin *Cranmer* and *Barlow* are often named, but I do not understand with what View it was that they and no other (except *Cox* once) are named. Over against the 15th Article their Names are set down in this Order, *York, Duresme, Carlisle, Corren, Simon, Oglethorp, Edgworth, Day, Redman, Robinson, Winchester*; and a little below, *Canterbury, Hereford, Rochester, Davys*,

1539.

*Cott. Libr.*  
*Cleop. E. 5.*  
Some Steps  
made in set-  
ting out True  
Religion.

*Coll. Numb.*  
32.  
1. Vol. Reforo

*Coll. Numb.*  
69.

*Coll. Numb.*  
70.  
*Coll. Numb.*  
71.



1539.

(I suppose St. David's) *Westminster, Layton, Tresham, Cox, Crayford*; these are writ in a Hand that I do not know, but not in the same Hand. It seems those Lists were made with relation to the different Parties in which they stood. The Book thus carefully examined was finished and published.

*Katherine  
Howard's  
Disgrace.*

*Coll. Numb.  
72.*

*Paper Office.*

*Secken Lib. 3.  
p. 78.  
A Negotia-  
tion with the  
German Prin-  
ces.*

The King went in Progress with his Queen, who began to have a great Influence on him, and on what Reason I do not know, she withdrew from her Uncle, and became his Enemy: But before the King's Return, her ill Life came to be discovered, which ended fatally to her. It is scarce worth the Reader's while to say any more of a Matter that is so universally acknowledged; but having found an original Account subscribed by her self, of one of her Examinations, I have put it in the Collection. It appears there was a particular View in the Archbishop of *Canterbury's* Examining her, to draw from her all the Discoveries they could make to fasten a Precontract with *Dereham* on her. Many trifling Stories relating to that being suggested, she was examined to them all: but tho' she confesses a lewd Commerce with *Dereham*, she positively denied every thing that could infer a Precontract; nor did she confess any thing of that Sort after the King married her: which she still denied very positively, even to the last. On the 15th of *December* Letters were written to the King's Ambassadors abroad, that contain a severe Account of the lewd and naughty Behaviour and Lightness of her lately reputed for *Queen*, (I give the Words of the Letter) at which the King was much troubled.

Upon her Disgrace there was a new Negotiation proposed with the Protestant Princes of *Germany*. *Mount* was again sent over to excuse, as well as he could, the Divorce with *Anne of Cleve*. He said she was treated nobly and kindly in all Respects by the King: He renewed the Proposition for a League, with relation to their Common Interests: But they still stood upon this, that they could enter into no Alliance with him, unless they agreed in Religion, insisting particularly on Private Masses, the denying the Chalice, and the Celibate of the Clergy: Upon which a Conference was proposed in *Gelderland*, or at *Hambourg* or *Breme*. The King in answer to this wrote, that he would carefully examine all that they laid before him: He expressed great Regard to the Elector, but complained that some of his Learned Men had written virulently against him, and misrepresented his Proceedings. *Cranmer* likewise wrote to the Elector, and set forth the great Things the King had already done in Abolishing the Pope's Authority, the Monastick State, and the Idolatrous Worship of Images: He desired they would not be uneasy, tho' the King in some things differed still from them, He was very Learned himself, and had Learned Men about him: He was quick of Apprehension, had a sound Judgment, and was firm in what he once resolved on: and he hoped the Propositions they had sent over would be well considered.

Lord *William Howard*, the late Queen's Uncle, was then Ambassador in *France*: He tells in one of his Letters, that the Admiral was restored to Favour, chiefly by the Means of Madam *D'Estampes*, whose Credit with that King is well known. There were Repors that the Emperor and the *French* King were in a Treaty, and that in

Conclusion,



Conclusion, they would join to make War on the King: This was charged on the *French*, but solemnly disowned by that King. It appears the Proposition for Marrying the Lady *Mary* to the Duke of *Orleans*, was then begun: Great Exceptions were taken to her being declared a Bastard: But it was promised, that when all other things were agreed to, she should be declared Legitimate. Upon Queen *Katherine Howard's* Disgrace, Lord *William* was recalled, and *Paget* was sent over in his Room.

1542.

There is in the Paper-Office an Original Letter of *Paget's* to the King, that gives an Account of his Conversation with the Admiral, who was then in High Favour, *Montmorency* being in Disgrace. It is very long, but contains so many Important Passages, that I have put it in the Collection, and shall here give an Abstract of it. It is dated from *Chablais* the 22d of *April*, in the Year 1542.

Coll. Numb.  
73.

“ He gave the Admiral an Account of his Instructions, and of  
 “ what both the King and his Council had ordered him to say: He  
 “ perceived the Admiral sighed and crossed himself often: And said  
 “ in his Answer to him, that he saw the King of *France* resolved  
 “ to enter into some Confederacy; he desired it might be with the  
 “ King, and would think of no other Prince till the King refused  
 “ him: He thought both the Kings were by their Interests obliged  
 “ to stick to one another, though the Marriage had never been spoke  
 “ of: It is true, that would fix and strengthen it. But he thought  
 “ 200000 Crowns was a very mean Offer, for such a King's Daugh-  
 “ ter, to such a Prince; 4 or 500000 Crowns was nothing to the  
 “ King. The Duke of *Orleans* was a Prince of great Courage, and  
 “ did aspire to Great Things. So mean an Offer would quite dis-  
 “ courage them. The Daughter of *Portugal* was offered with 400000  
 “ Ducats, together with the Interest of it since her Father's Death,  
 “ which was almost as much more. At the First Motion of the  
 “ Matter, it was answered, the Man must desire the Woman: Now  
 “ he does desire her, and you offer nothing; with this he sighed.  
 “ *Paget* answered, and fully set out the Personal Love that he knew  
 “ his Master had for the *French* King: That none of the Occasions  
 “ of Suspicion that had been given, could alienate him from it:  
 “ And he reckoned up many of these: He acknowledged there was  
 “ great hopes of the Duke of *Orleans*, but he studied to shew that  
 “ the Offer was not unreasonable, all Things considered. *Lewis*  
 “ the 12th had but 300000 Crowns with the King's Sister, and the  
 “ King of *Scots* had with the other but 100000 Crowns: But he said  
 “ besides the 200000 Crowns which he offered to give, they will  
 “ also forgive 800000 Crowns that *France* owed the King, and  
 “ Discharge the 100000 Crowns Yearly Pension. To this the Ad-  
 “ miral replied, he counted the Forgiving the 800000 Crowns for  
 “ nothing: And for the Annual Pension they would be at as much  
 “ Charge to maintain her, and her Court. *Paget* said the 800000  
 “ Crowns was a just Debt, lent in an Extreme Necessity; and be-  
 “ cause it had been long owing, and often respited, must that pass  
 “ for nothing. So he bad him ask reasonably, or offer what was  
 “ proper Reciprocally for it. The Admiral said the King was Rich,  
 “ and what was 800000 Crowns to him, which they were not able

Paget's Nego-  
tiation with  
the Court of  
*France*.

“ to



1542.

“ to pay. So the Admiral, said he, wished the Thing had never been  
 “ spoke of: He fell next to turn the Motion to the Lady *Elizabeth*,  
 “ and he proposed a League Offensive and Defensive against the Em-  
 “ peror: and that whatever should be got from the Emperor, should  
 “ be the King’s, in Lieu of the Pension during Life. He knew the  
 “ Emperor was practising with the King, as he was at the same Time  
 “ with them. *Boner* was then sent Ambassador to *Spain*, and had car-  
 “ ried over from the King to the Emperor Three Horses of Value.  
 “ The Emperor might say what he will in the way of Practice: But  
 “ he knew he would never unite with the King, except he would re-  
 “ turn to the Pope: For so the Nuncio told the Chancellor, and the  
 “ Chancellor told it to the Queen of *Navarre*, who fell out with  
 “ him upon that Occasion. She told him he was ill enough before;  
 “ but now, since he had *the Mark of the Beast*, (for he was lately  
 “ made a Priest) he grew worse and worse: The Emperor’s Design  
 “ was only to divide them. He offered to them that the Duke of  
 “ *Orleans* should be King of *Naples*, and to give *Flanders* to the  
 “ Crown of *France*: But in Lieu of that, he asked the Renunciation  
 “ of *Milan* and *Navarre*, and the restoring of *Piedmont* and *Savoy*:  
 “ But by this the Father and Son being so far separate, the Empe-  
 “ ror would soon drive the Duke of *Orleans* out of *Naples*. He was  
 “ also studying to gain the Duke of *Cleve*, and to restore him *Guelder*  
 “ quietly, provided that he and his Wife would renounce *Navarre*:  
 “ But he concluded that they knew the Emperor did nothing but  
 “ Practise: They knew he offered to the King to reconcile him to  
 “ the Pope, without any Breach of his Honour, for it should be at  
 “ the Pope’s Suit. *Paget* said he knew nothing of all that, but be-  
 “ lieved it would be hard to reconcile him to the Bishop of *Rome*,  
 “ for Vertue and Vice cannot stand together in one Predicament.  
 “ Call ye him *Vice*, said the Admiral, he is the very *Devil*, and I  
 “ trust to see his Confusion: Every Thing must have a Time, and  
 “ a Beginning. But when begin you, said *Paget*? The Admiral  
 “ answered, before it be long; the King will give all the Abbies to  
 “ his Lay-Gentlemen, and so by little and little overthrow him alto-  
 “ ther: Why may not we have a Patriarch in *France*? This the  
 “ Pope’s Legate began to perceive, and though they talked of a  
 “ General Council, he believed the Pope would as soon be hanged  
 “ as call one. *Paget* said he would be glad to see them once begin  
 “ to do somewhat. Ah, said the Admiral, I’m ill matched: He  
 “ wished the entire Union of the Two Kings, and if an Interview  
 “ might be between them, it would be the happiest Thing could  
 “ befall *Christendom*: But he believed some of the King’s Council  
 “ leaned too much to the Emperor, and proposed several Advan-  
 “ tages from it. He said the Emperor cared not if Father, Friend,  
 “ and the World should sink, so his Insatiable Desires might be  
 “ satisfied. He suffered Two of his Brothers-in-Law to perish for  
 “ want of 50000 Crowns: First the King of *Hungary*, and then  
 “ the King of *Denmark*; whom he might have restored, if he would  
 “ have given him 10000 Crowns. He was then low enough,  
 “ and they would do well to fall on him, now that he was so low,  
 “ before he took Breath: So he pressed *Paget* to put Matters on  
 “ heartily

“ heartily with the King : He thought it an unreasonable Thing for  
 “ the Emperor and his Brother to ask Aid against the *Turk*, to de-  
 “ fend their own Dominions, when they kept the King’s Domini-  
 “ ons from him. *Paget* gave the King an Account of all this Conver-  
 “ sation very particularly, with an humble Submission to him, if in  
 “ any Thing he had gone too far. The Court of *France* believed  
 “ the Emperor was treating with the King, for the Marriage of the  
 “ Lady *Mary* : And that for that End *Bouer* was sent to *Spain* ;  
 “ who was looked on as a Man thoroughly Imperial. After *Paget*  
 “ had ended his Letter, written on the 19th of *April*, he adds a  
 “ long Postscript on the 22d, for the Admiral had entered into far-  
 “ ther Discourse with him the next Day. He told him how sorry  
 “ he was to see all his Hopes blasted : He could not Sleep all Night  
 “ for it. They had Letters from their Ambassadors in *England*, and  
 “ were amazed to find that a King who was so Rich, stood for so  
 “ small a Matter. The Pope had offered the Duke of *Guise*’s Son  
 “ 200000 Crowns with his Niece : He said he was much troubled  
 “ at all this : All that were about the King his Master, were not of  
 “ one Mind ; and he had been reproached for beginning this Matter.  
 “ They knew the Falshood, and the Lies of the Pope and the Em-  
 “ peror well enough : He wished they would consider well what the  
 “ Effects of an entire Friendship with the King of *France* might be :  
 “ The *French* could do no more than they could do : Within Two  
 “ Years they would owe the King 100000 Crowns, besides the  
 “ 100000 Crowns during the King’s Life, and 50000 Crowns for-  
 “ ever after that : But he said in those Treaties many Things ought  
 “ to be done for their own Defence : At this he was called away  
 “ by the King, but came afterwards to *Paget* : He said it was not  
 “ 100000, nor 200000 Crowns could enrich the one, nor im-  
 “ poverish the other King : So he added, we ask your Daughter,  
 “ and you shall have our Son ; but desired that they might carry  
 “ the Matter further into a League, to make War on the Emperor,  
 “ Defensive, for all their Territories.

“ He proposed that the King should send 10000 Foot and 2000  
 “ Horse into *Flanders*, and to pay 5000 *Germans* ; and the *French*  
 “ King should furnish the same Number of Foot and of *Germans*,  
 “ and 3000 Horse, and an equal Number of Ships on both sides ;  
 “ and the King of *France* should in some other Places fall into the  
 “ Emperor’s Dominions, at an Expence of 200000 Crowns a Month.  
 “ What a Thing, said he, would it be to the King to have *Gravelin*,  
 “ *Dunkirk*, and all those Quarters joining to *Calais*? *Paget* answered,  
 “ they might spend all their Money, and catch nothing : And he  
 “ did not see what ground of Quarrel his Master had with the Em-  
 “ peror. Upon which the Admiral replied, Does not he owe you  
 “ Money ? Hath not he broken his Leagues with you in many Par-  
 “ ticulars ? Did not he provoke us to join with the Pope and him,  
 “ to drive your Master out of his Kingdom ? And hath he not now  
 “ put the Pope on offering a Council to sit at *Mantua*, *Verona*, *Cam-*  
 “ *bray*, or *Mets*, (this last Place was lately named) all on Design  
 “ to ruin you ? A Pestilence take him, said he, false Dissembler that  
 “ he is ! If he had you at such an Advantage, as you now have him,  
 VOL. III. S f “ you



1542. “ you should feel it : And he run out largely, both against the Bishop of *Rome*, and the Emperor : He desired the War might begin that Year, the Emperor being so low, that for all his Millions, he had not a Penny.

*Papier-Office.* On all this the Admiral seemed wonderfully set ; *Paget* excused himself from entering further into these Matters, and desired that they might be proposed to the King by the *French* Ambassador then at *London* ; yet being pressed by the Admiral, he promised to lay all before the King, and he did it very fully, but with many Excuses, and much Submission. The King's Council writ a short Answer to this long Letter : They expressed their Confidence in the Admiral, with great Acknowledgments for his Affection to the King ; but they seemed to suspect the King of *France*, that all his Professions were only to get Money from the King. 200000 Crowns seemed nothing when they were willing to forgive him a Million : But by this Letter it seems the *French* Ambassadors did still insist on 600000 Crowns to be paid down : So this Matter was let fall ; but to say all that relates to the Duke of *Orleans* at once.

The Duke of *Orleans* promised to declare himself a Protestant.

Mr. *Le Vassor* has published Instructions, of which a collated Copy was found among Cardinal *Granvill's* Papers. It is a Question that cannot be answered how he came by it ; whether the Original was taken with the Landgrave of *Hesse*, or by what other way, is not certain : It bears Date at *Rhemes* the 8th of *September* 1543. “ It expresses the great Desire that he had, that the Holy Gospel “ might be preached in the whole Kingdom of *France* : But the Respect that he owed to the King his Father, and to the Dauphin “ his Brother, made that he did not order it to be preached freely “ in his Dutchy of *Orleans* ; that being under their Obedience. But “ he sent to the Duke of *Saxony*, to the Landgrave of *Hesse*, and “ the other Protestant Princes, to assure them that he was resolved, “ and promised it expressly to them, that he would order that the “ Gospel should be preached in the Dutchy of *Luxemburgh*, and in all “ other Places that should belong to him by the Right of War : He desired to be received into their Alliance, and to a League Offensive “ and Defensive with them. He desired earnestly that they would grant “ this Request, not to be aided by them against any Prince, but only on “ the Account of the Christian Religion, of which he desired the Increase above all Things ; that by these Means Light may be spread into “ other Dominions, and into the Kingdom of *France*, when the King “ his Father should see him so allied to those Princes, which will be the “ Cause of making him declare the Good Zeal he has to that Matter ; “ and will be able always to excuse it to him, and to defend it “ against all his Enemies : He desires therefore, that as soon as he “ shall give order that the Gospel shall be preached in the Dutchy “ of *Luxemburgh*, this League and Alliance may begin : He hopes “ this will not be delayed, from the Opinion that they may have “ that he cannot quickly shew what Power he has to support the “ Love he bears to this Cause ; he hopes in a little Time to shew, “ if it pleases God, some good Effect of it : and he offers at present, “ not only all his own Force, but the whole Force of the King “ his Father, who has given him Authority to employ it in every “ Thing

“ Thing that he shall judge to be good for them, and in every Thing  
“ that may concern their Welfare, their Profit and Freedom.

1543.

It is impossible to read this, and to doubt either of his being sincerely a Protestant, or at least that he was willing to profess it openly: And it can as little be doubted, that in this he had his Father's Leave, to do what he did. The Retaking of *Luxemburgh* put an End to this Proposition: But, it seems, the Emperor apprehended, that the Heat of this young Prince might grow uneasy to him; therefore he took all Methods to satisfy his Ambition. For, on the 18th of *December* 1544, the Ambassadors at the Emperor's Court writ over, That he was Treating a Match between his own Eldest Daughter, and the Duke of *Orleans*; and that he offered to give with her the Ancient Inheritance of the House of *Burgundy*, the Two *Burgundies*, and the *Netherlands*: Or if he would Marry his Brother *Ferdinand's* Second Daughter, to give the Dutchy of *Milan* with her. They also mention in *April* thereafter, that he came to the Emperor, and stayed some Days with him at *Antwerp*, and then went back. On this they all concluded that the Treaty was like to go on, but do not mention which of the Two Ladies he liked best; for there could be no Comparison made between what was offered with them. But all the Negotiation, and all the Hopes of that Prince vanished on the 11th of *September* 1545; for *Karl* the King's Ambassador in *Flanders*, writ over, that on that Day he died of the Plague.

Practices on  
him end with  
his Life.

I come next to put together all that I find in the Minutes of Convocation, during this Reign. The *Necessary Erudition* was never brought in Convocation: But it was treated by some Bishops and Divines, of both Provinces, and published by the King's Authority. It seems, when the Doctrine was thus settled, there was a Design to carry on the Reformation further. There was a Convocation held in *January* 1541; in the Second Session of which, the Archbishop deliver'd them a Message from the King, That it was his Pleasure, that they should Consult concerning the Reforming our Errors. And he deliver'd some Books to them, to be examined by them: It does not appear, what Sort of Books, or Errors, those were; whether of Papists, Sacramentaries, or of Anabaptists; for of this last Sort, some had crept into *England*. The Business of *Munster* had made that Name so odious, that Three Years before this, in *October* 1538, there was a Commission sent to *Cranmer*, *Stokesly*, *Sampson*, and some others, to enquire after Anabaptists, to proceed against them, to restore the Penitent, to burn their Books, and to deliver the Obstinate to the Secular Arm: But I have not seen what Proceedings there were upon this.

Proceedings in  
Convocation.

In *October* 1545, there was an Order of Council published, to take away Shrines and Images: Several Commissions were granted for Executing this; in some, they add *Bones* to *Images*. The Archbishop did likewise move the Convocation, in the King's Name, to make Laws against Simony, and to prepare a Book of Homilies, and also a New Translation of the Bible: For, it seems, Complaints were made of the Translation then printed, and set up in Churches. The several Books of the Bible were parcelled out, and assigned to several Bishops to translate them. This came to nothing, during

A new Tran-  
slation of the  
Bible design'd.

this



1543.

Memor. of  
Cranmer.  
Strype, Ch. 8.

this Reign; but this same Method was followed in Queen *Elizabeth's* Time. In the 5th Session, the Persons were named for this Translation. *Cranmer* had, some few Years before this, parcelled out an Old Translation of the New Testament, to several Bishops and Divines, to be revised and corrected by them: But it was then much opposed. The *Acts of the Apostles* was assigned to *Stokefly*; but he sent in no Return upon it, so the Archbishop sent to him for it. His Answer was fullen: "He wonder'd what the Archbishop meant, thus to abuse the People, by giving them Liberty to Read the Scripture, which did nothing but infect them with Heresy. He had not looked on his Portion; and never would: So he sent back the Book, saying, He would never be guilty of bringing the Simple People into Error. Notwithstanding this, *Cranmer* had published a more Correct New Testament in *English*; which is referred to in the Injunctions that were formerly mentioned; but now he designed a New Translation of the whole Bible. In the 6th Session, which was on the 17th of *February*, a Statute against Simony was treated of: There was also some Discourse about the Translating the Lord's-Prayer, the Creed, and the Ten Commandments, in the Vulgar Tongue: And it was consider'd, how some Words in them ought to be translated; but what these were, is not mentioned: Only, it seems, there was a Design to find Faults in every Thing that *Cranmer* had done.

On the 24th of *February* several Matters were treated of; that in particular is named, That none should let Leafes beyond the Term of 21 Years. They treated about many of the Rituals, and of *Thomas Becket*, and of the Adorning of Images, and about Reforming some scandalous Comedies. On the 3d of *March*, the Archbishop told them from the King, that it was his Pleasure, that the Translation of the Bible should be revised by the Two Universities. But all the Bishops except *Ely* and *St. David's* protested against this; and, it seems, they insisted much upon Trifles: For they treated of this, Whether, in the Translation of the Bible, *the Lord*, or *our Lord*, should be the Constant Form. On the same Day, the Lord Chancellor exhibited to them an Act, allowing, that the Bishops Chancellors might Marry. To this the Bishops dissented. Some other Matters were proposed; but all was referred to the King. Upon the Convocation's being assembled on the 16th of *February* 1542, some Homilies were offered on different Subjects, but nothing is marked concerning them. The Archbishop also told them, that the King would have the Books of the several Offices, used in Churches, to be examined and corrected: In particular, that both at Matins and Vespers, one Chapter of the New Testament should be read in every Parish. Some Petitions were offered by the Clergy: The First was, for Making a Body of the Ecclesiastical Laws. Of this we hear no more in this Reign: But we are assured, that there was a digested Body of them prepared; probably it was very near the same, that was also prepared in King *Edward's* Time. *Cranmer*, in a Letter that he wrote to the King out of *Kent*, on the 24th of *January* 1545-6, which I did put in my 2d Volume, tells him, "That, according to his Commands, he had sent for the Bishop of *Worcester*, (*Heath*,) to let him know, that

" the

“ the King’s Pleasure was, to have the Names of such Persons sent  
 “ him, as he had formerly appointed to make Ecclesiastical Laws  
 “ for the Realm. The Bishop promised, with all Speed, to enquire  
 out their Names, and the Book which they made, and to bring both  
 the Names and the Book to the King ; which, he writes, he had  
 done before that Time. By this it appears, that Persons had been  
 named for that ; and that a Commission was granted, pursuant to  
 which the Work had been prepared : For Things of this Kind were  
 never neglected by *Cranmer*. It seems, it had been done some Years  
 before, so that it was almost forgotten ; but now, in one of King  
*Henry’s* Lucid Intervals it was prepared, as Mr. *Strype* has publish’d :  
 But how it came to pass, that no further Progress was made during  
 this Reign, in so Important and so Necessary a Work, is not easily to  
 be accounted for ; since it must have contributed much to the Exal-  
 tation of the King’s Supremacy, to have all the Ecclesiastical Courts  
 governed by a Code authorized by him. In the Convocation, in the  
 Year 1543, we have only this short Word, That on the 29th of  
*April*, the Archbishop treated of the Sacraments, and on the next  
 Day, on the Article of Free Will. This is all that I could gather  
 from the Copy of the Minutes of the Convocations ; which was  
 communicated to me by my most Learned and Worthy Brother, the  
 Lord Bishop of *Lincoln*, who assured me, it was collated exactly  
 with the only Ancient Copy that remains, to give us Light into the  
 Proceedings in the Convocations of those Times.

1544.

A Reformati-  
 on of the Ec-  
 cles. Laws was  
 far advanced.

It does not appear to me, what moved *Bell*, Bishop of *Worcester*,  
 to resign his Bishoprick. *Rymer* has printed his Resignation ; in  
 which, it is said, that he did it simply, of his own accord. He li-  
 ved till the Year 1556, as his Tomb-stone in *Clerkenwell* Church in-  
 forms us. Whether he inclined to a further Reformation, and so  
 withdrew at this Time ; or whether the Old Leaven yet remaining  
 with him, made it uneasy for him to comply, does not appear : If his  
 Motives had been of the former Sort, it may be supposed, he would  
 have been thought of in King *Edward’s* Time : and if of the latter,  
 then in Queen *Mary’s* Reign he might again have appeared ; so I must  
 leave it in the dark, what his true Motive was.

*Bell* Bishop of  
*Worcester* re-  
 signed his Bi-  
 shoprick.  
*Rymer* To. 15.

*Audley*, who had been Lord Chancellor from the Time that Sir  
*Thomas More* left that Post, fell sick in the Year 1544, and sent the  
 Great Seal to the King, by Sir *Edward North* and Sir *Thomas Bland*.  
 The King delivered it to the Lord *Wriothesley*, and made him Lord-  
 Keeper during the Lord *Audley’s* Infirmary, with Authority to do  
 every Thing that the Lord Chancellor might do ; and the Duke of  
*Norfolk* tendred him the Oaths. It seems, there was such a Regard  
 had to the Lord *Audley*, that, as long as he lived, the Title of Lord  
 Chancellor was not given with the Seals ; but, upon his Death,  
*Wriothesley* was made Lord Chancellor. This seems to be the First  
 Instance of a Lord Keeper, with the full Authority of a Lord Chan-  
 cellor.

*Audley* Lord  
 Chancellor  
 died.

*Rymer* ibid.

I have not now before me such a Thread of Matters, as to carry  
 me regularly thro’ the remaining Years of this Reign ; and therefore,  
 hereafter I only give such Passages as I have gathered, without Knit-  
 ting them together in an Exact Series. The Breach between Eng-  
 land

Practices on  
 some Lords of  
*Scotland*.



1544.

Rymer.

land and France was driven on by the Emperor's Means, and promoted by all the Popish Party: So the King, to prevent all Mischief from Scotland, during this War with France, entered into an Agreement with the Earls of *Lenox* and *Glencairne*, and the Elect Bishop of *Caitbnes*, Brother to the Earl of *Lenox*, in May 1544. The Articles are published. They promised, "That they should cause the Word of God to be truly taught in their Countries. 2dly, They should continue the King's Faithful Friends. 3dly, They should take care, that the Queen be not secretly carried away. 4thly, They should assist the King, to Seize on some Castles on the Borders. And they delivered the Elect Bishop of *Caitbnes* to the King, as an Hostage, for their Observing these Things. On the other Hand, the King engaged to send Armies to Scotland, both by Sea and Land; and to make the Earl of *Lenox*, (written in this, *Levinax*) as soon as he could, Governor of Scotland: And that he should bestow his Niece, Lady *Margaret Dowglas*, on him. There was a fuller Agreement made with them, with more Particulars in it, on the 26th of June; and a Pension of 250*l.* was assigned to the Earl of *Glencairn*, and 125 to his Son, both during Life. Those in the Castle of *St. Andrews*, were also taken into the King's Protection: And they promised to promote the Marriage, and the King's Interests; and to deliver up the Castle, when demanded. There were also private Agreements made with *Norman Lesley*, *Kircaldy* of the *Grange*, and some others, all to be found in *Rymer*.

Tom. 15.  
Seck 1 3. p 121.  
Mount sent to  
Germany.

The often-cited *Seckendorf* tells us, that at this Time they in Germany began to have greater Hopes of the King than ever. *Mount* was again sent to offer an Alliance with them: He excused all the late Proceedings. He said, *Cromwell* had rashly said, "That he hoped to see the Time, that he should strike a Dagger into the Heart of him, that should oppose the Reformation; which his Judges thought was meant of the King. He said, *Barnes* had indiscreetly provoked the Bishop of *Winchester*: He also blamed their Ambassadors, for entering into Disputes in Writing with the King. He believed, *Melanchthon* and *Bucer* would have managed that Matter with more Success. *Bucer* seconded *Mount*'s Motions, and magnified what the King had already done; tho' there was no compleat Reformation yet effected.

This did not move the Elector: He looked on the King, as an Enemy to their Doctrine. His whole Design in what he had done, was, to make himself the *Head of the Church*, to which he was not called of God. His Government was Tyrannical, and his Life flagitious; so he looked for no good from him. The King of France moved him to undertake a Mediation between him and the King; but the Elector referred that to a General Meeting of those who were engaged in the Common *Smalcaldick* League. The Princes in Germany having their Chief Dependence on the Kings of France and England, saw how much they were weakned, and exposed to the Emperor, by the War which was going on between those two Kings; so they sent some empowered by them, to try if it was possible to prevent the War, and to mediate a Reconciliation between them. To these, when they delivered their Message to the King, he complained

plained of the Injustice and Wilfulness of the *French King*: He thought their Interposition could have no Effect, and he used these Words in Answer to their Memorial, *We give them well to understand, that we do both repose an ampler and fuller Confidence in them, than the French King either doth or will do.* 1544.

*De Bellay*, who being oft employed, understood those Matters well, tells us, that the Emperor and King *Henry* had agreed to join their Armies, and to march directly into *France*: He tells in another Place, that if King *Henry* had followed the Opinion of his Council, which was for his landing in *Normandy* with 30000 Men, he would have carried that whole Dutchy: And he ascribes his Error in that Matter to the Providence of God, that protected *France* from so great a Danger: The Emperor had proposed to the King, that upon the Junction of their Two Armies, they should march strait to *Paris*: For they reckoned that both their Armies would have amounted to Ninety Thousand Foot, and Twenty Thousand Horse: But after the Emperor had drawn the King into his Measures, he went on taking some Towns, pursuing his own Ends, and then made his own Peace with *France*, and left the King engaged in the War: So the King finding the Emperor's Main Army was not like to join him, some Bodies out of the *Netherlands* only coming to act in Conjunction with him, upon that he sent the Duke of *Norfolk* to besiege *Montrevel*, and he himself sat down before *Bulloigne*. Marshall *Bies*, Governor of *Bulloigne*, apprehending the Importance of *Montrevel*, carried a considerable Part of the Garrison of *Bulloigne* with him, and threw himself into *Montrevel*: By this Means he left *Bulloigne* weak, and in ill Hands. In the mean time the Emperor took *Luxemburgh*, and some other Places; so all the Project with which he had amused the King vanished, and a Peace was struck up between him and the King of *France*. P. 1094. P. 1115. A War with France. *Bulloigne taken.*

The *French* sent an Army to raise the Siege of *Montrevel*; and they were moving so as to get between the Duke of *Norfolk*, and the King's Army: Upon which the Duke of *Norfolk* raised the Siege, but *Bulloigne* was taken; and that small Conquest was out of measure magnified by those who saw their own Advantage in flattering their Master, tho' at a vast Charge he had gained a Place, scarce worth keeping.

The Emperor had that Address, and he had so strong a Party about the King, that even all this was excused, and the Intercourse between the two Courts was not discontinued.

In one Point the Emperor was necessary to the King, and he kept his Word to him. It is certain the King had great Apprehensions of the Council that was now sitting at *Trent*, and the more because *Pole* was one of the Legates sent to preside in it; who, as he had Reason to apprehend, would study to engage the Council to confirm the Pope's Censure thundred out against the King; and it was believed he was named Legate for that End. The King of *France* had offered to *Gardiner*, that if the King would join with him, he would suffer no Council to meet, but as the King should Consent to it. But his fluctuating Temper was so well known, that the King trusted in this particular more to the Emperor, whose Interest in that Council he

The King is forsaken by the Emperor.



1544.

he knew must be great: And the Emperor had promised that the Council should not at all intermeddle in the Matter between the Pope and the King: The Effect shewed he was true in this Particular.

*Paper-Office.*

The King finding himself so disappointed, and indeed abandoned by the Emperor, sent the Earl of *Hartford* with *Gardiner* to him, to expostulate with him. A Letter of the King's was sent by them to the Emperor, written in a very severe Strain, charging him with *Perfidy*. The Emperor either had the *Gout*, or pretended to have it, so that he could not be spoke with: His Chief Ministers at that Time, who were *Grandville*, and his Son the Bishop of *Arras*, delayed them from Day to Day, and discovered much *Chicane*, as they wrote; upon which they grew so uneasy, that at last they demanded a Positive Answer; and then these Ministers told them, that the Emperor could not carry on the War longer against *France*: But he offered to mediate a Peace between *England* and *France*. After that they complain that they saw the Pretence of Mediation was managed deceitfully; for the Emperor's Design upon *Germany* being now ready, he apprehended those Two Kings, if not engaged in War one with another, would support the Princes of the Empire, and not suffer the Emperor, under the Pretence of a Religious War, to make himself Master of *Germany*. Therefore he studied to keep up the War between *France* and *England*. I find *Maurice* of *Saxony* was this Year, during the Emperor's War with *France*, in his Court: Whether he was then Mediating, or Treating, about his Perfidious abandoning the Elector, and the other Princes of the *Smalcaldick* League, I know not.

A Litany set  
out in *English*  
with other  
Devotions.

Before the King went out of *England*, a great Step was made towards the Reforming the Publick Offices. A Form of Procession in the *English* Tongue was set out by the King's Authority, and a Mandate was sent to *Boner* to publish it. The Title of it was, *An Exhortation to Prayer, thought meet by his Majesty and his Clergy, to be read to the People: Also a Litany, with Suffrages to be said, or sung, in the Time of the Processions*. In the Litany they did still Invoke the Blessed Virgin, the Angels and Arch-Angels, and all Holy Orders of Blessed Spirits, all Holy Patriarchs and Prophets, Apostles, Martyrs, Confessors, and Virgins, and all the Blessed Company of Heaven to Pray for them: After the Word *Conspiracy*, this is added, *from the Tyranny of the Bishop of Rome, and all his detestable Enormities*: The rest of the Litany is the same that we still use, only some more Collects are put at the End, and the Whole is called a *Prayer of Procession*. To this are added some Exercises of Devotion, called *Psalms*; which are collected out of several Parts of Scripture, but chiefly the *Psalms*: They are well collected, and the whole Composition, as there is nothing that approaches to Popery in it, so it is a serious and well digested Course of Devotion. There follows a Paraphrase on the Lord's Prayer: On the 4th Petition there are Expressions that seem to come near a true Sense of the Presence of Christ in the Sacrament; for by *Daily Bread* as some of the Antients thought, the Sacrament of the *Eucharist* is understood, which is thus expressed: *The lively Bread of the Blessed Body of our Saviour Jesus Christ, and the sacred Cup of the Precious*  
and

and Blessed Blood which was shed for us on the Cross. This agrees with our present Sense that Christ is present, not as he is now in Heaven, but as he was on the Cross: And that being a Thing passed, he can only be present in a *Type* and a *Memorial*. The Preface is an Exhortation to Prayer, in which these Remarkable Words will be found: "It is very convenient and much acceptable to God, that you should use your private Prayer in your Mother Tongue; that you, understanding what you ask of God, may more earnestly and fervently desire the same; your Hearts and Minds agreeing to your Mouth and Words. This is indeed all over of a Pious and Noble Strain, and except the Invocation of the Saints and Angels, it is an unexceptionable Composition. At the same Time *Katherine Parre*, whom the King had lately married, collected some Prayers and Meditations, "wherein the Mind is stirred patiently to suffer all Affliction here, to set at nought the vain Prosperity of this World, and always to long for the Everlasting Felicity. Which were printed in the Year 1545.

But so apt was the King, whether from some Old and Inherent Opinions that still stuck with him, or from the Practices of those who knew how to flatter him suitably to his Notions, to go backward and forward in Matters of Religion; that though on the 15th of *October* 1545, he ordered a Mandate to be sent to *Boner*, to publish the *English Procession* ordained by him, which was executed the Day following; yet on the 24th of that Month, there was a Letter written to *Cranmer*, declaring the King's Pleasure for the setting up an Image, that had been taken down by his Injunctions; ordering him at the same Time to abolish the Use of Holy Water, about Saint *John's*-Tide, and to take down an Image called our *Lady of Pity in the Pew*, for the Idolatry that was committed about it. At this Time it was discovered that great Indulgencies, with all such like Favours were sent from *Rome* to *Ireland*; so that generally in that Kingdom, the King's Supremacy was rejected, and yet at the same Time it appears that many were put in Prison for denying the Presence in the Sacrament: And a Proclamation was set out, both against *Tindall's* New Testament, and *Coverdale's*

*Thirleby*, Bishop of *Westminster*, was sent Ambassador to the Emperor, and afterwards Secretary *Petre* was sent to the same Court. *Mount* continued likewise to be employed, but without a Character: He seems to have been both Honest and Zealous; and in many Letters writ both in the Year 1545 and 1546, he warned the King of the Emperor's Designs to extirpate *Lutheranism*, and to force the whole Empire to submit to the Pope and the Council, then sitting at *Trent*. The *German* Princes sent over a Vehement Application to the King, to consider the Case of *Herman* Bishop of *Colen*, praying him to protect him, and to intercede for him. They gave a great Character of the Man, of which *Mount* makes mention in his Letters, but I do not find that the King interposed in that Matter. The Emperor seemed to enter into great Confidence with *Thirleby*, and either imposed on him, or found him easily wrought on. He told him that the King of *France* was making great Levies in *Switzerland*, and he was well assured that they were not designed against himself:

The King neglects the German Princes.



1546. *Paper-Office.* So he warned the King to be on his Guard. This being enquired into, was not only denied by the Court of *France*, but was found to be false, and was looked on as an Artifice of the Emperor's, to keep up a Jealousy between those Two Courts. By such Practices he prevailed on *Thirleby* to assure the King, that the Emperor did not design to enslave *Germany*, but only to repress the Insolence of some Princes, and to give Justice a free Course: All the News he wrote from thence did run in this strain: So that *Germany* was fatally abandoned by both Kings. Yet still the King sent over to the Emperor repeated Complaints of the ill Treatment his Subjects met with in *Spain*, from Inquisitors; and that in many Courts, Justice was refused to be done them, upon this Pretence, that the King and all who adhered to him, were declared Hereticks, and as such, they were Excommunicated by the Pope, and so were not to be admitted to sue in Judicatories: These were sent over to *Thirleby*, but I do not see what was done upon all those Representations.

The Elector of Saxony's ill Opinion of the King.

Ferdinand discontented with the Emperor.

The last Message the King sent to the *Germans*, was in the Year 1546 by *Mount*, with whom one *Butler* was joined: The *German* Princes, in General Terms, prayed the King to insist on rejecting the Council of *Trent*, assuring him that the Pope would suffer no Reformation to be made. This Letter was agreed to by the Greater Number of the Princes of the Union, only the Elector of *Saxony* had conceived great Prejudices against the King: "He said he was an  
" Impious Man, with whom he desired to have no Commerce. He  
" was no better than the Pope; whose Yoke he had thrown off on-  
" ly for his own Ends: And that he intended out of the Two Reli-  
" gions to make a Third, only for Enriching himself; having con-  
" demned the principal Points of their Doctrine in his Parliament.

I find at this Time a secret Disgust the Emperor was in towards his Brother *Ferdinand*; upon which, *Ferdinand* sent a Message to the King, setting forth the just Claim he had to his Father's Succession in *Spain*; since, by the Agreement of the Marriage between *Ferdinand* of *Arragon*, and *Isabel* of *Castile*, a Special Provision was made, that whensoever there was a Second Son issuing from that Marriage, the Kingdom of *Arragon*, and all that belonged to it, should be again separated from *Castile*. He also pretended, that he ought to have had a larger Share in the Succession of the House of *Burgundy*; and that instead of those rich Provinces, he was forced to accept of *Austria*, and the Provinces about it, which lay exposed to the *Turks*, and were loaded with great Debts, contracted by his Grandfather *Maximilian*. To this the King sent an Answer secretly, and ordered the Person (who he was, does not appear; but I think it was *Mount*) that carried it, to insist on the Discourse of his Pretensions to the *Netherlands*, which were then vastly Rich. He was particularly required to observe *Ferdinand's* Behaviour, and all that he said on that Subject: And it seems, that our Court being then in a good Understanding with the Court of *France*, communicated the Matter to *Francis*: For he wrote, soon after that, a Letter to *Ferdinand*, encouraging him to stand on his Claim, and promising him his Assistance to Support his Pretensions on the Emperor. But *Ferdinand*, not being inclined to trust the Court of *France* with this Se-

cret,

cret, sent the Letter to the Emperor: So I see no more of that Matter. 1546.

The last Transaction of Importance in this Reign, was the Fall of the Duke of *Norfolk*, and of the Earl of *Surrey*, his Son. I find in the Council-Book, in the Year 1543, that the Earl was accused for Eating Flesh in *Lent*, without Licence; and for Walking about the Streets in the Night, throwing Stones against Windows, for which he was sent to the *Fleet*. In another Letter, he is complained of for Riotous Living. Towards the End of the Year 1546, both he and his Father were put in Prison: And, it seems, the Council wrote to all the King's Ambassadors beyond Sea, an Account of this, much aggravated, as the Discovery of some very Dangerous Conspiracy; which they were to represent to those Princes, in very black Characters. I put in the Collection an Account given by *Thirlby*, of what he did upon it. The Letter is long; but I only Copy out that which relates to this pretended Discovery: Dated from *Hailbron*, on *Christmas-Day* 1546. *Coll. Numb.*

“ He understood by the Council's Letters to him, what Ungracious and Ingrateful Persons they were found to be. He professes, he ever loved the Father, for he thought him a true Servant to the King: He says, he was amazed at the Matter, and did not know what to say. God had not only on this Occasion, but on many others, put a Stop to Treasonable Designs against the King, who (next to God) was the Chief Comfort of all good Men. He enlarges much on the Subject, in the Style of a true Courtier. The Messenger brought him the Council's Letter, written on the 15th of *December*, on *Christmas-Eve*; in which he saw the malicious Purpose of these Two ungracious Men: So, according to his Orders, he went immediately to demand Audience of the Emperor; but the Emperor intended to repose himself for Three or Four Days, and so had refused Audience to the Nuncio, and to all other Ambassadors; but he said, he would send a Secretary, to whom he might communicate his Business. *Joyce*, his Secretary, coming to him, he set forth the Matter as pompously as the Council had represented it to him. In particular, he spoke of the Haughtiness of the Earl of *Surrey*, of all which the Secretary promised to make Report to the Emperor, and likewise to write an Account of it to *Grandvil*. *Thirlby* excuses himself that he durst not write of this Matter to the King: He thought, it would renew in him the Memory of the Ingratitude of these Persons, which must wound a Noble Heart.

After so black a Representation, great Matters might be expected: But I have met with an Original Letter of the Duke of *Norfolk's*, to the Lords of the Council, writ indeed in so bad a Hand, that the Reading it was almost as hard as Deciphering. It gives a very different Account of that Matter, at least with Relation to the Father.

“ He writes, that the Lord Great Chamberlain, and the Secretary of State, had examined him upon divers Particulars: The First was, Whether he had a Cypher with any Man? He said, he had never a Cypher with any Man, but such as he had for the King's Affairs, when he was in his Service. And he does not remember that ever

“ he

*Collect.*  
*Numb. 75.*  
His Letter to  
the King.



1546.

“ he wrote in Cypher, except when he was in *France*, with the Lord  
 “ Great Master that now is, and the Lord *Rockford*: Nor does he  
 “ remember whether he wrote any Letters then, or not; but these  
 “ Two Lords signed whatsoever he wrote. He heard, that a Letter  
 “ of his was found among Bishop *Fox*’s Papers, which being shewed  
 “ to the Bishop of *Duresme*, he advised to throw it into the Fire.  
 “ He was examined upon this: He did remember, the Matter of it  
 “ was, the setting forth the Talk of the *Northern* People, after the  
 “ Time of the Commotions: But that it was against *Cromwell*, and  
 “ not at all against the King: (so far did they go back, to find Mat-  
 “ ter to be laid to his Charge) but whether that was in Cypher, or  
 “ not, he not remember. He was next asked, If any Person  
 “ had said to him, that if the King, the Emperor, and the *French*  
 “ King came to a good Peace, whether the Bishop of *Rome* would  
 “ break that by his Dispensation; and whether he inclined that way.  
 “ He did not remember he had ever heard any Man speak to that  
 “ Purpose: But, for his own Part, if he had twenty Lives, he would  
 “ rather spend them all, than that the Bishop of *Rome* should have  
 “ any Power in this Kingdom again. He had read much History,  
 “ and knew well how his Usurpation began, and increased: And  
 “ both to *English*, *French*, and *Scots*, he has upon all Occasions spo-  
 “ ken vehemently against it. He was also asked, if he knew any  
 “ thing of a Letter from *Gardiner* and *Knevet*, the King’s Ambassa-  
 “ dors at the Emperor’s Court, of a Motion made to them for a Re-  
 “ conciliation with that Bishop, which was brought to the King at  
 “ *Dover*, he being then there.

“ In Answer to this, he writes, He had never been with the King  
 “ at *Dover* since the Duke of *Richmond* died: But for any such O-  
 “ verture, he had never heard any thing of it; nor did any Person  
 “ ever mention it to him. It had been said in Council, when Sir  
 “ *Francis Bryan* was like to have died, as a Thing reported by him,  
 “ that the Bishop of *Winchester* had said, he could devise a Way, to  
 “ set all Things right between the King and the Bishop of *Rome*.  
 “ Upon which, as he remembers, Sir *Ralph Sadler* was sent to Sir  
 “ *Francis*, to ask the Truth of that: But Sir *Francis* denied it; and  
 “ this was all that ever he heard of any such Overture. It seems,  
 “ these were all the Questions that were put to him; to which, those  
 “ were his Answers. He therefore prayed the Lords to intercede  
 “ with the King, that his Accusers might be brought Face to Face,  
 “ to say what they had against him: And he did not doubt, but it  
 “ should appear, he was falsely accused. He desir’d to have no more  
 “ Favour than *Cromwell* had; he himself being present when *Crom-*  
 “ *well* was examined. He adds, *Cromwell* was a false Man; but  
 “ He was a true, poor Gentleman. He did believe, some false Man  
 “ had laid some great Thing to his Charge. He desired, if he might  
 “ not see his Accusers, that he might at least know what the Mat-  
 “ ters were; and if he did not answer truly to every Point, he de-  
 “ sired not to live an Hour longer.

“ He had always been pursued by great Enemies about the King;  
 “ so that his Fidelity was tried like Gold. If he knew wherein he  
 “ had

“ had offended, he would freely confess it. On *Tuesday* in the last 1546.  
 “ *Whitson-Week*, he moved the King, that a Marriage might be  
 “ made between his Daughter (the Dutchess of *Richmond*) and Sir  
 “ *Thomas Seymour*; and that his Son *Surrey's* Children might, by  
 “ Cross-Marriages, be allied to my Lord Great Chamberlain's Chil-  
 “ dren, (the Earl of *Hertford*.) He appealed to the King, whether  
 “ his Intention in these Motions did not appear to be honest. He  
 “ next reckons up his Enemies. Cardinal *Wolsey* confessed to him  
 “ at *Asker*, that he had studied for Fourteen Years, how to destroy  
 “ him, set on to it by the Duke of *Suffolk*, the Marquis of *Exe-*  
 “ *ter*, and the Lord *Sandys*, who often told him, that if he did not  
 “ put him out of the way, he would undo him. When the Mar-  
 “ quis of *Exeter* suffered, *Cromwell* examined his Wife more strictly  
 “ concerning him, than all other Men; of which She sent him  
 “ word by her Brother, the Lord *Mountjoy*. And *Cromwell* had  
 “ often said to himself, that he was a happy Man, that his Wife  
 “ knew nothing against him, otherwise She would undo him. The  
 “ late Duke of *Buckingham*, at the Bar, where his Father late Lord  
 “ High Steward, said, that he himself was the Person in the World,  
 “ whom he had hated most, thinking he had done him ill Offices  
 “ with the King: But he said, he then saw the contrary. *Rice*,  
 “ that married his Sister, often said, he wished he could find the  
 “ Means to thrust his Dagger in him. It was well known to many  
 “ Ladies in the Court, how much both his two Nieces; whom it  
 “ pleased the King to marry, had hated him. He had discovered to  
 “ the King that, for which his Mother-in-Law was attainted of Mis-  
 “ prision of Treason. He had always served the King faithfully,  
 “ but had of late received greater Favours of him, than in Times  
 “ past: What could therefore move him, to be now false to him? *A*  
 “ *Poor Man, as I am, yet I am his own near Kinsman. Alas! alas*  
 “ *my Lords*, (writes he) *that ever it should be thought any Untruth to*  
 “ *be in me.* He prays them to lay this before the King, and jointly  
 “ to beseech him, to grant the Desires contained in it. So he  
 “ ends it with such Submissions, as he hoped might mollify the  
 “ King.”

Here I must add a small Correction, because I promised it to the late Sir *Robert Southwell*, for whose great Worth and Virtues I had that Esteem, which he well deserved. Sir *Richard Southwell* was concerned in the Evidence against the Duke of *Norfolk*: He gave me a *Memorandum*, which I promised to remember when I reviewed my History. There were two Brothers, Sir *Richard* and Sir *Robert*, who were often confounded, an *R* serving for both their Christned Names. Sir *Richard* was a Privy-Councillor to *Henry* the VIIIth, King *Edward*, and Queen *Mary*: The Second Brother, Sir *Robert*, was Master of the *Rolls*, in the Time of *Henry* the Eighth, and in the Beginning of *Edward* the Sixth. I had confounded these, and in Two several Places called Sir *Richard* Master of the *Rolls*.

I have now set forth all that I find concerning the Duke of *Norfolk*; by which it appears, that he was designed to be destroyed only upon Suspicion: And his Enemies were put on running far back to old Stories, to find some Colours to justify so black a Prosecu-



1546.

tion. This was the last Act of the King's Reign; which, happily for the old Duke, was not finished, when the King's Death prevented the Execution.

A Recapitulation of King Henry's Reign.

Thus I have gone over all those Passages in this Reign, that have fallen in my Way, since I wrote my History. I have so carefully avoided repeating any Thing that was in my former Work, that I have, perhaps, not made it clear enough, into what Parts of it every Thing here related, ought to be taken in. Nor have I put in my Collection any of those Papers, that either the Lord *Herbert* or Mr. *Strype* had published, One or Two only excepted in each of them: But these I put in it, both because I Copied them from the Originals, when I did not reflect on their being published by those Writers, and because they seemed of great Importance to the Parts of my History, to which they belonged. Some of these being very short, and the others not long, I thought, the inserting them made my Collection more compleat. I would not lessen the Value of Books, to which I have been too much beholden, to make so ill a Return; to the last especially, from whose Works I have taken that which seemed necessary, to make the History as full as might be, but refer my Reader to such Vouchers, as he will find in them.

His Mind corrupted by a Course of Flattery.

And now having ended what I have to say of King *Henry*, I will add a few Reflexions on him, and on his Reign. He had certainly a greater Measure of Knowledge in Learning, more particularly in Divinity, than most Princes of that, or of any Age: that gave Occasion to those excessive Flatteries, which in a great Measure corrupted his Temper, and disfigured his whole Government. It is deeply rooted in the Nature of Man to love to be flattered; because Self-Love makes Men their own Flatterers, and so they do too easily take down the Flatteries that are offered them by others; who, when they expect Advantages by it, are too ready to give this Incense to their Vanity, according to the Returns that they expect from it.

Few are so honest and disinterested in their Friendship, as to consider the real Good of others; but chuse rather to comply with their Humour and Vanity. And since Princes have most to give, Flattery (too common to all Places) is the Natural Growth of Courts; in which, if there are some few so unfashioned to those Places, as to seek the real Good and Honour of the Prince, by the plain Methods of blunt Honesty, which may carry them to contradict a mistaken Prince, to shew him his Errors, and with a true Firmness of Courage, to try to work even against the Grain; while they pursue that, which, tho' it is the real Advantage and Honour of the Prince, yet it is not agreeable to some weak or perverse Humour in him: These are soon overtopped by a Multitude of Flatterers, who will find it an easy Work to undermine such Faithful Ministers; because their own Candor and Fidelity, makes them use none of the Arts of a Countermine. Thus the flattered Prince easily goes into the Hands of those who humour and please him most, without regarding either the true Honour of the Master, or the Good of the Community.

If

If weak Princes, of a small Measure of Knowledge and a low Capacity, fall into such Hands, the Government will dwindle into an unactive Languishing; which will make them a Prey to all about them, and expose them to Universal Contempt both at home and abroad: while the Flatterers make their own Advantages the Chief Measure of the Government; and do so Besiege the abused and deluded Prince, that he fancies he is the Wonder and Delight of all the World, when he is under the last Degrees of the Scorn of the Worst, and of the Pity of the Best of his People.

But if these Flatterers gain the Ascendant over Princes of Genius and Capacity, they put them on Great Designs, under the false Representations of Conquests and *Glory*: They engage them either to make or break Leagues at Pleasure, to enter upon Hostilities without any previous Steps or Declarations of War, to ruin their own People for supporting those Wars that are carried on with all the Methods, both of Barbarity and Perfidy; while a studied Luxury and Vanity at Home is kept up, to amuse and blind the Ignorant Beholders, with a false Shew of Lustre and Magnificence.

This had too deep a Root in King *Henry*, and was too long flattered by Cardinal *Wolsey*, to be ever afterwards brought into due Bounds and just Measures; yet *Wolsey* pursued the true Maxims of *England*, of maintaining the Ballance during his Ministry. Our Trade lay then so intirely in the *Neitherlands*, without our seeming to think of carrying it further, that it was necessary to maintain a good Correspondence with those Provinces: And *Charles's* Dominions were so wildly scattered, that till *Francis* was taken Prisoner, it was visibly the Interest of *England* to continue still jealous of *France*, and to favour *Charles*. But the taking of *Francis* the First changed the Scene; *France* was then to be supported. It was also so exhausted, and *Charles's* Revenue was so increased, that without great Sums both lent him, and expended by *England*, all must have sunk under *Charles's* Power, if *England* had not held the Ballance.

It was also a Master-piece in *Wolsey* to engage the King to own that the Book against *Luther* was written by him, in which the Secret of those who, no doubt, had the greatest Share in composing it, was so closely laid, that it never broke out. *Seckendorf* tells us, that *Luther* believed it was writ by *Lee*, who was a Zealous *Thomist*, and had been engaged in Disputes with *Erasmus*, and was afterwards made Archbishop of *York*. If any of these who still adhered to the Old Doctrines, had been concerned in writing it, probably when they saw King *Henry* depart from so many Points treated of in it, they would have gone beyond Sea, and have robbed him of that false Honour, and those excessive Praises which that Book had procured him. It is plain *More* wrote it not: For the King having shewed it him before it was published, he (as he mentions in one of his Letters to *Cromwell*) told the King that he had raised the Papacy so high, that it might be objected to him, if he should happen to have any Dispute with the Pope, as was often between Princes and Popes: And it will be found in the Remarks on the former Volumes, that he in another Letter says he was a *Sorter* of that Book. This seems to relate only to the Digesting it into Method and Order.

1546.  
The Course  
of all Courts.

*Wolsey* began  
it, but was a  
wise Minister.

A great Occa-  
sion of Flatter-  
ry given by  
his Book.

How



1546.

How far *K. Henry* was sincere in pretending Scruples of Conscience, with Relation to his First Marriage, can only be known to God. His Suit of Divorce was managed at a vast Expence, in a Course of many Years; in all which Time, how strong soever his Passion was for *Anne Boleyn*, yet her being with Child so soon after their Marriage, is a clear Evidence that till then they had no Unlawful Commerce. It does not appear that *Wolsey* deserved his Disgrace, unless it was that by the Commission given to the Two Legates, they were empowered to act conjunctly or severally: So that though *Campegio* refused to concur, he might have given Sentence legally, yet he being trusted by the Pope, his acting according to Instructions, did not deserve so severe a Correction: And had any material Discovery been made to render *Wolsey* Criminal, it may be reasonably supposed it would have been published.

The Character of *More*.

The New Flatterers falling in with the King's Passion, out-did and ruined *Wolsey*. *More* was the Glory of the Age; and his Advancement was the King's Honour more than his own, who was a true Christian Philosopher. He thought the Cause of the King's Divorce was just, and as long as it was prosecuted at the Court of *Rome*, so long he favoured it: But when he saw that a Breach with that Court was like to follow, he left the great Post he was in, with a Superior Greatness of Mind. It was a fall great enough to retire from that into a Private State of Life; but the carrying Matters so far against him as the King did, was one of the justest Reproaches of that Reign. *More's* Superstition seems indeed contemptible, but the Constancy of his Mind was truly wonderful.

*Cromwell's* Ministry.

*Cromwell's* Ministry was in a constant Course of Flattery and Submission, but by that he did great Things that amaze one, who has considered them well. The setting up the King's Supremacy, instead of the Usurpations of the Papacy, and the rooting out the Monastick State in *England*, considering the Wealth, the Numbers, and the Zeal of the Monks and Fryars in all the Parts of the Kingdom, as it was a very bold Undertaking, so it was executed with great Method, and performed in so short a Time, and with so few of the Convulsions that might have been expected, that all this shews what a Master he was, that could bring such a Design to be finished in so few Years, with so little Trouble or Danger.

But in Conclusion, an Unfortunate Marriage to which he advised the King, not proving acceptable, and he being unwilling to destroy what he himself had brought about, was, no doubt, backward in the Design of breaking it, when the King had told him of it. And then upon no other visible Ground, but because *Anne of Cleve* grew more obliging to the King than she was formerly, the King suspected that *Cromwell* had betrayed his Secret, and had engaged her to a softer Deportment on Design to prevent the Divorce, and did upon that Disgrace and Destroy him.

The Duke of *Norfolk* was never till *Cromwell's* Fall the First in Favour: But he had still kept his Post by perpetual Submission and Flattery. He was sacrificed at last to the King's Jealousy; fearing that he might be too great in his Son's Infancy; and being considered as the Head of the Popish Party, might engage in an uneasy Competition

petition with the *Seymours*, during the Minority of his Son : For the Points he was at first examined on, were of an Old Date, of no Consequence, and supported by no Proof. 1546.

When the King first threw off the Pope's Yoke, the Reformers offered him in their turn, all the Flatteries they could decently give : And if they could have had the Patience to go on further, than as he was willing to parcel out a Reformation to them, he had perhaps gone further in it : But he seemed to think that as it was pretended in Popery, that Infallibility was to go along with the Supremacy ; therefore those who had yielded the one, ought likewise to submit to the other. He turned against them when he saw that their Complaisance did not go so far : And upon that the Adherers to the Old Opinions returned to their Old Flatteries, and for some Time seemed to have brought him quite back to them ; which probably might have wrought more powerfully, but that he found the Old Leaven of the Papacy was still working in them : So that he was all the while Fluctuating : Sometimes making Steps to a Reformation, but then returning back to his Old Notions : One Thing probably wrought much on him. It has appeared that he had great Apprehensions of the Council that was to meet at *Trent*, and that the Emperor's Engagements to restrain the Council from proceeding in his Matter, was the main Article of the New Friendship made up between them : And it may be very reasonably supposed that the Emperor represented to him, that nothing could secure that Matter so certainly as his not proceeding to any further Innovations in Religion : More particularly his adhering firmly to the received Doctrine of Christ's Presence in the Sacrament, and the other Articles set forth by him : This agreeing with his own Opinion had, as may be well imagined, no small Share in the Change of his Conduct at that Time.

The King's  
Inconstancy  
in Matters of  
Religion.

The dextrous Application of Flattery had generally a powerful Effect on him : But whatsoever he was, and how great soever his Pride and Vanity, and his other Faults were, he was a great Instrument in the Hand of Providence for many good Ends : He first opened the Door to let Light in upon the Nation : He delivered it from the Yoke of Blind and Implicit Obedience : He put the Scriptures in the Hands of the People, and took away the Terror they were formerly under by the Cruelty of the Ecclesiastical Courts : He declared this Church to be an intire and perfect Body within itself ; with full Authority to Decree and to regulate all Things, without any Dependance on any Foreign Power : And he did so unite the Supreme Headship over this Church, to the Imperial Crown of this Realm, that it seemed a just Consequence that was made by some in a Popish Reign, that he who would not own that this Supremacy was in him, did by that Renounce the Crown, of which that Title was made so Essential a Part, that they could no more be separated.

He attacked Popery in its strong Holds the Monasteries, and destroyed them all. And thus he opened the Way to all that came after, even down to our Days : So that while we see the Folly and Weakness of Man in all his Personal Failings, which were very many and very Enormous, we at the same Time see both the Justice, the Wisdom, and the Goodness of God, in making him who was once



1546. the Pride and Glory of Popery, become its Scourge and Destruction: And in directing his Pride and Passion so, as to bring about under the Dread of his unrelenting Temper, a Change that a milder Reign could not have compassed, without great Convulsions and much Confusion: Above all the Rest, we ought to adore the Goodness of God in rescuing us by his Means from Idolatry and Superstition; from the Vain and Pompous Shews in which the Worship of God was dressed up, so as to vye with Heathenism itself, into a Simplicity of believing, and a Purity of Worship, conform to the Nature and Attributes of God, and the Doctrine and Example of the Son of God.

May we ever value this as we ought; and may we, in our Tempers and Lives, so express the Beauty of this Holy Religion, that it may ever shine among us, and may shine out from us, to all round about us; and then we may hope that God will preserve it to us, and to Posterity after us for ever.

## B O O K IV.

1547.

*Of what happen'd during the Reign of King Edward the VIth, from the Year 1547 to the Year 1553.*

HAD such Copious Materials when I wrote of this King, partly from the Original Council-Book, for the Two first Years of that Reign, but chiefly from the Journal writ in that King's own Hand, that I shall not be able to offer the Reader so many New things in this, as I did in the former, and as I may be able to do in the succeeding Reign. Some Gleanings I have, which I hope will not be unacceptable.

I begin with acknowledging a great Error committed, in Copying out a Letter of *Luther's*, that I found among *Bucer's* Collections. The Noble *Seckendorf* was the first that admonished me of this; but with a Modesty suitable to so great a Man: without that Rancour, in which some among ourselves have vented their ill Nature against me. I took the sure Method to confess my Error, and to procure an exact Collated Copy of that Paper, from that Learned Body, to whose Library it belongs; which will be found in the Collection. It is an Original in *Luther's* own Hand; but it could not have been easily read, if *Bucer* had not writ out a Copy of it, which is bound up in the same Volume with the Original. It was an Instruction that *Luther* gave to *Melanchthon*, when he went into *Hesse*, in the Year 1534, to meet and treat with *Bucer*, upon that fatal Difference, concerning the Manner of the Presence in the Sacrament. "In which it appears, that *Luther* was so far from departing from his Opinion, that he plainly says, he could not Communicate with those of the *Zuinglian* Perswasion; but he would willingly tolerate them, in hope that in Time they might come to Communicate together. And as for a Political Agreement, he does not think a Diversity of Religion ought to hinder that; no more than it was a Bar to Marriage or Commerce, which may be among those of different Religions." And now I have, I hope, delivered myself from all the Censures, to which the wrong Publishing of that Paper had exposed me.

A true Account of a Paper of *Luther's* wrong published in my History.

Coll Numb.

I should next enter into the Historical Passages of King *Edward's* Reign; but a great Discovery, made with Relation to the most important Foreign Transactions, that happened both in King *Henry* and King *Edward's* Reign, (I mean the Council of *Trent*; the First Session of which was in the former Reign, and the Second in this) has given



1547.

given me an Opportunity of acquainting the World with many extraordinary Passages relating to it.

Varges's Letters concerning the Council of Trent.

There was a large Parcel of Original Letters writ to *Grandville*, then Bishop of *Arras*, afterwards Cardinal, and the Chief Minister of *Charles* the Emperor, that, when he left the *Netherlands*, were in the Hands of some of his Secretaries; and were not carried away by him. About 50 Years after that, Mr. *William Trumball*, then King *James* the Ist's Envoy at *Brussels*, Grandfather to Sir *William Trumball*, (a Person eminently distinguished by his Learning and Zeal for Religion, as well as by the Embassies, and other great Employments he has so worthily born) got these into his Hands: no doubt, under the Promise of absolute Secrecy, during the Lives of those who had them: Since if they had been then published, it might have been easily traced, from whence they must have come; which would have been fatal to those who had parted with them, in a Court so bigotted, as was that of *Albert* and *Isabella*. I have read over the whole Series of that worthy Gentleman's own Letters to King *James* the First, and saw so much Honesty and Zeal running thro' them all, that, it seems, nothing under some Sacred Tie, could have obliged both Father and Son, to keep such a Treasure so secret from all the World, especially *Padro Paulo's* History coming out at that Time in *London*; to which these Letters, as far as they went, which is from the 7th of *October* 1551, to the last of *February* 155½, would have given an Authentic Confirmation. I have been trusted by the Noble Owner, with the Perusal of them. It is impossible to doubt of their being Originals: The Subscriptions and Seals of most of them, are still intire.

Translated into English by Dr. *Geddes*.

These were by Sir *William* deposited in Bishop *Stillingfleet's* Hands, when he was sent to his Foreign Employments; that such Use might be made of them, when he found a Person that was Master of the *Spanish* Tongue, as the Importance of the Discovery might deserve. Soon after that, my very worthy Friend, Dr. *Geddes*, returned from *Lisbon*, after he had been above Ten Years Preacher to the *English* Factory there: And since he is lately dead, I hope I shall be forgiven, to take the Liberty of saying somewhat concerning him. He was a Learned, and a Wise Man. He had a true Notion of Popery, as a Political Combination, managed by Falshood and Cruelty, to Establish a Temporal Empire in the Person of the Popes. All his Thoughts and Studies were chiefly employed in detecting this; of which he has given many Useful and Curious Essays, in the Treatises he wrote, which are all highly Valuable. When Bishop *Stillingfleet* understood that he was Master of the *Spanish* Tongue, he put all these Papers in his Hands. He translated them into *English*, intending to Print the Originals in *Spanish* with them: But none of our Printers would undertake that; they reckoning, that where the Vent of the Book might be looked for, which must be in *Spain* and *Italy*, they were sure it would not be suffered to be sold: He was therefore forced to Print the Translation in *England*, without Printing the Originals.

Since

Since that Time, that Learned and Judicious *Frenchman*, Monsieur *Le Vassor*, has published a Translation of them in *French*, with many Curious Reflections: But tho' he found, that a Compleat Edition of the Letters in *Spanish*, was a Thing that the Bookfellers in *Holland* would not undertake, yet he has helped that all he could, by giving the Parts of the Letters that were the most Critical, and the most Important, in *Spanish*. Both these Books are highly Valuable. The Chief Writer of those Letters, *Vargas*, was a Man not only very Learned, but of a Superior Genius to most of that Age, as appears both by the Letters themselves, and by the Great Posts he went thro'. He was specially employed by the Emperor, both in the Session that was held in the former Reign, and in that which sat in this Reign; to which only these Letters do relate. He was the Chief of the Council that the Emperor's Ambassadors had, in Matters, in which either Divinity or Canon-Law (the last being his particular Profession) were necessary: And such a Value was set on him, that the Emperor sent him Ambassador to the Republick of *Venice*. And when the last Session was held by Pope *Pius* the Fourth, *Philip* sent him Ambassador to *Rome*, as the Person that understood best how to manage that Court, with Relation to the Session of the Council.

1547.

And into  
*French* by  
M. *Le Vassor*,

I think, it may give the Reader a just Idea of that Council, both of the Fraud and Insolence of the Legate, and of the Method in which Matters were carried there, to see some of the more Signal Passages in those Letters; that it may both give him true Impressions of what was transacted there, and may move him to have Recourse to the Letters themselves. "He sets forth, how much the Pope and his Ministers dreaded the Coming of the Protestants to the Council: We can plainly perceive that they are not themselves; nor in a Condition to treat about any Business, when they are brought to touch on that Point.—These may, to their Mortification, deliver their Minds freely against Abuses, and some other Things.—Whosoever offers any Thing that is not grateful to the Legate, or that doth not suit exactly with some People's Prepossessions; he is reported to have Spoke ill, and to Think worse; and to have taken what He said, out of I do not know whom.—There are several Matters, which the Legate ought to treat with more Deliberation, than he hath hitherto handled Things: I pray God give him Grace to understand this."

The Fraud  
and Insolence  
of the Legate.

Octob. 7.

"In the next Letter, without Date, mention is made of a Letter, that the Emperor wrote to the Pope; in which he did assure him; that nothing should be done in the Council, but that which he had a mind should be done in it: And that he would oblige the Prelates to hold their Tongues, and to let Things pass without any Opposition. The Copy of this being shewed the Ambassador, he was astonished at it: But *Vargas* said, it was not to be understood Literally; (in the Original it is *Judaically*) it was only writ, to bring the Pope to grant the Bull: But that it was not intended by it, that the Pope should be suffered to do such Things, as would bring all to Ruin; but only to do such Things as are reasonable. He adds in *Latin*, That the Liberty the Pope

The Promise  
that the Em-  
peror made  
the Pope.*Judaic*.



1547

“ took, was not only a Disease and Sicknefs of Mind, but was really grown to a Fury, and a Madnefs.” Here the *Spirit* of the Promise, is set up against the *Letter*; and a strict Adhering to Words, is counted a Part of the Yoke of *Judaism*, from which some Most Christian Princes have thought fit, on many Occasions, to emancipate themselves.

*Octob. 12.* In another Letter, he sets forth the Behaviour of the Prelates :  
 “ The Legate never so much as acquaints them with the Matter ; all  
 “ Things appearing well to them at first Sight, and, who knowing  
 “ nothing of Matters, until they are just ready to be pronounced, pals  
 “ them without any more ado.—I am willing to let you know  
 “ how Things are carried here ; and what the Pope’s Aims are ; who  
 “ seeks to authorize all his own Pretensions by the Council.—  
 “ There are several other Things I am not at all satisfied with, which  
 “ were carried here with the same Slight, that Pope *Paul* made use  
 “ of.—And is not this a Blessed Beginning of a Council !—As  
 “ to the Canons of Reformation,—they are of so trivial a Nature,  
 “ that several were ashamed to hear them ; and had they not been  
 “ wrapped up in good Language together, they would have appeared  
 “ to the World to be what they are.”

The Bishops  
knew not  
what they  
did.

*Octob. 28.* In another Letter he writes, “ I cannot see, how either Catholics  
 “ or Heretics can be satisfied with what is done here.—All that is  
 “ done here, is done by the way of *Rome* : For the Legate, tho’ it  
 “ were necessary to save the World from Sinking, will not depart  
 “ one Title from the Orders he receives from thence ; nor indeed  
 “ from any Thing, that he has once himself resolved on.

*Nov. 12.* In another he writes ; “ As for the Legate, he goes on still in  
 “ his old Way ; consuming of Time, to the last Hour, in Disputations and Congregations, concerning Doctrines ; and will at last  
 “ produce something in a Hurry, in false Colours, that may look  
 “ plausible : By which means, they have no Time to read, and  
 “ much less to understand what they are about.—Words, or Persuasions, do signify but very little in this Place ; and, I suppose,  
 “ they are not of much greater Force at *Rome*.—By what I can  
 “ perceive, both God and his Majesty are like to be very much  
 “ dishonoured by what will be done here. And if Things should  
 “ go on thus, and be brought to such an Issue, as the Pope and  
 “ his Ministers aim at, and give out, the Church will be left in a  
 “ much worse Condition, than she was in before.—I pray God,  
 “ the Pope may be prevailed on to alter his Measures : Tho’ I shall  
 “ reckon it a Miracle, if he is ; and shall thank God for it, as  
 “ such.”

*Nov. 26.* In another he writes ; “ There are not Words to express the  
 “ Pride, the Disrespect and Shamelessness, wherewith the Legate  
 “ proceeds.—The Success and End of this Synod, if God by a  
 “ Miracle does not prevent it, will be such as I have foretold. I  
 “ say, by a *Miracle* ; because it is not to be done by any Human  
 “ Means : So that his Majesty does but tire himself in vain, in Negotiating with the Pope, and his Ministers.—The Legate has  
 “ hammer’d out such an infamous Reformation, (for it deserves no  
 “ better

The Pride and  
Impudence of  
the Legate.

“ better Epithet) as must make us a Jest to the World. The Prelates  
 “ that are here, resent it highly : Many of them reckoning that they  
 “ Wound their Consciences by holding their Tongues, and by suf-  
 “ fering Things to be carried thus.

1547.

Upon the Point of collating to Benefices, he writes, “ we ought  
 “ to put them to shew what Right the Pope has to collate to any  
 “ Benefice whatsoever : I will undertake to demonstrate from the  
 “ Principles and Foundations of the Law of God, and of Nature,  
 “ and of Men ; and from the Antient Usage of the Church, and  
 “ from good Policy, that he has no manner of Right to it: And all  
 “ this without doing Injury to his Dignity, and the Plenitude of  
 “ his Power. He advises the leaving thole Matters to a better Time,  
 “ in which God will purge the Sons of *Levi* : Which Purgation  
 “ must come, and that with a severe Scourge ; it being impossible  
 “ that a Thing so violent, and so fraught with Abuses, should hold  
 “ long: The whole Nerve of Ecclesiastical Discipline being broke,  
 “ and the Goods of the Church made a perfect Trade and Mer-  
 “ chandize.

Speaking of General Councils, he writes, “ This which is now  
 “ fitting here, will totally undeceive the World, so as to convince it,  
 “ that by reason of the Opposition and Industry of the Popes, to en-  
 “ gross all to themselves, nothing of Reformation is ever to be ex-  
 “ pected from a General Council. I would not have Things wherein  
 “ the Pope and his Court have such great Interest and Pretensions, to  
 “ be decided, or handled here: Since it cannot be done, but to our  
 “ great Prejudice, and to the great Detriment of the Whole Church;  
 “ which at present, hath neither Strength, nor Courage to resist;  
 “ and if God do not remedy it, I do not see when it will.

No good to  
 be expected  
 from a Coun-  
 cil.

Speaking of Exemptions, he writes, “ The Canonists have made  
 “ strange Work ; having made many Jest, as well as Falshoods, to  
 “ pass for current Truths. When I speak of the Canonists, I speak  
 “ as a Thief of the Family, being sensible of the Abuses which have  
 “ been authorized by them in the Church. The Exemption of  
 “ Chapters ought to have been quite taken away, that so there might  
 “ be something of Order and Discipline, and that they who are the  
 “ Head, should not be made the Feet. It troubles me to see how  
 “ those Matters are managed and determined here ; the Legate do-  
 “ ing what ever he had a Mind to, without either numbring, or  
 “ weighing the Opinions of the Divines and Prelates ; hurrying and  
 “ reserving the Substance of Things, which ought to have been well  
 “ weighed and digested, to the last Minute : The major Part not  
 “ knowing what they are a doing. I mean before the Fact ; for  
 “ believing that Christ will not suffer them to Err in their Determi-  
 “ nations, I shall bow down my Head to them, and believe all the  
 “ Matters of Faith that shall be decided by them : I pray God every  
 “ Body else may do the same. The taking no Care to reform innu-  
 “ merable Abuses, has destroyed so many Provinces and Kingdoms;  
 “ and it is justly to be feared, that what is done in this Council, may  
 “ endanger the destroying of the Rest. I must tell you further,  
 “ that this Council drawing so near an End, is what all People re-  
 “ joice at here exceedingly ; there being a great many who wish  
 “ it

He complains  
 of the Exemp-  
 tion of Chap-  
 ters.



1547.

“ it never had met: And for my own Part, I would to God it  
 “ had never been called; for I am mistaken if it do not leave Things  
 “ worse than it found them.”

A Decree se-  
cretly amend-  
ed after it  
was past.

In an other of the same Date, if there is no Error in Writing,  
 “ he complains that the Decree of the Doctrine was not finished,  
 “ till the Night before the Session: So that many Bishops gave their  
 “ *Placet*, to what they neither did, nor could understand. The  
 “ Divines of *Louvain* and *Cologne*, and some *Spanish* Divines, being  
 “ much dissatisfied with several of those Matters, have publickly de-  
 “ clared they were so. This is a very bad Business, and should  
 “ Things of this Nature come once to be so Public, it must totally  
 “ ruin the Credit of all that has been done, or shall be done here-  
 “ after; and must hinder the Council from being ever received,  
 “ either in *Flanders*, or in *Germany*. The Bishop of *Verdun* speak-  
 “ ing to the Canons of Reformation, said, they would be unpro-  
 “ fitable, and unworthy of the Synod, calling it a *Pretended Refor-*  
 “ *mation*: The Legate fell upon him with very rude Language,  
 “ calling him a Boy, an Impudent Raw Man, with many other hard  
 “ Names: Nor would he suffer him to speak a Word in his own  
 “ Defence, telling him with great Heat, he knew how to have him  
 “ chastised. It is really a Matter of Amazement to see how Things  
 “ appertaining to God are handled here; and that there should not  
 “ be one to contend for him, or any that have the Courage to speak  
 “ in his Behalf; but that we should be all Dumb Dogs that cannot  
 “ Bark.”

Nov. 28.

In another he writes, “ That the Legate himself wished that the  
 “ Decrees were corrected as to some Particulars: and in another  
 “ without Date, he tells how the Divines were employed in correct-  
 “ ing them.” This Secret was never heard of before: Father *Paul*  
 knew nothing of it. A Decree after it has passed in Council was  
 thus secretly corrected by Divines, so the Infallibility was removed  
 from the Council, and lodged with the Divines.”

Dece. 19.  
It had been  
happy that  
the Council  
had never  
met.

In another he writes, “ It would have been a happy Thing that  
 “ this Council had never met; which is no more than what I have  
 “ often wished and declared: By Reason of the many Mischiefs it  
 “ has already done, and is still doing. It is to little Purpose, either  
 “ in this or any following Age, to hope for any Thing of a Refor-  
 “ mation from a General Council; or to see any better Order therein  
 “ than is in this. He supposes the Emperor will still continue to  
 “ solicit the Pope that Things may not be carried there, at such a scan-  
 “ dalous rate as they have been hitherto: and that he will take care  
 “ that no Occasion be given to the Council for to disperse itself upon  
 “ the Prelates speaking their Mind freely; or denying their Consent  
 “ to such Matters as are not convenient; which is a thing that may  
 “ very justly be feared.”

Jan. 10.  
Jan. 19.

In another he writes, “ This Synod must End Tumultuously,  
 “ and Ingloriously.” In another he writes, “ That it was an Asto-  
 “ nishing Thing that the Legate had foisted in several Passages into  
 “ the Doctrine of Orders, which must of Necessity ruin all. By  
 “ the Brutal Violences, Pretensions, and Obstinacy of the Legate,  
 “ Things are running into such a State, as must in the End, if I am  
 “ not

“ not mistaken, make both himself, and the whole Earth to tremble:  
 “ Or if it does not make him tremble, it must be because he is given  
 “ over to a Reprobate Sense: As in Truth, he seems to be abundant-  
 “ ly in every Thing that he does.”

1547.

In another he writes, “ All they drive at, is to get the Pope’s *Jan. 20.*  
 “ Pretensions established under the Doctrine of Order; and so in-  
 “ stead of Healing, to destroy and ruin all: Those being Matters  
 “ which were never so much as proposed, or disputed in the Council:  
 “ Neither is it fitting, as Things stand here, that they, or any Thing  
 “ else of the same Nature should be meddled with, in this Synod.”

He enlarges on the Authority of Bishops being derived from Christ, though subjected to the Pope; and he writes “ that upon this Bot-  
 “ tom only, the Hierarchy of the Church can be established: To settle  
 “ it on any other, is in Effect to confound and destroy it. Never-  
 “ theless, the Pope if he could carry this Point, though all Things  
 “ else were ruined, and whatever was done in the Antient Church  
 “ condemned, would find his own Account in it: For after that  
 “ there would be no possibility of ever having any Thing redressed.”  
 The Decree of Order, on which the Legate had set his Heart, is set down at the End of this Letter, the Translation of it into *English* runs thus.

“ This may be called the New *Jerusalem*, that comes down from The Decree concerning the Pope’s Authority proposed, but not passed.  
 “ Heaven: Which was by the most exactly regulated Policy of the  
 “ Old *Jerusalem*, shadowed only as a Pattern to represent the Hea-  
 “ venly *Jerusalem*: For as she had many different Orders, under  
 “ one Chief Governor, so the Visible Church of Christ, has his  
 “ Chief Vicar; for he is the *only* and *Supreme Head* in Earth, by  
 “ whose Dispensation Offices are distributed so to all the other  
 “ Members, that in the several Orders and Stations in which they  
 “ are placed, they may execute their Functions to the Good of the  
 “ whole Church, with the greatest Peace and Union. A Deputa-  
 “ tion of 20 was named to consider of this. The Legate and the  
 “ Two Presidents making Three of that Number; it was severely  
 “ attacked by the Bishop of *Guadix*.

In his last Letter he writes “ that the Legates would one way or The last of February.  
 “ other bring about the Dissolution of the Synod: Which will be  
 “ certainly done, if they can but get the said Clauses determined;  
 “ because in them they would have gained all that they Desire: And  
 “ after that they will never stand in need of any more Councils for  
 “ to serve their Pretensions. And in Case they should not be  
 “ able to carry those Points, they will then, to rid themselves of  
 “ this Yoke that is upon their Neck, and of their Fears they will be  
 “ under, when they shall find that they are not able to bring the  
 “ Synod to do all the Mischief to the Church, and to the Authority  
 “ of the present, and all future General Councils, that the Pope and  
 “ his Ministers would have them do, they will then perplex and  
 “ confound all.”

These are very clear Discoveries of the Zeal and Indignation He expresses the same Opinion of the former Session under Pope Paul.  
 which possessed this great States-Man, during this whole Session:  
 He shews also the Opinion he had of the former Session under Pope  
*Paul*, (in which he had likewise assisted) in the Directions he gives  
 Vol. III. A a a concerning



1547.

concerning the Government of a Council, and of the Office of an Ambassador, which he drew up before the Council was re-assembled, in this its Second Session, in which these Words are:

“ In the whole Conduct of this Council of *Trent*, there does not appear the least Footsteps of any of the forementioned Essentials of a General Council: On the contrary, the most Pernicious and Effectual Methods that can be contrived, have been taken to destroy Liberty totally; and to rob Councils of that Authority, which in Case of Great Storms, used to be the Sheet Anchor of the Church; by which Means they have cut off all Hope of ever having any Abuses that infest the Church redressed, to the great Disparagement of all past, as well as future Councils; from which no Good is ever to be expected.

No Shadow  
of Liberty in  
the Council.

“ The Conduct of this Council has been of Pernicious Consequence: In which, under the Title of directing it, the Pope’s Legates have so managed Matters, that nothing but what they have a Mind to can be proposed, discussed, or defined therein; and that too after such a Manner, as they would have it. All the Liberty that is here being only imaginary: So that their naming it, is nothing but Cheat and Banter: which is so Notorious, that several of the Prelates even among the Pope’s Pensioners, have not the Face to deny it. The Clause that they have inserted into the Canons of Reformation; which is, *saving in all Things the Authority of the Apostolical See*, is telling the World in plain Terms, that what the Pope does not like shall signify nothing. He writes of certain Methods that the Legates have used in Negotiating with People to change their Minds: This they have done so often, that it is now taken Notice of by every Body: Neither can there be any Course more Pernicious, or Destructive of the Liberty of the Council. The Legates many Times when they proposed a Thing, declared their Opinion of it first. Nay, in the Middle of Voting, when they observed any Prelate not to Vote as they would have him, they have taken upon themselves to speak to it, before another was suffered to Vote, doing it sometimes with soft Words, and at other Times with harsher; letting others to understand thereby, how they would have them Vote. Many Times railing at the Prelates, and exposing them to Scorn, and using such Methods as would make ones Heart Bleed to hear of, much more to see.

“ The common Method was, the Legates assembled the Prelates in a General Congregation, the Night before the Session was to be held. Then they read the Decrees to them, as they and their Friends had been pleased to form them. By which means, and by their not being understood by a great many Prelates, some not having the Courage to speak their Minds, and others being quite tired out with the Length of the Congregation, the Decrees were past. We, who saw and observed all these Doings, cannot but lament both our own Condition, and the lost Authority of Councils.

“ He

“ He shews, the Legates Drift was to Canonize all the Abuses of  
 “ the Court of *Rome*: so they never suffer’d them to be treated of  
 “ freely, but managed them like the Compounding of a Law-Suit: <sup>1547.</sup>  
 “ In all which Courses, it is certain, the Holy Ghost did not assist: <sup>The Legates</sup>  
 “ They striving still to authorize Abuses; and giving the World to <sup>Way in Cor-</sup>  
 “ understand that the Pope is Gracious, in granting them any thing, <sup>recting mani-</sup>  
 “ as if all were his own: Taking Abuses, tho’ never so pernicious, <sup>fest Abuses.</sup>  
 “ and splitting them as they thought good: By which Artifice, that  
 “ Part of the Abuse which was approved of by the Synod, becomes  
 “ perpetual; and for the Part that was reprobated, they will, accord-  
 “ ing to their Custom, find Ways to defeat their Condemnation.

“ There is nothing that can be so much as put to the Vote, with-  
 “ out the Consent of the Legates: Who, notwithstanding that they  
 “ are (by reason of the great Number of Pensioners, which the  
 “ Pope has here) always sure of a Majority, do nevertheless make  
 “ use of Strange Tricks, in their Conduct of the Council. Besides,  
 “ by having made their own Creatures the Secretaries, Notaries, and  
 “ all the other Officers of the Council, they have made it thereby a  
 “ Body, without any thing of Soul or Strength in it: Whereas, all  
 “ those Officers ought to have been appointed by the Council, and  
 “ especially the Notaries.

“ This is the Course that has been hitherto taken in the Council  
 “ of *Trent*, which is employed rather in struggling with the Pope  
 “ and his Legates, who seek to engross all to themselves, than in  
 “ Reforming and Remedying the Evils, under which the Church  
 “ groans. I pray God it do not increase them, by the Course it  
 “ takes, by Artifice and Dissimulation, to reduce the whole Synod  
 “ to the Will of the Pope.—It may be truly said, we are in a  
 “ Convention of Bishops, but not in a Council.—It would have  
 “ been much better, not to have celebrated a Council at this Time,  
 “ but to have waited, till God had put the Christian Commonwealth  
 “ in a better Disposition;—rather than to have celebrated one after  
 “ this manner, with so little Fruit, to the great Sorrow of Catho-  
 “ lics, the Scorn of Heretics, and the Prejudice of the present, and  
 “ of all future Councils.” So much may serve, to shew the Sense  
 that *Vargas* had of the First, as well as the Second Session of the  
 Council of *Trent*.”

*Malvenda*, one of the Emperor’s Divines, that was there, com- <sup>*Malvenda and*</sup>  
 plains in one Letter, “ that the Decrees, but especially the Matters <sup>others made</sup>  
 “ of Doctrine, were communicated to them very late. So that not- <sup>the same</sup>  
 “ withstanding the Substance of these Decrees may be found, which <sup>Complaints.</sup>  
 “ it is well if it is, nevertheless considering that they are to cor- <sup>*Octob. 12.*</sup>  
 “ rect them upon a bare hearing them read, on the Eve of a Session,  
 “ that must in my Opinion hinder them from having that Authority  
 “ and Majesty, which such Matters do use to have. I pray God  
 “ give them Grace to mend this.—He confesses, it was not fit any  
 “ Thing should be done without the Pope’s Consent: Yet that ought  
 “ to be managed with all possible Secrecy, in order to prevent the  
 “ *Lutherans*, if they should come to know it, from reflecting on  
 “ the Liberty of the Council, and the Freedom that the Prelates  
 “ ought



1547. "ought to have; who might safely enjoy more, without having any thing pass to the Prejudice of his Holiness."
- Nov. 22. In another he writes, "As there will not want those that write of this Council, so, for my own Part, I pray God it may not do more Harm than Good, and especially to the *Germans* that are here; who seeing how little Liberty it enjoys, and how much it is under the Dominion of the Legate, cannot possibly have that Respect and Esteem for it, as is convenient."
- Octob. 12. There are some Letters from the Bishop of *Oren*, written in the same Strain. In one he writes, "That for what concerns a Reformation, the Emperor must set himself about it in earnest, both with the Pope, and the Fathers: For if he does it not, we shall have our Wounds only skinned over, but shall have the rotten Core left, to the Corrupting of all quickly again.—The Prelates here are all very much troubled, to see with how ill a Grace, Nov. 28. "People that say any thing of a Reformation, are heard." In another he writes, "They discover here little or no Inclination, for to do any Thing that deserves the Name of a true Reformation. Several Things might be done, that would be of great Advantage to the People, and would be no Prejudice to his Holiness, or to his Court. May God remedy Things! Under whom, unless his Majesty and your Lordship labour very hard, there will be no Remedy left for the Church. In a Postscript, he tells the same Story that *Vargas* had told, of the Legate's treating the Bishop of *Verdun* so ill, for his calling the Reformation offered, a *pretended Reformation*: And he commanded him to be silent, when he was about to say somewhat in his own Justification. The Bishop answered, that at this Rate there was no Liberty; and having obtained Leave of the Emperor, by whom he was sent thither, he would be gone. The Legate told him, he should not go, but should do what he commanded him.—He writes, that it was a great Reproach to the Bishops, from whom the World expected Canons of Reformation; that in truth they could give them nothing, but what the Legate pleases.—It were just with the People, if we do not treat about their Interest more in Earnest than we have done hitherto, for to Stone us, when we return Home."

Reflections  
upon those  
Proceedings.

I have set all this out so copiously, that it may appear, from what those, who were far from being in any Sort Favourers of the Reformation, who were at *Trent*, and were let into the Secret of Affairs, wrote of the Council to the Emperor's Chief Minister, how little not only of Liberty, but even of Common Decency, there appeared in the whole Conduct of that Council.

This Digression is, I hope, an acceptable Entertainment to the Reader; and it must entirely free every considering Person, from a vulgar but weak Prejudice, infused into many by practising Missionaries, which was objected to my self by a great Prince, That no Nation ought to have Reformed itself, in a Separation from the rest of the Church: But that there ought to have been a General Acquiescing in such Things as were commonly received, till by a Joint Concur-

rence of other Churches the Reformation might have been agreed and settled in a General Council. These Letters do so effectually discover the Vanity of this Conceit, that at first Sight it evidently appears that even those Abuses and Corruptions that could not be justified, yet could not be effectually Reformed at *Trent*; and that every Thing was carried there, partly by the Artifices of the Legates, and partly by the many poor *Italian* Prelates. who were all Pensioners of the Court of *Rome*: So that no Abuse, how gross, or crying soever, could be amended, but as the Popes for their own Ends thought fit to give it up. This appears so evidently in the Letters, out of which I have drawn this Abstract, that I hope any Prejudice formed upon the Prospect of an Universal Reformation, is by it entirely removed. I turn next to the Affairs of *England*.

1547.

The Earl of *Hertford*, advanced to be Duke of *Somerſet*, depended much on *Paget's* Advices. He told him on the Day that King *Henry* died, that he desired his Friendship; and promised to him, that he would have a great Regard to his Advice. But tho' *Paget* put him oft in mind of this, he forgot it too soon. His great Success in his first Expedition to *Scotland*, was a particular Happiness to him, and might have established him; but his Quarrelling so soon with his Brother, was fatal to them both.

*Thirlby* was still Ambassador at the Emperor's Court: He studied to make his Court to the Protector, and wrote him a very hearty Congratulation upon his Exaltation; and added, That the Bishop of *Arras* seemed likewise to rejoice at it. At the same time, he warned him of the Designs of the *French* against *England*. He gave him a long Account of the *Interim*, in which he writes, that *Malvenda* had secretly a great Hand: He himself seems to approve of it; and says, that it was as high an Act of Supremacy, as any in all King *Henry's* Reign; for by it, not only many of the Doctrines of Popery had mollifying Senses put on them, different from what was commonly received; but the Sacrament was allowed to be given in both Kinds, and the Married Priests were suffered to Officiate. It is true, all was softened by this, that it was only a prudent Connivance in the *Interim*, till the Council should be reassembled, to bring all Matters to a final Settlement.

The Protector either mistrusted *Thirlby*, or he called him Home, to assist *Cranmer* in Carrying on the Reformation. He sent Sir *Philip* *Hobby* in his Stead. He was a Man marked in King *Henry's* Time, as a Favourer of the Preachers of the *New Learning*, as they were then called. There was one *Parſon*, a Clerk, known to have evil Opinions (so it is entered in a Part of the Council-Book, for the Year 1543,) touching the *Sacrament of the Altar*; who was maintained by *Weldon*, one of the Masters of the Household, and by *Hobby*, then a Gentleman-Usher: for which they were both sent to the *Fleet*; but they were soon after discharged.

*Hobby* was therefore sent over Ambassador, as a Person on whose Advices the Government here might depend, with Relation to the Affairs of *Germany*. I have seen a Volume of the Letters, writ to him by the Protector and Council, with Copies of the Answers that he wrote.



1547.

The Emperor's Confessor refused him Absolution for not persecuting Heretics.

His first Dispatch mentioned a particular Dispute between the Emperor and his Confessor. The Confessor refused to give him Absolution, unless he would recal the Decree of the *Interim*, and, instead of Favouring Heresy, would with the Sword extirpate Heretics. The Emperor said, he was satisfied with what he had done in the Matter of the *Interim*, and that he would do no more against the *Lutherans*: If the Fryar would not give him Absolution, others would be found, who would do it. So the Fryar left him.

At that Time, a Proposition of a Marriage for the Lady *Mary* was made by the Emperor, who seemed to apprehend that she was not safe in *England*. It was with the Brother of the King of *Portugal*. He was called at first the Prince of *Portugal*; and it was then hearkened to: But when the Council understood he was the King's Brother, they did not think fit to entertain it. And in the same Letter, Mention is made of *Geofrey Poole*, who was then beyond Sea, and desired a Pardon: The Council wrote, that he was included in the last Act of Pardon; yet since he desired it, they offer him a Special Pardon. This Letter is signed *T. Cant. Wiltshire, Northampton, Wentworth, T. Ely, T. Cheyne, A. Wyngfield, Herbert, N. Walton, J. Gage*.

The next Dispatch to him has a particular Account of two Persons, whom the King of *France* had corrupted to betray one of their Forts to him. The King of *France* had said to their Ambassador, *Par la Foy de Gentilhomme*, By the Faith of a Gentleman, he would make no War, without giving Warning first. This he promised on the 20th of *July*: yet hearing of the Commotions that were in *England*, he began Hostilities against *Bullogn* within Three or Four Days after. This is signed *E. Somerset, T. Cant. R. Ryche Can. W. St. Johns, W. Paget, W. Petre, J. Smith, E. Watton*. So long ago did it appear, that the *Bona Fide* of that Court was not a Thing to be much relied on. I would have printed these Letters, if they were in my Power: But having had the Originals in my Hands above 30 Years ago, I did not then Copy them out, but contented myself with taking Extracts out of them, to which I shall upon other Occasions have Recourse.

The Perfidy of the French King.

The Progress of the Reformation.

As for the Progress of the Reformation at Home, *Cranmer* was delivered from too deep a Subjection, in which he had lived to King *Henry*. The Load of great Obligations, is a Weight on a Generous Mind: The Hope he had of gaining on the King, to carry him to a further Reformation, did, no doubt, carry him too far in his Compliances to him. He did, perhaps, satisfy himself, as I have Reason to believe many in the *Roman* Communion do, to this Day, that he did not in his Mind, or with his Thoughts, go along in those Devotions, that they cannot but think unlawful; but what, thro' a Fearfulness of Temper, or an ill-managed Modesty, they do not depart from established Practices, even tho' they think them unlawful. The Compliances that we find in the Apostles, particularly in *St. Paul* himself, the Apostle of the *Gentiles*, in order to the Gaining the *Jews*, might all meet together, to carry him too far in his Submissions to King *Henry*. This can neither be denied, nor justified; but the Censures passed on it, may be much softened, when all these

Things



Things are laid together. Now he was delivered from that Servitude so he resolved to set about a further Reformation, with much Zeal, tho' perhaps still with too great Caution. He studied if it was possible to gain upon *Gardiner*: he had reason to believe from his Forwardness in complying with King *Henry*, that he had no great Scrupulosity in his own Thoughts; so he tried to draw him to assist, at least not to oppose the Steps that were to be made; and judging that it was necessary to give the People due Instruction, to carry them to a further Measure of Knowledge, he set about the preparing a Book of *Homilies* to be read in Churches: And to give some more Light into the Meaning of the New Testament, he chose *Erasmus's Paraphrase* as the most unexceptionable Book that could be thought on: Since he had been so much favoured in *England*; and as he had written against *Luther*, so he lived and died in the *Roman* Communion.

1547.

*Cranmer* communicated his Designs, with the Draught of the *Homilies* to *Gardiner*: But he was resolved to set himself at the Head of the Popish Party: He had no doubt great Resentments, because he was left out of the Council, which he imputed to the *Seymours*: *Cranmer* tried if the Offer of bringing him to sit at that Board, could overcome these; yet all was in vain. He insisted at first on this, that during the King's Minority, it was fit to keep all Things quiet, and not to indanger the public Peace by venturing on new Changes: He pressed the Archbishop with the only thing that he could not well answer: Which was, that he had concurred in setting forth the late King's Book of a necessary Doctrine: *Gardiner* wrote that he was confident *Cranmer* was a better Man than to do any such Thing against his Conscience upon any King's Account; and if his Conscience agreed to that Book, which he himself had so recommended, he wished Things might be left to rest there. *Cranmer* pressed him again and again in this Matter, but he was intractable. In particular he excepted to the Homily of *Justification*, which was thought to be of *Cranmer's* own composing: Because *Justification* was ascribed to Faith only, in which he thought *Charity* had likewise its Influence; and that without it Faith was dead, and a dead Thing could not be the Cause of *Justification*. But the Archbishop shewed him his Design in that, was only to set forth the Freedom of God's Mercy, which we relying on, had by that, the Application of it to ourselves; not meaning that justifying Faith was ever without *Charity*; for even Faith did not justify as a meritorious Condition, but only as it was an Instrument applying God's Mercy to Sinners. Upon this there was perhaps too much of Subtilty on both Sides. As for *Erasmus's Paraphrase*, *Gardiner* excepted to it as being in many Things contrary to the *Homilies*: So he thought since they agreed so little together, they ought not to be joined and recommended by the same Injunctions: To this it was said that the Paraphrase was a good and useful Book, tho' in some Particulars, the *Homilies* differed from it.

But as they had the Perverseness of the Popish Party to deal with, so it was not easy to restrain their own Side. Those whose Heat could not be well managed, were apt to break out into great Disorders; some insulting the Priests as they were officiating, others talking irre-

*Gardiner* at  
the Head of  
the Opposi-  
tion to it.



1547.

irreverently of the Sacrament; some defining the manner of the Presence, and others asserting the Impossibility of it, as it was explained. These Disorders gave Occasion to two Proclamations this Year; the first was on the 12th of *November*, against Insolence towards Priests, such as the reviling them, tossing them, and taking their Caps and Tippets violently from them: The other was on the 27th of *December* against irreverent Talkers of the Sacrament, and against those who in their Sermons went to define the Manner, the Nature and Fashion, and the Possibility or Impossibility of the Presence. The Visitors went about with their Injunctions. They are registred in the Books of the Dean and Chapter of *York*; where the Visitation was held in *September*. It came not to *Winchester* till *October*, for the Motion concerning it was made on the 7th of *October*. Whether the Slowness of the Visitors coming thither was occasioned by any secret Practice with *Gardiner*, and upon the Hopes of gaining him or not, I cannot tell. He it seems, had before that refused to receive or obey the Injunctions; for which he was put in the *Fleet*: And when he wrote his Letter to the Protector, complaining of the Proceedings against him, he had been then seven Weeks there.

Proceedings  
in Convoca-  
tion.

I can say nothing new of the Parliament that sat this Year. When the Convocation was opened on the 5th of *November*, the Archbishop told them, that it was with the King and the Lords Consent that the Prelates and Clergy should consult together about settling the Christian Religion right, and delivering it to the People. He sent them to chuse their Prolocutor; and to present him the *Friday* following. It is set down in the Minutes, that the lower House consulted how they might be joined to the lower House of Parliament: And about the Reformation of Ecclesiastical Laws. On the 9th of *December* some were appointed to know if the Archbishop had obtained Licence (in the Minutes called Indemnity or Immunity) for them to treat of Matters of Religion. In the 5th Session on the last of *November*, the Prolocutor exhibited an Order given him by the Archbishop for receiving the Communion in both Kinds, to which in the next Session they agreed, no Man speaking against it; 64 agreed to this; *Polydore Virgil* and *Weston* being two of them. And in the 8th Session on the 17th of *December*, a Proposition was offered to them, in these Words: "That all such Canons, Laws, Statutes, Decrees, Usages, and Customs, heretofore made or used, that forbid any Person to contract Matrimony, or condemn Matrimony already contracted, by any Person, for any Vow or Promise of Priesthood, Chastity or Widowhood, shall from henceforth cease, be utterly void, and of none effect." Here it was that *Redman's* Opinion was read, which I had in my History put as read the following Year. This Proposition went to all Monastic Vows, as well as to the Marriage of Priests. The Proposition was subscribed by 53 who were for the Affirmative, only 22 were for the Negative: After which a Committee was named to draw the Form of an Act for the Marriage of Priests. But all that is in the often cited Minutes as to this Matter, is, *Item* propounded for the Marriage of Priests; and to it is added, and that the Ecclesiastical Laws should be promulgated; there is no more in the Minutes of the Convocations during this Reign.

They affirm  
that it was  
free for the  
Clergy to  
marry.

*Strype* adds to this a particular Remark out of the Defence of the Priests Marriage, that diverse of those who were for the Affirmative, did never marry: And that some of those who were for the Negative yet did afterwards marry. *Cranmer* went on gathering Authorities out of Scripture and the Fathers against unwritten Traditions: He wrote a Book on this Subject in *Latin*; but in Queen *Mary's* Time it was translated into *English*, and published by an *English* Exile beyond Sea. He took a special Care to furnish *Canterbury* with good Preachers: But tho' their Labours were not quite without Success, yet Superstition had too deep a Root there to be easily subdued: And in the Universities, the old Doctrines were so obstinately persisted in, that when some in *Cambridge* offered to examine the Mass by the Scriptures and the Fathers, and to have a Disputation upon it, the Vice-Chancellor did forbid it. The Archbishop had procured a Confirmation of their Privileges, of *Cambridge* at least; for *Strype* only mentions that: The Mildness he expressed towards all who opposed him, even with Insolence, was remarkable: When one who thought he carried this too far, told him, that if ever it came to the Turn of his Enemies, they would shew him no such Favour; he answered, *Well, if God so provide, we must abide it.*

1547.

*Cranmer's Labours and Zeal.*

I did, in the Account of the Arguments against Transubstantiation, mention a Letter of *St. Chrysostom's* to *Cæsarius*, of which *Peter Martyr* brought over a Copy in *Latin* to *England*. Since that Time the Popish Clergy were sensible, that by that Letter it appeared plainly, that *St. Chrysostom* did believe that the Substance of Bread and Wine remained still in the Sacrament; as the Human Nature remained in the Person of Christ: So that by this, all the other high Figures used by that Father must be understood so, as to reconcile them to this Letter: therefore they used all possible Endeavours to suppress it. When the Learned *Bigot* had brought a Copy of it from *Florence* to *France*, and printed it with other Things relating to that Father, they ordered it to be cut out in such a manner, that in the printed Book it appeared that some Leaves were cut out; yet one Copy of it was brought to the present Learned and Pious Bishop of *Lincoln*, then Chaplain to our Ambassador at *Paris*, who first printed it here in *England*; as the Learned *Le Moyne*, having another Copy sent to him, printed it about the same time in *Holland*.

*St. Chrysostom's Letter to Cæsarius brought to England.*

I have nothing to add concerning the Tumults of the Year 1549, but that the Popish Clergy were generally at the Head of the Rebels. Many of these were Priests that had complied and subscribed the new Book; some of them were killed in every Skirmish, and very few of the Clergy shewed much Zeal against them: So that the Earl of *Bedford* could have none but *Miles Coverdale*, to go along with the Force that he carried into *Devonshire* to subdue them.

*Troubles at Frankfurt, p. 187.*

Upon some Information, that the Lady *Mary's* Servants were active in assisting those Commotions, the Protector and Council wrote to her on the 17th; that Letter being delivered to her on the 20th of *July*, she presently wrote an Answer, which I had from Sir *William Cook*, and it will be found in the Collection. In it, "she expresses her Dislike of those Revolts. A Chaplain of hers in *Devonshire* had

*The Lady Mary denies, that the other Servants were concerned in the Risings. Coll. Numb. 2.*



1547.

“ been named, but she writes she had not one Chaplain in those Parts: Another that was named, lived constantly in her House: She justifies all her Servants, that had been named: and assured them, that all of her Household were true Subjects to the King. The Council had likewise charged her, that her Proceedings in Matters of Religion had given the Rebels great Courage: Which she wrote, appeared to be untrue; since the Rebels in her Neighbourhood touched upon no Point of Religion. She prayed God, that their new Alterations, and unlawful Liberties, might not rather be the Occasion of such Assemblies: As for *Devonshire*, she had neither Lands nor Acquaintance in those Parts.”

In the suppressing these Tumults, the Protector did visibly espouse the People's Interest, and blamed the Lords for their Inclosures, and the other Oppressions that had, as he said, occasioned all those Disorders. By this he came to be universally beloved by the People; but trusting to that, he began to take too much upon him: and was so wedded to his own Thoughts, that he often opposed the whole Council. Upon which *Paget* wrote him a long Letter, in which, as a Faithful Friend, he set before him his Errors; chiefly his Wilfulness, and his affecting Popularity too much. He desired to be dismissed the Council; for while he was there, he was resolved to deliver his Opinion, according to his Reason, and not seek to please another: He had offered him faithful Advices, and warned him of the Cloud that he saw gathering against him. This he wrote on the 6th of *July*, some Months before it broke out: It seems the Protector took this Freedom well from him, for he continued firm to him to the last. His Brother, the Lord *Seimour's* Fall lay heavy on him: Tho' that Lord had almost compassed another Design, of marrying the Lady *Elizabeth*: So I find it in the Council's Letters to *Hobby* of the 18th of *January* 154<sup>s</sup>.

Cotton Libr.  
Titus, D. 3.

The Entertaining  
Foreign Troops  
in England.

As for the other Matter with which he was loaded, the entertaining some *German* Troops, I find among Sir *Philip Hobby's* Letters, a great many Orders and Letters, signed by the whole Council, as well as by the Protector, which shew that they all concurred in that Matter. The true Secret of it on both Sides was this: The Bulk of the People of *England* was still possessed with the old Superstition to such a degree, that it was visible they could not be depended on, in any Matter that related to the Alterations that were made, or were designed to be made: Whereas the *Germans* were full of Zeal, on the other side; so that they might well be trusted to: And the Princes of *Germany*, who were then kept under by the Emperor, so that they neither durst nor could keep their Troops at home, but hoped they might at some better time have an Occasion to use them, were willing to put them in the Hands of the present Government of *England*. Howsoever, this had an odious Name put on it, and was called a ruling by Strangers: So that it very much shook the Duke of *Somerfet's* Popularity; for tho' it could not be denied, that all the Council had concurred with him in it, yet the Load and Blame of all was laid on him.

The Popish Party was very active in procuring the Change of Measures that followed. The Council wrote over to the Emperor, to let him

him know that the Necessity of their Affairs was like to force them to treat for the delivering up of *Bullogne* to the *French*; tho' this was a Secret, not yet communicated to the whole Privy Council.

1547.

*Boner's* being removed was not much resented, neither at home nor abroad. He was a brutal Man, few either loved or esteemed him: And *Ridley*, who came to succeed him, was the most generally esteemed Man of all the Reformers. One Thing that made it more acceptable to those who favoured the Reformation, was the suppressing the Bishoprick of *Westminster*, and the removing *Thirleby* to *Norwich*, where it was thought he could do less Mischief than where he was: For tho' he complied as soon as any Change was made, yet he secretly opposed every thing, while it was safe to do it. He had a soft and an insinuating Way with him; which, as was thought, prevailed too much even on *Cranmer* himself. But *Gardiner* was a dextrous Man, and much more esteemed, tho' as little beloved as *Boner* was: So the falling on him gave a greater Alarm to the whole Party. He who was so well known both in the Emperor's Court, and in the *French* Court, sent over tragical Accounts of the Usage he met with. This was writ over hither by our Ambassador at the Court of *France*: Upon which a very severe Character of him is given in a Letter signed *E. Somerset, T. Cant. R. Rich. C. W. Wiltshire, J. Warwick, J. Bedford, W. Northampton, G. Clinton, W. Petre, W. Cecyl*. In it they gave an Account of the Proceedings against him; and add, "He had shewed  
" not only a wilful Pride, but a cankered Heart, guilty of open and  
" shameful Lies; by which impudent Falshood, he shewed himself  
" most unworthy to be a Bishop, whatsoever Strangers may think of  
" him. For Religion, he is as far from any Piety or Fashion of a  
" good Bishop, as a Player of a Bishop in a Comedy is from a good  
" Bishop indeed."

Whether the Protector designed any thing against the Constitution of the Church, or at least to swallow up the great Endowments that were not yet devoured, I cannot tell. But there is an Advice in one of *Hobby's* Letters, dextrously enough proposed, that gives Reason to suspect this might be on Design to broach a Business that was to be so cunningly proposed: And *Hobby* being a Confident of the Protector's, he may be supposed to have written as he was directed by him. He wrote it in *September* 1548. He tells the Council, "that the Pro-  
" testants of *Germany* hoped that the King, seeing that the late Wars  
" in *Germany* happened chiefly by the Bishops continuing in their  
" Princely and Lordly Estate, would, for preventing the like, ap-  
" point the Godly Bishops an honest and competent Living, sufficient  
" for their Maintenance, taking from them the rest of those worldly  
" Possessions and Dignities, and thereby avoid the Vain-Glory that  
" letteth them truly and sincerely to do their Office, and preach the  
" Gospel and Word of Christ. On the other side he wrote, the Pa-  
" pists say they doubt not but my Lords the Bishops, being a great  
" Number of stout and well learned Men, will well enough weigh  
" against their Adversaries, and maintain still their whole Estate;  
" which coming to pass they have good Hope, that in time these  
" Princely Pillars will well enough resist this Fury, and bring all  
" things again into the old Order."

I have



1547.

The Popish  
Party deceiv-  
ed in their  
Hopes on the  
Protector's  
Fall.

I have no Particulars to add concerning the Protector's Fall, and the new Scene; but that soon after, when it appeared that the Papists were not like to be more favourably dealt with, than they were under the Duke of *Somerſet*, the Biſhop of *Arras* did expoſtulate upon it with *Hobby*. He ſaid, they had been aſſiſting to the pulling down of the Duke of *Somerſet*, and that Hopes of better Uſage had been given them; yet things went worſe with them than before: Upon that he fell to rail at *Bucer*, and ſaid, he believed he inflamed Matters in *England*, as much as he had done in the Empire. For at this Time many were forced to come to *England* for Shelter, the chief of whom were *Bucer*, *Fagius*, *Peter Martyr*, and *Bernardin Ochinus*; all theſe were entertained by *Cranmer*, till he got good Proviſions to be made for them, in the Univerſities; which were now moſt violently ſet againſt every Step that was made towards a Reformation. *Hobby* came over to *England*, and tried what Service he could do to his Friend the Duke of *Somerſet*: But the Faction was grown too ſtrong to be withſtood. Upon his Submiſſion, the Matter went for ſome Time very high againſt him, and his Friends. On the 13th of *October*, Sir *Thomas Smith*, Sir *Michael Stankope*, Sir *John Thynne*, and *Edward Wolfe*, called Adherents to the Duke of *Somerſet*, and the principal Inſtruments of his Ill Government, were ſent to the *Tower*; and on the 14th he himſelf was ſent thither. No more Mention is made of them till the 6th of *February*, that the Duke of *Somerſet* was ſet at Liberty; but bound in a Recognizance of 10000*l.* not to go above Four Mile from *Schene*, or *Syon*, nor to come into the King's Preſence, unleſs he was called for by the King, and his Council. And when he knew that the King was to come within Four Miles of theſe Houſes, he was to withdraw from them. Yet, it ſeems, his Enemies were ſtill in ſome Apprehenſion of him; and probably, ſome Meſſages went between him and his Friends in the *Tower*: For, on the 18th of *February*, they were all made Cloſe Priſoners, and their Servants were not ſuffered to attend upon them. But it ſeems, upon Examination, this was found not to be of a Criminal Nature; ſo, on the 22d, they were diſmiſſed upon their Recognizances. And upon the 10th of *April*, the Duke of *Somerſet* was again brought to the Council-Board, being that Day ſworn of the Privy-Council.

Council-Book.

On the 20th of *April*, *Hobby* being ſent back to the Emperor's Court, had Orders to try if the Propoſition for a Marriage of the Lady *Mary* to the Prince of *Portugal*, might be again ſet on foot: And in Excuse for its being rejected before, he had Orders to ſay, that ſew of the Council had been made acquainted with it: He was deſired therefore to enquire, what that Prince's Eſtate was. Whether this flowed from the Earl of *Warwick's* Ambitious Deſigns, which might make him wiſh to have her ſent away far out of *England*; or, if it flowed from the Uneaſineſs the Council was in, by reaſon of her perſiſting in the Old Way of Religion, I cannot determine. *Hobby* had alſo Orders to repreſent to the Emperor, that they had hitherto connived at her Maſs, in hopes that She would by that Connivance be moved to conform herſelf to the Laws:

Diverſity

Diversity of Rites in Matters of Religion, ought not to be suffer'd. The Laws were so strict, that no Licence could be granted, in Opposition to them: Yet they were resolv'd to connive a little longer, tho' She abus'd the King's Favour; for She kept as it were an open Church, not only for her Servants, but for all her Neighbours: They therefore wish'd, that the Emperor would give her good Advice in this Matter. The Letter was sign'd by *Cranmer*, by the Earls of *Wiltshire* and *Warwick*, the Marquis of *Northampton*, the Lord *Wentworth*, and *Paget*, *Petre*, *Herbert*, *Darcy* and *Mason*. To all this, it seems, the Emperor had little Regard: For not long after that, the Ambassador wrote over, that by the Emperor's Command, an Order was serv'd on him, not to have the *English* Service in his House. The Council look'd on this, as contrary to the Privileges of Ambassadors, by the Law of Nations. So they order'd, that the Emperor's Ambassador should not have Mass in his House, and gave him Notice of it. When the Emperor knew this, he complain'd of it, as a High Violation of the Dignity of that Character: But the Council-Books shew that they stood firm, and would not recal their Order, till the Emperor recalled his Order against the New Service in the *English* Ambassador's House. What further Proceedings were of either Side in this Matter, does not appear to me. I find by the Council-Books, that the Carrying on the Reformation was cordially espous'd, and pursu'd at that Board.

1549.

*Gardiner* had been long a Prisoner; and his being detain'd in the Tower, no Proceedings being had against him, occasion'd a great Outcry: So, on the 8th of *June*, 1550, it was resolv'd to send some to him, to see if he repented of his former Obstinacy, and would apply himself to advance the King's Proceedings; upon which the King would receive him into Favour, and all pass'd Errors should be forgiven. So the Duke of *Somerset*, and others, were sent to him. They made Report on the 10th of *June*, that he desired to see the Book of the King's Proceedings, and then he would make a full Answer. He seem'd to them in all Things willing to conform himself to it, promising that if he found any thing in it against his Conscience, he would open it to none but to the Council. So the Book was sent him; and he was allow'd the Liberty of the Gallery and Gardens in the Tower, when the Duke of *Norfolk* was not in them. On the 13th of *June*, the Lieutenant of the Tower report'd, that he had given him back the King's Book; and that he said, he would make no Answer to it, till he was set at Liberty; and that then he would speak his Conscience: So the Lords, who had been with him, were appointed to go to him again. The Matter rest'd till the 8th of *July*.

Proceedings  
against *Gardiner*.

In an imperfect Book of the Minutes of the Council, that I have by me, it is set down, that *Gardiner* did at last subscribe Six Articles. The Two first appear not. The Third is, "That the Book of Common-Prayer was a Godly and Christian Book, to be allow'd and observed by all the King's true Subjects. 4th, That the King, in his young and tender Age, was a full and entire King: And that the Subjects were bound to obey the Statutes, Proclamations, and Commands set forth in this Age, as well as if he were Thirty or



1550. " Forty Years old. 5th, That the Statute of the Six Articles was, " for just Causes, repealed by the Authority of Parliament. 6th, That " the King, and his Successors, had full Authority in the Churches " of *England* and *Ireland*, to Reform and Correct Errors and Abuses, " and to alter Rites and Ceremonies Ecclesiastical, as shall seem most " convenient for the Edification of his People ; so that the Alteration " is not contrary to the Scriptures, and the Laws of God." To all this he subscribed his Name : But no Date is added to those Minutes ; but it is entred, that he did it in the Presence of the Council, who also subscribed as Witnesses to it. Their Names are, *E. Somerset, W. Wiltshire, J. Warwick, J. Bedford, W. Northampton, E. Clinton, G. Cobham, W. Paget, W. Herbert, W. Petre, E. North*. It was resolved to carry his Submissions further ; so Twenty New Articles were drawn up : In which, " the Obligation to Celibacy, and all the Vows made " by the Monks, all Images, Relicks, and Pilgrimages are condemn- " ed. It is affirmed, that the Scriptures ought to be read by all ; " That the Mass was full of Abuse and Superstition, and was justly " taken away : That the Eucharist ought to be received in both " Kinds : That Private Masses were not agreeable to Scripture : That " the Sacrament ought not to be adored : That the Book of Homi- " lies was Godly and Wholsome : That the Book of Ordaining Bi- " shops, Priests and Deacons, ought to be received and approved by " all ; and that the Lesser Orders were not necessary : That the Scrip- " tures contained all Things necessary to Salvation : And that *Eras- " mus's* Paraphrase was, upon Good and Godly Considerations, or- " dered by the King to be put in all Churches."

But to this a Preface was added, setting forth, " That whereas he " had been suspected as Favouring the Bishop of *Rome's* Authority, " and that he did not approve of the King's Proceedings, in Alter- " ing some Rites in Religion : Upon which, he had been brought " before the Council, and admonished ; and was ordered to Preach, " declaring himself in those Things. But tho' he promised to do it, " he had not done this, as he ought to have done : By which, he " had not only incurred the King's Displeasure, but divers of the " King's Subjects were encouraged by his Example, (as the King's " Council was certainly informed) to repine at his Majesty's pro- " ceedings : For which he was very sorry, and confessed that he " had been condignly punished. And he thanked the King for his " Clemency, treating him not with Rigor, but Mercy. And that it " might appear how little he did repine at his Highness's Doings, " which in Religion were most Godly, and to the Commonwealth " most Prudent : He did therefore of his own Will, and without " any Compulsion, subscribe the following Articles." But on the Margin of the Minutes, the Bishop's Answer to this is thus set down : " I cannot in my Conscience confess the Preface ; knowing myself " to be of that Sort, I am indeed, and ever have been——." The rest is torn out. On the 15th of *July*, it is entred, that Report was made by those who were sent to him, that he said he had never of- fended the King : So he prayed that he might be brought to his Trial, in which he asked no Mercy, but only Justice. When he had passed

passed his Trial and was released, it should then appear what he would do with relation to the Articles: But it was not reasonable that he should subscribe them, while he was yet in Prison. 1550.

Some of the Privy-Councillors were sent again to him, and they were ordered to carry with them a Divine and a Temporal Lawyer; so they took with them *Ridley* Bishop of *London*, and *Mr. Goodrick*: His Answer was to the same Purpose, and was next Council Day reported. Upon which he was brought before the Council, and required to subscribe the Paper; but he still refusing to do it, the Sentence of Sequestration was read, with a Denunciation of Deprivation, if he did not conform within Three Months: Nevertheless (it is added in the Council-Book) upon divers good Considerations, and especially upon hope that within that time he might be yet reconciled, it was agreed, that the said Bishop's House and Servants should be maintained in their present Estate, until the Time that this Intimation should expire: And the Matter in the mean time was to be kept private. These are all the Additional Passages taken from the Council-Book relating to *Gardiner*.

These Steps, in which the Reformation was advancing but slowly, occasioned great Distractions over most Parts of the Kingdom: While those who adhered to the Old Practices and Doctrines preached severely against all Innovations, and others as severely against all Corruptions and Abuses. The ill Effects of these contradictory Sermons had given occasion to a Proclamation on the 24th of *April* 1550, prohibiting all Preaching, except by Persons licensed by the King, or the Archbishop of *Canterbury*: And the Disorders occasioned by Mens divorcing their Wives, or marrying more Wives than one, were likewise ordered to be proceeded against by the same Proclamation. On the 9th of *August*, there came out another Proclamation, prohibiting all Plays till *Allbollontide*: What the Reason of this last was, does not appear. That against all Preaching was much censured. It was represented, that by reason of the Proclamation against Preaching, the People were running into great Ignorance and Dissoluteness. So Letters were ordered to be written to the Bishops of *Duresme* and *Ely*; and Eight Days after to the Bishop of *Lincoln*, and other Bishops, to appoint their Chaplains, and others by their Discretion, to preach in their Dioceses, notwithstanding the Proclamation against Preaching. There was also an Order made in Council, that some Bishops, and other Learned Men, should devise an Order for the Creation of *Bishops* and *Priests*. I use the Words in the Council-Book. Twelve were appointed to prepare it. *Heath*, Bishop of *Worcester*, was one of them. It seems there was a digested Form already prepared, probably by *Cranmer*, for that Service: For the Order was made on the 2d of *February*, and on the 28th it was brought to the Council, signed by Eleven of the Number, *Heath* only refusing to sign it: He said, as it is entred in the Council-Book, that all that is contained in the Book was Good and Godly; he also said he would obey it; but added that he would not sign it. The Matter was respited for some Days, and great Pains was taken by *Cranmer*, and others, to persuade him to sign it; but he still refusing it (as the Council-Book has it) *obstinately*; He was on the 4th of *March* sent

All Preaching is forbidden, except by Persons especially Licensed.

*Heath* refuses to subscribe the Book of Ordinations.



1550.

sent to the *Fleet*. He was in *September* called again before the Council, and required to subscribe the Book: And divers Learned Men argued to persuade him, that the Book was expedient and allowable: His Obstinacy was charged on him, for which they said he had deserved a longer Imprisonment: But he might still recover the King's Favour if he would subscribe it. He acknowledged he had been very gently used, rather like a Son than a Subject: He insisted on what he had formerly said, that he would not disobey the Order set forth in the Book: Every one in the Council took Pains on him, for it seemed a Contradiction to say he would Obey it, and yet not Subscribe it. He was offered more Time for Conferences. He said he knew he could never be of another Mind; adding, that there were other Things to which he would not Consent, as to take down *Altars*, and to set up instead of them *Tables*. The Matter ended with a Charge given him to subscribe under the Pain of Deprivation. At this Time Two Entries made in the Council-Books shew the good Effects of *Latimer's* Zealous Preaching. On the 10th of *March* he brought in 104 *l.* recovered of one who had concealed it from the King: And a little after 363 *l.* of the King's Money: Of which for his Attendance in *Lent*, 50 *l.* was allowed to him. I find there was in this Reign, as in the former, a Peculiar Seal for Ecclesiastical Matters, which was in Secretary *Petre's* keeping: Many took out Licences under this Seal, for eating Meat in *Lent*; some only for a Man and his Wife; and some for Four, Six, or Ten, that did Eat with them: And some for as many as should come to their House. Licences of another Nature, I find were often taken out for keeping a Number of Retainers, above what was allowed by the Statute.

Day Bishop of  
*Chichester* in  
Trouble for  
not removing  
Altars.

All Endeavours were too weak to overcome the Aversion that the People had to the Steps that were made towards a Reformation. Dr. *Cox* the King's Almoner and Preceptor was sent to *Sussex*, to Preach and Instruct the People there, who were much disturbed, (as the Council-Book has it) by the Seditious Preaching of *Day* Bishop of *Chichester*, and others. *Day* denied this: So an Order was made in Council, that he should bring in Writing that which he had Preached. The Duke of *Somerset* reported to the Council, that *Day* had been with him, and owned that he had received the Order that the Council had made for the taking down of Altars, and setting Tables in their stead: But answered that he could not in Conscience obey it: This seemed indeed unaccountable: But he insisted that he could not in Conscience obey it, and prayed to be excused: Upon that he was summoned to appear before the Council, and there, he said, he could not Conform himself to their Order: For he thought he followed in that both the Scriptures, and the Doctors, and Fathers of the Church: And that he did not perceive any Strength in the Six Reasons, given by the Bishop of *London*, to justify the Change. He quoted a Passage in *Isaiah*, which the Archbishop, with the Bishop of *London*, and the rest of the Council thought not at all to the Purpose: So he was ordered to confer with the Archbishop, and the Bishops of *Ely* and *London*, and to appear before them on the 4th of *December*. When he was again before the Council, he entred into a Dispute with the Archbishop, and the Bishop of *Ely*. They pressed him to give his

his Reasons for being so positive; he insisted on those Words in the Epistle to the *Hebrews*, *We have an Altar*: And though they thought it was clear, that by the Altar Christ himself was meant, yet that did not satisfy him: They also shewed him from *Origen*, that the Christians in those Days had no Altars: He might call the Table an Altar if he pleased: So the Antient Writers did; but all this had no Effect on him. A few more Days were given him to consider of the Matter: He positively answered he could not obey their Order with a good Conscience: And rather than do it, he was resolved to suffer the Loss of all he had. Two Days more were given him: But he was still firm. So on the 11th of *December* 1550, he was sent to the *Fleet*. Further Proceedings against him were stopt for many Months; in which Time it is said that the King himself wrote to him: But all was in vain. So in *September* 1551, a Commission was given to judge him; and on the 14th of *October* it seems both *Heath* and he were deprived: For then an Order passed in Council for seizing the Temporalities of both their Bishopricks. Letters were written in *June* 1552, concerning them to the Bishops of *Ely* and *London*; the former was to receive *Day*, and the latter *Heath*, and to use them as in Christian Charity should be most seemly. It seems that both *Heath* and *Day* saw the Change of Doctrine that was preparing, with relation to the Sacrament: So they were willing to lay hold on the first Colour to break off from any further Compliances; for the Points they stood upon did not seem of such Importance, as to suffer Deprivation, and Imprisonment for them.

1550.

There was at that Time a very Scandalous Venality of all Offices and Employments, which was so much talked of at the Court of *France*, that the Ambassador whom the King had there, wrote over an Account of it; and it was said that whereas King *Henry* had by his Endowments made some Restitution, yet for all the Wealth they had seized on in Chantries and Collegiate Churches, no Schools, nor Hospitals were yet endowed. Here a very memorable Passage in *Ridley's* Life deserves to be remembred: He wrote to *Cheek*, that he being to give *Grindal* a Prebend in *St. Paul's*, had received a Letter from the Council to stop Collation: For the King was to keep that Prebend for the Furniture of his Stable. "Alas, Sir, (he writes) this is a heavy hearing. Is this the Fruit of the Gospel? Speak, Mr. *Cheek*, speak for God's Sake, in God's Cause, unto whomsoever you think you may do any Good withal: And if you will not speak, then I beseech you let this my Letter speak." There was nothing that opened all Mens Mouths, more than a Complaint entred in the Council-Book, made by one *Norman* against the Archbishop of *York*, that he took his Wife and kept her from him. The Council gave such Credit to this, that as a Letter was written to that Archbishop, not to come to Parliament, so they ordered a Letter to be written to Sir *Thomas Gargrave*, and Mr. *Chaloner* to examine the Matter. What they did, or what Report they made, does not appear to me. *Holgate* during all the Time he was Archbishop of *York*, was more set on enriching himself than on any Thing else. He seemed heartily to concur in the Reformation, but he was looked on as a Reproach to it, rather than a Promoter of it. This might have a

Scandals given by many.



1550.

share in the Censure, that as was reported King *Edward* passed on the Bishops in that Time, *Some for Sloth, some for Ignorance, some for Luxury, and some for Popery, are unfit for Discipline and Government.* At this time the Anabaptists were again enquired after, and a Commission was granted to *Cranmer, Thirleby, Cox, and Sir Thomas Smith,* to enquire after them, and to judge them.

*Gardiner is  
deprived.*

Now *Gardiner's* Business was brought to a Conclusion. On the 23d of *November*, a Committee of the Council was appointed to consider how to proceed further against him : On the 14th of *December* an Order was sent to the Lieutenant of the *Tower* to carry him to *Lambeth* on the 16th, and after that as often as they required him. The Commission to try him was directed to *Cranmer*, and others : He desired Council, it was granted ; and his Lawyers had free Access to him. On the 19th of *January* his Servants moved in Council, that some of that Board might be sworn as his Witnesses : They said they would Answer upon their Honour, but would not be Sworn : And on the 15th of *February*, the last Mention made of him in the Council-Book, is in these Words, “ For as much as the Bishop had at all  
“ Times before the Judges of his Cause, used himself Unreverently  
“ to the King’s Majesty, and very Slanderously towards his Council ;  
“ and especially Yesterday being the Day of the Judgment given  
“ against him, he called the Judges Heretics and Sacramentaries ;  
“ these being there, as the King’s Commissioners, and of his High-  
“ ness’s Council, it was ordered that he should be removed from his  
“ present Lodging into a meaner one in the *Tower*, and have but one  
“ Servant to wait on him : That his Books and Papers should be  
“ taken from him, and that from henceforth he should have neither  
“ Pen, Ink, nor Paper given him, but be sequestred from all Confe-  
“ rence, and from all Means that may serve him to practise any ways.” Here was Severity upon Severity, which as it raised him to be depended on as the Head of the Popish Party, so it must have recommended him to the Compassions of all equitable People.

Whether these hard Orders were rigorously executed or not, does not appear to me. I find in a Letter of *Hooper's* to *Bullinger*, one Circumstance relating to *Gardiner*. It is without Date. In it, as he tells him that *Crome* did with Zeal oppose their Doctrine concerning the Sacrament ; but commends him, as a Person of great Learning, and a Man of a most Holy Life ; he tells him also, That *Gardiner* had a Month before sent him a Challenge to a public Disputation upon that Head ; promising, that if he did not clearly carry away the Victory, he would submit himself to the Laws, and would willingly suffer the Cruellest Hardships. *Hooper* accepted the Challenge, and a Day was set for them to dispute : But when the Day came near, *Gardiner* said, he must be first set at Liberty : So all this Shew of a Readiness to maintain the Old Doctrine, vanished to nothing. Concerning the King, *Hooper* writes in that same Letter, That these Thousand Years, there had not been any Person of his Age, who had such a Mixture both of Piety and Learning, with so true a Judgment, as appeared in him. If he lived, and went on suitably to these Beginnings, he would be the Wonder and the Terror of the World. He took Notes of all the Sermons he heard ; and after Din-  
ner,

ner, he asked the young Persons that were bred up with him, an Account of what they remembred of the Sermon; and went over the whole Matter with them. He wrote further in this Letter, That then they were every Day expecting that the Duke of *Somerset* should be again called, to sit in the Council.

1550.

*Poinet*, Bishop of *Rocheſter*, was Translated to *Wincheſter*, being Nominated to it the 8th of *March*: And on the 5th of *April*, he took his Oath of Homage. While he was Bishop of *Rocheſter*, he had no Houſe to live in, ſo he kept his Benefice in *London*. But it is entred in the Council-Book, that no Biſhop after him, was to have any Benefice, beſides his Biſhoprick.

A new Scene of Contention was at this Time very unhappily opened. *Hooper*, a Zealous, a Pious, and a Learned Man, had gone out of *England* in the latter Years of King *Henry's* Reign; and had lived at *Zurick*, at a Time, when all *Germany* was in a Flame, on the Account of the *Interim*. Upon that, a great Queſtion aroſe among the *Germans*, concerning the Uſe of Things in themſelves indifferent. For, a great Part of the Deſign of the *Interim* was, to keep up the exterior Face of Things, as it had been in Popery, with the Softenings of ſome other Senſes put on them. It was ſaid, "If Things  
" were Indifferent in themſelves, it was Lawful, and that it became  
" the Subjects Duty to obey them when commanded." Many thought that *Melanchthon* himſelf went in that Matter too far. It was viſible, the Deſign in it, was, to make the People think the Difference was not great between that and Popery: So the Rites were ordered to be kept up on purpoſe, to make it eaſy to draw the People over to Popery. Out of this another Queſtion aroſe; Whether it was Lawful to Obey in Indifferent Things, when it was certain they were enjoined with an Ill Deſign? Some ſaid, the Deſigns of Legislators were not to be enquired into, nor judged: And whatever they were, the Subjects were ſtill bound to Obey. This created a vaſt Diſtraction in *Germany*, while ſome obeyed the *Interim*, but many more were firm to their Principles, and were turned out of all for their Diſobedience. Thoſe who ſubmitted were for the moſt part *Lutherans*, and carried the Name of *Adiaphoriſts*, from the *Greek* Word that ſignifies Things indifferent. The Reformed were generally firmer. Thoſe of *Switzerland*, particularly at *Zurick*, had at this Time great Apprehenſions of a Deſign of Introducing Popery, by keeping up an Exterior, that reſembled it. Of this I find a very late Inſtance, the Year before this, in a Letter that *Mont* wrote from *Straſburg*, on the 18th of *February* 1548, to *Musculus*, which will be found in the Collection.

An Account  
of Bp. Hooper.

Coll. Numb. 3.

" When he left *Augsburg*, there were no Changes then begun  
" there; but they expected every Day, when the New Superſtitious  
" Practices were to be ſet up. One of the Miniſters told him,  
" that the Magiſtrates had deſired the Miniſters, not to forſake  
" them in that Time of Diſtreſs. They promiſed that they would  
" give them timely Notice, when thoſe Rites were to be brought  
" in among them. They prayed them likewiſe, to recommend the  
" *Interim* in the ſoſteſt Manner, and with the beſt Colours they  
" could. This was reſuſed by the greater Number of them: who  
" ſaid,



1550.

“ said, they could never approve that, which was by an unanimous  
 “ Consent condemned. He did not doubt, but they had heard what  
 “ was done in *Saxony*. He wishes, the *German* Courage and Firm-  
 “ nefs might now appear: That if they could not act with their  
 “ usual Courage, they might at least shew their Courage in Suffer-  
 “ ing. The Duke of *Deux-Ponts* had left *Augsburg*; and said, the  
 “ Publishing the *Interim* did not belong to him, but to the Bishops.  
 “ Those of *Breme* had such a heavy Composition laid on them by  
 “ the Emperor, that they said, it was not in their Power to comply  
 “ with it, tho’ they had a Mind to it. So it was thought, this  
 “ was done on Design to take their Town, as a Convenient Post  
 “ for a Garrisoned Place, to keep that Country in Order. He con-  
 “ cludes, desiring to know what Agreement there was, as to these  
 “ Matters, in the *Helvetick* Churches.” They were, indeed, much  
 inflamed on this Occasion; and very Zealous against any Compliance  
 with the *Interim*, or the Use of the Rites prescribed by it: So *Hooper*  
 came from *Zurick*, in the Heat of this Debate, and with this Tincture  
 upon his Mind.

When he came to *Brussels*, on the 20th of *April* 1549, he wrote  
*Coll. Numb. 4.* a Letter to *Bullinger*, that is in the Collection. “ He sets forth in  
 “ it, very tragically, the Misery of the *Netherlands*, under the vio-  
 “ lent Oppressions of the *Spaniards*. Complaints were heard in all  
 “ Places, of Rapes, Adulteries, Robberies, and other Insolences, every  
 “ Day committed by them: So that an Hostess of a Public House  
 “ said to him, If she could but carry her Children in her Arms  
 “ with her, she would chuse to go and beg from Door to Door,  
 “ rather than suffer their Brutalities every Day, as they were forced  
 “ to do. He hoped this would be a Warning, to put others on their  
 “ Guard.

“ The Emperor came seldom out of his Chamber. *Hooper* had  
 “ been at the Duke of *Saxony*’s House, who had about Thirty of  
 “ his Servants still attending on him: He designed to have talked  
 “ with *Hooper*, but the *Spaniards* hindred it. He had no Hope of  
 “ obtaining his Liberty, tho’ his Health was much broken: But he  
 “ continued firm in his Religion, and did not despair of Things,  
 “ but hoped Religion would be again revived. The Landgrave was  
 “ kept at *Oudenard*. He was both uneasy, and inconstant. Some-  
 “ times he was ready to submit to the Emperor, and to go to  
 “ *Mas*: At other Times, he railed at the Emperor; and at the *In-*  
 “ *terim*, (*Hooper* was entertained by *Hobby*, the *English* Ambassa-  
 “ dor, from whom probably he heard these Things;) he prayed  
 “ God to pity him, for he suffered justly for his Treachery. The  
 “ Pope’s Legate was there, and preached all that *Lent* in his own  
 “ Court.

“ The Pope and the Emperor were then in very ill Terms. The  
 “ Pope pressed the Emperor to own the Council at *Bologna*; for he  
 “ was afraid to let it Sit again in *Trent*: But the Emperor was as  
 “ positive for their Coming back to *Trent*; and said roundly, He  
 “ would break with the Pope, if that were not done. The Amba-  
 “ sador told him, That if the Emperor’s Confessor were to any de-  
 “ gree

“gree set right, there might be good Hope of the Emperor: But  
“both he, and all his Ministers, were strangely governed, and in a  
“manner driven by the Confessor. About Seven Months before  
“this, he had left the Emperor, because he would not be more  
“severe, and would not restore Popery entirely in *Germany*. The  
“Emperor had offered him a Bishoprick in *Spain*, worth 20,000  
“Crowns: But he refused it, and said, He would be tied to the  
“Church, but not to him, unless he would serve the Church with  
“more Zeal. The Emperor seemed to design to break the Peace of  
“*Switzerland*, and *Hooper* understood that some of *Lucern* were  
“then hanging on at Court, probably with no good Design. He  
“wishes they would fear God, lead Holy Lives, and Fight bravely:  
“And so they might expect to be protected by God: Yet he under-  
“stood that the Emperor was troubled that he had meddled so much  
“as he had done in Matters of Religion in *Germany*: He found that  
“was like to cross his other Designs, which might have succeeded  
“better if he had left that Matter more at liberty. His Army lay  
“then near *Bremen*, but was undertaking nothing. The Cities there  
“had furnished themselves with Stores and Provisions for Five Years;  
“and were making no Submissions.” This Account I thought no  
Digression from my chief Design in Writing, since this Intelligence  
came, no doubt, from the Ambassador. Upon *Hooper*’s coming to  
*England* he applied himself much to Preaching, and to the Explaining  
the Scriptures. He was much followed, and all Churches were  
crowded where he preached. He went through the Epistle to *Titus*,  
and Ten Chapters of the Gospel of *St. John*: His Fame came to  
Court. *Poinet* and he were ordered to preach all the Lent at Court;  
*Hooper* on *Wednesdays*, and *Poinet* on *Fridays*: He was also sent to  
Preach both in *Kent* and *Essex*. At this Time *Bullinger* wrote to  
the King, and sent with it a Book that he had dedicated to him,  
which was presented to the King by the Marquis of *Northampton*;  
for an Order was made, that none but Privy Counsellors might bring  
Books, or Papers to the King. The King said to *Hooper*, that he had  
read the Letter, and would read *Bullinger*’s Book: and spoke to the  
Marquis of a Present to be sent him: But *Hooper* told him, He never  
took any: besides, that it was forbidden by the Laws of *Zurick*.  
*Hooper*, in his Letters to *Bullinger*, on the 8th of *February* 1550,  
says, The Archbishop of *Canterbury*, the Bishops of *Rocheſter*,  
*Ely*, *St. David’s*, *Lincoln* and *Bath*, were sincerely set on advancing  
the Purity of Doctrine, agreeing in all Things with the *Helvetic*  
Churches. He commends particularly the Marquis of *Dorchester*,  
afterwards Duke of *Suffolk*, and the Earl of *Warwick*, after-  
wards Duke of *Northumberland*, who at that Time put on such a  
Shew of Zeal, that *Hooper* calls him a most Holy Instrument, and  
the best affected to the Word of God. He writes of *Cranmer*, that  
he wishes he were not too feeble. He was at *London*, when the  
Council divided from the Duke of *Somerset*, but had not meddled in  
that Matter: And he says not a Word of it, but that he blesses  
God, the Duke of *Somerset* was to be set at Liberty. In *June*, he  
was named to be Bishop of *Gloceſter*; for he gives an Account of



1550. it in a Letter to *Bullinger*, on the 29th of *June*. He declined it, as he writes, both for the Oath, which he says was *feul* and *impious*, and by reason of the *Aaronical* Habits. The King asked, What his Reasons were? He told them very freely to him. He says of him, that the World never saw such a Prince as He was, for his Age. He likewise says, the Lady *Elizabeth*, his Sister, was wonderfully Zealous, and very Knowing: She read both *Greek* and *Latin*; and few could maintain an Argument against Her, particularly in Matters of Religion.

*Fædum & im-  
pium.*

Among the Letters sent me from *Zurick*, I find some written upon the Occasion of the Difficulty that was made in *Hooper's* Business, to *Bullinger* and *Gualter*, pressing them very earnestly to write to the King, to let fall all the Ceremonies: They tell them, that *Ridley*, tho' he stood upon the Forms of the Law, yet was very earnest to have *Hooper* made a Bishop. They seem also to reflect on the Bishops for their Earnestness in that Matter, as if they were ashamed to have that to be blamed, to which they themselves had submitted: And they reflect on *Bucer*, for Supporting the Matter too much. Those of *Zurick* were more discreet and modest, than to interpose in such a manner. It would have been too great a Presumption in them, to have made any such Application; but it seems, *Bullinger* wrote about it to the King's Præceptor, *Cox*. I have not found his Letter: But I find, by *Cox's* Letter to him, that he himself was for Proceeding easily in this Matter. He wrote to him in *May*, in these Words. "I think all Things in the Church ought to be Pure and Simple, removed at the greatest Distance from the Poms and Elements of this World. But, in this our Church, what can I do, in so low a Station? I can only endeavour to persuade our Bishops, to be of the same Mind with myself. This I wish truly, and I commit to God the Care and Conduct of his own Work." Of the King he writes, "Believe me there appears in him an incredible Beginning of Learning, with a Zeal for Religion, and a Judgment in Affairs almost already ripe." *Traberon*, at the same time, writes of Him, "We are training up a Prince, that gives the greatest Hopes of being a most Glorious Defender of the Faith, even to a Miracle. For, if God is not so provoked by our Sins, as to take him too early from us, we do not doubt, but that *England* shall again give the World another *Constantine*, or rather, one much better than he was."

This Matter took up much Time, and was managed with more Heat than might have been expected; considering the Circumstances of that Reign: He being named to be Bishop of *Glocester*, was recommended by *Dudley* to *Cranmer*, that he would not Charge him with an Oath that was (as is expressed) burdalous to his Conscience. This was the Oath of Supremacy. He next desired to be excused from accepting the Bishoprick, or from the Ceremonies used in the Consecration; upon which the King writ to *Cranmer* in *August*, freeing him from all Dangers and Penalties that he might incur by omitting those Rites, but left the Matter to the Archbishop's Discretion, without any Persuasion or Command to omit them. The Archbishop did

did not think fit upon that Letter to act against the Laws: There were several Conferences between *Ridley* and *Hooper*, not without Heat: *Hooper* maintaining that if it was not unlawful, yet it was highly inexpedient to use those Ceremonies. The Council apprehending the ill Effects of Controversies between Men of the same Profession, sent for *Hooper*, and wished him to let this Opposition of his fall. He desired Leave to put his Reasons in Writing; that was granted him: And when he offered his Reasons, they were communicated to *Ridley*. I gave an Account in my former Work how honestly and modestly both *Bucer* and *Peter Martyr* behaved themselves on this Occasion. *Peter Martyr* mentions *Hooper's* unseasonable and bitter Sermons, which it seems his Heat carried him to; and probably that was the Reason that moved the Council to command him to keep his House, unless it were to go to the Archbishop of *Canterbury*; or to the Bishops of *Ely*, *London*, or *Lincoln*, for the Satisfaction of his Conscience, and not to preach, or read, 'till he had further License. But he did not obey this Order: He writ a Book on the Subject, and printed it. This gave more Distaste. He also went about and complained of the Council, for which being called before the Board, he was committed to the Archbishop's Custody, to be reformed by him, or to be further punished. The Archbishop represented that he could in no sort work upon him, but that he declared himself for another way of Ordination: Upon that he was on the 27th of *January* committed to the *Fleet*.

1550.

*Micronius*, a Minister of the German Church at *London*, in a Letter to *Bullinger* on the 28th of *August*, 1550, tells him that the Exception that *Hooper* had to the Oath of Supremacy, was because the Form was, *By God, by the Saints, and by the Holy Gospels*. This he thought Impious; and when he was before the Council, the King being present, he argued that God only ought to be appealed to in an Oath, for he only knew the Thoughts of Men. The King was so fully convinced by this, that with his own Pen he struck these Words out of the Oath, saying, that no Creature was to be appealed to in an Oath. This being cleared, no Scruple remained but with relation to the Habits. The King and Council were inclined to order him to be dispensed with as to these. But *Ridley* prevailed with the King not to dispense in that Matter. The Thing was indifferent, and therefore the Law ought to be obeyed. This had such an Effect, that all *Hooper's* Exceptions were after that heard with great Prejudice. *Micronius* was on *Hooper's* Side as well as *Alasco*. *Ridley* had opposed the settling the German Church in a different way from the Rites of the Church of *England*: But *Alasco* had prevailed to obtain an entire Liberty for them to continue in the same Forms of Worship and Government, in which they had been constituted beyond Sea, in which he had been assisted by *Cranmer*. It is added in that Letter, that it was believed that the Emperor had sent one over to carry away the Lady *Mary* secretly, but the Design was discovered and defeated. To explain this Matter of the Oath, I shall insert in the Collections the Oath of the Bishops, as it was practised in King *Henry's* Reign, and continued to be used to that Time, which is on Record, and is among Mr. *Rymer's* Manuscripts. *Hooper's* Matter hung in suspense Nine whole

Coll. Numb. 5.



1550.

whole Months ; in which Time he seemed positively resolved not to yield, not without severe and indecent Reflections on those who used the Habits. *Cranmer* expressed a Willingness to have yielded to him ; but *Ridley* and *Goodrick* stood firm to the Law ; while many reflected on them, as insisting too much on a Thing practised by themselves, as if Vain-Glory and Self-Love had been their chief Motives : They said they wished that Distinction of Habits was abolished, but they thought the breaking through Laws was so bad a Precedent, and might have such ill Consequences, that they could not consent to it. *Bucer* and *Peter Martyr* expressed their Dislike of the Habits, but thought the Thing of itself indifferent ; so they blamed him for insisting so much on it. *Alasco* on the other Hand encouraged him to continue in his Refusal to submit to the Laws in that Matter : In Conclusion, he was prevailed on to submit, and was consecrated. This was written to *Bullinger* by one of the Ministers of the *German Church*. His standing out so long, and yielding in the End, lost him much of the Popularity, that, to speak freely, he seemed to be too fond of ; yet his great Labours in his Diocese, and his Patience and Constancy during his Imprisonment, and in his last most extreme Sufferings, made all good People willing to forget what was amiss, and to return to a just Esteem of what was so truly valuable in him.

In Conclusion, he submitted, and was consecrated according to the established Form, and went into his Diocese, which he found overrun with Ignorance and Superstition ; he applied himself to his Duty with great and indefatigable Industry ; preaching often twice, sometimes thrice in a Day, to instruct the People, and to reform the Clergy : He did earnestly wish that the Articles of Religion, which he knew were under Consideration, might be quickly published. He found the greatest Opposition in his Diocese rose from the Prebendaries of his Church. Of this he made great Complaints ; as indeed all the Bishops that were well affected to the Reformation, found the greatest Opposition in their Cathedrals ; though none of them expressed it so severely as *Ferrar* Bishop of *St. David's*, who wrote to a Lord, desiring that he might have leave to defend himself, against those *high-minded, arrogant, stubborn, ambitious, covetous Canons*, who for private Revenge were set against him : Yet on the other Hand there were great Complaints made of his Behaviour in his Diocese as both indiscreet and contentious. A Petition was sent up to the Council in the Name of the Inhabitants of his Diocese against him, complaining of his insatiable Covetousness, and his daily vexing his poor Tenants and Clergy without Cause ; and indeed his Firmness and Sufferings afterwards raised his Character, more than his Conduct in his Diocese had done.

The last and the most eminent of all the Popish Clergy, that fell in Trouble during this Reign, was *Tonstall* Bishop of *Duresme*. He was a generous and well tempered Man, learned far above the Common Rate. He retained his Old Opinion concerning the Presence in the Sacrament ; but he had hitherto submitted, and gone along in all that was done : He had no Heat, nor a Spirit of Opposition in his Temper, yet his Opinion was known. The true Account of his Matter has been taken out of the Council-Book, which has come

to

to Light since I wrote my History. One *Ninian Mainvil* charged him as consenting to a Conspiracy in the *North*, for raising a Rebellion there; to this the Bishop answered, and *Mainvil* made Replication: The Council-Book only refers to these, and gives no Account of the Bishop's Answer. *Mainvil* had a Letter of the Bishop's, which was his main Evidence, upon which the Issue of the Trial depended: But that was then wanted, and as appeared afterwards, the Letter was put in the Duke of *Somerset's* Hands, and he still kept it, but whether he did it out of Kindness to him, or to have this as a Check to over-awe *Tonstall*, does not appear.

1550.

This Letter was found among the Duke of *Somerset's* Papers, after his last Apprehension: Upon which *Tonstall* was sent for, and his Letter was produced against him. He could not deny it to be of his own Hand; and not being able to make any further Answer, he was on the 20th of *December* sent to the *Tower*. *Whitehead* Dean of *Duresme*, and *Handmarsh*, *Tonstall's* Chancellor, were accused of the same Crime by *Mainvil*. The Dean's Death put an end to his Trouble, but *Tonstall* lay in the *Tower* till Queen *Mary* set him at Liberty: and there, in the 77th Year of his Age, he wrote his Book asserting the Corporal Presence of Christ in the Sacrament. It seems the Evidence against *Tonstall* did not at all amount to a Consent to a Conspiracy; for he was only charged with Misprison of Treason; whereas the consenting to it would have been carried further, to High Treason itself: But even that must have been by a Stretch of his Words; since if his Letter had imported that, *Cranmer* could not have opposed, much less have protested against the Bill attainting him for Misprison, if the Evidence had been clear. This is confirmed by the Opposition made in the House of Commons, where the Bill fell. So since the Parliament would not attain him, a Commission was issued out some Months after; and on the 22d of *September* 1552, a Letter was written to the Lord Chief Justice, signifying to him, that there was a Commission addressed to him, and to some others, for determining the Bishop of *Duresme's* Case, with Eight Letters, and other Writings touching the same, which he is required to consider and to hear, and to give Order in the Matter as soon as the rest of his Colleagues were brought together. He was brought before these Commissioners: He desired Council, and Time convenient to make his Answer: Both were denied him, as is set forth in the Sentence that reversed this. He was charged as a Conspirator against the King and the Realm: The Commission empowered them to proceed against him for all Offences, both according to the Ecclesiastical and the Temporal Laws: He made divers Protestations against the several Steps of their Proceedings: And at last he Appealed from them to the King: The Commissioners on the 11th of *October* deprived him of his Bishoprick; but did not attain him of Misprison of Treason; for the Judgment in that Case must have been the Forfeiture of his Goods, and Imprisonment for Life: But he was by Order of Council on the 31st of *October* to receive Money for his Necessities, remaining Prisoner in the *Tower*, till further Order should be given, touching the Money and Goods lately appertaining to him.



1550.

This was one of the Violent Effects of the Duke of *Northumberland's* Ambition, who was all this while a concealed Papist, as himself declared at his Execution. I have laid all these Things relating to the Deprivation of the Bishops, that opposed the Reformation together, to give a full View of that Matter. But now I must look back to some Matters that happened while these Proceedings went on. There was an Information brought to the Council, of some at *Bocking*, who were irregular in the Worship of God, who thought that to stand, or to kneel at Prayer, or to be covered, or bare-headed, was not material, and that the Heart only was necessary: When they were brought before the Council, they confessed that they met together; sometimes to confer about the Scriptures, and that they had refused to receive the Communion above Two Years, as was judged upon very Superstitious and Erroneous Principles; (so it is entered in the Council-Book) with diverse other Evil Opinions, worthy of great Punishment: Five of them were sent to Prison, and Seven gave Bonds to appear when called for: They were required to resort to their Ordinaries, if they had any Doubt in Religion, for Resolution from them. These were probably some of the Anabaptists, though that is not objected to them.

Coll. Numb. 6

The Great Point that was then most canvassed in the Universities, was, the Presence in the Sacrament. Concerning this, I have, among the Papers sent me from *Zurick*, a Letter of *Peter Martyr's* to his Friend *Bullinger*, dated from *Oxford* the 1st of *June* 1550, which will be found in the Collection. "He excuses himself, for his  
 "Slowness in Answering his Letters, by reason of the constant Labour he was engaged in. For, besides his Daily Exposition of  
 "St. Paul, which might claim his whole Time, there was a New Load brought on him: He was commanded, by an Order from the  
 "King, to be present at the Public Disputations upon Theological Matters; which were held once a Fortnight. And in the College, in which he was placed, there was a Disputation, where he  
 "was appointed to be present, and to Moderate. He was in a perpetual Struggle with most obstinate Adversaries. The Business of  
 "Religion did not go on with the Zeal and Success to be wished for; yet it made a better Progress, than he had expected Four  
 "Months before. The Number of their Adversaries was great: They had few Preachers on their Side; and many of those who  
 "professed the Gospel, were guilty of gross Vices. Some, by a human Policy, were for purging Religion, but for altering outward Things as little as might be. They being Secular Men, apprehended, that upon a more visible Change, such Disorders  
 "would follow, as might prove fatal: Whereas, it was evident, that the innumerable Corruptions, Abuses and Superstitions, that had  
 "overrun the Church, were such, that it was impossible to reform it, without bringing Matters back to those pure Fountains, and to  
 "the first Sound Principles of Religion. The Devil studied to undermine those Good Designs, by keeping up still many Relicks of  
 "Popery, that by these, the Memory of the Old Abuses might be preserved, and the Return to them rendered easier. On the other  
 "Hand, they had this great Comfort, that they had a Holy King,  
 "full



“ full of fervent Zeal for true Religion. He writes, That he speaks  
 “ in all this tender Age, with that Learning, that Prudence, and  
 “ that Gravity, that it amazes all People who hear it. Therefore,  
 “ they were all bound, to pray God earnestly, to preserve him long  
 “ for the Good of the Church. There were several of the Nobility  
 “ well inclined, and some Bishops not of the worst Sort, among  
 “ whom the Archbishop of *Canterbury* was the Standard-Bearer.  
 “ *Hooper* was lately made a Bishop, to the Joy of all Good Men;  
 “ who was to pass thro’ *Oxford*, in his Way to his Diocese. He  
 “ believed, that he himself had given *Bullinger* an Account of his be-  
 “ ing made a Bishop, otherways he would have wrote it. He also  
 “ commends *Coverdale*’s Labours in *Devonshire*: and adds, that if  
 “ they could find many such Men, it were a great Happiness. *Alasco*  
 “ being forced to leave *Frizeland*, by reason of the *Interim*, was then  
 “ about the Settling his Congregation in *London*. He was at that  
 “ Time in the Archbishop’s House. The Peace with *France* gave  
 “ them some Hopes. All were under great Apprehensions, from the  
 “ Pope’s Designs of bringing his Council again together: but they  
 “ must still trust in God. And after somewhat of their private Con-  
 “ cerns, he desires his Prayers, for the Progress of God’s Word in  
 “ this Kingdom.

1550.

“ He also, in a Letter written on the 6th of *August* 1551, la-  
 “ ments the Death of the Young Duke of *Suffolk*, looking on him  
 “ as the most promising of all the Youth in the Nation, next to the  
 “ King himself.” After some more on that Subject, he adds this  
 “ sad Word, “ *There is no End put to our Sins, nor any Measure in*  
 “ *Sinning*. He commends *Hopper*’s Labours in his Diocese mighti-  
 “ ly, and wishes that there were many more such Bishops as he  
 “ was.”

1551.

*Peccatis neque  
 finis neq; modus  
 imponitur.*

Upon the Death of the Two young Dukes of *Suffolk*, *Grey*, Mar-  
 quis of *Dorchester* was made Duke of *Suffolk*. He had married their  
 Sister, but had no Sons by her. He had Three Daughters, of whom  
 the Eldest, Lady *Jane*, was esteemed the Wonder of the Age. She  
 had a Sweetness in her Temper, as well as a Strength of Mind,  
 that charmed all who saw her. She had a great Aptness to learn  
 Languages, and an earnest Desire to acquire Knowledge. Her Fa-  
 ther found out a very extraordinary Person, to give her the first im-  
 pressions: *Ailmer*, who was afterwards, in Queen *Elizabeth*’s Time,  
 advanced to be Bishop of *London*. Under his Care, she made an  
 amazing Progress. He found, it seems, some Difficulty in bringing  
 her to throw off the Vanities of Dress, and to use a greater Sim-  
 plicity in it. So on the 23d of *December*, 1552, he wrote to *Bullin-*  
 “ ger, “ That the Lady *Elizabeth* was a Pattern to all, in the Mode-  
 “ sty of her Dress; and yet nobody was prevailed on by such an  
 “ Illustrious Example to follow it; and, in all this Light of the  
 “ Gospel, to abstain from wearing Gold, or Gems, or Platting of  
 “ Hair.” He was particularly charged with the Education of Lady  
*Jane Gray*, whom he calls his Scholar: But, it seems, he could not  
 prevail in this Particular; so he desires *Bullinger*, to write his  
 Thoughts to her on that Head.



1551.

There was nothing done for almost Two whole Years, pursuant to the Act passed in *November* 1549, for Making a New Body of Ecclesiastical Laws: Concerning which, it is not easy to guess what was the Clause in it, that gave the Bishops so much Offence, that the greatest Part of the Bench protested against it. For both the Archbishops, and the Bishops of *Ely, Duresme, Worcester, Westminster, Chichester, Lincoln, Rochester*, and *St. David's*, joined in the Protestation. There were only Two Clauses, that I can imagine could give them this Disgust, One is, That only Four Bishops, and Four Common Lawyers, were made necessary to be of the Number of the Thirty two Persons. The other might be, the Limitation of the Time to Three Years: Tho' that seems designed, to make the Act have its Effect in a little Time. Two Years were almost ended, before any Steps were made towards the Execution of it. On the 6th of *October*, 1551, the Council wrote to the Lord Chancellor, to make out a Commission for Thirty two Persons, to Reform the Ecclesiastical Laws. These were, the *Archbishop*, the Bishops of *London, Winchester, Ely, Exeter, Gloucester, Bath, and Rochester*. The Eight Divines were, *Taylor, Cox, Parker, Latimer, Cook, Peter Martyr, Cheek, John Alasco*. The Eight Civilians were, *Petre, Cecyl, Smith, Taylor of Hadley, May, Travern, Lyell, Skinner*. The Eight Common Lawyers were, *Hales, Bromley, Goodrick, Gosnald, Stamford, Caryl, Lucas, Brook*.

1552.

This, it seems, brought *Peter Martyr* from *Oxford* to *London*, in *March* 1552. And on the 8th of that Month, he wrote to *Bullinger* from *Lambeth*, being lodged with the Archbishop. He tells him, "That the King did earnestly press the Bishops, that  
 " since the Papal Authority was cast out of this Church, the Ecclesiastical Laws might be so reformed, that none of the Papal Decrees might continue to be of any Authority in the Bishops Courts;  
 " and that another Body of Laws ought to be compiled for them.  
 " He had therefore appointed Two and Thirty Persons, to set about  
 " it, of which Number he himself was one, He says, the greater  
 " Number of them, were Persons both eminently Learned, and  
 " truly Pious: In this he desires both their Advices, and their  
 " Prayers. This Work must be so prepared, as to receive a Confirmation in Parliament; in which he foresaw some Difficulties." It seems, that this Number was thought too great, to bring any Thing to a good Conclusion, or these Persons had not all the same Views: For soon after, on the 9th of *November* after this, a New Commission was ordered to be made out to Eight Persons, for preparing the same Work. These were the Archbishop, the Bishop of *Ely*, Doctor *Cox*, *Peter Martyr*, *Taylor*, *May*, *Lucas*, *Goodrick*. *Strype* tells us he saw the Digest of the Ecclesiastical Laws, written out by the Archbishop's Secretary: The Title being prefixed to each Chapter, with an Index of the Chapters in the Archbishop's own Hand. In many Places there are Corrections and Additions in his Hand, and some Lines are scored out: Some of them were also revised by *Peter Martyr*: The 7th Chapter in the Title *de Prescriptionibus* is all written by *Peter Martyr*. Several Chapters are added to the First Draught, which

which is probably that which was prepared in King *Henry's* Time. There was a later, and more perfect Draught of this Work, prepared for King *Edward*, which coming into *Fox's* Hands, he printed it in the Year 1571 : The Differences between the Two Draughts, as Mr. *Strype* assures us, are not very material. But all this was brought to no conclusion.

1552.

I find somewhat to be added, concerning the Duke of *Somerſet's* Tragical Death, in a Letter that one *John ab Ulmis*, a *Switzer*, then in *England*, wrote from *Oxford* the 4th of *December* 1552, to *Bullinger* ; That the Duke of *Somerſet* was censured, as having been too gentle to the Lady *Mary*, in conniving at her maſs : But when he propoſed the doing that in council, the Earl of *Warwick* answered, “ The Maſs is either of God, or of the Devil : If it is of “ God, we ought all to go to it : If it is of the Devil, why ſhould “ it be connived at in any perſon ? ” Yet ſtill the gentleneſs of the Duke of *Somerſet*, made him ſuffer it to go on. But now, he adds, ſince the Earl of *Warwick* had the greateſt Share in the Govern- ment, he had put her prieſts in Priſon, and had given ſtrict Orders, to ſuffer no Maſs to be ſaid in her Houſe.

The D. of So-  
merſet's laſt  
Fall.

He tells one Remarkable Particular in the Duke of *Somerſet's* Trial : “ That after he was found guilty of the Conſpiracy againſt the “ Earl of *Warwick*, (upon which the People expreſſed a great Con- “ cern) the Earl of *Warwick* addreſſed himſelf to the Duke, and “ told him, That now, ſince by the Law he was adjudged to dye, “ He, as he had ſaved him formerly, ſo he would not now be “ wanting to ſerve him, how little ſoever he expected it from him. “ He deſired him, therefore, to fly to the King's Mercy, in which “ he promiſed he would faithfully ſerve him. Upon this, the Duke “ did petition the King ; and it was hoped, that he would reconcile “ thoſe Two Great Men, and that by this means the Duke of *So- merſet* ſhould be preſerved.”

It ſeems, there was ſome Treaty about his Pardon : For tho' he was condemned on the 1ſt of *December*, he was not executed till the 22d of *January*. What made it to be reſpited ſo long, and yet executed at laſt, does not appear. It is probable, it was from a Ma- nagement of the Duke of *Northumberland's*, who, by the Delay, did ſeem to act in his Favour, that ſo he might be cover'd from the Po- pular Odium, which he ſaw his Death was like to bring upon him ; and, at the ſame time, by the Means of ſome who had Credit with the King, he poſſeſſed him with ſo bad an Opinion of the Duke of *Somerſet*, that He, looking on him as an implacable Man, capable of black Deſigns, reſolved to let the Sentence be executed upon him.

In the ſame Letter, he gives an Inſtance of *Hooper's* impartial Zeal in the Diſcharge of his Function in his Dioceſe : That while he was Cenſuring ſome Inferior People, for their ſcandalous Life, one ſaid to him, “ We Poor People muſt do Penance for theſe “ Things ; while Great and Rich Men, as guilty as we, are over- “ looked. Upon that, He ſaid, name any Perſon, how Great ſo- “ ever, that was guilty of Adultery, ſo that it could be proved “ againſt him, and he would leave himſelf in their Hands, to be “ uſed by them as they pleaſed, if he did not proceed equally againſt “ all.

*Hooper's Im-  
partial Zeal.*



1552.

“ all. So, in a few Days, Sir *Anthony Kingston*, a Great Man in those Parts, being accused of Adultery, he cited him into his Court. He, for some Time, refused to appear. At last he came; and when the Bishop was Charging his Sin severely upon him, he gave him very foul Language, and at last fell to beat him. This was presently followed so severely, that he was Fined in 500 *l.* and forced to submit to do Penance.

This raised the Bishop's Character, as it contributed not a little to establish his Authority in his Diocese. He set himself to do his Duty there with so much Zeal, that his Wife, who was a *German*, wrote to *Bullinger*, praying him to write to her Husband, to take a little more Care of himself: For he preached commonly Thrice, sometimes Four times in One Day. The Crowds of those who came constantly to hear him, made him look on them, as Persons that were hungry for the Word of Life. So She apprehending, that his Zeal made him labour beyond his Strength, studied to get others to put some Stop to that, which, it seems, She could not prevail with him so far as to restrain.

Reg. Exon.

About this Time, the Bishops and Divines were employed in the Review of the Common-Prayer; but I have met with nothing new with relation to that matter, save that on the 6th of *May* 1551, there was an Order of Council, for Preserving Peace, sent to all the Cathedrals, at least to that of *Exeter*, for it is in that Register. And on the 18th of *January*, there was a Commission issued out for the Repressing of Herefy, and for Observing the Common-Prayer. And on the 27th of *October* 1552, the Council-Book mentions also a Letter, written to the Lord Chancellor, to add in the Edition of the new Common-Prayer-Book, a Declaration touching Kneeling at the Receiving the Communion.

The Articles of Religion prepared.

It remains that I give the best account I can of the Articles of Religion. It seemed to be a great Want that this was so long delayed, since the Old Doctrine had still the Legal Authority of its Side. One Reason of delaying the publishing them, probably was, that the King, in whose Name, and by whose Authority they were to be published, might be so far advanced in Years, and out of the Time of Pupillage, that they might have the more Credit, and be of the more Weight: For though it was a Point settled in Law, that the King's Authority was at all Ages the same, yet the World would still make a Difference in their Regard to Things passed while he was a Child, and those Things authorized by him when he was in the 16th Year of his Age.

Not passed in Convocation.

The first Impression of these Articles appeared with a Title apt to make one think they had been agreed on in the Convocation. It runs thus in *English*, *Articles which were agreed to in the Synod of London, in the Year 1552, by the Bishops and other Godly and Learned Men, to root out the Discord of Opinions, and establish the Agreement of true Religion.* But there is Reason to believe that no such Articles were offered to the Convocation. *Weston* objected afterwards to *Canner* that he had set forth a Catechism in the Name of the Synod in *London*, and yet, said he, there be 50 which witnessing that they were of the Number of the Convocation, never heard one Word of this

this *Catechism*. And in a long and much laboured Sermon of *Brooks*, preached at St. Paul's Cross in November 1553, there is an Intimation that makes it indeed probable that the Articles were brought into the Upper-House of Convocation. For when he complains that they were set forth as allowed by the Clergy, he adds, Whereas the Convocation without all doubt (for the Lower-House at least) was never made privy thereto: That Reserve seems to make it probable that they were brought into the Upper-House. In the first Impression of the Articles, the *Catechism* is printed First before the Articles: So this is to be understood of that whole Book, which is indeed a very small one.

1553.

When this was objected to *Cranmer*, he answered, *I was ignorant of the setting to of that Title, and as soon as I had knowledge thereof I did not like it. Therefore when I complained thereof to the Council, it was answered by them, that the Book was so Entitled, because it was set forth in the Time of the Convocation.* In the Interrogatories that were afterwards exhibited to him, in order to his Final Censure, the 7th ends thus, *That he did compile and caused to be sent abroad divers Books:* The last Part of his Answer to that was, *As for the Catechism, the Book of Articles, with the other Book against Winchester, he grants the same to be his Doings.*

It is true in the First Convocation under Queen *Mary*, when the Prolocutor charged *Philpot* with this, that a *Catechism* was put forth without their Consent, He answered on the sudden, that the House had granted an Authority to make Ecclesiastical Laws, to certain Persons to be appointed by the King's Majesty: And what was set forth by them, might be well said to be done in the Synod of *London*, altho' the House had no Notice thereof before the Promulgation. But *Weston* also said, *That the Catechism beareth the Title of the last Synod before this, although many of them who were then present were never made privy thereof in setting it forth:* So that both *Weston* and *Philpot* agree that the Book was never brought before the Convocation. In this Matter *Philpot*, as he could not deny the Fact, so he made use of the best Answer that then occurred to him, without considering that the Convocation had not agreed to any such Deputation of 32 Persons: For that was settled by an Act of Parliament; nor did the Deputation relate to Matters of Doctrine, but only to the Canons and Proceedings in the Ecclesiastical Courts: For it was a Revival of the Acts passed in King *Henry's* Time, so it run in the same Strain with them. These Evidences make it plain that the Articles of Religion did not pass in Convocation. We have *Cranmer's* own word for it, that he drew them, and that he, who was always plain and sincere, did not approve of that deceitful Title that was prefixed to them, to impose upon the unwary Vulgar. He also owns that they were his doings. One Reason that may seem probable, for his not offering them to the Convocation, might be, that he had observed that many made a difference between obeying Orders already made, and the consenting before-hand to the making of them: A greater Degree of Authority and Evidence seemed necessary for the one, than for the other: Besides that the offering Things to debate, while it was free to argue on either side of the Question, might carry some to engage themselves

so



1553.

so far, that they could not after that submit with any Decency. This as far as I can judge, seems to be *Cranmer's* Reason for not offering the Articles to be debated and passed in Convocation.

But Published  
by the King's  
Authority.

But now that they were to be published with Authority, that was to be done in the King's Name: So a very few Days before the King's Death, he sent a Mandate to *Cranmer* to publish the Articles, and to cause them to be subscribed: This was done pursuant to the Archbishop's Motion to the King and Council; for he had desired, "That all Bishops might have Authority from him to cause all their Preachers, Archdeacons, Deans, Prebendaries, Parsons, Vicars, Curates, with all their Clergy, to subscribe the said Articles: And he trusted that such a Concord and Quietness in Religion should shortly follow thereon, as else is not to be looked for in many Years. God shall thereby be glorified: His Truth shall be advanced, and your Lordships (for he writes it to the Privy Council) shall be rewarded of him, as the Setters forward of his true Word and Gospel." Dated from *Ford* the 24th of *November*. It seems they were prepared some Time before that, for on the 20th of *October*, in the Year 1552, the Council had written to the Six Preachers, *Harley, Bell, Horn, Grindall, Pern, and Knox*, to consider of some Articles then offered to be subscribed by all Preachers, which can be no other than these Articles: But as this Matter was long delayed formerly, so when it was now ordered, it was sent about with all the Diligence that so important a Work required. The King also directed his Orders to all the Archbishop's Officers, enjoining them to cause all Rectors, Vicars, or those in any Ecclesiastical Employments to appear before the Archbishop, to obey, and do on the King's Part, as shall be signified to them.

And sent to  
the Archbi-  
shop of Can-  
terbury.  
Collect.  
Numb. 7.

The Mandate that upon this was sent out by the Archbishop's Officers, which is in the Collection, though it is in the King's Name, yet was issued out by *Cranmer* himself, in Execution of the Mandate; it is mentioned in it that it was sent to him by the King. It was thus put in the King's Name, pursuant to the Act passed in the Beginning of this Reign, that all Process in the Ecclesiastical Courts should be in the King's Name: But its being tested by the Archbishop, shews it was the Act of his Court. For though there is an Exception in that Act for the Archbishops, yet that only related to what they should act in their Provinces as Metropolitans, but not to their Proceedings in their particular Dioceses; in which it seems they were put on the same Foot with the other Bishops. The King's Mandate to himself is not in any Record that I was able to find out. After the Mandate, the Execution of it by his Officers was certified to him on the 22d of *June*, which is in his Register, and is added in the Collection to the Mandate. But probably the Time given them run further than the King's Life: For nothing farther appears to have been done upon it. The Clergy of the City of *London* (probably only his Pocoliars) appeared before him, and he exhorted them to subscribe the Articles: No Mention is made of any one's refusing to do it; but he compelled none to subscribe, which he affirmed in his Answer to an Interrogatory put to him by *Queen Mary's* Commissioners; for he said that he compelled none, but exhorted such to subscribe as were willing to do it, before

before they did it. It came to *Norwich* where *Thirleby* was Bishop, who complied readily with every Thing that he was required to do, though by his sudden Turn, and his Employments in the next Reign, it appears that he acted, at least, against his Heart, if not against his Conscience.

1553.

The Mandate for *Norwich*, which will be found in the Collection, bears Date the 9th of *June*, in the 7th Year of this Reign: And it is not to be doubted but that the like Mandates were directed to all the Bishops, though they do not appear upon Record. "It sets forth  
 " that whereas after a long Time of Darknes, the Light was now  
 " Revealed to the Inestimable Benefit of the Nation: The King  
 " thought it his Duty to have a Uniform Profession, Doctrine, and  
 " Preaching for the evading Dangerous Opinions and Errors: And  
 " therefore he sent him certain Articles gathered with great Judgment,  
 " of the greatest Part of the Learned Bishops of the Kingdom, and  
 " sundry others of the Clergy: Which he required and exhorted him  
 " to sign, and in his Preaching to Observe, and to Cause them to be  
 " subscribed by all others, who do, or shall preach, or read within  
 " his Diocess: And if any shall not only refuse to subscribe, but shall  
 " preach contrary to them, he is required to give Notice of it to the  
 " King and his Council, that further Order may be given in the  
 " Matter. And for such Persons as Came to be admitted to any  
 " Benefice, or Cure, he was to confer with them on these Articles,  
 " and to cause them to subscribe them, otherwise not to admit them  
 " to any such Benefice, to which they were presented. But if the  
 " Person was Ignorant, and did not understand them, Pains was to be  
 " taken on him to Instruct him; and Six Weeks Time might be given  
 " him to examine them by the Scriptures: But at the End of Six  
 " Weeks, if he did not subscribe them, he was to be rejected. Then  
 " follows an Order for him to receive the Catechism, and to give it  
 " to all Masters of Schools, that it may be taught in them all, and  
 " he is required to make Report to the Archbishop of the Province,  
 " of the Obedience given to these Orders." This Order was so readily  
 executed, that about 50 of the Clergy subscribed it. This Instrument  
 was Examined, and sent to me by Dr. *Tanner*, the Learned Chancellor  
 of *Norwich*.

And the Bi-  
shop of *Nor-*  
*wich*.  
Coll. Numb.  
8.

But besides the Evidence that appears from the Registers of *Canter-*  
*bury* and *Norwich*, I have a further Proof that the Articles of Reli-  
 gion were only promulgated by the King's Authority, in an Injunc-  
 tion sent to the University of *Cambridge*, signed by the Bishop of *Ely*,  
 Sir *Jo. Check*, *Mayo*, and *Wendy*, who were the Visitors of the  
 University, bearing Date the 1st of *June*, 1553: directed to all the  
 Regents, and Non-Regents; setting forth that great and long Pains  
 had been taken by the King's Authority, and the Judgments of Good  
 and Learned Men, concerning some Articles, described according to  
 the Title with which they were printed; these being promulgated  
 by the King's Authority, and delivered to all the Bishops, for the  
 better Government of their Diocesess, they did commend them to  
 them, and by their Visitatorial Authority, they do enjoin that all  
 Doctors and Batchelors of Divinity, and all Doctors of Arts should  
 publicly before their Creation swear to them and subscribe them;

And to the  
University of  
*Cambridge*.



1553.

Coll. Numb.

9.  
Cranmer de-  
signed to set  
up the Provin-  
cial Synods.

and such as refuse to do it, are to be denied their Degree. To this is added the Form of the Oath to be taken: The Injunction will be found in the Collection.

Thus it appears by a Variety of Evidences, that these Articles were not passed in Convocation, nor so much as offered to it. And as far as can be judged from *Cranmer's* Proceedings, he intended to put the Government of the Church in another Method, different from the Common Way by Convocation; and to set up Provincial Synods of Bishops, to be called as the Archbishop saw Cause, he having first obtained the King's License for it. This appears by the 18th Chapter of the *Reformation of the Ecclesiastical Laws* prepared by him, in which it is plain that these Provincial Synods were to be composed only of the Bishops of the Province. The Convocations now in use by a long Prescription, in which Deans, Archdeacons, and Cathedrals, have an Interest, far superior in Number to those elected to represent the Clergy, can in no sort pretend to be more than a Part of our Civil Constitution: And have no Foundation either in any Warrant from Scripture, or from the First Ages of the Church: But did arise out of that Second Model of the Church, set out by *Charles* the Great, and formed according to the *Feudal Law*; by which a Right of giving Subsidies, was vested in all who were possessed of such Tenures, as qualified them to contribute towards the Supporting of the State.

As for the *Catechism*, it was printed with a *Preface* prefixed to it in the King's Name, bearing Date the 24th of *May*, about 7 Weeks before his Death: In which he sets forth that it was drawn by a pious and learned Man, (supposed to be Bishop *Poinet*), and was given to be revised by some Bishops and other Learned Men; he therefore Commands all Schoolmasters to teach it.

King Ed-  
ward's  
Scheme of the  
Succession.

I come now to set forth the Dismal Overturning of all that had been done now in the Course of Twenty Years. King *Edward* was for some Months under a visible Decay: His Thoughts were much possessed of the Apprehensions of the Danger Religion must be in, if his Sister *Mary* should Succeed him. This set him on contriving a Design to hinder that. He seemed to be against all Females Succession to the Crown. I have put in the Collection, a Paper that I Copied out of a Manuscript of the late Mr. *Petyt's*, all written in that King's own Hand, with this Title, *My Device for the Succession*.

Coll. Numb.  
10.

“ By it the Crown was to go to the Issue Male of his own Body, or  
 “ if he had only Female Issue, to the Issue Male coming of the  
 “ Issue Female: Next to the Issue Male of the Lady *Frances*; then  
 “ in Succession to her Three Daughters, and to their Issue Male: And  
 “ if they had only Female Issue, to the First Issue Male of any of her  
 “ Daughters. The Heir Male after 18 was to enter upon the Govern-  
 “ ment: But his Mother was to Govern 'till he was of that Age,  
 “ with the Advice of Six of that Council of Twenty Persons, which  
 “ he should Name by his last Will: But if the Mother of the Issue  
 “ Male should not be 18, then the Realm was to be governed by the  
 “ Council, provided that after the Issue Male was of the Age of 14,  
 “ all Matters of Importance should be opened to him. If at his  
 “ Death there were no Issue Male, the Lady *Frances* was to be

“ *Governess*

“ *Governess-Regent* ; and after her Life, her Three Daughters were  
 “ to be Governesses in Succession, till an Heir-Male was born : And  
 “ then the Mother of that Heir-Male was to be Governess. If Four  
 “ of the Council should die, the Governess was ordered, within a  
 “ Month, to summon the whole Council, to chuse Four in their  
 “ Stead, in which the Governess was to have Three Voices. But af-  
 “ ter the Death of the Governess, the Council was to chuse the New  
 “ Counsellors, till the King was Fourteen, and then He was to chuse  
 “ them, by their Advice.”

1553.

It may seem by this, that the King designed this some Time before his Death ; while he thought that he himself might have Issue : But he was prevailed on, to change a great deal of this Scheme ; especially those Clauses, that kept the Crown as in an Abeyance, till an Issue-Male should be born ; which would have totally changed the Government : So he departed from these Clauses.

This was afterwards put in another Form by the Judges ; and that Scheme which they prepared, was, in six several Places, superscribed by the King's Hand. Probably it consisted of so many Pages. I never saw that Paper ; but I have put in the Collection, the Paper that was subscribed by 24 Counsellors and Judges : In which they set forth, “ That they had often heard the King's earnest Desire, touching the Limitation of the Succession of the Crown, and had seen his Device written in his own Hand : And after that was copied out, and delivered to Judges, and other Learned Men, they did Sign with their Hands, Seal with their Seals, and Promise by their Oaths and Honours, to observe every Article in that Writing, and all such other Matter, as the King should by his last Will declare, touching the Limitation of the Crown ; and never to vary from it, but to defend and maintain it to the utmost of their Power. And they also promised, that they would prosecute any of their Number, or any other, that should depart from it, and do their utmost to see them severely punished.”

Much altered.

Coll. Numb.  
11.

I gave an Account in my History, of the Opposition that *Cranmer* made to this : But Mr. *Strype* has discovered more Particulars concerning it. He tells us, “ That he argued with the King himself once about it, in the Hearing of the Marquis of *Northampton*, and the Lord *Darcy*. He desired Leave to speak to the King alone about it, that so he might be more free with him : but that was not allowed him. He hoped, if he had obtained that Liberty, he should have diverted the King from it. He argued against it in Council, and pleaded that the Lady *Mary* was Legitimate : But some Lawyers were prevailed on to say, That the King being in Possession of the Crown, might dispose of it as he pleased. He stood firm, and said, that he could not subscribe it without Perjury ; having sworn to the Observance of King *Henry's* Will. Some Counsellors said, they had sworn to that Will, as well as he ; and that they had Consciences, as well as he. He said, Every Man was to answer to God for his own Deeds, and not for other Mens : He did not take upon him to judge any Man's Conscience, but his own. He spake with the Judges about  
 “ the

Opposed long  
by Cranmer.



1553.

“ the Matter ; and they agreed, that the King might settle the Succession, notwithstanding King *Henry's* Will : Yet he remained still unsatisfied ; till the King himself required him to set his Hand to his Will ; saying, He hoped he alone would not stand out, and be more repugnant to his Will, than all the rest of the Council were. This made a great Impression on him ; it grieved him much : But such was the Love that he bore to the King, that in Conclusion he yielded, and signed it.”

The Primate  
of Ireland  
poisoned.

A little before the King's Death, a very extraordinary Thing happened in *Ireland*. I had told in my former Work, that *Goodacre* and *Bale* were sent over to promote the Reformation in *Ireland*. The former was made Primate of *Armagh* : Of whose Death, there is a Report, that has been all along believed by his Posterity. A Reverend and worthy Clergyman of *Hampshire*, not far from *Salisbury*, (who is the fourth in Descent from that Primate ; they having been all Clergymen but one) told me he had it from his Grandfather, who was the Primate's Grandson. “ That he being invited to a Popish Lord's House, a Monk there drank to him in a poisoned Liquor, on design to poison him ; of which they both died.” This I set down from the venerable Person's own Mouth, as a Thing known and believed in the Family.

A Character  
of the Court  
in *K. Edward's*  
Time.

I have no particulars to add, neither concerning the Death, nor the Character of that Good Prince, King *Edward* ; whose untimely End was looked on, by all People, as a just Judgment of God, upon those who pretended to Love and Promote a Reformation, but whose Impious and Flagitious Lives were a Reproach to it. The open Lewdness in which many lived, without Shame or Remorse, gave great Occasion to their Adversaries to say, they were in the right, to assert Justification by Faith without Works ; since they were, as to every Good Work, Reprobate. Their Gross and Insatiable scrambling after the Goods and Wealth, that had been Dedicated with Good Designs, tho' to superstitious Uses, without applying any Part of it to the Promoting the Gospel, the Instructing the Youth, and Relieving the Poor, made all People conclude, that it was for Robbery, and not for Reformation, that their Zeal made them so active.

I will here give an eminent Instance of fraudulent Proceedings in the Beginning of this Reign ; of which the present Learned and Zealous Dean of *Norwich* was pleased to send me a Copious Account out of their Registers. The Prior, when inducted into that Dignity, took an Oath not to alienate any of their Lands ; which was confirmed by Injunctions, exhibited to the Convent in the Royal Visitation. But the King, upon certain Reasons suggested by the Prior and Convent, and approved by him, did dispense with that Oath ; so that notwithstanding the Oath, they were left at Liberty to alienate some Lands, set forth in the Instrument dated the 1st of *April* 1538. countersigned by *Cromwell*. A Month after that, on the 2d of *May*, that Year, the Church was converted from a Prior and Convent, to a Dean and Chapter ; and the Last Prior was made the First Dean of the Church.

But

But on the 26th of May 1547, in the Beginning of King Edward's Reign, a Letter was sent to that Church, signed by the Duke of Somerset, Rich the Lord Chancellor, and Six other Privy-Counsellors; pretending, that they designed the Advancement of God's Glory, and the truest Intent of the late King's Determination: By which, Sir Richard Southwell, Sir Roger Townshend, and Sir William Paeson, were authorized to receive a full Surrender of the whole Chapter; assuring both the Dean, and every one of the Prebendaries, that there should be no Alteration made in their yearly Profits: And that there should be a just Contentation given to the Residue of the Ministers there. A Commission was granted on the 27th, to these Persons, to take the Surrender, with Articles and Instructions annexed to it: Which, because, probably, many others were of the same Sort, are put in the Collection. But, for all this Appearance of fair Dealing, it being pretended, that this was only designed that the King should be the Founder, and that the Church should lose nothing by the Surrender; yet when they had made the Surrender, in the Hope of New Letters-Patents, they could not obtain them. And Lands, to the Value of 200*l.* a Year, were taken from them. Upon which that Corporation tried, in Queen Mary's Time, to get a Bill to pass, to restore them to the State they were in, before they were prevailed on to make the Surrender. But the Bill did not pass. Perhaps it might be suggested, that it would alarm the Nation too much, if any Alienation of Church-Lands, how fraudulently soever obtained, were meddled with. I give this as a well-attested Instance; by which it may appear, how Things of this Kind were obtained and managed, chiefly in the Beginnings of this Reign. For I am not so much set on justifying every Thing that was done in this Reign, as another Voluminous Writer is on Condemning almost every Thing done in it, with a particular Virulence against the Memory of that pious Prince. This, from one of another Communion, is that which might have been expected; but it is a little singular, when it comes from one, who says he is of our Church.

1553.

Coll. Numb.

12.

Coll. Eccl.

Hist. P. 332.

Col. 2.

The bad Lives  
of those who  
professed the  
Gospel.

The irregular and immoral Lives of many of the Professors of the Gospel, gave their Enemies great Advantages, to say, they run away from Confession, Penance, Fasting, and Prayers, only that they might be under no Restraint, but indulge themselves in a Licentious and Dissolute Course of Life. By these Things, that were but too visible in some of the more eminent among them, the People were much alienated from them: And as much as they were formerly prejudiced against Popery, they grew to have kinder Thoughts of it, and to look on all the Changes that had been made, as Designs to enrich some Vicious Courtiers; and to let in an Inundation of Vice and Wickedness upon the Nation. Some of the Clergy that promoted the Reformation, were not without very visible Blemishes: Some Indiscretions, both in their Marriages, and in their Behaviour, contributed not a little to raise a General Aversion to them.



1553.

It is true, there were great and Shining Lights among them, whose Exemplary Deportment, Continual Labours, Pervent Charity, and Constant Zeal, both during their Lives, and at their Deaths, kept up the Credit of that Work, as much as it was disgraced by others: But they were *Few*, in Comparifon of the *many Bad*, and thofe of the Clergy, in whom the Old Leaven had ftill a deep Root, tho' they complied in every Thing that was impofed on them: Seeing that they had loft thofe Perquifites of Maffes, and other Practices, which brought them their Chief Gains, and faw nothing came in Lieu of them, for their Subfiftance; they, who in their Hearts hated all that they were forced to profefs outwardly, did fecretly poffefs fuch as were influenced by them, with an Abhorrence of all that was done: And they difpofed the Nation to be ready to throw it all off.

Much lamented by the Reformers.

That which was above all, was, that God was highly difhonoured, by Men who pretended Zeal for his Glory, but with their Works difhonoured him. They talked of the Purity of the Gospel, while they were wallowing in all Sensuality and Uncleannefs: Pretending to put all their Confidence in the Merits and Sufferings of Chrift, while they were Crucifying him afrefh, and putting him to open Shame. In fuch Lamentations as thefe, I find the Good Men of that Time did often vent their Sorrows, in their Letters to one another, and break out into fevere Reflexions on them. Some did it afterwards abroad in their Exile, and others at Home in their Sufferings. Their only Human Hope was in the King himfelf; in whom there appeared fuch a Progreff, both in Knowledge and Zeal, that they expected to fee him compleat the Reformation, and redrefs thofe Crying Abufes, in which the Men in Power found their Account too evidently, to expect a Remedy from them. They were Men, in whose Hands Things grew every Day worfe and worfe; and whose Arrogance, and other Diforders, our Chief Reformers were forced in fome Meafure to connive at, that they might not provoke them to retard a Work, that could in no wife be carried on without their Countenance and Authority; tho' they faw the Prejudice it brought upon them, to be obliged to apply to, and to make ufe of fuch Tools, with which the Righteous Souls of our beft Reformers were much grieved. They were engaged with Men, that were ready to Pull down, efpecially when any Thing was to be got by it; but were as backward in Building up, as they were forward in Plucking down. So that they feemed to defign to leave all in a great Ruin. Thefe were great Hindrances to the Progreff of the Reformation, as they were both the Burden, and the Shame of our Reformers.

I thought it not amifs to open this as fully as I found it lying before me: And I hope the Reader will not only confider this as a Part of the History of a former Age, but as an Admonition to us in the Prefent: If we fall under the Diforders and Corruptions that then reigned, why fhould not we expect fuch a Calamity as overtook and overwhelmed them? We may juftly look for worfe, fince we have the Advantages of much more Light, and many more Bleffings, as well as many alarming Terrors, which have all gone over us without  
thofe

those dismal Convulsions that we might have looked for: And they have as easily slipped out of our Thoughts, as if we had never seen, or felt them. To the Viciousness of Life, and the Open Immoralities and Neglect of Religion, that were the Sins of the former Age, many among us have added a Studied Impiety, and a Laboured Opposition to all Revealed Religion: Which some have owned in so barefaced a Manner, that perhaps no Age of the World can shew any Thing like it. If others with Secular Views have declaimed against this, and put on some Shew of Zeal, how much more of Party than of True Religion has appeared in it. The divided Parties among us have shewed little true Regard to Religion, and to a Course of Virtue and Piety, which can only give both Strength and Honour to a Church; and this does too plainly appear in many, who Talk the most of it, or for it.

1553.

Have we of the Clergy made the Steps that became us, and that were designed in the former Age, for throwing out Abuses, for regulating the Courts, and restoring Discipline? While we have for above 150 Years expressed once a Year a faint Wish that the Primitive Discipline were again restored, and yet have not made one Step toward it: What a Venality of the Advowsons to Livings do we hear of, and at best the Disposing of them goes generally by Secular Regards, by Importunities, Obligations, or Friendship: And above all, how few of those that Labour in the Gospel, do Labour indeed, and give themselves wholly to it? How much of their Time and Zeal is employed in Things that do not deserve it so well, as the Watching over, the Instructing, and the Building up their Flock in their most Holy Faith? How few do Fast and Pray, and Study to prepare themselves and their People for the Evil Day, that seems much nearer us, than the greatest Part are willing to apprehend; that so we may by our Intercessions deliver our Church and Nation from that which is ready to swallow us up; or at least be so fortified and assisted, that we ourselves, and others, by what they see in us, may Glorify God in that Day of Visitation.

I shall conclude this Book with one Reflection that may make us hope, that the Reformation was under a particular and watchful Care of Providence: When the Light seemed almost extinguished in one Place, it broke out in another: By which as it was still kept Shining somewhere, so there was a Sanctuary opened, to which those who were forced to fly from one Place, might in their Flight find a Covert in another from the Storm. In the Beginning of this Reign, by the breaking of the *Smalcaldick* League, by the taking of the Elector of *Saxony*, and the Landgrave of *Hesse*, and by the *Interim*, the Reformation seemed to be near extinguished in *Germany*. In this Church it was at that Time advanced; and we kindly then received those who were forced to fly hither for Shelter. And now in the Year, before the Death of this Good King, there was not only a Revival, but a lasting Settlement procured in *Germany* to the Reformation there. So that those who fled from hence, found a safe and kind Harbour in all the Places of the Empire, to which they were driven by the Storm and Tempest that arose here. Of which I go next to gather up such Gleanings as have come in my way.

The Providence of God  
towards the  
Reformed.



## B O O K V.

*Of what happened during Queen Mary's Reign,  
from the Year 1553, to the Year 1558.*

1553.

The Queen's  
Words were  
soft,



AS soon as the Queen came to the *Tower of London*, She sent for the Lord Mayor, and the Aldermen of the City, and told them, "That though her own Conscience was stayed in Matters of Religion, yet she meaneth graciously not to compel or strain other Peoples Consciences, otherwise than God shall, as she trusteth, put in their Hearts a Persuasion of the Truth." These soft Words were not long remembered: Of the Progress of the Severities in her Reign, I have a very Authentical Account before me, in the Original Council-Book, that begins on the 17th of *August* 1553, and goes to the End of the Year 1557: But from that to her Death I have not sure a Thread. The Book begins with Orders for Letters to be written to *Coverdale* and *Hooper* for their undelayed Repair to the Court: And a Complaint being made of a Sermon preached by *Fisher*, Parson of *Amer-sham*; he was ordered to appear the next Day, and to bring the Notes of his Sermon with him. A Parliament was summoned to meet in *November*: On the 14th of *August* the Writ for the Convocation was direded to *Cranmer*. A Letter was soon after written by the Queen and Council to the Bishop of *Norwich*, to suffer none to preach without a Special Licence; the same Order was intimated to the Lord Mayor of *London*; and the same was no doubt Univerfally both ordered and executed.

But her Proceedings severe.

*Rymer MSS.*

On the 20th of *August* there was an Order for Guards to defend the Preacher at *St. Paul's Cross*, occasioned by what had happened to *Bourn*: It seems few came to hear the Sermons, for the Lord Mayor was ordered "to make the Antients of the Companies resort to the Sermons, lest the Preacher should be discouraged by a small Audience." On the 23d of *August* *Gardiner* was declared Lord Chancellor: Here I shall set down the Appointments of the Lord Chancellor as they were settled at that Time. There was a Privy Seal given for Wages and Dyets, and for the Masters in Chancery, for 542 Pound 15 Shillings, Yearly: Fifty Pound was ordered for attending on the Star-Chamber every Term: And besides that, a Salary was given of 300 Pound, and 64 Pound for 12 Tun of Wine; and 16 Pound for Wax. All these were granted the 21st of *September*, but were to commence from the 23d of *August*. On the 24th of *August* there was an Order

Order sent to the Keeper of *Newgate* to receive and keep *John Melvil*, a *Scot*, and a very Seditious Preacher; so he was called in the Warrant. On the same Day a Letter was written to the Mayor of *Canterbury*, to set *Panton*, Vicar of *St. Dunstan's*, and one *Burden*, on the Pillory for Seditious Words against the Queen; and to take Bonds at their Discretion for their good Abearing. On the 26th of *August*, a Letter was writ to the Mayor of *Coventry* to apprehend *Symonds*, a Vicar there, and to send him up with such Matter as can be procured to charge him with: "And to punish at their Discretion, such Slanderous Talkers, as by his leud Preaching have had Dissolute and Seditious Talk."

1553.

Here is a great deal of Heat in Ten Days Time. *Cranmer* was called before the Council in the Beginning of *August*; probably on the Account of his Signing King *Edward's* Will, and acting upon it: But since so many of those who had signed it, were then at the Council Board, they were perhaps ashamed to proceed further against him, who had opposed it so much. He had for that Time only a severe Reprimand, and was commanded to keep his House. He was brought again before some of the Queen's Commissioners, being cited to appear, and to bring the Inventory of his Goods with him. He brought it, but no further Proceedings against him are mentioned at that Time. On the 29th of *August* *Hooper* appeared before the Council: On the 1st of *September* he was sent to the *Fleet*, no Regard being had to the Active Zeal that he had expressed in asserting the Queen's Right, and against the Lady *Jane*; so sincerely did he follow the Dictates of his Conscience, when he could not but see what Consequences it was like to have. On the 2d, Order was given that his Servant might attend on him. On the 31st of *August*, *Coverdale* appeared before them, and in respect that he was a Foreigner, he was ordered to attend till further Order. On the 2d of *September*, *Sanders*, Vicar in *Coventry*, appeared before the Council, and a Letter was written to the Mayor of *Leicester* to bring up their Vicar: On the 4th of *September*, *Latimer* was summoned to appear, and a Letter was written to the Mayor of *Coventry*, to set *Symonds* at Liberty, upon his Repentance, for a Wish he had uttered, wishing they were hanged that said *Mas*: If he refused to do that, the Mayor was to give Notice of it.

Against *Cranmer*, *Hooper*, and others.

On the 5th of *September* a Letter was written to Sir *John Sidenham* to let the Strangers depart, and to give them a Passport. This related to the Congregation of the Foreigners that had settled, in order to set up a Manufacture at *Glassenbury*. On the 10th of *September*, a Letter of Thanks was ordered for the Gentlemen of *Cornwall*, for their honest Proceeding in electing Knights for the Parliament: It seems there was some Debate about it with the Sheriff: For a Letter was written to him to accept of the Election; and not to trouble the County for any Alteration: On the 13th of *September*, it is entred, that *Latimer* for his Seditious Demeanor should be close Prisoner in the *Tower*, with a Servant to attend him: On the same Day *Cranmer* was ordered to appear the next Day at the Star-Chamber. On the 14th, in the Star-Chamber, *Cranmer*, as well for his Treason against the Queen, as for spreading Seditious Bills moving Tumults,



1553. to the Disquieting the Present State, was sent to the *Tower*, and referred to Justice. There are several Orders made for restoring all Chalice to Churches, together with all other Goods belonging to them, though they had been sent into the *Great Wardrobe*. On the 4th of *October* the Archbishop of *York* was committed to the *Tower* for divers Offences; and *Horn* the Dean of *Duresme* was summoned again and again, but he thought fit to go beyond Sea. Nothing gave more Offence than the promoting Petitions for retaining the Doctrine and Service settled in King *Edward's* Time. Those of *Maidstone* were charged with it; and this is on several Occasions mentioned in the Council-Book: But as the Government was thus set to overthrow all that had been done in King *Edward's* Time; so the Fierceness of the Popish Party made them on many Occasions out-run the Government: Some of the Clergy continued to perform the Daily Worship, and to Celebrate the Sacrament: More they durst not do in Public, all Preaching being forbidden. The People that favoured the Reformation frequented the Service with great Devotion and Zeal, for all saw what was coming on them: And so they studied to prepare themselves for it. Some of the Ruder Multitudes came to their Churches and disturbed them while they were at their Devotions: They insulted the Ministers, and laughed at their Worship; and there were every where Informers with false Stories to charge the more Zealous Preachers: In many Places the People broke in violently into Churches and set up Altars, and the *Mafs* in them, before the Parliament met to change the Laws.

The Duke of  
*Northumber-*  
*land* begs his  
Life, but in  
vain.

The Duke of *Northumberland* shewed that Abjectness of Mind, that might have been expected from so insolent a Man, loaded with so much Guilt: He begg'd his Life with all possible Meanness, *That he might do Penance all the Days of his Life, if it were in a Mouse-Hole*. He went to *Mafs* in the *Tower*, and received the Sacrament in the Popish Mauner. He sent for *Gardiner*, and asked him if there was no hope for him, to live, and do Penance for his Sins. The Bishop said, his Offence was great, and he would do well to provide for the worst; especially to see that he stood well with God in Matters of Conscience and Religion. For to speak plainly, he said, he thought he must Die. The Duke desired he might have a Learned Priest sent him, for his Confession and Spiritual Comfort. "For Religion, he said, he could be of no other but of his: He never was of any other indeed: He complied in King *Edward's* Days only out of Ambition, for which he prayed God to forgive him, and he promised that he would declare that at his Death." The Bishop shed many Tears, and seemed to be troubled for him: And, as he reported himself, he pressed the Queen so much, that he had almost gained her Consent for his Life. But the Emperor who was then designing the Marriage, that took Effect afterwards, saw what a Struggle there might be against that, and what Mischief such a Man might afterwards do: So he wrote his Advice for his Death positively to the Queen: And he was Executed, and Died as he had lived.

*Gates* and *Palmer*, who suffered with him, had tried how far the Going to Mass, and Receiving the Sacrament in the Popish Way, could save them: But when they were brought to Suffer, *Gates* confessed, " That he had lived as viciously, as any in the World. " He was a great Reader of the Scriptures; but no Man followed them less: He read them only to Dispute. He exhorted People, " to consider how they read God's Holy Word, otherwise it would " be but Poyson to them. *Palmer* thanked God for his Affliction, " and said, He had learned more in one Dark Corner of the *Tower*, " than he had ever learned formerly: He had there come to see God " in his Works, and in his Mercies; and had seen himself a Mass of " Sin, and of all Vileness the Vilest." He seemed not daunted with the Fear of Death, tho' he saw Two die before him, and the bloody Axe coming to finish the Business on himself. I find nothing new, with Relation to the Session of Parliament.

1553.  
Others suffer-  
ed with him

The Writ, upon which the Convocation was summoned, was directed to *Cranmer*, but executed by *Boner*, Bishop of *London*. *Weslon* was chosen Prolocutor: And the Queen sent a Message to them, to Dispute about Religion. I gave formerly an Account of that Disputation, and can add little to it. The Minutes tell us, that *Philips*, who was one of the Five that refused to Subscribe, did, on the 30th of *April*, Recant, and Subscribe. It is indeed of little Consequence, to enquire into the Proceedings of the Convocation during this Reign; in which, all the Old Notions of Popery were taken up, even before they were enacted. Tho' both this Convocation, and the next, were Summoned by the Queen's Writ, with the Title of *Supreme Head of the Church*.

A Convocation  
on summon'd.

There was at this Time an infamous Slander set about, of the Queen's being with Child by *Gardiner*. The Queen's whole Life being innocent as to all such Things, that might have made them to despise such a Report, rather than to trace it up: Besides, *Gardiner*'s great Age made, that none could believe it. But the Earl of *Suffex*, in his Officious Zeal, pursued it thro' Eight or Ten Hands: And one at last was indicted, for having reported it; tho' such an absurd Lie had, perhaps, been better neglected, than so minutely enquired into. In the same Letter that mentions this, the Earl of *Suffex* gives an Account of Examinations, touching a Design for an Insurrection, upon the Arrival of the Prince of *Spain*.

MSS. Petst.

The Emperor had, on the 21st of *December*, signed a Commission, Empowering the Count of *Egmont*, and others, to Treat a Marriage between his Son and the Queen. Upon their Coming to *England*, the Queen gave a Commission, on the 1st of *January*, to the Lord Chancellor, and others, to Treat with them. And Prince *Philip* of *Spain*, did, on the 28th of *April*, send from *Valladolid*, full Powers to the same Effect. That which quickened the Treaty, was an Account of a Vast Treasure that was come with the Fleet, from the *West-Indies*, to *Seville*; reckoned to have brought over Five Millions, as *Mason* wrote from *Brussels*. He does not denominate the Millions, whether Pounds, or Crowns. He wishes the Half were true. It was necessary to have a great Treasure in View: For tho' I never found any Hint of the Corrupting of Parliament-Men, before

A Treaty of  
Marriage  
with the Pr.  
of Spain.



1553.

fore this Time, yet there was now an extraordinary Occasion for it; and they saw, where only the Treasure to furnish it, could be had. A Concurrence of many Circumstances seemed to determine all Things for this Marriage. Every Thing was agreed to: The Conditions seemed to be of great Advantage to the Nation. In this Treaty of Marriage, if *Cæsar Campana* (who wrote *Philip's* Life very copiously) was well informed, *Philip* himself was extremely disgusted at it: For he desired to be Married to a Wife, more suited to his own Age. He adds another Particular, "That the Nation shewed such an Aversion to it, that the Count of *Egmond*, with the others sent over to treat about it, saw themselves in such Danger, that they were forced to fly away, that they might avoid it: And a Parliament was to be called, to approve of the Conditions of the "Treaty."

Part. 3. B. 6.

*Wyat's Rising  
and Principles.*

Sir *Thomas Wyat* was a Man that had been oft employed in Embassies, particularly in *Spain*; where he had made such Observations upon the Subtilty and Cruelty of the *Spaniards*, and of the Treatment that such Kingdoms and Provinces met with, that came under their Yoke, that he could not look on the Misery that his Country was like to fall under, without a just Concern about it. He was the Duke of *Northumberland's* Kinsman, yet he would not join in Lady *Jane's* Business: and before he knew that any others had done it, he proclaimed the Queen at *Maidstone*: But he did not, upon that, run to Her for Thanks, as others did: Yet the Queen was so sensible of his Loyalty and Zeal for her, that She sent her Thanks to him by the Earl of *Arundel*; to whom he appealed, as to this particular, when he was under Examination in the *Tower*. He had obtained a Pass to go beyond Sea; but his Lady being with Child, he stayed to see the End of that. Nothing set him on to raise the Country as he did, but his Love and Zeal for the Publick. He never pretended that Religion was his Motive: Many Papists joined with him. When he passed by *Charing-Cross*, he might have turned to *Whitehall*, which was but ill defended; for many of the Earl of *Pembroke's* Men came over to him. This shewed, that he meant no Harm to the Queen's Person. His Marching into *London* was, on Design to engage the City, to come and join with him in a Petition to the Queen, against the *Spanish* Match. The Queen herself was so satisfied, as to his good Intentions, that She intended to have pardoned him, had not a Message from the Prince of *Spain*, determined her to order his Head to be cut off. I suppose, there may be a Mistake here; and that it was the Emperor, then in *Flanders*, and not the Prince of *Spain*, who was yet in *Spain*, that sent this Advice. He never accused the Lady *Elizabeth*: But being intangled by Questions in one Examination, he had said somewhat reflecting on the Earl of *Devonshire*: For this he begged his Pardon. And when he was on the Scaffold, he not only cleared the Lady *Elizabeth*, but referred himself with Relation to her Innocence, and that She was not privy to their Matters, to the Declaration he had made to the Council. All this Account concerning him, I take from

ExMS. *Petyti*. a Relation, that his Son gave afterwards to the Lord *Burleigh*, marked

marked with that Lord's Hand on it. It seems, the Priests at this Time, understood the Interests of their Cause, better than others did above an Age after. For they moved the Queen to shew a Signal Act of Mercy, and to pardon all that had been engaged in this Rising. 1554.

Only it gave a Colour to the Severity against the Lady *Jane Gray*, Lady Jane Gray execut-  
ed. and her Husband. She was the Wonder, and Delight of all that knew her. I have two of her Letters in *Latin*, writ to *Bullinger*, copied from the Originals all in her own Hand, written in a pure and unaffected Stile. She was then entring on the Study of the *Hebrew*, in the Method that *Bullinger* advised her. She expresses, in her Letters, a wonderful Respect and Submission to him, with a great Strain of Modesty, and a very singular Zeal for Religion. There being nothing in those Letters, that is in any sort Historical, I thought it was not proper to put them in my Collection; tho' one cannot read them, without a particular Veneration for the Memory of so Young, and so Rare a Creature.

And now the Government finding all Things under their Feet, did begin to shew to the whole Nation what was to be expected. All that adhered to the Reformation, were sure to be excluded from all Favour: Commissions were sent over the whole Kingdom, to proceed, as upon other Points, so particularly against the Married Clergy. These came to *York*, directed to the Guardian of the Spiritualities in that Place: And the Dean and Chapter were authorized by the Queen, to act pursuant to their Instructions. And they acted as in a Vacaney: Tho' the Commission to proceed against the Archbishop bears Date the 16th of *March*; yet on the 9th of *March*, they sent out a General Citation of the Clergy, to appear before them on the 12th of *March*. They did not, indeed, begin to deprive any before the 27th of *April*: and from that Day, to the 20th of *December*, they deprived One and Fifty, of whom several were Prebendaries. Severities  
against the  
Married  
Clergy.  
Reg. Ebor.  
Sede Vac.  
f. 65, 66.

I will here insert a short Account of the Unjust and Arbitrary Deprivations of the Married Clergy, that was published by *Parker*, afterwards Archbishop of *Canterbury*, "What Examples have they  
" in Stories before-time, that Deprivations have been thus handled,  
" before our Days? I will not speak of particular Cases; where some  
" Men have been deprived, never convict, no nor never called:  
" Some called, that were fast locked in Prison; and yet they were  
" nevertheless deprived immediately. Some were deprived without  
" the Case of Marriage after their Order: Some induced to resign,  
" upon Promise of Pension, and the Promise as yet never perform-  
" ed. Some so deprived that they were spoiled of their Wages, for  
" the which they served the Half-Year before; and not Ten Days  
" before the Receipt, sequestred from it: Some prevented from the  
" Half-Year's Receipt, after Charges of Tenths and Subsidies paid,  
" and yet not deprived Six Weeks after. Some deprived of their  
" Receipt somewhat before the Day, with the which their Fruits to  
" the Queen's Majesty should be contented; and some yet in the  
" like Case chargeable hereafter, if the Queen's Merciful Grace be  
" not informed thereof, by the Mediation of some Charitable Solli-



1554.

Aggravated  
by some.

"citor."—And a little after, "There were deprived, or driven away, Twelve of Sixteen Thousand, as some Writer maketh his Account." But there are good Reasons to think, that Numbers have been wrong taken of this. Among other Suggestions, Dr. *Tanner* has sent me this; That the Dioceſe of *Norwich* is reckoned almoſt an 8th Part of all *England*; and he finds, there were only 335 Clergymen deprived on that Account: By this, the whole Number will fall ſhort of 3000. This, it is true, is but a Conjecture; yet it is a very probable one: and the other Account is no way credible.

I ſhall, to this, only add another ſhort Account of the Proceedings at that Time, published by *Ailmer*, afterwards Biſhop of *London*. "The Biſhops that were married, were thruſt out of the Parliament Houſe; and all married Deans, and Archdeacons, out of the Convocation. Many put out of their Livings, and others reſtored, without Form of Law.—Many Churches were changed, many Altars ſet up, many Maſſes ſaid, many Dirges fung, before the Law was repealed." From theſe Accounts, we may eaſily believe, that when the Laws wore altered, there was a vigorous and a ſpeedy Execution of them.

The Queen  
writes the firſt  
Letter to K.  
*Philip*.Coll. Numb.  
13.

After all Matters relating to the Queen's Marriage were ſettled, the Emperor ſent a Fleet for the Prince of *Spain*: And upon that Occaſion, the Queen was prevailed on to break thro' all Forms, and to write the firſt Love-Letter to him; of which, having met with the Original, I have put it in the Collection, as a Singularity in ſuch Matters. She tells him, "That She underſtanding that the Emperor's Ambaſſador was ſending the Bearer to him, tho' He had not written ſince their Alliance had been a Treating; yet She, thinking herſelf obliged by the ſincere Affection that He had for her, confirmed by good Effects, and by the Letters that he had written to the Emperor's Ambaſſador, could not reſtrain herſelf from letting him know the Duty, in which ſhe intended to correſpond al-ways with him: And She thanked him for all his Good Offices. She acquainted him, that her Parliament had, without any Oppoſition, agreed to the Articles of their Marriage, and thought them Honourable, Advantageous, and more than Reaſonable. This gave her an entire Confidence, that his Coming to *England* ſhould be Safe, and Agreeable to him. She ends, recommending herſelf moſt affectionately and humbly to his Highneſs, as being his entirely aſſured, and moſt obliged Ally."

Proceedings  
againſt Here-  
ticks.

But, the Matter of the Marriage being ſettled, and afterwards executed, I will now look again into the Proceedings of the Council. On the 16th of *January*, one *Wotton*, called an Eſquire, was committed to be cloſe Priſoner in the *Fleet*, for his obſtinate Standing againſt Matters of Religion. On the 14th of *February*, Letters were written to the Lord *Rich*, and to Sir *John Wentworth*, to puniſh ſome in *Colcheſter*, *Coxall*, and other Places; who diſſuaded People from frequenting ſuch Divine Service, as was then appointed by Law to be obſerved. Upon this, many were committed, and others put under Recogniſances to appear. On the 8th of *March*, an Order was ſent to the Lieutenant of the *Tower*, to deliver *Cranmer*,



*mer*, *Ridley*, and *Latimer*, to Sir *John Williams*, who was to carry them to *Oxford*. On the 26th of *March*, an Order was given to send up *Taylor*, Parson of *Hadley*; and *Askew* of *West-Hillesley*. *Barlow* Bishop of *Bath* and *Wells* was carried beyond Sea, by one *Williams*, a Mariner of *Bristol*; who returning to *Pembrokeshire*, some Gentlemen there seized on him, and sent him to *London*: So he was sent to the *Marshalsea*, and a Letter of Thanks was written to those who had seized on him; so careful were they to encourage every officious Shew of Zeal.

1554.

But now came on the 2d Convocation in this Reign, in which all that was done, was, that the Prolocutor *Weston*, with some deputed to go along with him, were ordered to go to *Oxford*, to dispute with the Three Bishops. Of which I can add nothing to the Account I formerly gave of it. On the 27th of *April* *Weston* returned and reported the Conference, or Examination of *Cranmer*, and the Two other Bishops, attested under the Seal of the University: And soon after that they were dismissed; for the Parliament met on the 2d of *April*, and was dismissed on the 5th of *May*.

A Convocation.

On the 3d of *May*, *Cranmer*, *Ridley*, and *Latimer*, being judged obstinate Hereticks, the Judges were asked what the Queen might do, since *Cranmer* was attainted. He was a Man Dead in Law, and not capable of any other Censure: And this seems to be the true Reason that moved the Queen to Pardon the Treason, upon which he was already condemned: For though he was very earnest to obtain a Pardon for that, it does not appear that there was any Regard had to him in granting it, but on the contrary it seems it was resolved that he should be burned as a Heretick: And since that could not be done while he stood condemned of Treason, this seems to be the only Motive of that Mercy; which in this Case, was certainly done out of Cruelty. On the 20th of *May*, a Servant of the Lady *Elizabeth*'s was brought before the Council: But there is nothing in particular mentioned, only he was required to attend. There were Suspicions of her being concerned in *Wyat*'s Rebellion, as appeared in the Account given of *Wyat* himself. It is alleged that *Gardiner* studied to suborn false Witnesses to charge her with that; and that this went so far, that a Warrant was brought to *Bridges*, the Lieutenant of the *Tower*, for her Execution; but that he would not Obey it, 'till he knew the Queen's Pleasure. Some Credit seems due to this, since it was published in her Reign, and was not contradicted, nor denied as far as I can find. But it seems to be denied in a Declaration set forth many Years after, by herself when she was Queen; which shall be mentioned in its proper Place. On the 25th of *May*, some in *Stepney* were ordered to be set on the Pillory for spreading false News; the Ears of one were ordered to be nailed to the Pillory, and then cut off. On the 26th of *May*, Sir *Henry Bedingfield* was sent with Instructions, signed by the Queen, for the ordering the Lady *Elizabeth*.

Cranmer's Treason pardoned, that he might be burned.

Reply to Parsons. P. 84.

On the 1st of *June*, an Order was sent to the Bishop of *London*, to send discreet and learned Preachers into *Essex*, to reduce the People there. *Boner* seemed to think of no way of reducing any, but by Severity and Force; so that the Council found it necessary to put him



1554.

him in mind of his Pastoral Care. Orders were then given for the Reception of the Prince of *Spain*. Some were ordered to be set on a Pillory, and their Ears were to be nailed to it, and cut off. The Dutcheſs of *Northumberland* deſired that her Sons might hear Maſs in the *Tower*: This was granted, but Order was given that none might ſpeak with them. On the 11th of *June*, Orders were given to receive the Duke of *Savoy* at *Dover*. And on the 5th of *July*, Order was given to puniſh thoſe who were concerned in the Impoſture, called, *the Spirit in the Wall*. On the 6th of *July*, ſome of the Lady *Elizabeth's* Servants were committed for lewd Words of the State of the Kingdom: On the 24th of *July*, Two Treaties for the Queen's Marriage, made by the Lord *Fitzwater*, who had been Ambaſſador in *Spain*, were given to the Lord Treasuſer.

The Council  
orders ſevere  
Proceedings.

Now the Marriage was made, and the Jollities on ſuch Occaſions put ſome ſtop to Severities: But it was a ſhort one, for on the 15th of *Auguſt* Letters were writ to the Juſtices of Peace in *Suſſex*, to puniſh thoſe who railed at the Myſteries of Chriſt's Religion. I muſt obſerve here once for all, that the Letters themſelves, writ by the Council, are not entred in the Book: Theſe would have ſet out Particulars much more clearly, than thoſe ſhort Entries do: But there were Forms of thoſe Letters put in a Cheſt, and the Council-Book refers us often to the Letter in the Cheſt. On the 19th of *Auguſt*, Letters of Thanks are ordered to *Tirrell*, and others, for their Care, ordering them to imprifon all ſuch as came not to Divine Service; and to keep them in Priſon 'till they had the Comfort of their Amendment: Several Men and Women were imprifoned in *Huntingtonſhire*. The 20th of *Auguſt* mention is made of ſome in priſon for Words. On the 21ſt of *Auguſt* an Order was ſent to examine into a Conſpiracy in *Suffolk*, by certain lewd Perſons: On the 16th of *September*, a Letter was ordered to the Lord Mayor and Aldermen of *London*, to puniſh the Spreaders of falſe Rumours.

The Reconcili-  
ation with  
*Rome* deſign'd.

But now came on the great Affair of the Reconciling the Nation to the See of *Rome*. The two former Parliaments could not be brought up to that; ſo the Court was willing to accept all that they could be brought to; but when they ſaw at what they ſtuck, they were ſent home: And ſome were ſo weak as to think that by Yielding in ſome Things, they ſhould give the Court ſuch Content, as to ſave the reſt. They were willing to return back to that State of Religion, in which King *Henry* left it; and did not rightly apprehend that nothing could give the Queen an entire Content, but a total Reconciliation with the Pope: Whereas thoſe who could not come up to this, ought to have ſtood firm at firſt, and not by giving Ground have encouraged the Court to compaſs their whole Deſign. The Queen was more than ordinary ſollicitous to get a Parliament choſen to her Mind. She wrote a Letter to the Earl of *Suſſex*, and probably ſhe wrote to all thoſe in whom ſhe confiſed, in the ſame Strain. It will be found in the Collection. “ She had now ſummoned a Parliament to the 12th  
“ of *November*, in which ſhe expected to be aſſiſted by him; and  
“ that he would admoniſh her good Subjects who had a Right to  
“ Elect the Members, to chuſe Men of the Wiſe, Grave, and Catho-  
“ lick Sort; ſuch as indeed meant the true Honour of God, and the  
“ Proſperity

Coll. & Numb.  
14.

“ Prosperity of the Common-Wealth ; which she and the King her Husband did intend, without the Alteration of any particular Man’s Possession ; which among other false Rumours, the Hinderers of her Good Purposes, and the Favourers of Heretics, did most untruly report. She desired him to come up against the Feast of *All-Saints*, at the furthest, that she might confer with him about those Matters, that were to be treated of in Parliament.” This is dated the 6th of *October*, and so careful was that Lord to Merit the Continuance of the Queen’s Confidence, that on the 14th of *October*, he wrote to the Gentlemen of the County, to reserve their Voices for the Person whom he should Name : He also wrote to the Town of *Yarmouth* for a Burgess. But now to open more particularly the Great Matter that was to be transacted in this Parliament.

When the News of the Change of Government in *England*, and of the Queen’s Intentions, were brought to *Rome*, it was not possible to deliberate long, who was the properest Person to be sent Legate.

*Pole* had so many meritorious Characters on him, that besides the Signification of the Desire, no other Person could be thought on. *A. Harmer* has given the Bull, upon which he was sent from *Rome*. It is dated the 5th of *August*, 1553, though the Queen came not to *London* ’till the 3d of *August*, and *Comendone*, who carried her Message to the Pope, was in *London* on the 23d : For he saw the Duke of *Northumberland*’s Execution. It seems that at *Rome*, upon King *Edward*’s Death, they took it for granted, both that her Right would take Place, and that she would reconcile her Kingdom again to that See : and therefore the Bull was prepared. *Pole* had at that Time retired 300 Miles from *Rome*, to an Abbey upon the Lake, now called *De Garda* : In his Absence he was declared Legate : Upon which he wrote a Letter to the Queen on the 13th of *August*, which I have put in the Collection.

“ He begins, expressing his Joy at her Exaltation, more particularly at the Manner of it ; which he reckons a singular Work of an immediate Providence ; in which, as indeed the Subject seemed to allow it, he enlarges very copiously. And since she carried the Name of the *Blessed Virgin*, he calls on her to say the *Magnificat*, applying it to the late Providences of God towards herself. He desires her to consider what was the Beginning of all the Miseries that *England* had felt ; it was the King her Father’s departing from the Apostolic See, and the Catholick Church. He was a Witness to all the Steps made in that Matter : He had upon all Occasions asserted both her Mother’s Marriage, and her own Right : And had done and suffered much on that Account. He was therefore now most particularly concerned to know what her Mind was with Relation to Religion : and though he was then 300 Miles from *Rome*, he was named Legate to be sent, to her, to the Emperor, and to the *French* King ; therefore he sent one to her to know her Mind. He did not doubt of it ; for no Person owed more to the Apostolic See than she did, since it was upon her Account that so much Outrage had been done to it. So before he would proceed in his Legatine Function, he desired to know her Pleasure more particularly.”

1554,

*Pole* sent Legate for that End.

Coll. Numb.

15.

He wrote to the Queen.



1554.  
Coll. Numb.  
16.  
The Queen's  
Answer,

Upon this she wrote an Answer on the 10th of *October*, which is also in the Collection. "She thanked him for all the kind Expressions in his Letter; and in particular for the good Advice he gave her. She was full of Reverence and Obedience to the Holy See; but it was a great Trouble to her, that she could not yet declare her Mind openly in that Matter. As soon as it was safe for her to do it she would let him know it. His Messenger would tell him all Particulars: She was then Crowned. She hoped the Parliament would repeal all the bad Laws: And that she should obtain the Pope's Pardon for all her own Faults. She sends by him her most humble Thanks to the Pope for his Clemency to her, and for his Readiness to forget all that is past:" With this she sent back *Ormanet* to him. The Bull that the Pope sent to *Pole*, is all a Rhetorical Panegyrick upon the Queen's coming to the Crown, and on her Pious Intentions. But Bulls being often in a Common Form, it is not in it, but in the Breves, that we are to seek the Powers, or Instructions, given to *Pole*. There was a Part of Cardinal *Pole*'s Register conveyed to me, about a Year after my II<sup>d</sup> Volume was printed: A short Account of the most remarkable Things in it was then printed, in a Letter directed to me. The Characters of the Truth of the Papers are Visible: some of them are in *Latin*, and some in *Italian*: And because I look on this as a Matter of great Consequence, I will give a very particular Account of them.

Coll. Numb.  
17.  
His First Powers.

The first Paper, which will be found in the Collection, is the Breve, that was at first sent him, of the Pope's own Motion; and bears Date the 8th of *March* 1554. By it, "*Pole* is empowered to receive all Heretics, of both Sexes, and of all Ranks, even Bishops and Archbishops, Communities as well as Single Persons, of what Heresies soever guilty, tho' relapsed in them, upon their true and unfeigned Repentance; and to absolve them from all Pains and Censures, how long soever they had continued in their Errors, and tho' their Sins were reserved immediately to the Holy See. And he was impowered, to pardon all Irregularities run into by them, and all the Bigamies of Ecclesiastical Persons: They first relinquishing their Wives; notwithstanding which, they might be continued in their Orders and Functions, and might be capable of all Ecclesiastical Promotions: All Infamy being pardoned, provided they, with a Contrite Heart, should Sacramentally Confess their Sins to any Catholic Priest, at their Choice, and submit to such Penance as he should enjoin: Excusing them from all Public Confession, Abjuration, or open Penance. Absolving all Communities from any unlawful Pactions, in Favour of others, tho' confirmed by Oaths. Empowering him to receive all Regulars, and to absolve them from the Censures of Apostacy; allowing them to possess Benefices as Seculars. Dispensing with the strict Observation of *Lent*, as to Milk, Meats, and Eggs; and even Flesh, upon the Allowance of either the Confessor, or the Physician. Giving him Authority, to suffer such of the Clergy, under the Degree of a Bishop, who were married, upon their true Conversion, to live in that State, so that no Scandals were given by it: Only they were not to Minister at the Altar, nor to do any Ecclesiastical

“ ecclesiastical Function ; but they might lawfully continue in the Married State, the Issue being declared Lawful. To this is added, a Power of Uniting of Benefices.”

1554.

Next comes the Clause concerning the Possessors of Ecclesiastical Goods. “ He is empowered to agree, transact, and discharge them, for all the Profits they had wickedly received, and for the Moveable Goods that they had consumed ; *the Immoveable Goods that have been by them unduly detained, being first restored, if that should seem to be convenient to him.* And whatever should arise out of any such Agreement, was to be applied to the Church, to which such Goods had belonged, or for the Advancement of Studies, and to Schools. There is likewise a Power granted, to delegate others under him, for the Care and Performance of all these Particulars. But because he was to go first to *Flanders*, and stay in those Parts for some Time ; the Pope gave him Authority to execute these Powers, even while he was without the Kingdom, to all Persons belonging to it, that should apply to him, particularly, with Relation to all Orders unduly received ; and to confirm Bishops, or Archbishops, who had been promoted by a Secular Nomination, during the Schism, and had assisted the former Kings, tho’ they had fallen into Heresy, upon their Return to the Unity of the Church : And to provide to Metropolitane or Cathedral Churches, such Persons as should be recommended to him by the Queen, according to the Customs of the Kingdom, upon any Vacancy : And to Absolve, and Reabilitate all Clergymen, of all Ranks, notwithstanding their past Errors. All these Powers are confirmed, with a full *Non Obstante* to all Constitutions whatsoever.”

Here was a great Fulness of Favour, with Relation to all Personal Things. When *Pole* (whose Name I write as he himself did, and not as we usually do) came to *Flanders*, he was stopped by the Emperor’s Order, till his Powers were seen, and sent to *England*. When they were seen, they were considered as far short of what was expected, and of what seemed necessary, for the Carrying on the Reconciliation quietly thro’ the Nation : So *Pole* sent *Ormanet* to *Rome*, for fuller Powers, and retired to *Diligam-Abbey*, near *Brussels*. While he was there, he heard the News of *Philip’s* Arrival in *England*, and of the Queen’s being married to him : Upon which, he wrote a Letter of Congratulation to the Bishop of *Arras*, which is in the Collection : And on the same Day, he wrote this acceptable Piece of News to the Cardinal *de Monte* ; which is also in the Collection. In the Postscript to the Bishop of *Arras*, he tells him, that *Ormanet* was returned with fuller Powers. He brought with him two Breves.

Card. Pole stopped in *Flanders* by the Emperor.

Coll. Numb. 18.  
Coll. Numb. 19.

The first is of no Importance to this Matter ; but because it was thought to be suppressed on Design, by the Writer of the Letter directed to me, by him that wrote on this Subject in K. *James’s* Time, is put in the Collection. It sets forth, “ That he was sent first to the Queen of *England* ; and after that he was constituted Legate *à Latere*, for Mediating a Peace between the Emperor and the King of *France*. He had also very ample Powers given him, while he remained in *Flanders*, with Relation to *English* Persons and Affairs.”

Coll. Numb. 20.  
New and fuller Powers sent to Pole.



1554.

“ Affairs. But since, by reason of the Schism, and other Errors,  
 “ many Cases might happen, that wanted a Provision from the Apo-  
 “ stolical See, which could not be comprehended within the Facul-  
 “ ties given him; and because it is doubtful, whether he may yet use  
 “ them in the Queen’s Dominions; and which of them shall be  
 “ made use of, while he is either with the Emperor, or the King of  
 “ France; the Pope gives him full Power, to make use of all Facul-  
 “ ties sent to him, by himself, or by any other deputed by him; and  
 “ to do every Thing, that he shall think will conduce to the Glory  
 “ of God, the Honour of the Holy See, and the bringing the Queen’s  
 “ Dominions to the Communion of the Church, as fully as may be.  
 “ And while he remained with the Emperor, he gave him all the  
 “ Powers of a *Legate à Latere*, for all his Dominions: And he  
 “ gave him the same Powers, while he should be with the King of  
 “ France.”

Coll. Numb.

21.  
 With Relation  
 to Church-  
 Lands.

The other Breve, which is also in the Collection, sets forth,  
 “ That upon the Hopes of Reducing the Kingdom of *England*, that  
 “ had been torn from the Body of the Catholick Church, to an  
 “ Union with it, out of which there is no Salvation; the Pope had  
 “ sent him his *Legate à Latere*, with all the Powers that seemed  
 “ necessary, or proper, for Effecting that Work: In particular, to  
 “ agree, and transact with the Possessors of Church-Goods, concern-  
 “ ing them. And whereas, by the Beginnings and Progress already  
 “ made, there is good Hopes of bringing that Work to a full Per-  
 “ fection; which will go on the easier, the more indulgent and  
 “ bountiful the Pope shews himself, with Relation to the Possessions  
 “ of those Goods: The Pope therefore, not willing that the Reco-  
 “ vering that Nation, and the Salvation of So many Souls, should  
 “ be obstructed, by any worldly Regards; in Imitation of the good  
 “ Father, who received the returning Prodigal, he empowered *Pole*,  
 “ in whose Prudence and Dexterity, he put an entire Confidence;  
 “ to Treat with all the Possessors, or Detainers of Ecclesiastical  
 “ Goods, for whom the Queen should interceed; and to transact  
 “ and compound with them, that they might, without any Scruple,  
 “ enjoy and retain the said Goods: And to conclude every Thing,  
 “ that was proper or necessary, with Relation to them. *Saving al-*  
 “ *ways such Things, in which, for the Greatness and Importance of*  
 “ *them, it shall seem fit to you to consult this Holy See, to obtain our*  
 “ *Approbation and Confirmation.*” Upon which, he is fully em-  
 power’d to proceed, with a full *Non Obstante*, bearing Date the 28th  
 of June. With these Breves, Cardinal *de Monte* wrote him a Letter,  
 in the *Roman Way*, of a High Compliment; which is in the Col-  
 lection.

Coll. Numb.  
 22.

Coll. Numb.  
 23.

The next Letter is from Cardinal *Morone*; which is likewise in  
 the Collection. By this it appears, that *Pole* had gone to *France*,  
 upon his Legatine Commission: And after the usual *Roman* Civil-  
 ities, “ He tells him, he had laid his Letter before the Pope, who  
 “ was beginning to despair of the Affairs of *England*: And tho’ the  
 “ Pope had not the Patience to read, or hear his Letter, which was  
 “ his ordinary Custom, yet he told him the Sum of it; with which  
 “ he

“ he was satisfied: and said, He had given no Cause, neither to the  
 “ Emperor, nor to any other, to use such extravagant Words to  
 “ him. It seems, *Pole* had desired to be recalled; but the Pope said,  
 “ that could not be done. It would be a great Disgrace both to the  
 “ Pope, and to the Apostolical See, to the Emperor himself, and to  
 “ Cardinal *Pole*; and a great Prejudice to *England*. But he would  
 “ not write to the Emperor upon it: Nor was he resolved about  
 “ the Goods of the Church, concerning which, he spoke often very  
 “ variously. He resolved to write, both to the Queen, and to the  
 “ Prince of *Spain*; which Letters, he adds, will be sent by *Ormanet*,  
 “ who is dispatched with every Thing necessary for the Business,  
 “ conform to his Desire.” The rest is all Compliment; dated the  
 13th of *July*. Then follows a Breve, merely in Point of Form, ex-  
 tending the former Powers that were addressed only to the Queen,  
 to *Philip* her Husband; dated the 10th of *July*.

1554.

All was laid  
 before the  
 Emperor.

Upon this, the Emperor being then at *Valenciennes*, the Cardinal  
 sent *Ormanet* thither; who gave an Account of his Audience to *Priuli*,  
 the Legate's Great and Generous Friend, which will be found in the  
 Collection. The Bishop of *Arras* told him, how much the Emperor  
 had the Matters of Religion at Heart; and that he would be always  
 ready to promote them. But when *Ormanet* pressed him for a pre-  
 sent Dispatch, he said, they had no News from *England* since the  
 Marriage: And that before any other Step was made, it would be  
 necessary to know what Ply the Affairs of that Kingdom were like to  
 take. It was fit to consider, whether the Powers of Securing the  
 Goods of the Church, should come from the Legate, or from the  
 King and Queen. Then he desired to see the Copy of the Cardinal's  
 Faculties. As to the Point of Time, *Ormanet* said, it was not fit to  
 lose a Moment, since so many Souls were endangered by the Delay:  
 And the first Coming of the Prince of *Spain* ought not to be let slip,  
 by which, the Honour of the Work would be chiefly due to him.  
 As for his Faculties, all Things necessary were committed to the Car-  
 dinal in the amplest Manner; and more particular Resolutions could  
 not be taken, but upon the Place. Somewhat further passed be-  
 tween them, which *Ormanet* reserves till he saw the Cardinal. The  
 Bishop of *Arras* promised to lay all before the Emperor, and to do  
 all Good Offices. The Emperor was at that Time so well, that he  
 was often on Horseback, to View his Army; which had then march-  
 ed to *St. Amand*, and the Two Armies were very near one another.  
 This is dated the last of *July*.

Collect.  
 Numb. 24.

On the 3d of *August*, the Bishop of *Arras* wrote to the Cardi-  
 nal, “ That the Emperor received his Congratulations on the Mar-  
 “ riage very kindly; but did not think it was yet proper for him to  
 “ go to *England*, till they had a perfect Account of the Present State  
 “ of Affairs there. To know that, he had that Day sent an Ex-  
 “ press thither: Upon his Return, he should be able to give him  
 “ a more positive Answer. He knew, the Zeal of the King and  
 “ Queen was such, that they would lose no Time; but yet they  
 “ must proceed with such Moderation, that the Way to a true Re-  
 “ medy might not be cut off, by too much Haste.” This is in the  
 Collection. The Cardinal had a Letter from *Bartholomew de Mi-*

Yet he was  
 still put off by  
 Delays.

Coll. Numb.  
 25.



1554.

*randa*, a Friar, who (I suppose) was K. *Philip's* Confessor, and afterwards Archbishop of *Toledo*, from *Winchester*, July 28. It is only a Letter of Respect, desiring his Commands, The Cardinal wrote to the Bishop of *Arras* on the 5th of *August*: He sent him the Copy of his Faculties, and expressed a great Earnestness in his Design of Going speedily into *England*, as soon as the Courier, sent by the Emperor, should return. He shewed himself as impatient of the Delays, as in good Manners he could well do. This is also in the Collection.

Coll. Numb.  
26.

King *Philip* stayed at *Winchester* some Days after the Marriage: For, on the 4th of *August*, he sent the Count of *Horn* over to the Emperor from thence; and by him he wrote a Letter, partly of Respect, partly of Credit, to the Cardinal. To this the Cardinal wrote an Answer, which I have put in the Collection: Tho', besides such High Compliments as are usually given to Princes, there is nothing particular in it; only he still insists earnestly, for Leave to come over. On the 11th of *August*, the Bishop of *Arras* wrote to him, "That he had seen the Copy of his Faculties, and he joins with him in his Wishes, to see that Kingdom restored to its ancient Obedience; he assures him, the Emperor was pressing the Dispatch of the Matter, and he did not doubt, but that it would be speedily accomplished." *Pole* wrote on the 2d of *September*, to *Soto* the Emperor's Confessor, "thanking him for those pressing Letters that he had written, both to the Emperor, and to the Duke *Alonso d'Aquilaro*; with which the Legate was so delighted, that he writes as one in a Rapture upon it; and he animates him to persist in that Zeal, for Promoting this Great Work."

Coll. Numb.  
27.

The Reason  
of those De-  
lays.

He was still put off with new Delays; of which, the best Account I can give, is, that this being the Decisive Stroke, there was a close Canvassing over *England* for the Elections to this Parliament. Since Nothing can effectually ruin this Nation, but a Bad Choice; therefore, as it is the constant Character of a Good Ministry, who design nothing but the Welfare and Happiness of the Nation, to leave all Men to a due Freedom in their Elections; so it is the constant Distinction of a Bad Ministry, that have Wicked Designs, to try all the Methods of Practice and Corruption possible, to Carry such an Election, that the Nation being ill represented by a Bad Choice, it may be easy to impose any Thing on a Body of Vicious, Ignorant, and Ill-principled Men, who may find their own Mercenary Account, in Selling and Betraying their Country. It appeared in the Two former Parliaments, who They were, that could not bear the Returning to their Old Servitude to the Papacy. It was, no doubt, spread over *England*, that they saw the Legate was kept in *Flanders*; and not suffered yet to come over: This seems the true Cause, why his Coming was so long put off. It might be likewise an Artifice of *Gardiner's*, to make the Difficulties appear the greater, and by that, to enhance his own Merit the more. It is plain, that till the Election was over, and till the Pulses of the Majority were first tried, it was resolved not to suffer the Legate to come over. This seems to be that which he insinuates, in his Letter to the Confessor, when he says, that *the Wisdom of the Wise has kept the Gate so long shut against him*.

On the 13th of *October* Pole wrote the Pope an Account of what had passed between him and the Bishop of *Arras* and the Emperor himself: The Bishop of *Arras*, as he writes, came to him and assured him that the Emperor was in the best Disposition possible: But it was necessary to come to Particulars, to examine all the Impediments, and the best Methods to put them out of the Way. The Legate said he had full Powers, and desired to know from *England* what Impediments were suggested. He added, this was not a Negotiation like that in making a Peace, where both Sides did conceal their own Designs all they could, 'till they discovered those of the Contrary Side: Here all had but one Design, and he was ready to enter into Particulars when they pleased. He had an Audience of the Emperor, none but the Nuntio, and the Bishop of *Arras*, being present. In it, after usual Compliments, the Impediments proposed were Two; the First related to the Doctrine, in which there was no abatement to be made, nor Indulgence to be shewed. The other was concerning the Lands; for the Usurpers of them knowing the Severity of the Ecclesiastical Laws, were afraid to return to the Obedience of the Church: To this the Legate answered, that the Pope was resolved to extend his Indulgence in this Case; First, as to all the mean Profits already received, and the Censures incurred by that, which was a great Point; the Pope was willing freely to discharge that intirely: Nor did he intend to apply any Part of these to himself, or to the Apostolical See, as many feared he would: Though that might seem reasonable, as a Compensation for Damages sustained, but he would convert all to the Service of God, and to the Benefit of the Kingdom: And he had such Regard to the Piety of those Princes, that he had empowered him to grant such Favours as they should interceed for, and to such Persons as they should think worthy to be gratified, and were capable to assist him in the Matter of Religion. The Emperor understanding all this, thanked the Pope very heartily for his Favour in that Matter: He said he had granted enough; he excused himself, that being wholly taken up with the present War, he had no sooner applied himself to consider the Matter: Now he knew it well: He had already written to *England*, and he expected a speedy Answer from thence, by which he would know the State of Affairs there. He knew by his own Experience in *Germany*, that this of the *Church Lands* was the Point that was most stood on: As to Matters of Doctrine, he did not believe that they stood much upon that, they neither believing the one, nor the other: Yet those Lands (or Goods) being dedicated to God, he thought it was not fit to yield all up, to those who possessed them: He added, that though the Legate had told him the whole Extent of his Powers, yet he would do well not to open that to others. He then desired to see his Faculties. The Legate upon that apprehending this would give a Handle to a new Delay, said he had already shewed them to the Bishop of *Arras*, and he told the Emperor, what a Scandal it would give to the Whole World, if the Reconciliation should not be settled by this Parliament. The Queen did not think fit to press it formerly, 'till she had received that Mighty Assistance which was now come to her by her Marriage; yet if this which ought to have been the Beginning, and the Foundation



1554.

dation of all the rest, were delayed any longer, it must give great Offence both to God and Man. The Emperor said, Regard was to be had to the ill Disposition of the People concerned, who had formed in themselves, and others, an Aversion to the Name of Obedience, and to a Red Cap, and a Religious Habit. He said some *Fryars* whom his Son had brought with him out of *Spain*, were advised to change their Habits. They had not indeed done it, nor was it convenient that they should do it. He also touched on the ill Offices that would be done them by their Enemies abroad, in order to the raising of Tumults: (meaning the *French*.) The Legate answered, if he must stay 'till all Impediments were removed, that would be endless. The Audience ended with this, that he must have a little Patience, 'till the Secretary whom he had sent into *England* should return.

Cardinal Pole  
much esteem-  
ed by the  
*English* Am-  
bassador.  
*Coll. Numb.*  
29.

*Mason* was then the Queen's Ambassador at the Emperor's Court: He in a Letter on the 5th of *October*, writ towards the End of it (the rest being a long Account of the War between the Emperor and the *French* King,) concerning the Cardinal, (which will be found in the Collection;) that he was sent by the Pope on Two designs; the one to mediate a Peace between those two Powers; the other to mediate a Spiritual Peace, as he called it, in the Kingdom of *England*: But seeing no hope of succeeding, either in the one, or the other, he began to despair: And if he did not quickly see some Appearance of Success in the last, he would go back to *Rome*, a Sorrowfull Man: and here *Mason* runs out, either to make his Court to the Queen, or to the Legate, or that he was really possessed with a very high Opinion of him, which seems the more probable, as well as the more honest Motive: He says, "all the World adores him for his Wisdom, Learning, Virtue, and Godliness. God seems to dwell in him; his Conversation, with his other Godly Qualities, was above the Ordinary Sort of Men. It would be a strong Heart, that he would not soften in half an Hour's Talk.

He writes to  
King *Philip*.  
*Coll. Numb.*  
30.

At this Time the Cardinal wrote a long Letter to King *Philip* in *Latin*: He tells him he had been now for a Year knocking at the Gates of the Palace, and no Body opened to him: Though he is the Person that was driven from his Country into an Exile of above 20 Years continuance, because he was against shutting the Queen out of that Palace, in which he now lived with her: But he comes with a Higher Authority, in the Name of the Vicar of the Great King, and Shepherd, St. *Peter's* Successor, or rather St. *Peter* himself; who was so long driven out of *England*: Upon this he runs out into a long Allegory, taken from St. *Peter's* being delivered out of Prison, from *Herod's* cruel Purpose, and coming to the Gate of *Mary*, where though his Voice was known, yet he was kept long knocking at the Door; *Mary* not being sure that it was he himself. He dresses this out with much Pomp, and in many Words, as a Man that had practised Eloquence much, and had allowed himself in Flights of forced Rhetoric; liker indeed to the Declamation of a Student in Rhetoric, than the Solemn Letter of so great a Man on such an Occasion. It is true that this Way of Writing had been early practised, and had been so long used, even by Popes themselves, that these Precedents might warrant him to Copy after such Originals.

At



At last the Queen sent the Lord *Paget* and Lord *Hastings* to bring him over : Their Letter upon their coming to the Emperor's Court is dated from *Brussels* the 13th of *November*. In it they give an Account of their Waiting upon the Emperor with the King and Queen's Compliments. The Emperor had that Day received the Sacrament, yet they were admitted to Audience in the Afternoon : He expressed great Joy when he heard them give an Account how Matters were in *England*, and roused himself up in a chearful manner, and said, That among many great Benefits, he was bound to thank God for this as a main One, that he now saw *England* brought back to a good State. He had seen what the Kingdom had once been, and into what Calamities it fell afterwards : And now he thanked God for the Miracles shewed to the Queen, to make her the Minister to bring it again to its ancient Dignity, Wealth and Renown. He also rejoiced that God had given her so soon such a certain Hope of Succession : These Tidings of the State of her Person, with the Report of the Consent of the Noblemen and others touching the Cardinal, and their Obedience and Union with the Catholick Church, were so pleasant to him, that if he had been half dead, they would have revived him : He promised them all Assistance, as they should come to need it.

1554.  
The Queen  
sent to bring  
him over to  
*England*.  
*Coll. Numb.*  
31.

From the Emperor they went to the Cardinal, who welcomed them with great Joy, and with Expressions full of Duty and Thankfulness to the Queen. Here they enlarge on his Praises : " They call him " the Man of God, full of Godliness and Virtue ; and so eminently " humble, that he was contented to come into *England* in such sort as " the Queen had commanded ; not as a Legate, but as a Cardinal, " and an Ambassador sent to the Queen : and they assured the Queen, " that touching the Matter of Possessions, all things should pass on " the Pope's Behalf so, that every Man there shall have Cause to be " contented." *Pole* took Leave of the Emperor on the 12th ; he was to set out in slow Journeys, his Body being then too weak for great ones ; in six Days he was to be at *Calais*, where they had ordered every thing to be ready for his Transportation.

It seems by this that the Queen reckoned on it, as sure, that she was with Child ; tho' in that, after the Hopes of it were published with too much Precipitation, she found herself so much mistaken, that it was believed the Grief and Shame of it, both together, had an ill Effect on her Health and Life.

The Queen  
believed her-  
self to be with  
Child.

About this time there was a very abusive Libel, printed in the Form of a Letter as writ by *Bradford* to the Queen ; in which it was said, " That it was believed the Queen intended to give the Crown to the " King, hoping that then he would keep Company with her more ; " and live more Chast, contrary to his Nature ; for peradventure after " he was Crowned, he would be content with one Whore ; whereas " he had then three or four in a Night : and these not Ladies, but " Common Prostitutes." One *John Capstoke* the Printer was discovered ; he was condemned to be imprisoned, and to have his Ears nailed to the Pillory and cut off ; yet he was pardoned. The Consideration is not mentioned ; it may be easily imagined it was no small one, probably enough it was upon the Discovery of some of those whom they were seeking out for the Slaughter.

*Rymer. T. 15.*



1554.

Cardinal Pole  
carries his  
Powers be-  
yond the Li-  
mits set him.

I have nothing to add to what I wrote formerly, with relation to this Parliament, and the Reconciliation made in it: No doubt *Pole*, according to the Powers in his *Breve*, desired the Queen would name such Persons to whom the Favour of Confirming them in their Possessions should be granted; but it seems they durst not venture on any Discrimination, lest that should have made the excepted Persons desperate. So it is evident, that the confirming of all without exception, was, if not beyond his Powers, yet at least a Matter of such Importance, that he ought to have consulted the Pope upon it; and to have stayed till he had new and special Orders to pass it in so full a Manner as he did. But still it is plain by the Message sent to *Rome*, that he made the Council at least, to apprehend that it was necessary to send thither for a Confirmation of what he had done; without any Limits, upon Powers that were expressly limited, and reserved to a Confirmation.

Coll. Numb.

31.  
Some preach  
for Restoring  
the Abbey-  
Lands.

On the 12th of *December* *Mason* wrote from *Brussels*; and after he had given in his Letter an Account of what passed in the Diet, upon a Letter written to it by the *French* King: He also writes, "That one of the Emperor's Council had told him, that his Master was displeased to hear that a Preacher was beating the Pulpit Jollily (I use his own Words) for the Restitution of the Abbey-Lands: Upon this he writes, That if it be so meant by the Prince, and the Thing be thought convenient, he did his Duty: but if it was not so, it was a strange thing, that in a well-ordered Commonwealth, a Subject should be so hardy as to cry thus to the People, to raise Storms next Summer, against what they were then doing in Winter; and if the Thing were to be talked of, it ought to be to the Prince and Council, and not to the People: He reflects on the unbridled Sermons in the former Times, that they were much disliked: So he hoped, that in a good Government that should have been amended. He thought the Person that preached this might be well put to Silence; for he being a Monk, and having vowed Poverty, possessed a Deanry and three or four Benefices. He tells them he had heard by the Report of other Ambassadors, that *England* was now returned to the Unity of the Christian Church. He should have been glad that he might have been able to confirm this by some certain Knowledge of it; but it was ordinary for the Ambassadors of *England* to know the least of all others, of the Matters of their own Kingdom." A Custom of a long Continuance, of which I have heard great Complaints made of a later Date. On the 25th of *December* he wrote, that according to his Orders, he had let the Emperor know the Apprehensions the Queen had of the Progress of her Big-belly: and that all was quiet, and every thing went on happily in *England*. Upon this the Emperor fell into a free Discourse with him of the Difference between governing with Rigor and Severity; and the governing in such sort, that both Prince and People might *Sentre entendre & sentre aimer*, mutually understand and mutually love one another. This, as it is at all times, a noble Measure of Government; so it was more necessary to offer such an Advice, at a time in which it was resolved to proceed with an unmerciful Rigor, against those whom they called Hereticks. The Queen seemed to be  
so

Paper-Office.

so sure, that she was Quick with Child, that the Privy-Council wrote upon it a Letter to *Boner*, and ordered him to cause *Te Deum* to be sung upon it. With such a Precipitation was this desired Piece of News published.

1554.

Some small Favour was at King *Philip's* Desire, shewed to some. Jan. 18. The Archbishop of *York* was released, upon a Bond of 20000 Marks for his Good Behaviour. How far he recanted, or complied, does not appear: One thing may be reasonably concluded; That since no more mention is made of the Complaint put in against him, for keeping another Man's Wife from him, there is no Reason to think there was any Truth in it. For there being so particular a Zeal then on foot. to disgrace the Marriage of the Clergy, so flagrant an Instance as this, in a Man put in so eminent a Post, would not have been pass'd over, if there had been any Colour of Truth, or Proof for it. On the 27th of *January*, *Hopkins*, Sheriff of the City of *Coventry*, was put in the *Fleet* for Ill Religion. On the 19th of *February*, some small Regard was had to *Miles Coverdale*, as being a Foreigner; for he was a *Dane*: He had a Passport to go to *Denmark*, with Two Servants, without any unlawful Let or Search.

1554.

The Archbi-  
shop of *York*  
set at Liberty.

On the 29th of *January*, Cardinal *Pole* gave Deputed Powers to the Bishops, to reconcile all Persons to the Church, pursuant to the first Breve he had from the Pope; by which the Reconciliation was made very easy; every one being left at his Liberty to chuse his own Confessor, who was to enjoin him his Penance: Upon which, the Clergy, both Regulars and Seculars, were to be intirely restored, confirmed in their Benefices, and made capable of all further Favours: But those who were accused, or condemned for Heresy, were only to be restored to the Peace of the Church, for the Quiet of their Consciences. All Canonical Irregularities were also taken off; all Public Abjurations, or Renunciations, were, at Discretion, to be either moderated, or intirely forgiven; with a Power to the Bishop, to depute such Rectors and Curates, as he shall think fit, to Absolve and reconcile all Lay-Persons to the Church. That sent to the Bishop of *Norwich*, is still upon Record, and was collated with the Register, and sent me by Dr. *Tanner*. With this, I have likewise put in the Collection, the Method in which it was executed. First, the Articles of the Visitation are in it, in *English*; then follow Rules, in *Latin*, given by the Cardinal, to all Bishops, and their Officials. The most material of these is, "That all who were empowered to reconcile Persons to the Church, were required to enter into a Register, the Names of all such as they should Receive: That it might appear upon Record, who were, and who were not Reconciled; and to proceed against all such, as were not Reconciled: In particular, they were to insert *Thomas Becket's* Name, and also the Pope's, in all their Offices."

Coll. Numb.

33.

Coll. Numb.

34.

Now came on the Burning of Heretics. Many had been kept above a Year and a half in Prison, when yet there was no Law against them: And now a Law was made against them, which it could not be pretended that they had transgressed. But Articles were objected to them, to which they were, by the Ecclesiastical Law, obliged to make Answer: and upon their Answers, they were condemned



1555. *Sampson* in a Letter to *Calvin*, wrote on the 23d of February, "That *Gardiner* had ordered Fourscore of the Prisoners to be brought before him; and had tried to prevail on them, both by Promises and Threatnings, to return, as he called it, to the Union of the Church: But not one of them yielded, except *Barlow*, that had been Bishop of *Bath* and *Wells*, and *Cardmaker*, an Archdeacon there." So this proved ineffectual. How far these yielded, does not appear.

Letters sent from Zurich. The Reformers when tried by *Gardiner* were firm.

Coll. Numb. 35.

It was resolved to begin with *Hooper*; against whom, both *Gardiner* and *Boner* had so peculiar an Ill Will, that he was singled out, of all the Bishops, to be the first Sacrifice. A Copy of his Process and Sentence was sent me by Dr. *Tanner*, which I have put in the Collection. On the 28th of January he was brought before *Gardiner*, in his Court in *Southwark*, and is called only *John Hooper*, Clerk. *Gardiner* set forth, "That the Day before he had been brought before him, and others of the Privy-Council, and exhorted to confess his Errors and Heresies, and to return to the Unity of the Church; a Pardon being offered him for all that was passed; but that his Heart was so hardened, that he would not accept of it: So he was then brought, to answer to certain Articles; but he had again the Offer made him, to be received into the Bosom of the Church, if he desired it. He rejected that; and, as the Acts of the Court have it, he did impudently break out into some Blasphemies." The Articles that were objected to him, were Three: "1. That He, being a Priest, and of a Religious Order, had married a Wife, and lived with her; and did, both by Preaching and Writing, justify and defend that his Marriage. To which he answered, acknowledging it was true; and that he was still ready to defend it. 2. That Persons married, might, for the Cause of Fornication or Adultery, according to the Word of God, be so divorced, that they might lawfully Marry again. To this he likewise answered, confessing it, and saying, That he was ready to defend it, against all who would oppose it. 3. That he had publicly taught and maintained, That in the Sacrament of the Altar, the True and Natural Body and Blood of Christ, are not present under the Accidents of Bread and Wine; so that there is no material Bread and Wine in it." To which his Answer is set down in *English* Words; "That the very Natural Body and Blood of Christ, is not Really and Substantially in the Sacrament of the Altar: Saying also, That the Mass was of the Devil, and was an Idol." *Gardiner*, upon this, ordered him to come again into Court the next Day; and then he did again try, by many Persuasions to prevail on him: but he continued still obstinate, and said further, "That Marriage was none of the Seven Sacraments; and if it was a Sacrament, he could prove there were Seventyseven Sacraments." After all this, *Gardiner* gave Sentence, and delivered him over to the Secular Arm. Upon which, the Sheriffs of *London* took him into their Hands, as their Prisoner: But it was resolved to send him to *Glocester*, there to receive his Crown of Martyrdom. And there was a particular Order sent along with him to *Glocester*; in which he is designed "*John Hooper*, that was called

*Hooper*, the first Bishop that suffer'd, barbarously used.

“ led Bishop of *Worcester* and *Glocester*, who was judged to be a  
 “ most obdurate, false, detestable Heretick, and did still persist ob-  
 “ stinate, and refused Mercy, tho’ it was offered to him : He was  
 “ sent to be burned at *Glocester*, to the Example and Terror of those  
 “ whom he had seduced. Order is also given, to call some of Re-  
 “ putation in that Shire, to assist the Mayor and the Sheriffs of that  
 “ City. And because this *Hooper* is, as all Hereticks are, a vain-  
 “ glorious Person ; and if he have Liberty to speak, he may per-  
 “ suade such as he has seduced, to persist in the miserable Opinions  
 “ that he hath taught them ; Therefore strict Order is given, that  
 “ neither at his Execution, nor in going to the Place of it, he be  
 “ suffered to speak at large ; but that he be led quietly, and in Si-  
 “ lence, for avoiding further Infection.” This will be found in the  
 Collection. But tho’ his Words could not be suffered to be heard,  
 yet the Voice of his Sufferings, which were extreemly violent, had  
 probably the best Effect on those who saw both them, and his  
 Constancy in them. He had been above a Year and a Half in Prison,  
 under much hard Usage. He sent his Wife out of *England*, to de-  
 liver himself from that which might raise too great Tendernefs in  
 him, especially if he had seen her ill used, which the Wives of the  
 Clergy were in danger of daily. He wrote several Letters to *Bul-  
 linger* from the Prison, but was so watched, that he durst not enter  
 into any Particulars. Most of his Letters were Recommendations of  
 some, who were then flying out of *England* : He, in them all, ex-  
 pressed much Constancy and Patience : And he was preparing him-  
 self for that, in which he reckoned his Imprisonment would soon  
 end. He had no other Prospect, but of Sealing the Truth with his  
 Blood. He was very glad, when he knew his Wife had got safe to  
*Frankfort* ; where she lived, and wrote several Letters to *Bullinger*  
 in a very clean and natural Stile of *Latin* : They do chiefly relate to  
 her Husband’s Condition.

1555.  
 Paper-Office.  
 Coll. Numb.  
 36.

Among several Letters that *Hooper* wrote, during his Imprison-  
 ment, to *Bullinger*, I find one that is so full, and shews so clearly  
 the Temper of that Holy Man in his Imprisonment, that I have put  
 it in the Collection. He had writen several Letters to him, that it  
 seems fell into ill Hands, and so came not to *Zurick*, as they were  
 directed ; as he found by *Billinger*’s last Letter, that some of his  
 were also intercepted. “ That last which he had, was directed to  
 “ him, to be communicated to all his Fellow-Prisoners : He  
 “ promised, that he would take Care to send it round among them.  
 “ The Wound that the Papacy had received in *England*, was then  
 “ entirely healed : The Pope was now declared the *Head of that*  
 “ *Church*. The Prisoners, who had been shut up for a Year and a  
 “ Half, were daily troubled by the Enemies of the Gospel : They  
 “ were kept asunder from one another, and treated with all man-  
 “ ner of Indignities ; and they were daily threatened with the last  
 “ Extremities, which did not terrify them.

Coll. Numb.  
 37.

“ They were so inwardly fortified, that they despised both Fire  
 “ and Sword. They knew in whom they believed ; and were sure  
 “ they were to suffer for Well-doing. He desires the Continuance  
 “ of their Prayers, let God do with them what seemed good in his



1555.

“ Eyes. He sent over to him Two Books that he had written, the  
 “ one of True Religion, and the other of False Religion, which he  
 “ had dedicated to the Parliament, as an Apology for the Reforma-  
 “ tion. He gives them Liberty to correct them as they thought  
 “ fit; and desired, that they might be quickly printed; for they  
 “ were well approved by the Pious and Learned about him. He  
 “ desires they may not be frightened from doing it, by the Apprehen-  
 “ sions of any Harm that might happen to himself upon that Ac-  
 “ count: He committed himself to God, who was his Defence and  
 “ his Guard, thro’ Jesus Christ; to whom he had entirely dedicated  
 “ himself. If God would prolong his Life, he prayed it might be  
 “ to the Glory of his Name; but if he would put an End to this  
 “ short and wicked Life, which of these soever it pleased God to or-  
 “ der, his Will be done.” This is dated from his Prison, the 11th  
 of *December* 1554. It appears that *Hooper’s* Wife was a *German*;  
 so his sending her in Time out of *England*, was a just Expression  
 of his Care of Her.

On the 18th of *March*, some Sacrifices being to be made in *Essex*,  
 “ Letters were written by the Council to the Earl of *Oxford*,  
 “ and the Lord *Rick*, to be present at the Burning of those obstinate  
 “ Heretics, that were sent to divers Parts of that County. And on  
 the 1st of *April*, Informations being brought, that there were Preach-  
 ers at Work in several Parts of the Kingdom, a General Order was  
 sent to all Sheriffs, to seize on them. When that Madman, *William*  
*Thomas*, called otherwise *Flower*, or *Branch*, was seized on, for  
 wounding a Priest in the Church, they found a Cloth about his Neck,  
 with these Words, *Deum time, Idolum fuge*: Fear God, and fly from  
 Idolatry. He was seized on by Sir *Nicholas Hare*, and Sir *Thomas*  
*Cornwall*: They had Letters of Thanks from the Council for their  
 Pains. They were ordered first to Examine him, then to send him  
 to the Bishop of *London*, to proceed against him for Heresy; and to  
 the Justices of Peace, to punish him for the Shedding of Blood in the  
 Church: And if he persists in his Heresy, Order is given, that he be  
 executed in the latter End of the Week, but that his Right Hand  
 should be cut off the Day before.

Persons ap-  
 pointed to  
 carry the  
 News of the  
 Queen’s being  
 Delivered.

On the 16th of *May*, some Persons were named, and their Ap-  
 pointments ordered, who should be in Readiness to carry the News  
 of the Queen’s Delivery to Foreign Princes. The Lord Admiral  
 was appointed to go to the Emperor; and was allowed Four Pounds  
 a Day, and Two Hundred Pounds for Equipage. The Lord *Fitz-*  
*water* was to go to the *French* Court, and was to have 200 Marks  
 for Equipage. Sir *Henry Sydney* was to go to the King of the *Ro-*  
*mans*, and to have 500 Marks: And *Shelley* was to carry the News  
 to the King of *Portugal*, and to have 400 Marks. This was repeat-  
 ed on the 28th of *May*. The Money was ordered to be ready, for  
 the immediate Dispatch of those Envoys. And on the 29th of *May*  
 Orders were given, that the Persons named should be ready to go  
 when warned. On the 1st of *June*, a Letter was ordered to the  
 Bishop of *London*, to proceed against some, who were suspected to  
 be of Evil Religion. And on the 3d of *June*, Letters were writ-

ten

1555.

ten to the Lord *Rich* to assist at the Execution of some Hereticks at *Colchester*, *Harwich*, and *Meaintru*; a Letter was also written to the Earl of *Oxford*, to send his Servants to attend on the Lord *Rich* at those Executions. It is not easy to guess whether the many Letters written upon those Occasions, were to prevent Tumults, because they apprehended the People might rescue those Victims out of the Sheriff's Hands, if he had not been well guarded; or whether it was to celebrate those Triumphs over Heresy, with much Solemnity; which is commonly done in those Countries where the Inquisition is received. At the same Time Entries are made in the Council-Books of the Examinations of several Persons for spreading false Rumors.

On the 9th of *June*, Letters were written to the Lord *North*, and others, to put such obstinate Persons as would not Confess to the *Torture*, and there to order them *at their Discretion*: And a Letter was written to the Lieutenant of the *Tower* to the same Effect: Whether this pretended Obstinacy was a Concealing of Hereticks, or of the Reporters of false News, does not appear: But whatever the Matter was, the putting People not yet Convict, by that which the Civil Law called a half Proof (*Semiplena Probatio*) to the *Torture*, because they were thought obstinate, and would not confess, that the leaving the Degree of the Torture to the *Discretion* of those appointed for their Examination, was a great Step towards the most Rigorous Part of the Proceedings of Inquisitors. On the 12th of *June*, Orders were given for making out Writs for the Burning of Three Persons condemned for Heresy in *Sussex*. On the 13th of *June* Letters of Thanks were ordered to Sir *Henry Tirrel*, and Mr. *Anthony Brown*, for their assisting at the Execution of Hereticks. And on the 15th of *June*, Letters of Thanks were ordered to the Earl of *Oxford*, and the Lord *Rich*, on the same Account. On the 17th of *June*, Letters of Thanks were written to those in *Cambridge*, who had committed some Priests to Prison: But they are ordered to release them, if thoroughly Penitent. And on the 18th of *June*, a Letter was written to the Bishop of *London*, informing him that Four Parishes in *Essex* did still use the *English Service*: He is required to examine into this, and to punish it, and to send some of his Chaplains to preach to them.

On that Day a Letter was written from *London* to *Peter Martyr*, telling him that it was given out that the Queen had said, she could not be happily delivered 'till all the Hereticks then in Prison were burned: For she continued still expecting to be delivered; and on the 24th of *June*, an Order was given to have a Passport ready for *Shelly*, that was to carry the News to *Portugal*. On the 27th of *June*, Letters were written to the Lord *Rich*, to give the Queen's Thanks to some Gentlemen of *Rockford* in *Essex*, for coming so honestly of themselves to *Colchester*, and other Places, to assist the Sheriff at Executions. At this Time a Condition was put in all Passports and Licences, to go beyond Sea, that they shall avoid all Hereticks, and all Places infected with Heresy.

I shall here add a Passage, recorded by *Fox*, of a Declaration that was made to himself before Witnesses, in the Year 1568. A Woman told him that she lived near *Aldersgate*, and was delivered of a Boy

The Queen still looked to be delivered of a Child.  
*P. Mar. Loc. Com. 1626. Fol. 769.*

*Fox P. 1450.*  
A Practice that gives Suspicion of ill Designs.



1555.

on the 11th of *June* 1555; and after she had born it, the Lord *North*, and another Lord, came to her, and desired to have her Child from her, with very fair Offers, as that her Child should be well provided for; so that she should take no Care for it, if she would swear that she never knew, or had such a Child: And after this some Women came to her, of whom, one they said was to be the Rocker. But she would in no Case part with her Child. This being at the Time that the Queen seemed to be every Day looking for her Delivery, may give some Suspensions, and puts us in mind of the Words of the Preacher, *That which is, is that which has been*. On the 30th of *June*, Letters were written to the Gentlemen in *Kent*, to assist the Sheriff at the Execution of Hereticks in *Rocheſter*, *Dartford*, and *Tunbridge*.

Plots pretend-  
ed.

On the 2d of *July*, upon an Information of a Commotion designed in *Suffex*, the Opinion of the Judges was asked about it; and some Judges were sent to proceed in it, according to Law. Great Occasion was taken from Foolish Discourses to allarm the Nation with the Apprehension of Plots, and the Blame of all was to be cast on the concealed Preachers, that were now hid in Corners, instructing the People at the Peril of their Lives: Twelve Persons were brought up out of *Suffex*, as guilty of a Conspiracy: But I find no more of that Matter. *Bird*, that had been Bishop of *Cheſter*, and was deprived for his Marriage, did now think fit to repent; and engaged so far, that *Boner* made him his Suffragan. He was blind of an Eye, and being appointed to preach before the Bishop, he chose those Words for his Text, *Thou art Peter*: But whether his Conscience smote him, or his Memory failed, he could go no farther: So instead of Matter of Triumph upon the Apostacy of such a Man, the Shame of such a dumb Action, turned the Triumph to the other side.

Card. Pole's  
Letter to  
Cranmer.

On the 9th of *July*, a Letter was written to the Bishop of *London*, directing him, that the Three condemned Hereticks should be burnt at *Uxbridge*, *Stratford*, and *Walden*: And he was ordered to proceed against the rest. At this Time *Pole* thought it became him to write to *Cranmer* to try how far a Piece of Highflown Rhetorick could work on him, though some think this Letter was written a very little while before *Cranmer*'s Execution; the Original is yet extant. It does very little Honour to his Memory, being only a Declamation against Heresy and Schism, against a Married Clergy, and Separation from the See of *Rome*, and the rejecting of *Transubstantiation*. In it all he proves nothing, and argues nothing, but supposes all his own Principles to be true and sure: He inveighs against the poor Prisoner with some seeming Tenderneſs, but with a great Acrimony of Stile, and in an insulting Manner, like one that knew he might say what he pleased; and that there was no room for making Remarks and Answers to so poor an Epistle; which Mr. *Le Grand* has thought fit to translate into *French*, but I do not think it worth the while to put it in the Collection.

On the 14th of *July*, the Archbishop of *York* was ordered to appear, but no more is said concerning him, There were Intimations given of Commotions designed at Fairs, and Orders were sent to Sheriffs.

riffs and Gentlemen to watch them: Informations were also brought of a Conspiracy in *Essex* and *Suffolk*, and of another in *Dorsetshire*. On the 6th of *August*, Thanks were written to the Earl of *Oxford* and the Lord *Rich*, with the other Justices of Peace in *Essex* for their Diligence; desiring them to proceed in their Examination of the late intended Conspiracy, and to bring the Offenders before them: If their Offence was found to be Treason, they were to suffer as Traytors: Or if their Guilt did not rise up to that, they were to order them to be punished according to the Statutes.

1555.

On the 28th of *August*, Notice was given to the Sheriffs and Justices of Peace, that the King was going to *Flanders*. The Ambassadors sent to *Rome*, did return about the middle of *September*; and in Council, on the 16th of *September*, the Bishop of *Ely* produced the Pope's Bull, erecting *Ireland* into a Kingdom; and bestowing on the Crown of *England*, the Title of *King of Ireland*. This was given to the Bishop of *Dublin*, with an Order to publish it in *Ireland*: For that Insolent Pope would not give them Audience upon their Powers from the King and Queen of *England*, and *Ireland*, pretending that none had a Right to assume the Title *King*, but as it was derived from him. So as a Special Grace, he conferred that Regal Title on the Queen, and then admitted them to Audience, after he had made them stay a Month waiting for it at *Rome*. It seems they knew the Bigotry of the *English* Court too well to dispute this Point. So they yielded it up very tamely, fearing that they should be disowned, if they had made any Opposition to it. But the main Errand they came upon, was to obtain a Confirmation of the Settlement of the Church-Lands, made in Parliament by Cardinal *Pole*: That was not only flatly refused, but a Bull was published, that in Effect, repealed it all.

Ambassadors sent to the Pope, came back with a Bull, erecting *Ireland* into a Kingdom.

“ It begins setting forth what Pope *Symmachus* decreed against the Alienating of any Lands belonging to the Church upon any Pre- tence whatsoever, or Farming out the Rights of the Church: He laid an *Anathema* on all who should be any way concerned in such Bargains; and gave an Authority to any Ecclesiastical Person to recover all with the mean Profits; and this was to take Place in all Churches. Pope *Paul* the 2d had likewise condemned all Alienations of Church Goods, and all Farms of Leases beyond the Term of Three Years, and had annulled all such Agreements, Farms, or Leases. Both the Parties, as well the Granter, as the Receiver of such Leases, were put under Excommunication; and the Goods so alienated, were to revert to the Church. But these Prohibitions notwithstanding, of late Years several Persons both of the Laity, and of the Clergy, had possessed themselves of Castles and Lands, belonging both to the Church of *Rome*, and to other Cathedrals, and even to Metropolitan Churches; and to Monasteries, Regular Houses, and Hospitals, under the Pretence of Alienations, to the evident Damage of those Churches and Monasteries, without observing the Solemnities required by Law in such Cases; and they continue their Possession, by which the Incumbents in those Churches are great Sufferers; and the Popes themselves, who were wont to supply the Poor who came to *Rome* out of these Lands, are no more able to do that, and can scarce maintain them-  
VOL. III. R r r selves

See the *Coll.* of the former Books Numb. 1. The Pope's Bull for restoring all Church Lands.



1555.

“ selves and their Families ; which turns to the Offence of God, the  
 “ Reproach of the Clergy, and is Matter of Scandal to the Faithful :  
 “ Therefore the Pope of his own Motion, upon certain Knowledge,  
 “ and by vertue of the Plenitude of the Apostolic Power, does annul all the Alienations, or Impropropriations, either perpetual, or  
 “ Leases to the Third, or to a single Life, or beyond the Term of  
 “ Three Years ; or Exchanges and Farms of Cities, or Lands, or  
 “ Goods or Rights, belonging to the *Roman Church* ; or to any  
 “ Cathedral, Monastery, Regular House, or to any Ecclesiastical  
 “ Benefice, with, or without Cure ; to Seculars, or Regulars ; Hospitals, and other Pious Foundations, by whomsoever made, tho’  
 “ by Popes, or by their Authority ; or by the Prelates of Cathedrals, Monasteries, or Hospitals ; or the Rectors of Churches,  
 “ though Cardinals, that had been made without the Solemnities required by Law, in what Form of Words soever they have been  
 “ made, though confirmed by Oath, and established by a long Prescription : All these are by the Apostolic Authority, rescinded,  
 “ annulled, and made void, and the Possessors of such Lands are to  
 “ be compelled by all Censures, and Pecuniary Pains, to make Satisfaction for all the mean Profits received, or to be received ; and  
 “ all Judges are required to give Judgment conform to this Bull.”  
 Dated the 12th of *July*.

Reflections  
made on it.

Thus the Pope, instead of confirming what the Legate had done, did in the most formal Terms possible, reverse and annul it all. Even Papal Alienations, or made by the Papal Authority are made void. The pretended Consent of the Convocation is declared null ; and all Ratifications of what was at first illegally made, are annulled. By this also, not only the Possessors of Church Lands, but all the Tenants to any Estate belonging to the Church, who hold for Lives, or Years, beyond the Term of Three Years, may see in this Bull. how that all they now hold by those Tenures, is made void. No doubt the Ambassadors of *England* did all that in them lay, to have this Bull softened, or to have an Exception made for *England* : But that Pope was not to be moved, and perhaps he thought he shewed no small Favour to *England*, on the Queen’s Account, in not naming it in this Bull : And in not fulminating on the Account of the late Settlement. Thus the Matter of securing the Abbey Lands by that fraudulent Transaction, is now pretty apparent.

Pope *Paul* was in the Right in one Thing, to press the setting up Courts of Inquisition every where, as the only sure Method to extirpate Heresy. And it is highly probable that the King, or his *Spanish* Ministers, made the Court of *England* apprehend, that Torture and Inquisition, were the only sure Courses to root out Heresy. It has appeared already what Orders are given about *Torture*, even to use it at *Discretion* ; but another Step was made that carried this Matter much further.

Instructions had been given in *March*, 1555, to the Justices of Peace to have one or more honest Men in every Parish, secretly instructed to give Information of the Behaviour of the Inhabitants amongst, or about them. One of these was directed to the Earl of *Suffex*, who acted with a Superlative Measure of Zeal : He wrote  
on

on the 18th of *April*, this Year, to the Bishop of *Norwich*; complaining, that at a Town near him, there had been no Sepulchre, nor Creeping to the Cross before *Easter*. The Day after he wrote that Letter, it appears by another of his Letters, that *Ket*, who led the Infurrection in *Norfolk*, in King *Edward's* Reign, and whose Body was hanged in Chains, had fallen down from the Gallows; and that Prophecies were spread about the Country, of what should follow when that should happen. He ordered the Body to be hanged up again, if it was not waited; and he imprisoned those that gave out these Prophecies. He went on to greater Matters, and drew up an Account of the Obedience that the Justices had paid, to all the Instructions and Orders that had been sent them. I had a Volume of his Letters in my Hands some Years ago; but I wrote out of it only the Answers he returned to the 6th Article, in these Words:

“ It is agreed, that the Justices of the Peace, in every of their Limits, shall call secretly before them, One or Two Honest and Secret Persons, or more, by their Discretions; and such as they shall think good; and command them, by Oath, or otherwise, as the same Justice shall think good, That they shall secretly learn, and search out such Person and Persons, as shall evil-behave themselves in the Church, or idly, or despise openly by Words, the King's and Queen's Proceedings; or go about to make or move, any Stir, Commotion, or unlawful Gathering together of the People; or that tell any Lewd or Seditious Tales, Rumors, or News, to move or stir any Person or Persons, to rise, stir or make any Commotion or Infurrection, or to consent to any such Intent or Purpose. And also, that the same Persons so to be appointed, shall declare to the same Justices of Peace, the Ill Behaviour of Lewd, Disorderd Persons; whether it shall be for using unlawful Games, Idleness, and such other light Behaviour of such suspected Persons, as shall be in the same Town, or near thereabouts: And that the same Informations shall be given secretly to the Justices; and the same Justices shall call such accused Persons before them, and examine them, without declaring by whom they be accused. And that the same Justices shall, upon their Examination, punish the Offenders, according as their Offences shall appear to them, upon the Accusment and Examination, by their Discretion, either by open Punishment, or by good Abearing.”

Here was a great Step made towards an Inquisition: This being the settled Method of that Court, to have sworn Spies and Informers every where, upon whose secret Advertisements, Persons are taken up: And the first Step in their Examination, is, to know of them, for what Reason they are brought before them: Upon which, they are tortured, till they tell as much as the Inquisitors desire to know, either against themselves, or others. But they are not suffered to know, neither what is informed against them, nor who are the Informers. Arbitrary Torture, and now Secret Informers, seem to be Two great Steps, made to prepare the Nation for an Inquisition.



1555.

In *September*, the Dutcheſs of *Suffolk*, who had married Mr. *Bertie*, went out of the Kingdom without a License: Upon which, a Commission was ſent into *Lincolnſhire*, to take an Account of her Eſtate. On the 19th of *September*, there was a Paper caſt into a Houſe near *Fulham*, with ſome Intimations of Ill Deſigns in *Effex*. The Maſter of the Houſe brought it to the Council; upon which, they ſent Orders to that Country, to ſee what Foundation there was for ſuch Suſpicions. *Tracy* (probably the Son of him, concerning whoſe *Will* there was much ado made in King *Henry's* Time) had been brought before the Biſhop of *Gloceſter*; and he, as was informed, behaved himſelf ſtubbornly towards him: Upon which, he was brought before the Council, and was required to declare his Conformity in Matters of Religion. He promiſed to do it; and upon that, he was ſent back to his Country. On the 23d of *September* there were ſome Hopes given of the King's Coming back; upon which, Sir *Richard Southwell* was ſent to attend on him. On the 9th of *October*, the Governor of *Jerſey* having examined one *Gardiner*, for ſpeaking ſome indecent Words of the King, deſired Orders how to proceed againſt him: Upon which, he was ordered to proceed according to the Statutes, if theſe took place in that Iſland: but if not, according to the Cuſtom of the Place.

*Cranmer*  
proceeded  
againſt.

On the 12th of *September*, *Brooks*, Biſhop of *Gloceſter*, who was conſtituted Subdelegate to Cardinal *Puteo*, the Pope's Delegate, to try *Cranmer*, (it being, it ſeems, thought indecent that *Pole*, who was to ſucceed him, ſhould be his Judge) came to *Oxford*, with *Martin* and *Story*, who were the King and Queen's Commiſſioners, to demand Juſtice againſt *Cranmer*; exhibiting Articles againſt him. *Cranmer* made a long Apology for himſelf. Among other Things, he ſaid, "The Loſs of his Promotion grieved him not: He thanked God as heartily for that poor and afflicted State in which he was then, as ever he did for the Times of his Proſperity. But that which ſtuck cloſeſt to him, and created him the greateſt Sorrow, was, to think that all that Pains and Trouble, that had been taken by King *Henry* and himſelf for ſo many Years, to retrieve the Ancient Authority of the Kings of *England*, and to vindicate the Nation from a Foreign Yoke, and from the Baſeneſs and infinite Inconveniences of Crouching to the Biſhops of *Rome*, ſhould now thus eaſily be quite undone: And that the King and Queen ſhould, in their own Realm, become his Accuſers, before a Foreign Power. If he had tranſgreſſed the Law, they had ſufficient Authority to puniſh him; and to that, he would at all Times ſubmit himſelf." They exhibited Interrogatories to him; and he gave his Answer to them. In Concluſion, they required him to go to *Rome*, within fourſcore Days, to make his Answer in Perſon. He ſaid, he was moſt willing to go, if the King and Queen would ſend him.

On the 6th of *October*, *Ridley* and *Latimer* ſuffered Martyrdom: But *Gardiner*, who was with Impatience waiting for the News, was, ſoon after he heard it, ſtruck with an Illneſs, in which he languiſhed for ſome Time. *Piklington*, Biſhop of *Dureſm*, in a Sermon that he preached, ſaid, *He rotted above Ground, ſo that it was ſcarce poſſi-*

possible to get any to come near him. He died on the 12th of November. On the 5th of November, Orders were given for to dispose of many Prisoners. 1555.

*Cranmer* was now to be offered up. Some have thought, that upon his Attainder, the See of *Canterbury* was vacant; and indeed, the Chapter of *Canterbury* acted accordingly: But the Papal Authority being restored, he was still, according to the Papal Law, Archbishop, till by a Commission from *Rome*, he was judged an obstinate Heretick, and was thereupon deprived. When the eighty Days were out, a Mock Process was made at *Rome*; in which it was falsely said, that he did not care to appear; upon which he was declared *Contumacious*: And then a formal Sentence was given in the Pope's Name, as sitting on the Throne of Justice, having before his Eyes God alone, who is the Righteous Lord, and judgeth the World in Righteousness. With such specious Words was that grossly Unrighteous Judgment introduced. And upon that, a Letter came from *Rome* on the 14th of December, mentioning his being Condemned and Deprived, and delivering him over to the Secular Arm. The Deprivation must have passed some Days before: For, on the 11th of December, *Pole's* Bulls were granted; in which, mention is made of the See's being vacant, by the Deprivation of *Cranmer*. The Writ for Burning him, mentions his being judged an obstinate Heretick by the Pope, and deprived by him; and that he had been degraded by the Bishops of *London* and *Ely*, by Commission from the Pope: So on the 24th of February, the Writ was sealed. I have nothing to add to the sad Narration I gave, both of his Fall, and of his Repentance, and his firm Constancy to the last, in that amazing Instance of Holding his Hand in the Fire, till it was almost burnt away; of which *Thuanus* gives a very particular Account, so that the Truth of the Fact cannot be disputed.

On the 13th of March, the Privy Council were concerned when they heard his Paper of Recantation was printed. *Rydall* and *Cope-land*, Two Printers, were required to deliver to *Carwood* the Queen's Printer, the Books of his Recantation to be burned by him. One Part of his Character may be added out of *Pole's* Letter to him. In one place he says, he hears "it was pretended that he forced no Man in Points of Religion, but behaved himself mildly towards all Persons." And in another place he writes, "that it was said his Life was unblameable," But tho' *Pole* throws that off, as of no Importance, yet upon his mentioning these good Characters, it may be depended on, that they were true. *Ridley*, in that Noble Letter that he wrote to *Grindall*, when they were every Day looking for their Crown, says of him, "That he then shewed, how well he deserved the Great Character of the Chief Pastor and Archbishop of this Church." To which he adds, of *Latimer*, "That he was the Ancient, and True Apostle of Christ to the English Nation." In a word, if it had not been for *Cranmer's* too feeble Compliance in King *Henry's* Time, and this last inexcusable Slip, he might well be proposed as one of the Greatest Patterns in History. And if the Excesses to which some Opinions had formerly carried Men, did in some Particulars incline him to the Opposite Extreams, this must



1555.

be reckoned a very pardonable Instance, of managing the Counterpoise without due Caution. He was a Pattern of Humility, Meekness and Charity. He had a true and generous Contempt of Wealth; and of those Shews of Greatness, that belong to a High Station. His Labours, in Searching into all Ecclesiastical Authors, both Ancient and Modern, are amazing to those, who have seen the Vast Collections that he writ out, on all Matters of Divinity, with his own Hand. But now, after a long Course of Vexation and Contradiction, and, in Conclusion, after a long and severe Imprisonment, he was put to a Cruel Death, by Persons whom he had served faithfully and effectually. For he had both served the Queen, and reconciled her to her Father; and he had shewed a most particular Favour to *Thirleby*, and others, who concurred to finish this Tragedy. I have put all this Matter together; and now I must look back to Publick Affairs.

Proceedings  
in Convoca-  
tion.

There was a Convocation sat with the Parliament in *October*; and to the Middle of *November* 1555. *Christopherson* was chosen Prolocutor: And after *Boner* had confirmed him, he desired, that the Lower-House would name Eight or Ten Persons, to hear some secret Propositions, that were to be made to them by the King and Queen, and by the Cardinal, concerning the Publick Good of the Kingdom, and of the Church. They, upon that, did chuse the Prolocutor, and Ten more: And to these the Bishop of *Ely* proposed to offer the Queen a Subsidy, in Return for the great Favour She had shewed the Clergy, in Forgiving the First-Fruits and Tenths, and in Restoring to the Church all the Impropriations of Benefices, that were then, by the Suppression of the Monasteries, vested in the Crown: For all which, the Bishop of *Ely* proposed a Subsidy of Eight Shillings in the Pound, to be paid in Four Years. The last Session of Convocation was on the 15th of *November*: And a *Memorandum* was inserted in these Words; "After this Convocation was begun, there was a National Synod; the Clergy of *York* being joined with them." For which, the Cardinal thought it safe and fit to take out a License under the Great Seal. The first Session was on the 4th of *November*; and in this the Cardinal set himself so zealously to remove many Abuses, that *Mason* wrote, that many of the Clergy wished he were in *Rome* again.

The Earl of *Devonshire* went out of *England* this Summer. As he passed thro' *Flanders*, he waited on the Emperor; and, as *Mason* wrote, he owned that he owed his Liberty to him. The Queen sent, and offered her Mediation between the Emperor and the *French* King; The Emperor accepted it; but with very sharp Reflections on the *French* King.

There was in *April*, a Treaty of Peace between the Emperor and the King of *France*, set on Foot: In which the Queen was Mediator, and sent over both *Pole* and *Gardiner* to *Calais* in order to it. The Constable, and the Cardinal of *Lorraine*, were ordered to come from the Court; but the Pope's Death made it be thought more necessary to send that Cardinal to *Rome*: What further Progress was made in this does not appear to me, for I take it from a Letter of *Mason's*

*son's* to *Vannes*, then the Queen's Ambassador at *Venice*. It will be found in the Collection, the Original being in Dr. *Tanner's* Hands, who sent me this Copy. By this Letter it appears, that *Bolls* of *Cambridgeshire*, and *S. Peter Mewtas*, were there in Prison upon Suspicion, but nothing appeared against them. That Letter tells us, that the Princes of *Germany* were alarmed upon the Cardinal *Morone's* coming to *Ausbourg*, apprehending probably that he came to disturb the Settlement, then made in the Matters of Religion in the Empire: But the Emperor had sent such Powers to his Brother *Ferdinand*, that his coming was like to have no Effect. He also tells in that Letter, that the Dean and Prebendaries of *Westminster*, were using all Endeavours to hinder the converting that Foundation into an Abbey: And that Dr. *Cole* was active in it, affirming that Monks had not their Institution from Christ as Priests had: But he saw the Court was resolved to have no Regard to the Opposition they made. He adds, that the Duke of *Alva* was still in *England*, though he had sent his Baggage and Servants to *Calais*.

1556.

Coll. Numb.  
38.

*Mason* writes News from the Diet, that Matters of Religion had not been quite settled, but all were to continue in the State in which they were then, 'till the next Meeting: And it was provided, that all Parties should live according to the Religion then accepted of them: The Emperor seemed resolved not to consent to this. He writes that the Allowance of the Marriage of the Clergy, and in particular of Bishops, had been earnestly demanded, but was utterly refused. On the 28th of *October*, he writes that Two Monks of the *Charter-House* had desired the King's Letter that they might return to their House, and at least receive their Pension: The King answered, that as touching their House, since the Parliament was then sitting, it was not a proper Time to move it: But when he should come to *England*, he would help them the best he could: And as to their Pensions, he ordered *Mason* to write concerning that to Secretary *Petre*. On the 7th of *January* 155 $\frac{1}{2}$  a Letter was written to the Mayor and Aldermen of *Coventry*, to chuse some Catholic Grave Man for their Mayor for that Year: A List of Three Persons was sent to them, and they were required to give their Voices for one of them. These were *John Fitz-Herbert*, *Richard Wheeler*, and one *Coleman*.

Motions in  
the Diet of  
the Empire.

On the 14th of *January* a Letter of a very singular Nature was written to the Lord Mayor, and the Sheriffs of *London*, "requiring  
" them to give such substantial Order, that when any Obstinate  
" Man, condemned by the Order of the Laws, shall be delivered  
" to be punished for Heresy, that there be a great Number of Officers,  
" and other Men appointed to be at the Execution: who may be  
" charged to see such as shall misuse themselves, either by comfort-  
" ing, aiding, or praising the Offenders; or otherwise, use themselves  
" to the ill Example of others, to be apprehended and committed to  
" Ward: And besides, to give Commandment that no Householder  
" suffer any of his Apprentices, or other Servants, to be abroad,  
" other than such as their Master will Answer for. And that this  
" Order be always observed in like Cases hereafter." *Philpot's* Mar-  
tyrdom had been about a Month before this, and he being a Man  
highly esteemed, who went through all his Sufferings with Heroic  
Courage,

Compassion  
expressed to  
those who suf-  
fered, punish-  
ed.



1556.

Courage, and Christian Constancy, it is probable there was more than Ordinary Concern expressed by the People at his Sufferings; which drew this Inhuman Letter from the Council; for they had no Sacrifices at that Time ready to be offered.

While these Things past in *England*, the Scene abroad was considerably altered, by the Resignation of *Charles* the Vth, who delivered over his Hereditary Dominions to his Son *Philip*. He began that with the Dominions derived from the House of *Burgundy*; after that, he resigned up to him the Crown of *Spain*, and all that belonged to it: Upon that, Letters were written to the several States, and Cities of *Spain*, on the 17th of *January*. These were all in one Form: So that which was addressed to the City of *Toledo*, was sent over to the Queen, translated out of *Spanish* into *English*, which for the Curiosity of the Thing, I have put into the Collection.

*Charles the Vth, the Resignation of Spain. Coll. Numb. 39.*

In it, “ he tells them that which he always denied to the *Germans*, “ that for Religion’s Sake he had enterprized the War of *Germany*, “ upon the Desire he had to reduce those Countries to the Unity of “ the Church; that so he might procure an universal Peace to all “ *Christendom*, and to assemble and assist at a General Council, for “ the Reformation of many Things, that so with the less Difficulty “ he might bring Home those who had separated themselves, and departed from the Faith. This he had brought to a very good Point, “ when the *French* King allured the *Germans* to a League with him, “ against their Oaths and Fidelity to the Emperor, and so they “ made War on him both by Sea and Land; and then the *French* “ King procured the coming of the *Turks* Army into *Hungary*, to “ the great Damage of *Christendom*; upon which he was forced to “ bring down an Army, to the great Prejudice of his own Person, “ by his being obliged to keep the Field so long, that it had brought “ on him painful Infirmities: He was upon that become so destitute “ of Health, that he was not able in his own Person to endure the “ Travel, and to use that Diligence that was requisite: which proved “ a great Hindrance to many Things, of which he had a deep Sense: “ He wished he had taken the Resolution he was now taking sooner: “ Yet he could not well do it, by reason of his Son’s Absence: For “ it was necessary to communicate many Things to him. So he took “ Order for his Marriage, and to bring him over to him, and soon after that he resigned to him all his States, Kingdoms, and the Seignuries of the Crown of *Castile* and *Leon*, with all their Appurtenances, which are more amply contained in Instruments which he “ had signed of the same Date with this Letter. Trusting that he “ with his great Wisdom and Experience, of which he had great “ Proof in all that he had hitherto handled in his Father’s Name, “ would now order and defend the same with Peace and Justice. “ He therefore having had large Experience of their Loyalty, Fidelity, and Obedience, did not doubt but that they would continue “ to serve and obey him in the same Manner, and Sort, as if God “ had taken him into his Mercy. Dated at *Brussels* the 17th of “ *January* 1556.

Soon after that, he retired to the Place he had designed to spend the rest of his Days in ; and, according to the Account given by my worthy Friend Dr. *Geddes*, there is great Reason to believe, that he applied himself to serious Reflections on Religion. No Prince knew better than he did, both the Corruptions and the Practices of the Court of *Rome* ; and the Artifices and Methods by which two Sessions of the Council of *Trent* had been conducted. He must likewise have understood the Grounds upon which both the *Lutherans*, and the *Reformed* in *Germany*, built their Persuasions : He had heard them often set out : But the Hurry of Business, the Prepossession of Education, and the Views of Interest, had prejudiced him so far against them, that he continued in a most violent Enmity to them : But now that he was at full Leisure to bring all his Observations together, and that Passion and Interest had no more Power over him, there are great Presumptions to believe, that he died persuaded of the Doctrines of the Reformed Religion. *Augustin Casal*, a Canon of the Church of *Salamanca*, was his Preacher, and was esteemed the most Eloquent Preacher that *Spain* ever produced : He was taken up in the Year 1558, and with thirteen more was publickly burned at *Valladolid*, in the Year 1559. The unfortunate Prince *Charles*, and his Aunt, *Donna Juana*, then Governess, looking on that barbarous Execution. *Constantine Pontius*, a Canon of *Sevil*, who was his Confessor, esteemed a Man of great Piety and Learning, was likewise taken up by the Inquisition for being a Protestant : He died in Prison, probably enough by the Torture the Inquisitors put him to : But his Bones, with his Effigies, were burnt at *Sevil* : So were the Bones of the Learned *Egidius*, whom the Emperor had named to the Bishoprick of *Tortosa*, one of the richest in *Spain* : And at the same Time eighteen were burnt alive for being Protestants ; of which the History of the Inquisition gives this Account, That had not the Holy Tribunal put a Stop to those Reformers, the Protestant Religion had run through *Spain* like Wild-fire. People of all Degrees, and of both Sexes, being wonderfully disposed at that Time to have embraced it : And the Writer of the Pontifical History, who was present at some of those Executions, says, that had those Learned Men been let alone but Three Months longer, all *Spain* would have been put into a Flame by them.

The most Eminent of them all was *Bartholomew de Caxanza*, a *Dominican*, who had been Confessor to King *Philip* and to Queen *Mary*, and had been by her recommended to the Archbishoprick of *Toledo*. He had assisted *Charles* in the last Minutes of his Life. He was within a few Months after his Death, upon Suspicion of his being a Protestant, first confined by the Inquisition to his own Palace at *Tordelaguna* : And after he had been for seven Years kept within that Confinement, he was carried to *Rome*, and kept Ten Years a Prisoner in the Castle of *St. Angelo* ; and was at last condemned as one suspected of Heresy. That great Man had been sent by *Charles* as one of his Divines to the Council of *Trent*, where he preached, and wrote a Treatise of the Personal Residence of Bishops. These Things put together, make it highly probable, that *Charles* himself was possessed with that Doctrine that was so much spread among those who were then most about him. *Mezeray* tell us, " That at *Philip's* Arrival



1556.

“ in *Spain* he caused a great many to be burned for Hereticks in his own Prefence, both at *Sevil*, and at *Valladolid*, both Seculars and Ecclesiasticks, Men and Women, and in particular the Effigies of his Father’s Confessor: And if Reports may be believed, he intended to have made his Father’s Process, and to have had his Bones burnt for Herefy; being only hindred from doing it by this Consideration, That if his Father was an Heretick, he had forfeited all his Dominions, and by Consequence he had no Right to resign them to his Son.” This Digression will be forgiven me, I hope, both because it belongs to the main Design upon which I write, and since our Queen, was Queen of *Spain*, when this Persecution was first begun.

The Method  
in which the  
Queen put her  
Affairs.

There are in my Hands Two Papers concerning the Method in which the Queen ordered her Council to proceed; there is no Date put to them: But they were written, either soon after the King went beyond Sea, or perhaps about this Time; for now King *Philip* having the *Spanish* Monarchy put in his Hands, and being engaged in a War with *France*, the Queen had Reason to expect that her Dominions might feel the War very sensibly, as afterwards they did: And so it might seem necessary to put the Administration of her Affairs into a good Method. One of these Papers is writ in Cardinal *Pole*’s own Hand, and is a Memorial prepared for the Queen, of the Things that she was to recommend to her Council, for she had ordered them to attend on her. It is in the Collection, “ First she was to put them in Mind of the Charge that the King gave them at his Departure, which was to be rehearsed to them; and that is, perhaps, the following Paper: They were still to attend at Court, the Matters they were to treat about being of great Weight; and they were to lay such Matters as were proposed in Council, before the King, that they might have his Pleasure, before they were to be executed. They were in particular to know the Resolution of the Council, touching those Things that were to be proposed in this Parliament, and these were to be sent to the King that very Day: And since the King delayed his coming over, they were to consider whether it were not better to delay the Parliament ’till *Candlemas*, if there should be no Prejudice to her Affairs, that Money was so long wanted; for there was great need of it at present, for the setting out of Ships, both for the Emperor’s Passage to *Spain*, and for the King’s Return, for the Payments due at *Calais*, for the Debt owing to the Merchants, the Day of Payment approaching, and for the Debt of *Ireland*: And she was to ask of her Council an Account concerning all these Things: She was likewise to charge them to call in her own Debts, as the best way to clear what she owed to others: And she was to offer them All Authority for doing it effectually; and to require them that at the End of every Week, she might know what came in that Week, and what Order was taken for the rest. And that all those who have any Commission to execute any Matter, shall at the End of every Week inform the Council, what Progress they have made that Week: And that the Council should never begin to treat of any Matter in the Second Week, ’till they were informed of what

Coll. Numb.  
40.

“ was

“ was done in the former Week.” Thus she was to be taught what she was to say to them: Upon which they, who did not know how weak a Woman she was, might imagine that she understood her own Affairs well, and thought much of them: Whereas the poor bigotted Woman was only, as a Machine, made to Speak and to Act as she was prompted, by those who had the Management of her: For, of herself, She seemed capable to think of nothing, but how to destroy the Hereticks, and to extirpate Herefy.

1556.

The other Paper is in *Latin*, and seems to be that which the King had left behind him. It is also in the Collection. “ He named in *Coll. Numbr* it a Select Committee, to whom the Special Care of Matters of <sup>41</sup> State, of the Revenue, and the weighty Affairs of the Kingdom, were to be referred. These (in a modern Term) were the Cabinet-Council; and the Persons were, the Cardinal, (in all great Matters, when he could conveniently come) then the Lord Chancellor, the Lord Treasurer, the Earl of *Arundel*, the Earl of *Pembroke*, the Bishop of *Ely*, the Lord *Paget*, *Rocheſter* the Comptroller, and *Petre* the Secretary. Every one of these was constantly to attend, to Determine in all Matters of State and Revenue, and to make Honourable Payment of all Debts, and to do every Thing in which the Honour and Dignity of the Crown was concerned. They were also earnestly prayed, to lay all Differences, or Quarrels amongst themselves aside; that so they might amicably, and in the Fear of God, deliver such Things in Council, as might tend to the Glory of God, and the Honour and Good of the Crown and Kingdom. And when there is Occasion for it, they were either to come to the Queen, or to send some of their Body, to inform her of every Thing that came before them: And at least Thrice a Week, they were to give her an Account of all their Consultations and Actings. In particular, they were to consider when the Parliament was to meet, and what Things were to be proposed, and done in it, and to digest all that in Writing. On *Sundays*, they were to communicate such Things to the whole Council, as should be thought convenient to be laid before them. They were to take special Care for the Payment of Debts, for the Retrenching of Expence, and for the Good Management of the Queen’s Estate, Revenues, and Customs, and for the Administration of Justice.” Such were the Orders laid down: How they were executed, does not appear.

The Queen herself never came to Council, and the Cardinal very seldom. Sometimes they were very few that attended at that Board: often, not above Three or Four. And now I return, to give an Account of what I find in the Council-Book. On the 19th of *January*, a Letter of Thanks was ordered to the Lord *Willoughby*, and others in *Lincolnshire*. At first, upon the Condemnation of Hereticks, Notice was given to the Council, before the Execution, to see if a Pardon should be offered them: But they found so few, if any, inclined to accept of it, that they did not think fit to expose the Queen’s Pardon to any further Contempt: So those Persons are required to proceed thereafter, against all such as should be condemned before them, according to the Laws, and not to stay for  
any

Proceedings  
against Here-  
ticks.



1556. any Order. On the 20th of *January*, Letters were written to the Sheriffs of *Warwickshire*, *Bedfordshire*, and *Cambridgeshire*, ordering them, that tho' the Prisoners should be acquitted by Order of Law, yet to detain them in safe Custody, till they should hear from the Earl of *Suffex*. On the 14th of *February*, the Council was alarmed with this, That a Stage Play was to be acted in *Shrovetide*; and that many were to run to it: So the Lord *Rich* was ordered to hinder the Acting of it, and to examine and report what he could learn concerning it. On the 16th of *February*, there was an Order sent to Sir *Henry Bedingfield*, Lieutenant of the *Tower*, to put Two to the *Torture*, and to *Pain them at his Discretion*. On the 19th of *February*, a Letter of Thanks was ordered to the Lord *Rich*, for Stopping the Stage-Play. He had put the Actors in Prison, but he gave a good Character of them: So he was ordered to set them at Liberty; but to have an Eye on all such Meetings. Several Inquiries were made at this Time, after Seditious Books: Many Examinations and Commitments were made on that Account.

On the 20th of *April*, one *Harris*, a Carpenter and *Cunner* at *Deptford*, was brought before the Council, for having said on *Maundy-Thursdai*, "The Queen hath this Day given a great Alms; and "has given that away, that should have paid us our Wages. She "hath undone the Realm too; for She loveth another Realm better than this," He confessed the Words, but asked Pardon, and was dismissed. It seems, about that Time, they expected the King's Coming over: For, on the 1st of *June*, the Lord-Admiral was ordered to attend him. On the 21st of *June* an Order was sent to the Lieutenant of the *Tower*, and to a Master of Requests, to put one to the *Torture*, if he thought it convenient. Information was given to the Queen, by *Wotton*, her Ambassador in *France*, that several Hereticks had fled over to *France*, and were well received there: In particular, that *Henry Dudley* (perhaps a Son of the Duke of *Northumberland*) and *Christopher Ashton*, were Plotting there against the Queen. Upon that, a Letter was written to *Wotton*, to demand that they might be seized on, and sent at her Charge to the Frontier, to be delivered to her Officers. When the Draught of this was brought to Her to be Signed by Her, She, with her own Hand, interlined these Words; *Considering that when the King my Husband and he were Enemies, I neither did, nor would have done the like.*

*Paper-Office.*

The Pope sets on a new War after a Truce was sworn to, and dispensed with the French King's Oath. *Wotton* wrote over, that the Hereticks took great Advantage from the new War, that the Pope engaged the *French King* to make on the King, after a Truce for Five Years had been agreed to, and sworn by both Kings. But the Pope sent a Legate to *France*, to persuade that King to begin the War. And tho' the Consciences of Princes are not apt to be very Scrupulous in the Observing, or Breaking their Treaties; yet a Treaty, made and confirmed by an Oath so very lately, it seems, made such an Impression on that King, that so great an Authority was to be interposed, to give a Colour for the Breaking it. Those called Hereticks took great Advantages from this to infuse a Horror

Horror in People at the Papacy, since one who pretended to be the Vicar of the Prince of Peace, became thus an open, and a perfidious Incendiary.

1557.

This of the Pope's Dispensing with a Prince's Oath, gave so great a Dislike every-where, that I do not remember an Instance, in which it was openly put in Practice since that Time. But the Protestant Princes of *Germany* do believe, as one of the greatest of them told me, that the Confessors of the Princes of that Communion, have secret Faculties, to dispense with their Breach of Faith: Which is so much the more dangerous, the more secretly it may be managed. On that Ground it was, that the Prince who told me this, said, that in all their Dealings with Princes of that Communion, they took their Word, but would never put any Thing to their Oaths: For they knew, that the Popish Princes reckoned they were bound by their Word, as they were Men, and Members of Human Society; but for their Oaths, they reckoned these being Acts of Religion, their Confessors had it in their Breast, to tell them how far they were bound to keep them; and when they were absolved from any Obligation by them. But we have seen in our Days, to the no small Reproach of the Reformation, that Princes professing it, have in an avowed manner shaken off their Leagues and Alliances, with this short Declaration, *That they reckoned themselves freed from them*: As if they had been Things of so little Force, that they might be departed from at Pleasure.

*Pole* was now, in his Synod, labouring to bring the Clergy to their Duty. On the 13th of *December*, *The Institution of a Christian Man* was divided in Parcels, to be examined by them: And some were appointed to prepare a *Book of Homilies*. On the 16th of *December*, a Translation of the *New Testament* was ordered, and parcelled out: The *Seven Sacraments* were also treated of. On the 20th of *December*, the Cardinal sent an Order to the Prolocutor, to intimate to all the Clergy, more particularly to all Deans, that they should confirm no Leases, that had been made of their Benefices: This seems to be done in Obedience to the Pope's Bull, formerly mentioned, that condemned all Leases for a longer Term than Three Years. There was offered to them a Schedule, of some Terms that were to be carefully considered in the Translation of the *New Testament*. On the 8th of *January*, that was again considered: Propositions were also made, for having Schools in all Cathedral Churches. Thus *Pole* found it necessary, to give some Instruction in the Matters of Religion to the Nation: For an earnest Desire of Knowledge in these Points, being once raised and encouraged, it was neither safe nor easy, quite to extinguish that, which is so natural to Man: And therefore, instead of discouraging all Knowledge, and bringing Men to the State of Implicit Faith, without any Sort of Enquiry, he chose to give them such a Measure of Knowledge, as might be governed, and kept within its own Bounds. There was in this Synod a Question moved; What should be done with such of the Clergy, as should refuse to say, or come to Mass? But I do not see what was determined upon it. Nor do I see what Reason



1557.

was given them, for another Petition to the Queen, Lords and Commons, for Maintaining their Liberties and Immunities, nor what Effect it had.

*Pro certiori  
bonorum Eccle-  
siasticorum  
quantitatis &  
qualitatis ra-  
tione habenda,  
majus temporis  
spatium requiri  
videbatur.*

*Pole* prorogued the Synod to the 10th of *November*, and from thence to the 10th of *May*. The Reason given, is, Because the Bishops were in their Visitations, which could not be soon ended; since a large Space of Time seemed necessary, for their taking an exact Account of the Quantity and Quality of all Ecclesiastical Goods. I suppose, this was the Procuring Terriers of the Lands, and Inventories of the Goods belonging to the Churches: For many Orders were given out, for Restoring such Plate and Furniture, as could be found, that had belonged to any Church.

A great Scar-  
city of all  
Things.

From the 10th of *May*, *Pole* prorogued the Synod to the 10th of *November*: The Reason given, is, for the great Want and Penury of Victuals. For, I find, the Dearth at this Time was very great. Wheat was at 4 Marks the Quarter; Malt, at 2 Pound 4 Shillings; Pease, at 2 Pound 5 Shillings: But the next Harvest proving plentiful, it fell as low as it had been high. Wheat was at 5 Shillings, Malt at a Noble, and Rye at 3 Shillings 4 Pence a Quarter.

On the 28th of *July*, the Council hearing that some naughty Books were sent over, and concealed in the Dutchess of *Suffolk's* House, ordered the Bishop of *Lincoln* to search for them, and to send them up. On the 19th of *July* the Council was alarmed with Reports of Conspiracies in *Suffolk* and *Essex*: So they sent Orders to enquire about them; and about a Zealous Man, that went about carrying Letters and Books over the Country; from whence he was called *Trudge-over*; so he was ordered to be sought for. On the 15th of *August*, a Letter was written to the Mayor, Jurats, and Commons at *Rye*, to chuse one of the Queen's Servants, to be Mayor for the ensuing Year.

Prosecution of  
Hereticks.

On the 21st of *August*, a Letter of Thanks was ordered for the Earl of *Suffex*, for his Diligence in apprehending those who spread about Lewd and Seditious Reports; with whom he is desired to proceed according to the Laws: And as for those Lewd Priests that had been married, and were found still to repair to their Women; they tell him, They had written to the Bishop of *Norwich*, to cause them to be apprehended and punished. And a Letter was at the same Time ordered for the Bishop of *Norwich*, to that Purpose. On the 23d of *August*, a Letter of Thanks was ordered to the Lord *Darcy*, for his apprehending some ill-disposed Persons, who used Conventicles, and Readings, about *Harwich*. He was to get them to be Fined according to their Quality, and as he thought fit; and to bind them to appear before the Bishop of *London*: And a Letter was ordered to the Bishop, either to reduce them to the Church, or to order them according to the Laws.

On the 4th of *September*, the Earl of *Suffex* had moved, that Offenders should be proceeded against by Martial Law: His Zeal is commended; and it was written back to him, "That these deserved  
" to be so used; but that is not thought best: They are to be pu-  
" nished as the Laws order. But when they have had their Punish-  
" ment,



" ment, he shall cause them to be kept in Prison, and in Irons, 'till they  
 " know themselves and their Duty. On the 15th of *September* a  
 Letter of Thanks was written to the Earl of *Suffex*, and the Justices  
 of *Norfolk*, for their Diligence in punishing one *Thomas Long*.

1557.

At this Time they were called on to consider of the Danger *Calais*, *Calais in Dan-*  
 might be in: So a State of the Fortifications, and of what was ne- *ger of falling*  
 cessary to maintain the Place, was laid before the Council: But the *into the*  
 giving Orders in that Matter was delayed 'till the King should come *Hands of the*  
 over, of which they were in daily Expectation, for on the 17th of *French.*  
*September*, they understood that the Emperor, with his Two Sisters,  
 had embarked on the *Tuesday* before; and that the King was to come  
 to *Calais*, and from thence to *England*. Privy Seals were at this  
 Time sent about every where, for a Loan of Money; But it came  
 in very slowly. Some took the Privy Seal, but did not pay in the  
 Money. There was about 1000 Privy Seals given out, at 100*l.*  
 a piece. On the 6th of *October*, a Letter was sent to *Calais*, to  
 search for some who had fled from *England* thither; It is directed to  
 the Earl of *Suffex*; which makes it probable they were Hereticks:  
 For in that Matter his Heart was intirely as the Queen's Heart was.  
 On the 7th of *October*, the Lady *Throgmorton* was before the Coun-  
 cil, asking leave to send some supply to her Husband, Sir *Nickolas*,  
 who was then in *France*: The Cardinal had told her in the Presence  
 of the Lord Chancellor, and others, that for this one Time, the  
 Queen allowed of it, so it did not exceed 40 Crowns. It seems the  
 Way of Exchange was much beset, when so small a Supply, from so  
 near a Relation, could not be conveyed without such an Application.  
 On the 17th of *November*, a Letter was ordered for the Bishop of  
*London*, to receive a Companion of him who was called *Trudge-over*,  
 to be ordered by him according to Law; and they complain to him,  
 that a Man and a Woman of *Colchester*, that had been sent to him,  
 charged with Heresy, were returned back discharged by him, but  
 were now worse than they were before. In another Book that seems  
 to be the Minutes of the Council, it is entred that 24 Persons were  
 discharged by him, who were still rank Hereticks.

I find at this Time the Council was much employed in the Matter  
 of the Privy Seals. Our Fleet was then so inconsiderable, that  
 14000*l.* being ordered to be applyed to the Fleet, by the Lord Treas-  
 urer, and the Lord Admiral, both for Repairing, Furnishing, and  
 Victualling it, they reckoned that when that was done, 10000*l.*  
 a Year afterwards, would answer what was necessary. On the 19th  
 of *February*, one *Christopher Howe*, was ordered to be proceeded  
 against for some detestable Words, not fit to be heard: So it was or-  
 dered that only such Parts of them should be opened, as might serve  
 for Evidence to the Jury. On the 21st, complaints were brought  
 of a Jaylor who suffered Hereticks to go freely about. On the 24th,  
 the Queen expected Hourly to hear of the King's Arrival; so the  
 Lord Admiral and others were ordered to attend on him. An Am-  
 bassador came at this Time from *Russia*; he landed in the North of  
*Scotland*, and was well received, and nobly treated by the Lord  
*Wharton*; for which, Thanks were written to him. Here several

Orders



1557.

An Account  
of Lord *Stur-*  
*ton's* Execu-  
tion.

Orders are entred concerning the Lord *Sturton*, and his Servants: Three of them were ordered to be hanged in Chains at *Mere*.

I had in my former Work, given a due Commendation to that which seemed to me a just Firmness in the Queen, not to Pardon the Lord *Sturton*, for so heinous a Crime, as the Murdering Father and Son in so Barbarous a Manner. But since I have lived long in *Wiltshire*, I find there is a different Account of this Matter in that Neighbourhood. The Story as it has been handed down by very old People, is this. The Day before the Execution was appointed, there was a Report set about, that a Pardon, or a Reprieve, was coming down: Upon which the Sheriff came to the Earl of *Pembroke*, who was then at *Wilton*, for Advice. That Lord heard the Report, and was much troubled at it: So apprehending some Message might come to him from the Court, he ordered his Gates to be shut somewhat early, and not to be opened 'till next Morning. My Lord *Sturton's* Son came down with the Order: But since the Gates were not to be opened, he rode over to his Father, who received the News with great Joy. In the Night the Sheriff left *Wilton*, and came so secretly to *Salisbury*, that *Sturton* knew nothing of it, and believed he was still at *Wilton*, where he knew he was the Night before. But when he was so far gone, that the Sheriff knew he could not come back in Time to hinder the Execution, he brought his Men together whom he ordered to attend on him that Day, and so the Lord was executed before his Son could come back with the Order to stop it: I set down this Story upon a Popular Report, of which I have had the Pedigree vouched to me, by those whose Authors, upon the Authority of their Grandfather's did give an entire Credit to it. So meritorious a Man as the Lord *Sturton* was, who had protested against every Thing done in King *Edward's* Parliament, had no doubt many Intercessors to plead for him in this his Extremity. I leave this with my Reader as I found it.

On the 20th of *March* the King came to *England*. Orders being sent into *Kent*, that the Gentlemen should attend upon him in their best Apparel: Thanks were afterwards written to them for their Readiness in furnishing him with Post-Horses. On the 17th of *April*, Proceedings are ordered to be made upon a Book that is called *Lewd and Seditious*: And the Countess of *Suffex* coming over at this Time, and bringing Letters which gave some Suspicion, she was sent to the *Fleet*. She had been for some Years separated from her Husband: She was ordered to be examined strictly; but upon this and many other Occasions, Particulars are not set forth, and only a general Mention is made of the Minutes put in the Chest.

There is, besides the great Council Book, another Council Book, which, I suppose, might be the Minute Book, which was perused by my Learned Friend, Doctor *Kennet*, and who communicated to me all the Extracts that he had made out of it, and some other Manuscripts, which I never saw. It seems, it was apprehended that the *French* designed a Descent in *Dorsetshire*: So Orders were sent to make Musters in that County, and to have them in readiness, in Case of an Invasion, or a Rebellion: And 300 Men were sent over to *Calais*, with Orders concerning the Fortifications,

On the 14th of *June*, Complaint was made of some naughty Plays and lewd Books. The Council was often alarmed with these Plays; but it does not appear whether there was any Thing in the Plays with relation to Religion, or the Government; or whether it was, that they apprehended some Mischief from the Concourse of the People that those Representations brought together. One Sir *Thomas Caw-warden* was committed to the *Fleet*, for his Misbehaviour to the State: He was ordered to be kept a close Prisoner, with only one Servant, since he had made no manner of Submission, and had not acknowledged his Offence: but what this Offence was does not appear to me. On the 29th of *June*, Orders were given for sending 2000 Men to *Calais*, with Directions to distribute them to the Places about, that wanted a Reinforcement the most. 860 of them were ordered for *Guifnes*, and a Letter was written to the Mayor and Jurats of *Calais*, to continue their Mayor for another Year. On the 3d of *July*, the Cardinal made an Offer of 100 Men to serve the Queen: He was ordered to Levy them immediately, and to send them to *Dover*. 200 Foot, and 600 Horse more, were ordered in all haste for *Calais*: And Assurance was given, that more should quickly follow. There were then great Apprehensions of Disorders on the Borders of *Scotland*, which were wholly in the Hands of the *French*,

1557.

The Allarms oft given of Plots.

*Boner* at this Time gave the City of *London* a most dismal Spectacle, a little removed from the City, perhaps for fear of a Tumult, at *Stratford*, where Thirteen Persons, Eleven Men, and two Women, were burnt in one Fire. He had condemned Sixteen to be thus sacrificed: But Cardinal *Pole* heard there was some Hope of working on Three of them; so there came an Order to put them in his Hands: And he by the 26th of *July*, prevailed so far on Two of them, that a Pardon was granted to those Two who had been condemned by the Bishop of *London*, but were prevailed on by the Cardinal to abjure (a very extraordinary Thing, as is mentioned in the Pardon) and he had received them into the Communion of the Church, "and had" upon that interceded with the King and Queen for their Pardon, "which they, as true Sons of the Church, did willingly imitate, and" embraced this Occasion of shewing their Zeal." I cannot tell what became of the Third Person, whom he had taken out of *Boner's* Hands.

A severe Prosecution.

Cardinal Pole saved Two Persons.

Rymer MSS.

Exemplo licet rarissimo.

But here I must lessen the Character of the Cardinal's Mildness towards Hereticks: For on the 28th of *March* this Year, he sent Orders to proceed against the Hereticks in his Diocese; and on the 7th of *July*, he sent a *Significavit* of some Hereticks to be delivered to the Secular Arm.

I find likewise by other Evidences, suggested to me by the Laborious Mr. *Strype*, that *Pole* was not so mild as I had represented him. *Parker* in his *British Antiquities*, which *Strype* believes assuredly he can prove that it was written by him; he calls him *Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ Carnifex & Flagellum*; The Whip and the Executioner of the Church of *England*: And *Calfhill*, a Canon of *Christ-Church* in *Oxford*, in a Letter he wrote to *Grindall* Bishop of *London*, mentions the Proceedings of the Visitors sent to *Oxford* by *Pole*; who were *Brooks*, Bishop of *Gloucester*; *Cole*, Dean of *St. Paul's*, and *Ormanet*;

he



1557.

he sent them thither, not only to restore the Pope's Authority, but diligently to enquire if there were any who neglected the Pope's Ceremonies; and if there were any found, that were under the least Suspicion (*levissima Suspicio*) they were without any Delay to eject them: He writes, there was nothing eminent in *Ormanet*, but intolerable Insolence; nothing could be imagined more Arrogant than he was. They raged, as he adds, against a great many in the University; and burned in the open Market-Place an infinite Number of Bibles, and other Books. The like Severity was practised at *Cambridge*; of which Mr. *Strype* promises an Account in the Life of *Whitgift*, now ready for the Press.

The Nation began to grow every-where weary of the Cruel Executions of so many Hereticks: The great Promoter of these Barbarous Proceedings was the Earl of *Suffex*. He died in *March* this Year: For his Son *Thomas*, who succeeded to him in his Honour, was then Deputy of *Ireland*; and on the 1st of *April*, Order was given for a New Patent to him, by the Title of the Earl of *Suffex*.

The Nation  
abhorred this  
Cruelty.

At one Time Complaints were brought of the Sheriffs of *Kent*, *Essex*, *Suffolk*, and *Staffordshire*, and of the Mayor of *Rocheſter*, and the Bailiff of *Colcheſter*; that when some Persons being condemned for Hereſy, were delivered to them by their Ordinaries, they, instead of proceeding to a preſent Execution, had delayed it: So Letters were ordered to them, requiring them to ſignify what it was that had moved them to ſtop the uſual Proceedings. Information was alſo given of ſome lewd and ſeditious Words, ſpoken by ſome of the Queen's Houſhold; upon which they were ſent to Priſon: And Orders were given to proſecute them. On the 3d of *Auguſt*, Thanks were ordered to be given to Serjeant *Brown* for his Proceedings with *Trudge-over*; and Orders were given for the diſpoſing of his Head and Quarters. On the 7th of *Auguſt*, Sir *John Butler*, Sheriff of *Essex*, was fined 10 *l.* becauſe his Deputy had reſpited the Execution of a Woman, condemned for Hereſy, that ſhould have been executed at *Colcheſter*; and he was to Anſwer for his Deputy's Fault. This perhaps is the ſame with that which was mentioned on the 28th of *July*. Many were ordered to be proceeded againſt for writing and ſpreading lewd and ſeditious Books. It ſeems the Lord *Rich* continued to give the Council notice, before they proceeded to any Executions in *Essex*, and ſo laid the Odium of the Severity on the Council, for ſhewing no Pity: So on the 6th of *Auguſt*, they wrote to him to proceed according to Law, and not to give them any more trouble on thoſe Occaſions. Complaint was made on the 10th of *Auguſt*, of a bad Choice that the Town of *Calais* had made of a Mayor for enſuing Year; eſpecially in ſo critical a Time. They were told that by ſuch an Election, they might have their Charter to be brought in Queſtion. On the 12th of *Auguſt*, Orders were ſent to *Canterbury*, to proceed without delay againſt thoſe who acted there a lewd Play that was ſent up.

A great Cold-  
neſs in thoſe  
Matters at  
*Briſtol*.

On the 15th of *Auguſt*, the News came of the great Defeat given the *French* at *St. Quintins*: So an Order was ſent to the Biſhop of *London*, to publiſh that at *St. Paul's Croſs*. On the 24th of *Auguſt*, Letters were ordered to be written to the Mayor and Aldermen of *Briſtol*,

*Bristol*, requiring them to conform themselves, in frequenting Sermons, Processions, and other Ceremonies, at the Cathedral: And not to absent themselves, as they had done of late, nor to expect that the Dean and Chapter should come with their Cross, and in Procession to fetch them out of the City: which was a Thing unseemly, and out of Order. On the 2d of *September*, News came of the Taking of St. *Quintin's*; upon which, an Order was sent to the Lord-Mayor of *London*, to have Bonfires at Night, and to come the Next Day to High-Mass. On the 6th of *September*, and Order was sent to the Lord-Mayor of *London*, to apprehend those who had acted a Play, called, *A Sack-full of News*; but there was an Order sent soon after, to set them at Liberty. On the 6th of *October*, News came that Peace was made between the Pope and the King; upon which, the Council ordered High-Mass to be at St. *Paul's*; and the Lord-Mayor was required to be there, and to have Bonfires over the City. The Council was, for some Time, wholly taken up with the Matter of the Loan, and the Privy Seals: And tho' the Government had certain Notice of the Design of the *French* upon *Calais*, yet no Parliament was called, by which Money, and every Thing else that was necessary to the Preserving it, could have been furnished. But the Spirit of the Nation was now much turned; and Compassion began to rise towards these Poor People, that were thus Sacrificed to the Cruelty of the Priests, and the Bigotry of a weak peevish Woman, so that they would not venture on Calling one; but tried other ineffectual Methods of Raising Money; which increased the Jealousy of the Nation, more than it added to the Queen's Treasure.

1557.

*Boner* was again quickned, by another Letter, to proceed against Hereticks; Upon which, he sent down Dr. *Chedsey* to *Colchester*: Who, in a Letter that he wrote to *Boner*, on 21st of *April* 1558; tells him, That while he was Sitting at *Colchester*, Examining Hereticks, he received a Summons to appear before the Council: But he desires, that *Boner* would make his Excuse, since he was on the Great Work of finding out Hereticks, Anabaptists, and other unruly Persons, such as the like was never heard.

*Boner* call'd on  
by the Council  
to be more  
severe.

There is also in the Minute-Book, an Entry of the Letter of the 1st of *August* 1558, written on *Benbridge's* Account; who, when he was ready to be burnt, offered to Recant; upon which, the Sheriff of *Hampshire* stay'd the Execution: For that he was chid; but a Letter was written to the Bishop of *Winchester*, to examine whether his Conversion was intire and sincere.

And now I have no more Light from the Council-Book: For that Authentick Volume goes only to the End of the Year 1557; the last Passage I find in it relating to Religion, being on the 15th of *December*: Then they wrote a Letter to the Bishop of *London*, and sent with it the Examination of *John Rough*, a *Scottish* Minister, whom they had sent to *Newgate*, and required him to proceed against him according to the Laws. It may be, perhaps, thought, that I have taken out of it nothing, but what related to Proceedings against Hereticks: but that is, because there is scarce any thing else in it; for I have taken out of it every Thing that related to the Government, or that was in any sort Historical. But the Council knew  
what



1557. what it was that the Queen's Heart was set on, and what would please Her most; and so they applied their Care and Diligence chiefly to that.

There was a strange Spirit of Cruelty, that run thro' the Body of the Clergy: It was animated by the Government, and shewed itself in so many dismal Instances, in all the Parts of the Nation, that it struck People with Horror. This, joined with the intolerable Haughtiness of the King, and the shameful Loss of *Calais*, brought the Government under an universal Hatred and Contempt. In a Book corrected, if not written by the Lord *Burleigh*, in Queen *Elizabeth's* Time, entitled, *The Executions for Treason*, the Sum of those who suffered in this wretched Reign, is thus reckoned. "Four Hundred  
" Persons suffered publicly in Queen *Mary's* Days, besides those who  
" were secretly murdered in Prison: Of these, Twenty were Bishops,  
" and Dignified Clergymen: Sixty were Women: Children, more  
" than Forty: Some Women big with Child; one bore a Child in  
" the Fire, and the Child was burned."

It does not appear, that the Bishops, or Clergy, shewed any great Inclination, to entertain *Pole's* Project for the Reformation of Abuses; or that they were at much Pains, in the way of Instruction, to reduce the People. All that I find in this way, is, that *Boner* set out an Instruction for his Diocese, in the Year 1555. The People had heard so much of the Second Commandment, that he did not think fit to leave it quite out, as is done in most Catechisms of the Church of *Rome*: But yet he durst not venture on giving it honestly; therefore, instead of the Words, *Nor worship them*; he gave it thus, *Nor adore them with God's Honour*. *Watson*, Bishop of *Lincoln*, did in June 1558, put another out for his Diocese. It seems, he was in a high Degree of Favour with the Cardinal; since, notwithstanding the Zeal he expressed against Plurality of Benefices in One Person, he was allowed to hold the Deanery of *Duresm* in *Commendam*, when he was promoted to *Lincoln*. The License is in January 1557; in which it is said, that the Cardinal consented to it.

Paper-Office.

The first public Occasion, that the ill-natured Pope found to express his Displeasure at *Pole*, was, upon the Death of *Day*, Bishop of *Chichester*. The Pope would not suffer *Christopherson*, the New Bishop, to be preconized in *Pole's* Name, but did it himself, as *Karn* wrote over on the 10th of *April*. *Karn*, after that, on the 15th of *June*, wrote to the Queen, that the Pope had ordered Cardinal *Morone* to be imprisoned on the Account of Religion. Four Cardinals were sent to examine him. *Karn* adds, that he was in high Reputation at *Rome*, for his Sanctity: And he believed him a good Catholick, and a holy Man.

Rymer.

The Papal Provisions in this Reign.

The Stile in which all the Bishops Bulls, during this Reign, did run, was, That the Pope, by his Apostolical Authority, did provide the Person to the See, and set him over it. Upon which, the Bishop so named did renounce every Clause in his Bull, that was in any sort prejudicial to the Crown: And the Renunciation being so made, the Custody of the Temporalities was given to the Bishop Elect. In the Bulls, no mention is made either of the Queen's  
Recom-

Recommending, nor of the Chapter's Electing. Rymer has gathered the Bulls for *Exeter*, *Bangnor*, *St. Asaph*, *Carlisle*, *Chester*, *Peterborough*, and *Lincoln*, besides those for *Canterbury* and *York*; and they all run in the Stile of Papal Provisions. Nor does he mention a *Conge d'Elire*, except for *Chester*, *Winchester*, *Carlisle*, *Lincoln*, *Chichester*, and *Peterborough*. There is something particular in the Restitution of the Temporalities of *Carlisle* to *Oglethorpe*: It is added, That he was to pay 400 Marks. I do not comprehend, what could be the Reason of this Singularity.

1558.

There was another Convocation in *January* 1557. *Harpsfield* was chosen Prolocutor. On the 28th of *January*, *Boner*, as the Cardinal's Commissary, proposed some Heads of Reformation; and the Lower-House desired Leave to offer their Propositions. On the 4th of *February*, a Subsidy was agreed to of Eight Shillings in the Pound, to be paid in Four Years; and on the 9th, he told the Bishops, that the Lower-House had agreed to it. Complaint was made of a Want of Priests, to serve the Cures: In order to remedy this, and to provide a Supply for the Smaller Benefices, it was proposed, that no Priest should be taken up to Serve in the Wars. 2. That the Bishops might have Authority to unite Small Benefices, which the Priest should serve by Turns. 3. That the Parishioners of Chapels of Ease, might be obliged to come to the Parish-Church, till Curates could be provided. 4. That Bishops might be authorized by the Pope, to ordain *extra Tempora*. There was also some Consideration had, about the furnishing of Arms; and a Decree passed, for the Provision of them, after the same Rate that the Laity had agreed to. But then the Convocation was prorogued, first to the 11th of *November*, and then to the 17th; on which Day the Queen died.

Proceedings in  
Convocation.

But now to open the State of the Nation: *Calais*, and the Places about, were lost; and the Nation was so exhausted, that the Supporting the Government was no easy Thing. The Persons most in Favour with the Two Kings of *France* and *Spain*, were Two Clergymen, the Cardinal of *Lorraine*, and the Bishop of *Arras*, soon after promoted to be a Cardinal. They saw, that the Continuance of the War made it reasonable on both Sides, not to put a Stop to the Progress of Heresy; tho' it had not that Effect in *England*: They therefore, at an Interview, projected a Peace; that so both Kings might be at full Leisure to extirpate Heresy out of their Dominions.

A General  
Treaty of  
Peace was  
opened.

In order to this, *France* was willing to make great Restitutions: Only, from the first Opening of the Treaty, they declared very positively, that they resolved never to part with *Calais*. A Treaty was opened; and the Earl of *Arundel*, the Bishop of *Ely*, and Dean *Wotton*, were sent to Treat in the Queen's Name. I shall here only give the Abstract of Two Papers, which I found relating to this Matter.

The first is, the Council's Letter to the Ambassadors, written on the 8th of *November*; which is in the Collection. The Ambassadors saw no Hope of the Restoring of *Calais*; so they had moved the Council, to lay the Matter before the Parliament. "It was

Paper-Office.  
Small Hope of  
having *Calais*  
restored.  
Coll. Numb.



1558.

“ not thought convenient, to break it to the whole House: It was  
 “ thought best to begin with the Nobility, and some of the best  
 “ and gravest Sort. But before they made that Step, they thought  
 “ it necessary to ask the Queen’s Mind: She thought it was best  
 “ to lay it first before the King. Upon which, they sent the Am-  
 “ bassadors with a Letter to the King; and resolved to stay till his  
 “ Answer came. They write, that the Queen was still sick, and  
 “ weak: they hoped for her Amendment; but they were driven to  
 “ fear, and mistrust the worst. In a Postscript, they tell them,  
 “ they had received the Ambassadors Letters of the 4th, by which,  
 “ they saw the *French* were resolved not to restore *Calais*: And  
 “ that the King told them, that his Commissioners had almost agreed  
 “ with the *French* in all other Matters; but he would agree to no-  
 “ thing, unless the Queen was satisfied. The Council ordered the  
 “ Ambassadors to lay before the King, the Importance of leaving  
 “ *Calais* in the Hands of the *French*; and how much it would touch  
 “ the Honour of the King and Queen, that so many Restitutions  
 “ being to be made on both Sides, this alone should not be restored.  
 “ The Subjects of this Realm would certainly be very uneasy at  
 “ this. The War was begun at the King’s Request, and for his  
 “ Sake. If to other of the King’s Allies, Places are to be restored,  
 “ that were taken from them some Years ago; what then can be  
 “ judged, if a Peace is concluded, without this Restitution? Yet,  
 “ on the other Hand, if there is an Agreement in all other Matters,”  
 (which is like a giving up of the Point) “ much were to be endur-  
 “ ed for the Wealth of *Christendom*. In these Matters, the Ambas-  
 “ sadors were ordered to deal plainly with the King, and to study  
 “ to know his Mind; since the *French*, keeping these Places, might  
 “ be as great Prejudice to his *Low-Countries*, as to *England*. They  
 “ desire a plain and speedy Answer, that they might know what to  
 “ offer to the Nobility and Parliament, with Relation to this  
 “ Matter.”

The Answer to this belongs to this Reign; tho’ it was written  
 on the Day after the Queen died, signed by the Three Ambassa-  
 dors. It is in the Collection. “ They had written formerly, that  
 “ the *French* King had said, he would hazard his Crown, rather  
 “ than restore *Calais*: Yet, for all those high Words, they did not  
 “ quite despair. The Commissioners of both Kings had broke up  
 “ their Conferences, and returned to their Masters, to give an Ac-  
 “ count of what they had done, and to receive their final Orders.  
 “ The Ambassadors believed, that if the King insisted positively on  
 “ the Restitution of *Calais*, that this might induce the *French* to  
 “ agree to it: Whereas, if the King and his Ministers spoke but  
 “ faintly of that Matter, they were sure, the *French* would still re-  
 “ fuse to do it. Therefore they did not think fit to use any Words  
 “ to the King, to make him imagine, that the Queen, or the King-  
 “ dom, would consent to a Peace, without the Restoring of *Calais*:  
 “ because their Instructions were express in that Point. The King  
 “ continued to say, that he would make no Peace, unless the Queen  
 “ should be satisfied: So that if She and her Council continued to  
 “ insist

“ insist on that Point, they did believe the *French* would restore it,  
“ rather than lose the View they had of Peace. And whereas the  
“ Council wrote to them, that if all other Things were near agreed,  
“ much were to be endured for the Peace of *Christendom*; yet that  
“ all others should have Restitution, and that poor *England* should  
“ only bear the Loss, was hard; Especially so great a Loss: And  
“ they were so far from thinking that the leaving *Calais* to the *French*,  
“ would purchase a sure Peace, that they thought on the contrary,  
“ that nothing shewed more evidently, that the *French* did not intend  
“ to continue the Peace, with *England* especially, than their keep-  
“ ing of *Calais*. The *French* could easily annoy *England* on the  
“ side of *Scotland*: The Dauphin being then Married to the Queen  
“ of *Scots*: And what the *French* pretend to by that Marriage, was  
“ not unknown to them. (This probably was to claim the Crown of  
“ *England* upon the Queen’s Death) Now if the *French* kept *Calais*  
“ the *English* could neither hurt their Enemies, nor assist their Friends.  
“ or be assisted by them so easily, as when that Place was in their  
“ Hands. *England* would be shut out from the rest of *Europe*: The  
“ very Knowledge of the Transactions abroad would come late to  
“ them, and that Place would be a Scourge for *England*, as it was  
“ before *Edward* the III<sup>d</sup> took it; which made him come with his  
“ Son, and but with a small Army from *Normandy* into *France*,  
“ and to march through *Picardy* to besiege it, the Enemy pursuing  
“ him with a greater Army; but he Fought through them, ’till at  
“ last he Fought them at *Creffy*, where, though the *French* were Three  
“ to One, yet he totally defeated them, and continued the Siege  
“ ’till he took it. So the *French* having *Scotland* on the one Hand,  
“ and *Calais* on the other, it was easy to apprehend what might fol-  
“ low on this. The *French* would sign any Terms with them to  
“ keep that Place. These would be only Parchment and Wax.  
“ They knew how many Parchments King *Francis* sealed to King  
“ *Henry*; and the present King to King *Edward*. They saw the  
“ Effects they had, and if a War should follow between *England*  
“ and *France*, they were not sure that *Spain* would join with *Eng-*  
“ *land*: Whereas now the King could not Honourably make any  
“ Peace without us: And he himself said he would not: So they  
“ did not think *Christendom* should have a good Peace, if *Calais* were  
“ left to the *French*: And it was certainly more the Interest of *Eng-*  
“ *land* to continue the War in Conjunction with the King, than to  
“ make a Peace, letting it go, and then be forced to begin a New  
“ War, and to have all the Burden of it lie upon *England*. All  
“ this they thought themselves bound to lay before the Council. The  
“ Bishop of *Ely* adds, that he was with the Commissioners by the  
“ King’s Order, they had not yet agreed concerning the Matters of  
“ *Corfica* and *Siena*; the *French* have likewise demanded the Restitu-  
“ tion of *Navarre*: So that some thought the Treaty would be  
“ broken off without concluding in a Peace. The Earl of *Arundel*  
“ adds, that after they had gone so far in their Letter, he received  
“ a Letter from the Bishop of *Arras*, dated the 17<sup>th</sup>, in which he  
“ writes thus; The Bishop of *Ely* has told you on what Terms we  
“ were in this Purgatory, at his leaving us. The *French* told us  
Yesterday



1558.

“ Yesterday that they would condescend to every Thing rather than yield to the Matter of *Calais*; or let that Place go out of their Hands. And we on our Part told them, that without full Satisfaction to the Kingdom of *England*, we would not treat with them in any sort. And we parted so, that there is more Appearance of a Rupture than a Conclusion of a Treaty.” But after all, our Ambassadors doubted much whether it would break off only on the Account of *Calais*. If they were in doubt about it, while the Queen was yet alive, it may be easily supposed that her Death put them out of all doubt concerning it.

A particular  
Relation of  
the Occasion  
of the Queen's  
Death.

And now I am come to the Conclusion of this Inglorious Reign. *Campana* gives a different Account of the immediate Occasion of the Queen's Death, from what is to be found in other Authors. He tells us that King *Philip*, seeing no Hope of Issue by her, and that she was in an ill State of Health, designed a Marriage between the Duke of *Savoy* and the Lady *Elizabeth*: The Queen had a very bad Opinion of her Sister, suspecting she had ill Principles in Religion. King *Philip* thought the Duke of *Savoy* would be a firm Friend to him, and a constant Enemy to *France*. But he could never bring the Queen to hearken to this: Yet now that she was declining very fast he sent over the Duke of *Feria* to propose the Match to the Privy Council, without any Regard to the Queen; or to the Opposition she might make to it. And he ordered him to use all possible Means to bring it to a Conclusion. The Queen resented this highly; and when she saw it was designed to force her to it, she fell into an extreme Melancholy. The Privy Council did not entertain the Motion; and the Queen dying in a few Days, an End was put to it: For though I find the Duke of *Feria* was in *England*, upon Queen *Elizabeth's* coming to the Crown, it does not appear that he made any Proposition of that Matter to her. What Truth soever may be in this, the Nation was now delivered from a severe and unhappy, though short Reign: In which, Superstition and Cruelty had the Ascendant to such a Degree, that it does not appear that there was any one Great, or Good Design ever set on Foot, either for the Wealth, or Glory of the Nation. The Poor Queen delivered herself up to her Peevish and Fretful Humours, and to her Confessor: And seemed to have no other Thoughts, but about the Extirpation of Heresy, and the Endowing of Monasteries. Even the War, that commonly slackens Vigorous Proceedings, had not that Effect here. Her inexorable Hatred of all she accounted Hereticks, was such, that I find but one single Instance of a Pardon of any condemned of Heresy: And that was upon the Cardinal's Intercession. God shortened the Time of her Reign for his Elect's Sake: And he seemed to have suffered Popery to shew itself in its true and natural Colours, all over both False and Bloody; even in a Female Reign, from whence all Mildness and Gentleness might have been expected; to give this Nation such an evident and demonstrative Proof of the Barbarous Cruelty of that Religion, as might raise a lasting Abhorrence and Detestation of it.

It was visible that the Providence of God made a very remarkable Difference in all Respects, between this poor, short, and despised Reign, and the Glory, the Length, and the Prosperity of the Succeeding Reign. So that as far as we can Reason from the outward Characters of Things, the one was all over Mean and Black, while the other shined with a Superior Brightness, to the Admiration of all the World. It wanted no Foil to set it off, being all over Lustre and Glory. But if that was wanting, the Base and Contemptible Reign that went before it, could not but add to its Brightness.

1558.  
A Parallel of  
Queen Mary  
and Queen  
Elizabeth's  
Reign.

One amazing Character of Providence in her Death, and in the Great Successor that came after her, was, that at the Time that the Two Ministers, being both Ecclesiasticks, of the Kings of *France* and *Spain*, were designing a Peace, with the View of destroying Heresy upon the Conclusion of it; their Project was entirely blasted in so Critical a Minute: First by the Death of *Queen Mary*, and the Succession of *Queen Elizabeth*; and next by the unlooked-for Death of the King of *France* in *July* after: So that not only the Design totally miscarried, but *France* fell under the Confusions of a Minority; under which, that they called Heresy, gathered great Strength: And the Cruelty of the *Spanish* Government occasioned the Revolt of the *Netherlands*; while the glorious Queen of *England* protected and assisted both so effectually; that King *Henry* the IVth owned his being supported by her in his lowest State, was the Chief Means that brought him to the Possession of the Crown of *France*: And the *United Provinces* had their main Dependance on the Protection and Assistance that they had from her. So mercifully did God deal with this Nation, by removing that Queen, that he had set over it in his Wrath, and so graciously did he Watch over the Reformation, that in the very Time, in which the Enemies of that Work, reckoned it was to be rooted out, he raised up a Glorious Instrument, that not only revived it among us, but by a kind and tender Influence watched over it, and protected it every where. So I now turn to View the Auspicious Beginnings of that Blessed Reign.



## B O O K VI.

*Of the Beginnings of Queen Elizabeth's Reign.*

1558.



O Prince ever came to the Throne in a more clouded State of Affairs than this Queen did : The Nation was engaged in a War, both with *France* and *Scotland*. The Queen had no Ally, but King *Philip* : And though she was sensible of her particular Obligations to him, yet being resolved to make Alterations in Religion, she knew she could depend no longer on him, when once these should be begun. The Duke of *Feria*, then his Ambassador in *England*, took all Occasions to let her understand, that his Master was the *Catbolick King*, and that therefore he must protect that Religion. The Papists whom she found in the Ministry, possessed her with Fears of Rebellions at Home, and of Wars from Abroad, if she set herself to alter Religion. Those she brought into her Councils, in Conjunction with the Papists, chiefly *Bacon* and *Cecil*, had been so accustomed to comply with what they condemned in Matters of Religion, that they brought themselves to bear what they did not approve : And they apprehended great Danger if they should proceed too quick in those Matters.

Her Inclinations in Religion cautiously managed.

The Queen's Inclinations to the Reformation were universally relied on : Her Education and Knowledge ; her bad Usage during the former Reign ; and her Title to the Crown, that was grounded on a Marriage, made in Defiance to the Pope, led all People to conclude, that what slow Steps soever she might make in it, she would certainly declare for it, as soon as she saw she could be safe in doing it. Upon this, some, whether out of a Forwardness of Zeal, or on Design to Encourage her, began early to pull down Images, and to make Changes : But on the other Hand, the Priests apprehending what was like to follow, begun at the same Time to alarm the People : Some broke out into Seditious Words, to animate the People against all Changes : And the Pulpits being all in their Hands, they had free Scope there to give the Allarm : Some went further, and called her Title to the Crown in Question ; and set up the Pretensions of the Queen of *Scotland*. Of these, the Industrious Mr. *Strype* has gathered many Instances, that shewed on the one Hand their Seditious Tempers ; and on the other Hand, the great Mildness of the Government, different from the Cruelty of the former Reign. To put a stop to these, she did by one Proclamation prohibit all Preaching ; and by another, all Alterations by private Hands.

As

As her Ministers advised this Caution in Matters of Religion, so they persuaded her to digest the Loss of *Calais*, and to come into a Peace with *France* and *Scotland*. 1558.

They likewise thought of New Alliances. In order to this, *Mount* was brought into *England* again; and had secret Instructions given him by *Cecyl*, to go to all the Princes of *Germany*, to know how far the Queen might depend on their Assistance; and to receive the Advices that the Princes offered, with Relation to the Affairs of *England*, and in particular, concerning a proper Marriage for the Queen. He found them ready to receive the Queen into the *Smalcaldick League*; chiefly, if the Reformation that was intended, might be made upon their Model. The Match they all proposed, was with *Charles* of *Austria*, the Emperor *Ferdinand's* second Son, Brother to *Maximilian*, the King of *Bohemia* and *Hungary*; who was known to be a Protestant: For tho' he complied in the outward Acts of the Popish Worship, yet he had a Minister in his Court, whom he heard frequently Preach. Both the Elector *Palatine*, and the Duke of *Wurtemberg*, assured *Mount*, that *Charles* designed, as soon as he durst, for fear of his Father's Displeasure, to declare himself of their Religion. He said to one of these Princes; "I love the Religion that my Brother holds, and approve of it; and will, by the Grace of God, profess it openly. He told him, that his Father suspected this; and had pressed him to take an Oath, that he would never change his Religion. He refused that; but said to his Father, that he believed, as he did, all that was in the New Testament, and in the Orthodox Fathers. Upon which the Emperor said, I see this Son is likewise corrupted." They thought this Match would be a great Strengthening of the Queen: It would engage the whole House of *Austria* in the Protestant Religion, and unite the whole Empire in an Alliance with the Queen. This was writ to the Queen in the Year 1559; but in the Copy I saw, the particular Date is not added.

*Mount sent to Germany.*  
A Match with Charles of Austria advised.

*Cotton Libr. Galba, 11.*

The News of the Queen's coming to the Crown no sooner reached *Zurick*, than all those who had retired thither, resolved to return to *England*. They had been entertained there both by the Magistrates and the Ministers, *Bullinger*, *Gualter*, *Weidner*, *Simler*, *Lavater*, *Gesner*, and all the rest of that Body, with a Tendernefs and Affection, that engaged them to the End of their Lives, to make the greatest Acknowledgments possible for it. The first of these was, in all Respects, the Chief Person of that Society, with whom they held the closest Correspondence. *Peter Martyr* was likewise there, and was treated by them all with a singular Respect, even to a Submission. *Jewel* was first formed by him at *Oxford*, and so continued to his Death in a constant Commerce of Letters with him, writing always to him by the Title of *Father*. I saw a great Volume of those Letters, as I passed thro' *Zurick* in the Year 1685; so I was desirous to have the Volume sent me; but I found, that by their Rules, that could not be done. I also understood, that there were several Letters relating to our Affairs, scattered thro' several other Volumes; so Professor *Otto* did kindly, and with much Zeal, undertake to get them to be Copied for me. The Person who managed

The Reformers return to England.

and



1558. and procured this for me, was that Pious and Learned Professer at Geneva, *Alphonfus Turretin*, born to be a Blessing to the State he lives in. He has given the World already, on many Occasions, great Instances of his exquisite Learning, and of a most penetrating Judgment, having made a vast Progress in a few Years; in which, a feeble and tender Body, tho' it is a great Clog that gives his Friends many sad Apprehensions, yet cannot keep down an exalted Mind, from many Performances, that seem to be above both his Years and his Strength. But how valuable soever these Qualities are, yet his Zeal for the Great Things of Religion, and his Moderation in Lesser Matters, together with a sublime and exalted Piety, is that which I observed in him, even when he was scarce out of Childhood, and have, with a continual Joy and Delight seen the Advances of it ever since. This grateful Account of him, I owe, not so much to his Friendship, (tho' I owe a great deal to that) but to his rare and singular Worth. By his means, I procured Copies of the Letters, that our Reformers continued to write, chiefly to *Peter Martyr*, *Bullinger*, and *Gualter*: And with them I have a solemn Attestation; under the Seal of that Noble Canton, of their being true Copies, carefully collated with the Originals; which I have put at the End of the Collection. If there had not been many Interruptions in the Series of those Letters, they are so particular, that from them we should have had a clear Thread of the History of that Time: But many of them are lost; and they are wanting on some of the most critical Occasions. I shall make the best Use of them I can, as far as they lead me.

They were  
well received  
by the Queen.

Coll. Numb.  
44.

*Horn* and *Sands* went first to England: So *Jewel*, who was following them, writes from *Straßburg*, on the 26th of *January* 1559, to *Peter Martyr*; and adds, "that they were well received by the Queen; that many Bishopricks were void; *Christopherson* was certainly dead: That *White*, whom *Martyr* knew well, had preached the Funeral-Sermon, when Queen *Mary* was buried: The Text was, *I praised the dead more than the living*: In which he charged the Audience, by all means, not to suffer any Change to be made in Religion. Inveighing against the Fugitives, that might perhaps return into *England*, he said, Whosoever should kill them, would do a Deed acceptable to God. Upon this he writes, That both the Marquis of *Winchester*, and *Heath*, Archbishop of *York*, seemed highly displeased at it. He adds, That *Boner* was obliged to restore to *Ridley's* Executors, all his Goods that he had violently seized on, and was confined to his House." I have seen a Copy of *White's* Sermon. In it he commends Queen *Mary* for this, that She would never be called *Head of the Church*: Tho' the Falseness of that is on Record, in the Writs that were sealed for above a Year after she came to the Crown. He runs out with great Fury against Herefy: *Geneva* is, in particular, named the Seat of it. He says, Queen *Mary's* Death was like the Death of an Angel, if they were mortal. He insinuates his Fears of flying in the Winter, on the Sabbath, or being with Child; all which he represents as Allegorical. Yet he has some decent Words of the Queen; and says, they were

were to comfort themselves for the Death of one Sister, in the other that survived.

1559.

*Gualter* wrote to one *Masters*, who was the Queen's Physician, and was well known to him, on the 16th of *January*. "He congratulates the Happy Change of their Affairs. He wishes (I translate his Words strictly) that they would not hearken to the Counsels of those Men; who, when they saw that Popery could not be honestly defended, nor entirely retained, would use all Artifices, to have the outward Face of Religion to remain mixed. incertain, and doubtful: So that while an Evangelical Reformation is pretended, those Things should be obtruded on the Church, which will make the Returning back to Popery, to Superstition, and to Idolatry, very easy. I write not these Things to you (he adds) as knowing that there are any such among you; but I write, from a Fear that there may be some such. For we have had the Experience of this for some Years in *Germany*, and know what Influence such Persons may have. Their Counsels seem, to a Carnal Judgment, to be full of Modesty, and well fitted for carrying on an Universal Agreement: And we may well believe, that the Common Enemy of our Salvation, will find out proper Instruments, by whose means the Seeds of Popery may still remain among you. A little after he writes, That he apprehends, that in the first Beginnings, while Men may study to avoid the giving some small Offence, many Things may be suffered, under this Colour, that they will be continued but for a little while; and yet afterwards, it will scarce be possible, by all the Endeavours that can be used, to get them to be removed, at least not without great Strugglings." Dr. *Masters*, in Answer to this, tells him, He had laid his Letter before the Queen, and that She had read it all. He promises to use his best Endeavours, for carrying on a Sound Reformation. This plainly insinuated their Fears, of somewhat like what was designed by the *Interim* in *Germany*.

Those of *Zurick* advise a thorough Reformation.  
Coll. Numb.

45.

*Francis*, Earl of *Bedford*, had gone out of *England* in Queen *Mary's* Time, and had stayed some Time at *Zurick*: He had expressed a true Zeal for the Reformation, and a particular Regard for the Divines there; of which, a Letter in the Collection gives a clear Account: And upon that they wrote often to him, and pressed him vehemently, to take care in the first Beginnings, to have all Things settled upon sure and sound Foundations.

The Earl of *Bedford* had stayed some Time at *Zurick*, and wrote to them.

Coll. Numb.

46.

On the 24th of *January* the Convocation was opened; but the Bishops, in Obedience to the Queen's Proclamation against Preaching, did not think fit to open it with a Sermon. Those who I find are marked as present, are, the Bishops of *London*, *Winchester*, *Lincoln*, *Worcester*, *Coventry* and *Litchfield*, and the Abbot of *Westminster*: These appeared personally. And the Bishops of *Ely*, *Peterborough*, and *St. Asaph*, sent their Proxies. But no mention is made of the Bishops of *Bath* and *Wells*, *St. David's*, *Landaffe* and *Exeter*. All the other Sees were then vacant; *Canterbury*, *Salisbury*, *Norwich*, *Chichester*, *Hereford*, *Glocester*, *Oxford*, *Bangor*, *Bristol*, and *Rochester*; Ten in all. *Harpsfield* was chosen Prolocutor. He asked, What they

Proceedings in Convocation.



1559.

had to do, and what was to be done, to Preserve Religion? The Bishops answered, they must pray the Queen, that no New Burden might be laid on the Clergy in this Parliament. This was to prevent the Demand of a new Subsidy, the former not being yet paid. In the 7th Session, the Prolocutor offered to the Bishops the Five Articles, mentioned in my History. These they had drawn up, for the Discharge of their Consciences, and they desired the Bishops to be their Leaders in this Matter. The Bishops received their Paper, and promised to offer it next Day to the House of Lords. In the next Session, the Prolocutor and Clergy came up, and asked the Bishops, if they had delivered their Paper to the House of Lords? *Boner* answered, That they had delivered it to the Lord-Keeper, the Mouth of that House; who, to all Appearance, received it kindly, or thankfully, (*gratanter*), but gave them no Answer. The Clergy desired the Bishops, to get an Answer from him, or at least to know his Pleasure before their next Meeting. In the 9th Session, the Bishops told the Clergy, that they had not yet found a fit Opportunity, to obtain an Answer from the House of Lords. On the 10th Session, *Boner* told the Clergy, That all their Articles, except the last, which was, "That the Authority of Treating and Defining, in Matters of the Faith, of the Sacraments, and of Ecclesiastical Discipline, belonged to the Pastors of the Church, and not to the Laity;" were approved by the Two Universities. After this came only perpetual Prorogations, from Day to Day, without any Business done, till the 9th of May, in which the Convocation was dissolved: So this was the last and feeble Struggle, that the Popish Clergy made in Convocation.

The Bishops  
oppose the  
Reformation  
in the House  
of Lords.

Coll. Numb.  
47.

The Bishops stood firm in the House of Lords; where there were none of the other Side to answer them, few of the Temporal Lords being very Learned. They seemed to triumph there; and hung so upon the Wheels, that there was a slow Progress made. On the 20th of March, *Jewel* writes to *Peter Martyr*, "That after a Journey of 51 Days, from the Time he left *Zurick*, he got to *London*; where he was amazed to find the Pope's Authority was not yet thrown off: Masses were still said; and the Bishops continued still insolent. Things were beginning to mend a little. A publick Disputation was then resolved on: And he adds, that the Queen spoke with great Esteem of *Peter Martyr*. The inferior Sort of the Populace was both ignorant and perverse. He tells him, *Brooks*, Bishop of *Glocester*, whom he calls an *Impure Beast*, was newly dead; and cried out, as he was dying, that he was damned."

Coll. Numb.  
48.

*Jewel*, in a Letter to *Bullinger* from *London* on the 22d of May 1559, which is in the Collection, after great Acknowledgments of his Obligations to him, and to all *Zurick*, "Thanks him for quickning them to act with Zeal and Courage. There was need of it; for besides those who had always been their Enemies, the Deserters, who had left them in the former Reign, were now their most bitter Enemies. Besides this, the *Spaniards* had corrupted the Morals of the Nation to a great Degree. They were doing what they could, and all Things were coming into a better State. The Queen

“ Queen did very solemnly refuse to be called *Head of the Church*.  
 “ She thought that Title was only due to Christ. The Universities 1559.  
 “ were strangely corrupted by *Soto*, and another *Spanish Monk*. It  
 “ was scarce credible how much Mischief they had done in so little  
 “ Time. He tells him, that the Lord *Bedford* had asked him, what  
 “ would be the most acceptable Present that he could send to him  
 “ and his Brethren? He answered, Nothing could be more acceptable  
 “ to them, as his expressing a Zeal for promoting the Gospel, and  
 “ against Popery. That Lord assured him, he would do that Faith-  
 “ fully; which, as he writes, he was doing very Sincerely. He  
 “ writes also, how that several Princes were making Addresses to the  
 “ Queen for her Marriage; but many suspected her Inclinations lay  
 “ to one *Pickering*, a Worthy and Pious Man; and one of a most  
 “ Noble Figure, as to his Person. He refers him for other Things  
 “ to his Letters to *Peter Martyr*.” On the 6th of *April*, *Jewel* wrote  
 a particular Account of the Disputation, which though it is upon the  
 Matter, the same that is in my History, yet since it is both a Confir-  
 mation of it, and has some Circumstances that are New, I have put  
 it in my Collection: “ He tells him that *Cole* treated the Reformers  
 “ with many Reproaches, and much Scorn: And called them Sedi-  
 “ tious Incendiaries. He delivered his Speech with great Emotion,  
 “ Stamping with his Feet, and putting himself as in Convulsions: Coll. Numb.  
49.  
 “ He said the Apostles divided their Work into Two Provinces, the  
 “ *Western* and the *Eastern*: The First, *St. Peter* and *St. Paul* had  
 “ given to them, where the Worship was to be all in *Latin*: The  
 “ *Eastern* Division fell to the other Apostles; where all was to be  
 “ performed in *Greek*. This he introduced with Pomp as a Thing  
 “ certain. He affirmed that it was not fit the People should under-  
 “ stand the Publick Worship; for Ignorance was the Mother of De-  
 “ votion. The Paper prepared by the Reformers was read Gravely  
 “ and Modestly by *Horn*: So that all who were present (he Names  
 “ the Earl of *Shrewsbury* in particular) acknowledged the Victory was  
 “ clearly on their Side: By this, and by what hapned the 2d Day,  
 “ the Popish Cause sunk much in the Opinion of the People.”

On the 28th of *April*, in another Letter, which is in the Collection, Collect. Numb.  
 He tells *Peter Martyr* how earnestly the Bishops contended in the 50.  
 House of Lords. “ *Fecknam* defended Monastick Orders, from the  
 “ Sons of the Prophets; and the *Nazarites* among the *Jews*; and  
 “ said, Christ and his Apostles were Monks. None struggled more  
 “ vehemently than *Thirleby*. He saw a Design at Court of Seizing  
 “ on the Bishop’s Manors, and Assigning Parsonages to them instead  
 “ of them; but he laments most of all, that no Care was taken of  
 “ Schools, or of promoting Learning. The Universities were in a  
 “ most miserable Condition. The Earl of *Bedford* pressed the Queen  
 “ to send for *Peter Martyr*: She said she would do it: But as much  
 “ as *Jewel* desired to see him, he writes, that he would not advise  
 “ his coming over, if he was not sent for with such an Earnest and  
 “ Honourable Invitation as he deserved to have. He saw many of  
 “ the Queen’s Ministers were in hope to enter into the *Smalcaldick*  
 “ League. And one who had been a Bishop, possessed them with an  
 “ Opinion, that if *Martyr* were brought over, that would obstruct  
 “ the



1559.

“ the other Design : He expresse an ill Opinion of that Person, but “ does not name him : ” It must have been either *Barlo*, *Scory*, or *Coverdale* ; for these were all the Bishops of the Reformation, that were then alive : *Coverdale*, as being a *Dane*, is the likest to have been engaged in the *Lutheran* Opinion : He concludes his Letter, that those who had returned from their Exile, were yet in great Misery, no Care being taken of them.

He complains  
of want of  
Zeal, and an  
Excess of  
Caution.

His next is on the 10th of *April*, “ He Laments the Want of Zeal “ and Industry in promoting the Reformation ; far short of what the “ Papists shewed in *Queen Mary*’s Time. Then every Thing was “ carried on violently, without staying either for Law, or Precedent. “ But now every Thing is managed in so Slow, so Cautious, and “ Prudent a Manner ; as if the Word of God was not to be received “ upon his own Authority : So that as Christ was thrown out by “ his Enemies, he is now kept out by his Friends. This Caution “ made that the Spirits of those that favoured them were sunk, while “ their Enemies were much exalted upon it. Yet he acknowledges “ that though no Law was made abrogating the Mass, it was in many “ Places laid down. The Nobility seemed Zealous in their Hatred “ of Popery. The Queen had indeed softened her Mass much ; but “ there were many Things amiss that were left in it. If she could “ be prevailed on to put the Crucifix out of her Chapel, it would “ give a general Encouragement : She was truly pious, but thought “ it necessary to proceed by Law, and that it was Dangerous to give “ way to a Furious Multitude.”

*Cox*, on the 20th of *May*, wrote to *Weidner*, another Divine of *Zurick*, whom he calls a Venerable Old Man. “ He tells him that “ they found the short Reign of *Queen Mary* had such Effects in hard- “ ning the Minds of the People in their Superstition, that it would “ not be easy to change the Nation. Great Opposition was made to “ every good Motion, by the *Scribes* and *Pharisees* in the House of “ Lords ; for there was none there that could maintain Arguments “ against the Bishops : But the Divines who were returned from their “ Exile, were called to Preach at Court before the Queen ; where “ they plainly affirmed that the Pope was Antichrist, and that their “ Traditions were Blasphemies. Some of the Nobility came every “ Day over to them, and many of the People, but not one of the “ Clergy : They stuck all together as a Body that was not to be mov- “ ed. He tells him the Event that the Publick Disputation had ; and “ that now King *Edward*’s Laws were to be revived. Thus, says he, “ God has regarded the low Estate we were in, and with his Fa- “ therly Compassion has pitied us ; and taken off the Cross we lay “ under. God grant these his Great and Inestimable Benefits may “ never be forgotten by us : But he Laments, that while there was so “ great a Harvest, there were so few Labourers.”

All Business was brought to a good Conclusion in Parliament. The King of *France*’s unlooked-for Death, had given such a Change to the Face of Affairs abroad, that the Queen and her Ministers seemed to be animated with more Courage than had appeared hitherto. Of this there is a Letter of *Jewel*’s in the Collection. In the Beginning of *August*, it appears from another Letter in the Collection, that

Preachers

Coll. Numb.

51.  
Coll. Numb.

52.

Preachers were sent to many different Parts : “ Many Northern Counties were assigned to *Sands*. *Jewel* had a large Province ; he was to make a Circuit of about 700 Miles, through *Berkshire*, *Gloucestershire*, *Somersetshire*, *Devonshire*, *Cornwall*, *Dorsetshire*, and *Wiltshire*. The Popish Bishops made a very poor Address to the Queen, persuading her not to change the State of Religion, to which she answered very resolutely : And they, rather than Abjure the Pope once more, which they had often done before, were resolved now to relinquish their Bishopricks. It was plain they had no Religion among them ; yet now they pretended Conscience. They were full of Rage, and one of the Artifices they used at that Time to keep the People from receiving the Reformation, was the giving out of Prophecies, that this Change would be short-lived. Howsoever the Queen had Courage : So he thanks God for the State to which their Affairs were then brought. Matters went well in *Scotland* ; *Knox* was preaching in many Places of the Country well guarded ; the Monasteries were every-where pulled down, and all the Superstitious Stuff that was in them, was destroyed. The Young King of *France* took among his Titles, both *England* and *Scotland*. He understood it was designed to make himself Bishop of *Salisbury*, but he was positively resolved to decline it.” In the Letters sent me from *Zurick*, I find none of *Grindall*’s on this Occasion : But Mr. *Strype* in his Life has informed the World, that *Grindall*, when he knew he was designed to be a Bishop, wrote to *Peter Martyr* for his Opinion in several Matters. I shall give you the Substance of his Letter : “ He did not approve of the Queen’s taking away the Estates of the Bishopricks, and giving them Parsonages instead of them : He thought this was the Patrimony of the Inferior Clergy ; so he did not see how they could be supplied, if these were given to the Bishops. He had also a Doubt concerning the Popish Vestments : At another Time he asked his Advice, whether the Popish Priests, upon their changing again, should be received and continued in their Functions ? Or whether such of them as had been concerned in the late Cruelty, ought not to be prosecuted for that ?”

To all this *Peter Martyr* answered, “ That for the taking away the Bishops Estates, and giving them Parsonages for them, they could neither hinder, nor help it : But they ought out of them to support the Clergy, that laboured in those Parishes : For the Habits, he confessed he did not love them : For while he was a Canon in *Oxford*, he never would use the Surplice. He thought they ought to do what they could to get them to be laid aside ; but that if that could not be done, he thought he might do more Good even in that Particular, by submitting to it, and accepting a Bishoprick, which might give him an Interest to procure a Change afterwards. As for the Popish Priests, he advised the forgiving all that was past ; and the receiving them according to the Practice of the Primitive Church, in the Return of the *Arians* to the Orthodox Body. But they were to watch over them, and to instruct and examine them with more Care.” This Answer came too late ; for *Grindall* was consecrated before he got it ; but it was, no doubt,

1559.

*Peter Martyr's*  
Advices to  
*Grindall*.



1559.

doubt, a great Satisfaction to him, to find that a Person whom he esteemed so highly, approved of the Resolution that he had taken: In which it was probable *Jewel's* Opinion, of whom they had all a high Esteem, might contribute to settle him; for though he disliked the Use of those Vestments, and treats the Insisting so much on it with great Contempt; yet on the other Hand, he blames those who laid too much Weight upon that Matter, and so looked on it as a Thing of more Importance than truly it was.

They all rejoiced in the happy Turn of Affairs then in *Scotland*, the much greater Part of that Nation declaring themselves openly, and zealously against Popery.

The Begin-  
nings of the  
Reformation  
in the Parlia-  
ment of *Scot-*  
*land*.

Here I shall insert an Account concerning *Scotland*, of what happened in the Reign of King *Henry*; but that came not to my Knowledge, 'till the Impression of this Volume was advanced to the Reign of Queen *Mary*. The *Scottish* Nation was so well disposed towards the Reformation, that immediately upon King *James* the Vth's Death, which was in *December* 1541, there appeared a wonderful Inclination among them to be better informed in Matters of Religion. Cardinal *Beaton* to prevent this, had got a Will to be forged in the Name of the deceased King, constituting him Regent: But as that was discovered to be a Forgery, so the Nobility had no Regard to it, but owned the Earl of *Aran* to be the Second Person in the Kingdom; and that he was next to the Young Queen, and the Heirs of her Body, the Heir of the Crown. So they took the Oaths of Allegiance to the Queen, as their Sovereign; and to the Earl of *Aran* as their Governor till the Queen was of perfect Age: And upon that the Cardinal was secured.

A Parliament was summoned to meet in *May* 1542, in which the Regency of the Earl of *Aran* was of new confirmed on the 13th of *May*; and all the Subjects were required to obey him in all Things pertaining to that Office, conform to the Acts formerly made, which were again ratified by that Parliament. They also ratified the Oaths that had been taken to him by some Lords Spiritual and Temporal; and all who were present, were required to confirm these Oaths, by Solemn Oaths in full Parliament; which they all did by the holding up of their Right Hands, swearing that they would be True and Obedient to the Lord Governor, and serve him with their Persons, Kindred, Friends, and Goods, and no other, during the Queen's Non-age.

On the 15th of *May*, they ordered an Authentick Publication to be made of all they had done under the Great Seal; and they all affixed their Seals to the Instrument made to confirm this Settlement. On the same Day a Council was named; Six of these was the Number that was at the least necessary to concur with the Governor. The Cardinal was not one of them: The Archbishop of *Glasgow*, who was Lord Chancellor; with the Bishops of *Aberdeen*, *Murray*, *Orkney*, *Ross*, and *Brieken*; and the Abbots of *Dunfermlin*, and *Cowper*, were for the Ecclesiastical State. The Earls of *Angus*, *Huntley*, *Murray*, *Argyle*, *Bothwell*, *Marshall*, *Cassils*, and *Glencairn*; and the Lords *Erskin*, *Ruthuen*, *Maxwell*, *Seton*, and *Metbuen*, for the Nobility; with some other Commoners of the Boroughs: After whom,

whom, the Treasurer, the Secretary, the Clerk of Register, the Justice Clerk, and the Queen's Advocate are named. It seems they intended that no Peers should be created, but with the Concurrence of the Parliament: For the Governor, with the Advice and Content of the Estates of Parliament, made the Lord *Stewart* of Ochilry, a Peer, to have Vote and Place in Parliament. In the same Record mention is made of the Draught of an Act offered by the Lord *Maxwell*, to the Lords of the Articles, in these Words.

1559.

*It is statute and ordained, that it shall be lawful to all our Sovereign Lady's Lieges, to have the Holy Writ of the New Testament and the Old, in the Vulgar Tongue, in Inglis or Scotts, of a good and tru Translation; and that they shall incurre no Crime, for the having, or reding of the same. Provided always, that no Man dispute, or bold Opinions, under the Pains contained in the Acts of Parliament.*

The Lords of Articles found this reasonable; and thought, that the Bible might be used among all the Lieges of the Realm, in our Vulgar Tongue, of a good, true, and just Translation; because there was no Law shewed to the contrary. And therefore they agreed, that none should incur any Crime for having, or reading it, nor be accused for it; but added the *Proviso*, that was added to the Draught offered to them.

But the Archbishop of *Glasgow* did, in his own Name, and in the Name of all the Prelates of the Realm, that were present in Parliament, when the Act came to be read in full Parliament, *dissent* (simpliciter) to it, as being One of the Three Estates of the Parliament: And they opposed them thereto, unto the Time that a Provincial Council might be had of all the Clergy of this Realm, to advise and conclude thereupon; if the same be necessary to be had in the Vulgar Tongue, to be used among the Queen's Lieges, or not; and thereafter to shew the utter Determination, that shall be done in that Behalf. Upon this, he demanded an Instrument to be made, according to the Forms in that Kingdom. But notwithstanding this Opposition, the Act passed. For in the same Record, there is an Order entred as signed by the Governor, requiring the Clerk of Register, to cause the Acts passed in Parliament, to be proclaimed; And in special, the Act made for having the New Testament in Vulgar Tongue, with certain Additions. In the Copy sent me, this bears Date the 19th of March, but I believe it should be May; since the Matter was not before the Parliament till May. I have set down all this Matter, almost in the Words of the Record of Parliament, that was sent me.

The Use of  
the Scriptures  
in the Vulgar  
Tongue much  
opposed.

But granted.

In the same Record, the Instructions are set down, that were given to the Ambassadors, that were sent to Treat concerning the Queen's Marriage, with *Edward*, then Prince of Wales: In which it appears, that they thought it necessary, if their Sovereign went out of the Kingdom, even after She was of perfect Age, yet that the Governor of the Realm should continue to exercise his Authority all the Days of his Life: And that after his Death, the nearest Lawful Person of the Blood should succeed to the said Office, by a



1559. Large and Ample Commission ; of which, they order a Form to be devised.

The free Use of the Scriptures, was a great Step to let the Nation look into the Nature of the Christian Religion : And the Clergy foresaw well the Consequences, that would naturally follow upon it ; so it was no wonder, that this was opposed so zealously by them. It was a great Piece of Foresight, to Secure the Nation, by having a Governor with full Powers, still residing amongst them. In the subsequent Treaty with *France*, there was not that Care nor Precaution used : But at the Conclusion of the Marriage, the *French* proceeded in so perfidious a manner, as to give a Warning to all, who in future Times should Treat with that Court. For on the 4th of *April* 1558, (a Fortnight before the Articles of the Marriage were settled, which was on the 19th of *April*) the Young Queen being then but little more than Fifteen, a Secret Act was pass'd ; In which, after She had set forth the Ancient Alliance between the Two Crowns, and the Honourable Entertainment that She had received from the present King of *France* ;

A perfidious  
Proceeding of  
the Court of  
*France*.

“ She, to Confirm and Establish the Affection between the Two Kingdoms, and in order to Unite the Kingdom of *Scotland* to the Crown of *France*, in case She should die without Heirs of her Body, had made some Dispositions in Favour of the Crown of *France*, which She intended should have their full Effect : Yet She, by a Communication with the Deputies sent from *Scotland*, saw into the Secret Designs of some, who were practising to the Effect, that in Default of Heirs of her Body, the Crown should descend to some Lords of the Country ; depriving her by that means, to her great Regret, of the Power of Disposing of it. Yet since She could not at that Time openly oppose them for certain just Causes of Fear ; and considering that She was out of her Kingdom, and had no Strong Places in it at her own Disposal ; and that great Troubles might arise, if what she was then doing should be publicly known ; especially considering the present War with the Kingdom of *England* : She therefore did protest, that what Consent, or Agreement soever She should make to the Articles and Instructions sent over by the States of her Kingdom, with Relation to the Succession, in case she should die without Heirs of her Body ; She intended still, that the Disposition then made in Favour of the Crown of *France*, should have its full and entire Effect, notwithstanding any Agreement She had made, or should yet make, conform to these Instructions, as a Thing contrary to her Will and Intention.” Upon which, She demanded an Act from the Keeper of the Great Seal, *Bertrandi*, who was made a Cardinal that Year.

*Recueil des  
Traites*, To. 2.  
p. 508.

This Instrument was signed by her, and by the Dauphin ; and is printed in that Great Collection of the Treaties of *France*, that was published Twenty Years ago. It opens a Scene of Treachery ; that how much soever the Design was suspected, (as will appear by the Paper, of which an Account will be given in the following Relation) yet it was never certainly known, till they themselves have made their

their own Shame thus known to the World. But at this Time, this was so carefully concealed, that *Francis* the II<sup>d</sup> sent a formal Obligation under his great Seal; by which he bound himself to the Duke of *Chatelherault*, to maintain his Right of Succeeding to the Crown of *Scotland*, in case the Queen should die without Heirs of her own Body. The Original Obligation is still preserved in *Hawdton*. The Queen's Secret Act was as ill grounded in Law, as it was perfidious in it self: For certainly, what Power soever our Princes, with the Concurrence of their Parliaments, have to Limit the Succession to the Crown, our Princes themselves cannot, by any private Act of their own, alter the Succession, or dispose of it at Pleasure. But to return to that, which has led me into this Digression.

1559.

The Knowledge of Religion, that the free Use of the Scriptures brought the Nation to, had such an effect, that the Reformation was every where desired; and the Vices and Ignorance of the Popish Clergy, gave all People an Aversion to them. This was long connived at even by the Queen Mother, during her Government: But now that She thought all was sure, She threw off the Mask, and declared herself an open Enemy to those whom She had courted hitherto, and seemed to favour. Upon this there was a great and a sudden Turn. Popery was the Object of all Men's Hatred: The Churches were purged from Idolatry and Superstition: The Monasteries were broke into; and many Acts of hot and irregular Zeal, were complained of in all the Corners of the Kingdom.

One Thing is not a little to the Honour of *Knox*, and his Followers, in that Tumultuary Reformation, that the Multitude was so governed, even amidst all that Popular Heat, that no Blood was shed, and no Man was killed in it: Which being positively delivered by *Lesley*, Bishop of *Rasse*, that must be looked on as a Testimony beyond Exception.

\* *Nobilium qui  
Hæreses ob-  
stringebantur  
crimine, huma-  
nitas non est re-  
ticenda, quod eo  
tempore paucos  
Catholicos de  
Religionis re-  
mulerant ex-  
ilio, pauciores  
carcere, morte  
nullos.  
Leslaus de  
Rebus Scot.  
l. 10.*

But since the Affairs of *Scotland* have not hitherto been so clearly represented, as I find them stated in some Original Papers, that I fell on in the *Cotton* Library; I will give a full Account of them, as far as those Papers do guide me.

There is a long Representation drawn up, of the Breach of Faith, and of the Violation of their Laws, during the Government of the Queen Regent of *Scotland*: At the End of which, there is a Petition to the Queen, signed by the Great Lords of that Kingdom, in which both Papists and Protestants concurred. And in order to obtain that Concurrence, the Matters of Religion are not insisted on; but the continued Course of a perfidious and illegal Administration, is charged on the Queen Dowager. So that from this it appears, that the War was not begun, nor carried on upon the Account of Religion, but upon the Pretence of Public and National Rights. I have put it in the Collection.

Collec.  
Numb. 53.

" They begin it to shew, that the Arms that they were forced  
" to fly to, was no Rebellion. They run the Matter back to the  
" first Proposition, for Carrying their Queen into *France*: Which,  
" they say, was obtained, partly by Corruption with Money, partly  
" by Authority, and partly by fair Promises: Yet before that was  
Vol. III. 4 C " agreed



1559. " agreed to a Treaty was made by the Parliament, and sworn to,  
 " as well as ratified by the Great Seals of the King, and Dauphin  
 " of *France*, That *Scotland* should be governed by their own Laws,  
 " and by the Nobility and People of *Scotland*: That all Offices  
 " should be given to them; and, That no Garisons of the *French*  
 " should be admitted to Settle in the Kingdom. Great Practice was  
 " made after that, to bring the Parliament to consent, that their  
 " Queen should marry the Dauphin: And to obtain that, the Suc-  
 " cession to the Crown was declared to belong to the Duke of *Cha-*  
 " *telberault* and his Heirs, after the Heirs of the Queen's Body.  
 " New Oaths were then taken, and Charters given under the Great  
 " Seal of *France*, and under their Queen and the Dauphin's Seal,  
 " that *Scotland* should be governed by a Council of Natives: The  
 " Castles were also to be put in sure Hands. Duplicates of these  
 " were lodged in the Castle of *Edinburgh*, and with the Duke of  
 " *Chatelberault*. Upon this, an Embassy was sent to *France*, of  
 " Two Bishops, Two Earls, and Four Lords; and the Marriage was  
 " concluded. They were upon that dealt with, to endeavour, that  
 " the Crown of *Scotland* might be given to the Dauphin. They  
 " refused to undertake that: and believed, that it could not be  
 " brought about." The Word upon that was changed. And it was  
 desired only, that the *Matrimonial Crown* might be sent him;  
 (which was afterwards explained in the Act of Parliament that  
 granted it, that he should be King of *Scotland* during Life.) " The  
 " Lords were suffered to return: But when they came to *Diep*, One  
 " Bishop, Two Earls, and Two Lords died in one Night. The  
 " Three that were left, came home much amazed, believing that the  
 " others had been poisoned."

Here I must add another Particular, relating to that Deputation.  
 In the Council-Book, that goes from *April* 1554, to *January* 1558,  
 that was cast by and neglected, many Leaves being cut out of it,  
 and was first discovered by a Nephew of mine, whom I desired to  
 search their Register for me; it appears, that on the 13th of *Decem-*  
*ber* 1557, there was a Tax laid on the Kingdom, to be paid in be-  
 fore *Easter*, for the Expence of that Embassy, of 15000 Pounds  
*Scots* Money, that is 1250 *l.* Sterling; which was to be Levied  
 by the same Proportion that all the Taxes were then Levied; of  
 which there are several Instances in that Book: The One Half was  
 Levied on the Spirituality; and Two Thirds of the other Half was  
 on Estates in Land, and the other Third was Levied on the Bo-  
 roughs. This shews, that the Estates of the Spirituality were then  
 reckoned, by a settled Proportion, the full Half of the Kingdom.  
 The Persons deputed were, the Archbishop of *Glasgow*, the Bishop  
 of *Orkney*, and the Prior of *St. Andrews*, (afterwards Earl of *Mur-*  
*ray*) the Earl of *Cassiles* and *Rothes*, and the Lord *Fleming*; with  
 the Provost of *Edinburgh*, and of *Montross*. When I wonder'd how  
 so small a Sum could answer the Expence of so great an Embassy,  
 on such an Occasion; he shewed me, That either the Value of Mo-  
 ney, or, which is the same Thing, the Value of Things to be pur-  
 chased by Money, is almost incredibly changed now, in the Course  
 of



of 160 Years ; of which he gave me this Instance ; the Tun of Wine was then by Act of Parliament to be Sold at 20 *Livres* ; or in *Sterling* Money, at 1 *l.* 13 *s.* 4 *d.* and in retailing it, their Pint, which is 4 *English* Pints, was to be sold at 4 Farthings, their Penny having 6 Farthings ; so that reducing this to *English* Measures, 3 Quarts of Wine were to be sold at a Penny. This I thought was a small Digression, which the Reader would not be ill pleased to find laid in his Way. To return to the *Scotch* Memorial.

1559.

“ The Queen Dowager took Two Methods to gain her Point :  
“ The one was, to shew Favour to all those who had received no  
“ Favour of the Duke during his Government, because they were in  
“ the Interest of *England* ; whereas he was at that Time in the In-  
“ terest of *France* : The other was, she offered them a Permission to  
“ live according to their Conscience in Religion ; in Conclusion, the  
“ Queen Dowager brought the Parliament to give the *Matrimonial*  
“ *Crown* to the *Dauphin* ; but with this Condition, that the Duke’s  
“ Right should not be impaired by it.”

When all this was obtained, the Queen forgot all her Promises :  
“ She began with the greatest of the *Scottish* Lords then in Office ;  
“ the Earl of *Huntly*, who was then Lord Chancellor, and the Duke’s  
“ particular Friend : She took the Great Seal from him, and gave it  
“ to one *Rubay*, a *French* Advocate : She also put the Earl of *Huntly*  
“ in Prison, and set a great Fine on him, and left him only the Name  
“ of *Chancellor*. She made another *Frenchman* Comptroller, who had  
“ the Charge of the Revenue of the Crown : And she put all *Scotch-*  
“ *men* out of the Secrets of the Council, committing these only to  
“ *Frenchmen*. She kept in several Places Garisons of *Frenchmen*, who  
“ lived on Discretion. She gave them no Pay. She sent the Revenue  
“ of the Crown to *France* ; and brought over some base Money that  
“ was decried in *France*, and made it current in *Scotland*. She also  
“ set up a Mint for coining base Money, with which she paid the  
“ Soldiers. She tried to get the Castle of *Edinburgh* into her Hands,  
“ but that failed her. She gave such Abbeyes as fell void, to *French-*  
“ *men*, as to her Brother the Cardinal of *Guise*, and others : And for  
“ the Space of Three Years, she kept all that fell void in her own  
“ Hands, except such as were of any Value ; and these she bestowed  
“ on *Frenchmen*. Nor did she ever follow the Advice of those Lords,  
“ who upon her first entring upon the Government, were named to  
“ be of the Council. Many Intercessions were made to her upon  
“ these Proceedings, by the Nobility : Sometimes Companies of them  
“ joined together ; and sometimes they applied to her more privately,  
“ for they foresaw that they could not be born long.

The Queen Dowager set herself next to a Practice, which of  
“ all others was both the most Dangerous, and the most Dishonour-  
“ able, to set aside the Duke and his House : Pains was taken to en-  
“ gage the Lord *James*, and other Lords in it, who had no Friend-  
“ ship for the Duke ; to whom the Queen Dowager promised that  
“ she would bear with their Devotion in Religion, if they would  
“ join with her against the Duke, in Favour of the *French*. This  
“ encouraged them to do those Things, by which they incurred the  
“ Censures



1559.

“ Cenfures of the Church ; and were by Reason of a Law not much  
 “ known, brought in Danger of the Guilt of Treason : So Procefs  
 “ was ordered againft them : And upon that, the Queen Dowager  
 “ tempted them to engage in the *French* Intereft : But that not pre-  
 “ vailing, they were declared Traytors. The reft of the Nobility  
 “ being alarmed at this, the Queen Dowager brought out her *French*  
 “ Garifons, and difpofed of their Eftates, and entered into St. *John’s*  
 “ Town, in a Warlike Manner : She changed the Magiftrates, and  
 “ left a Garrifon in the Town. The Whole Nation was alarmed  
 “ at this, and were coming together in great Numbers. But ſhe not  
 “ having Force enough to conquer the Nation, ſent for the Duke,  
 “ and the Earl of *Huntly*, and employed them to quiet the Country ;  
 “ promifing that every Thing ſhould be redreſſed in a Parliament that  
 “ ſhould be held next Spring, with many other more particular Pro-  
 “ miſes : Upon this Affurance, theſe Lords quieted the Country.  
 “ While this was a doing, the Duke’s Eldeſt Son being then in  
 “ *France*, was ſent for to Court, but he had ſecret Adverſements  
 “ ſent him, that it was reſolved to proceed againſt him to the utmoſt  
 “ Extremity for Hereſy : Upon which he kept out of the Way, ’till  
 “ an Order was ſent to bring him in Dead or Alive : Upon that he  
 “ made his Escape ; but they ſeized on a Younger Brother of his, of  
 “ the Age of 15, and put him in Priſon.

“ In *Scotland* the Nobility had ſeparated themſelves, truſting to  
 “ the Faith that the Duke had given them, that all Things ſhould be  
 “ kept quiet ’till the Parliament. But ſome Companies coming out  
 “ of *France* to *Leith*, the Queen Dowager ordered that Town to be  
 “ fortified, and put 22 Enſigns of Foot, with one Troop of Horſe  
 “ in it. The Nobility upon that charged the Duke with Breach of  
 “ Faith, who could do no more but preſs the Queen to forbear to  
 “ give ſuch Cauſe of Jealouſy ; but all was to no Purpoſe. The  
 “ Town was fortified ; all the Ammunition ſhe had, was carried into  
 “ it, and the *French* continued ſtill to be ſending over more Forces.  
 “ The Duke, with the Nobility, repreſented to the Queen Dowager,  
 “ that it was now plain ſhe deſigned a Conqueſt : But ſhe deſpised  
 “ all their Requeſts, for by this Time the *French* thought they were  
 “ ſo ſtrong, that they reckoned it would be a ſhort Work to ſubdue  
 “ *Scotland*. There were but Two or Three mean Lords, *Bothwell*,  
 “ and *Seaton*, that kept Company with the Queen Dowager ; yet  
 “ even theſe ſignified to their Friends, that their Hearts were with  
 “ their Countrymen : Upon all this, the Duke, with the reſt of  
 “ the Nobility, and with the Barons, and Burgeſſes of the Realm,  
 “ ſeeing an Imminent Danger to the Whole Nation, and no Hope  
 “ of Remedy at her Hands, began deeply to conſider the State of  
 “ the Kingdom : Their Sovereign Lady was married to a ſtrange  
 “ Prince out of the Realm, and wholly in the Hands of *Frenchmen* ;  
 “ without any Council of her own Natural People ; add they con-  
 “ ſidered the Mortality of her Huſband, or of herſelf without Iſſue.  
 “ The Queen Dowager, Siſter to the Houſe that ruled all in *France*,  
 “ perſiſted in ruining the Liberties of her Daughter the Queen’s  
 “ Subjects, on Deſign to knit that Kingdom for ever to *France* ;  
 “ and

and so to execute the Old Malice of the *French* on the Crown of *England*, of which they had already assumed the Title. 1559.

“ They upon all these Grounds were constrained to constitute a Council, for the Government of the Kingdom, and for the Use of their Sovereign, to whom they had signified the Suspension of the Queen Dowager’s Authority ; maintaining, that being sore oppressed with *French* Power, they had, as natural Subjects, sufficient Strength for that ; tho’ they are not able to stand against the Power of *France*, but partly for the Right of their Sovereign ; and partly for the Antient Rights of the Crown, they have been forced to spend their Whole Substance ; yet they cannot longer preserve themselves from being conquered by the Power sent over from *France* ; a greater Force being promised to be sent next Spring. They therefore lay the Whole Matter before the Queen of *England*’s Ministers then upon their Borders ; and commit their Cause to her Protection ; desiring nothing but that their Country may be preserved from *France*, together with the Rights of their Sovereign, and of the Whole Nation.”

To this they add a Petition, “ That the Numbers of *French* Soldiers then within the Kingdom, might be removed speedily ; that so they might Live quietly, and be suffered to offer to the King and Queen such Articles as were necessary for the Peace and Good Government of the Kingdom, without Alteration of their Antient Liberties :” This was signed by the Earl of *Aran*, as he was then called, but that was his Father’s Title ; for he had no Higher Title in *Scotland* : The Son therefore signed *James Hamilton*, It was also signed by the Earls of *Argyle* and *Glencairn* ; by Lord *James*, afterwards created Earl of *Murray* ; and by the Lords *Boyd*, *Uchiltry*, *Maxwell*, and *Ruthen* ; and by a Son of the Earl of *Huntley*’s ; and a Son of the Earl of *Athol*’s ; both these Families being at that Time Papists. And thus by the Tenor of this Whole Paper, it appears that Religion was not pretended to be the Cause of the War.

Upon the suspending the Authority of the Queen Regent, I will here add a particular Reflection, which will shew what Archbishop *Spotswood*’s Sense was, when he first wrote his History of that Transaction. He gives an Account of the Opinion that *Willock* and *Knox* delivered, when they were called and required to give it, which they did in Favour of that Suspension : For which he Censures the Opinion it self, in these Words. *Howbeit the Power of the Magistrate be limited, and their Office prescribed by God, and that they may likewise fall into great Offences ; yet it is no where permitted to Subjects to call their Princes in Question ; or to make Insurrection against them. God having reserved the Punishment of Princes to himself.* Yet in a fair Manuscript of that History, written with great Care, as for the Press, this Whole Period was first penned quite in another Strain ; *Allowing the States of the Kingdom a Right to restrain their Prince, when he breaks through Rules ; only censuring Clergymens meddling in those Matters :* This is scored thro’, but so that it is still legible, and *Spotswood* interlined with his own Hand the Alteration ; according to which, his Book was printed. This Manuscript belonged to me,



1559. and 42 Years ago, I presented it to the Duke of *Lauderdale*, and shewed him that Passage, on which he made great Reflection. I cannot find out in whose Hands that Manuscript is fallen ; but whosoever has it, will, I hope, justify me in this Particular ; for tho' I am not sure, as to the Words, yet I am very sure they are to this Purpose.

Coll. Numb.  
54.

When this Representation and Petition was brought to the Queen, *Cecil* drew up a State of the Matter, which will be found in the Collection ; putting this as the Question, *Whether it was meet that England should help Scotland to expel the French, or not ?* For the Negative he says, it was against God's Law, to Aid any Subjects against their Natural Prince, or their Ministers : It was also Dangerous to do it : For an Aid secretly given, would be to no Purpose : And an Aid publicly given, would draw on a War : And in that Case the *French* would come to any Composition with the *Scots*, to join with them against *England* : Since they will consent to any Thing, rather than suffer *Scotland* to be united to the Crown of *England* : He adds, It may also be apprehended that the Emperor, the King of *Spain*, the Pope, and the Duke of *Savoy*, with the Potentates of *Italy*, will join with the *French* King, rather than suffer these Two Kingdoms to be joined in one Manner of Religion ; and many within both Kingdoms will not approve of this. But in Opposition to all this, he concludes for assisting the *Scots*.

He lays it down for a Principle, that it is agreeable to the Laws of God, and of Nature, that every Prince and State should defend it self ; not only from Perils that are seen, but from those that may probably come after : To which he adds, that Nature and Reason teach every Person Politick, or other, to use the same Manner of Defence, that the Adversary useth of Offence. Upon these Grounds, he concludes that *England* might, and ought to assist the *Scots* to keep out the *French* : And so earnest was that great Statesman in this Matter, that he prosecutes it very copiously.

His first Reason is that which the *Scots* would never admit, but he might think it proper to offer it to an *English* Council ; that the Crown of *England* had a Superiority over *Scotland*, such as the Emperor had over *Bohemia*, or *Milan*. He next shews that *England* must be in great Danger from the *French*, if they became the absolute Masters of *Scotland*. Upon this he runs out to shew that the *French* had been long Enemies to *England* ; that they had been false, and double in all their Treaties with them these 700 Years : And that the last Peace was forced from them by their Poverty. That *France* could not be Poor above Two Years ; nor could it be long without War ; beside the Hatred that the House of *Guise*, who then governed the *French* Councils, bore to *England*. They call in Question the Queen's Title, and set up their own against it ; and at the Treaty of *Cambray*, they set that Pre-tension on Foot ; but it was then stopt by the Wisdom of the Constable ; yet they used Means at *Rome*, to get the Queen to be declared Illegitimate : Upon which the Bull was brought into *France* : And at the Solemnities, in which the King was killed, the Arms

“ of

“ of *England* and *Ireland* were joined with the Queen of *Scots* Arms.  
 “ The present Embroilment in *Scotland*, is the Stop that now re-  
 “ strains them from carrying these Pretensions further: But as soon  
 “ as they can, they will certainly set them on foot: And the As-  
 “ faulting *England* by the way of *Scotland* is so easy, that it is not  
 “ possible to avoid it, but by Stopping the Progress of that Conquest.  
 “ A War by the way of *Scotland*, puts *France* in no Danger, tho’ it  
 “ should miscarry; but *England* is in the utmost Danger, if it should  
 “ succeed. He concludes, That as the Matter was of the last Im-  
 “ portance, so no Time was to be lost; since the Prejudice, if too  
 “ long delayed, would be irrecoverable.”

1559.

What further Steps were made in the secret Debating of this Point, does not appear to me, but by the Conclusion of the Matter. For the Queen sent Forces, under the Command of the Duke of *Norfolk*, to the Borders of *Scotland*: What followed upon that, is set out fully in the Common Historians, and from them in my former Work.

But a Copy of the Bond of Association, into which the Lords and others in *Scotland* entered, (the Original of which remains still in the Possession of the Dutchess of *Hamilton*) will set out more particularly the Grounds that they went on. It is in the Collection: *Coll. Numb.*  
 And it sets forth, “ That they promised faithfully, and in the Pre-<sup>55</sup>  
 “ fence of God, that they would, to the utmost of their Power, set  
 “ forward the Reformation of Religion, according to God’s Word;  
 “ that the true Preaching of it, might have a free Passage thro’ the  
 “ whole Kingdom; together with the Administration of the Sacra-  
 “ ments. And that they, considering the Misbehaviour of the *French*  
 “ among them, and the intollerable Oppression of the Poor by their  
 “ Soldiers, maintained by the Queen Dowager, under Colour of Au-  
 “ thority, together with the Tyranny of their Captains, and the ma-  
 “ nifest Danger of becoming their Conquest, to which they were  
 “ then reduced, by Fortifications on the Sea-Coast, and other At-  
 “ tempts; do promise to join with the Queen of *England*’s Army,  
 “ then come in to their Assistance, for driving out those their Op-  
 “ pressors, and for Recovering their Ancient Liberty; so that they  
 “ may be ruled by the Laws and Customs of their Country, and  
 “ by the Natives of the Kingdom, under the Obedience of the King  
 “ and Queen their Sovereign. And they promise, that they shall  
 “ hold no private Intelligence with their Enemies, but by the Advice  
 “ of the rest, or at least of Five of their Number. And that they  
 “ shall prosecute this Cause, as if it were the Cause of every one of  
 “ them in particular; and hold all who withstand it, as their En-  
 “ mies; and that they will prosecute them as such, according to the  
 “ Orders of the Council; to whom they refer the Direction of the  
 “ whole Matter, promising in all Things to submit to their Arbitra-  
 “ tion.”

This was first subscribed at *Edinburgh* on the 27th of *April*, in the Year 1560; and is Signed by the Duke of *Chatelherault*, the Earls of *Aran*, *Huntly*, *Argyle*, *Mortoune*, and some others, whose Hands are not legible; and by the Lords *Salton*, *Ruthen*, *Boyd*,  
*Ogilby*,



1559. *Ogilby, Uchiltre*, the Abbot of *Kinlofs*, and the Commendator of *Kilwinning*: About 140 more Subscribed it. This was the Bond that was Signed by those, who were at that Time at *Edinburgh*: And it is probable, that many other Bonds of the same Nature were Signed about the same Time, in other Parts of the Kingdom; but they have not been so carefully preserved, as this has been. The Earl of *Huntly*, tho' he continued still a Papist, signing it, shews, that either the ill Usage he had met with from the Queen Dowager, had shaken him in his Religion, or that Provocation and Interests were then stronger in him than his Principles. But I leave my Conjectures, to go on with the History.

The greatest  
Progress of  
Superstition in  
Queen Mary's  
Reign.

Coll. Numb.  
56.

On the 2d of *November*, *Jewel* being returned from the Circuit, which he was ordered to make, wrote, (in a Letter to *Peter Martyr*, to be found in the Collection) "That the People were much better disposed to the Gospel, than it was apprehended they could be: But he adds, that Superstition had made a most extraordinary Progress in Queen Mary's short Reign. The People were made believe, they had in many Places Pieces of the true Cross, and of the Nails, with which Christ was crucified: So that the Cathedral Churches were Dens of Robbers; and none were more violent and obstinate, than those who had been before of their Body; as if, by that, they would justify their Falling off from them. They had turned them all out. *Harding* went away, and would not change again. *Smith*, who had been a violent Opposer of *Peter Martyr* in *Oxford*, fled towards *Scotland*; But was taken on the Borders, and brought back; and had abjured a Fifth Time, and was then become a violent Enemy to the Papists." In another Letter he tells him, "*Smith* was married; and that being hated and despised by all Sides, he was forced to keep a Publick House." *Jewel* wrote, "That if they had more Hands, Matters would go well: But it was hard to make a Cart go without Horses. He was glad to hear *Peter Martyr* was sent for. But he owns he had his Fears still, that tho' Things were begun well, they would not end so well." He adds, "*We are Islanders in all Respects*. *Oxford* wanted him extremely. The Queen was then Courted, both by the King of *Sweden*, and by *Charles* of *Austria*." It was then given out, that *Sweden* was full of Mines of Gold, and only wanted Skill and Industry to work them: But he writes, "Perhaps the Queen meant to marry one nearer at Hand:" (He gives no other Hint in that Letter, to let it be understood of whom he meant: probably it was *Pickering*; as appears in another Letter.) He concludes, "That tho' Religion did make a quick Progress in *Scotland*, yet that the *French* did not despair of bringing that Kingdom back to their Obedience, and of Restoring their Religion in it."

The Revenues  
of Bishops  
lessened, that  
they may be  
more diligent  
in their Duty.

On the same Day he wrote to *Simler*, who had congratulated him upon the News they had of his being to be promoted to a Bishoprick. He wrote, "That there was yet nothing but a Nomination of him. He adds, We hope our Bishops shall be Pastors, Labourers, and Watchmen. And that they may be better fitted for this, the Great Riches of Bishopricks are to be diminished, and to be reduced

“ reduced to a certain Mediocrity : That so being delivered from that King-like Pomp, and the Noisiness of a Courtly Family, they may live in greater Tranquillity, and may have more Leisure to take care of Christ’s Flock with due Attention.”

1559.

On the 5th of *November*, he wrote, “ That he found Debates raised concerning the Vestments, which he calls the Habit of the Stage, and wishes they could be freed from it. He says, they were not wanting to so good a Cause : But others seemed to love those Things, and to follow the Ignorance of some Priests, who were stupid as Logs of Wood, having neither Spirit, Learning, nor Good Life to commend them ; but studied to recommend themselves by that Comical Habit ; while no Care was taken of Learning, or of Breeding up of Youth. They hoped to strike the Eyes of the People with those ridiculous Trifles. These are the Relicks of the *Amorites* : That cannot be denied. He wishes, that at some Time or other, all these may be taken away and extirpated, to the very deepest Roots. He complains of a Feebleness in the Councils : They still talked of bringing *Martyr* over ; but he feared, that we looked too much toward *Saxony*, to expect that. Some among them, he says, were so much set on the Matter of the Habits, as if the Christian Religion consisted in Garments : But we (says he) are not called to the Consultations concerning that Scenical Apparel : He could set no Value on those Fopperies. Some were crying up a Golden Mediocrity ; he was afraid it would prove a Leaden one.”

*Coll. Numb.*  
57.  
*Jewel's* Opinion of the Disputes concerning the Vestments.

On the 16th of *November* he wrote, in a Letter to be found in the Collection, “ That the Doctrine was every where purely preached. There was in many Places too much Folly, concerning Ceremonies and Masks. The Crucifix continued still in the Queen’s Chapel. They all spake freely against it, but till then without effect. There was a secret Piece of worldly Policy in this, which he did not like. He complains of the uncertain, and Island-like State of their Affairs : All was loose at present. He did not see in what they would settle ; and did not know, but he should be obliged to return back to *Zurick* again.”

*Coll. Numb.*  
58.  
The Queen kept a Crucifix in her Chapel.

In *December* and *January* the Consecration of the Bishops came on. But here a Stop lies in my way. For some Months, the Thread of the Letters to *Zurick*, by which I have been hitherto guided, is discontinued. At this Time, an Ambassador came over from *Ferdinand* the Emperor, with Letters dated the 11th of *February* 1560, proposing a Match between his Son, Arch-Duke *Charles*, and the Queen. He had writ of it to her before, but thought fit to follow these Letters with a formal Embassy. The Originals are yet extant. The Queen wrote an Answer in Form, and signed it : But, it seems, that was, on some Considerations, not thought fit to be sent : For the Original is in the Paper-Office. It will be found in the Collection.

Bishops consecrated.

The Emperor proposes to the Queen a Match with his Son *Charles*.  
*Cotton Libr.*  
*Galba*, 11.

*Collect. Numb.*  
59.

“ The Queen wrote, That examining her own Sentiments in that Matter very carefully, She did not perceive any Inclination to change her Solitary Life ; but found herself more fixed to continue still in it. She hoped the Emperor would favourably receive, and

She excuses herself.



1560.

“ rightly understand what She wrote to him. It might indeed seem  
 “ strange, considering her Age and her Circumstances : But this was  
 “ no new Resolution, nor taken up on the sudden, but was the ad-  
 “ hering to an old settled Purpose. There had been a Time, in  
 “ which her accepting some Honourable Propositions, might have  
 “ delivered her out of very great Dangers and Troubles : On which  
 “ She would make no other Reflections, but that neither the Fear of  
 “ Danger, nor Desire of Liberty, could then move her, to bring  
 “ her Mind to hearken to them. She will not, by a plain Refusal,  
 “ seem to offend him ; yet She cannot give Occasion, by any of her  
 “ Words, to make him think, that She accepts of that, to which She  
 “ cannot bring her Mind and Will.” Dated the 5th of *January*  
 1559. Signed, Your Majesty’s Good Sister and Cousin, *Elizabeth* :  
 Counter-signed, *Rog. Ascham*.

A Conference  
 concerning  
 the Queen’s  
 Crucifix.

Coll. Numb.  
 60.

The first Letter of *Jewel*’s, after his Consecration, is on the 4th of  
*February* 1560. It is in the Collection. He tells *Peter Martyr*,  
 “ they were then engaged in the Question about the Lawfulness of  
 “ having Images in Churches, (which he calls *Lis Crucularia*.) It  
 “ could scarce be believed to what a Degree of Folly some Men, who  
 “ were thought to have a right Judgment of Things, were carried in  
 “ that Matter. There was not one of all those whom he knew, that  
 “ was drawn to be of that Mind, besides *Cox*. There was to be a  
 “ Conference concerning it the Day following. *Parker* and *Cox* on  
 “ the one hand, and *Grindall* and he on the other hand, were to de-  
 “ bate it in the Hearing of some of the Council : He could not but  
 “ laugh within himself, when he thought what grave and solid Rea-  
 “ sonings would be brought out on this Occasion. He was told,  
 “ that it was resolved on to have Crucifixes, of Silver or Tin, set up  
 “ in all Churches ; and that such as would not obey this, would be  
 “ turned out of their Bishopricks : If that was true, he would be  
 “ no longer a Bishop. *White*, Bishop of *Winchester*, *Oglethorpe* of *Car-*  
 “ *lisle*, *Bain* of *Coventry* and *Litchfield*, and *Tonstal* of *Duresme*, were  
 “ lately dead.” In another he writes, “ That *Boner* was sent to the  
 “ Tower, and that he went to see some Criminals that were kept there,  
 “ and called them his *Friends* and *Neighbours* : But one of them an-  
 “ swered, Go, you Beast, into Hell, and find your *Friends* there ;  
 “ for we are none of them. I killed but one Man upon a Provoca-  
 “ tion, and do truly repent of it ; but you have killed many Holy  
 “ Persons, of all sorts, without any Provocation from them, and are  
 “ hardned in your Impenitence.”

The Zeal in  
 singing  
 Psalms.

On the 5th of *March* he writes, “ That a Change appeared now  
 “ more visible among the People. Nothing promoted it more than  
 “ the Inviting the People to Sing Psalms. That was begun in one  
 “ Church in *London*, and did quickly spread itself not only thro’ the  
 “ City, but in the Neighbouring Places : Sometimes at *Paul’s* Cross,  
 “ there will be 6000 People Singing together. This was very grie-  
 “ vous to the Papists : The Children began to laugh at the Priests,  
 “ as they passed in the Streets ; and the Bishops were called Hangmen  
 “ to their Faces. It was said, *White* died of Rage. He commends  
 “ *Cecyl* much.”

*Sands,*

*Sands*, Bishop of *Worcester*, wrote in a Letter on the 1st of *April*, 1560, which will be found in the Collection, "That after he returned from executing the Injunctions and Preaching in the *North*, he was pressed to accept of the Bishoprick of *Worcester*: He saw if he absolutely refused it, the Queen would have been highly offended. He found it more truly a Burden, than an Honour. The Doctrine of the Sacrament was pure, to which he and his Brethren were resolved to adhere firmly, as long as they lived. There was yet a Question concerning Images: The Queen thought that was not contrary to the Word of God, and it seemed convenient to have a Crucifix, with the Blessed Virgin, and Saint *John*, still in her Chapel. Some of them could not bear this: We had, says he, according to our Injunctions taken away all the Images that we found in Churches, and burned them. We see Superstitious People plainly Worship this Idol: Upon this, he had spoken freely to the Queen; with that she was so displeased as to threaten to deprive him: She was since that Time more softened, and the Images were removed: But the Popish Vestments were still used; yet he hoped that should not last long. He laments much that *Peter Martyr* was not sent for. It was easy to guess what it was that hindered it; it was the Pretence of Unity, that gave Occasion to the greatest Divisions.

1560.  
Sands, Bishop of Worcester, much offended at the Image in the Queen's Chapel.  
Coll. Numb. 61.

*Parkhurst* came into *England* in the End of the Year 1559. He went to his Church of *Cleve* in *Gloucestershire*, and kept out of the Way of the Court. He writes, that many Bishops would be glad to change Conditions with him. He heard he had been named to a Bishoprick, but he had dealt earnestly with some Great Men to spare him in that: When he came through *London*, both *Parker*, and a Privy Councillor, had pressed him to accept of one, but he could not resolve on being Miserable.

*Sampson* had been with the other Divines at *Zurick*, and was reckoned by them both a Learned, and a Pious Man: While he was coming to *England* with the rest, he was informed that a Bishoprick was designed for him; so he wrote while he was on his Journey to *Peter Martyr* for his Advice, as will be found in the Collection, "in this, whether it was lawful to swear to the Queen, as Supreme Head of the Church under Christ. He thought Christ was the Sole Head of the Church, and no such Expression of any Inferior Head was found in the Scripture. He thought likewise, that the want of Discipline made that a Bishop could not do his Duty. Many Temporal Pressures lay upon Bishops, such as First Fruits and Tenths, beside the Expence of their Equipage and Attendance at Court: So that little was left for the Breeding up of Youth, for the Relief of the Poor, and other more necessary Occasions to make their Ministry acceptable. The whole Method of electing Bishops was totally different from the Primitive Institution. The Consent either of the Clergy, or People, was not so much as asked. Their Superstitious Dress seemed likewise unbecoming: He wrote all this only to him, not that he expected that a Bishoprick should be offered him, he prayed God that it might never happen. He was resolved to apply himself to preach, but to avoid having any share

Sampson's Exceptions at his being made a Bishop.  
Coll. Numb. 62.



1560.

“ share in the Government, ’till he saw a full Reformation made in  
 “ all Ecclesiastical Functions, both as to Doctrine and Discipline,  
 “ and with Relation to the Goods of the Church. He desires his  
 “ Answer as soon as was possible.

*Peter Martyr* answered his Letter on the 1st of *November*; but what it was, can only be gathered from *Sampson’s* Reply to it: He received it on the 3d of *January*, and answered it on the 6th, 1560. It is in the Collection. “ They were then under sad Apprehensions, “ for which he desires their Prayers in a very solemn Manner. They “ were afraid lest the Truth of Religion should either be overturned, “ or very much darkned in *England*. The Bishops of *Canterbury*, “ *London*, *Ely*, and *Worcester*, were consecrated; *Pilkinton* was de- “ signed for *Winchester*; *Bentham* for *Coventry* and *Litchfield*; and “ *Peter Martyr’s Jewel*, for *Salisbury*.

“ Things still stuck with him, he could neither have ingress, nor  
 “ egress: God knew how glad he would be to find an egress; let  
 “ others be Bishops, he desired only to be a Preacher, but no Bishop.  
 “ There was yet a General Prohibition of all Preaching: And there  
 “ was a Crucifix on the Altar still at Court, with Lights burning be-  
 “ fore it: And though by the Queen’s Order, Images were removed  
 “ out of Churches all the Kingdom over, yet the People rejoiced to  
 “ see this was still kept in the Queen’s Chapel. Three Bishops officiated  
 “ at this Altar; One as Priest, another as Deacon, and a Third as  
 “ Sub-Deacon, all before this Idol, in rich Copes: And there was  
 “ a Sacrament without any Sermon. He adds, that Injunctions  
 “ were sent to Preachers not to use Freedom in the reproof of Vice;  
 “ so he asks what both *Martyr*, *Bullinger*, and *Bernardin* thought of  
 “ this: Whether they looked on it as a Thing indifferent, and what  
 “ they would advise him to do, if Injunctions should be sent out, re-  
 “ quiring the like to be done in all Churches; whether they ought  
 “ to be obeyed, or if the Clergy ought not to suffer Deprivation,  
 “ rather than obey? Some among themselves thought that all this was  
 “ indifferent, and so might be obeyed: He understood that the Queen  
 “ had a great Regard to *Bernardin Ochino*, so he desires that he would  
 “ write to her, to carry on the Work of God diligently. He solemn-  
 “ ly assures them, that she was truly a Child of God. But Princes had  
 “ not so many Friends to their Souls, as they had to their other  
 “ Concerns. He wishes they would all write to her; for she under-  
 “ stood both *Italian*, *Latin*, and *Greek* well. So they might write  
 “ in any Language to her: But if they wrote, they must write as of  
 “ their own Motion, and not as if any Complaints had been writ over  
 “ to them.

He refused a  
 Bishoprick.

“ On the 13th of *May*, he wrote again that a Bishoprick had been  
 “ offered to him, but that he had refused it: And he desires *Peter*  
 “ *Martyr*, to whom he wrote, not to Censure this ’till he knew the  
 “ whole State of the Matter:” But he rejoices that *Parkhurst* was  
 made Bishop of *Norwich*. And by his Letter, it seems *Norwich* was  
 the Bishoprick that was offered to him. *Parkhurst* wrote soon after  
 his Promotion to *Martyr*, and assured him there was no Danger  
 of setting up *Lutheranism* in *England*; only he writes, “ We are  
 “ fighting about Ceremonies, Vestments, and Matters of no Moment.

*Jewel*

*Jewel* wrote to *Peter Martyr* on the 22d of *May*, "That the Church of *Salisbury* was so struck with Thunder, that there was a Clift all down for 60 Feet: He was not got thither; so he could not tell whether Foolish People made Judgments upon this, with Relation to him, or not. He writes, that *Boner*, *Fecknam*, *Pole*, *Scory*, and *Watson*, were all put in Prison for railing at the Changes that were made. The Queen expressed great Firmness and Courage in maintaining, the Establishment she had made in Matters of Religion. He tells him that not only *Cecil* and *Knolls*, desired to be kindly remembered to him, but *Petre* likewise, which perhaps he did not look for." 1560.

On the 17th of *July* he writes to him, that there was a Peace made in *Scotland*, and that the *French* were sent away. *Scotland* was to be governed by a Council of 12 Persons; only all greater Matters were to be referred to a Parliament. He writes, that the Duke of *Holstein* was come over to see the Queen, and was nobly treated by her, and made a Knight of the Garter: The King of *Sweden*'s coming over was still talked of. After *Jewel* had been some Time in his Diocese, he wrote to *Gualter* on the 2d of *November*, 1560, "That he now felt what a Load Government was to him, who had led his Life in the Shade, and at Study: And had never turned his Thoughts to Government; but he would make up in his Diligence what might be otherwise wanting: The Opposition he met with from the Rage of the Papists was incredible." A Peace made in Scotland.

On the 6th of *November*, he wrote that *May*, Dean of *Saint Paul's*, who was designed to be Archbishop of *York* was Dead: It does not appear on what Views that See was long kept void, after the rest were filled. *Parker* was much troubled at this, and wote very earnestly about it to *Cecil*. The Letter will be found in the Collection. Coll. Numb. 64. "There were great Complaints in the *North*: The People there were offended to see no more Care had of them; and for want of Instruction they were become rude: This was like to have an ill Influence on the Quiet and Order of the Country. It was perhaps so long delayed for the Advantage the Queen's Exchequer made by the Vacancy: but if, for want of good Instruction, the People should grow Savage, like the *Irish*, it might run to a far greater Charge to reduce them. Why should any Person hinder the Queen's Zeal to have her People taught to know, and to fear God. If those hitherto named for the *North*, were not liked, or not willing to go thither, he proposed, that some of those already placed might be removed thither. And he named *Young*, Bishop of *Saint David's*, for *York*; and the Bishop of *Rocheſter*, *Guest*, for *Dureſme*: And if any Suspicions were had of any of their Practising to the Prejudice of their Successors, there were Precedents used in former Times to take Bishops bound to leave their Churches in no worse Case than they found them: He had pressed them formerly with relation to those vacant Sees: He saw the Matter was still delayed: He would never give over his Importunity 'till the Thing was done; which he hoped he would instantly promote; out of the Zeal he bore to Souls so dear to Christ." Parker's Care in the Northern Sees.



1560.

The Popish  
Bishops made  
great Alien-  
ations.

This he wrote on the 16th of *October*; so it does not appear if the Design for *May* was then so well fixed as *Jewel* apprehended. The Hint in this Letter of the Practices of Bishops, was occasioned by the ruinous Leases that the Popish Bishops had made; for seeing the Change that was designed, they had by the Law at that Time so Absolute a Power over their Estates, having no Restraints laid on them, but those of their own Canons, that their Leases how Mischievous soever to their Successors, were good in Law. The New Bishops in many Places had scarce necessary Subsistence, or Houses left them, and were to be supported by Dignities given them in *Commendam*: And it was perhaps suggested, that they to procure a little better Subsistence to themselves, might be prevailed on to prolong, or confirm such Leases.

See more of  
this in the  
Annals of the  
Refor.  
Chap. 12.  
Coll. Numb.  
65.

The Archbishop's Importunity had its Effect For in *February* thereafter, *Young* was removed to *York*; and *Pilkinton*, a Learned and Zealous Man, was made Bishop of *Duresme*. And thus the Sees of *England* were filled. *Jewel* in a Letter soon after to *Peter Martyr*, in *February* 1560, which will be found in the Collection: "Wishes  
" that all the Remnants of former Errors, with all the Rubbish, and  
" even the Dust that might yet remain, might be taken away: He  
" wishes they could have obtained it. It seems by this, that their  
" Wishes had not prevailed. The Council of *Trent* was then to be  
" opened again, but the Queen was resolved to take no notice of it.  
" He gives an Account of his Apology that was then set out. This  
has been so often printed, and is so well known, that it is not necessary to enlarge more upon it: As it was one of the First Books published in this Reign, so it was written with that Strength and Clearness, that it, together with the Defence of it, is still to this Day reckoned one of our best Books. In that Letter he writes of the Countess of *Lenox*, the Mother to the Lord *Darnly*, "That she was  
" a more violent Papist than even Queen *Mary* herself. Her Son was  
" gone to *Scotland*, and it was believed he might marry the Queen  
" of *Scotland*: The Earl of *Hartford* had a Son by the Lady *Catharine Gray*; some called him a Bastard, but others affirmed that  
" they were married. If this was true, then according to King *Henry's*  
" Will, he must be the Heir of the Crown. But he adds, *Al!*  
" *Unhappy we, that cannot know under what Prince we are to live.*  
" He complains that Schools are forsaken, and that they were under  
" a great want of Preachers. The few they had were every where  
" well received: He writes in another Letter, that in Queen *Mary's*  
" Time, for want of good Instruction, the *Anabaptists* and *Arians*  
" did much increase; but now they disappeared every where."

*Jewel's* Apology published.

The Popish Clergy, when they saw no Appearance of any new Change, did generally comply with the Laws then made; but in so untoward a Manner, that they made it very visible that what they did was against both their Heart and their Conscience. This put the Bishops on receiving many into Orders, that were not thoroughly well qualified; which exposed them to much Censure. They thought that in that Necessity, Men of good Hearts, that loved the Gospel; tho' not so Learned as might be wished for, were to be brought into the Service of the Church. But Pains was taken, and Methods were laid down,

down, to breed up a more knowing Race of Men, as soon as possible.

1560.

I turn now, to shew how the Affairs of Religion went on, particularly with Relation to *Scotland*, of which mention was made in some of *Jewel's* Letters.

But before I open this, I will give an Account of Two Instruments sent me from *Scotland*, that came not to my Hands, but since the Pages 280 and 281 were printed off; yet they are so important, that as I have put them in the Collection, so I will give a short Account of them here. On the 19th of *April*, Fifteen Days after the Queen of *Scotland* had passed that secret fraudulent Protestation, formerly mentioned, when the Articles of the Marriage were mutually signed, it was not only provided, that the Crown of *Scotland*, in case She should die without Children, should descend to the Duke of *Chatelherault* and his Heirs; the Instrument itself being published in the *French* Collection: But the Dauphin did, on the same Day, set his Seal to a Charter still preserved at *Hamilton*, setting forth the Faith and Engagements that the King his Father had formerly made, to Secure to the Earl of *Aran* the Succession to the Crown of *Scotland*, in case the Queen should die without Children; to which he promises he will pay all Obedience. He confirms and ratifies that Promise, for himself, and his Successors; Promising in Good Faith, (*Bona Fide*), that in that Case, he will not only suffer that Lord to Enjoy that Crown, but he will Assist and Maintain him in it.

The Promise made by his Father, King *Henry*, to which this refers, bears Date the 17th Day of *June*, Anno 1549; and was sent over to *Scotland*, in order to the getting of Queen *Mary* to be sent to *France*. By it the King promised, in the Word of a King, That in case the Queen should die without Children, he would assist the Earl of *Aran*, in the Succession to the Crown, against all that should oppose him. These Instruments I have put in the Collection, as lasting Memorials of the Fidelity and Sincerity of that Court; to give a just Precaution to Posterity in future Ages: By which it will appear, how little Contracts, Promises, and Publick Stipulations are to be depended on: Where a Secret Protestation, lodged in a Clandestine Manner, is set up to make all this void; which, I hope, will not be soon forgotten, or neglected.

But to return from this Digression, which, tho' a little out of its Place, seemed too Important to be omitted.

The Distraction that *France* was in, made it not easy to them to carry on the War of *Scotland*, by reason of the Charge, that the Sending Forces to so great a Distance put them to: Whereas it was but a short March to the *English*, to go the Assistance of the Lords of *Scotland*; so they were willing to make up Matters the best they could by a Treaty. Commissioners were appointed to Treat on both Sides. In the mean while, the Queen Regent of *Scotland* died: So *Cecyl* and *Wotton*, who were employed by the Queen in that Treaty, apprehending the *French* might, upon this Emergent, study to gain more Time, wrote to the Queen for positive Orders.

The French grew weary of carrying on the War in Scotland.



1560.

Coll. Numb.  
68.

A Letter was written to them on the 15th of *June*, Signed by Five Privy-Counsellors; which is in the Collection, taken from the Original. By it it appears, that this Treaty was then a Secret, which they saw must soon break out; so the Persons employed in *Scotland*, advised the Acquainting King *Philip* with it, because they looked on it as brought very near a total Agreement. To this the Queen's Council agreed. Those in *Scotland* apprehended, that perhaps the *French* would, upon the Regent's Death, go away, and leave the Kingdom, without coming to any Agreement. If they should do so, they did order them to advise with the Duke of *Norfolk*, and the Lords of *Scotland* in League with them, how the *French* may be forthwith expelled the Kingdom, without any Loss of Time. For by all the Advertisements they had, they understood that the *French* intended to gain Time, as much as was possible. If the *French* desired to have some of their Colleagues in the Town, to assist them in Managing the Treaty, that was by no means to be granted: But if they desired the Assistance of such *Scottish* Men, as were of their Faction; and if their Friends in *Scotland* consented to it, that seemed reasonable. The rest of the Letter relates to one *Parrys* an *Irishman*.

It was brought  
to a good end.

The Treaty, by Reason of the Weakness of the *French* Force, was soon brought to a Conclusion. The *French* were to be sent away in Three Weeks. An Assembly of the States was to meet, and to settle the Affairs of the Kingdom: It was to be governed by a Council of Twelve Persons; of whom the King and Queen were to name Seven, and the States to chuse Five: And by these, all Affairs were to be governed, they being made accountable to the Parliament. The last Article was, "That the King and Queen should not use the Title " or Arms of *England* and *Ireland* any more."

Coll. Numb.  
69.

When Matters were brought to a Settlement in *Scotland*, the *Scots* set up the Earls of *Morton* and *Glencairn* to the Queen. Their Message will best appear, from the Instructions which will be found in the Collection, Copied from the Original, that is still preserved, and in the Possession of the Dutcheffs of *Hamilton*: By which, "the " Estates of Parliament, considering how the Two Kingdoms lay " joined together; and reflecting on the Inconveniences that they " and their Ancestors had suffered by continual Wars, and on the " Advantages of a perpetual Friendship between them; therefore " they did order a Proposition of Marriage, to be made to the " Queen of *England*, with the Earl of *Aran*; who, after his Father, in Default of Succession of the Queen's Body, was the " next Heir of the Crown of *Scotland*. And they resolved, that " an Embassy should be appointed, to make the Proposition in the " Honourablest Manner that could be devised. They also order " Thanks to be given to the Queen, for the Good Will She has on " all Occasions expressed for their Kingdom; which She had particularly declared of late, by the Support She had given them for " their Relief; by the Means of which, they enjoyed their present Quiet. And they were also ordered to move the Queen, to " send strict Commands to her Wardens, and other Officers on the " Borders, to suppress all broken Men, and to restrain all Thefts."

These

These Instructions were appointed to be Sealed, and Subscribed by Six of every Estate; and that was to be held as Valid, as if all the Estates had Sealed and Subscribed them. 1560.

This Order of Parliament is signed by the Archbishop of St. *Andrews*, the Bishops of *Dunkeld*, *Galloway*, *Dumblane*, *Argyle*, and the Elect Bishop of the *Isles*: And by as many Abbots and Priors; the Prior of St. *Andrews*, afterwards Earl of *Murray*; the Abbot of *Arbroth*, afterwards Marquis of *Hamilton*; the Abbots of *Newbotle*, and *Culros*; the Commendator of *Kilwinning*, and the Prior of *Lochleven*. So many of the Ecclesiastical State of both Ranks concurring, shews, that they rejoiced in the Deliverance that they had from the Servitude, under which the *French* had almost brought them. Signed by the Three Estates.

These Instructions are also Signed by the Duke of *Chatelherault*, who subscribed only *James*; and by the Earls of *Argyle*, *Athol*, *Morton*, *Crawford*, and *Sutherland*; and by the Lords, *Erskine*, *Gordon*, *Salton*, *Hay*, *Uchiltry*, *Innermeth*, *Boyd*, *Lindsay*, *Gray*, and some others, whose Names cannot be read. And by Eight Provosts of Boroughs. But no Seals are in this Noble Instrument; so probably it was an Authentick Duplicate, that was deposited in that Family, to remain as an undoubted Proof, of the Right of Succeeding to the Crown of *Scotland*, if the Queen had left no Issue of her own Body.

To this an Answer was given, which I have put in the Collection, *Collect.* from the Draught of it in *Cecyl's* Hand. "The Queen received the *Numb. 69.* "Hearty Thanks that the Three Estates sent her, very kindly; *The Queen of* "and was glad the Assistance She had given then, was so well ac- *England's An-* cepted by them. She was so well satisfied with the Effects it had, *swer to it.* "that if the like Cause should happen, in which they might need "Aid from her, She assures them it shall not be wanting. The "Queen did perceive the Difference, between the Benefits bestow- "ed by her Father, on many of the Nobility of that Nation, which "were supposed to be to the Prejudice of the Kingdom, and so had "not the Success expected: And those they had received from her, "which were directed to the Safety of the Realm: So the Diversity "in the Bestowing them, had made this Diversity in the Acceptation "of them.

"She received that Proposition of Marriage, as a Mark of the "good Intention of the Estates, for Knitting the Kingdoms in Ami- "ty; in Offering to her the best and choicest Person that they had, "tho' not without danger of the Displeasure of the *French* King. "But the Queen was not disposed presently to Marry; tho' the Ne- "cessity of the Kingdom might, perhaps, constrain her afterwards "to it. Yet She desired, that the Earl of *Aran* might not forbear "to marry on her Account: But that the Amity between the Two "Kingdoms might remain firm; since it was so necessary to their "Preservation, tho' no Marriage were made upon it. The Queen "had heard a very good Report of the Earl of *Aran*, and thought "him a Noble Gentleman of great Worth, and did not doubt, but "he would prove to be such. In the last place, The Queen desired "the States would reflect on former Practices among them, and



1560.

“ would continue in a good Agreement among themselves, and not  
 “ fall into Factions. And She concluded with a Promise, that on  
 “ her Part no Reasonable Thing should be neglected, that might  
 “ tend to the Common Defence of both the Realms, against any  
 “ Common Enemy.”

The Death of  
 Francis the  
 II.

Things went on pursuant to this Treaty ; to which it was not thought the *French* would have any Regard, when their Affairs should be in a better Condition. The Apprehensions of that were soon at an end. In *December* 1560 the Union which that Kingdom had with *France* was totally broke, by the Death of *Francis* the II. so that *Mary*, Queen of *Scotland*, had nothing left, but her own Strength to depend upon. The Treaty of *Leith* being in all other Points executed, the Queen ordered both *Throckmorton*, her Ordinary Ambassador in *France*, and the Earl of *Bedford*, whom She had sent over Extraordinary, to demand Queen *Mary's* Ratification of that Treaty. Which I shall open more particularly, because upon this Occasion, that Jealousy was raised between the Two Queens, that ended so fatally to the one. The Queen of *Scots* used many Shifts, to excuse her not doing it.

Coll. Numb.  
 70.

In a Letter of *Throckmorton's*, of the 16th of *April*, which is in the Collection ; he tells the Queen, “ That having pressed the  
 “ Queen of *Scots* to it ; She said, She had not her Council about  
 “ her, particularly the Cardinal of *Lorain*, her Uncle, by whom  
 “ She was advised in all her Affairs : Nor had She heard from her  
 “ Council in *Scotland*. She promised that when She heard from  
 “ them, and had advised with her Council about her, She would  
 “ give an Answer that should satisfy the Queen. But her Natural  
 “ Brother, the Lord *James*, being come over to her, the Queen  
 “ had commanded *Throckmorton*, to demand again the Confir-  
 “ mation of the Treaty. Upon which, the Ambassador sent a  
 “ Gentleman to know her Pleasure, when he should wait on her,  
 “ to receive it from her Hand. This, as he wrote to her, was de-  
 “ sired by the Queen, as a Mean to make them live hereafter in all  
 “ Love, Peace, and Amity together. And nothing could so de-  
 “ monstrate that Queen's Intention, to entertain this, as the Esta-  
 “ blishing that Knot of Friendship between them, for both their  
 “ Quiet and Comfort, which was at that Time the only Refuge of  
 “ them both.” Of this he sent the Queen, his Mistress, a  
 Copy.

Coll. Numb.  
 71.

On the First of *May*, Mr. *Somer*, whom the Ambassador had sent to *Nancy*, where the Queen of *Scotland* was at that Time, came back with her Answer : Which is in the Collection ; it being the only Original Paper, that ever I saw in her Hand. Dated from *Nancy*, the 22d of *April*, 1561.

The Queen  
 of Scotland  
 did not ratify  
 the Peace.

“ She writes, She was then leaving that Place ; so she could give  
 “ no Answer 'till she came to *Rheims*, where she intended to be at  
 “ the King's Coronation : And she says that Lord *James* was only  
 “ come to do his Duty about her, as his Sovereign Lady, without  
 “ any Charge or Commission whatsoever.” This *Throckmorton* sent to  
 the Queen, together with a Letter from the Cardinal of *Lorain* to  
 the

the same Purpose, which he also sent her in a Letter, which will be found in the Collection; in which he writes, "That though *Somer* had used the best Means he could, to put the *Scottish Queen* in Mind of the Promise she had made to the Earl of *Bedford*, and to *Throgmorton* himself, yet he could get no other Answer from her." The Ambassador was ordered by the Queen not to be present at the Coronation: So he did not know when, or where, he should see her; for it was said she did not intend for some Time to come into the Neighbourhood of *Paris*: He therefore proposed to the Queen to send a Letter of Credit by Mr. *Somer* to that Queen; and with it to order him to go and demand her Answer. By that Queen's Discourse with Lord *James*, it seemed she did not intend to give a plain Answer, but still to shift it off: But he thought the Queen insisting on it by a Person sent Express to stay for an Answer, she would be able to judge from thence what Measures she ought to take. The Queen of *Scotland* had said to the Ambassador, that she intended to give Lord *James* a Commission, with a Charge to look to the Affairs of *Scotland* during her Absence: And he, when he took Leave of her, left one to bring that after him: But that Person was come with Letters from that Queen, but with no Commission: And he understood by him that she had changed her Mind, and would give no such Commission, till she should come to *Scotland* herself: Nor would she dispose of any Thing till then. This was easily seen to be on Design to let all People understand on what Terms they might expect Benefices, Grants, or other Favours from her.

1561.  
Coll. Numb.  
72.

The true Reason why she would not employ Lord *James*, was because she found she could not draw him from his Devotion to the Queen; nor from his Resolution to observe the late Treaty, and League between *England* and *Scotland*: And it is added, that the Cardinal of *Lorain* saw he could not draw him from his Religion, though he used great Persuasions to prevail on him. Upon these Accounts, the Ambassador wrote over, "That he saw he might be much depended on: So he advises the Queen to consider him as one that may serve her to good Purpose, and to use him liberally and honourably. He had made great Acknowledgements of the good Reception he met with as he came through *London*: So he on many Accounts deserved to be both well used, and much trusted. The Queen of *Scotland* had great Expectations from the Popish Party; and from the Earl of *Huntly* in particular. He gives in that Letter an Account of a great Tumult that had then happened at *Paris*, upon Occasion of an Assembly of Protestants for Worship in a private House, in the Suburbs. The Rabble met about the House, threatening Violence: Upon which those within, seeing Persuasions had no Effect, fired and killed 7 or 8 of them. The Court of Parliament sent an Order to suppress the Tumult, and disperse the Multitude. This was plainly contrary to the Edict lately made: But the Ambassador apprehended that greater Disorders would follow: And that I may end all this Matter at once,"

She is Jealous  
of Lord James.

I find



1561.

The Duke of  
Guise studied  
to divert the  
Queen from  
assisting the  
Prince of  
Conde.  
Coll. Numb.  
73.

But in vain.

I find in a Letter of *Jewel's*, that is in the Collection, that the Duke of *Guise* sent to the Princes of *Germany*, to divert them from assisting the Prince of *Conde*; assuring them that he himself was very moderate in the Points of Religion, and had very favourable Thoughts of the *Ausburg* Confession: He studied also to persuade the Queen, that the War which was then breaking out in *France*, was not for Religion; but was a Conspiracy against the Government: Which he hoped she as a Queen would not assist. At the same Time the Queen of *Scotland* sent the Queen a Present of a Diamond of Value, with some very fine Verses made by *Buchanan* then in her Court. She also in her Letters, vowed a perpetual Friendship with her, and wrote that she would pass through *England*. Yet the Queen saw through all this, and was not diverted by it from assisting the Prince of *Conde*. Upon this the Duke of *Guise* did openly charge all the Disorders in *France* on her, as the Principal Author of them: By this the Mask was thrown away, and these Jealousies broke out into an open War. *Jewel* wishes the Queen had begun it sooner, and that the Princes of *Germany* would follow her Example; now that she was engaged, and had sent one to engage them likewise.

By that Time the Queen of *Scotland* had got by Sea into her Kingdom: She alone had her Mass, which was put down all the Kingdom over.

There was this Year an extraordinary bad Season through every Quarter of the Year, and perpetual Rains. There was also much talk of many monstrous Births, both by Women and Beasts, Hogs, Mares, Cows, and Hens: Some Births were without Heads, or Heads of a strange Form; and some without Arms, or Legs: Very probably Things of that Sort were magnified by those who reported them; and, no doubt, they were made the Presages of some dismal Events to be looked for; it being ordinary in all great Changes to enlarge, and even to forge Stories of that sort, on Design to alarm People with the Apprehensions of some signal Judgment to follow after such unusual Warnings. This last Letter being written some Time after the Great Convocation that settled our Reformation, is mentioned here out of its Place, to finish a Matter to which I have nothing here to add.

Proceedings  
in Convoca-  
tion.

But now to return to give an Account of that Famous Meeting of the Clergy. I must first lament that here there is another total Stop in the Correspondence with *Zurick*, that has hitherto furnished me with so many Particulars. I cannot think but that there were copious Accounts of the Progress of Matters in it given to them, if not during the Convocation, in which the Bishops were no doubt much employed, yet at least soon after the Prorogation; which was in the Beginning of *April*: But in all the Volume of Letters that is sent me, I find not one, either during their sitting, or after it was ended, till that I mentioned last, which is of the 14th of *August*. Being then destitute of those Authentick Vouchers, I must gather up what Remains I could find to give a clear Account of the Great Transactions then on Foot.

The imperfect Abstract which I have often vouched, gives us but a very defective Account of their Proceedings. Their first Session was

was on the 13th of *January*, Day, Provost of *Eaton* preached: 1562.  
*Parker* told them they had now in their Hands an Opportunity of Reforming all Things in the Church. The Queen did earnestly desire it, and so did many of the Nobility. He sent them to chuse a Prolocutor, and recommended *Nowel*, Dean of *St. Paul's*, to them. They chose him upon that; and on the 16th of *January*, *Parker* exhorted them to consider against the next Session what Things wanted a Reformation. On the 19th, he sent for the Prolocutor, who came up with Six of the Clergy. He said they had before them some Sheets of Matters to be offered for a Reformation, which were then referred to be considered by a Committee. He also said that the Articles set forth in a Synod at *London*, in King *Edward's* Time, were likewise before a Committee to be considered, and if need was, to be corrected by them. On the 20th, the Archbishop and Bishops were for the Space of Three Hours consulting secretly about those Articles. On the 22d, they were again for Three Hours considering the same Matter. On the 25th, they were Two Hours. And on the 27th, they were for Three Hours more upon the same Matter. And on the 29th of *January*, all in the Upper-House agreed unanimously in settling the Articles of Religion, and they subscribed them.

The Differences between these Articles, and those set forth by King *Edward*, are very particularly marked in the Collections, added to my Second Volume. The most material is the leaving out that express Declaration that was made against the Corporal Presence of Christ in the Sacrament, which I then thought was done in compliance with the Opinion prevalent among the People of the Popish Persuasion, who were strangely possessed with the Belief of such a Presence; but I am convinced by the Letters sent me from *Zurick*, that in this great Regard was likewise had to the *Lutheran* Churches, with whom a Conjunction was much endeavoured by some: So that perhaps this was one Consideration that made it be thought convenient to suppress the Definition then made in this Matter by the Convocation: But it does no way appear to me, whether these Words were suppressed by the Consent of the Convocation; or whether the Queen ordered it to be done, either by a direct Command: or by denying to give her Assent to that Part of the Article.

I must also add, that the Homily *against wilful Rebellion*, for that is its true Title, was not drawn up 'till some Years after this Convocation had settled those Articles; in which the Title of the Homilies are set forth, though it is added in the Manuscript to the Rest, with the Title *against Rebellion*. It is plain both by the Body of the Homily, and by the Prayer at the End of it, that it was penned after the Rebellion that was raised by the Earls of *Northumberland* and *Westmorland* many Years after this. And while there were Wars abroad on the Account of Religion. This I do not write as disagreeing in any Part from the Doctrine delivered in that Homily, but only as a Historian, in order to the setting Matters of Fact in a true Light.

But now I go on as the Minutes, or rather the Abstracts lead me. When the great Matter of the Articles was settled; the Bishops of



1562. London, Winchester, Lincoln, and Hereford, were appointed to draw Articles of Discipline. On the 3d of February, the Archbishop and Bishops were in a Secret Conference for the Space of Three Hours. On the 5th of February a Committee was appointed to examine the Catechism. Then the Prolocutor with Six of the Clergy, brought up the Articles of Religion, that had been sent by the Archbishop to the Lower-House : Many had already subscribed them, but he proposed that such as had not yet done it, might be required either to subscribe them in the Lower-House, or to do it in the Presence of the Bishops. Upon this the Upper-House ordered that the Names of those who had not subscribed them, might be laid before them next Session : On the 10th, the Prolocutor with Eight of the Clergy came up and told the Bishops, that many had subscribed since their last Meeting : Upon that the Bishops renewed their former Order.

Coll. Numb.

74.  
Great Debates concerning some Alterations in the Book of Common Prayer.

A Practice common among Papists of knocking on their Breasts, saying *Culpamea*, at the Elevation.

On the 13th, there was some Treaty concerning the Subsidy ; but on that Day, and it seems, on some Days following, there were very warm Debates in the Lower-House, of which I shall give a particular Account, from a Copy taken from the Minutes of the Proceedings of the Lower-House, which will be found in the Collection. On the 13th Day, Six Articles were offered to the House, which follow ; First, " That all Holy-Days, except Sundays, and the Feasts that related to Christ, should be abrogated. Second, That in the Common-Prayer, the Minister should always turn his Face towards the People, so as to be heard by the People, that they might be Edified. Third, That the Ceremony of the Cross in Baptism may be omitted, as tending to Superstition. Fourth, That forasmuch as diverse Communicants were not able to Kneel during the Time of Communion, for Age, Sickness, and other Infirmities ; and some also do Superstitiously both Kneel and *Knock*, that the Order of Kneeling may be left to the Discretion of the Ordinary within his Jurisdiction. Fifth, That it be sufficient for the Minister in Time of saying Divine Service, and Ministering the Sacraments to use a Surplice ; and that no Minister say Service, or Minister the Sacraments, but in a comely Garment, or Habit. The Sixth and last is, That the Use of Organs be removed." The Words are strictly as I took them from the Copy of the Journal : But the Sense of the 5th is not clear, except we suppose the Word *once* to have come after *the Minister* ; so that it was proposed that it should be sufficient *once* to use the Surplice.

There arose great Disputes concerning these Propositions ; some approving, and others rejecting them : And it was proposed by some, to refer the Matter to the Archbishop and Bishops. Many protested, that they could in no Manner consent to any one of them ; since they were contrary to the Book of Common-Prayer, that was ratified by an Act of Parliament : Nor would they admit of any Alteration of the Orders, Rules, Rites or Regulations, already settled by that Book. There were Publick Disputations between Learned Men, some approving, and others condemning the Propositions. Thirteen Persons were named, as the Disputants. In Conclusion, the House was divided, and counted. Forty three voted for the Propositions, and

and Thirty-five voted against them, and that no Change should be made in the Book of Common-Prayer then established. But when the Proxies were counted, those who were for the Propositions, were in all Fifty-eight; and those who were against them, were Fifty-nine. So that they were agreed to by a Majority of Eight, of those who were present, and who had heard the Disputations; yet those were out-voted by a Majority of One Vote, by the Proxy of an absent Person. All their Names are set down in the Paper. One Thing observable, is, That in this Minute it is added, that those who rejected the Articles, seemed to go chiefly on this Ground; That they were contrary to the Authorized Book of Common-Prayer: As if this had been the Assuming an Authority, to alter what was settled by the Legislature. It is not to be imagined, but if the Affirmative Vote had prevailed, that it could not be intended to have any other Effect, but to make an Address to the Parliament, to alter the Book in those Particulars. I have represented this Matter as I found it, and will not make any Judgment upon it, either on the one Side, or the other; but will leave that to the Reader, and go on with what remains in the Abstract.

1562.  
But by one Proxy it was carried, that none should be made.

This Debate in the Lower-House put a Stop to the Business of the Convocation for Six Days, in which they only treated of the Subsidy. On the 19th of *February* some Articles were communicated to the Lower-House; and they were ordered to bring them back, with their Observations on them. These seem to relate to Benefices and Dilapidations. And they were ordered to enquire, how many Benefices were then vacant. On the 22d, the Subsidy was agreed to. On the 24th, the Prolocutor being absent, his Surrogate, with the Clergy, were called up; and the Ingrossed Bill of Subsidy was read to them, and they all unanimously agreed to it.

On the 26th, A *Book of Discipline* was brought to the Upper-House, by the Prolocutor, with Ten of the Clergy; to which, as it was then said, the whole Clergy did unanimously consent. This was referred to the Archbishop, with the Bishops of *London, Winchester, Chichester, Hereford, and Ely*. On the 1st of *March*, the Prolocutor brought up some Additional Articles, which they desired might be added to the *Book of Discipline*, that they had formerly brought up. The Archbishop gave them the Book back again; and ordered them to bring it back, together with the Additions they had made to it.

On the 3d of *March*, the Prolocutor brought up the *Catechism*; to which, he said, the House did unanimously agree: The Considering of it was committed to the Bishops of *Winchester, Hereford, Lincoln, and Coventry*. (This seems to be the Catechism, drawn by *Nowel*, Dean of *St. Paul's*.) After that, there was a Conference among the Bishops, for the Space of Two Hours. On the 5th of *March*, the Prolocutor brought up the *Book of Discipline*, with some Additional Chapters: One only is named, *Of Adultery*, with an &c. On the 10th, there was a Conference among the Bishops for Two Hours; and on the 12th, for Two Hours more; and on the 16th, for other Two Hours; and on the 19th, for Two Hours more. After that, nothing is marked, but several Prorogations, till the 10th of



1562. of April, that the Royal Writ came for the Prorogation. And this is all that remains of this Great Convocation.

It does not appear, what that *Book of Discipline* was. In one of the *Zurick* Letters, as shall be told afterwards, it is said, That some Things agreed to in this Synod, were afterwards suppressed. This, I suppose, relates to that *Book of Discipline*: But whether this was the Reformation of the Ecclesiastical Laws, prepared by *Cranmer*, and others; or whether it was modelled in any other manner, cannot now be certainly known.

But, to this Account that I have given, I will add some other Particulars, that the Diligent Mr. *Strype* has laid together; referring my Reader, for a more Copious Account of them, to his *Annals*.

Other Things  
prepared for  
the Convoca-  
tion.

“ It was designed, to have *Jewel's* Apology joined to the Articles :  
“ Which Archbishop *Parker* intended should be in all Cathedral and  
“ Collegiate Churches, and also in Private Houses.

“ Degrees of Punishment were proposed, for all those who should  
“ Preach, Write, or Speak, in Derogation or Contempt of this Book,  
“ for the 1st, 2d, and 3d Offence.

“ It was proposed, That all Vestments, Copes and Surplices, should  
“ be taken away; that none but Ministers should baptize: that the  
“ Table for the Sacrament should not stand Altar-wise; that Organs  
“ and Curious Singing should be removed.

“ That Godfathers and Godmothers should not answer in the  
“ Child's Name; but should recite the Creed, and desire that the  
“ Child may be baptized in that Faith. Here, on the Margin, *Par-*  
“ *ker* writes, *Let this be considered*.

“ That none should be Married, but after the Banns have been  
“ asked for Three Sundays, or Holidays. On the Margin, *Parker*  
“ writes, *Priests solemnizing Matrimony, without Testimonial of Banns,*  
“ *to suffer grievous Punishment*.

“ That the Queen and Parliament be prayed to renew the Act, for  
“ Empowering Thirty-two Persons to gather Ecclesiastical Laws,  
“ and to review those appointed in *K. Edward's* Time.

“ That all Peculiar Jurisdictions should be extinguished, so that  
“ the whole Diocese be put under the Jurisdiction of the Bishop;  
“ that no Appeal shall lie, in Cases of Correction. On the Margin  
“ *Parker* writes, *Let this be thought on*.

“ That in every Cathedral, a Divinity Lecture should be read  
“ Thrice a Week.

“ That the Apparel of the Clergy should be Uniform. That no  
“ Person, not in Priests Orders, shall hold any Ecclesiastical Dignity  
“ above a Year, if he does not take Priests Orders. *Parker* writes,  
“ *Too much: And let it be thought on*.

“ That none be capable of a Dispensation for a Plurality of Be-  
“ nefices with Cure of Souls, if he is not at least a Master of Arts,  
“ and they not beyond Twelve Miles Distance. *Parker* writes, *Let*  
“ *it be considered, whether this ought to be restrained to Degrees*.

“ That

“ That if any has Two Cures, he shall reside constantly on one, unless at some Times to go and Preach in the other ; under the Pain of Losing the greater Benefice. *Parker adds, Let this be thought on.* 1562.

“ That no Patron Sell, or Assign the next Advowson ; and that no Grant be made of any Benefice, till it is void.

“ That all Incumbents, or Curates, shall, on *Sundays* in the Afternoon, offer to teach the Children of the Parish the Catechism.”

The next Paper is, of *Remedies, for the Poverty of Ministers Livings* : But the *Remedies*, how good soever, were not found practicable ; so all this Matter was let fall.

With this Convocation, my Design of Continuing the History of the Reformation is now concluded. And here I once intended to have ended my Work : But the Letters sent me from *Zurick*, give me such a full and particular Account, of the first Unhappy Breach that was made in our Church, with so many Curious Incidents, that I am by these invited to set that Matter out in a clear Light, since I have it before me, in the Letters of the most eminent of our Bishops.

A further Continuation of the History, beyond my former Work.

There was a great Variety of Sentiments among our Reformers, on this Point ; *Whether it was fit, to retain an External Face of Things, near to what had been practised in the Times of Popery ; or not ?* The doing that, made the People come easily in, to the more Real Changes that were made in the Doctrines, when they saw the outward Appearances so little altered : So this Method seemed the safer, and the readier way to wean the People, from the Fondness they had for a Splendid Face of Things, by that which was still kept up. But on the other Hand, it was said, That this kept up still the Inclination in the People to the former Practices : They were by these made to think, that the Reformed State of the Church did not differ much from them ; and that they imitated them. And they apprehended, that this outward Resemblance made the Old Root of Popery to live still in their Thoughts ; so that if it made them conform at present more easily to the Change that was now made, it would make it still much the easier for them to fall back to Popery : So, for this very Reason, they stood upon it ; and thought it better to put Matters in as great an Opposition to the Practices of Popery, as was possible, or convenient.

A Controversy about the Use of Things indifferent.

The Queen had, in her first Injunctions, ordered the Clergy to wear Seemly Garments, and Square Caps ; adding, That this was only for Decency, and not to ascribe any Worthiness to the Garments : But when the *Act of Uniformity* was settled, whereas in the *Liturgy* passed in the Second Year of King *Edward*, *Copes*, and other Garments were ordered to be used ; but in the Second Book, passed in the 6th Year of that King, all was laid aside except the *Surplice* : Yet the Queen, who loved Magnificence in every Thing, returned back to the Rules in King *Edward's* First Book, till other Order should be taken therein by the Queen. There was likewise a Clause



1564.

put in the *Act of Uniformity*, empowering the Queen, to *Ordain and Publish such further Ceremonies and Rites, as might be for the Advancement of God's Glory, the Edifying of his Church, and the due Reverence of Christ's Holy Mysteries and Sacraments.*

Great Diversity  
in Practice.

The Matter being thus settled, there followed a great Diversity in Practice: Many conforming themselves in all Points to the Law; while others did not use either the Surplice, or the Square Caps and Hoods, according to their Degree. This visible Difference began to give great Offence, and to state Two Parties in the Church. The People observed it, and run into Parties upon it. Many forsook their Churches, of both Sides: Some, because those Habits were used; and some, because they were not used. It is likewise suggested, that the Papists insulted, upon this Division among the Protestants; and said, it was impossible it should be otherwise, till all returned, to come under One Absolute Obedience.

The Queen  
wrote to the  
Archbishop of  
Cant. to bring  
all to an Uni-  
formity.

Upon this, the Queen, in *January 1564*, wrote to the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, "reflecting (not without some Acrimony of Style) on these Diversities; as if they were the Effect of some Remissness in him, and in the other Bishops; Requiring him, that, with the Assistance of other Bishops, Commissioned by Her for Causes Ecclesiastical, he should give strict Orders, that all Diversities and Varieties, both among the Clergy and People, might be reformed and repressed; and that all should be brought to one Manner of Uniformity, thro' the whole Kingdom, that so the People might quietly honour and serve God."

Upon that, some of the Bishops met; Six in all. Of these, Four were upon the Ecclesiastical Commission: The Archbishop of *Canterbury*, the Bishops of *London*, *Ely*, and *Rochester*: And with these joined, the Bishops of *Winchester* and *Lincoln*. They agreed on some Rules and Orders meet to be observed, not as equivalent to the Word of God, nor as Laws that did bind the Conscience, from the Nature of the Things considered in themselves; or, as that they did add any Efficacy, or more Holiness to the Publick Prayers and Sacraments; but as Temporary Orders, merely Ecclesiastick, and as Rules concerning Decency, Distinction, and Order for the Time.

Orders set out  
by the Bishops.

They begun with Articles of Doctrine and Preaching: "That all Preachers should study to preach to Edification, and handle Matters of Controversy with Sobriety and Discretion; exhorting People to receive the Sacrament frequently, and to continue in all Obedience to the Laws, and to the Queen's Injunctions. All former Licences are declared void; but are to be renewed, to such as the Bishops thought meet for the Office; they paying only a Groat for the Writing. If any should preach unsound Doctrine, they were to be denounced to the Bishop, but not to be contradicted in the Church. All were to be required to preach once in Three Months, either in Person, or by one in their Stead. Such as were not Licensed to Preach, were to Read the Homilies, or such other necessary Doctrine as should be prescribed. In the Sacrament, the Principal Minister was to wear a Cope; but at all other Prayers, only Surplices. That Deans and Prebendaries  
" should

“ should wear a Hood in the Choir, and Preach with their Hood :  
 “ all Communicants were to receive the Sacrament kneeling : Then  
 “ follow Rules about tolling the Bell when People Die ; about the  
 “ Altar ; the Font ; and who may be Godfathers in Baptism : That  
 “ no Shops be opened on *Sundays* : That Bishops shall give Notice  
 “ against the Day of giving Orders, that all Men may except against  
 “ such as are Unworthy : That none be Ordained, but within their  
 “ own Diocese, except those who have Degrees in the University.  
 “ Rules follow for Licences, for Archdeacons to appoint Curates to  
 “ get some Texts of the New Testament by Heart ; and at the next  
 “ Synod to hear them rehearse them. Ordinaries were to guard  
 “ against Simoniackal Practices, and none were to Marry within the  
 “ *Levitical* Degrees : Then follow Rules of their wearing Apparel,  
 “ Gowns and Caps : They were to wear no Hats, but in Travelling :  
 “ But those who were deprived, might not wear them. To this  
 “ they added a Form of Subscription to be required of all that were  
 “ to be admitted to any Office, or Cure, in the Church ; to this  
 “ Effect, that they should not Preach, but by the Bishop’s Special  
 “ Licence ; that they should read the Service distinctly and audibly ;  
 “ that they should keep a Register Book, and use such Apparel, spe-  
 “ cially at Prayers, as was appointed ; that they should endeavour  
 “ to keep Peace and Quiet in their Parishes. That they should every  
 “ Day read a Chapter in the Old and New Testament, considering  
 “ it well, to the Increase of their Knowledge ; and in Conclusion,  
 “ that they should Exercise their Office to the Honour of God, and  
 “ the Quiet of the Queen’s Subjects ; and observe an Uniformity in  
 “ all Laws and Orders already established ; and that they should use  
 “ no Sort of Trade, if their Living amounted to Twenty Nobles, or  
 “ upwards.”

1564.

The Proceedings here in *England*, are fully collected by Mr.  
*Strype* ; so as to these, I refer my Reader to the Account given by him,  
 which is both full and impartial. I shall only give the Abstracts of  
 the Letters that passed in this Matter between our Bishops and *Bul-*  
*linger*, *Gualter*, and the other Divines in *Zurick*. These Foreign  
 Divines did not officiously, nor of their own Motion intermeddle in  
 this Matter. It began in *January* 1564-5, for then the Queen wrote  
 to the Archbishop, and in *March* the Order was settled by the Arch-  
 bishop and Bishops : But when the Bishops saw the Opposition that  
 many were making to this, *Sampson* and *Humphreys* being the most  
 Eminent of those who opposed it, who were in great Reputation, par-  
 ticularly in the University of *Oxford*, where the one was Dean of  
*Christ’s Church*, and the other was President of *Magdalen’s*, and Divi-  
 nity Professor : And they were much distinguished for their Learning,  
 Piety, and Zeal in Religion : Upon this, *Horn*, Bishop of *Winchester*,  
 wrote on the 16th of *July* to *Gualter*, and stated the Matter clearly  
 to him : I have put his Letter in the Collection, though it is already  
 printed ; but I thought it convenient to insert it, since the Letters  
 that are to follow depend upon it.

*Horn* Bishop  
 of *Winchester*  
 writes to *Zu-*  
*rick* upon these  
 Diversities in  
 Practice.

Coll. Numb.

75.

After he had mentioned some of *Gualter’s* Works, he commends  
 those of *Zurick* for not being imposed on by the Artifices of the  
*French* ; in which he hopes those of *Bern* would follow the Example  
 that



1565. that they had set them; he comes to the Affairs of *England*, “Where  
 “ they were still in fear of the Snares of the Papists, who took great  
 “ Advantage from a Question lately raised about Vestments, to say  
 “ Protestants could never agree together: The Act of Parliament  
 “ was made before they were in Office; so that they had no Hand  
 “ in making it: By it the Vestments were enacted, but without any  
 “ Superstitious Conceit about them, the contrary being expressly  
 “ declared. What was once acted in Parliament could not be alter-  
 “ ed, but by the same Authority. The Bishops had obeyed the  
 “ Law, thinking the Matter to be of its Nature Indifferent: And  
 “ they had Reason to apprehend, that if they had deserted their Sta-  
 “ tions upon that Account, their Enemies might have come into  
 “ their Places. Yet upon this, there was a Division formed among  
 “ them: Some thought they ought to suffer themselves to be put  
 “ from their Ministry, rather than obey the Law; others were of  
 “ a different Mind. He desires that he would write his Opinion of  
 “ this Matter, as soon as was possible. They were in hope to pro-  
 “ cure an Alteration of the Act in the next Parliament; but he ap-  
 “ prehended there would be a great Difficulty in obtaining it; by  
 “ Reason of the Opposition the Papists would give them; for they  
 “ hoped that if many should leave their Stations, they might find  
 “ Occasions to insinuate themselves again into the Queen’s Fa-  
 “ vour.”

*Coll. Numb.*

76.  
 Answers from  
 thence, justifi-  
 fyng those  
 who obeyed  
 the Laws.

It seems he wrote a Letter in the same Strain to *Bullinger*, as will  
 appear by his Answer of the 3d of *November*, which will be found  
 in the Collection: “He writes, that he had heard of the Division  
 “ among them from others; but not knowing the whole State of  
 “ the Question, he was not forward to give his Opinion, till he  
 “ had his Letter. He laments this unhappy Breach among them:  
 “ He approves their Zeal, who wished to have the Church purged  
 “ from all the Dregs of Popery: On the other Hand, he commends  
 “ their Prudence, who would not have the Church to be forsaken,  
 “ because of the Vestments. The Great End of the Ministry was  
 “ Edification; and that was not to be abandoned, but upon very  
 “ good Grounds: Especially when the deserting their Stations was  
 “ like to make way for much worse Things: And that they saw ei-  
 “ ther Papists, or *Lutherans*, would be put in their Places, and then  
 “ Ceremonies would be out of measure increased. No doubt, they  
 “ had brought many Persons of all Sorts to love the Purity of Do-  
 “ ctrine; but what a Prejudice would it be to these to open such a  
 “ Door, by which Swarms of Abuses might creep in among them:  
 “ This they ought carefully to prevent: As for those who first made  
 “ those Laws, or were Zealous Maintainers of them, he confesses he  
 “ is not pleased with them. They acted unwisely, if they were  
 “ truly of the Reformed side: But if they were only disguised Ene-  
 “ mies, they were laying Snares with ill Designs: Yet he thinks  
 “ every Thing of that Sort ought to be submitted to, rather than  
 “ that they should forsake their Ministry: And since it was declared  
 “ that those Vestments were to be used without any superstitious  
 “ Conceit, he thinks that ought to satisfy Men’s Consciences. But in  
 “ the

“ the mean while he proposes to them, to press the Queen and the Nobility to go on and compleat a Reformation, that was so Gloriously begun. He knew that in many Places Questions were at that Time moved, concerning the Extent of the Magistrates Authority ; he wishes these might be every where let alone : Certainly Matters of that Nature ought not to be meddled with in Sermons : There may be an Occasion to debate about them in Parliament, and it may be proper to speak to the Queen, and to her Counsellors, in Private about them. Upon the Whole Matter he concludes, that as on the one Hand he would be tender in dealing with Men of Weak Consciences ; so on the other Hand he proposes St. Paul's Rule in such Cases, of *becoming all Things to all Men* : He circumcised *Timothy*, that he might not give Offence to the *Jews* ; though at the same Time he condemns those who were imposing the Yoke of the *Judaical* Law, as necessary in the Beginnings of Christianity.

1565.

When *Sampson* and *Humphreys* understood in what a Strain *Bullinger* and *Gualter* had written concerning the Vestments, they wrote on the 16th of *February* a copious Account of the Grounds, on which they founded their Refusal to obey these Orders. Their Letters came to *Bullinger* on the 26th of *April* ; and he answered them on the 1st of *May*. This will be found in the Collection. “ He puts them in mind of *Peter Martyr's* Opinion in a like Matter, when he was at *Oxford* ; to which he could add nothing. He could not approve of any Persons officiating at an Altar, on which there was a Crucifix ; and in a Cope, on the Back of which there was a Crucifix. He tells them how both he and *Gualter* had answered *Horn's* Letter on the Subject : And he sent them Copies of these Letters. He would be extreme sorry, if these did not give them Satisfaction. He prayed earnestly to God for them. He had a great Dislike to all Controversies of that sort ; and did not willingly meddle in them : He did think that Laws might be made prescribing decent Habits to the Clergy, which may be reduced to that Branch of St. Paul's Character of a Bishop, that he ought to be *σοφικός*, which may be rendered decent, as well as we have it of good Behaviour. Nor was this the reviving the *Levitical* Law. Every Thing is not to be called *Levitical* because it was practised by the *Jews*. The Apostles commanded the Converts to Christianity, to abstain from Things strangled, and from Blood. The maintaining the Clergy by the Tythes, came from Laws given to *Jews* ; and from them we have the singing of Psalms among us : So Things are not to be rejected because of some Conformity to the *Mosaical* Institution. Nor can this be called a Conformity to Popery : Nor is every Thing practised among them to be rejected on that Account ; otherwise we must not use their Churches, nor pronounce the Creed ; nor use the Lord's Prayer ; since all these are used by them. It was in this Case expressed, in the Orders set out lately by them, that the Habits were not enjoined on the Superstitious Conceits of the Papists : They were only to be used in Obedience to the Law. It favours too much of a *Jewish*, or of a Monastick Temper, to put Religion in such Matters : If it

*Bullinger* writes to those who would not obey them.

Coll. Numb. 77.



1565.

“ is pretended that the obeying Laws in Matters indifferent, was  
 “ the giving up our Christian Liberty ; that would go a great way  
 “ to the denying all Obedience, and might provoke the Magistrate  
 “ to lay yet heavier Loads on them, Habits peculiar to the Clergy  
 “ was an Antienter Practice than Popery itself: St. *John* is said to  
 “ have carried on his Head some-what like a Mitre: And Mention  
 “ is made of St. *Cyprian*’s having a peculiar Garment, called a *Dal-*  
 “ *matica*. St. *Chrysostom* speaks of their White Garments. *Tertul-*  
 “ *lian* tells us, that the Heathens converted to Christianity, quitted  
 “ their *Toga*, the *Roman* upper Garment, and used the *Pallium*, or  
 “ Cloak. He wishes there were no Impositions on the Clergy in  
 “ such Matters: Yet since this was an Ancient Habit, and was now  
 “ enjoined, without making it a Matter of Religion; he wishes  
 “ they would not set too great a Value upon it, but yield somewhat  
 “ to the present Time; and that they would consider it as a Thing  
 “ indifferent, and not affect to dispute too subtilly about it; but to  
 “ behave themselves Modestly. They had put a Question to him,  
 “ whether any Thing may be prescribed that is not expressed in  
 “ Scripture: He did not approve of laying on a Load of such Things  
 “ on Peoples Necks; but some Things might be appointed for Order  
 “ and Discipline. Christ kept the Feast of the Dedication, tho’  
 “ appointed by no Law of God. If it is said the Things commanded  
 “ are not Necessary, and are of no Use, yet they not for that to be  
 “ condemned, nor are Schisms to be raised on that Account: Many  
 “ Things are again repeated in this Letter, that were in his Letter to  
 “ *Horn*.”

That Letter  
 was printed  
 in *England*.

A Copy of this was sent to *Horn*, and both *Grindal* and he apprehending the good Effect that the Printing it might have, in settling the Minds of many that were much shaken by the Opposition that was made to the Orders that had been set out, printed it here. So that it was not necessary for me to put it in the Collection, if I did not intend to lay the chief Papers relating to this Matter so together, as to set it all in a clear Light.

Upon this *Samson* and *Humphreys* wrote over to *Zurick*, complaining of the Printing of their Letter, and carrying their Complaints against the Constitution of the Church much further, than to the Matter of the Vestments: They complain of the Musick, and Organs; of making Sponsors in Baptism answer in the Child’s Name; of the Crosse in Baptism; of the Court of Faculties; and the Paying for Dispensations, all which will appear fully in a Letter of theirs in the Collection, which they wrote to them in *July*: “ They acknow-  
 “ ledge their Letter had not fully satisfied them: They do not  
 “ think the prescribing Habits to the Clergy meerly a Civil Thing;  
 “ they think St. *Paul*’s *κοσμος* belongs to the Ornaments of the Mind.  
 “ And add, how can that Habit be thought decent, that was brought  
 “ in to dress up the Theatrical Pomp of Popery? The Papists glo-  
 “ ried in this our Imitation of them. They do approve of setting  
 “ Rules concerning Order, but that ought not to be applied to this, that  
 “ overturns the Peace and Quiet of the Church, in Things that are  
 “ not either Necessary, or Useful; that do not tend to any Edifica-  
 “ tion, but serve to recommend those Forms, which all do now  
 abhor.

Coll. Numb.  
 78.

“ abhor. The Papists themselves glory in this, that these Habits  
“ were brought in by them : for which they vouch *Otho's* Constitu-  
“ tion, and the *Roman* Pontifical. They were not against the Re-  
“ taining any Thing that was good, because it had been abused in  
“ Popery.

1565.

“ They affirm, that in King *Edward's* Time the Surplice was not  
“ universally used, nor pressed ; and the Copes then taken away, are  
“ now to be restored. This is not to extirpate Popery, but to plant  
“ it again ; and, instead of going forward, is to go back. It was  
“ known, how much Virtue and Religion the Papists put in the Sur-  
“ plice ; and at this Day it is held in as great Esteem, as the Monks  
“ Habits were wont to be. The Use of it, may, by degrees, bring  
“ back the same Superstition. They did not put Religion in Ha-  
“ bits ; they only opposed those that did : And they thought, that  
“ it gave some Authority to Servitude, to depart from their Liberty.  
“ They hated Contention, and were ready to enter into friendly Con-  
“ ferences about this Matter. They do not desert their Churches,  
“ and leave them exposed to Wolves ; but to their great Grief, they  
“ are driven from them. They leave their Brethren, to stand and  
“ fall to their own Masters ; and desire the same favourable For-  
“ bearance from them, tho' in vain hitherto. It was by other Mens  
“ Persuasion, that the *Queen* was irritated against them : And now,  
“ to support these Orders, all that is pretended, is, that they are  
“ not unlawful : It is not pretended, that there is any Thing good,  
“ or expedient, in the Habits. The Habits of the Clergy are Visible  
“ Marks of their Profession ; and these ought not to be taken from  
“ their Enemies. The Antient Fathers had their Habits ; but not  
“ peculiar to Bishops, nor distinct from the Laity. The Instances of  
“ *St. John*, and *Cyprian*, are singular. In *Tertullian's* Time, the *Pal-  
“ lium* was the Common Habit of all Christians. *Chrysostom* speaks of  
“ *White Garments*, but with no Approbation ; He rather finds Fault  
“ with them. They had cited *Bucer* ; but he thought, that the  
“ Orders concerning Habits, by reason of the Abuse of them in the  
“ Church of *England*, ought to be taken away, for a fuller Decla-  
“ ration of their Abhorrence of *Antichrist*, for Asserting the Christian  
“ Liberty, and for Removing all Occasions of Contention. They  
“ were far from any Design of making a Schism, or of Quarrelling.  
“ They will not condemn Things indifferent, as Unlawful : They  
“ wish, the Occasion of the Contention were removed, that the Re-  
“ membrance of it might be for ever buried. They, who condemned  
“ the Papal Pride, could not like a Tyranny in a Free Church. They  
“ wish, there might be a Free Synod, to Settle this Matter ; in which  
“ Things should not be carried according to the Mind of One or  
“ Two Persons. The Matter now in Debate, had never been settled  
“ by any General Decree of a Council, or of any Reformed Church.  
“ They acknowledge, the Doctrine of this Church was now pure ;  
“ and why should there be any Defect in any Part of our Worship ?  
“ Why should we borrow any Thing from Popery ? Why should  
“ they not agree in Rites, as well as in Doctrine, with the other  
“ Reformed Churches ? They had a good Opinion of their Bishops,  
“ and



1565.

“ and bore with their State and Pomp : They once bore the same  
 “ Crofs with them, and preached the same Christ with them : Why  
 “ are they now turned out of their Benefices, and some put in Pri-  
 “ son, only for Habits ? Why are they publickly defamed ? The Bi-  
 “ shops had printed the Private Letter that they had written to them,  
 “ without their Knowledge or Consent. The Bishops do now stand  
 “ upon it, as if the Cause were their own. But to let them see,  
 “ that the Dispute was not only about a Cap ; they sent them an  
 “ Abstract of some other Things, to which they wish some Remedy  
 “ could be found ;” (which is in the Collection) “ and conclude with  
 “ some Prayers to God, to quiet those Dissentions, and to send forth  
 “ Labourers into his Vineyard.”

*Coll. Numb.*  
79.

*Coll. Numb.*  
80.

*Bullinger's*  
*Answer to*  
*Sampson.*

To this, I have joined the Answer that *Bullinger* and *Gualter* wrote  
 to them. In it they tell them, “ That they did not expect that  
 “ their Letters should fully satisfy them : They only wrote their  
 “ Opinion to them, because they desired it. They were heartily  
 “ sorry to find, that they could not acquiesce in it. They would  
 “ engage no further in that Matter : They could answer their Argu-  
 “ ments, but they would give no Occasion to endless Disputations.  
 “ They thought it would be more expedient, to submit to those Ha-  
 “ bits, and to continue in the Church, than by refusing to use them,  
 “ to be forced to leave their Churches. They went no further, and  
 “ did not approve of any Popish Defilements, or Superstitions. Nor  
 “ did they in any sort enter into those other Matters, of which they  
 “ do now complain, and of which they knew nothing before. These  
 “ were Matters of much greater Consequence, than either the Sur-  
 “ plices or the Copes : So that it was to be hoped, that the Letter  
 “ they had written about the Habits, could not be stretched to these  
 “ Matters. There was nothing left to them, but to commend them  
 “ to God, and to pray that he would quiet this unhappy Dissention  
 “ among them, and give his Church the Blessings of Peace. They  
 “ only desire them to remember, that the Ministers of the Gospel  
 “ ought not only to hold fast the Truth, but likewise to be Prudent  
 “ Stewards, having a due Regard to the Times, bearing many  
 “ Things with Patience and Charity, and so maintain the Peace of  
 “ the Church : And not to prejudice it by an over-eager or morose  
 “ Temper ; nor think it enough that they had a good Design ; but  
 “ they must pursue it by prudent Methods.”

They wrote  
to the Earl of  
*Bedford.*

*Coll. Numb.*  
81.

*Bullinger* and *Gualter*, seeing the Division like to be carried much  
 further than the Matter of the Vestments, thought the best Office  
 that they could do their Friends, was, to write to the Earl of *Bed-*  
*ford* ; being well assured of his Zeal in the Matters of Religion.  
 They wrote to him on the 11th of *September*, that Year : The Let-  
 ter will be found in the Collection, They tell him, “ That when  
 “ they first heard of the Contention raised about the Vestments,  
 “ they were afraid it might have a further Progress. They, being  
 “ desired, did give their Opinion freely in the Matter ; and thought,  
 “ that for Things of so little Importance, it was not fit for the  
 “ Clergy to desert their Stations, and to leave them to be filled, per-  
 “ haps,

“ haps, by Wolves and Deceivers. They were sorry to find, that  
 “ their Fears of the Mischief that might follow on this Contention, 1565.  
 “ were but too well grounded. They hear, that not only the Vest-  
 “ ments are complained of, but that many other things are except-  
 “ ed to, that plainly favour of Popery. They are also sorry, that  
 “ the Private Letter which they wrote, should have been printed ;  
 “ and that their Judgment of the Vestments was extended to other  
 “ Things, of which they could in no sort approve: So that their  
 “ Opinion in one Particular is made use of, to cast a Load on Per-  
 “ sons, for whom they should rather have Compassion in their Suf-  
 “ ferings, than study to aggravate them. It gave them a very sensi-  
 “ ble Grief, to see the Church of *England* scarce got out of the  
 “ Hands of their bloody Enemies, now like to be pulled down by  
 “ their intestine Broils. So, having an entire Confidence in his  
 “ good Affection to the Gospel, they pray him to interceed with  
 “ the Queen and the Nobility, in the Parliament that was soon to  
 “ meet, for their Brethren that were then suffering ; who deserved,  
 “ that great Regard should be had to them, and that their Faults  
 “ should be forgiven them. It had appeared, what true Zeal they  
 “ had for Religion ; since the only Thing, about which they were  
 “ so solicitous, was, that Religion should be purged from all the  
 “ Dregs of Popery. This Cause in general was such, that those  
 “ who promoted it, proved themselves to be worthy of the highest  
 “ Dignity. Princes were to be Nursing Fathers to the Church :  
 “ Then they perform that Office truly, when they not only rescue  
 “ her out of the Hands of her Enemies, but take care that the  
 “ Spouse of Christ be not any way stained with the false Paint of  
 “ Superstition, or render herself suspected, by having any Rites un-  
 “ becoming the Christian Simplicity. They do therefore earnestly  
 “ pray him, that as he has hitherto shewed his Zeal in the Cause of  
 “ the Gospel, so he will at this Time exert himself ; and employ all  
 “ the Interest he has in the Queen, and in the Nobility, that the  
 “ Church of *England*, so happily Reformed, to the Admiration of  
 “ the whole World, may not be stained with any of the Defilements  
 “ or Remnants of Popery. This will look like a Giddiness in them :  
 “ It will offend the Weak among them, and give great Scandal to  
 “ their Neighbours, both in *France* and in *Scotland*, who are yet  
 “ under the Cross. The very Papists will justify their Tyrannical  
 “ Impositions, by what is done now among them. They lay all this  
 “ before him with the more Confidence, knowing his Zeal, as they  
 “ do.” They also wrote in the same Strain to *Grindall* and *Horn*, Coll. Numb.  
82.  
 as will be found in the Collection.

When *Grindall* and *Horn* understood, that those of *Zurick* were  
 not pleased with the Printing of their Letter ; of which they wrote  
 to them, and sent with it the Paper, in which were put the Heads of  
 those other Things in the Constitution of this Church, to which  
 they excepted ; they both, jointly, wrote Answer to them, in one  
 Letter to *Bullinger* and *Gualter*, on the 6th of *February* ; which will Coll. Numb.  
83.  
 be found in the Collection.



1566.

Grindall and  
Horn's Letter,  
shewing their  
Uneasiness in  
many Things.

“ They tell them, they had printed their Letter, but had suppressed the Names of those to whom it was directed. It had the good Effect that they expected from it: For it had satisfied and settled the Minds of many, who were upon the Point of Leaving their Churches: And even the most troublesome were so far wrought on by it, that they were silent, and less violent in their Opposition, than they had formerly been. Some few were turned out, but they were not of the more Learned Sort; except *Sampson*, who, they acknowledge, was both Pious and Learned. *Humphreys*, and other Learned Men, were still continued in their Stations. The Letter that they had printed, related only to that Particular upon which it was written, and could not be applied to any Thing else: Nor was there any other Question then on foot: So that it was a Calumny to say, that their Opinion was asked about any other Matter. The Noise and the Complaints that some had made, had very much provoked the Queen and many of the Nobility against them. The Papists triumphed upon it, and hoped to come in again, and to fill the Places, which were made void upon their Deserting their Stations. They do solemnly attest the Great God, that this Dissension was not raised by any Fault of theirs; and that it did not lie at their Door, that those Vestments were not quite taken away. They may take their Oaths upon it, that they had used all possible Means in that Matter; and had, with the utmost Earnestness, and the most sincere Diligence, laboured to obtain that which their Brethren desired, and which they themselves wished for. But since they could not do what willingly they would do, they must be content with doing what they could do.

“ As to the other Particulars complained of, they plainly write, they did not approve of that figured Musick, together with the Use of Organs, that was continued in Cathedrals. They enlarge on many other Particulars, and set forth the Method of Convocations. They did in no sort approve of Womens Baptizing. They gave way, till God should send better Times, to the Form of making the Sponsors in Baptism answer in the Child's Name; for which *St. Austin's* Authority was pretended: But they did openly declare, that they thought it was not convenient. Nor did they approve of using the Cross in Baptism; tho' the Words spoken when it was made, did plainly shew, there was no superstitious Conceit kept up by the Use of it. They also suffered the Posture of Kneeling in the Sacrament, with the due Caution with which it was enjoined, that was set down in King *Edward's* Book, declaring the Reason for which that Posture was still continued. For the Abuses of their Courts, tho' they cannot correct them entirely, yet they did openly inveigh against them; which they would continue still to do, till they should be sent back to Hell, from whence they came. Every Man had full Freedom, to declare his Mind as to all these Abuses; They had laboured in the last Parliament all they could, to purge out all Errors and Abuses; which, tho' it had not then the desired Effect, yet they would not give over their Endeavours to bring it to a happy Conclusion: And this  
“ they

“ they would do, as they desired the Continuance of their Friend-ship and Brotherly Love.”

1566.

The others still insisted, and *Sampson* in a Letter from Oxford the 9th of February, 1565, to *Bullinger*, reduces the Questions concerning the Habits to Seven Heads. 1st, If a Habit different in Form, and Colour, from the Laity, ought to be enjoined to the Clergy? 2dly, If the Mosaical Ceremonies may be brought into the Christian Church? 3dly, If it is lawful to conform to Papists in Habits and outward Rites, and if it is fitting to borrow Ceremonies from that Corrupt Church? 4thly, If the using a peculiar Priestly Habit, is meerly a Civil Matter, and if it does not favour of Monkery, Popery and Judaism? 5thly, If those who have hitherto used their Liberty, may with a good Conscience, upon the Account of the Queen's Mandate, involve themselves, and the Church again in a Yoke of Bondage? 6thly, If the Popish Clerical Habit can be called a Thing that is Indifferent? And the 7th is, If they ought to use these Habits, rather than desert their Stations? To these he begs him to send as soon as may be, a full and copious Answer.

A few Days after this, *Jewel* wrote to *Bullinger*, (in the Letter that is in the Collection,) “ That he was so attacked by many different Hands, that it took him wholly up to prepare Answers to them. He was not in the House of Lords during the last Parliament, in which there was a great Heat for a whole Month, concerning the Succession to the Crown: But the Queen would suffer no Declaration to be made in that Matter, though it was most vehemently pressed, there appearing on both Sides a great deal of Earnestness. The Queen thought any such Declaration would turn the Eyes of the Nation too much towards the rising Sun. He says the Controversy about the Vestments had raised great Heats. The Queen was fixed, and could not be wrought on to let any Change be made. Some of their Brethren were so eager in disputing about that Matter, as if the whole Business of Religion was concerned in it. They leave their Stations, and Churches, rather than yield a little. Nor were they at all moved from their Stiffness by the most Learned Letters, that he and *Gualter* had written to them on that Subject; nor by all the Advice of their Friends. He thanks God that they had no other, nor more Important Debates than among them. *Cheyney*, Bishop of Gloucester, did indeed in Parliament profess himself openly to be a *Lutheran*, but he was not like to have many Followers.

Collect.  
Numb. 84.  
*Jewel's* Sense  
of those Mat-  
ters.

In a Letter of his, that is also in the Collection, written to *Bullinger* on the 1st of March, 1565: “ He writes that he was overwhelmed with the Books that the Papists had written against him, and was by that Means engaged in a profound Course of Study. He tells him how Cardinal *Grandvell* had intended to cut off the Intercourse between *England* and the *Netherlands*; hoping by that Means to provoke the *English* to break out into Tumults; but the Design turned upon himself: For the *English* resolving to settle their Trade and Staple at *Embsden*, the People of *Flanders* could not bear that. The Pope had sent one to *Ireland* to raise a Flame in that Island. But the Pope's Agent, who was an *Irish* Man, was taken

Coll. Numb.  
85.



1566. " taken and sent over a Prisoner to *England*. In *Scotland* the Queen  
 " only had her Mass, all the Nation being averse to it."

Reflections on  
this Matter. By *Grindal* and *Horn*'s Letters, it appears that they had no other  
 Zeal in this Matter, but to preserve the Church in the Queen's Fa-  
 Coll. Numb.  
86. vour, and in Obedience to the Laws: Yet in Letters that were upon  
 this Occasion written to *Zurick*, (a Part of one is in the Collection;) by  
 some others that adhered to *Sampson*, they let them know that both  
*Parker* the Archbishop, and *Grindal* and *Horn* were too much sharp-  
 ned in this Matter: Therefore they pray them to use their En-  
 deavours to soften them more towards their Brethren: But they ac-  
 knowledge that *Pilkinton* of *Duresme*, *Sands* of *Worcester*, and *Park-*  
*hurst* of *Norwich*, had by their Moderation made good all their Pro-  
 mises: So they deserved that Thanks should be given them: They  
 desire further, that they would write to them all to proceed more  
 mildly, and to endeavour to get those Dregs of Popery to be removed:  
 And that they would tolerate, at least connive at those who did not  
 approve them. I find *Pilkinton* complains in a Letter to *Gualter*,

Other Letters  
written to  
*Zurick* by  
some Bishops. " That the Disputes which began about the Vestments, were carried  
 " much farther, even to the whole Constitution. Pious Persons la-  
 " mented this; Atheists laughed at it; and the Papists blew the  
 " Coals, and were full of Hopes upon it. The Blame of all was  
 " cast on the Bishops: He adds, I confess we suffer many Things  
 " against our Hearts, groaning under them: We cannot take them  
 " away, though we were ever so much set on it. We are under  
 " Authority, and can innovate nothing without the Queen; nor  
 " can we alter the Laws: The only Thing that is left to our Choice  
 " is, whether we will bear these Things, or break the Peace of the  
 " Church."

*Parkhurst* in one Letter writes, " Many good People are pleased  
 " with all that is done; but there are some Things that do not  
 " please me. And in another he writes, Matters of Religion go on  
 " well: There are but a very few Things that I dare find Fault with.  
 " That which grieved him most was, that the Lives of those who  
 " professed the Gospel, were so very contrary to it. The Gospel  
 " was never preached among them more Faithfully, and with more  
 " Zeal: He prays, God grant us his Spirit that we may walk in the  
 " Spirit, and mortify the Works of the Flesh." The last Letter that those  
 Coll. Numb.  
87. of *Zurick* wrote on this Subject, was on the 26th of *August* 1567,  
 directed to the Bishops of *London*, *Winchester*, and *Norwich*. " They  
 " express their Grief that some Learned Men were deprived: They  
 " hear daily that some of those that had given good Proofs of them-  
 " selves in the *Marian* Persecution, were now not only turned out,  
 " but imprisoned: They hear that in *Ireland*, many that have the  
 " same Scruples, are yet kept out of all Trouble by the Queen's  
 " Order, upon the Intercession of their Bishops: Which makes it  
 " probable that the like Favour might be obtained in *England*, if the  
 " Bishops would interceed with her Majesty for it; which may the  
 " rather be expected, since the Bishops themselves acknowledge, that  
 " it were better for the Church, that these Ceremonies were all laid  
 " aside; and affirm that they had often moved in Parliament that  
 " they might be taken away, that so the Church might be more pure  
 " and

“ and less burdened. Therefore they do not doubt but that they, out of their Piety, will endeavour to procure Favour to their Brethren, to which they do very earnestly, but yet decently, and modestly, press them.” Cox, Bishop of *Ely*, who I do not find meddled much in these Controversies, has in a Letter to *Gualter* some very sad Expressions; for which there is too much Occasion at all Times. “ When I consider the Sins that do every where abound, and the Neglect and Contempt of the Word of God, I am struck with Horrour, and tremble to think what God will do with us. We have some Discipline among us with relation to Mens Lives, such as it is; but if any Man would go about to persuade our Nobility to submit their Necks to that Yoke, he may as well venture to pull the Hairs out of a Lion’s Beard.

1566.

*Sands* was of the same Mind: He lamented the occasion of this Dispute, and hoped to see an End put to it. In a Letter to *Bullinger* from *Worcester*, Dated the 3d of *January* 1566, he writes thus: “ The True Religion of Christ is now settled among us, which is the most valuable of all things. The Gospel is no more shut up but is freely preach’d, and for other things we need not be much concerned about them. There is some small Dispute concerning the Popish Vestments whether they ought to be used or not? But God will put an end to these Things.”

*Contenditur a-  
liquantulum de  
vestibus Pa-  
pisticis utendis;  
vel non utendis  
dabit Deus his  
quoque finem.*

A few Days after that, *Jewel* in a Letter Dated the 8th of *February* 1566, to *Bullinger*, (a part of it is in the Collection, the rest of it relates to the Books he was then writing in defence of his Apology) tells him, “ That the Queen seemed fixed in her Resolution not to Marry: He expresses his great Concern that the heat raised on the account of the Surplice was not extinguished: He writes that the Affairs of *Scotland* were not in a quiet State, some of the chief of the Nobility had retired into *England*; others fortified themselves in their Castles, and were as in a State of War with the Papists. The Queen, tho’ an obstinate Papist, yet does not seem resolved what course she had best take; for in Matters of Religion the greatest part both of the Nobility and People were against her; and their Number did daily increase. The King of *Spain* sent lately an *Italian* Abbot thither with *Spanish* Gold. He was a subtle and crafty Man, and did so far gain not only on the Queen, but on the King, that tho’ he had hitherto gone to Sermons, and had no Mass, yet upon the assurance of a rich Ship that was expected within a Day, he presently ordered Mass to be said in his Church; while *Knox* in the very next Church was preaching against Idolatry, and the whole Papal Tyranny, with greater Zeal than ordinary: But the *Spanish* Ship was furiously shattered by a Storm, and was cast on the Coast of *England*, so that weak King would find what he had gained by his going to Mass.” *Sampson* and *Humphreys* wrote a long and particular Answer to the Letter that *Grindal* and *Horn* wrote to *Bullinger*, but that runs into a tedious Controversy, with which the Divines of *Zurick* wrote that they would meddle no more in those Matters, so I do not think fit to insert it.

*Of the Af-  
fairs of Scot-  
land.  
Coll. Numb.  
88.*



1566.

“ They complain that the Archbishop had contributed to buy an Organ for *Canterbury*, which was no Sign of his disliking it. They complain that many were put in Prison because they would not provide Godfathers and Godmothers for baptizing their Children : They say the Convocation signified little : For many things were agreed to in the Convocation in the Year 1562, that would have tended to the great good of the Church, but were suppressed : for nothing was of force but as the Queen and the Archbishop consented. And in the last Convocation, a very learned Man that belonged to the Bishop of *Norwich* proposed somewhat relating to the Vestments : to whom a Bishop said, What have you to do in those Matters, we began them and we will end them ? He answered the Bishop, this Matter has been hitherto laid wholly on the Queen, but now you take it on your selves. They also in another Paper set forth, that in Queen *Mary's* Days, when the Church of *England* was broken and dispersed, a Body of Protestants formed themselves into a Church at *London*, and had their Ministers and Deacons, and continued thro' all her Reign, tho' many of them were burned : But that after Queen *Mary's* Death, the Exiles were recalled, and the Prisoners were set at liberty ; only this Church that had continued all the while in the midst of the Flame was now extinguished. In another Letter he assures *Simler* there was no danger of *Lutheranism*, only we are now fighting among our selves about Ceremonies, Vestments, and Matters of no Importance. That Matter has somewhat shaken Men of weak Minds : I wish that all even the smallest Remnants of Popery could be wholly put, not only out of our Churches, but chiefly out of the Minds of all People ; but the Queen at this time cannot bear any Alteration in Religion.”

I shall carry this Matter no farther, having gone beyond what I had at first proposed by the Importance of these Papers, that give so clear and so true an Account of the beginnings of those unhappy Disputes, of which we have seen and do still feel the unhappy Consequences. In these we clearly see what was the Sense of the most Eminent and the most Learned of our Reformers in those Matters. They continued their Correspondence with *Zurick* as long as those great Men lived with whom they had lodged in their great Distress, and to whom they had been so singularly obliged, that they were ready always to acknowledge it, and were often sending Presents to them.

The Queen of  
Scots Marries  
the Lord  
*Darnley*.

In *Scotland* Things were running into great disorder. The Queen, as she liked the Person of the Lord *Darnley*, and perhaps the better, because he seemed to be of a soft and gentle Temper, and easy to be governed ; so her faithfullest Counsellors concurred in advising the Marriage. He was the next Heir to the Crown of *England* after the Queen. For tho' the Queen Dowager of *Scotland*, that was *Henry the VIIIth's* Sister, having married the Earl of *Angus*, after King *James the IVth* was killed ; but falling to be in ill Terms with him, either found or suborned Witnesses (as it was given out) to prove upon him a Pre-contract in Words of the present Time, by which she obtained a Sentence dissolving that Marriage : Yet the

Daughter

Daughter she had born to him, was declared Legitimate, in the Bull that confirmed the Sentence, declaring that Marriage dissolved: The Original of which I saw: The Reason given is, because she was Born of the Mother's Part *Bona fide*. Lord *Darnley* being thus descended, and born within the Kingdom of *England*, might have been a dangerous Competitor for that Crown, especially if he should fortify himself by a prudent Marriage, and a good Conduct in *England*: So it was certainly good Advice given the Queen, since she liked his Person, to secure her Right to that Succession by this Marriage. When she Married him she declared him King, and put his Name on the Coin after her own. The Qualities of his Mind did not answer the Gracefulness of his Person: For sometimes he was in all Things compliant to the Queen, but that lasted not long. She had such an affable and obliging Air, which her Education in the Court of *France* had much improved, that it was not easy to resist it. At first she seemed so indifferent as to the Matters of Religion, that the Minds of the Nation were much quieted, when they concluded that she continued to be a Papist more from Principles of Honour and Interest than from her own Persuasion.

1566.

But they came to have other Thoughts of her when she began to express more Zeal in those Matters. Her Kindred by her Mother pushed her on, and she was animated both from the Court of *France*, and from *Rome*, to restore the Popish Religion: On these Hopes she set her Gates open to all that desired to come to her Mass, and had many Masses every Day in her Chapel. The Body of the *Scottish* Nation did not easily bear with the Mass, which the Queen had at first privately in her Court for herself; and for a very small Number of her Servants, who were of her own Religion. In the Parliament in the Year 1563, a Petition was offered by the Noblemen, and the Superintendents, and Ministers of the Reformed Religion, which will be found in the Collection, setting forth, That whereas in the last Convention of the Kirk that was held at *Edinburgh* in *June* last, some were sent to the Queen with certain Articles, to which they desired Answer; and tho' the Queen had answered them in Part, yet she referred the farther Answer to the present Parliament; so a full Answer was now prayed. And whereas in the Parliament held in *July* 1560, it was Enacted, That the Mass, and all Papistry, should be put out of the Realm, and Christ's Religion should be Universally received; and that the Queen, by divers Proclamations, has approved Christ's Religion, which she found publicly received at her Arrival, in Particular at *Dundee*, on the 15th of *September* last, in which the King and Queen did both by Act of Council, and by Proclamation, promise, That in this present Parliament she would establish the Religion of Christ, and abolish all Laws and Constitutions contrary to the same; upon which they desired, that the Premises might be considered; and so they laid before the Parliament the Articles which they had laid before the Queen and her Council, together with her Answer, and the Reply made to it by the Kirk.

She shews  
more Zeal in  
her Religion.

Coll. Numb.  
89.

In the Articles they demand first, That the Papistical Mass with all Idolatry, and the Pope's Jurisdiction, might be abolished, not only in the

The Demands  
of the Reformed.



1566.

the Subjects but in the Queen's own Person: And that the true Religion might be ratified through the whole Kingdom, as well in the Queen's Person, as in the Subjects: And that the People might be required to resort on *Sundays* to Prayers and Preaching, as they were before to the Idolatrous Mass. Secondly, That Provision may be made for the Ministers Maintenance; and that such as are admitted into the Ministry may have their Livings assigned them where they Labour, or in Parts adjacent; and that they may not be put to crave them of others: And that the Benefices then vacant, or that have been vacant since *March, Anno 1558*, or that shall become vacant, be given to learned Persons, able to Preach God's Word, upon their Trial and Admission by the Superintendants. And that no Bishoprick, Abby, or other Ecclesiastical Benefice, having many Churches annexed to it, be given to any one Man: But that the Churches may be severally disposed of, so that every Man may serve at his own Church; and that Glebes and Manfes be assigned to them, that they may reside at their Churches, and discharge their Consciences in them; and that the Churches may be kept in due Repair. Thirdly, That none may have Charge of Souls, or be put in Colleges or Universities, or publickly Instruēt the Youth, but such as are tried by the Superintendant and the Visitors of the Churches, and are admitted by them. Fourthly, That Lands founded for Hospitals may be restored to the Use of the Poor; and that all Rents and Profits belonging to any Order of Friars be applyed to the Poor, and for Schools in Towns. Fifthly, That horrid Crimes, Blasphemy, Sorcery, Adultery, Incest and Murder, with many other Crimes that are reckoned up, may be severely punished; and that some Order may be taken for the Ease of the Labourers of the Ground, concerning the reasonable Payment of their Tithes, and in the letting of them.

The Queen's  
Answer to  
them.

To this the Queen answered, "That as She did not think that there was any Impiety in the Mass; so She hoped, her Subjects would not press her to receive any Religion against her own Conscience, which would throw her into a perpetual Unquietness, by the Remorse of her Conscience. She would never leave the Religion in which She had been brought up. And it would be further a great Prejudice to her, in that by her so doing, she should lose the Friendship of the King of *France*, the Ancient Ally of this Kingdom, and of other Princes, from whom She may find great Supports: So She will not in an Instant put herself in Hazard of losing all her Friends: And since She has not yet pressed, nor means She hereafter to press the Conscience of any Man, but leaves them to Worship God according to their Persuasion, She hopes they will not press Her to offend Her own Conscience. But when the Parliament meets, Her Majesty will consent to every Thing that the Three Estates shall agree upon; and She renews the Assurance She had given, That Mens Lives or Estates shall be in no Hazard for any Cause of Religion."

As to the Second Article, "The Queen thought it not reasonable that She should deprive herself of so great a Part of the Patrimony of the Crown, by putting the Patronage of Benefices out of her Hands,  
" for

“ for her own Necessity required the keeping them in her own  
 “ Hands: Yet She was contented to assign what might serve for  
 “ the Reasonable Sustainment of the Ministers. She referred the other  
 “ Articles to the Parliament.”

1566.

To this Answer the Kirk replied, “ That the Firmness She expressed to the Mass, gave no small Grief to her good Subjects. Their Religion was no other than that which Christ revealed, and his Apostles preached; which differed from the Impiety of the *Turks*, the Blasphemy of the *Jews*, and the vain Superstition of the *Papists*.” And, upon that, as they run out into a high Commendation of their Religion, so “ they require the Queen, in the Name of God, to embrace the Means, by which She may be persuaded to the Truth: Which they offered presently to her, by the Preaching of God’s Word, and by Publick Disputation against the Adversaries of it, whensoever She thought it expedient. And as for the Mass, they undertook to prove it to be a Mass of Impiety, from the Beginning to the End. As for the Prejudice, that the Queen thinks would follow on her Changing her Religion, by Dissolving the Alliance She is in with the King of *France*, and other foreign Princes; they answer, That the true Religion is the undoubted Means to keep up a perfect Confederacy with him, who is the *King of Kings*, and who has the Hearts of all Princes in his Hands; which ought to be more valued, than all other Confederacies whatsoever.”

As to the Second Article; “ They did not intend to defraud her of the Patronages; but only, that Persons presented to Benefices, should be tried and examined by the Learned Men of the Kirk, or the Superintendents appointed for that End. But as the Presentations belong to Her, so Collation upon them belongs to the Church, and the Patrons may not Present, without Trial and Examination: which if they might do, must bring great Ignorance and Disorder into the Church. And it was far against all good Conscience, for the Queen to retain a good Part of the Benefices in her own Hands. This was so contrary both to all Divine and Human Laws, that they were unwilling to open up that whole Matter to her. And therefore they beg She would consider, that tho’ the Patronage of Benefices belonged to her, yet the Retention of them in her own Hands, and the not Giving them to Qualified Persons, is ungodly, and contrary to all Order, and ruinous to the Souls of the People. They were desirous to have her Necessities relieved: But they add, that the Tithes are the Patrimony of the Church; out of which, in the first place, those who serve in the Ministry ought to be relieved, the Churches ought to be repaired, and the Youth instructed. They concluded with Thanks, for her Willingness to have the Ministers provided for: And they pray, that a Special Condescending on Particulars may be thought on.

But all these Petitions were still put off: And the Queen, by her Practice among the Nobility, began to divide them into Factions; and plainly said, when these Petitions were read to her, That *She would do nothing in Prejudice of the Religion that She professed*: And in wrath told them, *She hoped, before a Year was expired, to have*

*Spotswood.*



1566. *the Mass, and the Catholick Religion professed thro' the whole Kingdom.* And She managed the Parliament so dextrously, that neither was the Treaty of *Leith*, nor the Settlement of Religion made in the Parliament 1560, so much as named, much less confirmed. In this Parliament some small Provision was made for the Ministers; and Acts were made against Sorcery and Adultery, that they should be punished by Death. There was indeed an Act of Oblivion pass'd, for all that was done from the 6th of *March* 1558, to the 1st of *September* 1561: But the Parliament of the Year 1560, came to be looked on as an Illegal Assembly: So that upon this, a great Alarm was given to the whole Body of the Reformed in that Kingdom; and the Jealousy was increased, by the Queen's Marrying the Lord *Darnley*. He had been bred up a strict Papist, but now pretended to be a Protestant; yet as he was all the while suspected of Favouring the Religion he was bred up in, so he quickly returned to the open Profession of it. This gave Occasion to another Petition in a bolder Strain, in which the Body of the Reformed set forth, " That  
 " the true Religion was established in that Nation; that the Mass,  
 " and all the Idolatry and Tyrannical Usurpations of the Pope were  
 " suppressed, and that they were going on to a perfect Reformation:  
 " But that all had been stopp'd now for the Space of Four Years.  
 " That upon her Arrival, that Idol the Mass was again set up, and  
 " Men were put in Offices, to which they had no Right. From  
 " such Beginnings, they saw what they might look for; yet, in  
 " hope that God would mollify the Queen's Heart, and out of their  
 " Desire to maintain the Publick Peace, they had long expected to  
 " see what Answer would be made to their Petitions. But they saw  
 " Things grew daily worse and worse. The Queen's Gates were then  
 " set open, in Contempt of Proclamations set out by herself to the  
 " contrary. The Patrimony of the Church was bestowed on un-  
 " worthy Persons: Their Ministers were reduced to great Poverty,  
 " and put to much Trouble. Vices of all sorts abounded universal-  
 " ly: They therefore prayed the Queen, to think of Redressing  
 " these Matters, and to answer their other Petitions; assuring her  
 " of all due Obedience to her Laws and Authority. They also  
 " pray, that she would give them no Occasion to think, that she  
 " intended the Subversion of the true Religion, and the Destructi-  
 " on of those who professed it: For they assure her, they would  
 " never be subject to that *Roman* Antichrist, nor suffer (as far as it  
 " lay in their Power to hinder it) any Branches of his Usurped  
 " Authority to have place within the Realm." This, which is in  
 the Collection, prevailed no more, than their other Petitions had  
 done.

Coll. Numb.  
90.

I will add to this a few Particulars relating to the Affairs of *Scotland*, as they are set forth in some of these Letters that were sent me from *Zurick*. *Parkhurst*, Bishop of *Norwich*, in a Letter to *Bullinger* (which is in the Collection) writes in the Year 1566,  
 " That in *March* last, an *Italian*, called Seignior *David*, (whom he  
 " charges as skilled in Necromancy) who was in great Favour with  
 " the Queen, was dragg'd out of her Room, and stabb'd by many  
 " Hands.

Coll. Numb.  
91.

“ Hands. And adds, That an Abbot was then so wounded, that  
 “ though he escaped, yet he died of his Wounds soon after: And 1566.  
 “ that one *Black*, a Dominican, in great Esteem among the Papists,  
 “ was also killed in the Court. And upon all that Disorder, while  
 “ the Privy Council was sitting, the Lords escaped with their Lives:  
 “ Since that Time, the Queen had brought forth a Prince: She was  
 “ reconciled to her Husband, and had called home her Brother, and  
 “ the Lords that were of the Reformed Side: But though the Queen  
 “ had born her Son Ten Weeks before he wrote, yet all that while  
 “ he was not Baptized; for she intended to do it with Pomp, and  
 “ many Masses in the Great Church, though the Inhabitants of *Edin-*  
 “ *burgh* were resolved to hinder that: They apprehended she would  
 “ bring over a Force from *France*: He concludes with a Prayer, not  
 “ very Evangelical, that *God would either convert, or confound her.*  
 “ There are Circumstances in this Letter, of some others killed with  
 “ Seignior *David*, that I have found no where else.”

About the same Time *Grindal* wrote likewise a Letter to *Bullin*-*Coll. Numb.*  
*ger*, which is also in the Collection; in which he thanks him for the <sup>92.</sup>  
 Letters he had written over concerning the Controversy about the  
 Habits: He writes, “ That it was not credible that a Question about  
 “ Things of no Moment should have raised so great a Disturbance,  
 “ as this had done: Many, both of the Ministers, and the People,  
 “ were designing to withdraw from them, and to set up separate  
 “ Meetings; but most of them were now come to a better Mind.  
 “ He acknowledges their Wise and Good Letters had contributed  
 “ much towards that: Yet some continued still in their former Re-  
 “ solutions. It were an easy Thing to reconcile them to the Queen,  
 “ if they could be brought to change their Mind: But ’till that was  
 “ done, it was not in their Power to effect it. The Bishops upon  
 “ their Return, and before they were Consecrated, had endeavoured  
 “ all they could to get those Things removed, that gave Occasion to  
 “ the present Dispute: But in that they could not prevail, neither  
 “ with the Queen, nor with the Parliament. So they, upon consult-  
 “ ing among themselves, came to a Resolution, not to desert their  
 “ Churches for the Sake of a few Rites that were not unlawful, since the  
 “ Doctrine was entire and pure; in which they agreed in all Things  
 “ with them of *Zurick*. They saw the good Effects of these their  
 “ Resolutions: And those unseasonable Contentions about Things  
 “ Indifferent, did not edify, but tear the Churches.”

“ From their own Affairs he turns to those of *Scotland*; where  
 “ he writes, Things were in no good State. They still retained the  
 “ Profession of the Truth; but the Queen endeavoured by all Means  
 “ to extirpate it: She had lately ordered six or seven Masses to be  
 “ said every Day in her Chapel; and admitted all that pleased to  
 “ come to them: Whereas at first she was contented with one private  
 “ Mass, to which no *Scotchman* was admitted: And whereas it  
 “ was provided that the Ministers should be maintained out of the  
 “ Revenues of the Church, she had now for Three Years stopt all  
 “ Payments: There were no Publick Changes yet made; both the  
 “ Nobility and the People continued very firm: Of whom he  
 “ reckons the Earl of *Murray* the Chief: He understood that the  
 “ Queen



1567.

“ Queen was in very ill Terms with her Husband on this Account :  
 “ There was one *David* an *Italian*, recommended to her by the Car-  
 “ dinal of *Lorrain*, who governed all the Councils there, and was  
 “ Secretary of State. The King, finding he had no Regard to him,  
 “ grew uneasy at it ; and being Young and Rash, he entered into a  
 “ Conspiracy with some of the Nobility, and some of his Court ;  
 “ so the *Italian* was dragged out of the Queen’s Prefence, notwith-  
 “ standing her earnest Intreaties to save him ; and he was no sooner  
 “ out, than many run their Daggers into him ; so he was murdered  
 “ without any Cause declared. This horrid Crime stuck deep in the  
 “ Queen’s Heart ; so that, though she had born a Son to him, she  
 “ could never forgive him.”

The dismal Fate of that Unfortunate Queen is so tender a Point, that I will say nothing of it, but in the Words of others. There is a Letter of *Grindal’s* to *Bullinger*, dated the 21st of *June*, 1567. All in that Letter which relates to this Matter, is in the Collection ; in which, these Words will be found. “ *Scotland* is fallen into new  
 “ Troubles : For their late King *Henry*, on the 10th of *February*,  
 “ was found Dead in a Garden near his Lodgings. It is not yet agreed  
 “ how he died. Some say that a few Barrels of Gun-Powder, being  
 “ on Design, laid under the Chamber in which he lay ; these being  
 “ kindled, the House was blown up, and so he was thrown out into  
 “ that Garden. Others say, that in the Night he was dragged out  
 “ of his Chamber and strangled, and that then the House was blown  
 “ up. The Earl of *Bothwel* was generally thought the Author of  
 “ this Murder : He also procured, by the Authority of the Archbi-  
 “ shop of *St. Andrews*, a Divorce from his Lawful Wife : And on  
 “ the 15th of *May* last, the Queen had married him, and created  
 “ him Duke of *Orkney*. Almost all the Nobility had left the Court  
 “ before this Marriage, when they saw that no Enquiry was made  
 “ into the King’s Murder : They had a Meeting at *Sterling*, where it  
 “ appeared by clear Evidences, that the Murder was committed by  
 “ *Bothwel* : So an Army was brought together on Design to seize on  
 “ him, but he made his Escape ; and it was not then known whither  
 “ he was gone. Some say the Queen was besieged in a certain Castle,  
 “ and others say she was made a Prisoner in the Castle of *Edinburgh*,  
 “ as having been Conscious to the Murder of her Husband. But  
 “ whatsoever may be in this, that Infamous Marriage must end  
 “ Tragically : With this he Concludes that Matter, promising him a  
 “ more particular Account, when the Certainty of it was better un-  
 “ derstood.

To this I will add another Relation that may be more certainly de-  
 pended on. Cardinal *Laurea*, whom the Pope had sent to be his  
 Nuncio in *Scotland*, may be supposed to have had the best Informa-  
 tion that he could procure from those of her Party, and of her Reli-  
 gion, and he would certainly have put the best Face possible on that  
 Matter ; especially after her Tragical Fate, which raised an Universal  
 Disposition in all People, to think as well of her as was possible : But  
 chiefly among those of that Religion, so that I know no Relation of  
 that Affair that can be so certainly depended on, (making still some  
 Allowances for the Softnings of a Partial Writer) as that which we  
 find

find in that Cardinal's Life, which was written by the Abbot of *Pignerol*, and was printed at *Bologna* in the Year 1599, in which he gives this Account of this Whole Matter.

1567.

Pope *Pius* the Vth sent *Laurea* to be his Nuncio in *Scotland*, to assist and encourage the Queen in her Zeal: He sent by him 2000 Crowns to her, as an Earnest of further Supplies; and wrote to her with his own Hand, recommending his Nuncio to her. The Nuncio came to *Paris* in the Dog-Days, and brought him who writes his Life along with him to be his Secretary. He received Letters from the Queen of *Scots* by the Hands of the Archbishop of *Glasgow*, who was then her Ambassador in *France*: By these she expressed her Desires that he might come to *Scotland* as soon as might be; but wished him to delay coming, 'till he should hear from her once more, that she might have all Things prepared for his Reception. He upon that wrote to her in a very vehement Stile, pressing her to Zeal and Fortitude of Mind, in carrying on the Restoring the Catholick Religion in her Kingdom: With that he sent her over 4000 Crowns, and sent one *Edmund Hay*, a Jesuit, and a man of a Cunning, and Penetrating Temper, to be a secret Assistant to her: In particular, he pressed her, either to punish, or [at least to disgrace *Ledington*, who he believed set on all the Tumults, and was a determined Heretick, and a Favourer of the Earl of *Murray*.

*Con* has printed these Letters. *Pius* the Vth's Letter bears Date the 16th of *June*, 1566. In it, "He recommends his Nuncio to her Confidence, who was then Bishop of *Mondovi*, (*Montis Regalis*) and promises all possible Assistance to her, in her Design of bringing back her Kingdom to the Obedience of the Holy See." Queen *Mary's* Answer bears date the 9th of *October* that Year, from *Edinburgh*; "She in it acknowledges the Pope's Favour and Bounty to her: She adds some high Expressions of her Sense of the Pope's Zeal and Piety; and promises to treat his Nuncio with all Respect and Confidence. She tells him that she had born a Son; and that she had brought her Nobility, though not without much difficulty, to consent that he should be publicly Baptized after the Manner of the Catholick Church. She promises to bring him up in that Religion: And she hoped this should prove a good Beginning of restoring the Right Use of the Sacraments, in her Dominions." The Pope seemed much pleased with this Beginning of his Pontificate; and in his Answer, on the 22d of *January* following, "He congratulates the Birth and Baptism of her Son, and prays that it may have a good Effect."

Life of Queen  
Mary, printed  
at Rome,  
Ann. 1624.

Three Months passed before *Laurea* had any Intimation from the Queen concerning his coming over: Upon which, he sent the Bishop of *Dunblane*, who was then at *Paris*, with copious Advices to that Queen, and continued to press her very earnestly by his Letters, to admit of his coming over: The Substance of all which is set forth in his Life: He tells us further, "That the Queen held a Convention of the Estates, and had obtained Two Things of them, not without difficulty: The one was, that her Child should be Baptized according to the Rites of the *Roman* Church; and the other was, that the Pope's Nuncio should be admitted with due Respect:



1567.

Upon this the Nuncio designed to go to *Antwerp*, thinking that the Navigation would be safer from thence, than from *Calais*. But then he adds, " That such a Barbarous and Impious Crime was committed " in *Scotland*, that it gave a Horrour to think of it, much more to write of it." Of what follows in that Life I will add a Verbal Translation.

" The King, as was said, had the Small-Pox; upon which that " the Contagion might not endanger the Queen, he retired to a " House at some distance from the Palace: As he began to recover, " he was often visited by her: One Day they Supped together, and " after much Discourse, and that they had diverted themselves 'till " it was late, the Queen pretended she could not stay with him all " Night, for one of her Maids of Honour being Married that Day, " she must according to the Custom of former Queens, see the Bride " put to Bed. She was scarce gone, when some Gun-Powder that " was secretly laid under the House, was fired, so that the whole " House was blown up, and the King killed: Though some said, " that he was not blown up, but that hearing some Noise of armed " Men, he had got out by a Back-Door into a Neighbouring Garden; " and that he, and one of his Servants, were strangled before the " House was blown up. It is certain, that the King's Dead Body " was found in that Garden, with no other Hurt, but that about " his Neck a blackness appeared all round it. When this base Mur- " der was known, all People were struck with Horror: Some " spoke severely of the Queen herself; Libels were published upon " it; and some having discovered that *Bothwel* was the Author of " this horrid Murder, they charged him, as being not only an Assas- " sinate, but a Cruel Hangman. It being on such Occasions ordi- " nary for People to search into, and to discover such Things.

" *Bothwel*, though a Heretick, had been always Zealous for the " Queen and Faithful to her; and he had lately with great Cou- " rage rescued her out of a Danger she was in, from a very great Se- " dition: Besides, that the Queen loved him *desperately*; therefore, " he in hope to be Married to the Queen, first divorced his Wife, as " if upon Adultery that might be so done, that he might Marry ano- " ther Wife, and then he cruelly contrived the Murdering the King. " The Queen after she had born down some very wicked Reports " concerning herself, and *Bothwel*, being afraid of some Tumult, " that might have been Fatal to them, thought fit to leave *Edinburgh*. " So she carried her Son with her to *Sterling*, a Place of Defence: " Having laid (as is probable) a Design with *Bothwel* how Matters " were to be managed: A few Days after she pretended to go out " a Hunting; then *Bothwel* with 200 Horse seemed to surprize her, " and to seize her by Force. But the Queen coming back with him " to the Castle, presently made him Duke of *Orkney*, and declared " him her Husband. That Marriage did neither prove Happy, nor " lasting: It being a Conjunction that had nothing of the Matrimo- " nial Dignity in it, but had sprung from a Partnership in an Un- " worthy Crime. *Murray* was then out of *Scotland*, but he had " left *Ledington* among others behind him, who were to raise New " Quarrels and Tumults upon every Occasion. It was easy to

*Ledington*



“ *Ledington* to work up the Minds of the People, who were universally enraged against the Queen and *Bothwell* to a great Flame :  
 “ Therefore a tumultuary Army being in haste brought together at  
 “ *Edinburgh*, they marched towards *Sterling*. But when the Queen  
 “ heard that, She, with a few Women, and some of her Court, went  
 “ to them. They received her with due Respect : And being asked,  
 “ Why they came thither Armed ? They answered, They came only  
 “ to punish *Bothwell*, for the Crimes committed by him, both in the  
 “ base and cruel Murder of the King, and in the Force he had put  
 “ on her Person. The Queen justified *Bothwell* ; and said, He had  
 “ done nothing, but by her Consent : This did provoke them to  
 “ such a Degree of Indignation, that they all cried out with one  
 “ Voice, *Then, Madam, you shall be our Prisoner* : And without more  
 “ Delay, they imprisoned her in a Castle within an Island in *Loch-*  
 “ *lewin* ; appointing only One Footman, and Two ordinary Women  
 “ to attend upon her.”

1567.

Thus the Pope's Nuncio understood this Matter. There are some inconsiderable Circumstances in this Relation, wrong told ; yet the Main of the Story agreeing with other Relations, shews how falsely this Matter has been since that Time represented, not only by Writers in the Church of *Rome*, but by many among ourselves, to put better Colours on this odious Business. To this (that I may end all this Unhappy Matter at once, without adding any Reflections on it, or telling what were the Censures that passed on this Occasion ; of which I have a great Variety on both Sides by me, in Books printed very near that Time) I shall only add another very important Passage, that is in the Life of that Cardinal, relating to the Testament, which that Queen wrote with her own Hand in *French*, the Day before She was beheaded. In it, “ She expressed  
 “ her constant Zeal for the Catholick Religion ; and provided, that  
 “ if the Prince, her Son, did not renounce the False and Heretical  
 “ Persuasion which he had drunk in, the Inheritance of the Crown  
 “ of *England* should never descend to him ; but should devolve from  
 “ him, to *Philip* King of *Spain*. When this Original Will was  
 “ brought to the Cardinal, he examined it with great Care ; that so  
 “ it might appear that it was truly her Last Will, and that it ought  
 “ to be acknowledged as such. He compared it with the Letters he  
 “ had formerly received from that Queen : And not only he him-  
 “ self, but one *Lewis Owen*, an *Englishman*, (Bishop of *Casana*) then  
 “ at *Rome*, whom the Writer calls a Pious and a most honest Man,  
 “ signed and attested it. The Will being thus confirmed, and as it  
 “ were fortified by a Publick Authority ; he delivered it to the Count  
 “ of *Olivares*, the King of *Spain*'s Ambassador, that it might be  
 “ faithfully transmitted to that King himself.” I have put the Words of the Author of that *Life*, in the Language in which he wrote it, in the Collection ; so that the Reader may compare the Translation I have given, with the Original. I leave this Dismal Relation as I  
 found it in these Vouchers, without any further Canvassing of that Black Affair ; which was followed by a Train of very Extraordinary Transactions.

P. 72.

Coll. Numb.

I<sup>94</sup>.

The



1567.

The *Scotish* Nation, both Papists and Protestants, concurred in the New Settlement; of which I shall give a particular Account from an Authentick Proof lately found in *Scotland*, and now kept in the Library of the College of *Glasgow*: It is the first Bond of Association that was entred into, upon the Resignation of the Crown, which the Queen was prevailed on to make, (by *Force*, as she afterwards declared, when she made her Escape out of the Prison, with which she was threatned): She sent it by the Lord *Lindsay* (Ancestor to the Earl of *Crawford*) and the Lord *Ruthven*, afterwards made Earl of *Gowry*. This bears Date at *Edinburgh* the 24th of *July*, 1567. By it, She resigned the Crown to her Son; and during his Infancy, She named the Earl of *Murray* to be Regent, who was then in *France*, and did not come to *Scotland*, at least he did not Sign this Bond before the 22d of *August*. But in the Council-Book, on the 25th of *July*, the Bond itself is entred on Record: And the Council removing to *Sterling* on the 29th of *July*, the Queen's Resignation was presented, and received by the Earls of *Morton*, *Athol*, *Glencairn*, *Mar*, *Monteith*, the Master of *Grame*, the Lord *Home*, and the Bishop of *Orkney*, in the Name of the Three Estates: And the Earl of *Morton* taking the Coronation-Oath in the Name of the Prince, he was Anointed and Crowned by the Bishop of *Orkney*: Who did indeed little Honour to this Ceremony: for he, a few Days before, had performed the Nuptial Ceremonies between the Queen and the Earl of *Botbwell*. Upon all this, the Bond (which is in the Collection) was made to this Purpose. "That whereas the Queen being weary of the Pains and Travail of Government, and desiring that in her Life-time her Son might be placed in the Kingdom, and be obeyed by all her Subjects, had resigned the Crown in Favour of her Son: They therefore promised, and bound themselves to assist their King, in Setting him on the Throne, and Putting the Crown on his Head: And that they should give their Oaths of Homage, with all dutiful Obedience, to him, as became true Subjects; and should concur in Establishing him in his Kingdom, and should resist all such as should oppose it."

This was made up in some Sheets of Vellum; and there are above Two Hundred Hands of the most Eminent Families of that Kingdom set to that Bond. Twenty-five of these were then Earls and Lords; and there are Fifteen others, whose Families are since that Time advanced to be of the Nobility. The Noblemen are, the Earl of *Murray*, (who signs *James Regent*) the Earls of *Huntley*, *Argyle*, *Athol*, *Morton*, *Mar*, *Glencairn*, *Errol*, *Buchan*; the Lords *Graham*, *Home*, *Ruthven*, *Sanquar*, *Glams*, *Lindsay*, *Carlisle*, *Borthwick*, *Innermaith*, *Uchiltry*, *Sempil*, *Methven*, *Cathcart*, *Grey*, *Ross*, *Lovat*, and the Master of *Montross*: For Earls Sons were then so designed. The Noble Families, whose Ancestors signed this Bond, are, *Buccleugh*, *Queensberry*, *Athol*, *Roxburgh*, *Anandale*, *Galloway*, *Findlater*, *Pannmur*, *Dalhousy*, *Leven*, *Stair*, *Kenmure*, *Jedburgh*, *Cranston*, *Kircudbright*.

Besides those who subscribed the First Bond, there was a Second Bond (that is likewise in the Collection) entred into in *April* 1569; "by which they did not only acknowledge the King's Authority,

" but

" but likewise (during the King's Minority) the Authority of the Earl of *Murray*, as Regent; renouncing all other Authority. And they swear to observe this Bond; in which if they fail'd, they are contented to be counted False, Perjured, and Defamed for ever."

1567.

This, besides many of those who signed the former Bond, was signed by the Earls of *Crawford* and *Cassilis*, and the Lords *Salton*, *Ogilby*, *Oliphant*, and the Ancestors of the Earls of *Seaforth* and *Southesk*, and of the Lord *Duffus*. And in a subsequent Bond, signed to the Earl of *Morton* when he was Regent, there are Five other Lords, who signed it: The Earl of *Angus*, Ancestor to the Duke of *Douglas*, the Lords *Levingston*, *Drummond*, *Boyd*, and *Hoy* of *Tyfer*, the Ancestors of the Earls of *Linlithgow*, *Perth*, and *Kilmarnock*, and of the Marquis of *Tweedale*.

These were for the greatest part Protestants: But there were many Papists that joined with them. The Earl of *Huntley*, Ancestor to the present Duke of *Gordon*, was at the Head of the Popish Party. The Earl of *Athol*, whose Name was *Stuart*, and whose Family is since extinct in the Male Line, protested against the Reformation in Parliament, and had assisted at the Baptism of the Young King, in the Popish Manner. And besides these, the Lords *Oliphant*, *Gray*, *Sempill*, *Maxwell*, and *Borthwick*, were still Papists. Thus, as the War against the Queen Regent (Eight Year before) was engaged in on National Grounds, this great Revolution of that Kingdom, seems to have proceeded, as to the Civil Part, upon the same Principles. So that whatsoever was done in this Matter, was done, not upon the Grounds of the Reformation, but upon National Grounds, and pretended Precedents and Laws: In all which, the Queen of *England* had secretly a great Hand, how much soever it was disguised, or denied.

Papists joined  
with Prote-  
stants.

The Interest of State was clearly of her Side: For the House of *Guise*, that began to form Great Projects in *France*, laid a main Part of their Scheme, in the Design of Advancing the Unfortunate Queen of *Scotland* to the Crown of *England*: And in the View of that Succession, many Plots were formed, to destroy that Glorious Queen. They also practised upon the King her Son, as soon as he was capable of being wrought on, by the Duke of *Lenox*, and others; whom they employed about him, to keep him in a Dependance on them. They assured him, he should still be King of *Scotland*; their Design being, that if their Practices against Queen *Elizabeth* had succeeded, his Mother should have left *Scotland* to him, when She was advanced to the Crown of *England*. They did likewise engage him to continue unmarried: Tho' He, being the only Person of his Family, it was otherwise very reasonable to marry him soon. Yet they durst not venture on a Popish Match, till their Great Design on the Crown of *France* had succeeded: And they would by no means suffer him to Marry into a Protestant Family.

The Reasons  
that moved  
Q. Elizabeth  
to be jealous  
of the King  
of Scotland.

They kept him so much in their Management, that the Queen of *England*, and her Wise Council, understanding all this Practice, raised those Jealousies of his Religion, and made such Discoveries of that secret Correspondence he was in with the House of *Guise*, that to this all the Troubles that the Kirk gave him were chiefly owing.



1567.  
The Effects  
that this had.

The Leaders among them knew, from the Intelligence sent them by the Court of *England*, more than they thought fit to own, or than could be well proved, This was the true Cause of all that peevish Opposition, that he met with from the Ministers there; which is copiously set forth by Archbishop *Spotswood*. But either he knew not, or did not think fit to set that out, as the Effect of the Jealousy raised by the Court of *England*, on the Account of the Confidence in which he was engaged with the House of *Guise*.

But as these Practices had a fatal Conclusion with Relation to the Unfortunate Queen *Mary*, after her long Imprisonment, so when upon the Murder of the Duke of *Guise*, and the Successes in the Beginning of *Henry* the IVth of *France's* Reign, all those Projects of that Ambitious and Persecuting House, were at an End; the King of *Scotland* married to a Daughter of *Denmark*, and continued still after that in a Confidence with the Queen of *England*, which secured to him the Succession to that Crown.

In giving this Short View, which I thought Important, and in which I was instructed by many Papers that I have seen, I have run a great way beyond my Design; which was only to open the First Settlement of the Reformation in the Isle of *Great-Britain*, now happily by her Late Majesty united into One Kingdom: So that nothing remains to be written in Pursuance of that. Only, since upon some Publick Occasions, I have referred to a Declaration of Queen *Elizabeth's*, (by which She owned and justified, the Assistance that She gave to the Subjects, both of *Scotland*, and in the *Netherlands*, in the Necessary Defence, to which the Illegal Cruelty of their Governors forced them;) and since I have been Challenged to Publish it, not without Insinuations that it was a Forgery; I have thought it proper to conclude my Collection of Records with that Declaration; that so a Paper of such Importance may be preserved, and may be more generally read.

Coll. Numb.  
97.

The Conclusion.

I now conclude this Work; in which, as I have faithfully set out every Thing, according to the Materials and Vouchers with which I was furnished, so I have used all proper Means, to procure the best Information that I could. It remains, that I leave this to Posterity, as the Authentick History of a Series of Great Transactions, honestly (tho' often feebly) conducted, with good Intentions, and happy Beginnings, tho' not carried on to the Perfection that was designed and wished for.

The *Proviso* that had passed in King *Henry* the VIIIth's Time, that continued all the Canon-Law then received in *England*, till a Code of Ecclesiastical Laws was prepared; which tho' attempted, and well composed, was never settled; has fixed among us many gross Abuses, besides the dilatory Forms of those Courts, which make all Proceedings in them, both slow and chargeable. This has in a great Measure enervated all Church-Discipline. A Faint Wish, that is read on *Asb-Wednesday*, intimates a Desire of Reviving the Ancient Discipline; yet no Progress has been made, to render that more effectual.

The

The Exemptions settled by the Papal Authority, do put many Parts of this Church in a very disjointed State; while in some Places the Laity, and in many others Presbyters exercise Episcopal Jurisdiction, independent on their Bishops; in Contradiction to their Principles, while they assert a Divine Right for settling the Government of the Church in Bishops, and yet practise Episcopal Authority in the Virtue of an Act of Parliament, that provisionally confirmed those Papal Invasions of the Episcopal Power; which is plainly that, which by a Modern Name is called *Eraastianism*, and is so severely censured by some who yet practise it, since whatsoever is done under the Pretence of Law, against the Divine Appointment, can go under no better Name, than the highest, and worst Degree of *Eraastianism*.

1567.

The Abbots, with the devouring Monasteries, had swallowed up a great Part of that which was the true Patrimony of the Church: These Houses being suppressed, unlimited Grants were made of their Lands, without reserved Provisions for the Subsistence of those who were to serve at the Altar; this has put a great Part of our Clergy under crying Necessities; and though the Noble Bounty of the late Queen has settled Funds for their Relief, the good Effect of that comes on but slowly: Yet it is some Comfort to think that within an Age, there will be an ample Provision for all that serve in the Church; and upon that Prospect we may hope that many Abuses will be then quite abolished.

But with all these Defects, we must rejoice in this, that our Doctrine is pure and uncorrupted; that our Worship is truly a *reasonable Service*, freed from Idolatry and Superstition; and that the main Lines of our Church Government agree to the First Constitution of the Church by the Apostles: So that upon the Grounds laid down by St. *John*, all may hold Fellowship with us, since we hold Fellowship with the Father, and with the Son Jesus Christ.

May we all adhere firmly to the *Doctrine of the Apostles*, and continue in their Fellowship, in Sacraments and Prayers, suitably to the Rules laid down by them: Contending earnestly for the Faith delivered by them to the Saints, the First Christians: And may all who believe in God, be careful to maintain Good Works for Necessary Uses; which are both Good and Profitable unto Men; avoiding Foolish Questions, and Contentions, for they are unprofitable and vain.

May we all continue to recommend our Doctrine and Church by a Holy and Exemplary Deportment, *Shining as Lights, and walking Worthy of God, who has called us to his Kingdom and Glory*; improving all the Advantages that we have, and bearing with all the Defects that we labour under, using our best Endeavours to have them redressed; yet still keeping the *Unity of the Spirit in the Bond of Peace*; waiting for such a Glorious Conjunction, as may restore every Thing among us to a Primitive Purity and Splendor: Which God may perhaps grant to the Prayers of those who call on him Night and Day for it.

But



1567.

But if we never see so happy a Time upon Earth, we know if we continue Watchful, and *Faithful to the Death*, we shall arrive at last at a Blessed Society, of *innumerable Companies of Angels*, and the *Spirits of Just Men made Perfect*; of whom is composed the *General Assembly and Church of the First Born, who are Written in Heaven, who see and enjoy God for ever*. In the View of Directing my self, and others thither, I have written, and now I do conclude this Work.

---

A T A-

A

# TABLE

## OF THE

# CONTENTS

## OF THE

# HISTORY.

### BOOK I.

Of Matters that happen'd in the Time comprehended  
in the First Book of the History of the Reformation.

Anno 1300.

**T**HE Progress of the Papal  
Usurpations, Pag. 2  
The Schism in the Pa-  
pacy, ibid.  
The Council of Basil, ibid.  
The Pope and Council quarrel, p. 3

Anno 1438.

**T**HE Pragmatic Sanction  
made in France. ibid.  
The Effects it had, p. 4  
VOL. III.

The Pope condemns it, ibid.

Anno 1458.

**I**N a Council at Mantua, ibid.  
Lewis the XIth abrogates it,  
p. 5  
To the Pope's great Joy, ibid.  
The Parliament of Paris oppose it,  
ibid.  
The Honest Courage of the Attorney-  
General, p. 6  
For which he was turn'd out, ibid.  
The Pragmatic Sanction re-esta-  
blished, p. 7  
4 Q Anno



Anno 1499.

**B**UT it was still complained of  
by the Popes, p. 7  
Condemn'd by the Council in the  
Lateran, ibid.

Anno 1516.

**T**HE Concordate put instead  
of it, p. 8  
King Francis carried it to the Par-  
liament of Paris, ibid.  
It was there opposed by the Eccle-  
siasticks of that Court, p. 9  
Opposition made to it by the King's  
Learned Council, ibid.

Anno 1517.

**T**HEY resolve not to publish  
it, p. 10  
The King was highly offended at  
this, ibid.  
The King's Learned Council oppose  
it no longer, p. 11

Anno 1518.

**T**HE Parliament publishes  
it, but with a Protestation,  
ibid.  
The University and Clergy oppose it,  
p. 12  
The Exceptions to the Concordate  
by the Parliament, ibid.  
These were answered by the Chan-  
cellor, p. 13  
The Matter finally settled, p. 14  
The Parliament still judged by the  
Pragmatick Sanction, ibid.

Anno 1524.

**U**PON the King's being a  
Prisoner, the Concordate  
was more condemn'd, p. 15

Anno 1527.

**T**Hese Matters removed from  
the Parliament to the Great  
Council, ibid.

Anno 1532.

**R**emonstrances made by the  
Clergy against this, ibid.  
An Apology, with the Reasons for  
this Digression, p. 16

Anno 1513.

**Q**ueen Katherine's Letter to  
King Henry, upon the Death  
of the King of Scotland, p. 17  
The Progress of Wolsey's Rise,  
ibid.

Anno 1521.

**K**ing Henry's Book of the se-  
ven Sacraments, p. 18

Anno 1524.

**W**olsey sent to Charles the  
Vth, gained by him, ibid.  
Wolsey's Practices to be Chosen  
Pope, p. 19  
Wolsey's Designs when Chosen  
Pope, p. 20  
The King of France taken Prisoner,  
p. 21  
Lord Burleigh's Character of Wol-  
sey, ibid.  
Wolsey's Proceedings as Legate,  
p. 22  
His Insolence to Warham, ibid.  
A Legatine Synod, p. 24

Anno

Anno 1523.

**H**E called the Convocation of  
Canterbury to sit with him,  
ibid.

Colet's Sermon before a Convoca-  
tion, p. 25  
Colet's Character, p. 27  
Sir Tho. More's Thoughts of Reli-  
gion, and his Utopia. p. 29

## B O O K II.

Of Matters that happen'd during the Time comprehend-  
ed in the Second Book of the History of the Reformation.

Anno 1525.

**M**ANY Ambassadors in Spain,  
p. 33

Anno 1527.

**W**olsey's Letter to them, p. 34  
The Sack of Rome, ibid.  
The Cardinals write to the Pope  
for a full Deputation, p. 35  
Knight sent to Rome. ibid.  
Pace wrote to the King of his Di-  
vorce, p. 36

Anno 1528.

**A** Bull sent to Wolsey to judge  
the Marriage, p. 37  
It was not made use of. ibid.  
The Bishops think the King's Scru-  
ples reasonable. p. 38  
The Emperor's Answer to the King  
by Clarencieux, ibid.  
A Proposition to depose the Emperor  
p. 39

Anno 1529.

**K**ING Henry's Letters to  
Anne Bullen, p. 41

The King and Queen seemed to live  
well together, p. 42  
The Legates go to the King and  
Queen, p. 43  
The Queen treats Wolsey very se-  
verely, ibid.  
The Bishop of Bayonne's Opinion of  
the Pope's Dispensation, ibid.  
Apprehensions of Disorders on the  
Queen's Account, p. 44  
Endeavours to gain Campegio,  
ibid.  
Wolsey's Credit shaken, ibid.  
The Duke of Norfolk and Suffolk  
his Enemies, p. 45  
The Proceedings of the Legates,  
p. 46  
The Cardinal's Disgrace, p. 49  
All his Goods seized on, p. 50  
Wolsey's good Conduct in his Dio-  
cese, ibid.  
The King Consults the Universities,  
p. 51  
Proceedings in Convocation, ibid.  
Translation of the Scriptures con-  
demned, ibid.

Anno 1530.

**T**HE Steps made in the carry-  
ing the King's being de-  
clared Head of the Church, p. 52

The



**K**ING Henry opposes the  
Interview with the Pope in  
vain, p. 72  
The Duke of Norfolk sent to France,  
p. 73  
But soon recalled, ibid.  
The King of France was to have  
been Godfather, if Queen Anne  
had brought a Son, ibid.  
The Interview at Marfeilles, p. 74  
Great Promises made by the Pope,  
ibid.  
Practices upon Cardinals, p. 75  
The Convocation meets, p. 76  
They treat concerning Residence,  
ibid.  
An Answer to the Complaints of the  
Commons, p. 77  
Proceedings against Hereticks, ibid.  
The Petition to the King, ibid.  
The Submission made to the King  
one Bishop only dissenting, p. 78  
The Proceedings at York, p. 79  
Proceedings during the Vacancy of  
Canterbury, p. 80  
The Convocation judges against the  
King's Marriage, p. 81  
Archbishop Cranmer, gives Sentence  
against it, ibid.  
With that the Court of Rome was  
highly offended, p. 82  
Bonner intimates the King's Ap-  
peal to the Pope, ibid.  
It was rejected by the Pope, p. 83  
Bellay sent over to the King, by  
King Francis, p. 84  
A Representation made to the Em-  
peror, p. 86  
Bellay prevailed much on the King  
to submit, ibid.  
A Letter of the King's to his Am-  
bassadors at Rome, ibid.  
Duke of Norfolk's Letter to Mont-  
morancy, p. 88  
The Pope was in great Anxiety,  
p. 89  
Bellay

*Bellay was to go to Rome, in hopes  
to make up the Breach,* p. 89

*The final Sentence given in great  
Haste,* ibid.

*The Courier came two Days too  
late,* p. 90

*Further Proofs of this Matter,*  
ibid.

*Reflections on this Breach,* p. 91

*All in England concur to renounce  
the Pope's Authority,* p. 92

*An Order for the bidding of Pray-  
ers and Preaching,* p. 93

*Instructions given to Paget, sent to  
some Northern Courts,* p. 94

#### Anno 1534.

**N**egotiations in Germany,  
p. 97  
*Advices offered the King,* ibid.

*A Letter of the King's to the Ju-  
stices, to observe the Behaviour  
of the Clergy,* p. 98

#### Anno 1535.

**T**HE Archbishop of York is  
*suspected to favour the Pope,*

p. 99

*He justifies himself,* ibid.

*Of the Sufferings of Fisher and  
Moore,* p. 100

*An Expostulation with the Court of  
France,* p. 101

*The King of France engages him-  
self to adhere to, and defend the  
King in his second Marriage,*  
ibid.

## B O O K III.

Of what happened during the Time comprehended in  
the Third Book of the History of the Reformation ;  
from the Year 1535, to King Henry's Death, Anno 1547.

#### Anno 1535.

**T**HE King was much pleased  
*with the Title of Supreme  
Head,* p. 104

*The Archbishop of Canterbury's  
Title changed,* ibid.

*Cranmer and Gardiner oppose one  
another,* ibid.

*Cranmer vindicates himself,* p. 105

*Bishops proceed against those who  
desired a Reformation,* ibid.

*The Archbishop of York much sus-  
pected,* p. 106

#### Anno 1536.

**C**omplaints of the Monks and  
Fryars, p. 108

*The Archbishop of York clears him-  
self,* ibid.

*All Preaching is for some time pro-  
hibited,* p. 109

*A Treaty with the Lutheran Prin-  
ces,* ibid.

*Barnes sent to them,* p. 110

*Melanchthon's going to France pre-  
vented,* p. 111



*The French King fluctuates*, p. 111  
*Fox sent to Germany*, ibid.  
*A Treaty with the Princes of Germany*, ibid.  
*Censured by some, but justified by others*, p. 112  
*The Smalcaldick League*, p. 113  
*The Demands of the German Princes*, p. 114  
*The King's Answers to them*, p. 115  
*They write to the King*, p. 116  
*And send Ambassadors to him*, p. 117  
*Queen Katherine's Death*, p. 118  
*Queen Anne Bullen's Tragical End*, ibid.  
*Her Behaviour at her Trial, and at her Death*, p. 119  
*The Emperor desired to be reconciled to the King*, p. 121  
*The King answered that coldly*, p. 122  
*He refuses any Treaty with the Pope*, ibid.  
*Proceedings in Convocation*, p. 123  
*Pole made a Cardinal*, ibid.  
*He wrote first against the Divorce*, p. 124  
*Sends one to the King with Instructions*, p. 125  
*Tonstal writes copiously to him*, p. 126  
*Cardinal Pole's Vindication of himself*, p. 129  
*The King was reconciled to the Emperor*, p. 131  
*Dr. London's Violent Proceedings, in suppressing the Monasteries*, p. 132  
*Cheats in Images discovered*, ibid.  
*Tonstal wrote a Consolatory Letter to the King, when Queen Jane died*, p. 133  
*Orders about Holy Days*, ibid.  
*Injunctions given by the Archbishop of York*, p. 134  
*Injunctions by the Bishop of Coventry and Litchfield*, p. 135  
*And by the Bishop of Salisbury*, ib.

*Gresham's Letter to the King for putting the Great Hospitals in the Hands of the City*, p. 136

### Anno 1538.

**T**HE King grows severe against the Reformers, p. 137  
*He sets out a long Proclamation*, p. 138  
*An Account set forth by the King of Thomas Becket*, ibid.  
*A Circular Letter to the Justices of the Peace*, p. 139

### Anno 1539.

**N**EW Significations put on the Old Rites, p. 140  
*Many Executions in England*, ibid.  
*The Project of Endowing the Church of Canterbury*, ibid.  
*Disapproved by Cranmer*, p. 141  
*The Design of the Six Articles*, ibid.  
*The King marries Anne of Cleve*, p. 142  
*Commission to Cromwell, to constitute some under him*, ibid.  
*The King in Love with Katherine Howard*, p. 143  
*Cromwell's Fall*, p. 144  
*A New Treaty with the German Princes*, ibid.  
*Some of Cromwell's Memorandums*, p. 145  
*The Matters first charg'd on him, from which he clears himself*, p. 146  
*Reflections on the State of Affairs at that Time*, p. 147  
*Of the King's Divorce with Anne of Cleve*, ibid.  
*What passed in Convocation*, p. 148  
*Exceptions in the Act of Grace*, ibid.  
*A Design against Crome*, ibid.  
*Prosecutions upon the Six Articles*, p. 151  
*A Con-*

*A Conspiracy against Cranmer,*  
p. 152  
*His great Mildness,* ibid.  
*Some Steps made in setting out True*  
*Religion,* p. 153  
*Catherine Howard's Disgrace,*  
p. 154

Anno 1542.

**P**AGET's Negotiations with  
the Court of France, p. 155  
*The Duke of Orleans promised to*  
*declare himself a Protestant,* p.  
158

Anno 1543.

**P**Ractices on him, End with his  
Life, p. 159  
*Proceedings in Convocation,* ibid.  
*A New Translation of the Bible de-*  
*sign'd,* ibid.

Anno 1544.

**A** Reformation of the Ecclesia-  
stical Laws was far ad-  
vanced, p. 161  
*Bell, Bishop of Worcester, resigned*  
*his Bishoprick,* ibid.  
*Audley, Lord Chancellor, died*  
ibid.  
*Practices on some Lords of Scot-*  
*land,* ibid.

*Mount sent to Germany,* p. 162  
*A War with France,* p. 163  
*Bulloign taken,* ibid.  
*The King is forsaken by the Empe-*  
*ror,* ibid.  
*A Litany set out in English, with*  
*other Devotions,* p. 164

Anno 1545.

**T**HE King neglects the Ger-  
man Princes, p. 165

Anno 1546.

**T**HE Elector of Saxony's ill  
Opinion of the King, p. 166  
*Ferdinand discontented with the*  
*Emperor,* ibid.  
*The Duke of Norfolk's Imprison-*  
*ment,* p. 167  
*His Letter to the King,* ibid.  
*A Recapitulation of King Henry's*  
*Reign,* p. 170  
*His Mind corrupted by a Course of*  
*Flattery,* ibid.  
*The Curse of all Courts,* p. 171  
*Wolsey began it, but was a wise*  
*Minister,* ibid.  
*A great Occasion of Flattery given*  
*by his Book,* ibid.  
*The Character of More,* p. 172  
*Cromwell's Ministry,* ibid.  
*The King's Inconstancy in Matters*  
*of Religion,* p. 173

## BOOK IV.

Of what happen'd during the Reign of King *Edward* the  
IVth, from the Year 1547, to the Year 1553.

Anno 1547.

**A** True Account of a Paper of  
Luther's, wrong published  
in my History, p. 175

*Vargas's Letters concerning the*  
*Council of Trent,* p. 176  
*Translated into English, by Dr.*  
*Geddes,* ibid.

And



*St. Chrysoſtom's Letter to Cæſarius, brought to England, ibid*  
*The Lady Mary denies that ſhe, or her Servants, were concerned in the Riſings, ibid.*  
*The entertaining Foreign Troops in England, p. 190*  
*The Popiſh Party deceived in their Hopes on the Proteſtor's Fall, p. 192*

Anno 1549.

**P**roceedings against Gardiner, p. 193  
*All Preaching is forbidden, except  
 by Persons especially Licensed,* p. 195  
 Heath refuses to subscribe the Book  
 of Ordination, *ibid.*

Anno 1550.

**D**AY *Bishop of Chichester,*  
*in Trouble for not removing*  
*Altars,* p. 196  
*Scandals given by many,* p. 197  
*Gardiner is deprived,* p. 198  
*An Account of Bishop Hooper,*  
p. 199

Anno 1552.

THE Duke of Somerset's last  
Fall, p. 209  
Hooper's Impartial Zeal, ibid.  
The Articles of Religion prepared,  
p. 210  
Not passed in Convocation, ibid.

Anno 1553.

**B**UT published by the King's  
Authority, p. 212  
And sent to the Archbishop of Can-  
terbury, ibid.  
And the Bishop of Norwich, p. 213  
And to the University of Cambridge,  
ibid.

<i>Cranmer designed to set up the Provincial Synods,</i>	p. 214	<i>A Character of the Court in King Edward's Time,</i>	ibid.
<i>King Edward's Scheme of the Succession,</i>	ibid.	<i>The bad Lives of those who professed the Gospel,</i>	p. 217
<i>Much altered,</i>	p. 215	<i>Much lamented by the Reformers,</i>	p. 218
<i>Opposed long by Cranmer,</i>	ibid.	<i>The Providence of God towards the Reformed,</i>	p. 219
<i>The Primate of Ireland poisoned,</i>	p. 216		

## B O O K V.

Of what happened during Queen *Mary's* Reign, from the Year 1553, to the Year 1558.

## Anno 1553.

**T**HE Queen's Words were soft, p. 220  
 But her Proceedings severe, ibid.  
 Against Cranmer, Hooper, and others, p. 221  
 The Duke of Northumberland begs his Life, but in vain, p. 222  
 Others suffered with him, p. 223  
 A Convocation summon'd, ibid.  
 A Treaty of Marriage with the Prince of Spain, ibid.  
 Wyatt's Rising, and Principles, p. 224

## Anno 1554.

**L**ADY Jane Gray executed, p. 225  
 Severities against the married Clergy, ibid.  
 Aggravated by some, p. 226  
 The Queen writes the first Letter to King Philip, ibid.  
 Proceedings against Hereticks, ibid.  
 A Convocation, p. 227  
 Cranmer's Treason pardoned, that he might be burned, ibid.  
 The Council orders severe Proceedings, p. 228  
 The Reconciliation with Rome design'd, ibid.  
 Pole sent Legate for that End, p. 229

VOL. III.

*He wrote to the Queen,* ibid.  
*The Queen's Answer,* p. 230  
*His first Powers,* ibid.  
*Cardinal Pole stopp'd in Flanders by the Emperor,* p. 231  
*New and fuller Powers sent to Pole,* ibid.  
*With Relation to Church Lands,* p. 232  
*All was laid before the Emperor,* p. 233  
*Yet he was still put off by Delays,* ibid.  
*The Reason of those Delays,* p. 234  
*Cardinal Pole much esteemed by the English Ambassador,* p. 236  
*He writes to King Philip,* ibid.  
*The Queen sent to bring him over to England,* p. 237  
*The Queen believed her self to be with Child,* ibid.  
*Cardinal Pole carries his Powers beyond the Limits set him,* p. 238  
*Some preach for restoring the Abbey Lands,* ibid.

## Anno 1555.

**T**HE Archbishop of York set at Liberty, p. 239  
 The Reformers when tried by Gardiner, were firm, p. 240  
 Hooper, the first Bishop that suffer'd, barbarously used, ibid.  
 Persons



*Persons appointed to carry the News  
of the Queen's being delivered,*

p. 242

*Orders for Torture at Discretion,*

p. 243

*The Queen still looked to be delivered  
of a Child,*

ibid.

*A Practice that gives Suspicion of  
ill Designs,*

ibid.

*Plots pretended,*

p. 244

*Cardinal Pole's Letter to Cranmer,*

ibid.

*Ambassadors sent to the Pope, came  
back with a Bull, erecting Ire-  
land into a Kingdom,*

p. 245

*The Pope's Bull for restoring all  
Church Lands,*

ibid.

*Reflections made on it,*

p. 246

*Cranmer proceeded against,*

p. 248

#### Anno 1556.

**P**roceedings in Convocation, p.

250

*Motions in the Dyet of the Empire,*

p. 251

*Compassion expressed to those who  
suffered, punished,*

ibid.

*Charles the Vth's Resignation of  
Spain,*

p. 252

*Reasons to think he died a Protestant,*

p. 253

*The Method in which the Queen put  
her Affairs,*

p. 254

*Proceedings against Hereticks,*

p. 255

#### Anno 1557.

**T**HE Pope sets on a New  
War, after a Truce was sworn  
to, and dispensed with the French  
King's Oath,

p. 256

*Pole's National Synod,*

p. 257

*A great scarcity of all Things,*

p. 258

*Prosecution of Hereticks,*

ibid.

*Calais in danger of falling into the  
Hands of the French,*

p. 259

*An Account of Lord Sturton's Ex-  
ecution,*

p. 260

*Allarms oft given of Plots,*

p. 261

*A severe Prosecution,*

ibid.

*Cardinal Pole saved two Persons,*

ib.

*The Nation abhorred this Cruelty,*

p. 262

*A great Coldness in those Matters at  
Bristol,*

ibid.

*Boner call'd on by the Council to be  
more severe,*

p. 263

*The Papal Provisions in this Reign,*

p. 264

#### Anno 1558.

**P**roceedings in Convocation, p.

265

*A General Treaty of Peace was  
opened,*

ibid.

*Small Hope of having Calais restor-  
ed,*

ibid.

*A particular Relation of the Occa-  
sion of the Queen's Death,*

p. 268

*A Parallel of Queen Mary, and  
Queen Elizabeth's Reign,*

p. 269

## B O O K VI.

### Of the Beginnings of Queen Elizabeth's Reign.

#### Anno 1558.

**H**ER Inclinations in Religion  
cautiously managed, p. 270  
Mount sent to Germany, p. 271

*A Match with Charles of Austria  
advised,*

ibid.

*The Reformers return to England,*

ibid.

*They were well received by the  
Queen,*

p. 272

Anno

Anno 1559.

**T**Hose of Zurick advise a thorough Reformation, p. 273  
*The Earl of Bedford had stay'd some Time at Zurick, and wrote to them,* ibid.  
*Proceedings in Convocation,* ibid.  
*The Bishops oppose the Reformation in the House of Lords,* p. 274  
*Jewel complains of Want of Zeal, and an Excess of Caution,* p. 276  
*Peter Martyr's Advice to Grindal,* p. 277  
*The Beginnings of the Reformation in the Parl. of Scotland,* p. 278  
*The Use of the Scriptures in the Vulgar Tongue, much opposed,* p. 279  
*But granted,* ibid.  
*A perfidious Proceeding of the Court of France,* p. 280  
*The great Progres of Superstition in Q. Mary's Reign,* p. 288  
*The Revenues of the Bishops lessen'd,* ib.  
*Jewel's Opinion of the Disputes concerning the Vestments,* p. 289  
*The Queen kept a Crucifix in her Chapel,* ibid.  
*Bishops Consecrated,* ibid.  
*The Emperor proposes to the Queen a Match with his Son Charles,* ibid.  
*She excuses her self,* ibid.

Anno 1560.

**A** Conference concerning the Queen's Crucifix, p. 290  
*The Zeal in Singing Psalms,* ibid.  
*Sands, Bishop of Worcester, much offended at the Image in the Queen's Chapel,* p. 291  
*Sampson's Exceptions at his being made a Bishop,* ibid.  
*He refused a Bishoprick,* p. 292  
*A Peace made in Scotland,* p. 293  
*Parker's Care of the Northern Sees,* ibid.  
*The Popish Bishops made great Alienations,* p. 294  
*Jewel's Apology published,* ibid.  
*The French grew weary of carrying on the War in Scotland,* p. 295  
*It was brought to a good End,* p. 296

*A Message to the Queen of England,*  
 ibid.

Anno 1560.

**S**igned by the Three Estates, p. 297  
*The Queen of England's Answer to it,* ibid.  
*The Death of Francis II.* p. 298  
*The Queen of Scotland did not ratify the Peace,* ibid.

Anno 1561.

**S**HE is jealous of Lord James, p. 299  
*The Duke of Guise studied to divert the Queen from Assisting the Prince of Conde,* p. 300  
*Proceedings in Convocation,* ibid.

Anno 1562.

**S**ome Alterations made in the Articles of Religion, p. 301  
*Great Debates concerning some Alterations in the Book of Common-Prayer,* p. 302  
*A Practice common among Papists, of Knocking on their Breast, saying, Culpa mea, at the Elevation,* ibid.  
*But by one Proxy it was carried, that none should be made,* p. 303  
*A Book of Discipline offered by the Lower-House,* ibid.  
*Other Things prepared for the Convocation,* p. 304  
*A further Continuation of the History, beyond my former Work,* p. 305  
*A Controversy about the Use of Things indifferent,* ibid.

Anno 1564.

**G**reat Diversity in Practice, p. 306  
*The Queen wrote to the Archbishop of Canterbury, to bring all to an Uniformity,* p. 306  
*Orders set out by the Bishops,* ibid.  
*Horn, Bishop of Winchester, writes to Zurich, upon these Diversities in Practice,* p. 307  
 Anno



## Anno 1565.

**A** *Nswers from thence, justifying those who obeyed the Laws,* p. 308

*Bullinger writes to those who would not obey them,* p. 309

*That Letter was printed in England,* p. 310

*Bullinger's Answ. to Sampf.* p. 312

*They wrote to the E. of Bedford,* ib.

## Anno 1566.

**G** *Rindal and Horn's Letter, shewing their Uneasiness in many Things,* p. 314

*Jewel's Sense of those Matters,* p. 315

*Reflections on this Matter,* p. 316

*Other Letters written to Zurich by some Bishops,* ibid.

## Anno 1567.

**O** *F the Affairs of Scotland,* ibid.

*The Queen of Scots marries the Lord Darnly,* p. 318

*She shews more Zeal in her Religion,* p. 319

*The Demands of the Reformed,* ib.

*The Queen's Answer to them,* p. 320

*Their Reply to it,* p. 321

*The Queen of Scots Practices,* ibid.

*Another more pressing Petition made to her,* p. 322

*Letters concerning the Murder of Signior David,* p. 323

*Letters concerning the Murder of the Lord Darnley,* p. 324

*A Relation of that Matter by the Pope's Nuncio,* p. 325

*That Queen left the Crown of England to King Philip of Spain, by her last Will,* p. 327

*An Association of the Scottish Nobility, to defend the Right of their young King,* p. 328

*In this Papists joined with Protestants,* p. 329

*The Reasons that moved Queen Eliz. to be jealous of the King of Scotland,* ibid.

*The Effects that this had,* p. 330

*The Conclusion,* ibid.

## An ADDITION.

**I** Have laid out, by all the Methods I could think on, for that *MS.* of Archbishop *Spotswood's* History, that I mention *Pag.* 285. I once thought I had found it; for I fell on one Copy, that had belonged to the late Duke of *Lauderdale*; but it was not that which had belonged to me: Yet by that I see, that Archbishop came gradually, and not all at once, out of his first Opinion. For in this *MS.* there is a Material Difference in the Correction that is in the Archbishop's own Hand, from the first Draught. The first Draught is, *That Princes may commit Offences deserving Deprivation*: But the Correction is, *They may fall into great Offences*, without any more. A little after he had written, *Whatsoever may be thought of this Opinion*; which imports some doubt concerning it: These Words are struck out; but so that they are still legible. A little after that, the *MS.* has it, that *by an Act of Council, all the Errours committed by the Queen Regent were reckoned up.* This is softned, by these Words inserted after *Errours*; *alleged to have been committed.* Thus it appears, that the Archbishop's first Notions, had carried him to write in a Stile that wanted great Correction, as his Thoughts grew into a better Digestion, or as his Interests carried him to see Things in a different Light, from that in which they had at first appeared to him.

A  
COLLECTION  
O F  
Records, Letters,  
A N D  
Original Papers,  
With Other  
I N S T R U M E N T S  
Referred to in the Former HISTORY.



COLLECTION

Rocky Mountain

Geological Survey

U. S. GEOLOGICAL SURVEY


WASHINGTON, D. C.

A  
COLLECTION  
O F  
RECORDS, &c.

Number 1.

*The Bull of Pope Paul the IVth, annulling all the Alienations of Church Lands.*

Rescissio alienationum & locationum quorumcunque bonorum Ecclesiasticorum, in damnum Ecclesiarum, vel non servatis juris solemnitatibus aut alias nulliter factarum. *Bullar Cberubini. Bulla secunda Pauli quarti.*

 Imilem rescissionem fecit, Leo X. & postea Jul. III. quas prætermisi tanquam minus necessarias, & eas inseruit Rodoan. in suo Tract. de Reb. Eccles. non alienan. & eandem edidit etiam Pius IV, quo ad bona Sedis, & Camera Apostolicæ in const. 104. Apostolica. Quamvis prius ipse hanc bullam generaliter reduxisset ad terminos juris communis in Const. 11. Provida. Sed Pius V. ejusmodi bonorum omnium Ecclesiasticorum alienationis rescissionem commisit Collegio Fabricæ Basilicæ S. Petri de Urbe, ut in sua Const. 98, & si de singulis.

De alienationibus istis, habes supra Const. 1 Leonis 1. Fol. 1. & Pauli II. in Const. 5. Ambitiosæ. Fol. 329. Et de alienationibus ac infeudationibus Civitatum & Terrarum sedis Apostolicæ, ac bonorum quæ subditi Papæ habent in ejus statu Ecclesiastico, plene dicam in constitut. 1. Innocent IX. Quæ ab hac.

Paulus Episcopus, servus servorum Dei. Ad futurum rei memoriam.

1. Injunctum nobis desuper, meritis licet imparibus, Apostolicæ servitutis officium, mentem nostram continua pulsât instantia, ut bona Ecclesiastica, quæ cæca hominum cupiditate occupata detinentur, nostræ

*Edita A. D. 1555. Symmachus Papa bona Ecclesiastica alienari prohibuit. in c. 6. de Reb. Eccles. non alienan.*



nostræ operationis Ministerio, ad jus, & proprietatem eorum quorum antea erant, omnino reducantur. Cum itaque (sicut nobis innotuit) licet alias fel. re. Symmachus Papa Prædecessor noster prædium Ecclesiæ pro aliqua necessitate quovis modo alienari, aut jura Ecclesiæ in usum fructum dari prohibuerit, & lege hujusmodi omnes custodes astringi, ac donatorem, ac censuatorem, & venditorem honorem perdere, & qui præmissis subscriberet, anathema esse, cum eo qui daret, five reciperet, nisi restituerentur, & quas libet Ecclesiasticas personas contradicere, & cum fructibus alienata reposcere posse, hocque non solum in Ecclesia Romana conservari, verum etiam in universis per provincias Ecclesiis convenire voluerit.

Paulus 2. alienationes bonorum Ecclesiasticorum, & ultra triennium locationes, &c. interdixit in Const. cit. in rubr.

2. Et piæ mem. Paulus Papa 2. etiam prædecessor noster omnium rerum, & bonorum Ecclesiasticorum alienationem, omneque pactum, per quod ipsorum dominium transferretur, ac concessionem, hypothecam, locationem, & conductionem ultra triennium, necnon infeudationem, vel contractum emphyteuticum, præterquam in casibus à jure permissis, ac de rebus & bonis in emphyteusim ab antiquo concedi solitis, fieri prohibuerit. Et si quis contra hujus posterioris prohibitionis seriem, de bonis & rebus eisdem quicquam alienare presumeret, alienatio, hypotheca, concessio, locatio, conductio, infeudatio hujusmodi nullius omnino essent roboris, vel momenti, & tam qui alienaret, quam qui alienatas res, & bona reciperet, sententiam excommunicationis incurreret, & nihilominus res & bona alienata hujusmodi, ad Ecclesias, monasteria, & loca pia, ad quæ antea pertinebant, libere reverterentur.

Alienationes tamen multæ factæ fuerunt in damnum Ecclesiarum, vel non servatis solemnitatibus.

3. Nihilominus à nonnullis annis citra diversæ personæ, tam seculares quam Ecclesiasticæ, complura Castra, Terras, Oppida, Civitates, & loca, tam Romanæ prædictæ, quam diversum Cathedralium, etiam Metropolitanum & aliarum Ecclesiarum nec non Monasteriorum, domorum, & aliorum Regularium locorum, ac Hospitalium, & aliorum Piorum locorum, prætextu diversarum alienationum, eis de castris, terris, oppidis, civitatibus, & locis prædictis in evidens damnum Ecclesiarum, Monasteriorum, domorum, Hospitalium, & aliorum Regularium, & Piorum locorum, seu alias non servatis solemnitatibus à jure requisitis factarum occupaverint, & occupata detinuerint, detineant de præsentis, ac ex inde factum sit, ut non solum Ecclesiarum, Monasteriorum, & domorum Prælati, ac Hospitalium, & aliorum Regularium, & Piorum locorum hujusmodi Rectores, qui ex fructibus, redditibus & proventibus castrorum, terrarum, oppidorum, civitatum, & locorum hujusmodi, Ecclesias, Monasteria, & domus Hospitalia, & alia loca prædicta gubernabant, & illustrabant, ac eorum Ministris alimoniam prebebant, notabiliter sint, damnificati, verum etiam Rom. Pont. qui antea egenis, & miserabilibus personis, præsertim nobilibus ad hanc Almam Urbem pro tempore confugientibus alimenta aliunde subministrare consueverat, vix se & familiam suam sustentare, ne dum aliis alimenta subministrare possit, in divinæ Majestatis offensam, & ordinis clericalis opprobrium, ac plurimorum Christi fidelium scandalum.

Ideo hic Pont. alias rescindit, & annullat.

4. Nos præmissa conniventibus oculis pertransire nequeunt, quinimmo cupientes eis, quantum cum Deo possumus, opportunum remedium adhibere, motu proprio, & ex certa nostra scientia, ac de

Apostolicæ potestatis plenitudine, omnes & singulas alienationes, & in emphyteusim, seu censum perpetuum, aut tertiam, vel aliam generationem, seu hominis vitam, aut aliud tempus ultra triennium locationes vel concessiones, seu permutationes, hypothecas, & obligationes, de quibus vis castris, terris, oppidis, civitatibus, & locis, aut aliis bonis immobilibus, seu rebus, & juribus, tam spiritualibus quam temporalibus ejusdem Romanæ, & quarumcunque Cathedralium, etiam Metropolitan, & aliarum Ecclesiarum, necnon Monasteriorum, domorum, & aliorum Regularium locorum, & quorumvis beneficiorum Ecclesiasticorum, cum cura & sine cura, secularium, & quorumvis Ordinum Regularium, necnon Hospitalium, & aliorum piorum locorum quorumlibet, per quoscunque etiam Rom. Pont. prædecessores nostros, seu eorum auctoritate, vel mandato, Camerarios suos, & Clericos Camera Apostolicæ Præsidentes, ac quosvis Ecclesiarum, Monasteriorum, & domorum Prælatos, & beneficiatos, necnon Hospitalium, & aliorum Regularium, & piorum locorum Rectores, cujuscunque dignitatis, status gradus, ordinis, & conditionis existentes, etiam si Cardinalatus honore pollerent, in damnum Ecclesiæ, seu non servatis solemnitatibus à jure requisitis, aut alias nulliter hætenus factas, & contractus superinde sub quibusvis formis, & verborum expressionibus habitos; & Celebratos, etiam si juramento vallati existant, & quantumvis longa temporis præscriptione robur sumpsisse dici possint, ac ipsius Romanæ Ecclesiæ favorum, aut commodum concernant, eorum omnium tenores, ac si de verbo ad verbum inferre, præsentium rescindimus, irritamus, cassamus, & annullamus, ac viribus omnino evacuamus, ac pro rescissis, irritis, cassis, & nullis, ac penitus infectis haberi Volumus.

5. Ipsosque detentores ad Castra, terras, oppida, civitates, & loca occupata, ac bona, res, & jura prædicta Romanæ & Cathedralibus, etiam Metropolitan ac aliis Ecclesiis, necnon Monasteriis, domibus, Hospitalibus, & beneficiis, ac Regularibus, & piis locis relaxandum, & de fructibus, tam hætenus perceptis quam in posterum percipiendis, realiter satisfaciendum teneri, & ad id etiam sententiis, censuris, & pœnis Ecclesiasticis, ac etiam pecuniariis, omnibusq; aliis opportunis, juris & facti, remediis cogi, & compelli posse.

6. Sicque in præmissis omnibus & singulis per quocunque Judices, & Commissarios, quavis auctoritate fungentes, etiam causarum Palatii Apostolici Auditores, & ipsius Romanæ Ecclesiæ Cardinales, ac eorum Collegium in quavis causa, & instantia, sublata eis, & eorum cuilibet quavis aliter judicandi, & interpretandi auctoritate, & facultate, judicari, & diffiniri debere ac si secus super his à quoquam quavis auctoritate, scienter vel ignoranter contigerit attentari, irritum & inane decernimus.

7. Non obstantibus constitutionibus, & Ordinationibus Apostolicis, cæterisq; contrariis quibuscunque. Nulli ergo &c. Si quis &c.

Dat. Romæ apud Sanctum Marcum, anno incarnationis Dominicæ, 1555. Pridie idus Julii, Pont. nostri Anno primo.

Detentores q.  
debere relax-  
are bona oc-  
cupata, &  
fructus resti-  
tuere declarat.

Decretum ir-  
ritans.

Clausulæ de-  
rogatoriæ.

D. P. An. 1.  
die 12. Julii.



## Number 2.

*A Letter of Queen Katherine's to King Henry, upon the  
Defeat of James the IVth, King of Scotland.*

*An Original.*

S I R,

*Vespasian.  
F. 3.  
P. 15.*

**M**Y Lord *Howard* hath sent me a Letter open to your Grace within oon of myn, by the whiche ye shall see at length the grete Victorye that our Lord hath sent your Subjects in your Absence: And for this Cause it is noo nede herin to trouble your Grace with long Writing; but to my thinking this Batell hath been to your Grace and al your Realme the grettest Honor that coude bee, and more than ye shuld wyn al the Crown of *Fraunce*: Thankend bee God of it, and I am fuer your Grace forgeteth not to doe this, which shal be cause to sende you many more suche grete Victories, as trust he shal doe. My Husband, for hastynesse with *Rogecrosse*, I coude not send your Grace the Peece of the King of *Scotts* Cote, which *John Clyn* now bringeth, in this your Grace shall see, how I can kepe my Promys: Sending you for your Baners a Kings Cote. I thought to send himself unto you, but our *Englishe* Mens Harts wold not suffer it: It shuld have been better for hym to have been in Peas than to have this Rewarde, al that God sendeth is for the best. My Lord of *Surroy*, My *Henry*, wold fayne knowe your Pleasure in the Buryeing of the King of *Scotts* Body, for he hath written to me soo, with the next Messanger your Grace Pleasure may bee herin knowen; and with this I make an ende, praying God to sende you Home shortly: For without this no Joye here can be accomplished: And for the same I pray and now go to our Lady at *Walsingham*, that I promised foe longe agoe to see, at *Woborne* the xvj Day of *September*.

I send your Grace herin a Bill founde in a *Scottyshe* Mans Purse, of suche Things as the *Frenshe* King sent to the said King of *Scotts* to make Warre against you: Befeeching you to send *Mathewe Heder* assoone this Messanger cometh to bringe me Tydings from your Grace.

Your humble Wife and true

Servant

*Katherine.*

## Number 3.

*A Letter of Cardinal Wolsey's to King Henry, with a Copy of his Book for the Pope.*

*An Original.*

S I R,

THESE shall be onely to advertise your Grace that at this pre-<sup>Paper-Office.</sup>fant Tyme I do send Mr. *Tate* vnto your Highnes with the Booke bounden and dressed, which ye purpose to send to the Popes Holynes, with a Memoriall of such other, as be also to be sent by him with his autentique Bulles to all other Princes and Universities. And albeit Sr this Booke is right honorable, pleasant and fair, yet I assure your Grace, that which *Hall* hath written (which within 4 Days wolbe parfited) is ferre more excellent and princely: And shall long contynue for your perpetual Memory whereof your Grace shall be more plenarye Informed by the said Mr. *Tate*. I do send also unto your Highnes the Choyse of certyne Versis to be written in the Booke to be sent to the Pope of your owne Hande: With the Subscription of your Name to Remain in *Archivis Eccleie ad perpetuam & Immortalem vestre Magestatis gloriam Laudem & memoriam*, by your

Most humble Chaplain

*T. Car<sup>lis</sup>. Ebor.*

## Number 4.

*A Letter of Cardinal Wolsey's to King Henry, about Foreign News; and concerning Luther's Answer to the King's Book.*

*An Original.*

S I R,

AFTER my most humble and lowly recommendations, these shall be to advertise your Highnes that as yet our Lord be thanked there is not comen any Confirmation either from *Rome Venice Italy France* or *Flanders* of the late Newes, which was sent from the Archeduke to the Lady *Margaret*: whereof by many other Letters I advertised your Grace. So that now the said News be generally reputed and taken but as frisks: and the bragging avaunts of the *Spaniards* be so accalmed that they not only account such Moneey as they have hitherto layde upon the said News to be thereby Lost, but also they dare not now aventre fyve four or thre for a hundred. Howbeit Sir I do not a Lytel marvyle that sinnes the seventh Day of the last Month in the which it was wrytten that



the feate against the *Venetians* should be doon, there be more Letters commen either from *France Rome Venyse or Italy*. It is bruted in *Flanders* that *Pavy* by Dedition should be delivered to the said *Venetians* hands, which if it be true your Grace shall shortly here of the *Spaniards* total extermination out of *Italy*.

I forbere Sir to dispech your Letters to the Cardinal of *Magunce* and the Duke *George* of *Saxe*: because I have not as yet neyther *Luthers* original Letters, which were very necessary to be sent to the Popes Holiness, nor also any Copy thereof, which must nede be sent with your Answer to the said Cardinal and Duke. It may be your Pleasure to take Orders that the said Original Letter or Copy thereof may be sent unto me with Diligence. Other News I have none to signify unto your Highness at this present tyme but as other shall occur I shall not fail to advertise your Grace of the same accordingly. At your Grace mannor of *Hampton Court* the fourth Day of *August* by your

most humble Chapleyn

*T. Carlis. Ebor.*

To the Kings most Noble Grace, Defender of the Faith.

---

Number 5.

*A Letter of Cardinal Wolsey's to King Henry, sent with Letters that the King was to write to the Emperor.*

*An Original.*

S I R,

*Paper-Office.*

AND forasmuch as my commyng to your Town of *Calais*, I suppose I shall be greatly pressed to repair to the Emperors presence, which to do without your Letters, written with your owne hand I cannot conveniently do, Therfor I have divised two short Letters, the one to the said Emperor, and the other to my Lady, beseechyng your grace to take the payne to write and sende the same unto me by this berer; whom I perposely sende at this tyme to your grace, surely to bring the same unto me with diligence And albeit I shall have your said Letters in redyness, yet I shall never the rather advance my Journey towards hym till such tyme as I shall see oportunitie: so that I have takyn some convenient order, with the Ambassadors of *France* for voidyng of all Jelousie and Suspition: and as I shall proceed with the Ambassadors on both parties, and fynde them disposed, so shall I advertise your grace with all diligence from tyme to tyme. And thus Heauen preferue your most noble and roiall estate. At *Dover* the first day of *August* by your

most humble Chapleyn

*T. Carlis. Ebor.*

To the Kings grace.

Number

## Number 6.

*A Letter of Cardinal Wolsey's to the King, concerning the  
Emperor's Firmness to him.*

*An Original.*

S I R,

**T**Hes wrytten with my owne hand shall be onely to Advertise *Paper-Office.*  
your Grace, what I do perceiue and be in the Emperors owne  
parson, wich I assure your Grace for his Age is very wyse and wel un-  
derstanding hys afferys: rygth colde and temperat in spech, with  
assury'd maner towchyng hys words, rygth wel and to good pur-  
pose when he doth speke: and undowgtydly by all appearance he  
shall prove a very wyse Man, gretly inclyned to trewgh and obser-  
uance of his promyte; determyned not onely fastly holly and en-  
tirly for ever, from hens forth to be joyned with your Grace, leving  
all other practyse and intellygens apart: but also in all his afferys to  
take and folowe your counsell and advise: And nothing to do without  
the same, And lyke as your Grace hath your singuler affayance in  
me, puttyng the Burdeyn of your officys on my shulders, though I  
knowleg my self farr unmeet for the same; so he ys determyned to  
do for his part. And hereunto he hath not onely bowndyn him yfself  
to me apart, twys or thrys by hys feyth and trowth givyn in my  
hande; but also he hath to every one of your Privy Counsell in most  
constant wyse declary'd the same, in suche maner and fashion as we  
all may perceyve that the same procedyth of his harte, without  
coloure, dissimulation or fashion. Wherfor, Syr, ye have cause to  
give thanks to almighty God, wich hath given you grace so to ordyr  
and commen your afferys, that ye be not only the ruler of thys  
your Realme, wich ys in an angle of the Worlde; but also by your  
wisdom and counsel *Spayne, Italy, Almayne*, and thes Lowe Cown-  
tyes, wich ys the grettest parte of *Crystendome*, shall be ruled and go-  
verned. And as for *France*, thys knot nowe beyng assurydly knit,  
shall not fayle to do as your grace shall commande. What honour  
thys is to your highnes I dought not but that your grace of your high  
wyfdom can ryght well consyder: giveying most hartly thanks to al-  
mighty God for the same accordingly, beseechyng your grace most  
humbly so to do, whereby thys thyng thus honorably commensyd  
shall not fayle to your great exultation, to come to the desyryd ende:  
to the atteynyng wherof I shal empley my poore parson wyt expen-  
syons, substance and Blood. From *Grewelyng* the 28th Day of *August*,  
with the rude hand of your

Most humble Chapleyn

*T Carlis Ebor.*

To the Kings grace ys owne hands onely.



## Number 7.

*The First Letter of Cardinal Wolsey to King Henry, about his Election to the Popedom upon Adrian's Death.*

*From the Originals lent me by Sir William Cook.*

S I R,

**I**T may like your Highnesse to understand I have this Houre received Letters from your Orator's Resident in the Court of *Rome*, mentioning how the xivth Day of this Instant Moneth It pleased Almighty God to call the Popes Holynesse to his Mercy, whose Soul our Lord Pardon. And in what Trayn the Matters there were at that Time for Election of the future Pope, your Highnesse shall perceive by the Letters of your said Orator's, which I send unto the same at this Time, whereby appeareth that mine Absence from thence shall be the onely Obstacle (it any be) in the Election of me to that Dignity; albeit there is no great Semblance that the College of Cardinals shall consent upon any being there present, because of the fundry Factions that be among themselves, for which Cause, though afore God, I repute my self right unmeet and unable to so high and great Dignity, desiring much rather to demure, continue and end my Life with your Grace, for doing of such Service as may be to your Honour and Wealth of this your Realm, than to be X Popes; yet neverthelesse, remembring what Mind and Opinion your Grace was of, at the last Vacation, to have me preferred thereunto, thinking that it should be to the Honour Benefit, and Advancement of your Affaires in Time coming: And supposing verily that your Highnesse persisteth in the same Mind and Intent, I shall devise such Instructions Commissions and other Writings, as the last Time was delivered to Mr. *Pace* for that purpose: And the same I shall send to your Grace by the next Post, whom it may like to do farther therein as shall stand with your gracious Pleasure, whereunto I shall always conform my self accordingly. And to the Intent it may appear farther to your Grace what Mind and Determination they be of, towards mine Advancement, which as your Orators wrote, have now at this present Time the Principal Authority and Chief Stroke in the Election of the Pope, making in manner *Triumviratum*, I send unto your Highnesse their severall Letters to me addressed in that behalf, beseeching our Lord that such One may be chosen as may be to the Honour of God, the Weal of Christ's Church, and the Benefit of all *Christendom*. And thus Jesu preserve your most Noble and Royal Estate: At the More the last Day of *September*, by

Your most humble Chaplayn

*T. Car<sup>lis</sup>. Ebor.*

Number 8.

## Number 8.

*The Second Letter of Cardinal Wolsey to the King, about the Succession to the Popedom.*

S I R,

**I**T may like your Grace to understand that ensuing the Tenor of my Letter sent unto your Highnesse yesterday, I have devised such Commissions and Letters to be sent unto your Counsellors the Bishop of Bath, Mr Richard Pace, and Mr Thomas Hanibal, jointly and severally, as at the last Time of Vacation of the Papall Dignity were delivered unto the said Mr Richard Pace; for the Preferment either of me, or that failing of the Cardinal de Medici unto the same, which Letters and Commissions if it stand with your gracious Pleasure to have that Matter set forth, It may like your Highnesse of your Benign Grace and Goodness to signe, so to be sent to the Court of Rome in such diligence as the Importance of the same, with the Brevity of the Time doth necessarily require. And to th' Intent also that the Emperor may the more effectually and speedily concur with your Highnesse for the furtherance hereof, Albeit I suppose verily that ensuing the Conference and Communications which he hath had with your Grace in that behalf, he hath not pratermitted before this Time to advance the same, yet neverthelesse for the more acceleration of this Furtherance to be given thereunto, I have also devised a familiar Letter in the Name of your Grace to be directed unto his Majesty, which if it may please your Highnesse to take the Payne for to write with your own Hand, putting thereunto your secret Sign and Mark, being between your Grace and the said Emperor, shall undoubtedly do singular Benefit and Furtherance to your gracious Intent, and virtuous Purpose in that behalf. Beseeching Almighty God that such Effect may ensue thereof, as may be to his Pleasure, the Contentation of your Highnesse, the Weal and Exaltation of your most Royal Estate, Realm and Affaires, And howsoever the Matter shall chance, I shall no lesse knowledge my self obliged and bounden farr above any my Deserts unto your Highnesse, then if I had attained the same, whereunto I would never in Thought aspire, but to do Honor Good and Service unto your Noble Person and this your Realm. And thus Jesu preserve your most Noble and Royal Estate, At the More the First Day of October, by

Your most humble Chaplain

*T. Car<sup>lis</sup>. Ebor.*

Number 9.



## Number 9.

*The Third Letter of Cardinal Wolsey ; giving an Account  
of the Election of Cardinal Medici to be Pope.*

S I R,

**A**Fter my most humble and lowly Recommendations, This shall be onely to advertise your Highnesse that after great and long Altercations and Contrariety which hath depended between the Cardinall's in the Conclave, they at the last fully resolved and determin'd (the Faction of *France* abandoned) to elect and chioose either my Lord Cardinal *de Medici* or Me, which Deliberation coming to the Knowledge of the Nobles and Citizens of *Rome*, they alledging that the Affairs of *Italy* being in the Trayn, as they then were, It should be to the extreme Danger thereof to chioose a Person absent, which could not ne might in Time come to put Remedy unto the same, made sundry great Exclamations at the Conclave-Window, whereby the Cardinall's being in fear not only of the Inconvenience like to ensue unto *Italy*, but also of their own Person's, Albeit they were in manner principally bent upon me, yet for eschewing of the said Danger and Murmur, by Inspiration of the Holy Ghost, without further Difficulty or Businesse the sixth Day of the last Moneth in the Morning elected and chose the said Cardinal *de Medici*, who immediately was published Pope, and hath taken the Name of *Clement VII.* Of which Good and Fortunate New's, Sir, your Highness hath much Cause to thank Almighty God: Forasmuch as not onely he is a perfect and faithful Friend to the same, but that also much the rather by your Means he hath attained to this Dignity. And for my Part, as I take God to record, I am more joyous thereof, than if it had fortun'd upon my Person, knowing his excellent Qualitys, most meet for the same; And how great and sure a Friend your Grace and the Emperor be like to have of him, and I so good a Father, by whose Assumption unto that Dignity, not only your and the said Emperors Affairs's, but also of all *Christendom* shall undoubtedly come to much better and more prosperous Perfection: Like as upon the First Knowledge thereof the *Frenchmen* be clearly departed from *Milan*, and pass'd a River towards *France* called *Ticino*, Trusting that the next New's which shall come from thence shall be of their Arrival at Home, wherein as I shall have further Knowledge, so I shall Advertise your Highnesse thereof accordingly, And thus Jesu preserve your most Noble and Royal Estate. At my poor House besides *Westminster* the vith Day of *December*, by

Your most humble Chapleyn

*T. Car<sup>lis</sup>. Ebor.*

Number 10.

## Number 10.

*A Remarkable Passage in Sir. T. More's Utopia, left out in the latter Editions.*

CÆterum Theologus quidam frater hoc dicto in Sacerdotes ac Monachos adeo est exhilaratus, ut jam ipse quoque cæperit ludere, homo alioqui prope ad torvitatem gravis. At ne sic quidem, inquit, extricaberis à mendicis, nisi nobis quoque prospexeris fratribus. Atqui, inquit, parasitus, hoc jam curatum est. Nam Cardinalis egregie prospexit vobis, quum statueret de coercendis, atque opere exercendis erronibus. Nam vos estis erronei maximi. Hoc quoque dictum, quum conjectis in Cardinalem oculis, eum viderent non abnuere, cæperunt omnes non illibenter arripere, excepto fratre. Nam is (neque equidem miror) tali prefusus aceto, sic indignatus est, atque incanduit, ut nec à conviciis quidem potuerit temperare: Hominem vocavit nebulonem, detractorem, fufurronem, & filium perditionis, minas interim terribiles citans è scriptura sacra. Jam scurra scurio scurrari cæpit. Et erat planè in sua Palæstra. Noli, inquit, irasci bone frater, scriptum est, in patientia vestra possidebitis animas vestras. Rursum frater (referam enim ipsius verba) non irascor, inquit, furcifer, vel saltem non pecco. Nam Psal-mista dicit, Irascimini & nolite peccare. Admonitus deinde frater à Cardinale suaviter, ut suos affectus compesceret. Non domine, inquit, ego loquor nisi ex bono zela, unde dicitur, zelus domus tuæ comedit me. Et canitur in ecclesiis, Irrisores Helizei, dum conscendit domum dei, zelim calui sentiunt, sicut fortasse sentiet iste derisor, scurra, ribaldus. Facis inquit Cardinalis, bono fortassis affectu, sed mihi videris factururus, nescio an sanctius, certe sapientius, si te ita compare, ne cum homine stulto & ridiculo, ridiculum tibi certamen instituas. Non domine inquit, non facerem Sapientius nam Solomon ipse Sapientissimus dicit: Responde stulto secundum stultitiam ejus, sicut ego nunc facio, & demonstro ei foveam in quam cadet, nisi bene præcaveat. Nam si multi irrisores Helizei, qui erat tantum unus caluus, senserunt zelum calui, quanto magis sentiet unus derisor multorum fratrum, in quibus sunt multi calui? Et etiam habemus bullam Papalem, per quam omnes qui derident nos, sunt excommunicati.



## Number 11.

*A Letter of the Pope's upon his Captivity, to Cardinal  
Wolsey.*

*An Original.*

Cotton Libra-  
ry, Vitellius,  
B. 9.

**D**ilecte fili noster Calamitas nostra cum à nobis digne explicari ne-  
queat tuæ Circumspectioni per dilectum filium Equitem Casta-  
lium referretur qui interfuit ipse omnibus, & filium nobis amantem exi-  
bens quam essent grata ejus in nos officia ad extremum ostendat. Nos  
in tanto constituti dolore & luctu unicum solamen ac spem in tuæ Cir-  
cumspectionis apud illum Serenissimum Regem auctoritate & ipsius Re-  
gis erga nos & S. Ecclesiam pietate reponimus; ut pro vestra consue-  
tutine & bonitate S. Ecclesiam tam indigne afflictam commendatam  
suscipias: sicut ex eodem Equite atque ex Nuntio nostro omni alio  
presidio quam tuæ benignitatis spoliato intelliget. Datum in Arce S.  
Angeli sexta Junii 1527.

J.

## Number 12.

*A Part of Cardinal Wolsey's Letter to the King con-  
cerning his Marriage:*

*Taken from the Original.*

Cotton Libra-  
ry, Vitellius,  
B. 9, p. 146.

**W**E dayly and howlerly musing and thinking on your Graces gret  
and secrete Affayre, and howe the same may cume to good  
Effecte and desired Ende, aswel for the Deliverance of your Grace  
out of the thrauld pensif and dolorous Lif that the same is in, as for  
the Continuance of your Helth and the Suertie of your Realme and  
Succession, considering also that the Popes consent, or his Holines  
deteyned in Captivite, the Auctorite of the Cardinalls nowe to be con-  
voked into *France* equivalent thereunto, must concurre for Approba-  
tion of such Procèsse as I shal make in that behaulf; and that if the  
Quene shall fortune, which is to be supposed she will doe, eyther  
appele or utterly decline from my Jurisdiction (one of the said Aucto-  
rities is also necessarily requisite) I have noon other thought ne studye  
but how in avaylable maner the same may be attayned. And after  
lòng discussion and debating with my self, I finally am reduced and  
resolved to two Points; the oon is that the Poores consent cannot be  
obteyned and had in this Case oonles his Delyveraunce out of Cap-  
tivite be first procured: the other is that the Cardinalls canne nothing  
doe in this behalfe, oonles there be by them Consultation and Order  
taken, what shall be doon in *Administratōne rerum Ecclesiasticarum*  
*durante dicta captivitate summi Pontificis.*

As

As touching the Restitution of the Pope to Libertie the State of the present Affaires considered the most prompt sure and redy waye is, by conclusion of the Peace betwixt the *Emperor* and the *French King*: for the advancement and setting forward whereof I shall put my self in extreme devour, and by al possible meanes induce and persuade the said *French King* to strayne himself and condescende to as much of the Emperours Demands as may stande with Reason and Suertie of his and your Gracs Affayres; moving him further, that forasmuch as the Emperour taketh your Hignes as a Mediator making fayre demonstration in Words, that he will at your Contemplation and Arbitre, not oonly declare the botom of his Mynde concerning his Demaund, but also remitte and relent in the same, he wil be contented that your Grace forbering the Intimacion of Hostilitie maye in the managing of the said Peace and inducyng the Emperour to reasonable Conditions, be so taken and reputed of him, without any outward declaration to the contrary untyl such tyme as the conducing of the said Peace shal be clerely desperate: Whereby if the said *French King* canne be induced thereunto, maye in the meane season use the benefit of their Entercourse in the Emperours *Lowe-Countries*: not omiting nevertheles for the tyme of solliciting the said Peace, the diligent Zeal and effectual Execution of the Sworde by Monsieur de *Lautrek* in the Parties of *Italy*: whereby your Gracs said Mediation shal be the more set by and regarded.

And in case the said Peace cannot be by these means brought to effecte, whereupon might ensue the Popes delyverance, by whose auctorite and consent your Gracs affayre shuld take most sure honourable effectual and substantial ende, and who I doubt not considering your Gracs gratitude, wold facilly be induced to doe all things therein that might be to your Graces good satisfaction and purpose, thenne and in that case there is noone other remedy but the Convocation of the said Cardinalles; who as I am enformed will not nor canne conveniently convene in any other Place but at *Avinion*, where the Administration of the Ecclesiastical Jurisdiction hath been in semblable Cases heretofore exercised. To the which Place if the said Cardinalles canne be induced to cume, your Highnes being soo contented, I purpose also to repare, not sparing any labour travayl or payne in my body chargs or expense, to do service unto your Grace in that behalfe; according to my most bounden Dutie and harty Desyre, there to consulte and devise with them for the Governance and Administration of the Auctorite of the Church during the said Captivity: which shall be a good Grounde and Fundament for the effectual execution of your Gracs secrete Affayre.

And for asmuch as thus repairing to *Avinion* I shall be nere to the Emperours Confines, and within an hundred Myles of *Perpinian* which is a commodious and convenient Place to commen and treat with the Emperours Personne, I think in my poor Opinion that the conducing of Peace by your Graces Mediation not being desperate, nor Intimation of Hostilite made on your behalfe, it should much conferre aswell for the Delyverance of the Poope, as for concluding of the Peace between the *French King* and the *Emperor*, if his Majesty



He cannot be so contented that a meeting might be between him, my Lady the French Kinges Modre, and Me at the said *Perpinian*; to the which.—

*This is all in the Copy written in Cardinal Wolsey's Hand.*

Number 13.

*A Letter written by King Henry VIII. to Cardinal Wolsey, recalling him Home.*

*Among S. W.  
Cook's Pa-  
pers.*

MY Lord this shall be to thank you of your great paines and travaile which you have sustained since your departure hence, for our busynesse and causes: wherein you have done to us no little honour, pleasure and profit, and to our Realm an infinite goodnesse; which Service cannot be by a kind Master forgotten, of which fault I trust I shall never be accused, specially to youward which so laboriously do serve me. Furthermore because as yet since the Popes Captivity we never sent to salute him, nor have no Man resident there to advertize us of the Affaires there; and also lest the Queene should prevent us by the Emperours means in our great Matter; We think it meet to send this Bearer thither, of whose Truth and Sincerity we have had long proof, praying you to give him such Instructions and Commissions as shall be for our Affairs there Requested: and that with convenient diligence, to the intent our Affairs there may have some stay. No more at this time, but that greatly I desire your Return home, for here we have great Lack of you, and that you give full Credence to my Secretary this Bearer; Written with the Hand of your loving Soverign Lord and Friend

HENRY R.

Number 14.

*A Letter from Rome by Gardiner to King Henry, setting forth the Pope's Artifices.*

*An Original.*

*Paper-Office.*

PLEASETH it your Majestie to be advertised that endeavoring our selves to the best of our Powers al joyntely and I my self aparte applying al my poore Wit and Lernyng to attayne at the Popes hande sum parte of the accompyshement of your Highnes desires, finally have nothing prevayled: but now see it called in Question whether the Auctorite geven to the Legats there shulde be revoked or noe. The circumstance whereof and what hath been doon and said therein, your Highnes shall understande by our commen Letters which we have

have written to my Lorde Legats Grace, but to saye as I conjecture I think that Matier was moved but for a stop of our other Suts, and that it is not earnestly ment: And albeit there is mencion of the Queen in that Matier as thowe she should have a Procter for the same, yet the Pope two dayes before, in an other Communication said that the Emperour had advertised him, how the Queen wolde do nothing in this Matier, in saying nor speaking to any Man for the let delaye or hindrance of this Matier, but as your Highnes shal wil and comand her to doe: And that the Emperour said, he would therefore more earnestly looke unto the Cause himself. I marveled much when the Pope said this, and me thought he spoke it as though he wolde we shuld signifie the same unto your Highnes, and I noted it the more, for because your Highnes had commanded me to enquire out who shuld be here the Queens Proctor: and it seemed spoken for the nones, as to put me out of doubt thereof. But whither the Pope hath this written out of *Spayne* or out of *Englande*, I wot not what to saye. But it seemed strange to us to rede in Cardinal *Campegnis's* Letters, that neyther he nor *Campanus*, made on the Pope's Behalf, any Promyse to your Highnes, but only in general Terms, considering that upon these special Terms *de plenitudine potestatis*, and trust that the Pope wolde use that in your Highnes Cause, I was sent hither, like as in my Instructions is conteyned: Which failing, your Highnes I doubt not right well remembreth how Master *Wolman*, Mr. *Bell*, and I showed your Highnes such Things as wer to be required, not to be impetrable: My Trust is that your Highnes wil accept in good Part my true Harte and good Will, which according to my most bounden Duty shall never want, but be holly applyed where your Highnes shall command without respeck or regard of any other lyving Creature, being very sory to see your Highnes Cause handled in this sorte. But your Highnes hath so much vertue in you, whereof God is to be thanked, as may suffice to converte other Mens Faults into Goodness, to your Highnes gret Glory, Renowne, and Immortal Fame: which is all that canne be said after my poor Witt herin, considering that your Highnes hath been not well handled, nor according to your Merits by the Pope, or sum other: it becometh not me to arrecte the Blame certaynly to any Man. And the Pope shewith Cardinal *Campegnis* Letters for his Discharge, which Thing your Highnes shall much better judge and consider by your high Wisdom thenne I canne write, most humbly desiring your Highnes that being in these Termes with the Popes Holynes, we may know of your Highnes what to say further.

As touching the Bulles to be here impetracte for your Highnes, I have spoken with the Popes Holynes, and he is content in all Points to grant as I required him, saving in that matier *de animadversione in Clericos*, to the which he wolde not absolutely assent, but said he wold with the Cardinal *Sanctorum quatuor* devise that shuld be to your Highnes Satisfaction: wishing then that he might grante as easely our other Petitions, which he knoweth your Highnes to have more to Harte, as he may these, adding by and by that he would for the Welth of *Christendom*, the Queen wer in her Grave: and as he thought the



Emperour wolde be thereof most glad of al: saying also that he thought like as the Emperour hath destroyed the Temeralties of the Church, soe shall she be the Cause of the Destruction of the Spiritualities. Making exclamation of his Misfortune in whose Personne these two Adversities shuld chaunce, and upon the Occasion of that Famylie. Whenne we speak with him we think we shuld have all Things, and in the Ende his Counsaile denyeth all: By reason the Cardinall *Sanctorum quatuor* hath been sick, and is every other Day likely, and for the most parte when the Cardinall is hol the Pope is like, we have yet no expedition of the said Bulles, trusting that your Highnes will have Consideration of these Letts, accordingly praying Almighty God to preserve your most Noble and Royall Estate. From Rome the 4th Daye of Maye,

Your Highnes most Humble

Subject Servant and dayly Orator,

*Steven Gardyner.*

Number 15.

*The Pope's Promise in the King's Affair.*

Cotton Librar-  
y, Vitellius  
B. 12.

CUM nos Clemens Domina providentia illius nominis papa septimus modernus iustitiam ejus causæ perpendences quam charissimus in Christo Filius noster Henricus Octavus Angliæ Rex illustris Fidei Defensor & dominus Hiberniæ, de ejus Matrimonii nullitate tanquam Notorium Publicum & famosum, apud nos exposuit, quod cum charissima in Christo Filia nostra Catharina claræ memoriæ Ferdinandi Hispaniarum regis catholici Filia nulliter & de facto contraxisse & consumasse affirmati leges tam dominas quam per humanas in ea parte notorie transgrediendo, prout revera sic transgrediebat. Ad dilectos nobis in Christo Filios Thomam & Laurentium miseratione divina sancta Cecilie & sanctæ Mariæ transiberim respective titularum nostri & sedis Aplice in Regno Angliæ predicto legatos de lacere commissionem sub certa tunc expressa forma; quam pro hic inserta & expressa haberi volumus & habemus; emiserimus, ac eosdem nostros in ea parte vicegerentes ac competentes Judices deputaverimus, prout sic etiam tenore presentium effectualiter & plenissime conjunctim & divisum committimus & deputamus, quo ammi nostri eidem Henrico Regi in iusticia illa quam celerime administranda propensionem certius & clarius attestemur securiorem que reddamus de judiciorum labyrintho longo varioque ambitu in causis (ut nunc sunt mores) iustissimis non una forte ætate explicabili, denique ut processus per eosdem deputatos nostros nuper & secundum tenorem dictæ commissionis habitus & factus fiendus ve aut habendus validus & firmus ac inconvulsus maneat, pro-

promittimus & in verbo Romani Pontificis pollicemur, quod ad nullius preces requisitionem instantiam mero ve motu aut aliter, ullas unquam literas, brevia, bullas; aut rescripta aliave quecunque per modum vel justitiæ vel gratiæ aut aliter, quæ materiam emissarum ante hac in causa predicta commissionum commissionis ve predictæ processus ve per hujusmodi deputatos nostros nuper & secundum tenorem dictarum commissionum commissionis ve predictæ habitus & factus habendi ve aut fiendi, inhibitoria, revocatoria, aut quovismodo prejudicialia quacunque ratione contineant atque ut dictarum commissionum vel commissionis processus vero hujusmodi plenam perfectam finalem & effectualem executionem remorentur, impedian, aut in aliquo contrariantur, illa ve aut eorum aliqua revocentur, aut eisdem vel eorum aliquibus in toto vel in aliqua parte eorundem prejudicent, concedemus: sed datas a nobis eisdem deputatis nostris commissiones & commissionum hujusmodi processum quæ per hujusmodi deputatos nostros juxta & secundum tenorem dictarum commissionum commissionis ve predictæ habitum & factum, habendum qua & fiendum sua plenissima vi auctoritatum robore & efficacia realiter & cum effectu confirmabimus, ratihabemus, tenebimus & defendemus. Denique omnes tales literas brevia, bullas, aut rescripta alia ve quæ dictarum commissionum commissionis ve hujusmodi processus ve antedicti executionem aut ejusdem virtute decreta, deffinita, & pronunciatum per eosdem deputatos nostros, confirmare possint aut valent absque mora recusatione, difficultate, quacunque de tempore in tempus realiter & cum effectu valida & efficaria, dabimus & concedemus. Et insuper promittimus & in verbo Romani pontificis pollicemur quod præmissa vel eorum aliqua nullacemur infringemus nec aliquid contra ea vel eorum aliqua directe vel indirecte tacite vel expresse, principaliter vel incidenter, quovis quesito colore vel ingenio, nisi vi vel metu coacti, vel dolo aut fraude ad hoc inducti, attemptabimus aut faciemus: sed ea omnia & singula firma valida inconcussa & inviolabilia patiemur & permittemus. Ac infurum si (quod absit) aliquid contra præmissa vel eorum aliqua quovismodo faciemus aut attemptemus, illud pro casso irritum inani & vacuo omnino haberi volumus & habemus: ac nunc prout ex tunc, & extunc pro nunc, cassamus, annullamus & reprobamus, nullius quæ roboris aut efficacix fore vel esse debere pronunciamus decrevimus & declaramus. Datum Viterbie Die xxiii July Millesimo Quingentissimo Vigesimo Octavo Pontificatus nostri Anno Quinto.

*Ita est Clemens Papa Septimus Antedictus.*



## Number 16.

*Some Account of the Proceedings of the University, in the Case of the Divorce, from Dr. Buckmaster's Book M. S. C. C. C.*

**Q**UOD hodie studia vestra interpellaverim Doctissimi Senatores, ac Viri gravissimi, Voluntas Regia in Causa est, cui pro insigni bonitate sua, ac summo quem erga nos & studia nostra gerit amore, tum etiam pro aliis forsitan negotiis, in quibus vestras prudentias consulere decrevit sua Majestas, visum est placuitque literis suis vos omnes salutare, quas si diligenter auscultare velitis, à me statim per legente audietis.

To our Trusty and Well-beloved the Vicechancellour,  
Doctors, and other Regents and Non-Regents of our  
Universitie of *Cambridge*.

*By the Kyng.*

**T**RUSTY and Well-beloved, we grete you well. And whereas in the Matter of Matrimony between Us and the Quene, uppon Consultation had with the gretest Clerks of *Christendom*, as well withoute this our Reaime, as within the same, thei have in a grete Nombre affermed unto us in writing, and therunto subscribed their Names, that, *Ducere uxorem fratris mortui sine liberis sit prohibitum jure Divino & naturali*, which is the chefe and principall Point in our Cause. We therefore desirouse to knowe and understand your Myndes and Opynyons in that behalf, and nothings dowtinge, but like as ye have always founde us to you and that our Universitie, favourable, benevolent, and glad to extend our auctoritie for your wealth and benefite, whan ye have required the same, ye will now likewise not onytt to doo any thyng wherby ye shulde mynistrer unto us gratuite and pleasour, and specially in declaration of the Truth, in a Cause so near touching us your Prince and Soveraine Lorde, our Soule, the Wealth also and Benefite of this our Realm, have sent hither purely for that our Purpose, our Trusty and Right Well-beloved Clerks and Counsaillors, Mayster Doctor *Gardyn* our Secretary, and Mayster *Fox*, who shall on our behaulf further open and declare unto you the Circumstances of the Premis: Wherefore we will and Require you, not oonly to gyve ferme credence unto them, but also to advertise us by the same under the Comen Seale of that our Universitie of such Oppynion in the Proposition afore sayd, as shall be ther concluded, and by the consent of lerned Men shall be agreed upon. In doing wherof, ye shall deserve our especiall Thanks, and gyve us Cause to encrease our Favour towards you, as we shall not faile to do accordyngly. Yeven under our Signet at *York's Place* the 16th Daye of *February*.

Acce-

Accepistis modo quod postulat à vobis Regia Majestas, Intelligitis quæ sit ejusdem voluntas, nimirum nihil aliud, nisi ut veritas cujusdam Conclusionis agnoscatur atque inter nos determinetur, quam ut sua refert plurimum scire, ita & nos pro studio illo ac amore quem omnes gerere debemus in Principem nostrum alioque Clementissimum, benignissimum & de nobis omnibus ac Achademia nostra optime meritum, omne studium ac diligentiam adhibere debemus, ut quod tam rationabiliter postulaverit, id impetretur nobis. Si de veritate quæstio aliquando emergat, ubi potius aut melius investigaretur, quam inter ipsos veritatis Professores, si veritas perquiri debeat, ubi melius quam in ipsa Achademia, ubi & bona semper vigent studia, solida judicia, ac mentes ab omni ambitione sunt aliena. Verum ergo prudentias vestras prolixiori oratione non detinebo, vobis ac vestro judicio ista relinquam. Est cuique suus animus liber ac ingenuus. Dicitur cuique in hac Causa Conscientia sua, Quod melius expedire viderit. Ego quod ad officium meum spectat, perficiam sedulo, nempe ut primi consulantur seniores, quid melius in hoc negotio putent faciendum, deinde & vestras scrutabitur sententias atque suffragia postulabimus.

Dixi.

*The Forme of the Grace that was axed and graunted in  
the Accomplishment of the Kyng's Requeste.*

**P**Lacet vobis ut Vicecancellarius, Doctores, Salcot, Watſon, Reps, Thomson de Collegio Michaelis, Venetus, Edmonds, Downes, Wygan, Creme, Boston, & Magistri, Mydelton, Heynes, Mylsente, Shaxton, Latymer, Symon, Mathew, Longforthe, Thyxtell, Nycols, Hutton, Skyp, Goodrick, Hethe, Hadway, Deye, & Bayne, una cum Procuratoribus, habeant plenam facultatem & auctoritatem nomine totius Universitatis, respondendi literis Regiæ Majestatis in hac Congregatione lectis, ac nomine totius Universitatis deſſiniendi & determinandi quæſtionem in eiſdem literis propositam: Ita quod quicquid duæ partes eorum præſentium inter ſe decreverint respondendum dictis literis, & deſinierint ac determinaverint ſuper quæſtione proposita in eiſdem, labeatur & reputetur pro reſponſione, deſſinitione & determinatione totius Universitatis. Et quod liceat Vicecancellario, Procuratoribus, Scrutatoribus, literis ſuper dictarum duarum partium reſponſione, deſſinitione, & determinatione, concipiendis, figillum Commune Universitatis apponere: Sic quod publice diſputetur, & antea legantur coram Universitate abſque ulteriori gratia, deſuper obtinenda aut petenda.

9. *Die Martii.*

Haudquaquam vos fugit (opinor) Clariff. Viri ac Senatores graviffimi, ut nuper Excellentiffimi Principis noſtri literas acceperitis, quibus cum ſuper quadam quæſtione inter illum ac Illuſtriſſimam Reginam Controverſâ, noſtram ſententiam deſideraret, flagitaret impenſe, nos (ut nos decuit) tanti Principis petitioni haudquaquam inique morem gerere volentes, tandem in illam omnium (preſertim Seniorum) ſuffragiis convenimus ſententiam, ut ſelectis quibuſdam Sacræ Theologiæ



tum Professoribus tum Bacchalaureis ac aliis Magistris tantam quæstionem examinandi, determinandi, ac definiendi, nomine totius Universitatis Provincia delegaretur. Illi (inter quos & ego minimus à vobis selectus) tantæ rei curam demandatam agentes, omni consultatione, deliberatione, diligentia, ac sacræ Scripturæ locorum conferentiâ, tum etiam Interpretum, denique publicâ disputatione præmissis, tandem ad illius quæstionis determinationem ac diffinitionem devenerunt. Super quâ ut nullus est vestrum (quibus ea provincia commissâ est) qui aut ambigere aut refragari possit: Ita & vobis omnibus (quod & Gratia à vobis concessa postulat) eandem compertam esse Volumus. Accipite igitur ac amplectimini, quod vestra Causa, vestrisque nominibus, à Fratribus vestris, per ingentes labores, ac summam industriam exantlatum est. Determinatio in hiis scriptis comprehensa sic habet.

Nos Universitas studentium Academiæ Cantabrigiæ, omnibus infra scripta lectionibus salutem. Cum occasione causæ Matrimonialis, inter Inviictissimum & Potentissimum Principem & Dominum nostrum Henricum octavum Dei gratia Angliæ Franciæque Regem, Fidei Defensorem, ac Dominum Hiberniæ, & Illustrissimam Dominam Catharinam Reginam controversæ, de illa quæstione nostra rogaretur sententia: videlicet, An sit jure Divino & naturali prohibitum, ne Frater ducat in uxorem Relictam fratris mortui sine liberis? Nos de ea re deliberaturi more solito convenientes; atque communicatis consiliis, Matura consultatione tractantes quomodo, quo ordine ad investigationem veritatis certius procederetur, ac omnium tandem suffragiis, selectis quibusdam ex doctissimis Sacræ Theologiæ Professoribus, Bachalauris, ac aliis Magistris ea cura demandata, ut scrutatis diligentissime Sacræ Scripturæ locis, illisque collatis referrent ac renunciarent, quid ipsi dictæ quæstioni respondendum putarent. Quoniam auditis, perpensis, ac post publicam super dicta quæstione disputationem matura deliberatione discussis hiis, quæ in quæstione prædicta alterutram partem statuere & convellere possint, Illa nobis probabiliora, validiora, veriora, etiam & certiora, ac genuinum & syncerum Sacræ Scripturæ intellectum præ se ferentia, Interpretum etiam sententiis magis consona visa sunt, quæ confirmant & probant, jure divino & naturali prohibitum esse, ne Frater uxorem fratris mortui sine liberis accipiat in conjugem: Illis igitur persuasi, & in unam opinionem convenientes, ad Quæstionem prædictam ita respondendum decrevimus, & in hiis scriptis, nomine totius universitatis respondemus, ac pro Conclusionem nobis solidissimis rationibus & validissimis argumentis comprobata affirmamus, quod ducere uxorem Fratris mortui sine liberis, cognitam à priori viro per Carnalem copulam, nobis Christianis hodie est prohibitum Jure Divino ac naturali. Atque in fidem & testimonium hujusmodi nostræ responsionis & affirmationis, hiis Literis sigillum nostrum commune curavimus apponi. Dat Congregatione nostra Cantabrigiæ, die nono Martii Anno Domini Millesimo quingentesimo vicesimo nono. Dominica 2. Quadragesimæ Anno Domini 1529. in Wyndesfor.

*Delivered by me W. B. Vicechancellor in the Chambre of Presence post vespas.*

*Your*

Your Univerſitie of *Cambridge* have them moſt humbly commended unto your Grace, and here thei have ſent unto your Highneſs their Letters. Than kiſſe them and ſo deliver them.

Furthermore as touching your Requeſt expreſſed in your Letters dyrected unto them by Mr. Secretary and Mr. *Fox* your moſt wyſe Counſaillers in th' accompliſhing of the ſame, they have don their Devors, and here in Writing under their Comon Seale, thei have ſent unto your Grace ther Sentence, deſyring the ſame to accept, and to take it in parte and good worthe. And if thei had any thing ellys to gratify your Grace wythall, their Letters and their Studies, your Highneſs ſhuld be ſuer thereof to the uttermoſt of their Powers.

*M. S. C. C. C. Given to the College by Dr. Jegon Maſter.*

*To the Right Worſhipfull Maſter Doct̃or Edmonds, Vicar of Alborne in Wiltſhire.*

**M**Y Duty remembred, I hartily commend me unto you, and I let you underſtand, that *Dominica Secunda* at Afternoon, I came to *Wyndſor*, and alſo to Part of Mr. *Latimer's* Sermon, and after the end of the ſame, I ſpake with Mr. Secretary, and alſo with Mr. Provost, and ſo after Even-Song, I delivered our Letters in the Chamber of Prefence; all the Court beholding. The King with Mr. Secretary did there read them, but not the Letters of Determination, notwithstanding that I did there alſo deliver them, with a Propoſition. His Highneſs gave me there great Thanks, and talked with me a good while. He much lauded our Wiſedomes and good Conveyance in the Matter, with the great Quietneſs in the ſame. He ſhewed me alſo what he had in his Hands for our Univerſity, according unto that, that Mr. Secretary did expreſs unto us, &c. So he departed. But by and by, he greatly praised Mr. *Latimer's* Sermon, and in ſo praiſing ſayd on this wiſe, This diſpleaſeth greatly, Mr. Vicechancellour yonder. Yon ſame, ſayd he unto the Duke of *Norfolk*, is Mr. Vicechancellour of *Cambridge*, and ſo pointed unto me. Then he ſpake ſecretly unto the ſaid Duke, which after the King's Departure came unto me, and wellcomed me, ſaying amongſt other Things, that the King would ſpeak with me on the next day; and here is the firſt Act. On the next day, I waited untill it was Dinner time; and ſo at the laſt Dr. *Butt* came unto me, and brought a Reward, twenty Nobles for me, and five Marks for the younger Procter, which was with me; ſaying that I ſhould take that for a reſolute Anſwere, and that I might depart from the Court, when I would. Then came Mr. Provost, and when I had ſhewed him of the Anſwere, he ſayd, I ſhould ſpeak with the King at after Dinner for all that, and ſo brought me into a privy place, where as he would have me to wait at after Dinner. I came thither and he both, and by One of the



Clock, the King entred in. It was in a Gallery. There were Mr. Secretary, Mr. Provost, Mr. *Latimer*, Mr. Proctor, and I, and no more: The King there talked with us, untill Six of the Clock. I assure you, he was scarce contented with Mr. Secretary and Mr. Provost, that this was not at all so determined, *An Papa possit dispensare*, &c. I made the best, and confirmed the same that they had shewed his Grace before, and how it would never have been so obtained. He opened his Minde, saying, that he would have it determined at after *Ester*, and of the same was counsailed a while.

I pray you therefore study for us, for our Business is not yet at an end, *An Papa potest dispensare cum Jure Divino*, &c. Much other Communication we had, which were too long here to recite. Thus his Highness departed, casting a little Holy Water of the Court: And I shortly after toke my Leave of Mr. Secretary and Mr. Provost, with whom I did not drink, ne yet was bidden, and on the Morrow departed from thence, thinking more than I did say, and being glad that I was out of the Court, where many Men, as I did both hear and perceive, did wonder at me. And here shall be an end for this time of this Fable.

All the World almost crieth out of *Cambridge* for this Act, and specially on me, but I must bear it as well as I may. I have lost a Benefice by it, which I should have had within these ten Dayes. For there hath one falne in Mr. *Throckmorton's* Gift, which he hath faithfully promised unto me many a time, but now his Mind is turned and alienate from me. If ye go to the Court at after *Ester*, I pray you have me in remembrance there, as ye shall think best. But of this no more.—Mr. *Latimer* preacheth still, *Quod æmuli ejus graviter ferunt*. I am informed, that *Oxford* hath now elected certain Persons to determine the King's Question. I hear say also, that Mr. Provost was there in great Jeopardy. Other Tidings I have none at this time, but that all the Company be in good Health, and heartily saluteth you. And thus fare you heartily well. At *Cambridge*, in *Craftino Dominic. Palmarum*.

Your own to his Power,

*William Buckmaster.*

The King willed me to send unto you,  
and to give you word of his Plea-  
sure in the said Question.

*M. S. C. C. C. Miscellan. P.*

## Number 17.

*Three Letters written by K. Henry to the University of Oxford, for their Opinion in the Cause of his Marriage.*

Letter I. *By the King.*

**T**Ruffy and well beloved Subjects, we greet you well. And Ex MS. D. Kennet. whereas we have for an high and weighty Cause of ours, not only consulted many and substantial well learn'd Men within our Realm and without, for certaine Considerations our Conscience moving, we think it also very convenient to feel the Minds of you amongst you in our University of *Oxenford*, which be erudite in the Faculty of Divinity, to the intent we may perceive of what Conformity ye be with the others, which marvelously both wisely and substantially have declared to us their intent and mind: Not doubting but that ye for the Allegiance and Fidelity that ye are bound unto us in, will as sincerely and truly without any Abuse declare your Minds and Conscience in this behalf, as any of the other have done. Wherefore we will and command you, that ye not leaning to wilfull and sinister Opinions of your own severall Minds, not giving Credence to Misreports and sinister Opinions or Perswasions, considering we be your Sovereigne Leige Lord, totally giving your true Mind and Affection to the true Overture of Divine Learning in this behalf, do shew and declare your true and just Learning in the said Cause, like as ye will abide by; wherein ye shall not only please Almighty God, but also us your Leige Lord. And we for your so doing shall be to you and our University there so Good and Gracious a Sovereigne Lord for the same, as ye shall perceive it well imploid to your well Fortune to come; In case you do not uprightly according to Divine Learning hand your selves herein, ye may be assured, that we not without great Cause, shall so quickly and sharply look to your unnaturall Misdemeanour herein, that it shall not be to your Quietness and Ease hereafter. Wherefore we heartily pray you, that according both to Duty to God and your Prince, you sett apart all untrue and sinister Informations, and accommodate your selves to the meer Truth as it becommeth true Subjects to do; assuring you that those that do, shall be esteemed and set forth, and the contrary neglected and little set by: Trusting that now you know our Mind and Pleasure, we shall see such Conformitie among you, that we shall hereof take great Consolation and Comfort, to the great Allegement of our Conscience; willing and commanding you among you to give perfect Credence to my Lord of *Lincolne* our Confessour in this behalfe and matter: and in all things which he shall declare unto you or cause to be declared in our behalfe, to make unto us either by him or the Authentick Letters full Answer and Resolution, which your Duty's well remembered, We doubt not but that it shall be our high Contentation and Pleasure. Given under, &c.



Letter II. *By the King.*

**T**Ruſty and Well-beloved, We greet you well. And of late being informed, to our no little Marvell and Diſcontentation, that a great Part of the Youth of that our Univerſity with contentious! Factions and Manner, daily combineing together, neither regarding their Duty to Us their Sovereigne Lord, nor yet conforming themſelves to the Opinions and Orders of the vertuous, wiſe, ſage, and profound learned Men of that Univerſity, wilfully to ſtick upon the Opinion to have a great Number of Regents and Non-Regents to be aſſociate unto the Doctors, Proctors, and Batchelors of Divinity, for the Determination of our Queſtion; which we believe hath not been often ſeen, that ſuch a Number of right ſmall Learning in regard to the other, ſhould be join'd with ſo famous a Sort; or in a manner ſtay their Seniors in ſo weighty a Cauſe: which as we think ſhould be no ſmall Diſhonour to our Univerſity there, but moſt eſpecially to you the Seniors and Rulers of the ſame, aſſuring you that this their unnatural and unkind Demeanour is not only right much to our Diſpleaſure, but much to be marvelled of, upon what Ground and Occaſion they being our meere Subjects, ſhould ſhewe themſelves more unkind and wilfull in this Matter, than all other Univerſities, both in this and all other Regions do. Finally, We truſting in the Dexterity and Wiſdome of you and other the ſaid Diſcreet and Subſtantial Learned Men of that Univerſity, be in perfect Hope, that ye will conduce and frame the ſaid young Perſons unto good Order and Conformity, as it becommeth you to do. Wherefore we be deſirous to hear with incontinent Diligence, and doubt you not we ſhall regard the Demeanour of every one of the Univerſity, according to their Merits and Deſerts. And if the Youth of the Univerſity will play Maſteries, as they begin to do, We doubt not but that they ſhall well perceive, that *non eſt bonum irritare Crabrones*. Given under, &c.

## Letter III.

*To our Truſty and Well-beloved, the Commiſſary-Regents,  
and Non-Regents of our Univerſity of Oxon.*

**T**Ruſty and Well-beloved, We greet you well. And whereas by ſundry our Letters ſent and delivered at ſundry times by the Hands of our Counſellors unto you, with Credence declared unto you by the ſame, we have only required and made inſtance unto you, for the obtaining of that, which at the leaſt Deſire of any Chriſtian Man ye be bound and oblig'd to do; that is to ſay, to declare and ſhew your Opinions and Sentence in ſuch a Doubt, as upon the Diſſolution and Determination whereof, dependeth the

Tran-

Tranquility, Repose, and Quiet of our Conscience, we cannot a litle marvell that you neither having respect to our Estate, being your Prince and Sovereigne Lord; nor yet remembring such Gratuites and Benefits as we have always shew'd unto you, as well to the particular Wealth of Diverse as to the Common Body of that our Univerfity, without any correspondency shew'd on their Behalfe againe, have hitherto delay'd and deferr'd not only to send us your Determination and Resolution to our Demand and Question, but also refused to take Order, or enter into any Way or Meane, whereby you might declare or shew unto us, that ye be of Mind and Determination to endeavour your selfe for an Accomplishment of our Desire in that Behalfe. And so much the more marvell we at this your Manner of Delays, that our Univerfity of Cambridge hath within far shorter Time not only agreed upon the Fashion and Manner to make Answer unto us effectually, and with Diligence following the same; but hath also eight Days since sent unto us their Answer under Common Seale, plainly determining, *Prohibitionem esse Divini & naturalis Juris, nè frater Uxorem fratris etiam mortui sine liberis ducat Uxorem*. For the searching of the Truth in which Matter, if ye had before this Time condescended upon the Manner and Fashion convenient in that Behalf, we could then have taken any Delay afterward, upon any other cold Pretence made, but in good Part: Whereas now the refusing to agree upon any such Order, and denying to do that which should be but the Entrie into the Matter for declaration of your Forwardness, Good Will, and Diligence: We can't otherwise think of you, but that you neither behave your selves towards Us, as our Merits towards you have deserved, as good Subjects to a kind Prince and Sovereigne Lord; as by the Learning ye professe, ye be obliged and bound. Wherefore revolving this in our Mind, and yet nevertheless considering you to be there by our Authority and Grant, as a Body Politique, in the ruleing whereof in Things to be done in the Name of the Whole, the Number of the private Suffrages doth prevaile, and being loth to shewe our Displeasure, whereof we have so great Cause ministred unto us, unto the Whole in general; whereas the Fault perchance consisteth and remaineth but in light and willfull Heads; for the tender Consideration we bear to Learned Men, and the great Desire we have to nourish, maintaine, and favour those that are Good; have thought convenient to send unto you these Letters by our Trusty and Right Well-beloved Clarke and Counseller, Mr. *Edwarde Fox*, trusting verily that ye which be Heads and Rulers there, well considering and weighing your Dutyes in the Accomplishment of our Request, for the searching the Truth in such a Cause, as touching your Prince and Sovereigne Lord, our Soul, and the Wealth of this our Realme: and your great Lack and Blame with just Cause of High Displeasure to be worthily conceiv'd by us in the denyall and slack doing thereof, will so order and accomodate the Fashion, and passing such Things as should proceed from that Univerfity in this Case, as the Number of the private Suffrages given without Reason, prevaile not against the Heads, Rulers, said sage Fathers, to the Detriment, Hindrance, and Inconvenience of the Whole. But so to examine, try, and weigh the Opinions and Minds of the Multitude, as the Importance of the Matter doth



doth require: Wherein we doubt not but your Body is established in such wise, that there be left waies and means to the Heads and Rulers how to eschew and avoid such Inconveniences, when they shall chance: As we trust ye that be Heads and Rulers for the comprobation and declaration of particular good Minds, ye will not faile to do accordingly, and so by your Diligence to be shew'd hereafter, to redeem the Errors and Delaies past. The Favour we beare to the Maintenance of Learning, we would be very glad, as our said well-beloved Councillour can shew unto you on our Behalfe; unto whom we will you give firme credence: Given under our Signet at our Castle of *Windſor*.

Number 18.

*Copie of the King's Letters to the Bishop of Rome.*

*Ex MSS.  
Rymeri.*

**E**T SI videamus vel temporum vel Hominum iniquitate fieri, ut postulata nostra, quantumvis equa ac naturali ratione subnixæ, parum expediantur, nihil etiam proficere, in causa nostra justissima, Charissimi fratris & Consanguinei ac perpetui Confederati nostri, Christianissimi Regis Amicissimas preces; Nobilium autem nostrorum intercessionem non modo contemni, sed etiam derideri, quod eos equo animo non laturos existimamus. Denique re ipsa nihil prestari quod nos afflictos atque vexatos sublevet; hæc omnia, licet apertius cernamus quam velimus, tum autem ex Oratoribus nostris quos apud vos habemus, tum à vestro isthic Oratore cognoscamus; est tamen spei opinionisque nostræ tam diversus exitus ut subinde cogitantibus nobis ac memoria repetentibus omnes causæ nostræ circumstantias, porro autem singula Conferentibus que precefferunt queque secuta sunt, fidem factorum, dictorum atque responſorum vestræ Sanctit. in hac causa nostra quam alioqui certam & firmam, fide dignorum Oratorum & vestrorum & nostrorum relatio constituit, ipsa ratio Communis labefactet atque convellat; atque in re certissima tam dubium reddit ut certo interdum non credamus Sanct. vest. fecisse que fecisse cognoscimus quum ea facere non debuisset intelligamus. Nam ut omittamus ea quæ longius precefferunt, quod nuperime efflagitavimus de dandis in Anglia Judicibus, quid Credidisset Sanctitatem vestram negare voluisse; longe aliter sperabamus nos. Aliter certe credidit Christianissimus Rex qui nobiscum una id petiit: Aliter crediderunt sui Consiliarii, quorum suasu id fecit: Secus crediderunt nobiles nostri omnes, & omnes omnium ordinum primi viri. Qui ad nostra postulata suas literas ad junxerunt, & quem non ad id adigerit ratio ut crederet Sanctitatem vestram facturam Dei respectu quod debuisset, & in principum gratiam quod inculcate potuisset: debuisset certe permittere sacrosanctis olim Consiliis id definientibus, ut controversia illic terminetur ubi primum nata est. Illic enim Judices & propius vident & cernunt certius: Ut Gloriosissimo Martyri Cypriano placuit. Et Divus Barnardus ad  
Eugenium

Eugenium scribit bene facis tu quod appellationum negato Suffragio remittis negotia ad cognoscentes & qui noscere citius possunt: ubi enim certior & facilior notio, ibi decisio tutior & expeditior esse potest: potuisset autem Sanctitas vestra nam olim se potuisse ostendit cum Judices ad nos in Angliam mitteret quos postea revocavit. Quod si debuisset quidem quod negari non poterit, & potuisset etiam ut quidem factis antea suis de consilio suorum declaravit, quis dubitaret de voluntate siquidem ut deberet ipsam liberam rectam & certam teneat Sanctitas vestra, non ad aliena arbitria accomodatam ac humanis respectibus inservientem quod res ita se habet ut habet fuerunt aliquando vices nostri, nunc ut videmus aliorum sunt: Non in Lege Domini, sed in rerum vicissitudine meditandem est, ut de vestra Sanctitatis Manu aliquod auxilii expectemus, sed auxilium nostrum à Domino certum est, & in Domino sperantes non infirmabimur. Nam in conspectu omnium, acta probant voluntatem Sanctitatis vestrae totam Cæsari addictam esse: Illius nutu flecti, ad illius arbitrium attemperari. Si quid petimus, si quid rogamus, quod officii vestri esset, prima ratio est, ut ne quid Cæsari displiceat. Quem etiam si amicum habeamus, tamen dominantem in illo naturæ affectum ut improbare omnino non possumus, ita in hac causa nostra iniquiorem nobis non sine causa refugere debemus & recte gravissimam nobis injuriam factam & vestro officio indignissimum dedecus admissum videmus, ut cum Cæsar se in hac causa interposuerit, etiam cum se opposuerit definitioni appellatione interposita, cum se partem publice professus sit, vestra Sanctitas tamen eundem semper consultorem adhibeat: ad illius imperium figat, ac refigat, differat, proroget, mutet & statuatur quodcunque temporis rationi opportunum videatur. Et si quid ab adverso dicatur statim creditur: Si quid nos proposuerimus omnino rejicitur, scilicet creditur nunc Reginae Regnum nostrum Angliæ non esse tutum locum in quo causa judicetur: Et creditur unicæ allegationi sine testibus contra tam preclara & aperta documenta quæ nos in diversum edidimus, non verbis & assertionibus que fingi possunt, sed rebus ipsis & factis quæ non mentiuntur. Nos enim quanta cum libertate atque impunitate audivimus omnes in nos, liberius etiam quam oportuit, quod videbatur proferentes, nemini unquam aliam opinionem extorsimus, quam que animo videretur suo: diversum à nobis sentientes etiam in cæteris, favore & prosequimur & prosecuti sumus. Et tamen, post tot argumenta securitatis, & cum nullum signum adhuc apparuerit cur timere quisquam à nobis merito deberet, credit vestra Sanctitas nudam Reginae allegationem in diversum. Quo tempore dubitari potuit qualiter essemus laturo quod ageretur & quanta cum equanimitate passuri quod fieret, si quid contra nos fieret. Missi sunt ad nos Judices in Angliam, à Sanctitate vestra, nunc vero cum id amplius factitari non potest, non modo dubitatur sed creditur diversum ejus, quod nos probavimus. Probavimus autem nos Regnum nostrum locum esse tutum in quo causa nostra judicetur viz. cum hætenus summam omnibus dicendi libertatem permiserimus. Regina vero tantum allegat diversum, & si quas probationes attulerit, vanæ sint oportet & falsæ nec verisimiles. Quæ quum ita sint, aliud tamen cur Judices non dederit, non respondit Sanctitas vestra, nisi quod Regina allegavit locum suspectum. Et quis crederet Sanctitatem vestram ista nobis respondisse, nec aliud



dixesse ne Judices daret in partibus : certe referentium credulitatem exigit res vero ipsa negat. Si sequamur quod antea diximus eam persuasionem ut credamus Sanctitatem vestram voluntatem suam ita Cæsari addixisse, ut non ex animi vestri summa prudentia præditi sententia sed ex Cæsaris affectu respondere contendat. Que res facit ut iterum atque iterum repetitis litteris Sanctitatem vestram adeamus, expressuri nimirum si quid aliud moverit Sanctitatem vestram cur nostris ultimis desideriis non annuerit cupidi etiam literis vestris intelligere cui causæ potissimum, denegando innixa sit. Sic enim expressius & certius mentes invicem & animi nostri sententias communicabimus : Si in causis hiisce gravioribus & postulata & responsa scriptis mandaverimus. Itaque petimus denuo hiis literis a Sanctitate vestra ut causam nostram in Anglia datis Judicibus, illis quos inter oratores tanquam indifferentes & equissimos nominabimus, decidi patiatur, atque permittat. De Judicibus autem nullam ut accipimus facit difficultatem Sanctitas vestra, tantum de loco Questio fuit, quum sacra Consilia jam deffinierunt & Sanctus etiam Cyprianus & Divus Bernardus ut prædiximus, utique convenientissimum affirmant, ut in eo loco causa terminetur ubi primum nata est. Durum certe esset probare nudam Reginæ allegationem de loco suspecto, contra ea Argumenta quæ nos ostendimus. Et facile videt prudentia vestra non levem nobis notam inuri, ut ea infamia aspergamur, quasi in causa tanti Sacramenti suspecti haberemur, ne eam ex equo & bono Divinarum legum præscripto intra Regni nostri limitem terminari pateremur : Suspicio talis crimen esset etiam in infimo homuncione famosum, in principe viro tanto magis angetur facimoris atrocitas, quanto sublimius confurgit fastigium dignitatis : Nec possumus certe pati, nedum equanimiter ferre, ut de suspitione tam gravi immerito accussemur, ac sine teste etiam à vestra Sanctitate inique condemnemur. Quæ si communis Patris & Boni pastoris officio fungeretur, in eo potius laboraret ne quid temere cuiquam fiat, & ne sine omni sua culpa ledatur nec immerito notetur. Atque hoc nimirum est Christi vices in Terris gerere, conservandæ Charitatis exempla prebere, ita suum vindicare ne quid alteri detrahatur, ex equo & bono omnia disceptare, plane, simpliciter, & aperte agere, promissa prestare non obliquo ductu, alio tendere quam quo cursum aperte institueras. Hac omnia non ascribimus Sanctitati vestræ nec de occultis Sacræ Literæ permittunt judicare, & nos semper temeraria judicia fugimus, nec in alium libenter admittimus, quod in nos ipsos fieri equanimiter non ferremus. Sed si vestræ Sanctit. oratores, si vestri nuncii, vestri Magistratus, auctore Sanctitate vestra faciunt quod faciunt, cujus rei certum judicium Conscientiæ vestræ sit, clara certe verisimilitudo interim elucet : sed si Auctor est vestra Sanctitas, si Conscia est, si facta probat, immo si non improbat aperte, non corrigit : Graviora sunt his que supra memoravimus quæ in Sanctitatem vestram dici possunt, nam quum Sanctitas vestra omnibus modis primum conata est impedire ne quis in Causa nostra suam sententiam libere proferret, ac deinde post multas longas & varias preces, Justitiæ Administrandæ necessitate adacta, ut suum cuique liberum judicium permetteret, scribendi & dicendi quod suæ Conscientiæ videretur, literis tandem in publicum missis permiserit, omnibus liberam in Causa nostra scribendi facultatem : Magistratus interea vestri, vestro etiam nomine, multis gravissime minati sunt, si quid scripserint

scripserint in Potestatem vestram. Hoc Bononiæ & aliis in locis per multis factum scimus. Cæsaris vero Oratores ubique in Italia, ac vestris presertim ditionibus, contempto vestræ Sanctitatis edicto, indies non cessant Terrores, Minas, & cætera quæque Territamenta inculcare; sciente & volente, vel saltem non impediante sed connivente Sanctitate vestra, his qui in Causa nostra scripserunt ac scriberent, ni revocent atque recantent. Et, qua Conspiratione nescimus, effectum est, ut Literarum nostrarum nec liber sit commeatus nec tutus. Christianissimus verò Rex nobis significavit, quomodo Orator vester qui apud illum est, de Causa nostra etiam nomine Sanctitatis vestræ, ut quidem asseruit, in verba pronuntiavit; nec veritus est tanto Principi audacter & impudenter mentiri; ut diceret Causam nostram contra omne jus & fas intendi, nullo jure aut ratione niti. Quæ verba, si ex animi vestri sententia protulit, non semper ex animi sui sententia, & scripsit & locuta est Sanctitas vestra, quæ Causam nostram aliquando justissimam appellavit. Quod si temeritas illius hominis à Sanctitatis vestræ sinceritate remota est, quod libentius vellemus, tamen quum eo munere fungatur, in quo ad mandatorum præscripta agere videatur, saltem aliqua ratione diluenda suspitio est: sicque illis agendum, quos Splendor Dignitatis reddit conspicuos; ne ullam scandali occasionem præstent, his quos in obsequio & amicitia continere cupiant. Nobiscum autem ita agat Sanctitas vestra, ut Naturæ Præcepta non transiliat; si suum sibi integrum servari cupiat, ne nostrum attingat, ne recipiat appellationes ad se in Causa nostra: Et si quas receperit, ne contra justitiam eas tueri studeat; sed secundum justitiam, eas in Regnum remittat; ne exercere conetur inhibitiones suas, in hac Causa contra nos, aut subditos nostros, quos illis modis non convenit deterreri. Sinat Leges & Prerogativas nostras Regnique nostri Angliæ, nec tempore nec auctoritate vestris cedentes, sua vi procedere: Inhibitiones istas, si quas fecerit, quod non credimus, maturiori Consilio revocet quæ factæ sunt, & cum alieni juris præjudicio, ne deinceps emittat. Summatim autem quod petitur; hoc est, ut ne ad se, neve ad Curiam Romanam, Causæ illius Cognitionem deferri patiatur, quæ intra Regni nostri Limites debet terminari. Nec credat Sanctitas vestra, ut cum Leges certas & fixas habeat hoc Regnum nostrum Angliæ, ne Causæ quæcunq; Regiam Personam, aut Rempublicam quoquomodo tangentes, extra Regni Limites Judiciis tractentur; vel permissuros nos eas nobis regnantibus infringi & violari; vel passuros Regni nostri Nobiles, tam grave præjudicium huic Regno inferri. Breviter sive nil moveat Persona rogantis, moveat saltem Causa rogandi. Rogamus enim nos, quia Naturæ & Rationi consonum est, ut quod nostrum est nobis illibatum conservare studeamus. Rogamus autem Auctoribus Sacrosanctis Consiliis, hoc est, vestris Legibus; viz. ut in sua cujusque Provincia Causa terminetur. Rogamus ex sententia Divorum Cypriani & Bernardi, quibus hoc, ut supradiximus, equum visum est. Denique rogamus, quod Leges nostræ diversum non patiantur, & nos à Contentionibus abhorremus. His certè non annuere non potest Sanctitas vestra, si illum Charitatis fervorem habeat, quem & Titulus Dignitatis præ se fert, & nos etiam habemus. Veruntamen, si hæ Causæ Rogandi Sanctitatem vestram moverint, ut concedat quod justum est, eatenus  
tamen



tamen apud nos valebunt, ne de Sanctitatis vestræ manu patiamur quod injustum est: Nec quisque facile patitur auferri, quod suum est. Et nos etiam in aliena illibentur irruimus, sed à Contentione non abest detrimentum: Et nullius ferè compendio semel natæ Controversiæ transiguntur: Quid animi habeat Sanctitas vestra, quid autem nobis respondere decreverit, rogamus ut per Literas velit significare.

Number 19.

*A Letter of Gr. Cassali from Compiegne.*

*An Original.*

Cotton Libr.  
Vitellius B. 13.

**S**erenissime & Inviçtissime Domine mi Supreme, Salutem. Compendium Regem Christianissimum, quemadmodum sibi placere ipse mihi dixerat, sum subsequutus. Cum ejus Majestati duo adhuc agenda supererant: Primum, quia meorum Literis certior factus sum, brevi Pontificem cum Cæsare conventurum, Literæ ad duos Cardinales, qui Parisiis sunt, ab hoc Rege Christianissimo conscribendæ videbantur; quibus illis mandaret, quo celerius poterint magnis itineribus in Italiam festinent. Itaque veluti à Rege postulavi, ut hujusmodi Literæ exarentur. Deinde valde existimabam necessarium, cum hoc Principe agere, ut duobus Cardinalibus daret in mandatis, ut ante omnes Cardinalis de Monte meminissent. Eique Pensionem annuam, saltem trium millium aureorum, ex quadraginta millibus, quæ mihi dixerat velle in Cardinales distribuere assignarent. Et Rex quidem hoc etiam scribi ad duos Cardinales jussit Secretario Vitandri: Quicum ego postmodo super iis Pensionibus Sermonem habui, cognovique sic in animo Regem habere, ut duo Cardinales quum Romæ fuerint, videant, qui potissimum digni hac Regia sint Liberalitate, in eosque, quum quid in Regno Galliæ Ecclesiasticum vacare contigerit, ex meritis unius cujusque Pensiones conferantur. Tunc autem nihil in promptu haberi, quod Cardinali de Monte dari possit: Verum Regis nomine illi de futuro esse promittendum, quod mihi certe summo opere displicuit; & Secretario Vitandri non reticui, ostendens Pollicitationes hujusmodi centies, jam Cardinali de Monte factas fuisse; & modo si iterum fiant nihil aliud effecturas, nisi ut illius Viri quasi ulcera pertractent id quod Vitandri verum esse fatebatur, pollicitusque est se, quum Rex à Venatu rediisset, velle ei suadere, ut Cardinalem de Monte aliqua præsentis Pensione prosequatur; qua quidem te nihil conducibilius aut oportunius fieri posset.

Illud autem novi, quod meorum Literis ex urbe significatur, ad Guronum perscribi. Et D. Benettum ad Dominum Ducem Norfolciæ scribere arbitror his Literis, quæ hic mihi redditæ sunt, & cum præsentibus mitto. Quod autem & Rege Christianissimo cognovi illud est. Constituisse Cæsarem, superioribus diebus, relinquere Ferdinando

Fratri

Fratri viginti millia Peditum, Equitum decem millia; ita ut ipse solveret de suo Stipendia sex millibus Boemorum, & duobus millibus Militum navalium: Quatuor vero millibus Germanorum darentur Stipendia à liberis Germaniæ Civitatibus. At reliquis qui Italarum erant octo millia, nihil certi Stipendij decernebat; credens illos, quemadmodum in Italia plerumque evenire consuevit, aut exigua re, aut ad summum dimidio Stipendio acquieturos. Ex decem Equitum millibus, duo millia ex Flammingis, Ordinibus relinquebant. In cæteros Stipendium à Pontifice, ut in illam diem factum fuerat, statuebat. Sed enim Itali Milites, male se tractari existimantes, tumultu facto Italiam versus abierunt; quod quum reliqui cognovissent, alij alio domos suas omnes discesserunt. Hujus autem seditionis Crimen in Petrum Mariam Rubeum Comitem Sancti Secundi collatum fuit: Idque quoniam discedentes milites ipsius comitis nomen clamantes ingeminabant: Illum igitur Cæsar comprehendere jussit: Et Cardinalem Medices quoque legatum ut ejusdem affinem culpæ detineri, ac paulo post dimitti imperavit: qui primo quoque tempore per equos dispositos abiens Venetias se contulit: Atque hanc quidem rem Pontifex, ut debuit, iniquo animo tulisse dicitur; & de adeo insigni contumelia cum Cæsarianis omnibus est conquestas. Verum, illi quibus modis potuerunt, Cæsarem excusarunt, rogaruntq; ut placato sit animo donec Cæsarem ipsum audiat, qui ostendet quicquid fecit in ipsius Pontificis, beneficium fecisse. De conventu Pontificis Cæsarisq; pro certo ferme habetur Bononiæ futurum: Et ut ex litteris colligi potest, jam nunc Cæsar Italiam cum duodecim milibus peditum ingressus est: Et Pontifex ab urbe Bononiam versus discedet, Romam enim venerat Petrus Cona Cæsaris legatus ad Pontificem deducendum: Qua de re quum hic certior factus essem, ad Franciscum fratrem meum, qui Romæ est, scripsi, ut Cardinalem de Monte, & alterum amicum nostrum adiret, rogaretque velint cum Pontifice agere, ut quoniam ita festinanter Bononiam contendit, neque ipsos secum ducere potest, promittat se nihil antequam Roman redierit in causa Majestatis vestræ facturum, quum præsertim absque ipsis nihil recte in tanto negotio confici possit. Præterea fratri meo ut idem nonnullis aliis Cardinalibus diceret mandavi: quod si viderit non posse id a Pontifice impetrari, ab ipsis contendet ut Pontificem omnino sequuntur, neque ætas decrepita illos moretur, sed quoquo modo sese deferri faciant: Neque velit Cardinalis de Monte, quemadmodum alias fecit, absente Pontifice legatus in urbe remanere, præsertim si, quod firme ab omnibus creditur, Pontifex Bononiæ usque in mensem Martium aut Aprilem est commoraturus. Sed nunc quod scribam omittendum non est. Quum Caletio discedens equum confedissem, Secretarius qui illic erat Nuntii Pontificii, se litteras habere à Nuntio mihi dixit, quibus respondebat ad quandam partem suarum litterarum, quæ illi meis verbis significarat, velle se omnino ad Pontificem scribere, ne quicquam in causa Majestatis vestræ ante reditum meum ageret, ea enim me allaturum, quæ sibi rationabiliter placere possent, dummodo nihil super causa factum fuisset. Responsum autem Nuntii illud erat, se in eam sententiam ad Pontificem scripsisse, & de ea ita scripsisse, ut mihi polliciretur, nihil ante quam ego redierim in Majestatis vestræ causa innovatum fore: enim vero me rogavit



ut aliquid boni, & quod nostris placere posset afferrem, ne ipse mentitus esse videretur.

Sed de pensione in Cardinalem de Monte conferenda, quoniam postmodo Rex Christianissimus quemadmodum mihi promiserat scribere recusavit, & me rogavit ut adventum magni magistri expectarem, quid sequutum sit Majestas vestra ex Domino Wintoniensi cognosceret, ad quem de hac re abunde scripsi. Felix sit & optime valeat Magestas vestra. Compendii Die xvj. Novemb. M. D. xxxij.

## Regia Magestatis.

Number 20.

### *A Representation made by the Convocation to the King before the Submission.*

Cotton Library  
Cleop. F. 1.

**F**irst, as concerning such Constitutions and Ordinances Provincial as be to be made hereafter by us your most humble Subjects, we having our especial Trust and Confidence in your most excellent Wisdom, and your Princely Goodness and fervent Zeal to the Promotion of God's Honour and Christen Religion, and specially in your incomparable Learning far exceeding in our Judgments the Learning of all other Kings and Princes that we have redde of, and doubting nothing but that the same shall still continue and daily encrease in your Majesty, do offer and promise hereunto the same that from henceforth during your Highness natural Life which we most hertily beseech Almighty God long to preserve, we shall forbear to enact promulge or put in Execution, any such Constitution or Ordinance so by us to be made in time coming, unless your Highness by your Royal Assent shall license us to make promulge and execute such Constitutions, and the same so made shall approve by your Highness Authorite.

Secounde, Whereas your Highness Honorable Commons do pretend that diverse of the Constitutions Provincial, which have ben heretofore enacted be not only much prejudicial to your Highness Prerogative Royal, but also overmuch onerous to your said Commons, we your most humble Subjects for the Considerations aforesaid, be contented to referr and commit all and singular the said Constitutions to the Examination and Judgment of your Grace only: And which soever of the same shall finally be found thought and judged by your Graces most high Wisdom prejudicial and overmuch onerous as is pretended, we offer and promise your Highness to moderate or utterly to abrogate and annull the same, according to the Judgment of your Grace. Saving to us allwaie all such Immunities and Liberties of this Church of *England*, as hath been granted unto the same by the Goodness and Benignite of your Highness, and of others your most noble

noble Progenitors, with all such Constitutions Provincial as do stand with the Laws of Almighty God *and Holy Church*, and of your Realm heretofore made, which we most humbly beseech your Grace to ratifie and approve by your Royal Assent, for the better Execution of the same in Times to come, amongst your Graces People. Providing also that until your Highness Pleasure herein shall be further declared unto us, all manner of Ordinaries may execute their Jurisdictions in like manner and form as they have used the same in Times past.

Number 21.

*A Letter by Magnus to Cromwell, concerning the Convocation of York.*

*Taken from the Original.*

**A**FTER full due Recommendation unto your good Masterhip, Cleop. E. 6. P. 252. like it the same to wete, that yesterdaie was here with me Mr. Doctor *Lee*, and shewed unto me the Kings most gracious Pleasure and your Advertisements for my going Northwards to the Convocation at *York*. So it is, as I doubt not the said Mr. Doctor *Lee* knoweth and conceiveth, that I have not a little been sik and diseased, but greatly grieved with a Rewme in myn Hed, and a Catarr fallen into my Stomake, by reason whereof, I have had, and yet have a contynuall great Cough, I am in truste that my Diseas and Sicknes is in Declination, supposing thereby the sooner to have Recovery, and this Daye have sent for my Horses into *Nottinghamshir*, and truste with the Helpe of God to be at *York* soone after the Begynning of the said Convocation. Many Yeres afore-past, I have ever been redy to go when I have been commanded, and yet I have as good a Will as ever I had, but myn olde Body is nowe so ofte cloggod with Infirmitie and Unweildenes, that it woll not aunswer to the Effect of my Desire and good mynde, yet nevertheles with the good Helpe and Counsell also of Mr. *Bartlot*, I shall doe asmuch as I may to make me soe strong as it woll be, and have had Communycation at large with the said Mr. Doctor *Lee*, touching our intended Busines. I am very glad that he shall be at *York* at this Season, for at the laste Convocation where as was graunted unto the Kings Highness the great Some of Mony to be paide in Five Yeres, with the recognising his Grace to be *supremum Caput*, &c. I had very litle Helpe, but my self, albeit the Kings Highness said that he wolde have sent other Bookes after me, which came not: soe that therefore the Kinges Causes were the longer in treating and reasonyng or they came to good Effect and Conclusion; the Prelates and Clergie there woll not in any wise give firme Credence to reporte of any Acts that be paste here, onles the same be shewed unto them authentically, either under  
Seale,



Seale, or otherwise, or the Kings most honourable Letters address'd accordingly, these two things in myn Oppynnyon, must both be done, for without the same, the Prelats and Clergie of the North Parties being farre from Knowledge of the Kings most high Pleasure, woll not for any Credence, be hastie to proceed to any strainge Acts, but woll esteem their Reasons and Lernyng, to be as effectuell as others be. I write the more at large unto you herryne, bycause, as it shall please you, and as ye shall seem good, the Matters that now be intended, may be put in order. Glad I would have been to have commen nowe unto you my self, but I assure you, I dare not as yet come into the open Ayer, soe soone as I may, it shall be my firste Pilgrimage by the Grace of God, who ever preserve you myn one good Master. At *Maribone* this *Monday* the xxth Daye of *Aprill*.

Your own Preiste

and Bedeman,

*T. Magnus.*

Number 22.

*A Protestation made by Warham, Archbishop of Canterbury, against all the Acts pass'd in the Parliament to the Prejudice of the Church.*

Protestatio Archiepiscopi Cantuar.

1531.

P. 120.

IN Dei Nomine. Amen. Per præsens publicum instrumentum cunctis appareat evidenter & sit notum, quòd Anno Domini secundum Cursum & Computationem Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ Millesimo Quingentesimo xxxi<sup>o</sup>. Indictione Quintâ, Pontificatûs Reverendissimi in Christo Patris & Domini nostri, Domini Clementis Divinâ Providentiâ illius Nominis Papæ Septimi, Anno Nono, Mensis verò Februarii die vigesimo quarto: In quodam superiori Cubiculo five Camerâ infra Manerium Reverendissimi in Christo Patris & Domini, Domini *Wilhelmi* Permissione Divinâ Cant' Archiepiscopi, totius Angliæ Primatis, & Apostolicæ Sedis legati, de Lambithe Winton' Dioc. situatum in nostrorum Notariorum Publicorum Subscriptorum, ac Testium inferius Nominatorum, præsentia constitutus personaliter idem Reverendissimus in Christo Pater, quandam Protestationem, in scriptis redactam, fecit, & interposuit, ac palàm & publicè Protestatus est, cateraque fecit & exercuit prout, & quemadmodum quâdam Papiri Schedulâ, quam manibus suis tunc tenens publicè legebat, plenius continebatur; cujus quidem Schedulæ tenor sequitur, & est talis.

In Dei Nomine. Amen. Nos *Wilhelmus* permissione divinâ Cant. Arch. totius Angliæ Primas, & Apostolicæ sedis legatus, Protestamur publicè & expresse, pro nobis, & sanctâ Ecclesiâ nostrâ Metropolitica Cantuariensi, quod nolumus, nec intendimus, sicuti neque sanâ Conscientiâ possumus, *Alicui statuto* in præfenti Parlamento apud Fratres Prædicatores London tertio die mensis Novembris Anno Dom' 1529. & Anno Regni Regis Henrici Octavi xxi. inchoat', & abinde usq; ad Westm' prorogat', & ibidem huc usque continuat', *edito*, seu *deinceps edendo*, quatenus statuta hujusmodi, seu eorum aliquod, in derogationem *Romani Pontificis*, aut *Sedis Apostolicæ*; vel damnum Præjudicium, sive Restrictionem *Ecclesiasticæ Potestatis*; aut in Subversionem, Enervationem, seu Derogationem, vel Diminutionem, *Jurium, Consuetudinum, Privilegiorum, Prærogativarum, Præ-eminentiarum*, seu *Libertatis Ecclesiæ nostræ Metropolitice Christi Cant'* prædict' tendere dignoscuntur, *quomodolibet consentire*; sed ad omnem Juris effectum qui exinde sequi poterit aut debebit, eisdem *Dissentire, Reclamare, Contradicere*; ac *Dissentimus, Reclamamus, & Contradicimus* in his scriptis. Super quibus omnibus, & singulis præmissis, idem Reverendissimus Pater nos Notarios publicos subscriptos sibi unum, vel plura, publicum seu publica, Instrumentum sive Instrumenta, exinde conficere debite & instantè requisivit & rogavit.

Acta sunt hæc omnia & singula prout supra scribuntur & recitantur sub Anno Domini, Indictione, Pontificatu, Mense, Die, & loco prædictis; Præsentibus tunc ibidem venerabilibus, & probis Viris, Magistris Johanne Cocks, legum Doctore: Rogero Harmam Theologiæ Baccalaureo: Ingelramno Bedill, Clerico: Et Wilhelmo Waren Literato, Testibus ad præmissa vocatis specialiter & rogatis.

Istud Instrumentum similiter erat subscriptum manibus prædictorum trium Notariorum, *with the foregoing Instrument; which was that of the Submission of the Clergy. They were*  
William Potkyn, John Hering, and Thomas Argal.

*This was copied out of a MS. in my Lord Longvill's Library.*

### Number 23.

*To the King. From Edmund Bonner at Marselles.*

*A Letter of Bonner's upon his reading the King's Appeal to the Pope.*

*An Original.*

PLEASETH it your Highnes to be advertised, that fythen my last Letters sent unto the same of the ivth of this present by *Thadens* the Curror wherein I declared in what Termes were the Proceedings  
VOL. III. 5 E here

Cotton Library, *Vitel- lius B. 14. Fol. 75.*



here, I was commaunded by my Lord of *Winchester* and other your Highnes Ambassadoures here, to intimate unto the Popes Person, if the same were possible to do, all suche Provocations and Appelles which your Highnes heretofore had made unto the General Councell, and sent hither to be intimated accordinglie. Whereupon desiring Mr. *Penyston* to take the Pains with me unto the Popes Palace for the Expeditions of an Acte concernyng your Highnes, and he right glad and very well content to do the same: I repayred with him thither the viith of this present, in the Mornyng, and albeit that at the Begynnyng some Resistance and Contradiction was made that we shold not come unto the Pope, which as then was in manner full readye to come unto the Consistorie; and therefore not accustomed with other Busyness to be interrupted, yet in Conclusion we came to that Chamber where the Pope stode bytwene two Cardinales, *de Medices*, and *Lorayne*, redie apparelled with his Stole towards the Consistorie. And incontinently upon my comyng thither, the Pope, whos Sight is incredulous quick, eyed me, and that divers tymes, making a good Pawse in one place, in which tyme I desired the Datarie to advertise his Holynes that I desired to speke with him. And albeit the Datarie made no litle Difficultie therein thinking the Tyme and Place not most convenient, yet perceyvyng that upon Refusal I wool have goon furthwith to the Pope, he advertised the Pope of my said Desire. And his Holynes dismyssing as then the said Cardinals, and letting his Vesture fall went to a Wyndowe in the said Chamber calling me unto him, at what tyme (doynge Reverence accustomed) I shew'd unto his Holynes how that your Highnes had given me expresse and straye Commandment to intimate unto hym, how that your Grace had first solomly provoked and also after that appealed unto the Generall Councell, submitting your self to the Tuition and Defence thereof, which Provocation and Appelles I said I had under authentike Writings then with me to shewe for that Purpose. Declaring that your Highnes was moved thus to doo upon reasonable Causes and Grounds expressed in the said Provocation and Appelles, and yet nevertheless soo tempering your Doynge that beyng a good and Catholike Prince, and proceeding thereafter, your Grace mynded not any thing to say, doo, or goo about agaynst the Holie Catholique and Apostolique Church, or the Authority of the See, otherwise then was the Office of a good Catholike Prince, and chaunsing soo to doo indeed intended in Tyme and Place according, Catholiquely to reforme and awaite the same. And herewithall I drew out the said Writing shewing his said Holynes that I brought the same for Proof of the Premisses and that his Holynes might see and perceive all the same, adding hereunto that your Highnes used these Remedies not in any Contempt either of the Church, the See, or of his Holynes, but only upon Causes expressed in the said Writings. Desiring also his Holynes that althoughe in tymes passed it liked hym to shewe unto me much Benevolence and Kyndnes wherbie I must and did accompte my self greatly bounden unto the same, yet considering the Obligations a Subject must and doth of Right beare chiefly unto his Sovereyne Lord, he wood take al my Doynge in good parte, and not to ascribe any Unkyndnes unto me in this behalfe, but only to consider  
that



that a Subject and Servant must do his Masters Commandement. The Pope havynge this for a Brekefast, only pulled downe his Head to his Shoulders after the *Italian* Fashion, and said that because he was as then fully ready to goe to the Consistorie he would not tarye to hear or see the said Writings; but willed me to come at after noone and he would gladly giff me Audience to all the same, and other things that I would propose or do, whereupon his Holynes departing streyght to the Consistorie, I returned to your said Ambassadors, telling them what I had doon, and what Answer I had. That after noone I and Mr. *Penyston* (whom I intended aswel in the Popes Answeres, as also in other my Doinge, to use as a Wittnes if the Cause should soe require,) repayed to the Palace, and bycause that Audience was assigned unto many, and among others unto the Ambassador of *Millan*, I tarried there the Space of an Howre and Halfe, and finally was called into the Pope's Secret Chamber, where (taking with me Mr. *Penyston*) I founde his Holynes having only with hym *Godsfadyn of Bononie*; The Pope perceyving that I had brought one with me, looked much upon hym, and a great deale the more, in my Opinion, bycause that in the Morning I did speak with his Holynes alone, Mr. *Penyston* albeit beyng in the said Chambre, and seying what I did, yet not resorting nye unto his said Holynes. And to put the Pope out of this Fantasie, and somewhat to colour my Entent, I tolde his Holynes that the said Mr. *Penyston* was the Gentilman that had brought unto me Commis-sion and Letters from your Highnes, to intimate unto his Holynes the Provocation and Appeal forsaide; the Pope percase not fully herewith satisfied, and supposing that I would (as I indede intended) have recorde upon my Doynge, said, that it were good for him to have his Datarie, and also other of his Counsell, to hear and see what were done in that Behalfe, and thereupon called for his Datarie, *Symonetta*, and *Capisuchi*. In the mean whyle, they beyng absent, and sent for, his Holynes leaning in his Wyndow towards the West syde, after a little Pawse turned unto me, and asked me of my Lord of *Winchester* how he did, and likewise afterward of Mr. *Brian*; but after that fort that we thought he would make me believe that he knew not of his being here, saying thos Words; How doth Mr. *Brian*, is he here now: and after that I had answered hereunto, his Holynes not a little seeming to lament the Death of Mr. Doctor *Bennet*, whom he said was a Faithfull and Good True Servant unto your Highnes, enquired of me whether I was present at the Time of his Death, and falling out of that, and marvelling, as he said, that your Highnes would use his Holynes after such sorte, as it appears ye did: I said that your Highnes no less did marveyll that his Holynes havynge found so much Benevolence and Kyndnes at your Handes in all Tymes passed, would for acquitall shewe such unkyndnes as of late he did, as well in not admitting your Excusator with your lawfull Defences, as alsoe pronouncing against your Highnes: and here we entered in Communication upon two Poyntes, oon was that his Holynes having committed in Tymes passed, and in moost ample Forme, the Cause into the Realm, promising not to revoke the said Commission, and over that to confirm the Proceffe and Sentence of the Commis-saries, beyng Two Cardinalles and Legates of his See, should not especially  
at



at the Poynt of Sentence, have advoked the Cause from their Hands, reteyning it at *Rome*, but at the lest, he should have committed the same to some other indifferent Judges within your Realme, making herein that it could not be retayned at *Rome*: This Argument was Either his Holynes would have the Matter examyned and ended, or he would not: If he would, then either he would have it examined and ended in a Place whither your Highnes might personally come, and else bende to send your Proctor, or else in that Place whither your Highnes nother couud or ought personally to come unto; Ne yet bounde to sende a Proctor; if he intended in a Place whither your Highnes might personally come, and elles bound to send a Proctor he intended well and ought to have provided accordingly. If he entended that the Matter shuld be examyned and ended in that Place wher your Highnes neither could nor ought personally to come, nor yet bounde to send a Proctor then his Holynes did not well and justly. Seying that ether your Highnes shuld therbie be compelled to make a Proctor in Matter of such Importance against your Will; or enforced to a Thing unto you impossible, or elles to be left without Defence, having just Cause of Absence. And for as much as *Rome* was a Place whither your Highnes could not ne yet ought personally come unto, and alsoe was not bound to send thither your Proctor: I said therefore that his Holynes justly shuld not have retayned the Matter at *Rome*. The Second Point was that your Highnes Cause beyng in the Opinion of the best Learned Men in *Chriſtendome* approved Good and Just, and so many wayes known unto his Holynes; the same shuld not soe long have retayned it in his Hands without Judgment: His Holynes answering to the same, as touching the First Poynt, said that if the Quene (meanyng the late Wife of Prince *Arthure*, calling her alway in his Conversation, the Queen) had not given an Oath *perhorrescentiae & quod non sperabat consequi justitiae complementum impartibus*, refusing the Judges as suspect, he would not have advoked the Matter at all, but been content it shuld have been examyned and ended in your Realm; but seying she gave that Othe and refused the Judges as suspect, appealling also to his Courte, he said he might and ought to hear her, his Promise made to your Highnes, which was qualified, notwithstanding. And as touching the Seconde Poynt, his Holynes said that your Highnes only was the Defaut thereof, bycause ye would not send a Proxie unto the Cause, without which he said the same coude not be determyned, And albeit I replied aswell against his Answer to the First Poynt, saying that his Holynes cou'd ne yet thereupon retaine the Matter at *Rome*, and proceed against your Highnes there, and likewise against the Seconde Poynt, saying that your Highnes was not bounde to sende any Proxie, yet his Holynes seeing that the Datarie was come in upon this last Conclusion, said only that al these Matters had been oft, and many Tymes fully talked upon at *Rome*, and therefore willed me to omitte further communication thereupon, and to proceede to the Declaration, and doing of such Things, that I was specially sent for: Whereupon making Protestation of your Highnes Mynde and Intent towards the Church, and See Apostolique, not intending any Thing to doe in contempt of the  
same,

same I exhibited unto his Holynes the Commission which your Highnes had sent unto me under your private Seale (the other sent by *Frances* the Curror not beyng then come) desiring and asking according to the Tenour thereof, and his Holynes delivering it to the Datarie commanded hym to rede it, and hereing in the same thes Wordes, *Gravaminibus & injuriis nobis ab eodem sanctissimo Patre illatis & comminatis*, began to loke up after a new sorte and said, *O questo & multo vero*, this is much true, meanyng that it was not true indede. And verily sure not only in this but also in many Partes of the said Commission as they were red he shewed hymself grevoullie offended: insomuch that when those Wordes, *Ad sacro-sanctum concilium generale proxime jam futurum legitimum & in loco congruenti celebrandum*, were red, he fell in a marvelous great Cholere and Rage, not only declaring the same by his Gesture and Manner, but also by Wordes: speaking with great Vehemence, and saying, Why did not the King (meanyng your Majestie) when I wrote to my Nuncio this you passed to speke, unto hym for this Generall Councell, giff no Answer unto my said Nuncio, but referred hym for Answer therein to the *French King*; at what Tyme he might perceive by my doynge (he said) that I was very well disposed and much spake for it: the thing so standing, now to speke of a General Councel, O good Lord. But well! his Commission, and all other his Writings cannot be but welcome unto me, he said, which last Wordes we thought he spake willing to hide his Choler, and make me byleve that he was nothing angrie with this Doynge, where in very Dede I perceived by many Arguments that it was otherwise: and one among another was taken here for Unfallible with them that knoweth the Popes Conditions, that he was continually folding up and unwyding of his Handkerchefe, which he never doth but when he is tykled to the very Hert with great Choler. And albeit he was lothe to leave Conversation of this Generall Councel to ease his Stomack, yet at the last he commanded the Datarie to rede further: which he did. And by and by, upon the reding of thoos Clauses, *si oportat Rever. Patribus, &c.* and *post*

and his Holynes estones chafed greatly; finally saying, *Questo e boon fiatto*, this is but well doon. And what tyme that Clause *Protestando, &c.* and also that oother, *Nos ad ea Juris & facti remedia*, was red by the Datarie, he caused hym to rede theym again; which doon, his Holynes not a litle chafyng with hymself asked what I had moore. And then I repeting my Protestation, did exhibit unto him your Highnes Provocation, which incontenently he delivered to the Datarie to rede, and in this also he founde hym self much grieved, notyng in the Begynnyng not oonly those Wordes *Archiepiscopo Eboracensi*, but also thus, *Citra tum renocat. quorum cumque procuratorum*: at which he made good pawse, conjectering therebie as I toke it, that ther were Proctors made which might exercise and appear in your Name if your Highnes had ther with be contented. The Datarie reding fether and comyng to those Woords *quod non est nostre intentionis, &c.* his Holynes with great Vehemence says, that thoughe your Highnes in your Protestation had respect to the Church and Authorite of the See Apostolique, yet you had noon to hym at al; whereunto I answered and said it was not soe,



as his Holynes should perceyve in the other Writings. But of truth fay what I fay wooled ther was in Manor never a Clause in the said Provocation that soe pleased him, but he woold wrynge and whrist it to the worst Sense; as in Annotations upon the Margynes aswell of Provocation as alsoe Appellations, I shall fully declare unto your Highnes; which yet nevertheles at this time bycause it cannot be perfect at the Departure of this Byrer I doo not send it to your Highnes. As the Datarie was reding this Provocation, came in *Symoneta*, and even at those Woords, *Sed deinde publico eantur iudicio*. Wherin the Pope snarling and sayeing that *publicum*, *Symoneta* said no such was never had. *Symoneta* said, now syne they spake of that Archbishop, I suppose, that made that good Proceffe, the Cause depending afore your Holynes in the Consistorie. A said the Pope a worshipful Proceffe and Judgment. And as he was chafing hereupon, ther came oon of his Chamber to tell hym that the *French King* did coinme to speke with his Holynes: And incontenently hereapon the Pope made great hast to mete hym; and even at the very Door they mette together, the *French King* makynge very lowe Curtisie, putting of his Bonet, and keping it of, till he came to a Table in the Popes Chamber. And albeit I much dout not that the *French King* knew right well what Doynge was in hand, advertised thereof by oon *Nicolas* his Secretarie and also of the Popes Pryvey Chamber, yet his Grace asked of the Pope what his Holynes did. And the same gave Answer and said, *Questi signori Inglefi sono statì qua per intimare certi provocationi & appellationi e di fare altre cose*, Theis Gentlemen of *England* be here to intimate certeyn Provocations and Appelles and to do other things. Whereupon they two secretly did fall in Conversation; but what it was I cannot tell: the *French King* his Back was against me, and I understood not what he said. Trough it is, when the *French King* had spoke a long tyme and made ende of his Tale, the Pope said those Wordes, *Questa e per la bonta vostra*, This is of your Goodnes. Proceeding farther in Conversation and laughing meryly together they so talked the Space of three Quarters of an Hower, it beyng then after Six of the Clock in the Nyght, and in Conclusion the *French King* making great Reverance toke his leave, but the Pope went with him to the Chamber Doore, and albeit the *French King* woold not have suffered hym further to have goon, yet his Holynes following hym out of the Doore toke hym by the Hande and brought him to the Doore of the Seconde Chamber, where making great Ceremonies the oon to the other, they departed, the Pope returnyng to his Chamber, and seyng me stande at Doore, willed me to enter with hym. And so I did havynge with me Mr. *Penyston*. And then and ther the Datarie red out the rest of the Provocation: interrupted yet many tymes by the Pope, which ofte for the Easement of his Mynde made his Interpretations and Notes, especially if it touched the Mariage which of late your Highnes made with the Quene that now is, or the Proceffe made by the Archbishop of *Canturburie*.

The Provocations red, with much a doo, I under Protestations forsaide did intimate unto him the two Appelles, made also by your Highnes to the Generall Councell afor my Lord of *Winchester*, which

his

his Holynes delyvered to his Datarie commanding hym to rede theym. Notyng and marking well all Manner and Contentes thereof: and noo lesse offended therbie then he was with the oother. In the reding whereof came in the Cardinal *de Medices*, which stooode bare headed contynually during the reding thereof, casting down his Hede to the Grounde, and not a litle marvelling, as it appered unto me, that the Pope was so troubled and mourned. When this was doon, his Holynes said that forasmuch as this was a Matter of great Weyght, and Importance, towching alsoe the Cardinalls, he woulde consulte and deliberate with them hereupon in the Consistorie, and afterwarde gif me Answer therein. I contented therewith, desired ferther his Holynes that forasynuch as he had hard all the Provocations and Appelles, seying also the Original Writings thereupon, that I might have thym again; bycause I said I must aswell to the Cardinales as alsoe to other Judges and Persons havynge Interest, make Intimation accordingly. His Holynes in the Begynnyng was precise that I should in noe wise have thym; but they to remain with hym. Nevertheles afterward perceyvyng that I much stode upon it, he answered and said that like wise as concernyng the Provocations and Appelles with my Petition concernyng the same, he entended to giff me Answer after that he had consulted with the Cardinales in the Consistorie, so alsoe he entended to doo accordyng redelyvering of the said Writings. And hereupon departed from him about Eight of the Clocke in the Nyght, havynge remayned afar mor than three Howers, I repayed to my Lord of *Winchester* and other your Highnes Ambassadors here, telling them what I had doon, and what Answer alsoe was giffen unto me.

On the Morrowe following which was *Saatterday*, albeit ther was Consistorie yet the same was extraordinarie, chiefly for the Declarati-on of the newe Cardinales, the Bishop of *Beziers*, the Bishop of *Langres*, the great Maysters Nevew, and the Duke of *Albanie* his Brother. And in the said Consistorie as far as I could learn ther was nothing specially spoken or determyned concernyng the said Provocations and Appelles, or Answer to be given unto the same. Upon *Sonday* the ixth of this present at after noone havynge the said Mr. *Penyston* with me I repayed to the Palace, and spake ther with the Datarie to knowe when I should have Answer of the Pope, and he told me that the Day following shuld be the Consistorie, and that the Pope after the same would giff me Answer, and albeit that the said Datarie thus said unto me, yet willing to be sure, I induced on *Carol de Blanchis* my great Acquaintance and one of the chieff Cameraries with the Pope, to enquire of his Holynes when I should receive and have Answer to the Provocations and Appelles, with other things purposed afor by me unto his Holynes. And his Holynes gave unto hym to be declared unto me the self same Answer that the Datarie afor had gyven unto me, whereupon I departed for that Day.

Apon *Monday* the xth of this was ordinary Consistorie, and thider I, having with me the said Mr. *Penyston*, repayed. Tarieng ther alsoo unto the Tyme that all were commaunded furth, savynge the Cardinals: And understanding then estsones by the Datarie that I must come agayne at Afternoone for Answer, I did for that  
Tyme



Tyme departe, resorting at Afternoon unto the Palace, and after that I had taried ther ij Howers, in the Chamber next unto the Pope, which all that Tyme continually was occupied in Blessing of Bedes, Giving his Blessing, and suffering the Ladies and Nobles of the Court to kifs his Foot: I was called in unto hym, ther beyng ther only in the Chamber Cardinal *Salviati* and the Datarie. At my comyng he said unto me, *Domine Doctor quid vultis?* And I told his Holynes that I loked for Answer acording as his Holynes had promised me afor. And then he said that his Mynde towards your Highnes alwayes hath been to mynister Justice, and do Pleasure unto you, albeit it hath not been so taken. And he never injustly grieved your Grace that he knoweth, nor entendeth hereafter to doo. And as concernyng the Appellations made by your Highnes unto the General Counsel, he said that forasmuche as ther was a Constitution of Pope *Pius* his Predecessor, that did condemne and reprove all such Appelles, he therfor did reject your Grace Appeales as frivolous, forbidden, and unlawful. And as touching the General Council, he woold doo his best Deligence therin that it should take Effect; repeting agayn how in Tymes passed he had used alwayes Deligence for that Purpose, writing therein to all Christen Princes, your Highnes not yet answering thereunto, but remitting his Nuncio to the *French* King. Which notwithstanding he saith he wool yet do his Duty, and procure the best he can that it shall succede, nevertheles adding that he thought when it were well considered, that the King of *England* ought not, nor had Authoritie to call any General Council, but that the Convoking thereof apperteyned unto his Holynes. Finally concluding, that for his Part he woold alwayes do his Dutie as apperteyned. And as concernynge the Restitution of the Publique Writings made upon the Provocation and Appelles forsaide, he said he woold not restore theym, but woold kepe theym, and that safely. Saying therwithal, that I might have when I woold, *ab Episcopo Vintoniensi*, and other afor whom they were made, as many as I woold. And albeit that I shewed hym his own Lawe to be, that he coued not detayne them, yet he saying that it was but *de Lana Caprina*, and refusing to make Redeliverie thereof, commanded the Datarie only to gife me the Answer in Writinge, and soo bade me fare well.

Goyng with the Datarie to his Chamber for that Purpose, I perceyved ther that the Answer was alrede writ, howbeit that it was not touching so many Things as the Pope had by Mouth afor declared unto me, ne yet subscribed with the Dataries Hande, according to the accustomed maner. And requyring the Datarie to make it perfect, and delyver it unto me subscribed with his Hande; He willed me to come the Day followyng early in the Mornyng, and I shuld have it. Whereapon I departed, and came in the Mornyng to the Dataries Chamber in the Palace, but he was goon afor to the Pope. Wherefor repaying to the Popes Chamber and fynding him ther, I requyerd the said Answer in Writinge. And he goyng with me to his Chamber, delyvered me for Answer the self-same that was written the Day befor, adding only in the Ende these Words, *Et*  
*bac*

*hæc ad præsens, salvo Jure, latius & particularius si videbimus respondendi*; Subscribing the same with his own Hande, keping one other Copie with hymself. Which had, without hope of any other as then, I repaired to my Lord of *Winchester*, and other your Highe Ambassadours, to shew theym al the same.

And by this your Highnes may now perceyve, whether that the Pope will staye Proceſs apön any your Provocations or Appelles, howſomever they be made, or after what Sorte they be intymated unto hym, and allſo whether that unto ſuch Tyme he receive Inhibition from the General Councel, his Proceſs ſhall be taken in Lawe as nought. I feare that at his Returne to *Rome*, he will doo much Diſpleaſure, if by ſome good Policy he be not ſtay'd. The Original Anſwer delivered unto me by the Datary, forſaid I doe at this Tyme ſend unto your Highnes, only retaynyng with me the Copie thereof.

And ſyne albeit your Graces Commandement, declared by your Letters dated at *Chatham* the xth of *Auguſt* laſt paſſed, ſent unto me ſeemed to be, that Devyſing ſome Buſyneſs of my own, I ſhuld folowe alwayes and be preſent where the Pope reſorteth, ſtill reſiding and demouring, noting, marking and enſerching what is doon, and gyving your Highnes diligent Advertiſement thereof, as the Caſe and Importance of the Mater ſhuld require; yet for as much as in this late Congreſs, ther was nothing in maner doon by the Pope at the Contemplation of any in your Highnes Favour, and that the Appellations and Provocations of your Highnes being intimated, it is not like any thing of great Moment to be looked for, eſpecially all Things ſtanding as they do; I not knowyng your Highnes farther determinat Pleaſure, and thinking that by reaſon of the Premiſſes, your Highnes would not that I ſhuld farther interpriſe in that behalf, have therfor (the Pope beyng goon towards *Rome* from hence the twelfth of this preſent) taken my Journey towards *Lyons* the thirteenth of the ſame, your Highnes Ambaſſadors by reaſon of the Departure of the *French* Kinges ſoe alſoe doyng: And from thence I intend towards your Graces Realme, unleſs I receive your Commands to the contrarie.

To declare unto your Highnes, in what Perplexitie and Anxietie of Mynde I was in until that this Intimation was made, what Zele and Affection I have borne therein, how glad I would have been ſuch Things might have comen to paſs, which your Highnes ſo much hath deſired, and generally of all my Doyns here, without Fear or Diſpleaſure of any Man, it ſhall not be needful. Partely bycauſe I truſt your Highnes dowlth not thereof, and partely bycauſe the Bearer hereof, untill Mr. *Brian*, to whom I mooſt accompte my ſelf much bounden unto, will I ſuppoſe at large declare all the ſame, with other things here doyng; of whom your Highnes I doute not ſhall perceyve that although the *Frenchmen* were made pryvey of our Doyns concernyng the Intimation, and in Maner willing the ſame, two or three Dayes afor the Popes Departure, yet now for Excuse they ſaye that all their Matters and yours alſo be deſtroyed therby. And thus moſt humble I recommend me unto your Highnes



befeeching Almighty God to conserve the same in Felicity many Yeares.

From *Marfelles*,

the xiiiith of *Novembre*, 1533.

Your Highnes moost bounde Subject,

and poore Servant,

*Edmond Boner.*

Number 24.

*Cranmer's Letter, for an Appeal to be made in his Name.*

*An Original.*

Cotton Library  
Cleop. E. 6.  
P. 234.

IN my right harty maner I commend me to you. So it is (as ye know right well) I stande in drede, lest our Holy Father the Pope, do entende to make some maner of prejudicial processe against me and my Church, and therfore having probable Conjectures thereof, I have provoked from his Holynes to the General Counsell, accordingly as the King's Highnes and his Counsell have advised me to do; which my Provocation and a Procuracie under my Seale, I do send unto you herwith, desiering you right hartely to have me commended to my Lord of *Winchester*, and with his Advise and Counsell to intimate the said Provocation, after the best maner that his Lordship and you shall think most expedient for me. I am the bolder thus to write unto you, because the King's Highnes commanded me thus to do, as ye shall (I trust) further perceve by his Graces Letters, nothing doubting in your Goodness, but at this myne own desier ye woll be contented to take this Peynes, tho' his Highnes shall percase forget to write unto you therein: which your Peynes and Kindness (if it shall lye in me in tyme to come to recompense) I woll not forget it with God's Grace, who presearve you as my self. From *Lambeth*, the xxijd Day of *November*.

*Thomas Cantuar.*

Number

## Number 25.

*A Minute of a Letter sent by the King to his Ambassador at Rome.*

**T**Rufty and Right-welbiloved, we grete youe wel. And for Ex MS. Rymeri. asmuch as not only by the Relacion and Reaporte of our Trusty Chaplain Maister Doctor *Boner*, but also by certayne Letters writtyn by Sir *Gregory*, afore the Dispeche of Doctor *Boner*, uppon the lyvely Communications had by the Pope to the Emperor, in Justification and Favour of our Cause; by wych it appereth unto us, that his Holynes favering the Justice of our Great Cause, maketh Countnance and Demonstracion now to shew himself more propense and redy to the Administraction of Justice to our Contentation therin, thenne he hathe been accustomed in tymes past: Discending for Demonstracion herof as you take it to those Particularities folowyng, whyche Sir *Gregory* hath also sent by way of Instructions to *Boner*; that is to say, that in cace we woll be content to sende a Mandate requiring the Remission of our Cause into an indifferent Place, He wold be content to appoint *Locum Indifferentem*, and a Legate and Two Auditors from thense, *ad formand' Processum*, reserving always the Jugement therof to himself; or else if we woll consent and be agreable, inducing also our good Brother and perpetual Allye the *French* King, to be also content to conclude and establishe for iij or iiij Yeres, a General Truix; that then the Popes Holiness is pleased, if we and our said good Brother wol agree therunto, to indiecte with al celeritie a General Counsaile, wherunto his Holynes would remyt our Cause to be finished and determyned. Which Overtures being also proponed and declared unto us by the Popes Nuncio here, be set forth by him, and also in a Letter to hym, as thoughe they had been by the said Sir *Gregory* in our Name desired of the Popes Holynes, and by him assented to, for our Contentacion and Satisfaction, in that Behaulf: wherof we doo not a litle mervayl, considering that we of late never gave unto the said Sir *Gregory* or any other, any suche Commission or Instructions for that purpose, but fully to the contrary. Nevertheless forasmoch as bothe by the Relation of our said Chaplain and by the Purporte and Effecte of the fore said Letters, Instructions, and also by the Behaviour of the Popes Ambassadour here, and by such Overtures as he on the Popes behalfe hathe made unto us, We nowe considering the Benevolent and towarde Mynde of his said Holines expressed and declared in the same, have moche Cause to conceyve in our Mynd, as we doo indede, good Hope, that he depely pondering the Justnes of our said Cause, wil now take more respecte to put us in more Quietnes therein, thenne we had any Expectation heretofore: And therefor our Pleasure is that you discretly relating to his Holynes in what good parte we doo accepte and take his Overtures and Persuasions, doo gyve unto him our right harty Thanks for the same, adding



ding thereunto that we veraylie trust and be now of that Opinion that his Holynes calling to his Remembrance the manifold Commodities, Profitts, and Gratuities heretofor shewed by us, to him, and the See Apostolique, demanding nothing for Reciprocation of Friendship and mutual Amytie to be shewed at his Hand, but only Justice in our great Matior, according to the Lawes of God, and the Ordenances of the Holy Counsailes, for the Encrease of Vertue, Extirpation of Vice, and Quiet of al *Chriſtendom*, established by our Forfathers, wil now in Discharge of his Duetie towards God, shewing unto us Correspondence of Friendship according to our Deserts, putting aparte all Shadowes of Delays, more benivolently extende his good Wil and Gratuitie towards us in the Acceleration and speedye finishing of our said Cause, thenne those Overtures doo purporte, whyche if it come so to pass, hys Holines maye be wel assured to have us and our Realme as benevolent and loving towards him and the See Apostolique as hath at any Tyme hertofor been accustomed. And as concerning the General Truix for three or four Yeres, albeit we do inwardly confidre the greate good therof, and be of our oune Nature asmoche inclyned therunto as any Prince Christened, and on thother Side asmoche desirous to avoyde Contencion, wherupon many Tymes ensueth Extremytie, to the Hurte of many; yet nevertheles two things at this Tyme enforceth us to absteyne and forbere sodenly to consent to the same: One is, that we being afflicted, troubeled, and encombered in our oune Conscience, and our Realme therby greatly perplexed, cannot sodenly resolve our self to innovate or renewe any perfite Establishment of Peax with other, tyl we may be satisfied and have pure and syncere Peax in our owne Harte: and cause seying that it is wonly wyll and unkynd Stubbornes with Oblivion of former Kyndnes, whyche occasions the Lette of the Spede finishyng of our Cause, whyche ye may say that hys Holynes yf it please hym may soon redres, havyng so good Gronds for our part as he haveth, yf he wyl hartely therto applye hym, and then summe good Effecte myght happen to come therof. An other Cause there is also that we being moost perfite by an indissoluble Amyte and Leage unite and knyt unto our good Brother and perpetual Allye the *French* King, maye not in any wise, nor wil put our Consent to any such Request without the Knowledge and Assent of our said good Brother, and other our and hys Confederates: and notwithstanding yf hys Holynes thynketh that myne Endeavour and Labour herin may do hym any Gratuyte and Pleasure, or confer to hys Purpose in any thyng, he advertesyng us therof, shall well persayve that there shall lack no goode Diligens in us, to set forthe suche thyngs as may stonde with our Honour, and be also pleasant to hym, he shewyng to us sume Corespondnes of Kyndnes in thys our Just and Wayghte Cause. And as touching our Consent to the Indiction of a General Counsaile, though sundry Respects and Considerations at the Tyme now present, move us to thinke it not necessary, and that we nothing doubt but our Cause being remytted to the same, we shuld withal convenient celeritie, that begonne have our desired End therein; yet we being now in veray good Hope that the Popes Holynes at the last digesting thoroughly the Justness of our Cause, wil so use us in the same that according to

Trough

Trouth and Equitie good and speedye Successe therof shal folowe in other admytting the Excusatory, or else in remytting bothe the Knowlege of the Fact and finall Discition of the Cause into thys Realme where it was begon, accordyng to the olde Sanctions of Generall Concilles and divers of his Predecessours Assent, and as he hymselfe confesseth in hys Commyssion giffyn unto the Cardinall for thys Pourpose; We have now also suspended therfor our Assent and Consent therunto uppon two Respects, wherof the first requireth a necessary Suspencion of our said Consent, forasmoch as the same dependeth uppon the Assent of our said good Brother and other our Confederates, and that the oon of us without the other canne ne will in any wise consent to any Acte of such highe Importance as this is, which toucheth the hole Bodye of *Christendome*. The Seconde is, that in our Opinion which our Pleasure is ye with good Dexteritie declare unto hys Holynes the good Respecte had of the State of the Worlde, and of the Time present; It were not expedient for the Pope himself to consent therunto, considering that Themperour is in maner compelled by the Importunytie of the *Germaines* and the *Lutheran* Secte to cause the Pope to indict the said Council. And howe the said *Germaines* be mynded towards him and the See Apostolique, we doubt not but his Holynes dothe depely pondre and confidre. But ye shal saye unto the Popes Holynes on our behaulf, that finding him towards us good and kinde, brefely expedyteyng our Cause as affore is reherfy'd, wherof we now perceyve some lightlywood, and perceyving him to contynue and persever earnestly mynding the spedye Ende and Determynation therof, for our Satisfaction, we canne do no lesse for Reacquital therof, thenne to procure and practise by al Wayes and Meanes, aswell with our said good Brother as with al other our Allyes, Confederates and Friends, to do all things that maye be moost for the Surety of his Holynes and the Commodities of the See Apostolique, whyche we shall not faylle to do, yf he wyll dysclose to us the Menys how far. As touching the sending of a Mandate to require that the Cause might be harde in an indifferent Place, with Reservations of the Sentence to himself, ye shall signifie unto hys Holynes that albeit we well considering hys towarde Mynde for the spedye finishing of our said Cause, if we were a private Person wold nothing mistrust to consent to his said Overtures, ne the good Effects that might ensue of the same; yet nevertheles this Persuasion soo toucheth contrarye to Generall Concilles, to the Libertie, Regalitie, and Jurisdiction of all Prynces, and most especially to our Prerogatyffe Royall, Privileges of our Realme, wherof we be Hed and Sovereign; within the whiche, by the Ancient Lawes of the same, al Causes of Matrymonye ther bygon and solemnized, cummyng after in Question, ought to have their Original Commencement, and fynall Discusse and Discition by the *English* Church. Whyche Thyngs well confideryd, he havyng also Regarde to hys Othe, in the Resayte of hys Dyngnitie, which he ther actually gyffeth for Observance both of the Generall Conselles, and the Antique Lauys of the Faders of the Chyrch; Confideryng also with himself, how we at the Tyme of our Coronation, be likewyse obligyd by Othe, to Support and Maintayne, the Immunities and Pryncely Liberties of our Realme



and Croone, whych to contrary, I make my self fure hys Holynes well informyd, will never requyre, syns it is prohybite bothe by Gods Precept, and Lawe of Nature, by these Words, *Quod tibi non vis fieri, alteri ne facias*. Wherefore we fermely trust, that hys Holynes, pondering and wayng in the Balance of hys Just Hart and Equal Jugement, these most urgent both Refons and Causes, with the Respect of hys Duty to God, in Minystryng Justice and Equitie; And confidering also the Obligation, whych we as King thought not wordy, but by his Election, be bonde to our Realme, *Scilicet defendere Privilegias Coronæ & Regni*, wyll not at thys Tyme thynk any Unkindnes in us, thought that thys hys Request, *scilicet*, to send a Mandate, or to have it in any other Place than in thys Realme determyned by us, at thys Tyme be not acceptyd. For furly it so hyghtly touchyt the Prerogatyffe Riall of thys Realme, that thought I wer myndyd to do it, yett must abstayne wythout the Assent of our Court of Parliament, whyche I thynke verely wyll never condescend to it. Nevertheless, ye may shew unto hys Holynes, that for thys Offerre, we ascribe non Unkyndnes to hym, but rather take it in good Part; confidering that by hys Ambassadour wee doo parsayve, that hys Mynde was to gratify and do Pleasure herin to us, thys Overture procedyng oppon Gregory's Motion, werin to speke of that Sort, I ensure you of us he had non Commission, but rather to the contrary. And so we wyll ye shew the Pope; assuryng forther hys Holynes, that we be ryght fory that thys Overture was no more resonable, or consonant to our Honour. For furly in all resonable Thyngs, we wold gladly shew our selfe benivole to hym, as long as we persayve any maner of Gratuitie in hym. More ye may say, that we thynke that we nor our Realme have hytherto gyven any Occasion to his Holynes, wherby he shuld be moved at the Contemplacion of any privie Person, to attempte the Violation of the Immunities and Liberties of thys our Realme, or to bring the same in any publique Contention, wherby he may compell us in the Mayntenance of them, to shew and declare meny Thyngs peraventure it unknowne prejudiciall and hurtfull to the Papall Dyngnitie, *as it is now usyd*, whych not compellyd we intende not to do. Yet an other gret Refon as we thynk you may shew hys Holynes, gederyd owght of his own Law, whych is thys: I beyng a Commune Parson, am not bondyn *in re arduâ*, as thys is to appere in hys Court, and I beyng not bonden to appere, am not bonde to sende a Proxtour. Wherefore his owne Law shewyth evydently, that this Mater owght not to be determyned by hys Court, but *per Anglicanam Ecclesiam*: For yf hys Court were Juge, I shuld be obligyd to appere there. And ye shal further understand, that we have conceyved by certain Lettres lately sent unto us by the said Sir Gregory de Cassalis, that the Popes Holynes, amongs other Persuasions, in the Furtherance of our Cause shewed unto hym, that the Laweis being of the contrary Parte of our Cause, doo agree, that the Pope in our Cause may not Dispence, without an Urgent Cause. Which Opinion hys Holynes thinketh moche more dothe  
avance

avaunce the Goodnes of our Matier, thenne the General Opinion of the Devynes and Lawyers on our Parte, which doo affirm, that the Pope in noo wise maye Dispenſe. Which Matier being alſo perſuaded by his Holynes to Themperour, who declared, that at the Tyme of the Diſpenſation, there was extreme Warres betwene our Dereſt Father of Noble Memory, whoſe Soule God pardon, and King *Ferdinando*, Father to the Quene. And for Paciſieng therof the ſaid Diſpenſation was obtayned; wherupon the Mariage enſued: Which bereth a Viſage of an urgent Cauſe, as if it were true, as it is not. And therefore, as wel for the Satisfaction of the Pope's Holynes in that Behaulf, as for a clere Reſolution of the Doubte by his Holynes proponed, whether the Quene were *Cognita* by our Brother Prince *Arthure*, or noo; Our Pleaſure is, that ye ſhal ſignifie to his Holynes, that in the League betwene our ſaid Dereſt Father, and the ſaid *Ferdinando*, Renoveled and Concluded, Sealed and Signed with the ſaid King *Ferdinando*, and the Quene his Wief Hands, wherupon the Diſpenſation for the Mariage betwene us and the Quene was obteyned, appereth no maner of Cauſe. But playnly declaring the ſaid twoo Princes to be thenne and afor more perfiteſty Eſtabliſhed, Unyted, and Confederate in Frendſhip and Amytie, thenne eny other Prince of *Chriſtendom*, ſetteth forth the Cauſe of the Diſpenſation and Agreement for the ſaid Mariage, to be only for Contynuaunce and Augmentation of their ſaid Amytie, and for the Vertuouſe Modeſtie and other Qualities of the Quene. In which League is alſo playnly mencyned and expreſſed in two Places therof, that the Mariage betwene our ſaid Brother and Her, was ſolemnized and perfiteſty conſummate; whereby, and by the Depoſitions of a great Number of Noble and Honorable Perſonages, which hertoſor by their Othes have been examyned upon the ſame, manifeſtly and playnly appereth to al indifferēt Herers, without Doubt therof, that the Quene was Carnally Known by our ſaid Brother Prince *Arthur*; and the ſame Diſpenſation ſoo proceeding, without urgent Cauſe to be reputed *invalida*. The Tranſumpt of which League autentiquely tranſumed, we ſende unto youe herewith, to thintent ye may the better perceyve theſeſſe of the ſame. And finally, ye ſhal firther ſignifie to his Holynes, that of the Good Succeſſe of this our Cauſe, dependeth the Suretie of our Succeſſion, and therupon enſueth the Reſt, Peax, and Tranquillitie of al our Realme, and by the protracting thereof many perillous Daungers maye and is like to enſue to the ſame, which above all Things, we and our Realme ought to have Reſpect unto. Wherfor it is more convenient, and conſonant to Reaſon and Equitie, that this our ſaid Cauſe ſhuld be determyned by them, to whoſe Dammage or Commoditie the Succeſſe of the Cauſe may enſue, and not by his Holynes, which canne have no certain Knowledge of the State of the ſame. And yet nevertheles, if his Holynes remytting the final Diſcuſſe of the principal Cauſe to our *Engliſh* Church, as apperteineth, wil after that, of his Gratuitie ratifie and confirme ſuche Sentence as they ſhal determyn in the ſame, ſhal therby not only adquire Chriſten Obedience of us and our People, moche to his Commoditie and Contentacion, and alſo profitable



able to the See Apostolique, but also pacifie the Contradiction, to the Rest and Quietnes of al *Christendom*. Willing you by thise and other discrete Persuasions, as ye can with al Diligence and Dexteritie to allure his Holynes, being now sumwhat attempered and disposed to do us good, to condescend to more benivolent Gratuities, than as yet is set forth by the said Overtures; and to ascertain us with all Diligence and Celeritie, what Towardnes ye shal perceyve in him in this Behaulf, not mynding that ye shal declare this as our resolute Answer. But uppon other and further Overtures, and after more Deliberation and Consultation uppon these weighty Causes, we wil study and enserche, by al Honourable Wayes and Meanes that we canne, to concurre with the towardly Minde of his Holynes, if he earnestly wil applie himself, and persever in suche Opinion, as may be for the Acceleration of thende of our said Cause: Willing you, with all Diligence and Dexteritie, to put your good Endeavour to the same; and likewise to procure the said Sir *Gregory*, according to our Expectation in that Behaulfe.

Number 26.

*The Judgment of the Convocation of the Province of York,  
rejecting the Pope's Authority.*

**I**Llustrissimo & Excellentissimo Principi & Domino Domino Henrico VIII. Dei Gratiâ, Angliæ & Franciæ Regi, Fidei Defensori, & Domino Hiberniæ. Edwardus, Permissione Divinâ, Eboracensis Archiepiscopus, Angliæ Primas & Metropolitanus, Salutem in eo, per quem Reges regnant, & Principes dominantur. Vestræ Regiæ Celsitudini, Tenore Præsentium, innotescimus & significamus, Quod, cum juxta vestræ Regiæ Majestatis Mandatum, coram Prælatiis & Clero Eboracensi, Provinciæ in Sacra Synodo Provinciali, sive Convocatione Prælatorum & Cleri ejusdem Provinciæ Eboracensis, in Domo Capitulari Ecclesiæ Metropolitanicæ Eborum, quinto Die Mensis Maij, Anno Domini M. D. xxxiv. jam instanti, celebrata, & de Diebus indies continuata congregatis proposita fuit sequens Conclusio, Quod Episcopus Romanus, in Sacris Scripturis, non habet aliquam majorem Jurisdictionem in Regno Angliæ, quam quivis alius extraneus Episcopus. Ac insuper, ex Parte Præsentium in eadem Synodo, per Nos deputatorum memorati Prælati & Clerus, rogati & requisiti ut illam Conclusionem suo Consensu confirmarent & corroborarent, si illam Veritati consonam, & Sacris Scripturis non repugnantem, existimarent aut judicarent. Tandem dicti Prælati, & Clerus Eboracensis Provinciæ antedictæ, post diligentem Tractatum in ea Parte habitum, ac maturam Deliberationem, unanimiter & concorditer, nemine eorum discrepante, prædictam Conclusionem fuisse & esse veram affirmarunt, & eidem concorditer consenserunt.

Quæ

Quæ omnia & singula vestræ Regiæ Celsitudini, Tenore Præsentium, intimamus & significamus.

In quorum omnium & singulorum Fidem & Testimonium, Sigillum nostrum apponi fecimus. Dat. in Manerio nostro de Cawodd, Primo Die Mensis Junij, Anno Domini, M. D. XXXIV. & nostræ Consecrationis Anno Tertio.

Number 27.

*The Judgment of the University of Oxford, rejecting the Pope's Authority.*

*In a Book, filed, Registrum, five Epistolæ Regum & Magnatum ad Academiam Oxon. Unà cum Responsis. MS. Archiv. A. 117. ad An. 1534. P. 127.*

*Part of the King's Letter to the University.*

OUR Pleasure and Commandement is, that ye, as shall beseem Men of Vertue and profound Literature, diligently Intreating, Examining, and Discussing a certaine Question sent from Us to you, concerning the Power and Primacie of the Bishop of Rome; send again to Us in Writing under your Common Seale, with convenient Speed and Celeritie, your Mind, Sentence, and Assertion of the Question, according to the meere and sincere Truth of the same: Willing you to give Credence to our trusty and well-beloved, this Bringer, your Commissarie, as well touching our further Pleasure in the Premisses, as for other Matters, &c. Yeven under our Signett, at our Mannor of *Greenewich*, the Eighteenth Day of *May*,

*The University's Answer to the King.*

UNIVERSIS Sanctæ Matris Ecclesiæ Filiis, ad quos præsentēs Literæ pervenerint, Johannes, Permissione Divina, Lincolnienſis Episcopus, Almæ Universitatis Oxon. Cancellarius: Nec non universus Doctorum ac Magistrorum, Regentium & non Regentium in eadem Cœtus, Salutem in Auctore Salutis. Quum Illustrissimus simul ac Potentissimus Princeps & Dominus noster Henricus Octavus, Dei Gratia, Angliæ & Franciæ Rex, Fidei Defensor, & Dominus Hiberniæ, affiduis Petitionibus & Querelis Subditorum suorum in summo suo Parlamento, super intolerabilibus Exterarum Potestatum, Exactionibus



nibus nuper Propositis, Controversiisque quibusdam habitis, super Potestate ac Jurisdictione Romani Episcopi, variisque & urgentibus Causis, contra eundem Episcopum tunc ibidem expositis & declaratis, aditus atque rogatus fuerit, ut commodis suorum Subditorum in hac parte consuleret, & Querelis satisfaceret: Ipse tanquam prudentissimus Solomon, sollicitè curans quæ suorum sunt Subditorum, quibus in hoc Regno, divina disponente Clementia, præest, altiusque secum considerans, quo Pacto commodissimas Regno suo sanciret Leges; denique ante omnia præcavens, ne contra Sacram Scripturam aliquid statuat, (quam vel ad Sanguinem usq; defendere semper fuit, eritque paratissimus) solerti suo Ingenio, sagaciq; Industria, quandam Quæstionem ad hanc ejus Academiam Oxon. publicè & solenniter, per Doctores & Magistros ejusdem disputandam transmisit: Viz. *An Romanus Episcopus habeat majorem aliquam Jurisdictionem, sibi à Deo collatam in Sacra Scriptura, in hoc Regno Angliæ, quàm alius quisvis externus Episcopus?* Mandavitque, ut habita super hac Quæstione matura Deliberatione, & Examinatione diligenti, quid Sacræ Literæ in hac Parte nostro Judicio statuunt, eundem certiores facere suo Instrumento, Sigillo communi Universitatis, communito & firmato curarem. Nos igitur Cancellarius, Doctores ac Magistri prædicti, sæpe reminiscentes, ac penitus apud nos pensantes, quanta sit Virtus, Sanctitas, ac nostræ Professioni quam consona res, & debita Submissioni, Obedientiæ, Reverentiæ, ac Charitati congrua, præmonstrare viam Justitiæ ac Veritatis cupientibus, Sacrarum Literarum Vestigiis \* inferre, securiorique & tranquilliori Conscientia, in Lege Dei sacram, ut aiunt, suam Anchoram reponere; non potuimus non invigilare, sedulo quin in Petitione tam justa ac honesta, tanto Principi (cui velut auspiciatissimo nostro Supremo Moderatori obtemperare tenemur) modis omnibus satisfaceremus. Post susceptam itaque per nos Quæstionem antedictam, cum omni Humilitate, Devotione, ac debita Reverentia, convocatis undique dictæ nostræ Academiae Theologis, habitoque complurium dierum spatio, ac deliberandi tempore satis amplo, quo interim cum omni qua potuimus Diligentia, Justitiæ Zelo, Religione & Conscientia incorrupta, perscrutaremur tam Sacræ Scripturæ Libros, quam super eisdem approbatissimos Interpretes, & eos quidem sæpe ac sæpius à nobis evolutos, & exactissimè collatos, repetitos & examinatos; deinde & Disputationibus solennibus, palam & publicè habitis & celebratis, tandem in hanc Sententiam unanimiter omnes convenimus, ac concordēs fuimus; Viz. Romanum Episcopum majorem aliquam Jurisdictionem non habere, sibi à Deo collatam in Sacra Scriptura, in hoc Regno Angliæ, quàm alium quemvis externum Episcopum. Quam nostram Assertionem, Sententiam, sive Determinationem, sic ex Deliberatione discussam, ac juxta Exigentiam Statutorum & Ordinationum, hujus nostræ Universitatis per nos conclusam, publicè totius Academiae Nomine, tanquam veram, certam, Sacræq; Scripturæ consonam, affirmamus (&) testificamur per Præsentes. In quorum omnium & \* Fidem & Testimonium has Literas fieri, & Sigillo nostræ Universitatis communi, roborari fecimus. Dat. in Domo Congregationis nostræ, 27. Die Mensis Junij, Anno à Christo nato M. D. XXXIV.

\* Leg. infir-  
mere.

\* Not very Le-  
gible; but it  
seems, it was  
singulorum.

## Number 28.

*The Judgment of the Prior and Chapter of Worcester,  
concerning the Pope's Authority.*

Ordo quidam observandus erga Dominum Regem Henricum Octavum,  
&c. Et in quali æstimatione habebimus Episcopum Romanum.

*Copied out of the Register of Worcester.*

**Q**Uum ea fit non solum Christianæ Religionis & Pietatis Ratio, sed nostræ etiam Obedientiæ Regula, Domino Regi nostro Henrico Octavo, (cui uni & soli, post Christum Jesum Servatorem nostrum, debemus Univerſa,) non modo omnimodam in Christo, & eandem sinceram, integram, perpetuamque Animi Devotionem, Fidem & Observantiam, Honorem, Cultum, Reverentiam, præstemus; sed etiam de eadem Fide & Observantia nostra Rationem quotiescunque postulabitur, reddamus, & palam omnibus, si res poscat libentissimè testemur. Noverint universi ad quos Scriptum præsens pervenerit, Quod nos Willielmus, Prior Ecclesiæ Cathedralis, sive Monasterii Beatæ Mariæ Wigorn' Ordinis Sancti Benedicti & ejusdem Loci Conventus sive Capitulum Wigorn' Dioc' uno Ore & Voce, atque unanimi omnium Consensu & Assensu, hoc Scripto nostro sub Sigillo nostro communi, in Domo nostra Capitulari dato, pro Nobis & successoribus nostris, omnibus & singulis in perpetuum profiteamur, testamur, ac fideliter promittimus & spondemus, nos dictos Priorem & Conventum, sive Capitulum, & Successores nostros omnes & singulos, integram, inviolatam, sinceram, perpetuamque Fidem, Observantiam & Obedientiam, semper præstatueros, erga Dominum Regem nostrum Henricum Octavum, & erga Annam Reginam, Uxorem ejusdem, & erga Sobolem ejus ex eadem Anna legitimè tam progenitam, quam progenendam. Et quod hæc eadem Populo notificabimus, prædicabimus, & suadebimus, ubicunque dabitur Locus & Occasio. Item, quod confirmatum ratumque habemus, semperque & perpetuo habituri sumus, quod prædictus Rex noster Henricus, est Caput Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ. Item, quod Episcopus Romanus, qui in suis Bullis Papæ nomen, usurpat, & summi Pontificis Principatum sibi arrogat, non habet Majorem aliqua Jurisdictionem à Deo sibi collatam, in hoc Regno Angliæ, quam quivis alius externus Episcopus. Item, quod nullus nostrum, in ulla Sacra Concione, privatim vel publicè habenda, eundem Episcopum Romanum appellabit Nomine Papæ, aut summi Pontificis, sed Nomine Episcopi Romani, vel Ecclesiæ Romanæ: Et quod nullus nostrum orabit pro eo tanquam Papa, sed tanquam Episcopo Romano. Item, quod soli dicto Domino Regi  
&



& Successoribus suis adhærebimus & ejus Leges ac Decreta manutenebimus. Episcopi Romani Legibus, Decretis & Canonibus, qui contra Legem Divinam, & Sacram Scripturam, aut contra Jura hujus Regni esse invenientur, in perpetuum renunciantes. Item, quod nullus nostrum omnium, in ulla, vel privata vel publica Concione, quicquam ex Sacris Scripturis desumptum ad alienum Sensum detorquere præsumat: Sed quisque Christum, ejusque Verba & Facta, simpliciter, apertè, sincerè, & ad Normam seu Regulam Sacrarum Scripturarum, & verè Catholicorum & Orthodoxorum Doctorum, prædicabit catholicè & orthodoxè. Item, quod unusquisque nostrum, in suis Orationibus & Comprecationibus, de more faciendis, primum omnium Regem, tanquam Supremum Caput Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ, Deo & Populi Precibus commendabit; deinde Reginam Annam, cum sua Sobole; tum demum Archiepiscopos Cantuariensem & Eboracensem, cum cæteris Cleri Ordinibus pro ut videbitur. Item, quod omnes & singuli prædicti Prior & Conventus, five Capitulum, & Successores nostri, Conscientia & Jurisjurandi Sacramento, nosmet firmiter obligamus, quod omnia & Singula Prædicta, fideliter, in perpetuum observabimus. In cujus Rei Testimonium, huic Scripto nostro, commune Sigillum nostrum appendimus, & nostra Nomina Propria quisque Manu Scripsimus. Dat. in Domo nostra Capitulari, xvii Die Mensis Augusti, Anno Regni Regis nostri Henrici Octavi, Viceffimo Sexto.

*Then follows an Oath made to King Henry the VIIIth, agreeing exactly with that Pag. 146. of the First Vol. of The History of the Reformation; except, that the Words alonely in the First Line, and damage in the last Line but Two of that Oath, are wanting.*

**I**llustrissimo & Potentissimo in Christo Principi & Domino nostro, Henrico Octavo, Dei Gratia Anglicæ & Franciæ Regi, Defensori Fidei, Domino Hiberniæ, in Terris Supremo Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ, sub Christo, Capiti; Vestri humiles Subditi, & devotissimi Oratores, Henricus Holbecke, Prior Ecclesiæ Cathedralis Wigorn' & ejusdem Loci Conventus, Ordinis Sancti Benedicti Wigorniensis Dioceseos, Reverentiam & Obedientiam, tam Excellenti & Præpotenti Principi debitas & condignas, cum omni Subjectionis Honore. Noverit Majestas Vestra Regia, Quod nos Prior & Conventus memorati, non Vi aut Metu coacti, Dolore, aut aliqua alia sinistra Machinatione ad hoc inducti, five seducti, sed ex nostris certis Scientiis, Animis deliberatis, merisque & spontaneis Voluntatibus, pure, sponte & absolute, profitemur, spondemus, ac ad Sancta Dei Evangelia, per nos corporaliter tacta, juramus, illustrissimæ veræ Regiæ Majestati, Singulari & Summo Domino nostro & Patrono, Henrico Octavo, Dei Gratia, Angliæ & Franciæ Regi, Fidei Defensori, Domino Hiberniæ, ac in Terris Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ Supremo immediate sub Christo Capiti; quod posthac nullo externo Imperatori Regi Principi aut Prælato nec Romano Pontifici (quem Papam vocant) Fidelitatem aut Obedientiam, Verbo vel Scripto simpliciter, vel sub juramento, promitemus aut dabimus, vel dari curabimus, sed omni tempore Casu & Conditione

Partes

Partes vestræ regię Majestatis ac Successorum vestrorum sequemur & Observabimus, & pro viribus Defendemus, contra omnem Hominem quem vestræ Majestati aut Successoribus vestris adversarium cognoscemus vel suspicabimur. Solique vestræ Regię Majestati velut Supremo nostro Principi quem etiam Supremum in Terris Ecclesię Anglicanę sub Christo Caput agnoscimus & acceptamus, & Successoribus vestris Fidelitatem & Obedientiam sincere & ex animo præstabimus. Papatum Romanum non esse a Deo in Sacris Literis Ordinatum profiteremur. Sed Humanitus traditum constanter affirmamus, & palam declaramus & declarabimus & ut alii sic publicent diligentur curabimus. Nec tractatum cum quocunque mortalium privatim aut publicè inhibimus, quod Episcopus Romanus aliquam Auctoritatem vel Jurisdictionem amplius hic habeat aut exerceat, vel ad ullam posthac restituatur, ipsumque Romanum Episcopum modernum aut ejus in illo Episcopatu Successorum quemcunque non Papam, non summum Pontificem, non Universalem Episcopum, nec Sanctissimum Dominum, sed solum Romanum Episcopum vel Pontificem (ut priscis mos erat) scienter publicè asseremus. Juraque & Statuta hujus Regni pro extirpatione & sublatione Papatus ac Auctoritatis & Jurisdictionis ejusdem Romani Episcopi quandocunque edita sive sancita pro viribus scientia & ingeniolis nostris ipsi firmiter Observabimus ac pro ab aliis quantum in nobis fuerit sic observari curabimus atque efficiemus: nec posthac ad dictum Romanum Episcopum appellabimus aut appellari consentiemus: nec in ejus curia pro Jure aut Justitia agemus aut agenti Respondebimus, nec ibidem Accusatoris aut Rei Personam Sustinebimus. Et si quid dictus Episcopus per Nuncium vel per Literas significaverit, qualecunque id fuerit, illud quam citissime commode poterimus, aut vestræ Regię Majestati & vestris à Secreti, Consiliariis, vestrisve Successoribus aut eorum à Secretis Consiliariis significabimus aut significari faciemus. Nosque Literas aut Nuncium ad eundem Romanum Episcopum, vel ejus curiam nec mittemus, nec mitti faciemus, nisi vestra Majestate conscia & consentiente aut vestro Successore quod dictæ Literæ vel Nuncius ad illum deferentur; Bullas, Brevia, aut rescripta quæcunque pro nobis vel aliis, ab Episcopo Romano vel ejus curia non impetrabimus, vel ut talia à quovis impetrentur non consulimus. Et si talia pro nobis infciis aut Ignorantibus generaliter, vel specialiter impetrabuntur vel alio quomodolibet concedentur, eis Renunciabimus & non Consentiemus: nec utemur iisdem ullo pacto seu modo. At eas vestræ Majestati & Successoribus vestris tradi curabimus, omnibusque dicti Romani Episcopi Concessionibus, Privilegiis, largitionibus & indultis cujuscunque Naturæ seu qualitatis existant, ac sub quocunque Verborum tenore concessæ fuerint, à dicta sede Romana directe vel indirecte, mediate vel immediate aut alias qualitercunque dicti Romani Episcopi Auctoritate largitis sive consensu quibuscunque publicè & expresse in his Scriptis renunciavimus, easque irritas & inanes esse Volumus. Et soli vestræ Regię Majestati velut Supremo nostro Principi & Ecclesię Anglicanę Capiti & Successoribus vestris nos subditos & subjectos fore profiteremur & nos ac Successores nostros subjicimus: Et solummodo subditos fore spondemus. Nos eidem Romano Episcopo vel ejus Nunciis Oratoribus, Collectoribus aut Legatis ullam procuracionem, pensionem, portionem censum aut



quamcunque aliam Pecuniarum Summam quocunque nomine appelletur, per nos aut interpositam Personam vel Personas solvemus nec solvi faciemus. Statutumque de Successione vestra Regia in Parlamento vestro tento apud Westmon' Anno Regni vestri 28 ac omnia & singula in eodem contenta juxta vim formam & effectum ejusdem fideliter Observabimus. Præterea in Vim Pacti profiteamur & spondemus ac sub Fidelitate vestræ Majestati debita, & nostra coram Deo Conscientia, promitemus quod contra hanc nostram professionem & sponfionem, nulla dispensatione, nulla exceptione, nulla appellatione aut provocatione; nulloque juris aut facti remedio, nos tuebimur: & si quam protestationem in præjudicium hujus nostræ Professionis faciemus, eam in præsens & in omne tempus futurum revocamus & eidem renunciamus per præsentem Literas; quibus propriis manibus nomina nostra subscripsimus, ac eas sigilli nostri communis appensione & Notarii Publici Subscripti signo & Subscriptione communiri fecimus & curavimus. Dat. & act. in Domo nostra Capitulari xxvi Die Mensis Augusti, Anno Domini Millesimo Quingentissimo Tricesimo Sexto, Anno Regni vestræ Regiæ Majestatis Viceffimo Octavo. Præsentibus tunc ibidem discretis Viris Johanne Tyson, Olivero Lloyde, & Rogero Hughes, in legibus & decretis respectivè Baccalaureis, & Ricardo Bedle Notario Publico testibus ad præmissa specialiter vocatis & requisitis.

---

Number 29.

*An Order for Preaching, and bidding of the Beades in all Sermons to be made within this Realm. 1535.*

Cotton Library  
Cleop. E. 5.  
P. 286.

**F**IRST, whosoever shall preache in the Presence of the King's Highnes, and the Queen's Grace, shall in the bidding of the Beades, pray for the Hole Catholike Church of Crist, aswell Quick as Ded, and specyallie for the Catholique Church of this Realme; And First as we be most bounden for our Soveringe Lord King *Henry* the VIIIth, being ymediately next unto God, the onelie and Supreme Hed of this Catholike Church of *England*, and for the most Gracious Lady Queen *Anne* his Wife; and for the Lady *Elizabeth*, Daughter and Heire to them both, our Prynceffe, and no ferther.

*Item*, The Preacher in all other Placs of this Realme then in the Presence of the King's saide Highnes, and the Queen's Grace, shall in the bidding of the Beads, pray First in Manner and Form, and Worde for Worde as is above ordeyned and lymtyed; adding thereunto in the Seconde Parte, for all Archebishops and Bishops, and for all the hole Clergie of this Realme; and specyallie for suche as shall please the Preacher to name of his Devotion; and Thirdly for all Dukes, Earls, Marques, and for all the hole Temporaltee of this Realme;

Realme; and speciallie for suche as the Preacher shall Name of Devocyon: And fygnallie for the Soules of all them that be Ded, and speciallie of such as it shall please the Preacher to Name.

*Item,* It is ordeyned that every Preacher shall Preach ones in the Presence of the greatist Audience against the usurped Power of the Bishop of *Rome*, and so after at his Lybertee: And that no Man shal be suffered to defend, or mayntene the foresaid usurped Power: Ferthermore to keep Unyte and Quyetnes in this Realme, it is ordeyned that no Preachers shall contende openly in Pulpit one against another, nor uncharytable deprave one another in open Audience; but if any of them be greved one with another, let them Complayne to the King's Highnes; or to the Archbishope, or Bishope of the Diocs where such Chaunce shall happen, and there to be remedied if there be Cause why; and if the Complaynt be not trew, the Complayner to be punished.

*Item,* Also to forfende that no Preachers for a Year, shall Preach neyther with, nor against Purgatory, honouring of Saynts, that Priests may have Wives; that Faith onelie justifieth; to go on Pilgrimages; to forge Miracles; considering these Things have caused Discension amongst the Subjects of this Realme alredy, which thanked be God is now well pacified.

*Item,* That from hensfourth all Preachers shall purelie, syncerelie, and justlie preach the Scripture, and Worde of Christe, and not myxe them with Man's Institutions, nor make Men believe that the Force of Godes Law, and Man's Law is like; nor that any Man is able, or hathe Power to dispence with Godes Law.

*Item,* It is also ordered that the Declaration of the Sentence which hathe ben used in the Church Four Tymes in the Year, shall not from henceforth, neyther be published, nor esteemed in any Point contrary to the Præmynce and Jurisdiction Royall of our King and his Realme, or Laws and Liberties of the same; and any so doing to be competently punished by the Bishop of that Diocs where it shall Fortune him to be, or inhabite: And this throughout the Realme and Domynyons of our Sovereigne, shortlie the Bishopes to sett Order in.

*Item,* It is also ordered that the Colects for the Preservation of the King and Queen by Name, be from henceforth comunely and usualie used and sayed in every Cathedrall Church, Religious House, and Peroche Church, in all their High Masses thorough out all the Realme and Domynyons of our King and Sovereigne.

*Item,* It is further ordeyned that wheresoever the King's just Cause of Matrimony hath eyther ben detracted, and the incestious and injuste set fourth, or in Placs where as it hathe not been dilated, that in all those Placs till the People be fully satisfied and justlie instructe, all manner of Preachers whatsoever they be, happenning to come into any such Parte of the Realme, shall from henceforth open and declare the mere veryte and justnes of this later Matrymony, as nigh as their Learning can serve them, and according to the trew Determyacions of a greate Number of the most Famous and Esteemed Universities of *Christendom*; according also to the just Resolution and Diffinicyon of both the Convocationes of this Realme, concurring also



also in the same Opynyon, by the Hole Assent of Parliament, our Prynce, the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, and Commones of this Realme; wherefore now they must declare this Matier, neyther doubtful nor disputable, but to be a Thing of mere Veryte, and so to be allowed in all Men's Opynyons.

*Item*, It is farther ordeyned that the foresaid Preachers shall also declare the false and injuste Handeling of the Bishop of *Rome*, pretending to have Jurisdiction to Judge this Cause at *Rome*; which in the First Hering thereof did both declare and confesse in Word and Writing the Justnes thereof to be uppon our Soveraignes side, inso-much as by a Decretall delyvered to the Legate here then sitting for the same Cause, he did clearly determyn that if Prince *Arthur* was our Princes Brother, and then of competent Age allowed in the Law when he Married the Lady *Katharine*, she being so likewise, and that as far as Presumptions can prove Carnall-Copulation ensued between them; that these proved, before the said Cardinales and Legates (which in dede were accordingly to the Lawes justlie proved) that then the unjust Copulacion between our Sovereigne and the said Lady *Katheryn*, was neyther Lawfull, nor ought to be suffered, and so, *eo facto*, pronounced in the foresaide Decretall, the nullite, invalidite, and unlawfulness of their pretended Matrimony, which was by his Law sufficient Judgement of the Cause; which Decretall by his Commandment, after and because he would not have the Effect thereof to ensue, was, after the Sight thereof, imbeciled by the foresaid Cardinalls; and one which then was here his Cubicular, contrary to all Justnes and Equytee, wherein he hath done our Sovereigne most extreme Wrong.

Secondly, Contrary to all Equite and Determination of Generall Counsailes, he hath called the Cause (which ought to be determyned here) to *Rome*, where our Sovereigne is neyther bounde to appere, nor send Proctor: And yet hath he deteyned wrongfully the Cause there these Three or Four Years at the Instance of the other Partie, which sued to have it there, because they knowe he durst not displease the Emperour, who maketh himself a Partie in it, as by the Sequele it doth evydentlie appere, and so could our Prince gett no Justice at his Hande, but was wrongfully delayed to no small hinderance, both to his Succession, and this his Realme, emynente Daunger.

Thirdlie, Where it is a naturall Defence that the Subject ought, and may Defende his naturall Sovereigne, or Master, both in Word and Deed, and ought thereto to be admytted, this forsaid Bishop of *Rome*, contrary to this Equite in Nature, hath rejected our Sovereigns Excusator, contrary both to his own Lawes (which he most setteth by) and also Gods Law, which he ought to prefer. Upon which Cause, and other great Injuries, our Sovereigne did Appeale to the General Counsaile; notwithstanding the which, he hath contrary to all Justice proceded, *ad ulteriora*, wherein by a General Counsaile he is dampned as an Heretick; yet thus injuriousslie from the begynnyng hitherto, he hath handled our Princes Cause and Matier there.

Fourthely,

Fourthely, The said Bishope of *Rome* fyns our Princes Appeal, hering of the Laws, and Acts of Parliament which we then went about, and that our King having just ground (the Premiffes confidered) would provide according to his bounden Duetie, both for the Suretie of his Succellion and Realme, gave out a Sentence in Maner of Ex-communycation and Interdiction of him and his Realme, in which when he was spoken to for the Iniquitie and Unjustnes thereof by our Princes Agents, he and his Counsaile could nor did otherwise excuse them (the Facte being so contrary to all Lawes and Right) but that the Faulte was in a New Officer late come to the Court, which for his lew'd doing should grevoullie be punyshed, and the Proceffe to cesse. This they promised our Princes Agente, which notwithstanding was set up in *Flanders* to the great Injurie of our Prynce, and for parcyalite to the other Parte, as it may well appear by the forsaide Sentence.

Fyvethlie, The said Bishope of *Rome* sought all the Ways possible with fair Words and Promises both by his Ambassadors and our Sovereigns owne, which by any Meanes could be invented, to have abused our Prynce and Sovereigne; which when he saw that by none of his Crafts our Prince would be no longer abused with them, then sewed he to the *French* King, to be a Mediator between our Sovereigne and him: Declaring to him and his Counsaile that he would gladly do for our Sovereigne, allowing the Justnes of his Cause; so that they would fynd the Means that our Sovereigne would not proceed in his Acts and Lawes till that were proved. And that he would meet with him at *Marcelles* for the fynishing thereof, for at *Rome* he durst not do it for fear of the Emperor. The good *French* King admonyshed our Prince hereof, offering to him to do all Pleasure and Kyndnes that lay in him in this Cause, trusting that if the Bishop of *Rome* came ones to *Marcelles*, he should give Sentence for our Sovereigne in his just Cause, and therefore prayed our Prince to be content with that Meting, in which he would labor for it effectuoullie, and so he did: To the which our Prince answered, that touching the Meting he was content, but touching the forbering of making Lawes, he prayed his good Brother to hold him excused, for he knew well ynough both the Crafte and Delays of the Bishop of *Rome*; by which from thencforth he would never be abused: And that likewise he fered that he would abuse his good Brother, which so indede after followed; for after he had gotten the Maryage of the Duke of *Orleance*, he then promised the *French* King to give Judgment for our Maister, so he would send a Proxie, which the said Bishop of *Rome* knew well before, that he neyther would, nor was bound to do; yet notwithstanding his subtill ymagynacions, his Promise was to the *French* King, that our Prynce sending a Proctor, should there before his Departure have Judgment for him in the Principall Cause; for he openly confessed ferther, that our Maister had the Right: But because our Prince and Maister would not prejudicate for his Jurisdictione, and uphold his usurped Power by sending a Proctor, ye may evydentlie here see that this was onelie the Cause why the Judgment of the Bishop of *Rome* was not given in his Favour; whereby it may appere that there lacked



not any Justnes in our Princes Cause, but that Ambition, Vaine-Glory, and to much mundanytee, weare the Letts thereof: Wherefore, Good People, I exhorte you to sticke to the Trueth, and our Prince according to our bounden Dueties, and Dispise thes noughtie Doings of this Bishop of *Rome*; and charytably pray that he and all others, abusers of Christs Worde and Workes, may have Grace to amend.

Number 30.

*Instructions given by the Kinges Highnes, to his Trusty and Well-beloved Servant William Pagett, one of the Clearkes of his Signet, whom his Highnes sendeth at this Tyme unto the Kinge of Pole, the Dukes of Pomeray and of Pruce; and to the Cities of Dantiske, Stetin, and Connynburgh, for the Purposes ensueinge.*

*An Original.*

HENRY R.

Cotton Library  
Vitell. B. 14.  
Fol. 66.

**F**irst the said *Pagett* takeinge with him the Kinges Highnes Letters of Credence to the Princes aforesaide, with the Coppies of certeine other Bookes and Writeings prepared for his Dispatch, shall with all Diligence, takeing his Journey from hence, repaire unto the said Princes, as to his Wisdome shall be thought best for the Expedition of his Journey most convenient. After his Arrival there, taking the best Opportunity he can for his Audience, and deliverie of the Kings Highnes said Letters, with his Highnes most harty Recomendacions: The said *Pagett* shall say that the Kinges Highnes consideringe not only the Olde Love and Perfect Friendship, which hath now of long Tyme been contracted, and by mutual Offices of Amity, established between his Highnes and the said Princes; But also the singular Affection and entire Zeal, which his Highnes by fondry and manifold Arguments, hath and doth daily perceive to be in them, to the searching, furtheringe, defence, and mainteininge of the Sincere Truth, and Right Understanding of Gods Word, and the Justice of his Lawes, and the Extirpacion of such inveterate, old, and corrupt Errors, Customes, and Abusiones, whereby Christes People have bin nowe of longe Tyme seduced, and kept more bound, thrall'd, and captive under the Yoke of the Bishops of *Rome*, then ever the *Jewish* People were under the Ceremonies of *Moyse* Lawe; his Highnes hath sent nowe presently the said *Pagett* unto the said Princes, and to every one of them severally, as aforesaid, to open and declare on his Highnes Behalf the great Desire which his Highnes hath,

hath, to do all Things for his Part; whereby not only the Friendship may be nourished and encreased, but alsoe the Common Cause of all Christend Men may be reduced to such Ende as shall be agreeable to the due Order of Christs Faith and his Precepts, and Lawes given unto us by his Worde and Spirit, and exprest in his Gospell. And for as much as the Chiefe Pointe, and the greatest Demonstration of true Friendship, is Freindes to communicate and breake Friendly each to other, *Et deponere in sinum Amici*, the whoall Estate of their Causes, and what Things be plesant and acceptable unto them, or contrary, wherein they find themselves grieved, wronged, or injured; the said *Pagett* shall further say that the Kings Highnes hath given him in Commaundment to open and declare unto the same severally the whoall Progresse of his great and weighty Cause of Matrimony, with the intollerable Wrongs and Injuries doon unto his Highnes in the same by the Bishop of *Rome*, called the Pope: And in what Termes the same nowe consisteth. And finally by what Waies and Means his Highnes purposeth and intendeth nowe to defende his said most just and right wise Cause and to resist the Malicious Attemptats of the said Bishop of *Rome*.

And for his Entry into the Matter, the said *Pagett* shall note and regarde Two principall and speciall Pointes; that is to say, the Justice of the King's Cause, and the Order and Processe which hath binn used therein. And as concerninge the first Pointe, the said *Pagett* shall shewe howe the King's Highnes hath so used himself, as no Man may lawefully complaine of the same. For as touchinge the Justice of his Highnes Cause, that is to say, the Declaration of his Marriadge with the Princeesse Dowager to be nought, of noe Moment nor Effecte; but against the Lawe of God's Nature and Man, and therefore indispenfable by the Pope, and in no wise availeable; The said *Pagett* shall shewe, howe the King's Highnes hath don therein as much as becommeth a Cristian Prince to doe for Discharge of his Conscience: and hath founde soe certaine, soe evident, soe manifest, soe oppen and soe approved Trueth therein, as whereunto he ought of Necessity to give place, and to allowe and receive the same; not as a Matter doubtfull and disputable, but as a plaine and discussed Verity, of the true Understandinge of God's Worde and Lawe, which all Cristian Men must follow and obey, and to all worldly Respects preferre and execute. In attaininge the Knowledge whereof, if his Highnes had used his owne particular Judgment and Sentence, or the Mind only and Opinion of his own Naturall Subjects, altho' the same might in his owne Conscience have sufficed; yet his Highnes would not have much repugned, if some other had made Difficulty to assent in the same, untill further Discussion had bin made thereuppon. But now, for as much as beside the King's owne certaine Understandinge, and the Agreement of the wholl Clergie of both Provinces of his Realme, unto the same; His Highnes hath alsoe for him the Determinations of the most Famous Universities of *Christendom*, which be indifferent to pronounce and give Sentence in this his Cause, and therewith alsoe the evident Wordes of God's Lawe; his Highnes hath thought himself, in Honour and Duty to the Obligation of God's Commandements,  
obliged



obliged necessarily to imbrace and receive the same; and there, by the Consent of his Nobles Spirituall and Temporall, and with the singuler Contentation, Rejoice and Comforte, of all his Commons and Subjecte. And finally, by the Judgement and Decree of the Archbishoppe of *Canterbury*, most solemply and autentiquely passed in that Behalf, hath now, for the Discharge of his owne Conscience, which was before merveileously greived and offended with the Opinion of Incest Matrimony, and for the avoideinge of extreame Dangers of his Succession, and the Ruynes of his Realms, which was by reason thereof imynent and manifestly apparant to issue, divorced and seperated himself from the Yoake and Bande of that unlawfull Marriadge, which was of longe time usurped and continued betweene his Highnes and the said Princeesse Dowager, and hath espoused and married to his lawfull Wife, the Noble Lady, Dame *Ann* Marques of *Pembroke*, whose approved and excellent Vertues, that is to say, the Purity of her Life, her constant Verginity, her maidenly and womanly Pudicity, her Sobernes, her Chaftenes, her Meekenes, her Wisdome, her Discend of Ancient Right Noble and Highe Parentage, her Education in all good and lawefull Shewes and Manners, her Aptnes to Procreation of Children, with her other infinite good Qualities, more to be regarded and esteemed then the only Progeny, be of such approved Excellency, as cannot be but most acceptable unto Almighty God, and deserve his highe Grace and Favour to the singular Weale and Benefitte of the King's Realme and Subjects. Albeit in caise any Objection shal be made hereunto by the said Princes, or any of their Concill, *de Ratione Scandalis*, by reason that the King's Highnes hath not observ'd in all Pointes the common Order and Manner of the Pope's Lawes, the said *Pagett* shall, thereunto replying and answering, founde themselves first uppon the most stedfast Grounds of Scripture, viz. *Quia iusto Lex non est posita; sed ubi Spiritus Dei, ibi Libertas est: Et si Spiritu Dei ducimini, non estis sub Lege. Hoc est, Spiritus Sancti & Conscientiæ motum sequentes, sub Lege primaque privatæ cedere debet, nequaquam sumus constituti. In prohibitis autem Lege Divinâ, parendum est Conscientiæ, in aliis vero Ecclesiæ: Et qui Lege privatâ ducitur, nulla ratio exigit ut Lege publica constringatur.* And thereuppon the said *Pagett* shall inferre, that althoughe in the Lawe, every Man's private Conscience be but a private Court, yet it is the Higheest and Supream Court for Judgement or Justice, condempninge or approvinge of Mens Actes and Deedes in the Sight of God; accordinge to the Saying of *St. Paule* to the *Romanes*, *Gentes quæ Legem non habent, sibi ipsis sunt Lex; qui ostendunt Opus Legis scriptum in Cordibus suis; simul attestante ipsorum Conscientia, ex Cogitationibus eorum, inter se aut accusantibus aut excusantibus, in eo die quo judicabit Deus occulta hominum.* And therefore the said *Pagett* shall say, that beinge the King's Highnes said Cause fully examined, discussed, and resolved in his owne Conscience; and being also the same Court of his Conscience inlightened and instructed, first by the Spirite of God, who possesseth and directeth the Hartes of Princes, and afterward established and confirmed by such wayes as is before exprest; pronounced and declared,

to be discharged before God from the Contracte of his said first Matrimony, and be at Liberty to exercise and enjoy the Benefitte of God, for Procreation of Children, and the lawfull Use of Matrimony, necessary for the Reliefe of Man's Infirmitie. No Man ought to inveigh at this his Doinge, but rather to interpretate the same into the best Parte, in that that the King's Highnes had more Regarde unto the Weale of his Soul, than to any Ceremonies of Mens Laws, which themselves decree and ordeine : That noe Man is bounde to obey them, or any other Man's Precept, of what Dignity or Preheminnence soever he be, if the same do *militare, contra Deum & Conscientiam offendat* : *Primum etenim querendum est regnum Dei, &c. Et quid prodest hujusmodi, si uniuersum mundum lucretur, animæ vero suæ detrimentum patiatur, &c.?* He may also further say, that the King's Highnes knoweth well, that Respect is to be had unto the World, and doubteth not but that it is alsoe sufficiently declared and showed by his Actes and Proceedinges, how much he hath laboured and trauielled therein ; but sithence that these Things, althoughe in their outward Visage be worldly, yet inwardly they touch and concerne the Perill of Soule, noe Man beinge *sinceri & candidi Pectoris*, cann arreste any Blame unto the King's Highnes, in that he hath after soe long Travaile, Labour and Studye, with intollerable Coste and Charges, without any Fruite susteined in that Behalf, be enforced and constreyned rather to followe and accomplishe the Determination of his own Conscience, and the Law of the same, consonant and agreeable in this Case to the Law of God, and therefore superior and excellenge all Lawes of Man, then to indure in perpetuall Sute, and continuall Trouble of Body and Mynde, doeing Injurie to Nature, and incomparable Dammage to his Realme ; not doeing soe much as in him is, to provide for the same. And to the intente the said *Pagett* may with the more Efficacy declare unto the said Princes, the ungodly and unlawful Demeanours of the Pope, in the whoall Progresse of the King's Highnes said Cause, handling his Highnes by the Space of vij Years, and more, in Delayeres and Dalliance ; and how for Friendship and Justice, he hath alwayes ministred unto him Unkindnes and notable Injurie : By reason whereof, the King's Highnes hath binn thus constreined to doe as he hath don : The said *Pagett* shall understande, how that first in the Beginninge of his Highnes greate Cause, his Grace beinge daily inquieted and molested with the Scruple of Incest and unlawfull Matrimony, did send unto the said Bishop, as unto him which presumed upon him the Title and Name of Christ's Vicar in Earth ; and which had the Keyes of Knowledge and Power, to discern the very Worde of Gode from the Worde of Man ; to the intent that he, according to his Office and Duty, should have ymediatly dissolved that Doubt and Scruple, which his Highnes in Conscience had before conceived, and should have restored him incontinently to the Quietnes and Rest of the same. Upon which Insynuation, the said Bishop of *Rome* refuseing to take any Knowledge of the Kings said Cause of Matrimony, but would the King should take a Commission, and Commissioners to be sent into this his Grace Realme, to whom the said Bishop would give sufficient Authority, to decerne,



knowe, judge and determyne the said Cause; then pretending, that it might in noe wise by the Order of the Lawes be intreated at *Rome*, but only within the King's owne Realme. And so he delegated his wholl Power to the Cardinal *Campegius*, and the Cardinall of *York*. Giveinge alsoe unto them, one other Speciall Commission, in Forme of a Decretall: Wherein the said Bishop of *Rome* pronounced and gave Sentence, that the King's Highnes Matrimony was utterly nought and unlawfull; and that therefore his Highnes might *convolare ad secundas Nuptias*; and the Children procreated in the Seconde Marriadge were lawfull. And in this oppen Commission, he gave alsoe unto the said Legate full Authority to determyne this Matter, and to give Sentence for the King's Highnes; and yet secretly he gave them Instructions, to bring the said Commission Decretall, and not to proceede by Vertue thereof, or of any other Commission, unto any finall End or Sentence, but to suspend and put over the same. And at the Time of Sendinge of the said Commission, he sent alsoe down unto the King's Highnes, a Briefe written with his owne Hande; wherein he did alsoe approve the Justice of the King's Cause, in like maner as he did in his Commission Decretall; and promised unto the King's Highnes, *quam sanctissime sub verbo Pontificis*, that he would never afterwarde advocate the faide Cause out of the Realme of *Englande*, but would suffer it to have the due Course and Order of Intreateinge of the same, within the King's Highnes Realme; which his Sentence and Promise notwithstanding, yet the said Bishop of *Rome*, contrary to his own Conscience and Knowledge, what was the very Trueth and Justice in the King's Highnes Cause; and to the intente he might molest and trouble the same, decreed out fundry Citations, whereby he would needes inforce the King's Highnes to appeare at *Rome* in his own Person, to the Subversion of him, his Dignity, and the Privileges of his Realme; or else to constreine him in the Exhibition of a Proxie there: The Iniquity of both which Things, is so evident and notable, *ut nulla rerum facie defendi queat*. For it is a common Principle of the Lawe, *Quoties autem citatus ex Privilegio, vel aliqua alia Materia, in voce expressa, venire non teneatur, in eo casu nec tenetur aliquam sui copiam facere, neque Se, neque Procuratorem sistere*. It is also notorious, that the Liberties and Prerogatives of the King's Realme, to the Observation whereof he is bounde by his Oath at his Coronation; and that alsoe the Priviledges of Princes, beinge publike Persons, besides other great and urgent Causes, doe necessarily let the King's Person to appeare at *Rome*, and lawefully defendeth and excuseth his Absence from thence. And besides all this, that his Highnes ought not to be cited to *Rome*; it is enacted by the Holy Councilles of *Nice*, of *Affrique*, and of *Melevitan*; and it is agreeable alsoe to all Lawes, Reason and Equity, that Kings should not be compelled to repair to *Rome* at the Pope's Callinge, ne be bounden in a Matter of so highe Weight and Consequence as this is, to sende out of their Realmes and Dominions, their Writeinges, Instrumentes, and Munimentes, conteyninge the Secretyes of their Affaires, or to make and trust a Proctor in soe farr distant Parts, and in a Matter of such

such Gravity and Importance, to abide and fullfill that which the said Proctor shall agree unto there. And hereunto the said *Pagett* may adde, howe this Matter toucheth the Dignity of all Christian Princes very highly, to suffer themselves to be so yoaked with the said Bishop's Authority. And that it is Tyme for Princes, nowe that the same Bishop maketh this Enterprise upon them, to inferche and knowe the Grounde and Bottome of his and their Authorities. For what and the Pope would cite and call all Christian Princes to appeare before him at *Rome*; that is to say, to cause them to abandon and forsake their owne Realmes, and neglect the Cure and Office committed unto them by God, and to answere there upon such Matters, as the Pope should for his Pleasure object against them? *Essët quidem illud durum; sed tamen si vellet Pontifex, hæc posset facere, qua etenim ratione unum constringere; omnes etiam Reges cogere posset*: And so it should be always in the Pope's Authority and Liberty, to remove and depose what Kings it pleased him from his Crowne, and to rule and govern all Kingdomes after his own Arbitre and Pleasure: One other notable Iniquity, is also in that the Pope by his Citation would needs enforce the Kinges Highnes to appear at *Rome*; forasmuch as *Rome* is by all Laws a Place Unlawful, yea, and thereto most suspect and unsure, not only for the Kinges Highnes owne Person, being the Principale Parte, but alsoe for the Person of his Proctor, if he should send any such thither; and especially for the self Cause to be intreated there: Now it is a Principle in the Lawe, *quod citando ad locum non tutum & precedendo Index facit inique quia legibus id prohibentibus necnon antiquissimis consiliis & Pont' Romanorum definitionibus repugnantibus id facit non solum inique sed etiam nulliter facit*: And yet further, the Pope not satisfied with these Injuries and Wrongs don unto his Highnes, yea, and to Justice it self, in Manner as is above rehearsed; but being then, and at such Tyme as the said Citations were published, Resident at *Rome*, One Doctor *Kerne*, the Kinges Subject understandinge how his Highnes was called there to appeare to one *Cappisucchi* Deane of the *Rota*, to make Answer unto the Princes Dowagers Complainte, and exhibiting Reasonable Causes, and Lawful Matters Excusatory why his Grace should not be bound either to appeare at *Rome*, or to sende a Proctor thither; which Things he did as the Kinges Subject, and as one who by Law of Nature is bounden to Defende his Kinge and Sovereigne Lord; and by all Laws admitted to alledge that in Defence of him that is Absent, which in Equity ought to preserve him from Condemnation; yet this notwithstandinge the said *Cappisucchi*, *idque approbante Pontifice*, not regardinge nor consideringe the Matters foe by the said Doctor *Kerne* alleadged, but demaunding whether he had any Proxie from the Kinges Highnes for such Purpose or noe; the said *Cappisucchi*, for Default of such Proxie, (which was not necessary in this Case) rejected the said Doctor *Kerne* from the Office of an Excusator there, and proceeded in the Principall Cause: by Reason whereof the said Doctor *Kerne* appelled to the Pope alleadginge Injurie to be don not only to the Kinges Highnes, but alsoe unto himself, for that such Matter as he (havinge Interest in) did alledge was not considered nor regarded, but Proccesse made



made notwithstanding, to which Appellation the said *Cappisucchi* gave an ambiguous and doubtful Answer, promiseinge afterward to open his said Answer and Sentence more plainly, and to give determinate Resolutions therein, which nevertheless he would not doe, albeit he was diverse Tymes required and pressed thereunto, but soe passed he the Tyme and suddenly returned to Proceſſe; whereupon the said Doctor oftentimes appealed and put upp again a Supplication to the Pope for the Admission of the said Appeal, by reason whereof the said Matter was reasoned in the Signature; where althoughe by noe lawe it woud be shewed why the said Doctor *Kerne* ought not to be admitted to alleage the said Matters Excusatory in the Defence of the Kings Highnes; yet they gave their Voices there as the Pope saide, that Doctor *Kerne* should not be heard without the Kings Proxie; whereunto when Dr. *Kerne* replied, sayinge that whatsoever they decreed or saide, yet there was no Lawe to maintayne and bear it: It was answered again by the said Bishoppe, called Pope, that he might Judge all Things after his own Conscience. And upon this Resolution, without any other Decree given, or at least notified and declared, they proceeded in the Principal Cause, intendinge by this Injurie and Wronge, to enforce the Kings Highnes to the Exhibition of a Proxie there to his high Prejudice, and the derogation of the Libertyes and Prerogatives of his Realme, and to the pernicious Example of the like to be done unto other Princes in Tyme comeing. And althoughe at the same Time, the Kings Ambassadors there Resident, did shewe unto the Pope the Determinacion of the Universities of *Paris* and *Orleance*, with the Opinions and Sentences of the best and most Famous Learned Men of *Italy* and *Fraunce*, determyning all with one Consent, that these the Popes doings were meere Injuries and Wrongs, and contrary to his own Lawes, wherein it is contained, *Quod Pontifex Romanus non potest cogere aliquem Principem Christianum ut Romam veniat, ut in Causa Matrimonii ibidem respondeat. Aut in eorum gratiam procuratorem constituat & quod subditus cujuscunque Principis poterit sine mandato & sine Satisfactione ejusdem absenciæ sine non comparentiæ allagere & quod debeat ad id admitti: quodque propositis per eundem justis Causis absenciæ non poterit contra absentem Principem ulterius procedi. Sed quod omnis talis processus si quis contra eundem factus fuerat, sit jure ipso facto nullus.* Yet he continuynge still in the Discussinge and Disputacion of the same Pointes: And perceiveinge well the Kings Highnes Adversaries to be in the wronge Parte, did still nevertheless rejecte the said Mr. *Kerne* from the Lawfull Defence of the Kings Highnes, and ceased not to make Proceſſe against his Grace in the Principall Cause to the expresse Wronge and Injurie of his Highnes, and soe continuynge still in accumulateinge from Tyme to Tyme, new Griefes and Injuries against the Justice of the Kings Cause; and sending out very slanderous Griefes against the Kings Highnes, with diverse other unseemeinge and ungodly Demeanors used by him and his Ministers in the Discouſſe and Doinge of the said Injuries. Finally to accomplishe his longe and indurate Malice, he decreed and determined to publishe out against the Kings Highnes, the Sentence of Excommunication, and soe the Kings Highnes, being advertised of the said Determinacion and Purpose, and mynding to use his lawefull

lawefull and naturall Defence of Provocation and Appellation againſt the ſame. After that his Highnes had ſoe made Authentiquely his ſaid Provocation and Appellation from the Pope to the Generall Councell, which ſhall be nowe next indicted, and lawefully congregated; and alſoe cauſed the ſame to be intimated unto the Pope by one of his Subjects, the ſaid Pope would in no wiſe admitte the ſame, & *deferre hujusmodi Appellationi*, but pretendinge, for his Defence a certeine Bull made by Pope *Pius*, and that he was Superior to all Generall Counſailes, did moſt Arrogantly and contemptuouſly rejeſt the Kinges Highnes ſaid Appellacions, alleading the ſame to be nought; and they were Heretiques and Traytors to his Perſon, which would Appeal from him to any Generall Counſell, or would attempt to doe any Thinge whereby his Authority ſhould be ſeene to be Inferior unto the Authority of Generall Counſells.

The Iniquity of all which Thinges beinge thus opened unto the ſaid Princes, and ſett forth by the ſaid *Pagett*, with the beſt Perſwaſions he can deviſe for that Purpoſe, he ſhall further ſhewe unto the ſame, that thence it is now evidently ſeene that the ſaid Biſhop of *Rome* for the Defence of his own corrupt Affections of Glorie and Ambition, regardeth not what Injurie he doth to Chriſtian Princes, yea, and to abuſe and ſubject ſo much as in him is, not only contrary to the Trueth, but alſoe to the due Order both of God and Man's Lawes, ſheweinge himſelf therein rather to be the Child of Wrath and Diſcorde, then the Imitator and Follower of Chriſt; It ſhall nowe appertaine unto the Office of every good Chriſtian Prince on tother ſide, to have more Spirituall Regarde to the Preſervation of their one Eſtate and Dignity, and the Maintenance of Gods Lawes, then they have had in Times paſt. And to ſtudy nowe by all Means rather to confounde and deſtroy theſe Preſumptions of Men, which forge themſelves ſuch a Throne and Power as ſoundeth greatly to the Blaſphemy of Chriſt and his very Spouſe the Church, then to ſuffer the ſame any further to encrease.

And forasmuch as the Kinges Highnes not only for want of Juſtice in his ſaid Cauſe at the Popes Hande, but alſo for the Defence of thoſe extreme Injuries, which the ſaid Pope hath enforced unto him and the Juſtice of his Cauſe, and for the Maintenance of his Eſtate Royal, with the Lawes and Privileges of his Realme, conforme and agreeable to the Lawe of God, is nowe utterly determined, havinge God and his Word upon his Party, to reſiſt and withſtand the ſaid Biſhops malicious Attempts and reduce the ſaid Popes Power, *Ad juſtos & legitimos mediocritatis ſue modos*, ſo as within this his Highnes Realme, he ſhall not be ſuffered to exerciſe any other Power and Jurisdiction, then is granted unto him by expreſſe Scripture. The ſaid *Pagett* ſhall ſhewe unto the ſaid Princes; that the Kinges Highnes truſtinge not a little to their greate Vertue, Wiſdome, and Ould Amity hath commaunded him not only to open and declare unto the ſaid Princes the wholl Circumſtances of all the Premiſſes, and of what Mynd and Diſpoſicion the Kings Highnes is nowe towarde the ſaid Pope, and the Court of *Rome*: But alſoe to exhorte and inſtantly to require the ſame on the Kings Highnes Behalf, that it ſhall pleaſe them to adhere and ſticke with the Kings



Highnes in his said righteous Cause to the repaire of the said Injuries at such Tyme as the same shall be intreated in the General Counsell. And in the mean Season to give unto his Highnes their Assistance and best Advice how he shall proceede to the Accomplishment of his desired Purposes, according to such Articles, as be written in a certaine Scedule and be delivered unto the said *Paget*, and signed with the Kings Highnes Hand, which he shall also exhibite and shewe unto the said Princes; and to every of them, as by his Wisdome he shall perceive may be most Beneficiall unto the Kings Highnes Affaires: and to require also the said Princes and Potentates, that in Case there be any Articles, Causes, or Matters in those Parties touchinge any Abuses, Evil Customes, or Opinions, which for the Common-Wealth of *Christendome*, and the Maintenance of Gods Worde the said Prince and Potentate, or any of them, shall think necessary and requisite to be reformed and redressed, the said *Paget* shall say that the Kings Mynde and full Determynacion is, his Highnes beinge advertised of the Specialties of the same, either by the Letters of the said *Paget*, or otherwise by Letters of the same Princes; or by the Messengers, Servants, or Orators of them, or any of them, will not faile, but like as the same his Highnes at this Time declareth his Griefes, and desireth their Assistance in this his Suit and righteous Causes and Quarrels, even so likewise his Highnes will not only right thankfully and kindly admitte the same Causes, to his most favourable Audience; but alsoe will with all Effecte and Sincerity to him possible, indeavour himself both to the Exturpacion and Puttinge away of the said Abuses and Evil Customes foundinge against Gods Worde and Lawes, and also further doe that Thing that may lye in him for Reformation thereof, and Establisshinge the good Intentens and Purposes of the said Princes, as most specially may be for the Maintenance of Gods Word, the Faith of Christ, and Wealth of *Christendome*, like as unto the Office of a very Christian Prince, and the Perfectnes of Amity and Friendship contracted betweene his Highnes and the said Princes shall apperteine. Finallie, for as much as it is doubtfull of what Minde, Intention, and Purpose, the said Princes be or at least some of them, that is to witte, whither they be soe dedicated to the Popes Devocion, that there is no likelihood of any good Success touchinge the Kings Purposes to be don or gotten at their Hande, the said *Paget* shall First and before the deliveringe of the Kings said Letters to any of the said Princes, and Declaracion of this his Charge by all Dexterity, Wayes and Meanes to him possible insearch, inquire, and knowe the Disposicion and Inclination of the said Prince, and of every of them severally, and soe thereafter accordinge to their Wisdomes and Discretions to deliver or retaine the Kings said Letters, with Declaracions or without Declaracions of their said Charge, as to their Wisdomes shall be thought most necessary and requisite for atchieveinge of the Kings Highnes Purposes in this Behalf.

Henry R.

Number

## Number 31.

*Propositions to the King's Counsell; marked in some Places  
on the Margin in King Henry's own Hand. 1533.*

*An Original.*

**F**yrste to sende for all the Bishops of this Realme, and specyallie for suche as be nereft unto the Courte; and to examyne them aparte, whether they, by the Law of God, can prove and justefie, that he that now is called the Pope of *Rome* is above the Generall Counsell, or the Generall Counsell above him? Or whether he hathe gyven unto him by the Law of God, any more Auctoryte within the Realme, than any other Foreign Bishop?

Cotton Library  
Cleop. E. 6.  
P. 319.

2. *Item*, To desire, with all the Bishops of this Realm, to set forth, preach, and cause to be preached to the King's People, that the said Bishop of *Rome*, called the Pope, is not in Auctoryte above the Generall Counsell, but the Generall Counsell is above him, and all Bishops. And that he hath not, by God's Lawe, any more Jurisdiction within this Realme, than any other Foreign Bishop (being of any other Realm) hathe. And that such Auctoryte as he before this hathe usurped within this Realme, is both against Godes Law, and also against the Generall Counsells. Which Usurpations of Auctoryte, onelie hath grown to him, by the Sufferance of Princes of this Realme, and by none Auctoryte from God.

3. *Item*, Therefore that Order be taken, for suche as shall preach at *Paul's Crosse* from henceforthe, shall contynually from *Sunday* to *Sunday* preach there, and also teache and declare to the People, that he that now calleth himself Pope, nor any of his Predecessours, is, and were but only the Bishops of *Rome*; and hath no more Auctoryte and Jurisdiction, by Godes Lawe, within this Realme, than any other Foreign Bishop hath; which is nothing at all. And that such Auctoryte as he hathe claymed heretofore, hath been onlie by Usurpation and Sufferaunce of Prynces of this Realme. And that the Bishop of *London* may be bounde to suffer none other to preach at *Paul's Crosse*, as he will answer, but such as will preach, and set forth the same.

4. *Item*, That all the Bishops within this Realme, be bound and ordered in the same wise, and to cause the same to be preached thorough out all their Dioces.

5. *Item*, That a specyall Practise be made, and a streight Commandement gyven to all Provynccials, Ministers, and Rulers of all the Foure Orders of Friars within this Realme; commanding them to cause the same to be preached by all the Preachers of their Religions, in and thorough the hole Realme.

6. *Item*, To practise with all the Friars observants of this Realme, and to commande them to preach in lyke wise; or elles that they  
may



may be stayed, and not suffered to preach in no Place of the Realme.

7. *Item*, That every Abbote, Pryor, and other Heddes of Religious Houses within this Realme, shall in like manner teche their Convents and Brethren, to teach and declare the same.

8. *Item*, That every Bishop shall make specyall Commandements to every Parson, Vicare and Curate, within his Dyoces, to preach and declare to their Parochians in lyke wise.

9. *Item*, Proclamations to be made thorough out the Realme, conteinynge the hole Acte of Appelles: And that the same Acte may be impressed, transumed, and set up on every Church Dore in *England*; to the Intent, that no Parson, Vycar, Curate, nor any other of the King's Subjects, shall make themselves ignorant thereof.

10. *Item*, The King's Provocation and Appellations, made from the Bishop of *Rome* unto the Generall Counsell, may also be transumed, impressed, published and set up on every Church Dore in *England*; to the Intent, that if any Censures should be fulmynate against the King or his Realm, that then it may appear to all the World that the Censures be of none Effecte; considering that the King hath already, and also before any Censures promulged, bothe provoked and Appeled.

11. *Item*, Like Transumps to be made, and sent into all other Realmes and Domynyons, and specyally into *Flanders*, concerning the King's faide Provocations and Appellations; to the intende the Falshode, Iniquite, Malice and Injustice of the Bishop of *Rome*, may thereby appere to all the World: And also to the intent that all the World may know, that the King's Highnes standing under those Appelles, no Censures can prevayle, nor take any Effecte against him and his Realme.

Not yet done,  
ne can well be  
done before  
the Parlia-  
ment.

12. *Item*, A Letter to be conceyved from all the Nobles, as well Spirituall as Temporall, of this Realme, unto the Bishop of *Rome*, declaring the Wrongs, Injuries and Usurpations, used against the King's Highnes and this Realme.

For to send  
Letters to my  
Lord *Dacres*,  
my Lord of  
*Norfolk*, and  
Sir *T. Clifford*.

13. *Item*, To send Exploratours and Espies into *Scotland*; and to see and perceyve their Practises, and what they intend there; and whether they will confeder themselves with any other outwarde Prynce.

In the King's  
Arbitrement.

14. *Item*, Certen discrete and grave Persons, to be appointed to repair into the Partes of *Germany*, to practise and conclude some Lege or Amyte with the Prince and Potentats of *Germany*; that is to say, the King of *Pole*, King *John* of *Hungary*, the Duke of *Saxony*, the Duke of *Bavyere*, Duke *Frederyke*, the Landegrave *Van Hesse*, the Bishop of *Magons*, the Bishop of *Treuers*, the Bishop of *Coleyn*, and other the Potentats of *Germany*; and also to enserch, of what Inclination the said Prynces and Potentats be of, towards the King and his Realme.

To know this  
of the King.

15. *Item*, Like Practise to be made and practised with the Cyties of *Lubeke*, *Danske*, *Hamburgh*, *Brunswyke*, and all other the Stedes of the *Hannse Tutionick*; and to enserche of what Inclination they be towards the King, and this Realme.

16. *Item*,

16. *Item*, Lyke Practise to be made and practised, with the Cities of *Norimbergh* and *Augsbrough*.

17. *Item*, To remember the Marchiants Adventurers haunting the Domynyons of *Braband*, and to speke with them. This is already done.

18. *Item*, To set Order and Establisment of the Princes Dowager's House with all Celerity, and also of my Lady *Mary's* House. The Order is taken.

19. *Item*, A full Conculsion and Determination, to be taken for my Lady Princes House. The Orders taken.

### Number 32.

### *By the King.*

*A Letter against the Pope's Authority, and his Followers, setting forth their Treasons.*

### *An Original.*

HENRY R.

**T**Rufty and right Welbeloved, We grete you well. And wher as heretofore, as ye know, both upon most iust and vertuose Foundations, grownded upon the Lawes of Almighty God and Holly Scripture, and also by the deliberate Advice, Consultation, Consent and Agreement, as well of the Bishops and Clergie, as by the Nobles and Comons Temporall of this our Realme, assembled in our High Court of Parliament, and by Auctoritie of the same, the Abuses of the Bishop of *Rome* his Auctoritie and Jurisdiction, of longe time usurped against us, have been not only utterly extirped, abolished and secluded; but also the same our Nobles and Comons, both of the Clergie and Temporaltie, by another severall Acte and upon like Foundation for the publike Weale of this our Realme, have united, knyt and annexed to us and the Corone Imperiall of this our Realme, the Title, Dignitie and Stile of Supreme Hed in Earthe, immediatly under God, of the Church of *England*, as undoubtedly evermore we have been. Which Things also the said Bishops and Clergie, particularly in their Convocations, have holly and entierly consented, recognised, ratified, confermed and approved autentiquely in Writing, both by their Speciall Othes, Profession and Wryting, under their Signes and Seales. So utterly renouncyng all other Othes, Obedience and Jurisdiction, either of the said Bishop of *Rome*, or of any other Potentate, we late you witt, that perpendyng and confideryng the Charge and Commission in this Behalf geven unto us by Almighty God, together with the great Qui-

*Cotton Library  
Cleop. E. 6.  
P. 214.*



etnes, Rest and Tranquillite, that hereby may ensue to our faithful Subjects, both in their Consciences, and other wise to the Pleasure of Almighty God, in case the said Bishops and Clergie of this our Realme, should sincerely, truly and faithfully sett forth, declare and preach unto our said Subjects, the very true Word of God, and without all maner or color of Diffimulation, Hipocrisie, manifest, publishe and declare, the great and innumerable Enormities and Abuses, which the said Bishop of *Rome*, as well in Title and Stile, as also in Auctoritie and Jurisdiction, of long Tyme unlawfully and injustly hath usurped upon Us, our Progenitors, and all other Christen Princes; have not only addressed our Letters Generall to all and every the same Bishops, straitly charyng and commanding them, not only in their proper Persons, to declare, teach and preach unto the People, the true, mere, and sincere Word of God: And how the said Title, Stile, and Jurisdiction of Supreme Hed, apperteyneth unto Us, our Corone and Dignitie Royall. And to gyve like Warnyng, Monition and Charge, to all Abbots, Priors, Deanes, Arche Deacons, Provosts, Parsons, Vicars, Curats, Scole Masters, and all other Ecclesiastical Persons within their Dioces, to do the Semblable, in their Churches, every *Sunday* and Solem Feast, and also in their Scholes; and to cause all maner of Prayers, Orisons, Rubrics and Canons in Masse Books, and all other Books used in Churches, wherein the said Bishop is named, utterly to be abolished, eradicat, and rased out in such wise, as the said Bishop of *Rome*, his Name and Memorie for evermore, (except to his Contumelly and Reproche) may be extinct, suppressed and obscured: But also to the Justices of our Peas, that they, in every Place within the Precint of their Commissions, do make and cause to be made diligent Serche wayse and especially, whether the said Bishops and Clergie do truly and sincerely, without any Maner, Cloke or Diffimulation, execute and accomplish their said Charge to them commytted in this Behalf; and to satisfie Us and our Councill, of such of them that should omytt or leave undone any Parte of the Premisses, or elles in the Execution therof, should coldely, fainedly use any maner of synyster Addition, Interpretation or Cloke, as more plainly is expressed in our said Letters. We considering the great Good and Furderance, that ye may do in these Matters in the Parts about you, and specially at your being at Sifes and Sessions; in the Declaration of the Premisses, have thought it good, necessary and expedient, to write these our Letters unto you; whom we esteem to be of such singuler Zeale and Affection towards the Glory of Almighty God, and of so faithfull and loving Harte towards us, as ye woll not only, with all your Wisdome, Diligences and Labours, accomplish all such Things, as might be to the Preferment and setting forward of Godes Worde, and the Amplification, Defence and Maintenance of our said Interests, Right, Title, Stile, Jurisdiction and Auctoritie, apperteyning unto Us, our Dignitie, Prerogative, and Corone Imperiall of this our Realme, woll and desire you, and nevertheles straitely charge and command you, that laying aparte all vain Affections, Respects, and Carnal Considerations; and setting before your Eyes the Mirror of Truth, the Glorie of God, the Right and Dignitie of your Sovereigne

raigne Lord; thus tending to the inestimable Unitie and Commoditer both of your self, and all other our Loving and Faithfull Subjects, ye do not only make diligent search within the Precinct of your Commission and Auctoritie, whether the said Bishops and Clergie doe truly, sincerely as before, Preach and Teach, and declare to the People the Premisses, according to their Duties, but also at your said setting in Sifes and Sessions ye do perswade, shewe, and declare unto the same People the Tenor, Effect, and Purpose of the Premisses in such wise, as the said Bishops, and Clergie, may the better, not only do therby, and execute their said Dueties, but that also the Parents, and Rulers of Families, may declare, teach, and informe their Children and Servants in the Specialties of the same, to the utter extirpacion of the said Bishops usurped Authority, Name, and Jurisdiction; for ever shewyng and declaryng also to the People at your said Sessions the Treasons trayterously commytted against us and our Lawes, by the late Bishop of *Rochestre*, and Sir *Thomas Moore*, Knight, who thereby, and by diverse Secrete Practises of their malicious Mynds against us intended, to semynate, engender, and brede amongs our People and Subjects, most mischievous and sediciouse Opynyon, not only to their own Confusion, but also of divers others who lately have condignely suffered Execucion according to their Demerites, and in such wise dilating the same with Persuacions to the same our People, as they may be the better fixed, established, and satisfied in the Truth, and consequently, that all our Faythfull and true Subjects may therby detest and abhorre in their Harts and Deeds, the most recreant and traiterouse Abuses, and Behaveours of the said Maliciouse Malefactors as they be most Worthy, and fynding any Defaulte, Negligence, or Dissimulacion in any manner of Person, or Persons, not doying his Duetie in this Partie, ye immediately doe advertise us and our Counsel of the Defaulte, Manner, and Facion of the same, lating you witt, that considering the greate Moment, Weight, and Importance of this Matter, as wherupon dependeth the Unity, Rest, and Quietnes of this our Realme, yf ye should contrary to your Dueties, and our Expectations, and Trust, neglect, be slake, or omytte to doe diligently your Dueties in the true Performance and Execucion of our Mynde, Pleasure, and Commandment as before, or wold halte or stumble at any Person, or Specialtie of the same, be ye assured that we, like a Prince of Justice, well so punish and correct your Defaulte and Negligence thereyn, as it shall be an Example to all others, how contrary to their Allegiance, Othes and Dueties, they do frustrate and deceive, and disobey the just and lawfull Commandment of their Sovereign Lord, in such Things as by the true Hartie and Faithfull Execucion whereof, they shall not only prefer the Honour and Glory of God, and sett forth the Majesty and Imperiall Dignitie of their Sovereign Lord, but also importe and bring an inestimable Unitie, Concorde, and Tranquillitie of the Publique, and Common State of this Realme: whereunto both by the Lawes of God and Nature and Man, they be utterly obliged and bounden, and therefore fail ye not most effectually, earnestly, and entierly to see the Premisses done and executed upon Paine of your Allegiance; and as

ye



ye woll advoyde our High Indignacion and Displeasure, at your uttermost Perills: Given under our Signet at our Manor besids *Westminster*, the xxvth Day of *June*.

Number 33.

*By the King,*

*A Proclamation against Seditious Preachers.*

H E N R Y VIIIth.

*CottonLibrary  
Cleop. E. 6.*

**R**ight Trusty and Well-beloved Cousyn, we grete you well, and where it is comen to our Knowledge that fundry Persons as well Religious, as Secular Priests and Curats in their Parishes, and divers Places within this our Realme, do dailly asmuch as in them is, sett forthe and extolle the Jurisdiction and Auctoritie of the Bishop of *Rome*, otherwise called Pope, sowyng their Sediciouse, Pestylent, and False Doctryne, praying for him in the Pulpyt, and makying him a God, to the great Deceyte, illudying and seducyng of our Subjects, bryngyng them into Errors, Sedicion, and Evil Opynyons, more preferring the Powers, Lawes, and Jurisdiction of the said Bishop of *Rome*, then the most Holly Lawes and Precepts of Almighty God. We therefore myndyng not only to provide for an Unitie and Quietnes, to be had and contynued amongs our said Subjects, but also covetyng and desyryng them to be brought to a Profession and Knowledge of the mere Verity and Truth, and no longer to be seduced, nor blynded with any such Supersticiouse and False Doctryne of any Earthly Usurper of Gods Lawes, Woll therefore and Command you, that wher and whensoever ye shall fynde, perceive, know, or here tell of any such Sedicious Personnes, that in such wise do spreade, teach, or preach, or otherwise sett forth any such Opynyons and Perniciouse Doctryne, to the Exaltacion of the Power of the Bishop of *Rome*; brynging therby our Subjects into Error, Grudge, and Murmuration, indelaydly do apprehend and take them, or cause them to be apprehended and taken, and so committed to Warde, there to remayne without Bayl or Maynprize, untill upon your Advertisement thereof unto us, or our Council, ye shall know our further Pleasure in that Behalfe: Given under our Signet, at our Manor of *Greenwich* the xii Day of *April*.

Number

## Number 34.

*A Letter of the Archbishop of York's, setting forth his Zeal in the King's Service, and against the Pope's Authority.*

**P**Leafe it youre Highnes to underftande, that the viiith Daye of *June*, I received by the Hands of Sir *Francife Bygott*, your moſte Honorable Letters; by tenor whereof I perceive, that your Highnes is enformed, and ſo doth take it, that wher as the ſame your Highnes, as well by Convocations of your Clergies of both Provinces, as by your Highe Courte of Parliament is declared the *Supreme Hed* in Yerthe of the Church of *England*, and alſo by the Clergie of the ſaid Convocations, it is avowed, that the Biſhop of *Rome* by Gods Lawe hathe no more Jurifdiction within this Realme than any other Foreign Biſhops; and therefore ordre taken by your Highe Courte of Parliament, by the Conſent of the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, and the Commens in the ſame aſſembled, as well for the Unitynge and Knitteng of your ſayde Style and Title of *Supreme Hed* to your Imperiall Crowne, as for the Aboliſhement of the ſaide Biſhops of *Rome's* Autoritie and Jurifdiction, yet I nevertheleſs, nodre remembring my Conſent given to the ſame, by my Subscription and Profeſſion, ſigned with my Hande, and ſealed with my Seale, have not done my dewe Endeavorment to teache the ſame, nor cauſe to be taught within my Dioceſe and Province; ſo that the foreſaid Truths myght be imprint-ed and rooted in the Harts of the Ignorant People your Highnes Subjects, wherefore your Highnes commandeth me, not onelie to Preache the forſaide Things in my Perſon, and alſo to commande others to Preache the ſame, but alſo to give Commandment in your Highnes Name, to all maner of Prelates and Eccleſiaſtical Perſons within my Dioceſe and Province, to declare and cauſe to be declared everie *Sunday*; and therwith to open to the People your Highnes juſt and rayſonable Cauſe, moveing the ſame to reſuſe and to exclude out of your Realm all the Jurifdiction and Autoritie of the ſaid Biſhop of *Rome*; and ferthermore your Highnes commandeth me to cauſe all Collects and Places of the Maſſe-Booke, wher anie mention is made of the ſaide Biſhops of *Rome* to be raſed out, and nodre the ſayd Collects, nor any other Thing, wherbie the ſaid Biſhops Autoritie is magnified, to be had anie more in Uſe, but to be utterlie ſuppreſſed with Silence; and beſides this, your Highnes in the ſame your moſt honorable Letters, giveth order for Schole-Maſters, how they ſhall inſtill and inculke the forſaid Trueths into the Harts of theyre Diſciples, to the intent, that ſo beeing enplanted and rooted in tender Aige, they may ſo allwaies continue. In moſte humble Maner proſtrate, I beſeech your Highnes to take in good Parte my Answer. I truſt your Highnes is not unremembred, that about this Tyme the laſt Year, anoune after my Return from your Highnes,

Cotton Library  
Cleop. E. 6.  
P. 236.



my Lord of *Canterburie* by your Commandment sent to me a Booke, wherein was an Order for Preaching, and in the same Forme devised, as well for Preachers as Curats, for the Beads; in which Forme, your Highnes Style and Title of *Supreme Hedde* is mentioned, and farther in the same Booke, your Highnes hath given Commandment, that every Preacher sholde afore *Easter* last past ones in solempne Audience declare the usurped Jurisdiction within this Realme of the Bishope of *Rome*, and your Highnes just Causes to decline from the same; and also to open and declare such Things, as myght avowe and justifie your Highnes refusall of Mariage with the Princes Doager, and Lawfull Contract of now with your most dear Wife *Queen Ann*, and in the same an Order also given for the Suppression of the Generall Sentence; After the Recepte of which Booke, the *Sunday* next following, which was then the Second *Sunday* after *Trinitie Sunday*, I went from *Carwood* to *York*, and ther in my own Person, declared as well your Highnes Cause touchinge the Matrimonie, as also your Refusall of the Popes Jurisdiction, furnishing both so at leangth, that I trust that nothing that needed to be opened and spoken, was left unspoken: And to the Intent, that I wolde have the Thing the more spread abroad, I forthwith upon the Recepte of the forsaid Booke, sent to *York* to publishe ther, that I wolde be ther *Sundaye* followinge, and caused the Churches to make an Order of theyre Service in suche Tyme, as everie Man myght have oportunities to be at the Sermon, and speciallie required the Mayer and his Bretherne, and your Faithfull Chaplaine and Servants, Mr. *Magnus*, and Sir *George Lawson* to be ther, and ther and than afore a great Multitude, and as it is to be supposed in that Multitude were a great number of sundry Parts of the Contree, which never lack in that Citie, it may be thought ther was the greater number, because it was noysed that I sholde Preache, takenge occasion of thees Words in the Gospell of that Daye, *Uxorem duxi ideo non possum venire*, so I uttered, explained, declared, and opened both the forsaid Matters, and the Injuries doon to your Highnes by the Bishope of *Rome Clement*, that your saide Chapleyne and Servants, Mr. *Magnus* and Sir *George Lawson*, thought that the Audience was satisfied. These ij bee my Witnesse hearin, with a very great Multitude besides them, that I nothinge fayne hearin. As for your Highnes Title of *Supreme Hed*, I touched not than, for somutche, as no order was given than, but onlie to meke mention therof in the Prayers; and it is well known to all that have herde me Preache ever sins my first commynge into my Diocese, that for more speed of Tyme, and more utteraince of Mater, I never have made Prayours in any Sermond, but proceeded forward without stope, nor have anie Thinge, or not muche, reherfed in *Latin*, but *English* it in course, for the same Purpose. Also upon the Recept of the same Booke, furthwith I commanded my Officers and others that coulde Write, to make out a great Number of the saide Books, and cause to be delivered to everie Preacher within my Dyocese a hole Booke, chargenge them, to doe according to the Instruction therof, and generallie everie Curate a Booke comprisenge as muche as touched theyre Charge, and if he were a Preacher, he had the hole. And I assured your Highnes, I have not yet herde,

herde, but that every one of the said Curats foloweth theyre Books in everie Poynte ; and speciallie praye for your Highnes as Chief Hedde of the Church, and all other Things observe in the same ; and yet I have done my Diligence to herken and know if it were otherwise. And I doe not know but all the Preachers have done theyre Duetie ; and to the great Number of them I spake my selfe, and delivered them Books, and charged them. And further, I charged all Curats and others, that they sholde suffer no Man to preache in theyr Churches ; to the intent, that all that would preache, should be constrained to come to me, that I might deliver them the forsaide Instructions. And never yet anie had Licence of me to preache, but he had fuche a Book delivered hym. To every House of Fryars, and other Religiousse Houses, wher anie Preachers werr, I gave Books ; and likewies to all that I knewe or coulde learne to be within my Dyocese, with Charge that they sholde folow the Booke. When anie Religiousse Men came to me for Counsell, I told them what I had done, and gave them Counsell to doe the same. Of divers Sorts have come to me, both Observants and *Cartusians*, and others. Opon *Good Frydaye* last past, I charged the Treasurer of *Yorke*, that he sholde leave out the Collect *pro Papa*. Lykewies I charged the Deacon that songe the Hyme *Exultet Angelica*, in the Halowinge of the Paschall, that he sholde leave out mention therein made *de Papa*. The Trueth of all these Things may be examined and known, if it shall so please your Highnes : By wiche it shall appear, I trust, that I ame not in fuche Blafme as your Highnes imputethe to me ; enformed by them, peradventure, that be not my Friends. Your Highnes somewhat knoweth me. I have been allwayes open and plain, and hidreto I dare avowe I never deceived you, nor hereafter shall in any Thing that I take upon me, as my Lernynge and Conscience woll serve. And now, after the Receipte of your most Honorable Letters by Sir *Francis Bygott*, I forthwith caused Letters to be made to my Lord of *Duresme* and *Carlisle*, and to all Archdeacons, gevinge to them (on your Highnes behalf) streight Commandement, to follow truelie and syncerlie theeffecte of fuche Commandements, as your Highnes hath given me in your most Honourable Letters ; and have charged all Archdeacons to see, that all Things, according to the Tenor of your saide most Honorable Commandment, bee done without Delaye ; and have charged them to deliver Books to all Curats and others, of the olde Instructions, putting to them all that is nowe encreased in these your Highnes last most Honorable Letters : So that I trust, all Things shall bee done according to your Highnes Commandment, with all Speed, Efficacie and Diligence, wherunto I shall hearken. And for my Parte, I have (on *Sunday* last past, which next followed the Receipte of your Highnes most Honorable Letters) declared all Things comprised in the same ; so that, I trust, the Audience was satisfied. I caused the Citie to be warned afore, and diverse of the Contree were present. And your faythfull Chapleigne and Servants, Mr. *Magnus* and Sir *George Lawson*, I specially required to be ther ; as in deed they werr, and reoport what they think therof.

Ther



Ther werr also present the Abbot of Saincte *Maries* of *Yorke*, the Treasorer of *Yorke*, Sir *Francis Bygott*; these werr there, your Servants and Chapleignes, and many others. I trust your Highnes shall never fynde in me, but that I promise, I shall fulfill, and all Things doe with good Haste, that I may doe, at your Highnes Commandement, God not offended. And most humblie prostrate, I beseeche your Highnes to be so graciouse, good Lord, not to beleive any Complaynts of me, afore you have herd my Answer. The Tyme is now fuche, that some Men think they doo highe Sacrifice, whan they may bring into your Highnes Displeasure, such a poor Priest as I am: But I trust in our Lorde, that your Highnes doth not see take it, and that our Lorde woll continewe your Highnes graciouse Mynde towards your poore Preefts and Chapleignes; and that he shall sende to them, that cawleslie provoke the grevouise Displeasure of your Highnes against our saide Preefts, better Grace hereafter. For which, and for the continuall Keeping of your Highnes in his Governauce, I shall, as I am most bounde, continuallie praye. From *Bishops-Thorpe*, the xivth of *June* 1535.

Your Highnes most humble

Preeft and Beadman,

*Edwarde Ebor'.*

### Number 35.

*A Letter of Cromwell's to the King's Ambassador in France, full of Expostulations.*

S I R,

August the 23d.

Ex MS.  
Rymeri.

AFTER my most Hertie Recommendations, these shall be to advertise you, That the 17th Day of this Moneth I receyved from you a Packet of Letters, which indelayedlie I delyvred unto the King's Highnes, and conferred with his Grace. Theffecte both of your Letters, and all others within the saide Packet, being directed aswell to his Highnes as me. And after his Highnes had with me perused the hole Contents thoroughlie of your saide Letters, perceyving not onelie the lykelyhood of the not Repairee into *Fraunce* of *Philip Melanchthon*, but also your Communications had with the *Frensh* King, upon your Demaunde made of the King's Highnes *Pencions*, with also your discrete Answers and Replications made in that behalf; for the which his Majestee gyveth unto you  
his

his Hertie and Condigne Thanks. Ye shall understande, that his Highnes commaunded me to make you Answer in this wise folowing. First, as touching the King's Money, his Highnes doubtith not, but seeing both the *French* King, and also the Grete Mayster, have promised you it shall be depeched; ye will, as the Case shall requyre, not cease to call upon them till it be depeched. And fether considering, that the said *French* King, upon youre saide Demaunde of the saide Pensions, so sodaynelye fell into Communication with you, aswell of his Frendeship and Humanyte shewed to the King's Highnes; alledging, that He at all tymes hathe answered for the King's Highnes, specially being last at *Marcells* with Pope *Clement*, with other Thyngs, as in your saide Letters appereth. As also concerning the Executions lately done here within this Realme, the King's Highnes not a little mervailleth thereat, and thinketh it good, that as of your self ye take some Occasion at convenyent Tyme and Oportunyte to Renovate the saide Communication, both with the *French* King, or at the leest with the Grete Maister; saying unto them, that where the saide *French* King alledgeth, that he hathe at all tymes answered for the Kyng's Highnes in his Cause; and specially to the said Pope *Clement* at *Marcells*; affirmyng his Procedyngs to be Just and Upright concernyng the *Matrymony*, as ye do wryte in that. Albeit the King's Highnes Proceedings, in all his Affaires within this Realme, being of such Equyte and Justnes of themselves as they be, nedeth not any Defence or Assistance agenst Pope *Clement*, or any other Foreyn Power, having *Goddess Worde* and Lawes only sufficient to defende him; Yet in that that the saide *French* Kyng hathe, as he sayeth, answered at all Tymes on the King's Parte, he hathe don nothing but the Parte of a Brother, in Justefieng and Verefyeng the Trueth; and so continuynge, shall do as apperteyneth to a Prynce of Honour, which the King's Highnes doubtith not he hath, and will doe only in Respecte to the Veryte and Trewth, besid the Amyte betwixt them both justlye requyryng the same. And concerning the executions don within this Realme, ye shall sey to the saide *French* Kyng, that the same were not so marvelous extreme, as he alledgeth. For, touching Mr. *More*, and the Bishop of *Rocheſter*, with suche others as were executed here, their Treasons, Conspiracies and Practises secretly practisyd, aswell within the Realme as without, to move and styrre Discension, and to sowe sedicyon within the Realme, intending thereby not onelye the Distruction of the Kyng, but also the whole Subversion of his Highnes Realme, being explained and declared, and so manifestly proved afore them, that they could not avoyde nor denye it: And they thereof openly detected, and lawfully convicted, adjudged and condemned of High Treason, by the due Order of the Lawes of this Realme, it shall and may well appere to all the Worlde, that they having such Malice roted in their Herts agenst their Prynce and Sovereigne, and the totall Distruction of the Comen Weale of this Realme, were well woerthie, if they had had a Thousand Lyves, to have suffered ten tymes a more terrible Deth and Execution then any of them did suffer. And touching suche Wordes as the saide



*French* King spake unto you, concerning how Mr. *More* dyed, and what he saide to his Daughter going to his Judgement, and also what Exhortations he should gyve unto the Kyng's Subjects, to be trew and obedient to his Grace; assuring you that there *was no such Thing*, whereof the Grete Master promysed you a Double at length: in that the King's Pleasure is, that ye shall not onelie procure the said Double, and sende it hither, but also sey unto the saide *French* King, that the King's Highnes cannot otherwise take it but verie unkyndly, that the saide *French* King, or any of his Counsaile, at whose Hands he hathe so moche meryted, and to whom he hathe mynystered so many Grete Benefits, Pleasures and Commoditytes, shoulde so *lightly* gyve Eare, Faith and Credence to any such vayne Brutes and fleeng Tales; not havynge first Knowlege or Advertisement from the King's Highnes here, and his Counsaile, of the Veryte and Trewth; affirming it to be the Office of a Freinde, hering any suche Tales of so Noble a Prynce, rather to have compressed the Bruters thereof to Sylence, or at the leest not permitted to have dyvulged the same, untill such Tyme as the King's Majestee being so dere a Frende had ben advertesed thereof, and the Trewth knownen, before he shoulde so lightly beleve or alledge any suche Reporte. Which ingrate and unkynde Demeanure of the saide *French* King, used in this Behalf, argueth playnly not to remayn in his Brest such Integryte of Herte, and syncere Amyte towards the King's Highnes, and his Proceedings, as his Highnes alwayes heretofore hathe expected and loked for: Which Thing ye may propone and alledge unto the saide *French* King, and the Grete Master, or to one of them, with suche Modestie and Sobrenes, as ye thinke they maye perceyve that the King's Highnes hathe Good and Just Cause in this Parte, somewhat to take their Light Credence unkyndly. And whereas the saide *French* King sayeth, that touching such Lawes as the King's Holynes hathe made, he will not medle withall; alledging it not to be mete, that one Prynce shoulde desire another to chaunge his Lawes, sayeing, that his be too olde to be chaunged. To that ye shall say, That such Lawes as the King's Highnes hath made here, be not made without Substauncyall Grounds, by Grete and Mature Advise, Counsaile and Deliberation, of the hole Polycie of this Realme, and are in Dede no new Lawes, but of grete Antiquyte, and many Yeres passed, were made and executed within this Realme, as now they be renovate and renewed onelie in Respecte to the Comen Weale of the same. And it is not a little to his Highnes Mer-vule, that the saide *French* King ever would counsaile or advise him, if in case hereafter any such like Offenders should happen to be in this Realme, that he should rather banysh them, than in such wise execute them. And specyallie considering, that the saide *French* King himself, in Commonyng with you at the Tyme, not only confessed the extreme Execucyons and grete Bruyllie, of late don in his Realme, but also that he now intendeth to withdraw the same, and to Revoke and Call Home agayn suche as be out of his Realme: The King's Highnes, therefore, the more straungely taketh his saide Advise and Counsaile, supposing it to be neither thoffice of a Frend,  
nor

nor of a Brother, that he wold determyn himself to call home into his Realme agayne his Subjects being out of the same, for speking agenst the Bishop of *Rome's* usurped Auctorite, and Counsaile the Kings Highnes to banysh his Traytours into straunge Parts, where they myght have good Occasion, Tyme, Place, and Oportunyte to wourke their Feats of Treason and Conspiracie the better agaynst the Kings Highnes and this his Realme: In whiche Part ye shall somewhat engreue the Matier after suche sorte as it may well appere to the saide *French* King, that not only the Kings Highnes might take those his Counsailes and Communications, both straungely and unkyndely, thinking the same not to procede of mere Amyte and Friendship, but also using such Polycie and Austeryte in proponyng the same with the said *French* King, and the Grete Maister, taking such Tyme and Oportunyte as may best serue for the same, as they may well perceyve the Kings Highnes Proceedings here within the Realme, both concerning the saide Execucyons, and all other Things to be onely grounded uppon Justice and the Equyte of his Lawes, which be no new Lawes, but Auncyent Lawes made and established of many Yeres, passed within this Realme, and now renovate and renewed as it is asorfaide, for the better Order, Weale, and Suretie of the same. And ye may ferther say, that if the *French* King and his Counsaile well confyder, as they ought to do, that it were moch better to aduance the Punysshment of Traytours and Rebels, for their Offences, then to ponysh such as do speke agenst the usurped Auctoryte of the Bishop of *Rome*, who Daylie goeth about to suppressse and subdue Kyngs and Princes, and their Auctoritee gyuen to them by Goddes Worde; all which Matiers the Kings Pleasure is, that ye shall take Tyme and Occasion, as ye talkyng agayn with the *French* King, or the Grete Maister may declare your Mynd, as before is prescribed unto you: Adding thereunto such Matier, with such Reasons, after your accustomed Dexteryte and Discreffion, as ye shall thinke most Expedient, and to serue best for the Kings Purpose, Defence of his Proceedings, and the Profe of the *French* Kings Ingratitude, shewed in this Behalf; not doubting in your Wisdom, good Industrie, and discrete Circumspection, for thordering and well-handelling of the same accordinglye.

And touching *Melanchton*, considering there is no likelehood of his Repayree into *Fraunce*, as I have well perceved by your Letters; the Kings Highnes therfore hath appointed *Cristofer Mount*, indelaiedlie to take his Journey where *Melanchton* is: And if he can, to prevente Mounseigneur de *Langie* in suche wise, as the said *Melanchton* his Repayree into *Fraunce*, may be stayed and dyverted into *England*, not doubting but the same shall take Effecte accordinglye.

And as to Mr. *Heynes*, the King's Pleasure is, that he shall go to *Parys*, there to lerne and dissiphe the Oppynyons of the Lernerd Men, and their Inclinations and Affections aswell towards the Kyngs Highnes Proceedings, as to the Bishop of *Rome* his usurped Power and Auctoryte, after such sorte as the Kings saide Highnes hath now wrytten to hym, by his Gracious Letters addressed both to him, and the saide *Cristofer Mount*; dyrecting them what they shall do in all Things comytted to their Charge at this Tyme, as I doubt not, they



they will put there unto their Devoires for the Accomplishment of the Kings Pleasure as apperteyneth. And thus makying an Ende, prayeng you to use your Discreffion in the proponing of the Premiffes to the *French King*, and the Grete Master, or the one or both of them, using the same as a Medecyn, and after such sorte, that as nere as ye can, it be not moch displeafanntly taken, advertesing the Kings Highnes from Tyme to Tyme of the Successes therof; and of all other Occurraunts as the Case shall require. I shall for this Tyme bid you most Hertelie Farewell, &c.

*Thornebery the 23d Day of Auguft.*

### Number 36.

*The Engagement sent over by the French King, to King Henry, promifing that he would adhere to him, in condemning his Firft, and in juftifying his Second Marriage.*

*Paper-Office.*

**F**RANCISCUS DEI GRATIA FRANCORUM REX CHRISTIANISSIMUS, omnibus & singulis presentes Lecturis & Auditoris salutem. Non honoris solum nostri, verum etiam officii & pietatis ratio illud à nobis efflagitat, ut non modo fortunas, sed etiam fidem, Autoritatem, gratiam, & studium omne nostrum adhibeamus, ne cum amici longe charissimi, & de nobis optimè meriti, injuria justitia etiam & veritas negligantur. Hinc est quod cum Serenissimus & Innictiss. Princeps Henricus Dei Gratia Angliæ Rex, Fidei Defensor, Dominus Hiberniæ, & Secundum Deum, Supremum in Terris Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ Caput, Charissimus Frater ac Confanguineus & perpetuus Confederatus noster, vigore cujusdam dispensacionis à bonæ memoriæ Julio papa, illius nominis secundo, cum nobili Muliere Catherina, preclaræ memoriæ Ferdinandi & Elifabeth Hispaniarum Regum, Filia, ac preclaræ memoriæ Illustris Principis Arthuri, dicti sereniss. Regis Henrici Fratris Naturalis & Legitimi, relicta, Matrimonium olim de facto contraxerit, & ex eadem in eodem pretenso Matrimonio, Filiam adhuc superstitem Mariam nomine suscepit, cumque idem Serenissimus Rex dicti incesti Matrimonii conscientia motus à prefata Domina Catherina diverterit, ac justissimis gravissimis que de Causis, nobis etiam satis cognitis & perspectis, ad id inductus, Matrimonium cum Clarissima & Nobilissima Domina Anna nunc Angliæ Regina, rite, legitime & realiter mierit, contraxerit, & in facie Ecclesiæ Solemnizaverit, & Preclarissimam Dominam Elizabeth Angliæ Principem ex eadem & in eodem Matrimonio Procreaverit, & suscepit, cumq; preterea super illius Dispensationis & Matrimonii viribus ac justitia, necnon super dictæ Domine Mariæ Legitimitate & natalium defectu, multæ gravesque questiones subortæ fuerint, in quibus tractandis ac in judicio & veritate discutiendis, nos bene multis

Argumentis

Argumentis perspeximus, non eam (quam oportuit) equitatis rationem ab ipso Pontifice Romano habitam fuisse; & multa sive temporum iniquitate sive hominum vitio contra omne jus phasque in premissis & circa ea definita. Voluimus in hac Causa tam gravi integerimos quosque Regni nostri viros, ac non modo in Sacra Theologia Peritissimos, verum etiam juris Ecclesiastici Callentissimos consulere: quibus etiam Mandavimus ut quid in tota hac Causa Secundam Deum & conscientiam sentirent, fideliter nobis referrent atque responderent. Quoniam his autem habitis prius inter dictos truditissimos Viros matura Deliberatione, diligenti Examinatione, ac longo tractatu, nos ex eorum omnium & singulorum unanimi sententia & conformi relatione, liquido comperimus, invenimus, & plene intelleximus, non solum quod dicta dispensatio fuit & est omnino nulla, inefficax & invalida tam propter surreptionis & obreptionis vicia, quam propter alias Causas, maxime vero propter Potestatis in dispensante defectum, ex eo viz. Quod Matrimonia cum relictis Fratrum decedentium sine Liberis contracta, sint de jure Naturali & Divino prohibita, nec Romanus Pontifex nec ulla alia humana potestas possit dispensare, ut illa aliquo modo legitima fiant aut consistant; verum etiam quod prefatum Matrimonium inter dictum Charissimum Fratrem nostrum ac prefatam nobilem mulierem dominam Catherinam de facto ut prefertur contractum, fuit & est Incestum, ac prorsus nullum, ac etiam contra Sacrosancta Dei percepta, atque adeo contra omnia jura tam Divina quam humana usurpatum, quodque proinde dicta Domina Maria in eodem pretenso Matrimonio ut prefertur, suscepta & procreata, ad omnem juris effectum spuria & illegitima proles, ac ex illicito & incesto coitu genita fuit & est, sicque ab omnibus reputari, censi, & haberi debuit, ac debeat omnino; ac etiam quod dictum Matrimonium quod idem charissimus Frater noster cum dicta clarissima Domina Anna Angliæ Regina contraxit, fuit & est modis omnibus Sacrosanctum, legitimum & validum: quodque dicta Illustri Domina Elisabeth Angliæ Princeps ex eodem Matrimonio, suscepta necnon alia quæcumque proles ex eodem Matrimonio, Divina Bonitate in posterum sustipienda, Legitima fuit & est, eritque & esse debet. Ac denique cum non solum multi ex Reverendissimis Romanæ sedis Cardinalibus inter quos imprimis fuit Cardinales ille quondam Aucomtanus, verum etiam nuper bonæ memoriæ Clemens Papa Septimus, ex certa & deliberata Animi sui Sententia, cum nobis ipsis Marfilæ tunc existentibus, tum alias sæpe Oratoribus nostris tunc Romæ agentibus, palam ac vivæ vocis sue oraculo confessus sit, & expresse declaravit se sentire, dictam Dispensationem & Matrimonium cum dicta domina Catherina contractum, fuisse & esse nulla prorsus, & de jure invalida, quodque eadem sic fuisse & esse per suam sententiam definitinam seu finale decretum, declarasset, pronunciasset, & definivisset si privati quidam affectus & respectus humani non obstitissent. Nos igitur Franciscus Francorum Rex antedictus, ut justum veritati suffragium ferentes, simul & justissimæ charissimi Fratris nostri Causæ patrocinemur, notum facimus & in publicam testationem deduci volumus, per presentes, quod nos primam quidem dictam dispensationem quæ a dicto Julio Secundo ut predicatur emanavit, nullam prorsus ac minus validam, & ex dictis causis inefficacem irritam & inanem fuisse semper, & esse, deinde ipsum



Matrimonium quod ejusdem Dispensationis virtute cum dicta domina Catherina olim de facto contractum fuit, incestuosum, nullum ac omnino illegitimum, ac naturali Juri & Divinæ contrarium fuisse & esse, ac pro incestuoso, nullo minusque legitimo haberi debere: denique dictam Dominam Mariam ex eo Matrimonio ut premittitur susceptam, prorsus illegitimam & ad succedendum in Paterna Hereditate prorsus inhabilem fuisse & esse, & pro tali haberi censerique debere, reputamus, acceptamus, judicamus, asserimus, censemus & affirmamus. Similiter reputamus, acceptamus, judicamus, asserimus, censemus & affirmamus quod Matrimonium illud quod idem Serenissimus Rex & Charissimus Frater noster, cum prefata Illustrissima Domina Anna contraxit, fuit & est modis omnibus Sacrosanctum, legitimum & validum, & quod proles ex eodem Matrimonio suscepta seu suscipienda, maxime autem dicta clarissima Domina Elisabeth nunc Angliæ Princeps ex eisdem ut prefertur procreata, ad omnem juris effectum legitima fuit & est, eritque & esse debet. Quodque non solum omnia & singula quæ dictus Serenissimus Rex & Charissimus Frater noster, pro confirmando & stabiliendo hujusmodi Matrimonio suo quod cum præfata Illustrissima Domina Anna Angliæ Regina contraxit, necnon predictæ Dominae Elisabeth Filia suæ, ac aliorum liberorum qui ex hoc Matrimonio procreabuntur, Legitima & Hereditaria in Regnum suum Successione, statuit, ordinavit, aut promulgavit, justissimis fundamentis innitantur & subsistant, verum etiam quod omnia & singula Sententiæ, censuræ, decreta, alii quicumque processus & judicia contra præmissa, ac eorum occasione per bonæ memoriæ Clementem nuper Pontificem Romanum, aut alium quemcunque Judicem, sive aliam Autoritatem quamcunque facta, edita aut promulgata, aut imposterum edenda, ferenda, facienda sive promulganda, sint ipso jure nulla, irrita, injusta & iniqua, ac pro talibus haberi, reputari, adjudicari, & censi debere certo credimus, constanter attestamur, censemus, asserimus, & affirmamus per præsentem. Promittimus insuper in fide ac verbo Regio, ac sub Hypotheca omnium bonorum nostrorum Patrimonialium & fiscalium, necnon bonorum subditorum nostrorum, etiam in forma contractus Garenticii Paratam Executionem habentis, obligamus nos, Heredes & Successores nostros, dicto Serenissimo Henrico Charissimo Fratri nostro, Heredibus & Successoribus suis, quod nos hanc Animi nostri Sententiam, & Judicium, quod super Præmissis nos habere vere & ex Animo Declaravimus, semper & ubique locorum, maxime autem in omnibus & singulis futuris Synodis, aut Conciliis generalibus, & coram quibuscunque Judicibus, necnon apud & contra omnes Homines; quicumque eidem Sententiæ nostræ quacunque ratione adversabuntur, cujuscunque Autoritatis, pre-eminenciæ aut Dignitatis, etiam si Supremæ fuerint, per nos ac nostros subditos quoscunque, tam in Judicio quæ extra, manutenebimus propugnabimus, ac si opus fuerit, etiam manu forti defendemus, ac pro viribus justificabimus: nec ullo unquam modo aut tempore imposterum publice aut occulte, directe aut indirecte, eidem Sententiæ nostræ contraveniemus: nec quicquam unquam attemptabimus, moliemur, aut faciemus, nec ab aliis imposterum cujuscunque Autoritatis fuerint, fieri aut attemptari quantum in nobis est, permittemus, quod in irritationem, enervationem

tionem, prejudicium, aut in contrarium huic nostræ Sententiæ cedat, aut cedere possit quovismodo. In cujus Rei Testimonium, &c.

Marked on the Back, thus :

*Instrument of Francys the First, King of France, whereby he justifieth the Mariage of King Henry the VIIIth with Queen Anne, and declareth the Invalidity of the former with Q. Catherin, notwithstanding the Pope's Dispensation,*

In another Place, on the Back, and with another Ancienter Hand, (I believe, *Cromwell's*)

*An Instrument devised from the French King, for his Justification and Defence of the Invalidity of the King's Highnes Fyrst Mariage, and the Validyte of the Seconde.*

---

Number 37.

*Cranmer's Letter to Cromwell ; justifying himself, upon some Complaints made by Gardiner.*

*An Original.*

**R**ight Worshipful, in my moste hartie wife I commend me unto you, most hartely thankyng you, for that you have signified unto me by my Chapleyn Master *Champion*, the Complaynte of the Bishope of *Wynchester* unto the King's Highnes, in two Thyngs concernyng my Visitation. The one is, that in my Stile I am written *Totius Angliæ Primas*, to the Derogation and Prejudice of the King's Highe Power and Authoritie, beyng Supreme Hedde of the Church. The other is, That his Dioces (not past five Yeres agon) was visited by my Predecessor, and muste from hensfurthe paye the Tenth Parte of the Spiritualties, accordyng to the Acte granted in the last Session of this Parliament ; wherefore he thinketh, that his Dioces shuld not be charged with my Visitation at this Tyme. Fyrste, as concernyng my Stile, wherein I am named *Totius Angliæ Primas*. I suppose, that to make his Cause good, (which els in dede were nawghte) he doth myxe it with the Kyng's Cause, (as ye knowe the Man lacketh neither Lernyng in the Lawe, neither witty Invention, ne Crafte to sett furth his Matiers to the best) that he myght appere not to maynteyne his own Cause, but the King's ; agaynst whose Highnes, he knoweth right well, that I may maynteyne no Cause ; but gyve place, and lay both my Cause and Self at my Prince's Feet. But to be playne, what I think of the Bishope of *Winchester*, I cannot persuade with my self, that he so  
much



much tendereth the King's Cause, as he dothe his own, that I shuld not visite him: And that appereth by the very Tyme. For if he cast no farther, but the Defence of the Kyng's Grace's Authoritie, or if he entended that at all, why moved he not the Matier, before he receyved my Monytion for my Visitation; whiche was within Four Myles of *Winchester* delyvered unto hym the 24th Day of *April* last, as he came up to the Court? Moreover, I do not a litle marvaile why he shuld now fynde Faute, rather than he did before, whan he took the Bishop of *Rome* as Cheff Hedd: For though the Bishope of *Rome* was taken for Supreme Hedd, notwithstanding that, he had a great Nombre of Primates under hym; and by having his Primates under hym, his Supreme Authoritie was not less esteemed, but much the more. Why then may not the Kyng's Highnes, beyng Supreme Hedde, have Primates under hym, without any Dymynyshing, but with the Augmentyng of his said Supreme Authoritie. And of this I doubt not at all, but that the Bishope of *Winchester* knoweth as well as any Man lyving, that in case this said Stile, or Tytle, had byn in any Poynt Impedment or Hinderance to the Bishop of *Rome's* usurped Authority, it would not have so long ben unreformed as it hath byn. For I doubt not, but all the Bishopes of *England*, would ever gladly have hadd the Archbishop's both Authoritie, and the Title taken away, that they myght have byn equall together; which well appereth by the many Contentions agaynst the Archbishops, for Jurisdiction, in the Courte of *Rome*; which had ben easily brought to pass, if the Bishops of *Rome* had thought the Archbishops Titles and Stiles to be any Derogation to their Supreme Authority. All this notwithstanding, yf the Bishops of this Realme passe no more of their Names, Stiles and Titles, than I do of myn; the Kyng's Highnes shall sone order the Matter between us all. And if I saw that my Stile were agaynst the Kyng's Authoritie (wherunto I am specially sworne) I would sew my self unto his Grace, that I myghte leave it; and so wolde have don before this Tyme. For, I pray God never be mercifull unto me at the Generall Judgement, if I perceyve in my Hert, that I fett more by any Title, Name, or Stile that I write, than I do by the Paryng of an Apple, farther than it shall be to the setting furthe of God's Worde and Will. Yet I will not utterly excuse me herin, for God must be Judge, who knoweth the Botome of my Harte, and so do not I my self: But I speake forsomuch as I do fele in my Harte, for many evill Affections lye lurkyng ther, and will not lightly be espied. But yet I would not gladly leave any Juste Thyng, at the Pleasure and Sute of the Bishop of *Winchester*, he beyng none otherwise affectionate unto me, than he is. Even at the Begynnyng furst of Christ's Profession, *Diotrephes* desyred *gerere Primatum in Ecclesia*, as saith St. *John* in his last Epistell. And fyns, he hath had more Successours than all the Apostles hadd, of whom have come all theis Glorious Titles, Stiles, and Pompes into the Church. But I would, that I, and all my Brethren the Bishopes, wold leave all our Stiles, and write the Stile of our Offices, calling our selves *Apostolos Jesu Christi*: So that we toke not upon us the Name vaynly, but were so even in dede; so that we myghte  
ordre

ordre our Dioces in fuche Sorte, that neither Paper, Parchemente, Leade nor Wexe, but the verie Christian Conuersation of the People, myght be the Letters and Seales of our Offices, as the *Corinthians* were unto *Paule*, to whome he said, *Literæ nostræ, & Signa Apostolatûs nostri vos estis.*

Now for the Seconde; where the Bishope of *Winchester* allegeth the Visitation of my Predecessour, and the Tenth Parte now to be paid to the Kyng. Truth it is, that my Predicessour visited the Dioces of *Wynchester*, after the Deceffe of my Lord Cardynall, as he did all other Dioces (*Sede vacante*;) but els I thynke it was not visited by none of my Predecessours this Forty Yeres. And notwithstanding that, he hymself not considering thair Charges, at that Tyme charged them with an newe Visitation, within lesse than Half a Yere after; and that agaynst all Righte, as Doctour *Incent* hath reported to my Chancellour, the Clergie at that Tyme paying to the Kyng Half of their Benefices in five Yeres, whiche is the Tenth Parte every Yere, as they paid before, and have paid syns, and shall pay still for ever by the laste Acte. But I am verie gladde, that he hath now some Compassion of his Dioces, although at that Tyme he had verie smale, whan he did visite them the same Yere that my Predecessour did visite. And also other Bishops, whos Course is to visite this Yere, kepe thair Visitation, (where I did visite the laste Yere) notwithstanding the Tenth Parte to be paid to the Kyng's Grace. Howbeit I do not so in *Wynchester* Dioces, for it is now the Third Yere syns that Dioces was visited by any Man, so that he hath the lesse Cause to complayne of any Bishop, for it is longer syns his Dioces was visited than the other. Therefore where he layeth to aggravate the Matter, the Charge of the late Acte graunted, it is no more agaynst me, than agaynst all other Bishops that do visit this Yere, nor makyth no more agaynst me this Yere, than it made agaynst me the laste Yere, and shall do every Yere hereafter. For if ther were true Men in Accomptyng and Paying the Kyng's Subsidie, they are no more charged by this newe Acte, than they were for the Space of Ten Yeres past, and shall be charged ever hereafter. And thus to conclude, Yf my faide Lorde of *Wynchester's* Objections shuld be allowed this Yere, he myght (by such Arguments) both disallowe al Maner of Visitations that hath be down thes Ten Yeres past, and that ever shall be don hereafter. Now I pray you, good Maister Secretary, of your Advice, Whither I shall nede to writte unto the Kyng's Highnes herin. And thus our Lorde have you ever in his Preservation. At *Otteforde*, the xiith Daye of *Maye*.

Your own ever assured

*Thomas Cantuar'.*



## Number 38.

*A Letter of Barlow's to Cromwell, complaining of the Bishop and Clergy of St. David's.*

Cotton Library  
 Cleop. E. 4.  
 P. 107.

**P**Leaseth your Good Mastership, with Compassion to advertise the Complaynt and unfayned Petitions of your Humble Oratour, disquietly vexed without Cause or any pretenced Occasion, motioned of your said Oratour's Parte: Whereas the Queen, of her Graciousse Bounte, advouched me not unworthy the Priorship of *Haverford West*, under her Grace's Foundation, syns the Tyme of my ther continuall Residence; Consideryng the hungry Famyne of heryng the Word of God, and desolate Scarcete of true Preachers, I have endeveryd my self, with no small Bodily Dainger against Antichrist, and all his Confederat Adherents, sincerely to preach the Gospell of Christ; whose Verite, as it is invincible, so it is incessantly assailed of faithles false Perversers; by Reason wherof, they which of Dutie ought to fortifie me in Mayntenynge the Truth, maliciously have conceiv'd a malevolent Mynde, causes to maligne against me in such wise, that I was forced (from their Tyranny) to appele unto the Kyng his Honourable Councillis; as plainly apperith by the untrue, furmised Articles, falsely contrived by the Black Freer of *Haverford West*; which thoughe I presented to your Mastership, as the Act of his onely doing, yet was it the Mayntenans of the Bishop, and his unghostly Spirituall Officers; which is evident by the Reward of the Bishop to the Freer, at his departyng allso by his Letters directed to Mr. Dean of the Arches, and to Doctor *Huys*, diligently to sollicite that I myght be suppressed in my just Matter: And where they sithe perceive that (Praise be to God) under the Favour of your righteouse Equite, they cannot prevaile against me as they willfully would, yet cease they not wrongfully to vex such as pertayne to me, troblyng them with Tyranny for my Sake, no such Tyranny deserving. As, where of late I sent a Servant Home about certain Busines; immediatly after his Comyng, the Bishop's Officers ascited hym to Apperance, ransacking his House, forced him to deliver such Books as he had; that is to say, an *Englishe* Testament, the Exposition of the vth and vith Chapters of *Matthew*, the Tenn Commandments, and the Epistle of Saynte *John*; violently with holding them with vehement Reproches, and clamorous Exclamations against Heretikes: As if to have the Testament in *Englishe* were horrible Heresie, to no litle dismayng and ferefull Discomfort of the sincere Favorers of God's Word. Moreover, they charged in the Kyng's Name, the Maire of *Tynby*, in payne of Fyve Hundreth Markes, to put in Warde the said Poore Man, his Wiff, and a certain Honeft Widdowe of inculpable Fame, with whom they were at host, laying certen Articles to their Charge which they never thought nor spake, and after most shamefull Rumors rayfed upp to their Dyffamation, with slanderouse Wonderment

ment of the Towne, all crayfty Means assayed to bryng in false Witnes, when no Accuser would appear openly ; as a true Certificat under the Towns Seal, largely doth testify ; the above mencyoned Officers without any Charitable Satisfaction to the said Parties wrongfully Imprisoned, badd the *Maire* do with them as he listed ; and so thens departyng made their advaunt in Places where they came of their valyant Actes against Hereticks, meaning thereby the Favourers of Christs Gospell : In Consideration wherof, it may please your Singular Goodnes to provide a Redress, that from the Terrour of such Tyrannes, the Kings Faythfull Subjects, your porre Oratoures maye peaceably live according to Gods Lawes, without any suche unchristen Empeachment, and combrose Vexations.

Furthermore unfayndly to asserdain your Maisterchip in what perilous Case greatly lamentable the Kings Faithfull Subjects, the poore *Refians* in the Dioces of Saynt *David*, your Suppliant Oratours are miserably ordered under the Clergy, requireth a farre larger Proceffe then here maye conveniently be comprised : For though we have semblaly to other Diocefes, in outwarde Auctorite and exterior Ceremonies a Bishope, a Suffrigan, Archdeacons, Deanes, Commissaries, and other Bishopllike Officers, intituled with Spirituall Names ; also a multitude of Mounks, Cannons, Freers, and Secular Priests, yet among them all, so many in Number, and in so large a Dioces, is there not one that sincerely Preacheth Gods Word, nor scarce any that hartely favorith hit, but all utter Enemys ther against, whose stubborne Resistence cannot last without froward Rebellion against the Kings Graciouse Actes established upon the Verite of Gods Word. And concerning the enormous Vices, the fradulent Exactions, the myfordered Lyving, and Heathyn Idolatry, shamefully supported under the Clergies Jurisdiction ; which by sequele of theyr blynd willful Ignorance, do consequently follow, no Dioces, I suppose, more corrupted, nor so far out of Frame, without hope of Reformation, except your Lordship shall see a Redresse, in whom under the Kyngs Grace, the Trust of all those that meane well onely consistyth. Fynally theyr abused Fashioned at length to discover at your Commandment ; I shall be ready with such certente of Truth, that no Advirsary shall be able to make contrary Denyall ; which so performed, it may then please your good Mastershippe to licence me to departe, under the lawfull Favour of your Protection ; without the which, neither can I without Perell repair Home, nor there in Safte contynue, among so odious Adversaries of Christs Doctrine, by whose Tyranny, that I may not be unjustly opprest, I most humbly beseeche your assistant Aide, howbeit no farder then the Write of Scripture will justifie my Cause ; nether for no Carnall Commodite of any Worldly Preferment, but all onely for the Advancement of Christs Gospell, to the Honour of God, who evermore graciously preseeve your Mastershippe in honourable Felicite.

*Your humble Oratour*

William Barlo, *Prior of Haverford-West.*



## Number 39.

*A Letter of D. Legh's, concerning their Visitation at York.*To Mr. *Cromwell*, Chief Secretary.

Cotton Library  
 Cleop. E. 4.  
 P. 104.

**R**Yght Worshipful Sir, my Dewty pre-supposed, this is to advertise you, that Master Doctor *Layton* and I, the xiith Day of *January*, war with the Archbishop of *Yorke*, whom we according to your Pleasure and Precepts have visyted: Injoyning him to preach and teach the Word of God (according to his bownd Dewty,) to his Cure committed unto him, and allso in the Knowledge concerning the Prerogative Power the Kings Grace have, and to see others here in his Jurisdiction being induyd with Good Qualities, having any Respect either to Gods Goodnes, Vertue, or Godlines, to performe the same, injoyning moreover to him to bring up unto you his First, Second, and Third Foundations, wheruppon he enjoyeth his Office, and Prerogative Poore, with the Graunts, Privelegis and Concessions given to him, and to his See apperteyning; the which whan that you have red them, and knowe in all Points the hole Effect of them, I doe not doubt, but that ye shall see and rede many Things worthy Reformation. By the Knowledge whereof, I suppose the Kings Highnes and you will be glad, and do think it mete that every Bishoppe war in likewise orderyd: then shuld they, them under the Governances Edifye much in Christ in his Doctrine and Teachings: And then the Poor Ignorante Persons now by Blindnes and Ignorance sedusid, might therby be brought to Light and Knowledge, wherby they should profit mucche, the Welthe of their own Soules, and the Commynaltye: and it should be greatly Expedient to the Conservation of their Fidelite toward their Prince, and to his Graces Succession now begotten, or hereafter to be begotten. Now that I have enformed your Mastership of our Acts and Deeds, done to a good Ende, as our Opinion serve us, that shall lie in your circumspecte Prudencye and Wisdome to order all Things, as ye shall think to your approved Discretion most mete, and to the farderans of the Glory of God, and Preservation of the Common Wealthe, most Expedient and Necessary. For in the same Jurisdiccions given heretofore either augmented or diminished, to be ministred to their Bishops as wall be thought to your Wisdome most convenient; I do not dowght but it shall be much profitable, and commodious both to the Kings Highnes, and to your Mastership, as knoweth God, who ever preserve your Mastership. From *Yorke* the xiiith Day of *January*.

Yours ever assured,

Thomas Legh.

## Number 40.

*A Letter of Tonstall's upon the King's ordering the Bishops to send up their Bulls.*

*An Original.*

**R**ight Honorable, in my humble Maner I recommend me unto your good Mastership. Advertising the same, that I have of late receivd a Letter from Master Doctor *Layton*, declaring unto me that ye willyd him to write unto me, that albeit the Kings Highnes hath directed his Letters Missives to all and singular his Bishops in this his Realme, to appere before his Grace immediately after the Feast of the Purificacyon next cominge, to the Intent that they shall deliver up unto his Graces Handes all their Bullys of Confirmation, or such other like, as they have had from *Rome* at any Time heretofore; yet his Grace consideringe my late Departure thens, for my more ease and quietnes, is well content that I make mine Abode here, so that I Write unto his Grace a Letter, therin declaringe that I will be content to doe as other Bishops do in this Behalf, and to gife up into his Handes all suche Bullys as his Graces Pleasure is to have of me. Advertising me further, that your Mastership, as my great Frende, hath promised to the King, that I will accomplishe the Kings Desire and Pleasure herin: For whiche your most great Kindnes not only shewed unto me many Times hertofor, but allso nowe renewid at this Time, with making of such Assurance for me to the Kings Highnes I most humbly Thanke your Mastership. Advertising the same, that forasmuch as I could not perceive by any Part of Master *Layton's* Letter to what Intent the Kings Highnes wold have the said Bulles delivered into his Handes; and if in my Letter to be written unto his Grace I shuld mistake his Entent, I shuld not only therby offende his Grace, which I would be as lothe to doe as any Subject within his Realme, but also make him to be displeased with my Kinsman, that so blindly had Written unto me, and peradventure with your Mastership for usinge him for your Secretary in this Behalf: consideringe with my self the hole Effect of the same, better to be to have my Bulles into his Hands, thought that most best to send up the said Bulles there to be ready to be delivered at his Graces Will and Pleasure: Humbly beseechinge your Mastership to move the Kings Highnes to be Good and Graciouse Sovereigne Lord unto me, and to consider if I shuld nowe in my Age leif my Bishoprich, which I trust his Grace of his Goodnes meanith not to make me doe, by demandinge of my Bulles to be delivered into his Handes, that shuld not only disapoint me of my Liffinge, but many other my Servants his Subjects, that

*Cotton Library*  
*Cleop. E. 6.*  
*P. 246.*



have their Liffinge only by me, who if I shuld leve my Promotion shuld be thereby destitute of Succour; which being my speciall Trust that his Grace of his inestimable Goodnes will have respect unto, and that my Mind herein, not to lese my Promotion, is neither Ambiciouse nor Unreasonable, nor contrary to his Graces Entent, I have sent up the said Bulles there to be redye, whiche Thinge sens that is more then I was willed to doe by Master *Layton's* Letter. I have forborne to wryte unto his Grace that I wold do that, feinge I do indeede accomplishe his Graces Pleasure. Praynge humbly your Mastership upon Advertisement geffen to the Kings Highnes, hereof to know his Will and Pleasure what he will have to be done, and the same so knowne to declare unto this Bearer *William Redmayn*, who therupon shall deliver the said Bullys into your Hands, or to whom the Kings Grace will appoynt to receyve them, yf the Kings Will and Pleasure be to have them. Which I doe undoubtedly trustinge that the Kings Highnes will be as good to me, as he is to other Bishops of his Realme beinge in like Case, feinge I had them by him, and did renounce all Things conteynd in them contrary to his Prerogative Royall, at suche Time as I presented to his Grace his Bull unto him, as that will appere by the Othe of my Homage remayninge with the said Bull in the Kings Records now beyng in your keeping, as all Bishops ever have been accustomyd to doe by the Laws of this Realm heretofore used. The Bulls that I do send remayning in my Handes concerning my Bishopryche be v. in Number, the other were delyvered to whom they were directed: One to the Kings Highnes, an other to my Lord Cardinall, then being my Metropolitan, whose Soul God Pardone, an other to my late Lord of *Rocheſter* to take my Othe to the Bishop of *Rome*, which I think was sent up to *Rome* with the Othe as hathe been accustomyd to be done. And so those that I nowe send did remayne still in my Handes. And other Bulles then these have I noon, humblye beseeching your Mastership in all mine Affayrs to be good Master unto me, and to be meane unto the Kings Highnes to be Good and Graciouse Sovereigne Lorde unto me, and I shall according to my most bounden Dewty, daily pray for the Preservation of his Royall Estate longe to endure; and likewise I shall contynewe daily Beedman to your Mastership, whom Almighty Jhesu preserve in long Life and good Healthe to his Pleasure and yours. From *Aukelande* the xxixth Day of *January*;

*Your Mastershipes Humble Beedman*

*Cuthbert Duresme.*

## Number 41.

*A Letter of the Archbishop of York's, concerning the  
Suppression of the Monasteries.*

**R**ight Honourable, after my Hertiest Commendation. According to your Request made to me in your Letters, I have furthwith upon the Receipte of the same, sent Commandement to certayne Monasteries for beeing with me to *Yorke*, where I was than; and now I have given Commandement to all Archdeacons, to warne all Monasteries, of less yearly Value than Two Hundred Pound, being within their Archdeaconries, that they shall nothing imbecille, ne alien: And if they have, that they shall agayne call such Things aliened, or imbecilled, to their Hands. Some that were noted to have received some Goods of suche Monasteries, I called and warned, that they shold in no wise meddle with any such Goods; and that if they had any such, that they shold restore them: And ferthermore, if any such Goods should be offred to them, that they shold give me Warning. And forbicause most resorte for such Propose is to the Citie of *Yorke*, I have warned the Majour of *Yorke*, and other of his Brodren thereof, and speciallie the Maister of the Mynt, upon their Peril and Daunger, that they receive no Goods of any such Monastries. And ferther herin I entend to do from Time to Time, as I shall see nede, and daily do warn such as do resort to me, that they meddle not with any such Goods, that by them this Commandement may be the more published, as I trust it shall be now by the Archdeacon's Officials, which be nowe all Abrode, and have Speciall Commandment to sett furthe this Propose.

*CottonLibrary  
Cleop. E. 4.  
P. 239.*

Sir, I entierlie pray you to be good to me, for Two Places of the Patronaige of the Archbishopps of *Yorke*, that if you shall thinke upon such Considerations as I shall alledge, that I have Reason to sue for them, as you woll help me with your good Word, that they be not suppressed. The one of them named *Saincte Oswaldes*, is not of Foundation a Monasterie of Religious Men, but is *Libera Capella Archiepiscopi*. No Man hathe Title in it but the Archbishop: The Prior therof is removable at my Pleasure, and accomptable to me; and the Archbishoppe may put ther, if he woll, Seculer Prestes, and so would I have done at my Entre, if I had not ther found one of myne Acquayntance, whom I judged meete to be there under me. And moreover, the Archbishops of *Yorke* had it given to them by *William Rufus*, in Exchange for Recompense, as well of Lands as Jurisdiction, taken from them at the Coming in of *William Conqueror*, as appereth in my Registres, and other Old Books. And in the same it appereth, that the said Chapell enjoyeth all Privileges, like as all other the Kinges Free Chapelles; for it was some tyme *Libera Capella Regia*: And for the Defence of the said Privilaiges, and Jurisdiction ther, my Predeceffours have alwaies had Writts from the  
King,



King, agaynst all Disturbers ; becaufe it is no other but *Libera Capella*, and some tyme was the Kinges.

The other is called *Hexham*, upon the Borders of *Scotland*, and was some Tyme *Sedes Episcopalis* ; and many Holie Men, some time Bishops, ther be buried in that Church, Saincts of Name. And Wise Men, that knowe the Borders, think, That the Lands thereof, although they were Ten tymes asmuch, cannot contrevaille the Damage, that is like to ensue, if it be suppressed. And some waye, there is never a House between *Scotland* and the Lordshipp of *Hexham* ; and Men feare, if the Monaisterie go down, that in Proceffe all shall be waste muche within the Land. And what Comfort that Monaisterie is daylie to the Contre ther, and speciallie in Tyme of Warre, not onlie the Contre Men do knowe, but also many of the Noble Men of this Realme, that hath done the King's Highnes Service in *Scotland*. I dout not, but that the Land of that Monaisterie is better than Two Hundred Pound by Year ; as likewise the Archbishop's Lands, war much better if they laye in a quiet Place. Some of my Predicessours have had ther 1300 Marcs by Year, and now it is (*communibus Annis*) undre 250. I entierlie pray you, if you think that I have Reason, send for these Two, that you woll help me to save them. And as for *Hexham*, I think it is necessarie to be confided, as (I think) they that knowe the Borders woll saie.

Sir, According to the King's Commandment, I have generally given Commandment, that no Prechers shall be suffred, that withoute Discretion preche Novelties, and (as you right wiselie consider'd) do rather sowe Seeds of Dissention, than do any good : And some such as I have heard to use such Preaching, I have discharged ; and yet they preach : But I make Proceffe agaynst them ; and some of them say, they will get Licence of the Kyng to preach. If they obtaine any such Licence, I then am discharged for them that have such Licence. But I trust, that you woll suffer no such Licence to pass, but that I shall knowe therof : And what your Pleasure is than, if they preach such Novelties, I pray you I may know by this Bearer. Some say, they have Licence of my Lord of *Canterbury* ; but, I trust, they have no such : And if they have, none shall be obeyde here, but onlie the Kyng's and yours. And this in my hertiest maner. Fare you well. From *Cawed*, the xxiiid of *April* 1536.

Your own ever assured

*Edward Ebor'.*

Number 42.

*Instructions for Sending Barnes, and others to Germany.*

*An Original.*

**M**After Secretary, After our most hartie Commendations, ye shall understand, that having received the Letters sent unto you from Sir *John Wallop*, and shewed the same unto the King's Majestie; his Pleasure thereupon was, that we shuld dispatch these our Letters incontiently unto you, concernyng the Accomplishment and Doing of these Things ensuing. First, his Grace's Pleasure, that you shall immediatly (upon the Receipt herof) despatch *Barnes* in Post, with *Deryk* in his Company, into *Germany*; commanding him to use such Diligence in his Journaye, that he may and it be possible, meet with *Melanchthon* before his Arryvall in *France*: And in case he shall so meet with him, not only to dissuade his going thither; declaring how extremely the *French* King doth persecute those that will not grante unto the Bishop of *Rome's* Usurped Power and Jurisdiction; using in this Parte all Persuasions, Reasons and Means, that he can devise, to empech and let his said Journay thither; laying unto him, how much it shuld be to his Shame and Reproach, to vary and go nowe from that true Opinion wherin he hath so long continued; but also, on the other side, to perswade him all that he may, to convert his said Journay hither, shewing as well the Conformitie of his Opinion and Doctrine here, as the Nobilitie and Vertues of the King's Majestie, with the good Entertaynement which undoubtedly he shall have here at his Grace's Hands. And if percase the said *Barnes* shall not meet with him before his Arryvall in *France*, then the said *Barnes* proceeding himself forth in his Journay towards the Princes of *Germany*, shall (with all Diligence) returne in Post to King's Highnes the said *Deryk*, with Advertisement of the Certaintie of the said *Melanchthon* cummyng into *France*, and such other Occurrants as he shall then know. And if the said *Deryk* be not now redy to go with him, the King's Pleasure is, that ye shall in his stede, appoint and sende such one other with the said *Barnes*, as you shall think meet for that Purpose.

And when the said *Barnes* shall arrive with the said Princes of *Germany*, the King's Pleasure is, He shall (on his Grace's Behalf) aswell perswade them to persist and continue in their former good Opinion, concerning the Deniall of the Bishop of *Rome's* Usurped Autoritie, declaring their own Honour, Reputation and Suretie, to depende therupon; and that they now may better mayntain their said Just Opinion therein then ever they might, having the King's Majestie (One of the most Noble and Puissant Princes of the World) of like Opinion and Judgment with them; who having



proceeded therein by great Advise, Deliberation, Consultation, and Judgments (of the most part) of the great and famous Clerks in *Christendome*, will in no wise relent, vary, or alter in that Behalf. Like as the said *Barnes* may declare and shew unto them, by a Book made by the Dean of the Chaple, and as many of the Bishops Sermons as you have. Whiche Booke you shall receive herwith : The Copie wherof, and of the said Sermons, you must deliver unto the said *Barnes*, at his Departure, for his better Remembrance, and just Occasion. To whom also his Grace's Pleasure is, you shall shew as much of Master *Wallop's* Letter, (which we send you also again) as you shall see drawn and marked with a Penne in the Margent of the same. As also exhorte and move them, in any wise to beware, how they commit any of their Affaires to the Order, Direction, or Determination of the *French King*, considering he and his Counsell be altogether Papist, and addict and bent to the Maintenance and Conservation of the Bishop of *Rome's* pretended Auctoritie. Furthermore, the King's Pleasure is, ye shall upon the Receipt herof, immediatly cause Mr. *Haynes*, and *Christopher Mount*, in Post to repair into *France* to Sir *John Wallop*, in as secrete maner as they canne; as commyng like his Friend, to visit him, and not as sent by the King. And in case they shall (by him, or otherwise) lerne and know that *Melanchthon* is there arryved; then his Grace wolle, that the said *Haynes* and *Mount* shall (in such sort as they be not much noted) reasorte unto him : And for the desuading of the Continuanee there, or the Alteration of his Opinion, and the Alluring of him hither, to use suche Reasons and Persuasions as be before written, with suche other as they canne further devise for that Purpose. To the which *Haynes* and *Mount*, the King's Pleasure is, ye shall delyver like Copies of the said Dean's Book, and Bishop's Sermons, to be shewed unto the said *Melanchthon*, or otherwise used, as may be most expedient for the Atchievement of the King's Purpose in that Behalfe.

Ye shall also understande, that the King's Pleasure is, ye shall write to Sir *John Wallop*, and send unto him therewith like Copies; willing him, in case he shall have certain Knowledge that the Articles be true, (written in these his Letters) concernyng the *French King's* Sending into *Germany*, for the Continuanee of the Bishop of *Rome's* pretended Supremacy; to repair with the said Copies to the *French King*; and not only to set the same forth, with such Reasons as he canne devise in that Parte, shewing, how much it shall be against his Honour, both to give Himself subject to the said Bishop, and to move other to do the semblable; but also to declare unto him, that the King's Highnes (remembring his old frendly Promises, concernyng the Mayntenance of his Cause, and of his Proceedings touching the same) cannot but think it a little strange, that the said *French King* (seeing his Majestie hath, in his Doings touching the said Bishop of *Rome*, moved neither his, nor any Prince's Subjects) will move and styr the *Germanes*, to condescend upon a contrary Opinion, both to themselves, and to his Grace in this Behalfe: And that his Majestie must needs think his Amytie much touched

in that he shulde move any State or Contrey, to do that Thing which is so much against the Kings Highnes and his own Promise, using all the Wayes he canne to disuade him from the dishonorable Obedience of the said Bishops, soe moving him to inclyne to the Kings just Opinion touching the same.

Finally, the Kings Pleasure is, ye shall write an other Letter to the Bishop of *Aberden*, signifieng that the Kings Majestie taketh it very unkindly that the King his Nephew wold now embrace without his Advice or Counsaile, being his dereft Freinde and Uncle, and now in Leage and Amytee with him, the Marriage of *M. de Vandoms* Daughter, wherunto he would give non Ear at his Graces Overture herto-for made of the same; in your said Letter, imputing a greate Negligence therin, to the said Bishop, and other of his Masters Counsaile, seeing their Master sheweth not in the doing therof, suche Amytie towards the Kings Highnes as the Friendship between them doth require: And to make an Ende, his Grace woll in no wise that *Barnes*, or *Haynes*, shall tary for any further Instructions of the Bishope of *Cantorbury*, or any other, having his Grace determyned to sende the same after, by Mr. *Almoner* and *Hetbe*; but that he, Mr. *Haynes*, and *Mount*, shall withall possible Diligence departe immediately in Post, without longer tarieng thenne for this their Dispatche shall be necessary, soe as their Abode empeche not the Kings Purpose, touching the said *Melanchthon*: And thus fare youe most hartly Well, from *Langley* in much haste, this *Monday* at iij of the Clock, at after Noone.

*Your Lowyng Friend*

*T. Norfolk.*

*George Rocheford.*

---

Number 43.

*The Smalcaldick League.*

BY the Grace of God, We *John Frederick* Duke of *Saxony*, High  
 Mareshall of the Empire of *Rome*, and Prince Elector, Lantgrave  
 of *Truringie*, and Marquis of *Misne*, aswell in our own Name, as in  
 the Name of the Noble Prince *John Ernest*, likewise Duke of *Saxonye*,  
 our most beloved Brother, *Philippe*, *Ernest*, *Francis*, Brethren Dukes  
 of *Brunswick* and *Lunenburg*; *Ulrich* Duke of *Wortenberg*, and in  
*Deck*, Erle in *Montbelyard*; *Philipp* Lantgrave of *Hessen*, Erle of *Catts*  
 in *Dietz*, *Zigenham* and *Nyer*; *Berminus* and *Philip*, Dukes of *Stetin*,  
*Pomern*,

*Cotton Library*  
*Cleop. E. 6.*  
*P. 303.*



*Pomern, Cassaburn, Wenden, Princes of Rug, Erles in Gufkan; Wolfgang John, George, and Joachim, Brethren Princes in Anhalt, Erles of Ascanion, and Lords in Bernburg; Gebhard and Albert, Brethren, Erles and Lords in Mansfeld; the Consules, Decurions, Tribunes, Senate, and People of the within named Cities of the High-Germany, Saxon, and Hanse, or on the See, that is to say, Argentina, Augusta, Frankford, Constantia, Ulme, Esling, Rentling, Memingia, Linde, Bibrac, Isua, Magdeburgh, Breme, Brunswick, Goslaria, Hamibria, Gottingia, Embeck, Hamburgka, Lubeck, and Myndia, do profess by these our Letters, in the Name of us, our Heyres and Successors, and do signifie to all Men that seen the State of this Season, is every where very perillouse, and appereth so, that many Men are about and practise to disturbe, such as do cause, and suffer the syncere Doctrine of the Gospell to be preached and taught in their Dukedoms, Provinces, Cities and Territories, (by the Grace of God) and which (abolishing all Abuses) doe studie to bring in Ceremonies consenting to the Word of God: and efforce them selfs to divert them from Christs Doctrine; yea, by Force and Violence: and seen also that the Office of every Christian Magestrate, is not only to suffer that the syncere Worde of God be preached to his Subjects; but also with all his Study, Care, and Solitude to provide (to his Power) that the holesome Doctrine of the Gospell and the Truth, onse known and professed, be not violently extorted, and they deprived of the same: For this Cause, we doe knowledg that it is our most Duetie and Necessitie, of the Offices of our Magestrate, in case nowe or hereafter it shuld happen, that any Man wold attempt and assay to diverte us, or our Subjects, by Force or Dede, from the Worde of God, and the Truth known; and to bring in again, and restore the ungodlie Ceremonies and Abuses already abolished (which God by his good Clemence woll forbyd, as we trust that no Man woll attempt such Thing) for to represe such violence and Perill from the Bodys and Souls of us and our Subjects, by the Grace of God, and for to excuse and avoid the same to the Praise of God, to the Augmentation of the Syncere Doctrine of the Gospell, and to the Conservation of the Uniform Estate. Tranquillite, and Honestie Publick, in the Empire, for the Love of the Nation of *Alemayne*; and also for the Commendation, Honour, and Good of our Dukedoms, Provinces, Lordships, and Cities, onely to provide for the Cause of our Defence, and Tuicion; the which is permitted to every Man, not onely by the Lawe of Nature and of Men, but also by the Law Written. Therefore we have assembled and concluded, to give and be bound eche to other of a Christian, Lawfull and Friendly Leage and Confederation, and by the Vertue, Fource, and Reason of this our Letters, we agree, conclude, and bynde our Selfs eche to other upon a Confederation, with the Conditions that followeth, That is to say, that all and every of us shall be bound to favour eche other hartely and truely, and to warn eche other of all Imminent Danger, and to avoid it: And that noon of us, openly, or secretly, shall willingly give Passage to the Enemy, or Adversaries of the other, nor to warn, or support them.*

And

And because this Confederation is onely made for Cause of our Tuicion and Defense, and not to the entent that any of us shall move warr, if ther shall happen any of us whatsoever he be, to be violently assawted for the Word of God, the Doctrine of the Gospell and our Faith, or for such other Causes as do depend of the Word of God, the Doctrine of the Gospell, or our Faith, or be annexed thereunto; or if under any other Pretext or Colour, there shuld be any Violence attempted against any of us, and that we the rest, which shuld not then be invaded myght thinke and judge that such Werr, or Violence, shuld be moved for the Cause of the Word of God, or of the Religion; And that he to whom the Werr, or Violence is Imminent, wold permitt it to our Knowledge, Arbitracion, and Deciseon; that then we all the rest of this Confederacion, and every of us, that be comprehended in this Christen Confederacion shall be bound to take no lesse to Herte, and take in hand as deligently to provide for the same, incontiently as such Persons that be invaded, shall require our Help, or that we shall knowe it, (with all our Power) as though we shuld be assawted our Selves, and for our own proper Cause: And therefore without any Delaye, and without any Decepte or Gyle, without taryeng for any other, with all our Might and Power, we shall be bound to Succour, Defend, and Helpe him that shall be assawted, after such Form and Manner, as for the Qualitie and Circumstances of the Thing, and the Tyme it shall be adjudged most util and most commodiouse to the rest of us; And like as the Fidelite and Charite to be given and shewed to the Neighbors upon his Conscience and Salut shall teach him, And that we shall truely administer and deale oon with another. And that in such Case never oon of us shall agree, compound, or make any Transaction, or Trewes without the Assent and Will of the Rest.

Also that this our Christen Confederation shal be taken and understanden to be in no wise Prejudicial or Hurtfull to the Emperors Majestie, our Clementissime Lord; nor to any State of the Empire, or any other: But onely for the Conservation of the Doctrine and Truth of the Gospell, and of the Peace and Tranquillite in the Empyre and *Alemayns* Nation, and to withstand wrongfull Violence from us and our Subjects and Allyes; and onely in Case of Defence, and in such Case as every of us may bear and suffer the just Knowledge and Decision of his own Cause as is aforesaid, and none other wise; and if any Man wol be joyned to this our Confederacion, which is not comprehended in it already, so that he be dedicate to the Worde of God, and shall permitte the Syncere Doctrine of the Gospell, conformable to our Confession, exhibited to the Emperors Majestie, and to all the Orders of the Empire in the Assemble at *Augsburg*, freely to be preached, taught, and kept in his Lands, Province, and Dominions, and woll constantly styck to the same Doctrine, he or they ought to be ascribed and receyved in this Confederacion, by the Assent and Will of us all.

And bycause that Christen Confederacion, which shall be finished the *Sunday invocavit*, the Year of our Lord 1537, hath lasted the other 6 Years last past, between us, excepted us *Ulrich*, Duke of *Wertemberg*, &c. and us *Bernim* and *Philipp*, Dukes of *Pomeren*;



us *John, George, and Joachim*, Princes of *Anhalt*; and the Cities of *Augsburgh, Frankford, Kempt, Hamibra* and *Mynda*; We, at their Friendly and Diligent Petition, have receyved them into this our Confederation, and we do bynde our Selves eche to other agyn, that this Christen Leage shall be proroged and extended, begynning from the said *Sunday invocavit, 1537*, by the Space of Ten Yeres next ensuyng, as this Christen Leage by the Ten Yeres next ensuyng, ought to be kept and proroged constantly, syncerely, and *bona fide*, by us and every of us, without any Frawde, or Malign.

And if it shall happen us to entre Werre with any Man for the Doctrine of the Religion, or any other Cause depending of the same, that shuld not be finished within the Space of the said Ten Yeres, yet nevertheles, although the said Time of Ten Yeres be utterly expired, yet the said Expedition, shall be contynued and prosecuted, and the Werre brought to an Ende; and that then it shall not be Lawfull for any of the Confederates to exempte him of the same, nor hope upon Exemption, and from that Tyme it shall be Lawfull for the Confederats, to protract and prolong this Confederation, if they shall so think good.

We the foresaid Electors and Princes, Erles and Magistrats of Cities by Interposition of our Feith instead of an other, do Promise and take upon us, for us, and for our Heires constantly and perpetually to observe and performe all and singular the Premisses truely and syncerely as it behoveth Princes, and Good Men. And that we shall nor doe, nor procure any Thing in any wise to be done against this Leage and Confederation: But in all Points shall deale and procede truely and syncerely without any Frawde or Malengin. And for more Credence and Confirmation of all and every those Things, every of us the said Electors, Princes, Erles, and Cities, in the Name of us our Highnes and Successors, have caused our Seales wittingly and willingly, to be sett to these Presents, which have been given the Yere of the Nativite of our Savyor Jesus Christ, 1536.

## Number 44.

Propositions made to the King, by the *German*  
Princes.

*The Petition and Request of the Right Noble Princes,  
Duke John Frederike, Elector of Saxe, and Philip the  
Lantgrave of Hesse, to the most Noble Kyng of Eng-  
land; exhibited at Smalcaldia, to the most Reverende  
Bishop of Hereford, and other the Ambassadors of the  
Kyng's most Royall Majestie, upon the present Day of the  
Natyvyte of our Lord, Anno Dom. 1536.*

1. *Item,* **T**HAT the said most Noble King wolde set fourth the *Paper-Office.*  
Evangelie of Christe, and the Syncere Doctrine of  
the Faith, after such sort, as the Princes and States Confederates have  
confessed in the Dyet of *Augusta*, and the same defended, according  
to their Appologie and Purgation made: Except parcase some Things  
therin shall seme, by the common Assent of the said most Noble  
Kyng, and the said Princes, necessarie to be changed or reformed by  
the Word of God.
2. *Item,* That the said most Noble King, joyning with the said  
Princes and Stats Confederats, wold maynteyne and defende the saide  
Doctrine of the Evangelie, and the Ceremonys conforme to the  
same, at the future Generall Counsaill, if it shall be Pious, Catho-  
lique, Free and mere Christien.
3. *Item,* That neither the saide most Noble King, without the  
expres Consent of the said Princes and Stats Confederats, nor the  
same Princes and Stats Confederats, without the expres Consent of  
the saide most Noble King, shall assent nor agre to any Indiction or  
Appoyntement of a Generall Councill, which the Bishop of *Rome*,  
that now is, or hereafter shall be, or any other, by whatsoever pre-  
tended Auctorite, doth, or shall make and appoynt: nor yet shall  
consent to any Place, where the future Generall Counsaill shall be  
had, nor to the Counsaill it self; but that all those Thyngs may  
be ordered and done, by the mutuall Assent and Counsaill of the  
said most Noble King and Princes Confederat. Provided neverthe-  
less, that if it shall appere certeynly, by just Arguments and Rea-  
sons, such a Christien, Free, Generall Counsaill, to be indicted and  
appoynted, as the Confederats, in their Answer to the Bishop of  
*Rome's* Ambassador, named *Peter Paule Verger*, do desire, that such  
a Councill be not to be refused.

4. *Item,*



4. *Item*, If it shall happen that (the saide most Noble King, and Princes, and Stats Confederats, not agreeing upon the Place, nor the Indiction of the Counsaill) the Bishop of *Rome*, and other Princes conjoynd with hym in that Cause, will nevertheless procede to the Celebration of a Counsaill, or rather of the Appoyntment of the Place wherunto the saide most Noble King, and Princes, and Stats Confederat shall not agree; that then, and in that Case, aswell the saide King, as the said Princes and Stats Confederat, shall chieflie (to their Power) endeavor and compass, that the same Indiction may be utterly avoyded, and take noon Effecte.

5. And furthermore, that they shall make, and seemblably procure to be made, by their Clargy, their Publick and Solempne Protestacions, wherby they shall testefie and declare, both the Synceryte of their Faith, and also that they do utterly dissente from such maner of Communication and Indiction; and that they will not be bounde to the Decrees or Constitutions of the same Counsaill, (if any such Counsaill do folowe in dede) nor in any maner of wise obey the same hereafter.

6. And also, that they shall not at any tyme obey, nor suffer to be obeyed by any of theirs, any Decrees, Mandats or Sentences, Bulles, Letters, or Brieffs, which shall procede, or be fulmynde from such a Counsaill, so indicted and celebrate eyther in the Name of the Bishop of *Rome* himself, or of any other Potentate whatsoever; but shall have and repute all such maner of Rescriptes, Decrees, Bulles and Breves, as voyde, inane and frustrate; and shall declare, that so they ought to be reputed and taken. And also for the Remotion of all Slaunder, shall procure their Bishopes and Preachers, to declare the same to the People really, and with Effect.

7. *Item*, That the said most Noble King, like as by the Grace of God he is associated to the said Princes and Stats Confederat in the Doctrine of Christ, and the Defence of the same; so also he woll vouchesauf, upon Honourable Conditions, to be associate unto the Leage of the same Princes and Stats, so as his most Noble Majestie may obtaine the Place and Name of Defensor and Protector of the said Leage.

8. *Item*, The neyther the said most Noble King, nor the saide Princes and Stats Confederat, shall knowledge, maintain nor defend, at any Tyme hereafter, that the Primacie, or that the Monarchie of the Bishop of *Rome*, may at this Day take place, or ever shall, by God's Lawe; nor shall consent nor graunt, that it is either utile or expedient to the Comen Welth of *Christendom*, that the Bishop of *Rome* shuld have Preemynence afore all other Bishops, or in any maner of wise have any Jurisdiction at all, in the Realmes, Kyngdoms, or Domynions of the saide King and Princes.

9. *Item*, If it shall happen, that War, or any other Contencion, either for the Cause of Religion, or for any other Cause besides this Cause, shall be inferred or moved against the said most Noble King, his Realmes, Domynions or Subjects, by whatsoever Prince, State or People, or also against the said Right Noble Princes or Stats Confederat: That in that Case, neither of the said Parties shall give Ayde,

Ayde, Helpe, nor Socours against the other Partie, nor shall assist the Prince, nor the People so invadyng or movyng Warre, neither with Counsaill, Helpe nor Favour, dyrectly nor indirectly, prively nor apertely.

10. *Item*, That the said most Noble King would vouchsaufe, for the Defense of the said Leage and most Honest and Holie Cause, to Conferre to and with the said Princes, giveing Suretie (as within is added) to lay fourth and contribute One Hundreth Thousande Crownes. Which Money, it shall be Lawful to the Confederats to use and employ wher Nede shall be, in Cause of Defense, for the Moytee or Halfe Parte therof. The other Moytee they shall take of the same Money, which they have leyd fourth, and contributed to the same Sum.

11. And if need shall be of contynuall and dayly Defence, for the Contynuance of the Warre, or Invasion of Adversaries; in that Case, forasmuch as the Princes and Confederates be not only bound unto further Collacion and Contribucion of Money, but also to the mutuall Defence with their Bodies and Goods; it may please the saide most Noble King, not to be greved in so urgent a Cause of Necessity, also to contribute more, that is to say, Two Hundreth Thousande Crownes: Which Money, nevertheles, for the Halfe Parte, the Confederates may employe together with their own Money. And if it happen the Warre to be soner ended, then that that shall remain, shall be justly reserved, and (the Tyme of the Confederation fynysht) shall be restored to the saide most Noble Kinge.

12. Which if the said most Noble King woll do, the Princes do promyse themselves, with their sufficient Sureties, to assure not onlie that they shall not convert this Money to any other Use, than to the Defense of the Leage and Cause of Religion, together with their owne Money which they in such a Confederation do contribute, but also that entirely and faithfully, they shall paye and restore unto the said most Noble King the same Summ, which either when ther shall be no need of Defence, or (after the Defence) shall remain and be left, in case it shall not be employed to that Use.

13. *Item*, That for as much as the Ambassadors of the said most Noble King shall now for a Tyme remayne in *Germany*, and with the Lerned Men in Holy Letters, dispute and commun of certeyn Articles; the Princes do desire, that they woll shortly inquire, and knowe their most Noble King's Mind and Resolution, in the Conditions of the said Leage; and when they shall be certefied, to signifie the same unto Us the Elector of *Saxe*, and Lantsgrave of *Hesse*.

14. Which when they have done, the Princes will send in their (and the Stats Confederats Names) Ambassadors to the said most Noble King, and amongst them one excellently Learned, not onely to conferre with his Royall Majestie upon the Articles of Christ's Doctrinie, and to deliberate upon the Ceremonies, and other Things in the Church, to be changed, ordered and reformed, but also to comment and conclude upon all the Articles, of the which we have spoken with the King's most Royall Majesty, in the Name of the Confederats.



## Number 45.

*The Answer of the King's most Noble Majestie of Eng-  
lande, to the Petitions and Articles lately addressed to  
his Highnes, from the Noble Prynces, John Frederike  
Duke of Saxe, Elector, &c. and Philip Lantsgrave van  
Hesse, in the Names of them, and all their Confe-  
derates.*

*Paper-Office.* 1. **T**HE said most Noble King answereth, That his Majestie will, and hathe of long Tyme mynded to set fourth the Evangelie of Christe, and the trew syncere Doctrine of the same, out of which springeth and floweth our trew Faith, whiche to defende he is most redy both with Life and Goods; but to say, that he being a King reckened somewhat Lernerd, (though unworthy,) having also so many Excellent well Lernerd Men within this Realme, thinketh it mete to accept at any Creature's Hands, the Observing of his and his Realmes Faith, thonlye Grounde wherof remayneth in Scripture, surely he doth not; and requiereth his entier Friends herewith not to be greved: But his Highnes is right well contented, and much desireth, that for Unyte in Faith and Articles to be made upon the same, it wold please his saide Confederats and Friends, to sende hither some of their best Lernerd Men, to conferre and conclude, with him and his Lernerd Men, to the Intente to have a parfaite Concorde and Unyon in Faith amongst us. In which his Highnes doubteth not, but at such Tyme as when their Deputs shall come, they shall fynde the most Towardnes in the King, and in his Realme.

To the Seconde, his Highnes answereth, that he is content to employ himself, joyntly with the said Confederats, in all Generall Counsailes, they being *Catholici & Liberi, in Loco etiam omni Parte tuto*, for the Defence of their mere and trew Doctryns of the Gospell, according to their Desires. But as touching the Ceremonies, there may be different Rites, and such Dyversite used in dyvers Domynyons, *fere per totum Mundum*, that it will be harde to conclude anye Certentie in them. Wherefore his Highnes thinketh it mete, that the Order and Limitacion of them, shouide be left to the Arbitrees of the Governours of everye Domynyon, supposing that every of them can tell what is most comodious for his owne Domynyons.

To the Thirde, his Majestie answereth, That he is contented, that neyther his Highnes, (without the exprefs Consent of the said Princes and Stats Confederate) nor the same Princes and Stats Confederate, (without the exprefs Consent of his Highnes) shall assent nor agree to any Indiction of a Generall Counsaile, or to any Generall Counsaile, which the Bishop of Rome that now is, or that  
here-

hereafter shall be, or any other by whatsoever pretended Auctorytee, doth, or shall make, enter, presume, or begynne, or cause to be made, entered, presumed, or begon, but that they neyther shall consent to any Place of the future Counsaile, nor to the Counsaile selfe, except it be by their mutual Consents, assented and agreed unto; provyded nevertheless, that if it shall appear certainly by just Arguments and Reasons both to his Majestie, and the said Confederats, that a Christien Free Counsaile may be indicted, *in loco etiam omni Parte tuto*, that then that Counsaile shall not be by him, or them, refused.

The 4th, 5th, and 6th Articles, his Highnes is content to accept in every Point, according to their own devises.

To the 7th, his Grace answereth, That he doth moste fully accepte their good Overture therein, by the which they declare their good Inclynacion and Hertie Good Will towarde his Highnes; nevertheless, his Majestie desireth them to take in good Parte, that he doth not accepte the saide Name and Place, till he be throughlie agreed with them uppon the Articles before rehearsed; which ones agreed on, his Highnes entendeth most thankfully to accept the same.

The 8th Article, his Majestie is content to accepte according to their own Desire.

9th, Also his Highnes agreeth, so that they woll adde therunto, that in that Case of Warre, neyther Partie shall suffer or permytte any of their Subjects, or Servants, to serve them, that in such wise shall by any Warre molest any of them.

To the 10th, his Majestie answereth, That for the Warres already by past, he being in no Confederacion with them, thinketh it very strange, and somewhat unreasonable, that they should of his Highnes require any Ayde or Assistance; but in case that this Confederacion now spoken of do take effecte, and that the contynuance of Warres seme to be necessary, by their mutual Consents, for the supporting of their Faith against their Adversaries; and therefore the Confederats being also bound to contrIBUTE for their Parts, every Man for his Porcyon as shall be thought necessary amongst us; his Highnes will be content for his Parte, in Declaracyon of his Loving Harte to them, to contribute 100000 Crowns, the Tyme, and Place, and Facion, for the Employment of the same, ones bytween his Grace and them agreed on: Provdyed that in Case that eyther there shall be no Warre made to any of the Parts for the same; or that it shall be sooner ended then shall be looked for, that then the Hole, or that Part left and remayning, shall be fully and trewly *bona fide* restored unto his Highnes, whensoever he shall demaunde, or require the same.

The 11th, his Majestie doth accepte according to their owne offer.

The 12th, his Highnes also agreeth unto.

To the 13th, (*Two Lines torn out*) agreed unto the most Part of the Articles, they will now according to their own offer, with all Speed and Diligence, send hither their Ambassadors plenarily instructed to comon, agree, and conclude with his Majestie in all Things



Things that shall be comoned of, and treated betwixt his Highnes and them.

Number 46.

*The Answer of the King's Ambassadors, made to the Duke Saxon, and the Landgrave of Hesse.*

Cotton Library  
Cleop. E. 4.  
P. 104.

**F**IRST, that his Highnes, aswell by his Ambassadors, as their Letters from *Smalkald*, doth perceive Two Things; the one is their Gratitude and Benevolence towards his Majestie, and that they desire the Continuance between their Progenitors inviolably observed to be increased: The other is not only thair great Constance in the setting forth of the Trueth of the Gospell that was darkened afore, but also that they exhorte his Grace to the Defence of the same, which be most acceptable to his Highnes, and thanketh them aswell for his Behalfe, as also for the Behalfe of all *Chriſtendom*, knowing the greate Benefite of God, in giving the sayd Princes such Stedfastnes and Strength; and that his Majestie willed to be shewed unto them that their wondrouse Vertues have so ravished and drawn his Mind to thair Love, that his Highnes feled a greate encrease to thair Unitie, in such wise, that he is determined fully never to passe the Occasion, without Correspondence of Love, nor any Occasion that he shall think may conduce in any wise to their good Myndes, and Godly Proceedings, and for to declare his Minde to the Articles of your Petition.

The 3d, 4th, 5th, 6th, 8th, 9th, 11th, 12th, and 13th, Articles do please his Majestie well ynough; and although there be some Things in them, that his Grace would grante easely to no manner Princes, were they never so greate; yet nevertheles his Highnes for his Affection towards them, thinking that they meane nothing ells but the Reformation of the Church, which his Majestie for his Parte desireth much, and desireth to joyne with them in the same; in these Articles his Majestie desireth that only the 3d and 4th Article be more ampley declared, that is to say,

The 3d Article by these Wordes, *Item*, that nether the Kings Highnes without the Assent of the Princes and Stats Confederate, nor they without his Graces Assent shall agree to the Indiction of any Counsaile, that the Bishop of *Rome*, that now is, or any other whatsoever Auctoryte may pretende: and that also nether of the said Parties shall agree uppon the Place of a Councile to be had, without the Agreement of the other expressely to be given, but that the same be done by the mutuell Assent of his Grace, the said Princes and Estats. Provided nevertheles, that if all they shall perceive a Lawfull and Chriſtien Free Concile to be Indicted in some sure and indifferant Place, that then nether of them both Parties shall refuse the saide Concile.

To

To the 9th Article his Highnes wold have added, that nether of both Parties shall permitt any of their Servants, or Subjects, to be in folde against the other Part, nor to helpe directly, or indirectly, such as wolde invade, or entreprife against them.

As to the 1st, 2d, 7th, and 10th Articles, his Grace answered, to the 10th his Majesty sayeth, that he doubteth not but the said Confederats do well think and know, that his Grace is moved in his Mind by no more private Necessitie, that he or his Realm have, nor any private Profite to joyne with the said Confederats in Leage and Defense, for he and his Realme is in good Peace: and knoweth not that the Bishop of *Rome*, the Emperor, or any other Prince pyketh any Quarrel with him, and that much lesse Warre; and although his Grace feared some Hostilitie of them, nevertheles by the Death of a Woman, all Calumnies be extincted; and to the entent the Confederats might know his Graces good Affection towards them, and to the Reformation of the Church, and Abolicion of Abuses, his Grace signifieth unto them, that he woll in no wise refuse thair Peticion, but willingly contribute for his Parte 100000 Crownes for the Defence of the Leage, in Case that the Confederation between the said Confederats and his Grace to be made, shall be brought to any Effect. And for other Appendaunces of this Article, as touche sufficient Suertie, *Item*, that the Half of the Monaye by them contributed shuld be spent, or ever they touched his Graces Monaye: *Item* concerning the Forme and Maner to depomite and spend the same. *Item* to make his Highnes prevey of the same, that on thair Behalfe shall be contributed, and of the Necessitie where abouts it shold be spent; and that all Things may be done by Common Advise and Assent, because the same do require long Treatie; therefore his Grace referreth the same to his Orators, and to such of thairs, as by the 13th Article they desire to send, his Grace desireth the said Princes to send them fully instructed, and with sufficient Power and Aucto-rite to treat with his Highnes, not doubting but they shall have reasonable and friendly Answer.

To the 1st, 2d, and 7th Articles, his Majestie hath veray acceptable and agreeable, the Honour they have thought to deferre unto him, as above all Princes, to call him to be Protector and Defendor of their Religion, which is a Declaration of the certain Benevolence and Trust that they have in his Majestie; and although his Majestie knoweth what Envy and Danger foloweth such Title, yet nevertheles his Highnes is so desirous to do them Pleasure, and to the Glory of the Gospell, his Grace is content to accept the same Honour, after that between his and thair Orators Agreement, shal be had upon the 1st and 2d Articles, for it shuld not be sure nor honourable for his Majestie, before they shall be with his Grace agreed upon certain Concorde of Doctrines, to take such a Province upon his Highnes; and forasmuch as his Majestie desireth much that his Bishops and Learned Men might agree with theirs, but seen that it cannot be, oneles certain Things in their Confession and Apologie, shuld by their Familiar Conferencies be mitigate, His Grace therefore would the Orators and some Excellent Learned Men with them shuld be sent hither, to conferre, talke, treat and common upon the same according to the 13th Article.



Now that his Highnes by the fame Answers sheweth unto them his good Harte, trusting that they woll be of Correspondence, therunto his Majestie desireth Three Things of them of no great Coste nor Difficultie.

First, That in Case any King, Prince, or other, would invade his Majestie or Dominions for the same, or for the Cause of the Religion, that then they woll furnishe him at thair Expences, 500 Horsemen armed of all Peces, or 10 Ships well arrayed for the Warre, to serve his Majestie by the Space of Four hole Monethes by Land or by Sea; and that it shall be at his Graces Choyse to have Horsemen, or Shipps, and that such as his Grace shall chuse, shall be sent to him, within a Month after the requisition thereof.

Second, That besides the same, that they shall reteyn at his Majesties Cost and Chardges, such Number of Horsemen and Footmen, as his Highnes shall require; so that the Horsemen passe not the Number of Two Thousand, and the Footmen the Number of Five Thousand; or for the said Footmen, 12 Ships in good Order furnished with Men, Harneys, Ordynances, Victuells, and other Things necessarie; and that the Kings Majestie maye hyre them, reteyne at his Wages as long as it shall please his Grace; and it shall be as his Majesties Choyse to have the said 12 Ships, or the said Number of Horsemen and Footmen, and that such as his Majestie shall choyse, maye be redye within Two Moneths after his Requisition.

Thirde, That the sayd Confederats woll take upon them in all Conciles hereafter, and every where ells to promote and defend the Opinion of the Reverend Fathers, Dr. *Martin*, *Justus Jonas*, *Cruciger*, *Pomeran*, and *Melancton*, in the Cause of his Graces Marriage.

---

Number 47.

*A Letter writ to the King by the Princes of the Smalcaldick League.*

*An Original.*

Cotton Library  
Cleop. E. 6.  
P. 283.

**S**erenissime Rex, Postquam Romanus Pontifex, Paulus Tertius, Generalem Synodum Mantuæ celebrandam, & inchoandam die viceffimo tertio Maij, indixit, misit ad nos Inviçtissimus Imperator Carolus Quintus Clementissimus Dominus noster, Oratorem suum, ut ad Indictionem illam Concilij ipsi veniamus, vel Procuratores nostros mittamus.

Etſi

Etsi autem nos ex animo semper optavimus, et Synodus, rebus deliberatis, emendationem abusuum atque errorum, qui diu jam in Ecclesia hærent, institueret, etiam adversus illos ipsos Pontifices & Prælatos, quorum partim Negligentia, partim Cupiditatibus, vitia illa in Ecclesiam irrepsérunt: Tamen Bulla, in qua Paulus Pontifex Concilium indicit, non obscurè testatur, Pontificem (cum suis conjunctis) nequaquam passurum esse; ut in Synodo, de restituenda vera Doctrina, & corrigendis Abusibus atq; Erroribus, agatur. Sed quemadmodum ab ipso, & quibusdam suis Antecessoribus Doctrina, quam confessi sumus, sine ulla Cognitione, aut Examinatione Generalis, liberæ, & Christianæ Synodi, temerè, & cum Contumelia Evangelij, damnata est; Ita ostendit se Paulus Pontifex, hæc Prejudicia, Prætextu Synodi, confirmaturum esse: Et conatur sibi ipsa receptione Bullæ, obligare omnes Reges & Potentatos, ut ipsi quoque assentiantur illis Prejudiciis, & omissa cognitione, se ad Piam & Catholicam Doctrinam, & in Evangelio clarè traditam, quam profiteamur extirpandam, & armis delendam conjungant. In hanc Indictionem si consensissemus, visi essemus hæc Prejudicia confirmare & Doctrinam Ecclesiæ Romanæ & Doctrinam nostrorum Testimonio nostro condemnare. Itaque Oratori Cæsariæ Majestatis, verè & bona fide commemoravimus, quare nobis illa Indictio Concilij, iniqua, & perniciofa Ecclesiæ videatur; ac petivimus, ut Cæsariæ Majestati, Excusationem nostram justam, & consentaneam, Juri scripto & naturali, quare in illam Indictionem non consenserimus, exponat.

Non dubitabamus, aut quin Romanus Pontifex, & hi quos habet conjunctos, se excusaturi essent apud Regiam Dign. V. tanquam Pontifex fecerit suum Officium, ac ostenderit se voluisse recte consulere Ecclesiæ; nos vero oneraturi Invidia, quasi communi Utilitati deesse velimus. Quare necessarium nobis visum est Causas, propter quas Indictionem illam iniquissimam, & insidiarum ac periculi plenam recusavimus, Regiæ Dignitati vestræ, & cæteris Regibus & Principibus significare, ut adversariorum Calumniis, & aliorum Suspicionibus occurreremus.

Itaque, ut Regia Dignitas vestra Causas illas verè & integrè intelligere possit, rogamus, propter Gloriam Christi, ut Regia Dignitas V. nostram Excusationem, quam publicatam his Literis adjecimus, perlegat. qua in re non solum periculo moveatur multorum in Germania Populorum, quib. Regiam Dignitatem V. optimè velle speramus, sed etiam cogitet, hanc nostram Causam ad communem Salutem Ecclesiæ pertinere, in qua cum Disciplinam multis in rebus collapsam esse constet, & paulatim receptos esse abusus non dissimulandos, diu multi, magni, & præstantes Viri, Emendationem optaverunt & flagitarunt. Non dubitamus, aut quin Regia Dignitas V. etiam ex alio cupiat Ecclesiæ Christi quemadmodum Deus hoc Officium, præcipuè à summis Principibus requirit, omni Ope, & Omnibus Viribus consulere. Proinde & communem Ecclesiæ Causam, & nos ipsos diligenter commendamus Regiæ Dignitati V. & nostra Officia, cum summa Observantia, Reg. Dignitati vestræ deferimus. Bene & feliciter valeat Regia Dignitas Vestra. Datæ vij. Calend. April. Anno Domini M. D. XXXVII.



Dei Beneficio, Joannes Fredericus Dux Saxoniae, Sacri Romani Imperij Archimareschallus ac Princeps Elector, Lantgravius Turingiae, & Marchio Myſiae.

Et Philippus Lantgravius Hassiae, Comes Caetorum Diek, Zygenhaim, & Nidde, suo & aliorum, Principum Statuum, & Civitatum Imperij Germanicae Nationis, Nomine, puram Evangelij Doctrinam profitentium.

Serenissimo Principi, Domino Henrico ejus Nominis Octavo, Britanniae & Franciae Regi, Domino Hiberniae, Domino Cognato, & Amico nostro Carissimo.

---

Number 48.

*Cranmer's Letter to Cromwell, complaining of the Ill Treatment of the Ambassadors from Germany.*

Cotton Library  
Cleop. E. 5.  
P. 212.

**M**Y very singuler good Lord, in my most hertie wise I recommend me unto your Lordeship. And where that the Oratours of *Germany*, when thei granted to tary one Moneth, required that we should go furth in their Booke, and entreate of the Abuses, so that the same myght be set furth in Wryting as the other Articles arr: I have syns effectuously moved the Bishops therto, but they have made me this Answer; That thei knowe, that the King's Grace hath taken upon hymself to answer the said Oratours in that Behalf, and therof a Book is alredie divided by the King's Majestie; and therefore they will not meddell with the Abuses, lest thei should write therein contrarye to that the King shall write. Wherefore thei have required me to entreate now of the Sacraments of Matrimony, Orders, Confirmation, and Extreme Unction; wherein thei knowe certeynly that the *Germanes* will not agree with us, excepte it be in Matrymoney onelye. So that I perceyve, that the Bishops seek only an Occasion to breke the Concorde; assuring your Lordship, that nothing shall be done, unles the King's Grace speciall Commandmente be unto us therein directed. For they manifestly see, that they cannot defend the Abuses, and yet they wold in no wise grant unto them. Farther, as concernyng the Oratours of *Garmanye*, I am advertised, that thei are very evill lodged where thei be: For besides the Multitude of Ratts, dayly and nyghtly

nyghtly runnyng in thair Chambers, which is no small Disquietnes; the Kechyn standeth directly against their Parlar, where they dayly Dine and Supp; and by reason therof, the House favereth so yll, that it offendeth all Men that come into it. Therefore, if your Lordship do but offer them a more Commodious House, to demore in, I doubt not, but that they will accept that Offer most thankfully, albeit I am suer that they will not remove for this tyme. And wheras of late I did put your Lordship in Remembrance, for the Suppression of the Abbey of *Tudberye*; now I beseech your Lordship, not only that Commissionours may be sent unto that House, but also in likewise unto the Abbey of *Rocester*, or *Crockesdon*; beseeching your Lordship to be good Lorde unto this Berer *Frances Bassett*, my Servant, for his Preferment unto a Leace of one of the said Houses; not doubting but you shall prefer a right honest Man, who at all Tymes shall be able to do the King's Grace right good Service in those Partes, and also be at your Lordship's Commandment during his Life. Thus Almighty God have your good Lordship in his blessed Tuition. At *Lambeth*, the xxij<sup>d</sup> Daye of *Auguste*.

Your own ever assured

*T. Cantuarien'.*

---

Number 49.

*The Earl of Northumberland's Letter to Cromwell, denying any Contract, or Promise of Marriage, between Queen Anne and Himself.*

*An Original.*

MR. Secretary, This shall be to signifie unto you, that I perceyve by Sir *Raynold Carnaby*, that there is supposed a Precontract between the Queen and me; wherupon I was not only heretofore examined upon my Oath before the Archbishops of *Canterbury* and *York*, but also received the Blessed Sacrament upon the same before the Duke of *Norfolk*, and other the King's Highnes Council Learned in the Spirituall Law; assuring you, Mr. Secretary, by the said Oath, and Blessed Body which affore I received, and hereafter intend to receive, that the same may be to my Damnation, if ever there were any Contracte, or Promise of Marriage between Her and Me. At



*Newyngton-Green, the xiiijth Day of Maye, in the 28th Year of the Reigne of our Sovereigne Lord King Henry the VIIIth.*

*Your Assured,*

Northumberland.

Number 50.

*A Letter, giving Pace an Account of Propositions made to King Henry by Charles the Vth.*

*Paper-Office.*

TRUSTY and Right Wel-beloved, we grete you well, lating you Wit, that on *Tuesday* last passed, repaired to our Maner of *Greenwicke* unto us, the Emperors Ambassador here Resident, and on his Masters Behalf, pretending a Desire to renew the Old Amytie that hath been between us, testified nevertheles by Letters of Credence sent from the said Emperor to our Trusty and Right Wel-beloved Counsailler, *Thomas Cromwell*, our Principal Secretary, which of long Season hath been interrupted, made unto us for the Advancement of suche a Renovation certain Overtures: The First was, that he wold be a Means to have a Reconciliation between us and the Bishop of *Rome*: An other, that we would ayd him with some Contributions in his entended Voyage against the *Turk*: The Third, that forasmuch as by a certain Leage passed between us, it is covenanted and agreed, that in Case either of us shuld be invaded in any of our Realmes, Dominions, or Seigniories, which we have in Possession, the other shuld ayd him in such Form, as in the said Leage is exprest, at the Costs and Expences of the Prince requiring the same, and that there is a greate Appearance that the *French King* wil now invade him in the Duchie of *Millain*, we wold grant him such Ayde for his Defence against the said *French King*, as in the said Leage is limited. To the said Masse and Substance of his Credence, tending to a Renovation of Amytie, ye shall understande our Answer was, that albeit the Interruption and Disturbance therof, hath proceded holly on the Emperors Behalf, who for our Friendship in suche wise hertofore shewed unto him, in making him King of *Spayn*, in making him Emperor, whenne the Empire was at our Disposicion, in lending him our Money, that he may only thank us for the Honour he is now advanced unto, hath nevertheles for his reciproque shewed unto us, all the Ingratitude he could devise, both in contempnyng, as it were, a Friendship, when we have done more for his Satisfaction in our Proceedings then needed, and in procuring what Displeasure and Injury he could against us, at the Bishop of *Romes*

*Romes* Hande, as by Credible Reports we have knowen and lerned ; yet such is our Zeal to Unytie, Concord, and Quiet amongs Christian Princes, and such is our Princely Nature, that as we canne continue our Displeasure to no Man, if he do ones remove the Cause therof: So if he which is a Prince of Honor, and a Personage whom we ones chose, and thought Worthie for his Vertue and Qualities, to be advanced, will by his exprefs Writing, eyther desire us to put his doings towards us in Oblivion, or by the same Purge himself, and declare that such Things as we have noted Unkindnes in at his Hande, hath been unjustly, and without his Desert, imputed unto him, we shall gladly embrace his Overture touching this Renovation ; but we plainly said and offered, that seing we had susteyned the Injury, we could not be a Suiter for the Reconciliation, nor treat with his Master of such Appendents for Aydes, as be before expressed, or any such like, unless our Amyties shuld be first Symple, and without all Manner of Conditions renoveled ; which Parte, if he will first accomplish, he shuld not need to doubt, but to all his reasonable Desires to be made after, he shall have as Friendly and Reasonable Answer, as between Friends in the Highest Degree of Friendship can be required. Touching the Bishoppe of *Rome*, we declared unto him, that as we have not proceeded uppon so sleight and slender Grounds, as we wold revoke, alter, or change any Peece of our Doings ; having in all Causes made our Foundations uppon the Laws of God, Nature, and Honestie, and established all our Works made uppon the same, by the Consent of all the States of our Realme, in open and High Court of Parliament, so considering there hath been some Means made unto us by the Bishop himself for such a Reconciliation, which we have not yet embraced, it shuld not be Expedient to have it compassed by any other Means ; nor we could take as in good Parte, or think that the Emperor shuld earnestly mind a Reconciliation, and a Renovation of our Amyties, if for the Satisfaction of the Bishop of *Rome* our Enemye, he shuld move us to aliter any one Thing that we have here determyned contrary to his Purpose, and pretended Autoritie. To his Request for Aid against the *Turk*, was answered, that we could give no certain Resolution, because the Affaires of *Christendom* be not quiet, but in case their may ensue between Christen Princes an Univerfall Reconciliation, Concord, and Agreement, we shall not fayle in that Matter to doe for our Parts, that to the Office of a Christien Prince appertaineth : Finally to his Desire for Ayde against the *French* King, we said it shuld be convenient that our Amytie shuld be first renewed, and certainly established, before we shuld treat of any suche Appendants ; and thenne being an indifferent Friend to both, we might frankly Travail to conserve Peas and Unitie ; or ells Friendly to staye him that wold do wrong ; but tyl such Time as that Foundation were made, we could neyther in this Appendant, nor any suche like make any direct Answer. And forasmuch as not only for your Instruction, but also for that we be much desirous to know in what Parte they take our Answer there, we thought convenient to Advertise you of the Premysse, our Pleasure is, that ye shall aswell in your Conferences with the Emperor, pretending only a Generall Knowledge of certain  
of



of the Overtures made by his Orators here, both maintain our Answers to the same, with such Reasons as ye canne devise for that Purpose, and of your selfe exhorte him not to pretermyt this goodly Occasion, so graciously beganne, commenced, and entred, extolling our Princely Harte, Nature, and Courage, with our most gentle Inclynation, to the Satisfaction of our Friends desires, in all reasonable Things, wherunto they shall not pres us; which kind of Constraint doth for most Parte more hurte in the stay of good Purposes, then cane be, after with Repentance when the Tyme is past eftsoons redoubled. As in Semblable Maner move Monsieur *Grandevile* of your self, as a Personage whom ye repute, addicte to the Advancement of our Honor, to desire the Emperor to consider what Good may ensue to him, and to the hole State of *Christendom*, if we may joyne again in perfite Amytie; and that it were great Pitie, and purcase greater Losse then might be after recovered, to suffer this goodly Meane and entree to passe without certain Fruit and Effect, by the putting to it of such Appendants and Conditions, as ye knowe, what soever we will after do, at the contemplation of Friendship, yet our Nature and Courage will not bear to be newe loden and charged withall; specially considering that we have suffered the Injury; and with these and suche like Words, as ye woll that ye shall endeavor your self of your self to pryke them forward to the Renovation of our Amytie, without adding therunto any Conditions. Soe ye shall repayr to the Court and to *Grandevil* as ye may conveniently, to give them Occasion by your being in their Eyes, to enter Communication with you of these Matters; wherby you shall the better also perceyve wherunto they will bend, which our Pleasure is, you shall from Tyme to Tyme signify unto us, as ye may have any certain Matter worthie our Knowledge.

---

Number 51.

*Instructions by Cardinal Pole to one he sent to King Henry.*

*An Original.*

Cotton Library  
Cleop. E. 6.  
P. 340.

**I***Mprimis*, to declare to his Grace myn hole Entent and purpose yn wrytyng the Booke, wherein takyn my testimony off God, that only seyth the Hart of Man, was only the Manifestation off the Treuth in that Mattier, that by Master Secretaryes Letters I tooke as a Commandment to shew my Sentence herein, which wrote the same to me by his Gracys Pleasure, that I shuld by Writing declare myn Opinion; and this is the very Cause I dyd wryght; for otherwise, I think I had never sett Penne to Booke in so lyttyl hope of Persuasion, and in such a Matter as the Tyme was so lykely nott to be all the best acceptyd.

Further

Further to declare after I was onys entred into the Mattier, haveng sent to me the Books of them that have wrytten yn the contrary Part, wherin I saw the Trueth mervyolouflye suppressyd and cloked, with all Colours that could be invented sett upon the untrew Opinion, seyng besyde what Acts folowed of the same so fore and greivouse, both in the sight of God, and Judgment of the rest of *Christendom*, out of that Realme, that except those Colours were takyn away, and Treuthe purely sett forthe, wythe Declaration of the inconvenient Acts, yt myght soon torne to the utter Danger of his Graces bothe Honour afore God and Man, and utter Destruction, as yet semyth, of the Quyettnes of the Realme; this made me wyth all both Wytt and Lernyng that God had gyven me, to endeavour to expresse so the Trouthe, and declare the Qualytyes off those Acts that folowed of the finister Opinion, that I doubt not whosoever reade the Booke that wole knowe the Trouthe, shuld never after need to fall into Daungier, for Ignorance of the trew Sentence.

And this I did with this hope, haveing this ever fixid in my Harte that howsoever hys Grace was by perverse Occasion brought from those Opinions which was for his Honore, most to maynteyne, that he was brought therto as God suffereth those that be in his Favour, and whom he hath Electe to Eternall Felycytye, notwythstandyng to faull some Tyme into Offensys dampnable, to the Entent they myght better know where they have their trew Lyght and Savegarde which comythe of God, and nothyng off them self: as ytt is not unknowne that Scripture mentionethe both of *Davyd* and *Solomons* faulles, which bothe in Conclusion, were recoveryd by the Mercye of God againe, and *Solomon* notwithstanding the Gyft off Wysedome that God had gyven him, fell so fore that he was utterly tornyd from God, and gyven to Idolatrye. This I confydreng in those Elect Personys off God, and judgeng verely thoughe his Grace was by God permyttyd to faull from the trew Doctrine of Christ, yett as God saved *David* by those Meanes, to send a Prophete unto him to show hym the Trewth, which as soone as he had hard told hym, forthwyth fell to Repentance, and so was taken to the Grace off God again, and recoveryd to his greater Honour, then he was yn afore his Faull; the same trust I had in his Grace, whiche made me put my uttermost Studye and Labour, callyng for help of God, to manifest the Trueth, where I doubt not but God hath hard my Prayer, that for Knowledge of the trewe Sentence, there can be no doubt; and I cannot but greatly trust, that his Grace herynge and assenting, as King *David* did to the same after his Errour, shall be recoveryd by God to higher Honour and Grace, then ever he was afore God suffered him to faull.

In this Declaration of this Treuthe, because not only afore God were great Peryll, but also in this World present afore Man, many soore Daungers myght happen, in Case his Grace did remayne and continew yn his Sentence so dyvers from the rest of the Christen Princes; this causyd me, callyng to my Mynd what Daunger might follow bothe of his People at home, whose Mynds Experience showethe cannot be quiettyd wythe this Innovations touching Opinions in Relygion; and also of outward Power of those Prynces to



whose Honour yt ys judged to apperteyne to defend the Lawes of the Church, against all other Princes or Nations that doyth impugne them, for these Considerations to the Entent the Daunger hereoff now not unknown, I have in the same Booke, sometye in my own Person, brought all such Reasons wherebye justely either the People, or oughtward Prynce might be instigate against his Grace, foloweng the dyvers Trade from other Chrystian Princes that he hath begone. Which Reasons and Discourses conteynyed in the Booke vehemently sett forthe, yf they shuld be redd apart without Consyderacyon of my fynall Purpose, which by all Means entendyd to sett affore hys Graces yien, not only the Treuthe off that was to be folowed, butt the Daungers that were moste lykelye to ensue, both at home and abrode, yf they were not folowed, he shall think by what vehemencye and fore reprehension he seyth in the Wrytyng, that I am the greatyft Adversaraye of his Graces Honour that ever any hitherto hath bene: but God knoweth my Entent, and he that redyth the hoole Booke togyther shall knowe the same, how my very Purpose and Ende was to save him from great Dyshonour and Peryll both in this World and that to come, which were nothing possyble to examine, not knoweng what they were, and what were lykely to happen to be sayd or done against his Grace: which foloweng all probabylytie the Booke doth expresse, and for the better understanding of both my Opinion and Sentence that I follow in the Book, touching the Declaration of the Truthe, and of my utter fynall Purpose in the hole Matter, thys chifly I wole desyer his Grace, bycause of the Prolyxitie thereof, which shuld be to muche for his Grace to rede hymselfe, that that wole please hym to apoynt some lernyd and sald Man to rede over the Book, and that done to declare his Judgment, bound first wyth an Othe off hys Fydelytie, first to God, and afterwards to hys Grace to shew hys Judgment without Affection of any Part: and yf his Grace wold gyve this Charge to the Bishop of *Dyrrhum*, whome I judge to be the saldyst and most grounded in Lernyng, with Faythful Hart to his Grace, above any other that I knowe, puttyng the same Charge unto him by another; I think his Grace shuld thereby best and most truely be enformed; and so when he hath made his Relation, afterward his Grace may prove other Menes Judgments as it shall please him.

Furthermore to declare unto his Grace how my full Purpose and Mynd was, touching the hole Booke that never no Part thereof shuld a come abrode in any Manes Hands, afore his Grace had seen ytt: and to folow in this Booke the same maner off secretnes that I did in the other which I deliveryd to his Grace concerning his Matrymonye, but by what Meanes in one Part of this Book I have been frustrate of my Entent; this you may declare by Mouth, knowing the hole Mattier.

Fynally, With all Humbylnes to desyre his Grace, in the Name of his most faythfull Servant, and most tender of his Honoure and Welthe, that where as by the Judgement of all wise Men, God of hys Mercye and Love toward his Grace, and for a greate Warnyng to retourne to hym, hath detectyd the Iniquitie of her, which hath  
bene

bene the Oryginal Cause and Occasion of althys bothe Errours and Dangers his Grace hath cost hymself in, that now his Grace will correct himself to take the same, as yt ys a favorable Admonition of God, and to follow theyr Sentencyes and Counsell, which (next unto theyr Concyence toward God) hath had none other Cause, butt only pure Love and Fydelytie to his Honour and Welth: which causyd them, against their own private Welthe, wyth greate Daunger besyde, ever to dyssent from that Matrymonye; judgeng ever, as ytt was most lykely, both great Dishonour, great Daungiers and Perylls, both spiritually and outwardly, to followe there-off.

And now, yf God hath manifested the same to the Recovery of hys Grace *Welth*, allwayes that his Grace wyll accept thys Warnyng to retourn to the Unytie of his Church, in that Sentence and Mynd that the rest of Christiane Prynces do; wherein I dare be bolde to faye, yf God showe this great Benignitie and Mercy unto him, for to make him returne; for suerly God's Hand that must be: and whensoever that shall be herd, that shall be taken for one of the greatyft Myracles that hathe been showed this many Agys, with the most certyn Sygne of speciall Favour that ever was showed from God to any Prynce: Then furst of all this shall follow, that when as now all *Christendome* callyng for a Generall Councell, yf that follow, ether his Grace must wyth Dyshonour and Damage flee to obey thereunto, or wyth more Daunger answer there to such Causes as wold be layde unto him. Yf he do returne, thys furst shall followe, by that Meanys that shuld be founde, that no Prynce Chrysten, whosoever he were, shold appere there with more Honour then shuld his Grace. And wheras it was for the Innovation that he hath made in the Church, to be the Occasyon of Ruyn of one of the feyrest Membre of the Church, if God make him torne; the Conclusion wyll be brought to this, that hys Faull shall be the happyest Faull that was unto the Church many Yeres; which may be brought to be a redye and highe Way to the Reformation of the Hole, to the more Manifestation of the Honour of God: So that fynally, the Ende shall be in every Man's Opinion, that marketh the hole Proceffe, that God suffred his Grace to faulle, to make hym ryse wyth more Honour, to the greater Welth not only of his own Realme, but of the hole Church besyde.

Your Faithfull Servant,

*R. Pole.*



## Number 52.

*A Letter to Pole from the Bishop of Durham, in his own Hand.**An Original.*

Cotton Library  
Cleop. E. 6.  
P. 385.

**R**Yght Honorable, in my humble maner I recommend me unto your Masterſhip, advertiſing the ſame that I have receivd your Letter, datyd at *Venice* on *Corpus Chriſti* Evyn laſt; by which I do perceyve, that where of late you ſent a Boke with a Letter unto the Kyng's Highneſs, concernyng your Opinion of the King's Title, and the Power of the Biſhop of *Rome*; and your Deſire was in your Letter, as ye write, that I myght ſee the Boke, to enforme his Grace what I thought theroff. And now ye ſend to me your ſaid Letter, to inform me of your Meanyng and Purpoſe in your ſaid longe Boke, wherein I do perceyve, ye ſere left your Vehemency have offended. I do ſignifie unto you, that I have both well peruſed your ſaid Letter, to comprife well the Effect theroff in every Point; and alſo have peruſed, with odyr your ſaid longe Boke, unto the Ende theroff. Which made me hevy in my Harte, both whylſe I was in Redinge of it, and alſo mych more when I had redde it thorow, ſeing the Vehemency and Egerneſs of it in all Partes, dyd fore byte; and yet the hole Thing ran wyde off the Truthe. For in all your Boke, your Purpoſe is to bring the King's Grace, by Penance, home unto the Churche again, as a Man clerly ſeperate from the ſame alre dy. And his Receſſe from the Church, ye proſſe not otherwiſe, than by the Fame and comon Opinion of thoſe Parts; who be farr from the Knowlege of the Truth of our Affairs here, and do conjecture every Man as they lyſt, (blyndly) of Things unknown unto them. And in Cauſe of his Retorne, ye promiſſe to illuſtrate the King's Name, ſo to bend your Lernyng therunto, that all Diſpleaſure that may be takyn of your ſaid Boke, ſhuld be clerly therby abolyſed and takyn away; and all ſhould redund unto his Glory and Honour. And to comprife in few Wordes the Effecte that is worn off your ſaid Boke, that makes vehemently many Playes, and doth conteyn lyttle or no Salve to hole them. And as it ſemyth to me, ye wer ſtyrred to fore in your Spirite in all your Wrytings therof, and wer not quiet in your Mynde, whyle ye were in doynge of it. Wold to God ye had rather written to his Grace your Opinion, brevely comprifyd ſecretly in a Letter, that he ſhould not have nedyd to have ſhewed it to other Lernyd Men of his Counſell, than in ſo longe a Boke to have dilatyd all Thynges as ye have done, that he muſt of Neceſſitie be conſtraynd to commytte that to ſuch truſty Perſons, as ſhould pleaſe his Grace to know by them the  
Effecte

Effecte theroff. What Stupidity was it, to send so long a Boke so longe a way, conteynyng so displeaunt Mater, by one Man, who myght have myscaryed or peryshed in the way, and therby the Boke have comen (as was likely) to the Handes of such as wold have published it to the King's Slaunder, and the Realmes, and most of all to your owne, that shuld be the Author of such a Boke, made against your Prince and Countre: Wherin all the World shuld repute you to be unkynd unto your Prince and Countre, who evermore so had lovyd you, and brogt yow up in Lerynge, and ye to spend the same to his Reproche. So that surely, who soever not favouryng the King, shold have lykyd the Matter, yet must he nedys have myslyked the Author therof, usinge his Leryng against hym, in whose Defence he ought to have spent both Lyff and Leryng. But Laude be to God that the Boke came safte unto the King's Handys, wherby that Yeperdy ys past. One Thing made me cold at the Harte, when I red it in your Letter that ye writt of Two Quares; which be not in your Hands to repress. The Residue, ye say, ye can make sure not to come abroad; which, yf ye folow myn Advyse, ye shall do furthwith; burnyng them, for your owne Honour, and the Noble House that ye be come of: that it never came abroad, that ye excercysed your Style or Leryng against him, whom ye ough in all Points (by your Wit and Conning) to defende: And yf any Faults wer founde by odys, to excuse them by all means; and not to animate them by your Penne. And would to God lykewise, that ye wold endeavour your self (by all means to you possible) to gett again those Two Quarys, and lykwise to burn them. For, in all your Boke, ther is not one Queyre without Bytternesse, mych more then I wold it were. But to retourne to that Thing that I said before, that methought your hole Book ran wyde off the Truth. I shall, by your Patience, yf ye be contente to here me as your Frende, opyn unto you what I mean therby. Ye presuppose for a Ground, the King's Grace to be swarvyd from the Unite of Christ's Church, and that in takinge upon him the Tytle of Supreme Hede of the Church of *Englande*, he intendyth to seperate his Church of *Englande* from the Unitie of the whole Bodie of *Christendome*; takyng upon hym the Office belonging to Spirituall Men, grounded in the Scripture, of immediat Cure of Soule, and attribute to hymself that belongeth to Presthode, as to prech and teach the Word of God, and to mynyster the Sacraments. And that he doth not know what longeth to a Christen King's Office, and what unto Presthode; wherin surely both you and al odyr so thinkinge of him, do erre too farre. For there is no Prince in *Christendome*, that more regardith, or better knowith the Office and the Honor of a Christen Prince, nor that more doth esteem Spiritual Men that be gyffen to Leryng and Vertue, than he doth: And that ye may boldly (without Reproch) avouch to all Men affirming the contrary, whatsoever sinistrously conceived Opinion any Person shall have of hym, in those Partes, or any oder. For, his full Purpose and Intente is, to see the Laws of Almyghty God purly and sincerely prechyd and taught, and Christ's Fayth without Blot kepte and observed in his Realme; and not to seperate hymself, or



his Realme, any wyse from the Unitie of Christ's Catholyke Church, but inviolably, at all Tymes, to kepe and observe the same; and to reduce his Church of *Englande* out of all Captivitie of Foreyn Powers, hertofore usurped therin, into the Christen Estate, that all Churches of all Realmes wer in at the Begynnyng; and to abolyfhe, and clerly to put away such Usurpations, as hertofore in thys Realme the Bishops of *Rome* have, by many undue meanes, increfyd to their grete Advantage, and Impoverysheinge of thys Realm, and the Kyng's Subjects of the same. So that no Man therin can justly find any Fawte at the King's so doinge, seinge he reducyth all Thynges to that Estate, that is conformable to those auncient Decres of the Church, which the Bishop of *Rome* (at his Creation) solemnly doth profess to observe hymself, which be the Eygth Universal Counsells. Which yf ye do rede advysedly, and studiously do consyder how the Church of Christ was stablyshed by those, and how far of late Yers the Bysshops of *Rome* have broght this Realme and odyr from those; ye shall manifestly perceyve the Abuse and Diversitie betuyx the oon and the other. I am sure, at *Venice* ye may have the sayd Counsells in *Greke*, lyke as now they be comon abrode in *Latyn*, translatyd even from the Begynning. Which if they had been comenly knowen and redde hertofore, the Bishop of *Rome's* Power hertofore usurpyd in many Realmes, had never so farre been avancyd, as of late it hathe. Wold to God ye had ben exercised in Readinge of them, before the Sendinge of your saide Boke, that ye might have knowen from the Begynning, from Age to Age, the Continuance and Progresse of the Catholyke Church. By which ye shuld have perceived, that the Church of *Rome* had never of olde such a Monarchie, as of late it hathe usurped. And if ye will say, that those Places of the Gospell, that ye do allege in your Boke, do prove it, then must ye graunt also, that the Counsell of *Nice* and others did erre, which ordeined the contrary. And the Apostels also, in their Canons, did ordeine, That al Ordring of Prests, Consecratynge of Bishops, and all Matirs Spirituall, shuld be fynished within the Diocesse, or at uttermost within the Province wher the Parties dwelte. Which Canons of the Apostels, *Damasen* doth commemorate for Holy Scriptures. Now it is not lyke, that the Apostels, who were Prechers of the Gospell, wold make Canons contrary to the Gospell; nor that the Four First Cheffe Counsells General wold have ordenyd so as they did, if the Gospell, or the Scripture, had bene to the contrary. And wher ye in your Boke much do stikke to common Custome of the Church, fuerly after Christe, above a Thousand Yere, the Custome was to the contrary, that now is used by the Bishop of *Rome*. At that Tyme, in the Primitive Church of Christe, when the Blood of Christe and Martyers was yet freshe, the Scriptures wer best understande, Faith most firme, and Vertue most pregnant; the Customes then used in the Church, must nedes be better than any contrary Use sens, eyther by Ambition or Covetousnes, any waies copen in. And to assure you of my Mind what I do thinke; fuerly who soever shall go about, by the Primatie of *Peter*, which was in Preching the Word of God, to establyshe the worldly Autorite of the Bishop of *Rome*, which

which he now claymeth in dyverse Realms, in worldly thyngs foe perfecte temporall, shall no more couple them to gedyr then lygth and darknes; but shal improve the thinge that he goeth about to prove. Iff ye wold rede *Nicolas Cusa de concordia Catholica* in his Second Boke thorowly, he shold gretly open this Matter unto you. Wherefore sens the King's Grace goeth about to reforme his Realme, and reduce the Church of *England* unto that State that both thys Realme and all other wer in at the begynnyng of the Faith, and many hundredth yere aftyr; yff any Prince or Realme wyl not folow hym, lat them do as they lyfte; he dothe no thinge but stablyshyth such Laws as wer in the begynnyng, and such as the Bishop of *Rome* professeth to observe. Wherefore nidyrr the Bishop off *Rome* hymself, nor odyrr Prince, ought off Reason to be miscontent her with. Yff I wer with you but oon day, I wold trust to shew you such grounds in thys Matter, that ye myght chaunge your mynde, oonlesse ye wer totally addite to the contrary opynion, as I pray God ye be not, both for your own, and for your friends sake, who shuld take grete discomforth theroff. Oon thinge yet restith that I thought convenient to advertise you off wherin I do perceyve ye be ignorant. Which is thys. Ye write in one parte off your Boke, that ye think the Herts off the Subjects off thys Realme greatly offendyd with Abolyshinge off the Byshop of *Rome's* usurped Autorite in this Realme, as yff all the People or mooste part off them toke the Matter as ye do. Wherin I do assure you ye be deceivyd. For the People perceyve ryght wel what profite cometh to the Realme therby; and that al such Money as before issuy'd that way, now is kept within the Realme; wheras before al that went that way, which was no small share, but grete and excessive, and dayly the sayd Yssue encrefyd more and more, never retornyd again hedyr any part theroff. Which was to the great impoverysheinge off thys Realme. So that yff at thys day the King's Grace wold go about to renew in his Realme the sayd abolysh'd Autorite off the Byshop of *Rome*, grantyng hym lyke Profites as he had before thorow thys his Realme, I thinke he shold fynd mych more diffyculte to brynge it aboute in his Parliament, and to induce his People to agree therunto, then any thinge that ever he purposed in his Parlement sens his first Regne. Wherefore I wyshed that, as many odyrr things more to have ben out of the your Boke. Which myght peradventure have engendry'd sum parte off suspicion in the King's Graces mynd toward his Subjects, as I trust verayly that dyd not. And wher ye do fynde a faute with me, that I faynted in my hearte, and wold not dye for the Bishop of *Rome's* autorite; when thys matter was first proposyd unto me, surly it was no faynting that made me agreeable therunto; for I never saw the Day sens I know the progresse and contynuance off Christ's Church from the beginning, and redde such Historyes Ecclesiasticall and Ordinaunces from Age to Age as do manyfestly declare the same, that ever I thought to shede oon droppe off my bloode therefore: for sure I am noon off them that hertofore have had advantage by that autorite, wold have lost oone peny theroff to have savyd my lyffe, nor wyll not do to save yours, yff ye shold be in such necessite. Which God for his Mercy forbydde, and kepe you from trust off such socoure.

Finally,



Finally, accordinge to your desire sens your Boke ys Comon unto the King's Hands, and he perceivyth the Effecte off it, I shall help as mych as may lye in my lityl power, that your plain facyon off writinge, as off a sharpe ghostly fadyr, may be takyn in best parte according to your Letter and Desire in that behalf; but at the Reverence off Almyghty God hynder not your selfe in addicthyng you to the Opinion off your Boke, towching the Bishop of *Rome's* Autorite; thinking, that as ye se it now in *Italy* and diverse Countreys, so it was from the beginning, and ought to be by God's Law. For the forsaide Counsayls do shew plainly ther is in the Church of Christ no such Monarchie ordaynyd by Christe. And the preemmenence of sitting, that was gyffen to the Bishop of *Rome* in the forsaide Counsels general, which were called al by the Emperors off that tyme, was gyffen to hym by cause he was Bishop of *Rome*, the cheffe Cite off the Empire, and not for *Peter* and *Paule's* sake, which wer Apostyles, and bernyd in *Rome*, nor for the Gospell-sake; and the secund place was gyffen to the Patriarch off *Constantinople*, by cause that Cite was called *Nova Roma*, and so was preferryd both before *Antiochia*, wher Sainte *Petyr* was first Bishop, and wher the Name of *Cristendom* first began; and also before *Alexandria*, wher Sainte *Marke*, the Disciple off *Petyr* did preche. And also before *Hierusalem*, wher Crist himselfe preched, and the hole Colledge off the Apostles afftyr him; And *Jacobus frater Domini* was first Bishop, which was in the beginning untill it was distroyed, callyd *Mater cunctarum Ecclesiarum*, which Three ware Sees Apostolyke. Befor al which three Sees, and also before *Ephesus*, wher Sainte *John* Evangelest did write his Gospell, and ther dyed, *Constantinople* was preferryd, because it was the second grete Congregation off Cristen Men in the Empire, and was callyd *Nova Roma*. Wherunto those holy Counsels wold never have consentyd, and namely *Calcedonense*, wherin wer vj C. and xxx Bishops of the best lernyd off al *Cristendome*. yff they had seen the Gospell to the contrary. Moreover, yff ye rede, as I am sure ye have, *Basilium*, *Nazianzenum*, *Chrißostomum*, *Damassenum*, ye shal fynd in them no such Monarche off the Bishope of *Rome*, as he clamyth spoken off nor never mentioned. Al which I touch to put you in remembrance off, to the intent that ye serchinge further in this matter, may perceive the old Fadyrs and Counsels, not to have knowen any such thinge as now off late is pretentyd and usurped.

Wherefore I beseech you, not trustinge your own self to mych herin, to have recourse to those Autors that may informe you off the begynning off the Church. Consydering therewithall of what Blood ye be, and off what Contre. The King's Hyghnes hath in his Realme Men as wel lernyd in Divinite as be in odyr Countreys, and they have foughth in this Mater, evyn to the bothome; which think themselves wel delyvered from the Bondage off *Rome*. And yff you shuld now be against your Contre to kepe them still in Captivite, what they wyll thynke off you, I reporte me unto you. What also the King's Grace, who hath brogth you up, and hath bene good and gracyous unto you, shal thynke, but that ye be unkynd, to be against him and hys Realme, who hath been always for you and yours. What discomfort shold it be to my Lady your Modyr, in hir Age to see you swarve

swarve from your Prince and Contre in Opinion. What Discomford shold it be to my Lord your Brother, to see you off whom he shold have comfort, use your Learning to his Discomford? What Discomford shold it be to all your other Frendys to see you off obstinate Opinion against al your Contrey, you may by your Wisdome consider. Whom all ye may comfort and chiefly your self, in conformyng you to the Truthe grounded upon the Stablisment off the holly Church of *Christendome* sens the Begynnyng. And beyng the Supporting of this Monarchie inventyd off late Days by Ambition, wheroff the old Fadysr never hard tell. St. *Gregorie* wryteth fore against the Bishop off *Constantinople* off his time who went about a lyke Monarchie, affirmyng noone such to be in the Church of Christ. Saint *Cyprian* wryteth, *qui omnes Apostoli erant Paris honoris & potestatis: Consilium Ephesinum* affirmyth the same, which cannot agree with thys late found Monarchie. At the reverence of God truste not your self to much herein, but suffer your self to be perswaded to seke fordyr then ye yet have doon. I dobt not but God willing ye shall fynd the Truth in searchofge fordyr, yff ye persuade not your selfe that ye have found it already. I besече you, have in your remembrance, that I wrote before to burn the Originally off your to sharp Bokes, and I shall move the King's Hyghness that your Boke sent to hym may be kept secret. And in conformyng your self to the Opinion off your Contre and off the Truth, I doubt not but ye shall be acceptyd of the King's Highness as well as ever ye wer, and mych bettyr bycause ye shew in your Boke the intier Hert that ye bere hym, as his Grace by his Wisdome can mych better consider than I can write unto you. And that ye may so do I pray the Holy Ghost to illuminat you. And if ther be pleasure that I may do for you or yours, ye shall be assured to fynd me redy evermore therunto: as knoweth Almighty God who have you in his Blessed Tuition.

From *London* the xiiij Day  
of *July*, 1536.

---

Number 53.

*An Original Letter of Poles to Cromwell justifying himself.*

May the 2d. 1537.

**M**Y Lorde, yff afore tyme itt could nott be fuerlye and clere-lye perceived what Affectyon I have ever borne to the Kyng's Honour and Wealthe, which in my hole Lyfe never gave the least Occasyon, whye any Man shoulde think, but wyth them that tendery'd the same moste, I myght chieflye be nombery'd: yf my Deeds

*Cotton Library*  
*Cleop. E. 6.*  
*P. 355.*



were trulye and indyfferentlye examined: but howe soever ytt be, yff any Dede afore perverslye interpretate myght ryse any Scrupell to surmise the contrary, surely these Letters that I wryght now, as the Time and Case requirith, bearyng that Tenour as in Readyng you shall knowe, be sufficyent not onely to abolysh all former Doubts, shewing those to be perversly surmysed, but to make clere, that a more constant and stable Mynde in observance off a Prince, hath not bene founde nother yn Subject nor other Personnes besyde. And the Cause hereoff ys, that there never happened lyke Occasyon as thys ys, that causyth me nowe to wryght, wherebye my Mynd myght be so well knowen, while Occasion ys gyven off the Kyng's Part under this Maner, that he procureing against me, by such Meanes to my Undoyng, as was never hard off the lyke in Chrystendome against anye, that bare that Personne that I do att this tyme. Yff my Minde, after all this remain stable, to procure all Things that may be to his Honour and Wealthe, as ever I have professy'd afore-tyme, what can be more fuerer Tokyn off a depe and a profound grounded Love and Affection: Whither I do so I shall afterward shewe you. If I declare first to Hym that knoweth it beste, the Kyng's Act ageynst me, to the Entent you maye knowe, yff I after that remayne yn my Old Estate off Observance, ytt is not for Ignorance that I knowe not what is machinate ageinst me. And fuerly, thoughe I knewe afore bothe by your Letters and other in what Displeasure the King had me, without the least Cause shewed off my part; I take God and my Conscience to judge, which thyng, iff I had borne but a meane Affectiyon myght a been sufficyent to alyenate also my Mynde from thence, where I sawe what soever I dyd for the best, to be ever accepted in the worst Parte. But this I wyll not have yowe take for any Proffe off my Mynde, but to procede off the Kyng's Dyspleasure toward me; the lesse I knowe the Cause to be, the further I was from all Imagynacyon to suspect that hys Grace should be so incensy'd against my Personne; that for to have me in his Hands, he wold be content to breke and vyolate both Godd's Law and Mann's, to dystourbe all Commercement betwene Contrye and Contrye, between Man and Man, and thys I wold never a thought: but fyndyng the same to be so in Dede, I could not but fynde wythall, howe hys Grace was bent with all to my utter undoyng; agaynst the which yff I remayne in my old Purpose to procure hys Wealthe and Honour, he that wyll seke other Proffs after thys, or wyll not be content with thys Declaracyon off a Mann's Mynde, he declareth with all that wythe no Proffe he wyll be content, but wyll have him one off hys Enemies whither he wyll or no. And off this Mynde off the Kynge toward me I had furst knowledge at myne arryvenge in *France*, off the whiche to shewe youe the first Motion of my Mind herein, I was more ashamyd to hear for the Compassion I had to the King's Honour, then movyd by any Indygnacyon, that I comyng not only as Imbassadour, but as Legate, yn the hyghest Sort of Embassage that ys used amongst the Chrysten Princes, a Prynce off Honour shold desyer off another Prince off like Honour, betraye thyne Embassadour, betray the Legate, and give him into my Embassadour's Hands to be brought unto me.

me. This was the dishonourable Request, as I understand of the King; which (as I said afore) to me fuerly, regarding my own Part, I promes'd you was no great Displeasure, but rather (if I shall say Truth) I toke Pleasure herein; and said furthwith to my Company, that I never felt my self in full Possession to be a Cardinall, as when I herd those Tydings; wherby it pleased God to send lyke fortune to me, as it did to those Hedds of the Church, whose Persones the Cardynalls do represent, which was to be persecutyd moſte of them, whose Wealth they labouryd for moſt busily. In this Case, lyved the Apostells: And the same nowe beyng happenyd to me, afore God I promise I felt no Displeasure, but rather was glad thereof, specially confedyryng herebye I hadd the better Occasyon to declare and iuſtifie my Minde more then ever I had afore, which was ever my Minde: but touchyng the thyng, iff we had no other Religion, but lyved as Paganes and Infidells, yet *Jus Gentium* should ever teach us what Demandé this was, the Lawe of Nature alone myght declare how abhomyneable ytt were to grante to such a Request, and no les to desyer ytt. This I rehearse now to this Intent, that you might the sooner perceve, that if there had been but one Sparke of a Mynde alienate from the Kyng, thys were able to set the same in such a Fyer, that furſt conſideringe how all Regarde off Honour was sett aparte, and the Law that maintaineth the Commercement between Man purpoſyd to be violate, so ytt myght torne to my undoing. Furſt of all of my part, I shuld abstaine from all Commercement with that Part, other by Word Writing, or Dede; Secondorylye, procure by all honest Wayes, if I wolde not by dishonest, to repaye this Malignytie, to the uttermoſte Damage I could devyſe toward them, of whose malygne Minde toward me I had ſo greate Experyence: And yett after all this, furſt of all, youe may ſee forthwythe by wrytyng att this tyme, I doe nott abſtayne from the furſte Acte to practyſe and entreate, wyth them that hath bene Authors herof, and to practyſe yett to hys Honour and Wealthe, which wold utterlie extinguiſhe both in me. And if I be herd herin, to put the same also in Execution; which Thing thoughe I do fuerlie of my owne Purpoſe and Mynd, yet ſome Occaſion hereof, howe it cometh otherwise I will not denye, nor kepe cloſe, which is this; That whereas the Biſhope of *Verona*, that was ſent of me to the *Frenche* Court, to intimate thoſe Affaires, that for the Wealthe of *Chryſtendome*, the Pope had committed unto me, to entreate with his Maſteſtie, in his Retourne paſſyng by *Abbeville*, where were lodged my Lorde of *Wyncheſter*, and Mr. *Bryan*; whereas he could not but gretlie marvayle of this Acte of the Kyng toward me, my hole Legation purpoſing no other but his Honour and Weltche: And deſiereng therefore to conferre the same with the Embaſſadours, for better Declaration of the Truthe of the Mattiers, to be known as they were: My Lord of *Wyncheſter*, and Mr. *Bryan*, both abſtaynenge for Reſpect from all Communycation, yet ſending unto him theyre Secretarye, after the Biſhope had in parte declared the Effect of my Legacie, that touched then any Part the Kyng, yet ſemed to be open  
to



to bothe Parties, that all the King had done agaynst me, was of the finistre and false Reports of other, that by false Conjecture of Things they knewe not, had ill enfourmed the King of my Purpose in comyng into these Partes, which the Secretarys thought onys clered and declaryd, other by Letters or Messingers, the Kyng wold turne his Mynde, as his Grace sawe the Deds to justyfie themselves. This the Bishope of *Verona* (at his Retourne) showed me; which I accepted in that Parte to be trewe also, that all came of evill Enformacion. And that his Grace being ascertayned of my Mynd, as it is and ever hath bene, it were not unpossyble then some Part to knowledge rather my Gratitude, than to machynate anye Thing contrary. And that it might be so knowen, for all Parts yet cannot be but well; but as I shewed the Bishope, by Letters I had attempted often the same, but all could not prevail: My Messengers I had sent often for that Purpose, could never be admitted to have Audience of the Kyng. And without one of these Wayes were founde, there could no Conclusion be had in theyse Mattyers, wherein reasonyng with him, I asked, if for the Love and Service that ever he hath born to the Kinge, and showed indede when he was in that Place where his Service might be in steade to the Kyng, and Love also he hath ever to me, having assured Knowledge of all my Affayres and Purposes, not only these laste, but all synyth my departing from the Realme, whether he could be content) the King's Pleasure first knowen) to acquiet the King's Mynde in this Behalfe, by going to his Grace, and enforming him of the hole; wherein, afore God, he shuld do a Dede most charitable. Wherin also I did allege unto him, for to bind him withall; bycause after such Demonstracyon of the Kyng's Mynde made unto me, few Men wold be content to practyse wyth his Grace, in any thing belonging unto me. For this Cause, I did rehearse the more Thyngs to enduce him hereunto; and amongst other, this chieflie, the Purpose of his comyng with me, which (afore God) was this: That the Pope, entending by all meanes of Benignitie to practise with the King, haveng the *French* Kyng so joined in Amytie with the Kyng, and with his Sanctitie also; devyseng for a mete Instrument betwene bothe. Yf any Personne, for this Degree newlye taken, were not accepted, the Bishop of *Verona* was thought moste meetest, being for his old Deferts to both Princes, as long as he was in that Place where he might do them serviceable Pleasure, as it was to be thought grateful to them both, and counted (for his Goodness) the best Bishop of *Italye*. So that all Thynges consydered, in Mattiers of the Church to entreate with these Princes, none was thought like: Wherupon the Pope bounde him to take thys Journaye with me, for this Purpose. And this Bond, amongst other I rehearsed unto him, when I moved him to go unto the Kinge. To the which, he made Answer; Yf there were none other Bond nor Respect in this Mattier but of God, knowing my Mattiers as he doth, and seing what Inconvenients might followe, if they were not at laste well accepted, besyde the Servyce he hath ever owed to the Kinge, and Love toward me, knowing what Comfort that might be to all Partys, if my trewe and faythfull Dealings were well intimate

to

to the King, he wold be content at all tymes the waye onys founde afore, howe with Commoditye he might come to the King's Presence, to take this Charge upon hym. Thys, my Lorde, you may nowe perceiue, that if I had any Part that mynde, that the Kyng's procurenge against me doth shewe to be perswaded I have, yt could not be possible I could have any Confidence to attempt any medlyng wythe his Grace under suche maner: But because nor my Confydence, nor affecyonate Mynde, yt is not taken awaye, therefore this I do declare unto you by these Letters, to the Intente you maye intimate the same to hys Grace. And now you see by a great Proffie what my Mynde is, you may also see how all Suspytion may not alonlye be clearyd, many Things apeacyd that peradventure might torne to greater Trouble, but also many Things be brought to Light, to the Kyng's more assuryd Honour and Wealthe, than any thing is I thinke thought of hitherto make for the same. For all this I dare promisse to follow, if the Bishop be herd with that Mynde, as he is sent, and content for to go. Other Declaration of my Mynde by Letters I entende not to make, than my Letters agreyng with my Acts sent afore do make Testimonye; and that the Bishoppe, which is preuye to all, may better declare presentlye. But this I will saye, if I bare in any parte that Mynde, the Kyng's Acte agaynst me doth show, his Grace is perswaded I shold have, suerlye I wold never adone as I have done, in all my Acts and Proceses by Letters, made the Kyng and you preuye unto them. This I dyd at my furst comyng to *Rome*, and the Cause of my Legacy nowe, and the Cause of my comyng to these Parts. Such Advises Rebels be not wont to give unto those, from whome they rebel, but specially at *Rome*, being there when the Tyme was troubleous for the Kyng in his Realme; lettyng them the sending furthe of the Censures, which myght a caused more Trouble; and sending at that Tyme my Servant purposelye, to offer my Service, to procure by all meanes his Honour, Welth, Quietnes; animating besyde, those that were Cheffe of my neresst Kynne, to be constaunt in his Serwyce. Thys Rebels be not wont to do. And I know, at *Rome*, if any Man had been premyate to do hym Serwyce, none could have done more; infomuch that Men judged me Half a Rebelle to God and my Contrye, because I wold not assent to divers Thyngs, that had made little to the Kyng's Quietnes: But specially, having in my Hand those Wrytings, that put forthe peradventure, might a caused most Trouble of all. These instauntly being desired of those, which had in a manner Authoritye to commande, and yet ever finding meanes that they never came into their Sight nor Hands, and to this Hower suppressing the same lykewise. If one that had Mynd of Rebellion wold do the same, be thinke you well: But, as I say, my Purpose is not to justifie my Mynde, by these Letters, at this Time, in more Acts than one, which is of this present Time. Nor if it be not justified of such a one as the Bishops, that knoweth them assuredly, I do nother entend hereafter to labour any more herein: Afore God, and all Men, that will be indifferent Judges of the Truthe, I will not doubt, at all times to justifie my self to-



ward the King, I wold to God I could so well justifie my self afore God and the Catholick Church, for negligent Service in this Behalf, because I would not offend the Kinge. Now I will say no more, but pray unto Almighty God, to put that in the Kyng's Mynde that may be most to his Honour and Wealthe, with Grace to follow the same; and to take from all other such Occasyon, why they shuld thynk, if they serve the Kyng according to their Conscience, they shulde be constrayned to offend the Kyng, and so herebye to separate the one from the other; which fuerlye to no Man shuld be more Greffe than to me. But Goddes Pleasure be fulfilled above all, to whome nowe I commit you. Written at *Cambray*, the Second Day of *Maye*.

*Your Lowyng Friend*

*R. Card. Legat.*

---

Number 54.

*A Letter of the Abbess of Godstow, complaining of  
Dr. London.*

Cotton Library  
Cleop. E. 4.  
P. 228.

**P**leasith hit your Honor, with my moste humble Dowtye, to be advertised, that where it hath pleasyd your Lordship to be the verie Meane to the King's Majestie, for my Preferment, most unworthie to be Abbes of this the King's Monasterie of *Godystowe*; in the which Offyce, I truste I have done the best in my Power to the Mayntenance of God's trewe Honour, with all Treuth and Obedience to the King's Majestie; and was never moved nor desired by any Creature in the King's Behalfe, or in your Lordship's Name, to surrender and give upe the House; nor was never mynded nor intended so to do, otherwise than at the King's Gracious Commandement, or yours. To the which I do, and have ever done, and will submit my self most humblie and obedientlie. And I truste to God, that I have never offendyd God's Laws, neither the King's, wherebie that this poore Monasterie ought to be suppressed. And this notwithstanding, my good Lorde, so it is, that Doctor *London*, whiche (as your Lordship doth well know) was agaynst my Promotion, and hathe ever fence borne me great Malys and Grudge, like my mortall Enemye, is sodenlie cummyd unto me, with a great Rowte with him; and here dothe threaten me and my Sisters, sayeng that he hath the King's Commission to suppress the House, spyte of my Tethe.

Tethe. And when he sawe that I was contente that he shulde do all Things according to his Commission ; and shewyd him playne, that I wolde never surrender to his Hande, being my Awncyent Enemye ; now he begins to intreat me, and to invegle my Sisters, one by one, otherwise than ever I harde tell that any of the Kyng's Subjects hathe been handelyd : And here tarieth and contynueth, to my great Coste and Charges ; and will not take my Answer, that I will not surrender, till I know the King's Gracious Commandement, or your good Lordeship's. Therefore I do moste humblie beseeche you, to contynewe my good Lorde, as you ever have bene ; and to directe your Honorable Letters to remove him hens. And whensoever the Kyng's Gracious Commandement, or yours, shall come unto me, You shall find me most reddie and obedyant to folloe the same. And notwithstanding that Doctor *London*, like an untrew Man, hath informed your Lordship, that I am a Spoiler and a Waster, your good Lordship shall knowe that the contrary is trewe. For I have not alienatyd one halporth of goods of his Monasterie, movable, or unmovable, but have rather increasyd the same. Nor never made Lease of any Farme, or Peece of Grownde belonging to this House ; or then hath bene in Tymes paste allwaies set under Covent Seal for the Wealthe of the House. And therefore my verie Truste is, that I shall fynd the Kynge as Gracious Lorde unto me, as he is to all other his Subjects, Seyng I have not offendyd. And am and will be moste Obedyent to his most Gracious Commandment at all Tymes. With the Grace of Almighty Jesus, who ever preserve you in Honour longe to indure to his Pleasure. Amen. Godifsten the vth Daie of *November*.

*Your moste bownden Beds Woman,*

*Katharine Bulkeley, Abbes there.*

### Number 55.

*A Letter to Bullinger from one of Maidstone, giving an Account of an Image, which seems to be the Rood of Boxley in Kent.*

*Johannes Hokerus Maydstanenfes.*

**R**UIT hic passim Azzotinus Dagon, Bel ille Babylonicus jam dudum confractus est. Repertus est nuper Cantianorum Deus ligneus, penfils Christus, qui cum ipso Protheo concertare potuisset. Nam & capite nutare, innuere oculis, barbam convertere, in curvare corpus,

*At Zurich.*



corpus, adeuntium adversari & recipere preces scitissimè noverat. Hic cum Monachi sua causa caderent, repertus est in eorum Templo, plurimo cinctus anathemate, linteis, cereis agricis . . . . . exterisque diatus muneribus. Subodoratus est fucum cordatus Vir, Nicolai Patrigii nostri frater, affixum contra parietem è vestigio solvit, apparent artes, apparent imposturæ, mirus ac Polypeus præstigiator deprehenditur. Erant foraminoso corpori oculatæ passim fistulæ, in quibus ductile per rimulas, ferrum à mystagogo trahebatur, laminis nihilominus artificiose celantibus. Hinc factum est ut populum Cantianum, imò Angliam totam jam seculis aliquot magno cum quæstu dementarit. Patefactus Meydistanuensibus meis spectaculum primitus dedit, ex summo se culmine confertissimo se ostentans populo, aliis ex animo, aliis Ajacem risu simulantibus. Delatus hinc circulator Londinum est. Invisit Aulam Regis, Regem ipsum, novus hospes: nemo salutat verè. Conglomerant ipsum risu aulico, Barones, Duces, Marchiones, Comites. Adfunt è longinquo, circumstand', intuend' & vidend' penitus. Agit ille, minatur oculis, adversatur ore, distorquet nares, mituit deorsum caput, incurvat dorsum, annuit & renuit. Vident, rident, mirantur, strepit vocibus theatrum, volitat super æthera clamor. Rex ipse incertum gavissus ne magis sit ob patefactum imposturam, an magis doluerit ex animo tot seculis miseræ plebi fuisse impositum. Quid multis opus? Res delata est ad Conciliarios. Hinc post dies aliquot habita est Londini concio, prædicabat è sacra Cathedra Episcopus Rossensis, stat ex adverso Danieli Bel Cantianus, summo erectus pulpito. Hic denuò sese aperit, hic denuò coram faburam scitè agit. Mirantur, indignantur, stupent. Pudet ab idolo tam turpiter fuisse delusos. Cumque jam incalesceret Concionator, & Verbum Dei occultè operaretur in cordibus auditorum, præcipitio devolvunt istum lignum truncum in confertissimos auditores. Hic varius auditur diversorum clamor, rapitur, laceratur, frustillatim comminuitur, scinditurque in mille confRACTUS partes, tandem in IGNEM mittitur. Et hic tulit exitum illum.

---

Number 56.

*A Consolatory Letter to Henry VIIIth, from the Bishop of Durham, after the Death of Queen Jane.*

Cotton Library  
Titus B. 1.  
P. 121.

**P**lese your Highnes to understande that wher now of late it hath pleasyd Almighty God to take unto his Mercy out of this present Lyffe, the most Blessed and Vertuouse Lady, your Graces most Dearest Wyffe the Queens Grace, whose Soule God pardone, and newes thereof Sorrowfull to all Men, came into these Partes, surely it cannot well be expresse, how all Men of all Degrees dyd greatly lament and mourne the Death of that Noble Lady and Princeesse,  
taken

taken out of this World by bringing forth of that Noble Fruit that is spronge of your Majesty, and her, to the great Joy and inestimable Comforte of all your Subjects, consideringe withall that this Noble Fruit, my Lord Prince, in his tender Age interying into this World, is by her Death lefft a Dear Orphant, commencinge thereby thys miserable and mortall Lyffe, not only by Weeping and Waylinge, as the Mysery of Menkynde requireth, but also reſte in the Begynnyng of his Lyffe from the Comforte of his moſt dear Mother. And albeyt to hym by tenderneſſe of his Age, it is not known what he hath loſt, yet we that do know and feel it, have much more Cauſe to morne, ſeing ſuch a Vertuoſe Princeſſe who hath ſhewed ſo great Hopes of much Frute to come of her Body, is ſo ſudenly taken from us. But thys notwithstandinge your Majesty whom thys chauncly moſt towcheth, muſt by your High Wiſdome conſyder the Miſery of the Mortal Lyffe of Mankynde, which no Man born in this World, Prince nor Poore Man, can exchue; ſeing it is the Sentence of Almighty God, ſayinge in the begynning aſwel to the Woman, *In dolore paries Filios tuos*; as to the Man, and by him to all his Poſterite, *Pulvis es & in pulverem reverteris*. In which Mortal Lyffe who ſoever is moſt vexyd and troubled, yf he take it patiently ys more accepte to God, and called in the Scripture therby bleſſed; as it is written in the Book of Job, *Beatus Homo qui corripitur à Deo; in crepationem ergo Domini ne reprobes, quia ipſe Vulnerat & medetur, percutit & manus ejus ſanabit*. And it is written in the Epiſtle of James lykewiſe, *Beatus vir qui ſuffert tentationem, quum autem ille probatus fuerit, accipiet Coronam Vitæ*. And as Saint Paul ſaies to the Hebrews, It is a ſure tokyn that God favoureth them as his Children, to whom he ſendeth Adverſite, ſayinge, *Quem enim diligit Dominus, caſtigat; flagellat autem omnem Filium quem recipit. In disciplina perſeverate, tanquam Filiis vobis ſe offert Deus: Quis enim Filius quem non corripit Pater; quod ſi extra disciplinam eſtis, cujus participes facti ſunt omnes, ergo adulterini & non Filii eſtis*. And albeyt the Disciplin of Adverſite be full of Hevineſſe for the Tyme, yet it endeth alwayes in Joy; as there ſolloeth, *Omnis autem disciplina in preſenti quidem non videtur eſſe gaudii ſed meroris, poſtea autem fructum paratiſſimum exercitatis per eadem reddet juſtitia*. And like as al Men more do Favour thoſe their Servants, that in a longe Voiage do ſuſtein more Adverſite, ſo Almighty God in thys Lyffe (which all is but a Voiage, for as Sainte Paule ſaieth, *Non habemus hic manentem civitatem ſed futuram inquirimus*;) moſt accepteth thoſe his Servants, that ſo ſuſtein moſt Adverſite patiently. And Saint Paule, conſyderinge the Inſtabilite of this World, exhorteth all Men to uſe al Things therin as Transitory, and not permanent both in Proſperity and in Adverſite; for neither of both doth tary, but brively overpaſeth; ſainge, *Tempus breve eſt; reliquum eſt, ut qui habent Uxores tanquam non habentes ſint, & qui ſlent tanquam non ſlentes, & qui gaudent tanquam non gaudentes, & qui emunt tanquam non poſſidentes, & qui utuntur hoc mundo, tanquam non utantur preterit enim figura mundi hujus*. Then ſence Proſperite is Fugitive, and taryeth not, let us not truſt to yt, and ſince Adverſite ſoon overpaſſeth and abideth not, let us not eſteem it, for after it ſuſtenyd



patiently sure we be that Joy shall succeed. Conſyder yf it like your Maieſtie how oft Tymes ſence your moſt Noble Regne began, God hath ſent you diuerſe and many Tymes great flowings of Proſperite, and therfor yf God ſum Tymes do ſende a droppe of Adverſite, ſuſtein it by your High Wiſdome, with patient Suffering, as I truſt affuredly, and doubt not but your Highnes wyl; affured you may be that God for your ſo doinge ſhal hyghly requite that far beyond your Highnes Expectations. Grete Cities, Towns, and Regions, al People in them, and Princes of the ſame, oft do ſuſtein Adverſite bycauſe the hole World is alway ſubject to mutabilite, and lyke as after Lygth ſucceedeth Darknes, and after Somer cometh Winter, ſo Darknes taryeth not, but Light doth folow, and Winter giffeth Place to the Somer again; ſo that I doubt not but God willing this Storme of ſorowful Seafon, ſhal by your Maieſties Wyſdome after a Tyme overpaſs, and the Somer of joyful Gladnes ſhal ſucceed, not only to your Grace Comforte, but to the Comforte of all your Subjects, much Mornyng at this Tyme in their Harts with your Highnes. And when Almighty God hath taken from your Grace, to your greate Diſcomforte a moſt Bleſſed and Vertuouſe Lady, conſyder what he hath given your Highnes again to your Comforte, and to the rejoyce of all us your Subjects, our moſt Noble Prince, to whom God hath ordeined your Maieſtie not only to be Father, but alſo as the Tyme now requireth, to ſupply the roome of a Mother alſo. So that therby he ſhal hereafter have double Cauſe to Honour your Highnes. As it is not to be doubted, but God grantyng him Lyfe hereafter he wyl do. In whom in the mean Tyme, Almighty God of Infinite Mercy grant, that your Grace putting away all ſorowful Penſivenefſe, may to the Comfort of your Noble Harte, long rejoyce, which ſhal be alſo to the High Comfort of al the Subjects of your Graces Realme. And ſenſe Mornyng can in no wiſe amend the Matter, and thanks given to God may ſooner over-blow this Storm. Beſt ſhall be to conclude with *Job, Dominus dedit, dominus abſtulit, ſicut Domino placuit ita factum eſt. Sit nomine Domini Benedictum.* God gave your Grace that Noble Lady, and God hath takyn her away as it pleaſed hym. So it is done, Laude by gyven to hym: and for to conſyder alſo, how *Job* exhorteth by his Example, al Men being in like Caſe, to Patience, ſainge, *Si bona ſuſcepimus de manu Domini, mala autem quare non ſuſtineamus:* Which your Highnes for your great Wiſdome and Learninge can much better conſider, then I can advertiſe the ſame, unleſſe ſorrowfulnes for the Tyme put it out of remembrance. Almyghty God of his Infinite Mercy grant your Grace Spiritual Comfort, and putting away al Worldly Hevyneſſe, ever to rejoyce in him, who have your Maieſtie alway in his Bleſſed Protection to your Harts Deſire, with encrease of much Honore. From your Citie of *Yorke* the xiii Day of *November*.

By your moſt humble Subject,

Servant and Choplein,

Cuthbert Dureſme.

Number

## Number 57.

*Injunctions geven by Edwarde Archbushope of Yorke, to be observed within the Dioces of Yorke, by all the Clergie of the same, and oder, whome the sayde Injunctions do concerne.*

**Y**OU shall fyrste diligentlie observe all maner of Injunctions, given unto you by the King's Hyghnes Commaundiment, and specially concerninge the Abolicion of the Papacie, or of the pretendyd Jurisdiction challenged by the Bysshope of *Rome* within this Realme; and also concerning the Confirmation and Establisshment of the Kyng's Highnes Title of Suprime Heade over thole Catholique Church of *Englande*, aswell Spirituall as Temporall.

*Item*, Everie Curate and Preyste within this Dioces, shall have an New Testament, in *Englishe* or *Latten*, within Fourtie Days nexte after the Publication hereof; and shall daylie reade Two Chapitores of the same afore Nowne, and Two at aftre Nowne, and that treatable and distinctlie; and shall do his best Indevoure to understande the same.

*Item*, Everie Curate shall provyde to have the Booke compyled by the King's Highnes Commaundiment, namyde *Thinstitution of a Christen Man*, with all convenient Speyde, as soon as the saide Book shall come forth by his Commaundment: And in the same shall daylie read two Chapitores, so that he may be able to declare the same to his Parochians.

*Item*. All Curates and Heades of Congregacions, Religiouse and not Religiouse, Privileged and not Privileged, shall, accordinge to the Kyng's Highnes Commaundiment and Injunctions, everie Holie Day, at Mattens Time, and betwene Mattens and Laudes, read the *Pater Noster*, and the *Ave Maria* in *Englishe*, treatable and distinctlie, and cause all their Parochians, whiche cannot all redy say it in *Englishe*, yonge and olde, to reherse everie Petecion by it selfe, to thend therof, after them; and in lykewise everie Holy Day, at Masse, and immediatlie after the Crede, shall rehers everie Article of the Crede by it selfe, and so shall cause the Parochians to rehers after them, everie one by it selfe, to thende, and likewise every Holy Day, at Even-Songe, betwene Even-Songe and Completorie, shall rehers the Tenne Commaundements, every one by it selfe, and so cause his Parochians to rehers after him, everie one by it selfe, to thende, to thentente that they may lerne perfectelie all Three. And for this Purpose the saide Curates, and oder Heades of the Congregation, must give Warninge to thaire Parochians, that none of them be absent at such Times as any of the saide Three shall be reherfed. And shall furthermore declare unto them, that they shall not be admittted to refave the Blessed Sacrament of the Alter at *Easter*, tyll they



they can perfectlie reherſe them all Three by Rote : And therfore everie Goſtelie Father, accordinge to the King's Injunctions, muſt everie *Lent* examen ther Parochians, in Time of Confession, to knowe wheder they have learned the Premiſſes perſytlly, or not.

*Item*, All Curates muſte continuallye call upon thaire Parochians, to provide a Booke of the hole Byble in *Engliſhe*, of the Largieſte Forme, within Fourtie Dayes nexte after the Publication herof, that may be chayned in ſome open Place in the Church, that all Men may reſorte to reade in it for theare Inſtruction, under the Payne of Sufpencion of ther Churches. And the ſame to be boughte at the Charges of the Vicare or Parſonne, and Parochians, accordinge to the King's Injunctions.

*Item*, All Curates muſte cauſe one Booke, comprifinge the *Pater Noſter* and *Ave Maria* in *Engliſhe*, the Crede and the Tenne Commandments in *Engliſhe*, to be ſet upon a Table in the Church openlie, that all Men may reaſorte to learne them, at all ſuch Tymes as they woll. And this to be done, within Twentie Days after the Publication hereof.

*Item*, No Curates, nor oder Preiſtes of what ſorte ſoever they be, ſhall haunte Taverns or Alehouſes, or open Hoiftres, oder wayes than for neceſſarie Meales and Reflections ; if they canne have none in oder Places, accordinge to the King's Highnes Injunctions ; but ſhall occupie themſelves, ether in the Church, or in thaire Chambers, with Reading of Holy Scripture, or Teaching of Children.

*Item*, All Curates and Preiſtes, beinge in one Church togeddre, ſhall (if they can ſo provide) live togedder at one Commons ; and not one to be in one Place, and ane oder in an oder Place. And ſhall, in all theire Behaviors, ſhew good Example, in Worde, Dede, Countenance and Habyte, to the better Ediſieng of the Laye-People.

*Item*, They ſhall not be Common Hunters ne Hawkers, ne playe at Gammes prohibytede, as Dyceſe and Cartes, and ſuche oder.

*Item*, That they ſhall (accordinge to the King's Highnes Injunctions) in no wiſe diſcourage any Man to reade in the *Engliſh* Byble, which is the Booke of Lyſe ; but ſhall comfort them therein : Never the leſſe exhorting them to entre in to the Readinge therof, withe the Sperite of Mekenes, and Purpoſe to be goſtelie edified. And not to be Brablers ne Praters, Arguers ne Diſputers therof ; ne to preſume that thay know therein that they know not ; but, for ther Inſtruction, to reſorte to ſuch as be better lerned than they be, when they finde any Dyfficultie therin.

*Item*, All Curates and Heades of Congregations, Religious and oder, Privileged and oder, ſhall everie Holy Day reade the Goſpell, and the Epiſtle of that Day out of the *Ingliſhe* Byble, planely and diſtinctlie : And they that have ſuch Grace, ſhall make ſome Declaration odre, of the one, or of bothe, (if the Time may ſerve) every Holy Day.

*Item*, Every Curate, reſident and hable, ſhall make 4 ſolempne Sermons in the Yeare, one everie Quarter : Not reſcoent, havinng 5 *l.* or 6 *l.* 13 *s.* 4 *d.* *de claro*, ſhall finde one ſolempne Sermon for the

the Instruction of the People, in the Begynninge of *Lent*: Havyng 10 *l. de claro*, 2 solempne Sermons; one in the Begynning of *Lent*, an othur at fume othur Time of the Yere. Havyng 15 *l.* 3 Sermons; one in the Begynninge of *Lent*, thoder at Two convenient Tymes. Havyng 20 *l.* 4 Sermons; one at *Lent*, thoder Three, at Three convenient Times. Havyng 30 *l. de claro*, 5 Sermons; one at *Lent*, and the oder Four at convenient Times. Havyng 40 *l.* 6 Sermons; one in the Beginninge of *Lent*, and the oder Five at convenient Times. And as the cleare Valew dothe encrease, so mo Sermons.

And yet nevertheles we now monishe, under the Payne of the Lawe, all Parsons and Vicares to be residēt upon their Curis, beinge within this Dioces, afore the Feast of *Christenmas* next; oneles they can and do shew, afore that Day, a Lawfull Cause, why they may not, or shoulde not do so.

*Item*, That none be admytted to kepe Cure, ne to say Masse in any Church of this Dioces; oneles he be admitted by me, or my Officer, havyng Commission fro me for the same; and also do shewe the Lettes of his Orders.

*Item*, That no Man be admitted to Preache within this Dioces, oneles he have Auctorite under the King's Seale, or myne, accordinge to the King's Highnes Injunctions.

*Item*, All Curates and oder, havyng Charge of any Congregation, must diligentlie informe their Flocke, accordinge to the King's Highnes Injunctions, that they may in no wise yelde Worshipp to any Images, Lowtinge or Bowinge downe, or Knelinge to the saide Images, ne Offering to them any Money, or Wax lighte or unlighte, or any oder Thing: For so muche, as Offeringe is to be made to God onlie, and to no Creature under God. Neverthelesse they may still use Lightes in the Roode Lofete, and afore the Sacrament, and at the Sepulture at *Easter*; accordinge to the King's Injunctions: So that they none use to the Honer or Worshipp of any Image, ne by the Way of Offeringe made, odre to any Image, or to any Sainct represented by the same.

*Item*, They must teache their Flocke, that Images be suffred one-lie as Bokes, by which our Hertes may be kindeled to folow the holy Steppes and Examples of the Saintes represented by the same; even as Sainctes Lives be written, and muste be redde in written Bookes, for the same Purpose: And that, as we do not worshipe our Booke when we have rede the Saint's Lief; so likewise, we shall not worshipe the Images, which is as the Booke to them that cannot read in odre Bokes.

*Item*, They muste declare to thaire Flocke, that althoughe they see the Image of the Fadre represented as an olde Man, yet they maye in no wise beleve, that the Hevenlie Father is any Man, or that he haith any Bodie or Age; but that he is a Nature and Substance, above all mesure passinge the Capacite and Undrestandinge, oder of Mans Witt or Aungelles.

*Item*, Alle suche Ymagies, to whiche any maner of Resorte is usede, by waye of Peregrename or Offeringe, they must depose and



sequestre frome all Sichte of Men, and suffre them no more to be sett upp.

*Item,* They must charge all the Faders and Moders, and Heades of Howse-holdes, and Gode-Fatheres, and Gode-Motheres, and Scoole-Maystres, accordinge to the King's Highnes Injunctions, to see theire Children, Servantes and Scoleres, well instructe in the *Pater-Noster*, *Ave Maria*, Crede, and Tenne Commandiments in *Englishe*, and all oder Thinges comprised in theis Injunctions. And for that Purpose, all Curates and Heades of Congregacions, muste ons in a Quarter rede theis Injunctions, in the Church, in thaudience of all the People; aswell for the Remembrance of theire owne Dewtie, as for ther Citinge the People to knowe theire Dewtie. And we Charge and Commaunde all Curates, and all oder of this Dioces to whome it shall apperteigne, to have a Copy of theis Injunctions, within Fourtie Days next folowinge the Puplication hereof. And when the same shall be imprinted, we charge them to have them so imprinted within Sex Days afre the same shall come to thire Knowledge, under Payne of Excommunication.

*Item,* They muste instructe their Parochians, that they nothinge please God, but displease him; doeng Workes onlie in thaire owne Will and Devocion, by Man's Tradicion, and leaving the Workes by God commanded, undone.

*Item,* They muste instruct their Flocke, that their Confidence for thatteyning of Everlasting Lief, must be only in God, and in his Grace and Marcy, and in the Merits and Redemption of our Saviour Jesu Christe: And that none of our Workes, as ours, have any Efficacie or Vertue to save us, but only have their Vertue and Efficacie by the Grace of God, and Merits of Christ's Passion.

*Item,* All Curates must openly, in the Church, teach and instruct the Mydwiefes, of the very Wordes and Fourme of Baptisme; to thentente that they may use them perfietly, and none oder: In Time of Nede, that is to say; that they, Naming the Child, must say these Wordes; *John*, or *Thomas*, or *Agnes*, *I baptize thee in the Name of the Fader, the Sonne, and the Holie Gost*: And that saying thies Wordes, they must cast Water upon the Child. For which Purpose, they must have ready at Hand a Vessel of Cleane Water.

*Item,* They must often upon the Holidays, and specially at Times of Mariages, warn their Parochians, that they in no wise make any privie Contract of Mariage, but afore Two or Three sufficient Wитnes required to be present for that Purpose: And that afore they inake any Contract, they do their best Endeavour, to know wheder there be betwene them any Lawfull Impediment, oder by Godds Lawe, or any oder Ecclesiastical yet used, afore they entre to make any Contract.

*Item,* That the Fadres, and oder Freyndes, constrayne not them that be under their Correccion and Governance, to Marry agentst their Willes, ne afore they have Discretion to consider what the Bounde of Mariage meaneth.

*Item,*

*Item,* All Curates and oder Heddes of Congregacyons must never ceasse to imprinte in the Hertes of their Flocke the Two Commaundments which our Saviour calleth the Fulnes of the Lawe; that is, the Love of God above all Thing, and thei Love of thye Neighbore as thy self: And likewise the sayd Curates must continuallie engrave in the Hertes of their Flocke the Two Preceptes of the Lawe of Nature; that is, do as thou wolde be done unto, and do not that thou woldest not to be done unto the.

*Item,* They muste alway emploie them self to mainteyn Charitie and Peace in our Lorde Jesu amonges their Parochians, and to avoide all Rancor and Dissention amongs them.

*Item,* That they in no wise kepe thoes Dayes for Holy whiche by our Sovereigne Lord the Kynge upon juste Consideracion be abrogat: Ne asmoche as in them is suffer of their Parochians to kepe them as Holie, but that they in theme be occupied everie Man in his Busines, as in oder Days according to the Kinges Highnes Injunctions.

*Item,* They muste instructe their Flocke, that in those Dayes whiche be observed and kept for Holiedayes, they must utterlie withdrawe themselves frome all Worldlie and Flethelie Busines and Occupacions, and Houses of Gammes and Playes; speciallie frome all Synne; and entierlie, and hollie emploie themselves to Goostelie Works, behoveable for Manis Soule: And that therefore Taverns, Vitailing-Houses, may not thyces Dayes be used and exercised, and speciallie in the Tyme of Divine Service, onles Necessitie oderwise require for them that Travaile in Journey.

*Item,* All Houses of Religion, Colleges, Hospitalls, and all oder havying any Benefices appropriated unto theme, shall according to the Value of their Benefices, have in their Churches appropriated certain Sermons every Year; as in like Ordinance for Curates as afore is comprised.

*Item,* All Curates and oder havying Benefices appropriated by them self yf they can, or by oder Preachers ons every Quarter, must teache and instruct the People of their Dewtie of Fathesfull and Loyall Obedience to our Soverand Lord the King, declaring that they be bounden to yield entier and perfect Obedience to his Highnes by Goddes Lawe, expresse under the Payn of Dampnation everlasting: And that to make any styrring, gathering of People, or Cominocion, withoute his expresse Commandment, is to breke, not only Goddes Commandment and Lawe, but also all Natural and Politique Order, in which the Heed governethe the Membres, and not the Membres the Heed, and in which also all the Members, aswell by Nature, as by good Policie, employe them selfe and indaunger them self for the Preservation and Mayntenance of the Heed.

All which Injunctions by thauctorite which we have under God, and our Sovereigne Lorde the Kynge, we charge all to whom it aperyntenye to observe and kepe under the Paynes lymtyed in the same, and under the Paynes of Suspencion and Sequestracyon of the Frutes of theyre Benefices and Promocyons Ecclesiasticall, and oder Paynes Arbytrary, as we shall thynke convenient and reasonable.



Number 58.

*Injunctions given by the Bishoppe of Coventre and Lyche-  
felde throughe out his Dioceffe.*

**T**O all and singlar of the Clergie within the Diocefs of *Coven-  
tree* and *Lichefelde*, I *Rolande*, by the Grace of God Byshop  
of the sayd Dioceffe, beyng commaunded therunto by the Kinges  
Majestie, gyve these Injunctions following, for the Honour of God,  
thencreafe of Vertue, and Abolyshmente of Ignorance, Vice, and  
Viciouse Lyvinge.

*Fyrste*, That ye and every one of you, shall with all your Dili-  
gence and Faythful Obedience, observe and cause to be observed, all  
and syngular the Contentes of the Kynges Hyghnes Injunctions, by  
his Graces Commissarys gyven, in such Places as they in Tymes  
paste have vyfited, and also sent unto you at this Tyme. And that  
ye and every of you, shal provyde for Copies of the same, to be had  
before the Feast of *Lammasse* nexte ensuyng.

*Item*, That ye and every of you do instructe and teach your Pa-  
rishoners, the Kinges Majestie to be only the Supreme Heed under  
Chryst in Erthe of this his Church of *Englande*, unto whom all  
Potentates and Powers of the same owen to obey, being therto  
obliged and bounde by Goddes Worde. And that the Bishop of *Rome*,  
and his Predecessours, did ever heretofore usurp upon the Kynges of  
this Realme, in the using any maner of Jurisdiction or Auctorite  
within the same. And that ye shal exhorte every *Sunday* al your Pa-  
rishoners to the due Obedience of our Prince and Soveraigne Lorde,  
his Heires, and Successours Kyngs of *Englande*.

*Item*, That every Person or Proprietary of any Parishes Church  
within my Dioceffe, shal on thisside the Feast of *Pentecoste* nexte  
commynge, provide a Boke of the hole Byble, bothe in *Latin*, and  
also in *Englishe*, and laye the same in the Quire, for every Man  
that will, to loke and reade thereon: And shal not discourage, but  
ernestly comforte, exhorte, and admonishe every Man to reade the  
Bible in *Latin* or *Englishe*, as the very Worde of God, and the Spi-  
ritual Foode of Man's Soule, wherby they maye the better knowe  
their Deutyes to God, to their Soveraigne Lord the Kinge, and their  
Neighbour: Alwaye gently and charitably exhorting them to use  
a sober and a modeste Haviour in the Readyng and Inquisition of the  
true Sence, and that in no wise they stiffely or egerly contende, or  
strive with one another about the same, but referre the Declaration  
of those Places that be in Controversie, to the Judgement of them  
that be better Learned.

*Item*, I decree and ordeyne that all Monasteries, Collegiate Churches,  
and al Persons to whom any Benefices be impropried within my  
Dioceffe, shal from henceforth Four Times in the Year at the leaste,  
that is, One Tyme every Quarter, cause one Sermon to be preached,  
purely,

purely, sincerely, and according to the true Scripture of God, in al such Churches where they, or any of them, receive any Profytes or Commodities, upon Payne of Sequestration of theyr Fruites.

*Item*, I require and exhorte you, in our Sovereigne Lordes Name, and as his Gracis Mynister, I straitly charge and commaunde you, to declare and publishe every *Sondaye* in the Pulpet at High Masse Tymes, the *Pater Noster*, *Ave*, and *Crede* in *Englishe*, distinctly, and in suche wyfe as the People maye lerne the same. And that Four Tymes in the Quarter ye declare to your Paryshoners, the Seven deedly Sinns, and the Ten Commaundments, so as the People therby may not only lerne how to Honour God, their Prince, and Parentes; but also how they shall avoide Sinne and Vice, and to lyve Vertuoufely, folowinge Goddes Lawes and his Commaundments.

*Item*, That ye bothe in your Preachinges, Secret Confessions, and al other Workes and Doings, shall excite and move your Parishioners unto such Works as are commaunded expressely of God: For the whiche God shall demaunde of them a straye reckeninge; as the Articles of the Fayth, and the Ten Commandments, and all other Workes which Men do of their own Will or Devotion, to teache and instruct your Parishioners, that they are not to be esteemed, in Comparison of the other. And that for the not doinge of any wilfull Workes, God wyll not aske any Accompte.

*Item*, That ye, nor any of you, sufre no Fryer or other Religious Man, to have any Cure or Servyce within your Churches or Cures, excepte they be lawfully dispensed withal, or licensed by the Ordinary.

*Item*, That ye, and every one of you, doo your Dyligence, and endeavour your selves to your best Industries and Labour, to instructe and teache aswell Chyldren as all other your People, both Men and Women, of that your Parish, the *Pater Noster*, *Ave*, and *Crede*, and the Ten Commaundments in *Englishe*, and that ye or any of you do admyt no Man nor Woman to receyve the Sacrament of the Aultare, untill that ye have harde them recite and declare at the least, the same *Pater Noster*, *Ave*, and *Crede* in *Englishe*, without Boke.

*Item*, That ye, and every of you, shal Two Tymes in a Quarter declare to your Parishoners the Bande of Matrimony, and what great Daunger it is to al Men, that use theyr Bodies, but with suche Personnes as they lawfully may by the Lawe of God; and to exhorte in the said Tymes your Parishoners, that they make no privye Contractes of Matrimonie, but that they call Two Honest Menne at the leaste to recorde the same, as they wyll avoide the Extreme Payne of the Lawes used within the Kinges Realme by his Gracis Auctoritie.

*Item*, Where some frowarde Persons, partly for Malice and Disdain, neglecte theyr Curates, and such as have the Cure and Charge of their Soules, and partly to cloke and hyde their lewde and naughtie Livinge, as they have used all the Yere before, use at Lent to go to be confessed to the Fryers, and such other Religious Houses. Therefore I Wyl you to declare, and shew to your Parishoners that no Testimoniall, brought from any of them, shall stande in any



Effect: Nor any such Persones shall be admitted to Goddis Bourde, unto they submit themselves to be confessed to their owne Curates, onlesse for certayne arduate and urgent Considerations of Conscience, they be, or shall be otherwise Lawfullye dispensed or lycensed withall, either by me or my Deputies.

*Item,* Whereas Unyversally reigneth this abhominable, detestable, and dyvelishe Use and Custome, that upon the Holy Dayes, in the Tyme of Divine Servyce and Preachyng, that Youthe and other Unthriftes, resorteth to Ale-Houses, and there use unlawfull Games, Blasphemie, Dronkenness, with other Enormities; so that good People therat be offended, and no Punishment hadde as yet: Therefore I Wil and Commaunde you to declare to suche that kepe Alehouses or Taverns within your Parishs, that at suche they suffre no more such unlawfull and ungodly Assemblies; nor to receive suche Persons to Bollynge and Drynkinge at such Seasons in their Houses, under Peine of the Kinges High Displeasure, and to be punished for so doinge.

*Item,* Ye shall teache and instructe your Paryshoners, at the least 12 Tymes in the Yere, the Essential Maner and Forme of Christeninges in *Englishe*, and that the Mydwife may use it in Tyme of Necessitie: Commaundinge the Women, when the Tyme of Birthe draweth nere, to have at all Seasons a Vessel of cleane Water for the same Purpose.

*Item,* Where I am credibly informed, that certain Priestes in my Dioceffe, go in Habite dissimuled more liker of the Temporaltie than of the Clergie, whiche may and dothe minister Occasion to suche light Persons whan they come in Places, and to Persons not knowen, to be more Licentious, bothe of their Communication and Actes, to the great Sclaunder of the Clergie: Therfore frome hensforthe I Charge and Commande, that in Cities, Towns, and Villages, and in al other Places, they weare mete, convenient, and decent Apparrell, wherby they may be knowen of the Clergie; as they and every one of them will avoide the Penaltie of the Lawes.

*Item,* I desire, require, and exhorte you and every of you, in the Name of God, that he firmly do observe and kepe these all and singular mine Injunctions. And that ye and every one of you that are Priestes, having Cure or not Cure, as well Benefyced, as not Benefyced within my Dioceffe, do gette a Copie of these Injunctions, to the Intente ye maye observe, and cause to be observed the Contentes of the same.

G O D S A V E T H E K I N G .

*Londini in Ædibus Thomae Bertheleti Regii Impressoris Excus. Anno  
M. D. XXXVIII. Cum Privilegio.*

## Number 59.

*Injunctions given by the Byshop of Salysbury, throughout his Dioces.*

**I**Njunctions made by me *Nycolas Shaxton*, Bishop of *Sarum*, at mine ordinarie Visitation done in tharchdeaconry of *Dorset*, in the Yere of our Lord God 1538, and in the 30th Yere of the Reign of our Sovereigne Lord King *Henry* the Eighth, by the Grace of God, King of *Englande* and of *France*, Defender of the Faythe, Lord of *Yreland*, and Supreme Hede here in Erth, next under God, of the Church of *England*. All which and singuler Injunctions, by thauctorite given to me of God and the Kinge, I exhorte, and also commaunde all Parsons, Vicars, Curates, Chauntry Prestes, and other of the Clergy whatsoever they be, to observe, kepe and perform, as concerneth every one of them, upon Pain of Inobedience, and also of all such Laws and Statutes, as may be laid against them, for Breaking or Violating of the same at any Time hereafter.

Fyrst, Whereas Beneficed Men, having and taking Cure of Souls at the Byshop's Hands, do absent themselves from their said Cures without Licence or Counsell of the said Byshop, not leaving there able Curates to discharge the said Cures: I monyshe all such peremptorily, either to be personally upon their said Cures, by *Myghelm*s nexte cumminge, or els to present unto me, or my Deputies, such Curates, as upon myne Examinacion, shall be abled and admitted to serve and discharge the said Cures, in thabsence of the said Beneficed Men. And that neither any *French* or *Irish* Preeft, which cannot perfittly speke the *Englysh* Tonge, serve no Cure in this Dyoces, after the Terme before specified.

*Item*, That all such having Cures, do every *Sunday* and Holidaye continually, recite, and sincerely declare in the Pulpit, at the Highe Masse Tyme, in the *Englyshe* Tonge, both the Epytyle and Gospell of the same Daye, (if ther be Time therto) or elles the one of them at the leest; and also to set forth the King's Regall Power to be Supreme Heade, and Highest Power, under God, in Erthe, of the Church and Realme of *Englande*: and to abolyse the Byshope of *Rome*'s Usurped Power. And furthermore, to declare openly and distinctly the Ten Commaundements, the Articles of our Beleve, the *Pater-Noster*; and finally, bydde the Beades, according to the King's Ordinaunce, and none otherwyse.

*Item*, That everie Prebendary, or Proprietary of any Paryshe-Churche, whose Annuall Fruytes extendeth to 20 *l.* shall make, or cause for to be made foure Times in the Yere, (that is to saye, every Quarter) one Sermon there. And if the Fruytes be 15 *l.* Three Sermons; if but 10 *l.* Two Sermons; and if it be under that, he shall make one Sermon at the leest, over and besydes the gyving of  
Distrib-



Distribucions, Almes, or other Comfortable and Bodily, or Charitable Socour amonge the Poore Parochians there, accordinge to their Appropriacions, or Rate of their Prebends.

*Item,* That ye suffre no Man to Preache, excepte he be specially licenced by his Ordinary, or els the King's Highnes Auctorite : Nor that ye permit any Friere, or other wearing a Religieuse Habyte, to have any Service in your Churches, neither to serve Chauntry, nor Trentall, neither any Brothered Service ; and that no Preefte saye Two Masses upon One Daye, excepte *Chrystmas* Daye only.

*Item,* That everie Benefyced Man, whose Benefice is taxed at Ten Pounds, or above, have (before *Whytson* tide next) the Holie Bible ; and all other Preestes, Beneficed or not Beneficed, at the leest have the New Testament, both in *Latyn* and in *Englishe* ; and that everie one of them rede over and studie everie Daye one Chapter at the leest, by Order as they stande in the Boke unto the Ende, conferringe the *Englishe* and *Latyn* together. And if, by Occasion of a Lawfull Let, it be undone one Daye, be it supplied with Two Chapters the nexte Day, &c. So that one Daye with another, he fail not to study one Chapter.

*Item,* That everie one of you procure diligentlie before *Myghelmas* nexte, to have Copies of the King's Injunctions made in his last Visitation ; and then to kepe and observe them effectually, upon Paine therein mencioned.

*Item,* That every one having Cure of Soules, Parson, Vicar, or Curate, admitted, do perfittly con without Boke the Two whole Gospells of *Matheu* and *Johun*, and the Epistles of *Paule* to the *Romayns*, *Corinthians*, *Galatians*, and other as they stande, with the *Actes of the Apostles*, and the Canonical Pistles, after the Rate ; to con every Fournyghte one Chapter without the Boke, and the same to kepe still in Memory ; over and besides, to rede and studie everi Day one Chapter within the Boke, as is above expressed. And that the 28th Chapter of *Deuteronomie* be openly red in the Church every Quarter, in stede of the General Sentence.

*Item,* That everie Curat, the First *Sunday* of every Moneth in the Yere, do openly (in the Pulpit) exhorte and charge his Parochians, in no wise to make any prevye or secrete Contract of Matrimony ; but that they utterlie deferre it, untill such Time as they may have Two or Three Honest Men, to hear and record the Words and Maner of their Contract, as they will avoid thextreme Paine of the Lawe, if they do the contrarye.

*Item,* That none of you discourage any Person from Reding of Holy Scripture, but rather animate and encorage them therto ; so that it be done of them without Braging or Arrogancy, but onelie to lerne therby to live vertuoussly, folowing the Lawes of God, and giving good Examples and holosome Counsell to other that be ignorant.

*Item,* That not only such as have Cure of Soules, but also Chauntry Preestes, do hensforth their true Diligence to instruct and teach Children, until they can reade *Englishe* ; taking moderatly, for ther Labours of their Friends that be able to paye, which shall so put them to Larning.

*Item,*

*Item*, That Yonge People be taught their *Pater Noster*, Crede, and Tenne Commandments in *Englyshe*; so that none of them be admitted to Receive the Sacrament of the Aulter, untill He or She can, and do perfectly say and reherse in *Englyshe* unto the Curate, the *Pater Noster*, Crede, and Tenne Commaundementes, distinctly, wheresoever they be shryven, either at their Parishes-Churche, or els where. And in case any of them be obstinate to do, as is aforesaide, let them be detect immediatly after *Ejster*, unto their Ordinary.

*Item*, That Preaching be not lefte off for any other maner of Observaunces in the Churche, as Processions, or Exequies of the Deade.

*Item*, That at your Preching Time, ye diligentlie see that youre Parochians be present, and take hede therunto; and that none presume to be at Alehouse, Tavern, or els where, at the Preaching-Time, but onelie at the Churche attentyfly hearing, as becometh good Christen People. And if any be disobedient, let them be first warned to amend; and afterward, if they amende not, detect them to their Ordinary.

*Item*, That ye suffre no Night-Watches in your Churches or Chappells, neither Decking of Ymages with Gold, Silver, Clothes, Lights, or Herbs; nor the People knele to them, nor worship them, nor offre Candles, Otes, Cake-breed, Chese, Wolle, or any such other Things to them: But he shall instruct and teach them, how they ought and may use them; that is to say, only to beholde, or loke upon them, as one loketh upon a Boke; wherby Mens Mindes be stirred and kenled some times to Vertue and Constancy, in Faithe and Love towards God, and somtimes to lament for their Sinnes or Offences. For otherwise there might be Peril of Ydolatrie, especially of ignorant Lay-People, if they either in Hert, or outward Gesture worship them, or give Honour to them, which ought onlie to be given to God, the Lorde of all Saintes.

*Item*, Ye shall instruct your Parochians, not to be envious aboute Workes invented by their own folishe Devocion; as to go about in idle Pylgrimage, and say with vain Confidence this Prayer, and that Prayer, with other Superstitious Observacions, in Fastings, Prayeng, and Keping of olde folysh Customs, which be not found commaunded or counseled, in any Parte of Holy Scripture. But ye shall instruct them, and exhorte them, to know and do all such Things, as be commaunded or commended in the Holy Scripture to be done; that is to say, to Know and Believe all the Articles of our Faithe, contained in the Crede, to kepe inviolably the Tenne Commaundementes, to performe the Workes of Mercy, after every Mannes Power and Habilitie, to be in Love and Charite eche with other, and one to beare with an other in his Weaknes or Infirmite, and not to be vengeable for any Offence.

*Item*, That every Curate do at all times his best Diligence, to reduce such as be at Discord, to Peace, Love and Charite, and one to forgive an other, how often soever they be offended.



*Item,* That every Curate, not only in his Preaching, but also at all other Times necessary, do perswade, exhort, and warn the People, whatsoever they be, to beware of Swearing, and Blasphemy of the Holy Name of God, or any Part of Christ's precious Body or Blode. And also to beware and abstaine from Cursing or Banning, Chidinge, Skoldinge, Bakbiting, Slaundering, Lyinge; and from Adultry, Fornicacion, Glotony, Dronkenship, Sorcere, Witchcrafte: And if they be notoriously faulty in any of these, then to detect them, that they may be corrected in Example of other.

*Item,* That every Curat instruct his Parochians, and especially the Midwives, the effencial Maner and Forme how to Christen a Child in Time of Nede; commaunding the Women, when the Time of Byrthe draweth nere, to have a Vessel of clene Water redy for the same Purpose: Charging also the said Midwives, to beware that they cause not the Woman, being in Travaile, to make any folishe Vowe, to go in Pilgrimage to this Ymage, or that Ymage, after her Deliveraunce, but only to call on God for Helpe. Nor to use any Girdels, Purfes, Mesures of our Lady, or such other Superstitious Things, to be occupied about the Woman while She laboureth, to make her beleve to have the better Spede by it.

*Item,* That none of you do magnifie and extol, praise, maintaine, or otherwise set forth, the superfluous Holidayes abrogated by the Kinge, with the Advise of his Ecclesiastical Convocation.

And finally, Forasmoch as all Christen Men ought earnestly to covet and desire their Soules Helthe, and the very Meane therof is to obtain the true Knowledge of God's Worde, which is the Fedying of the Soul; I exhort, desire, and, asmoche as I may I require, that in every Honest Paryshe-Churche within my Diocesse of *Sarum*, either of their Church-Boxe, or of Stockes given for Mainteining of Lightes before Ymages, (with the which I dispence for this better Use) or els by waye of Collection among themselves, there be ordeined and bought an *Englishe* Bible before *Whitsondaye* nexte, to be chained to a Deske in the Body of the Church; where he that is Letteryd may rede, and other Unlerned may hear, holsome Doctrine and Comfort to their Soules, and avoid Idelnes and other Inconveniences, whereunto the fraile Disposicion of Man is sone inclined.

Forasmoch as intollerable Supersticion, and also abhominable Ydolatrie, have no small Time ben used in this my Diocesse, by the Occasion of such Things as be set forth and commended unto the ignorant People, under the Name of Holy Reliques, being in veray dede vaine Things, as I my self of certaine, which be alredie comen to myne Handes, have persite Knowledge: Namely, of stinking Bootes, mucky Combes, ragged Rochettes, rotten Girdles, pyl'd Purfes, great Bullocks Horns, Lockes of Heere, and filthy Raggies, Gobbetts of Wodde, under the Name of Parcells of the Holy Crofs, and such Pelfrie, beyond Estimacion; over and besides the shamfull Abuse of such as peradventure be true Reliques in dede, whereof nevertheles certain Profe is none, but only that so they have bene taken, judged and esteemed, ye and so called without Monumentes  
had

had of them in any Autentyke Form of Writing. Therefore in Remedy herof, I hertely praie you all and singular my said Brethren of the Clergie in my said Dioceſe; and nevertheleſs by thauſtorite that I have under God and the Kynges Highnes, and in their Names I commaunde you, and everyche of you, that you ſend al ſuche your Relyques (as they be called) one and other unto me at myne Houſe at *Rameſbury*, or other where, togyther with ſuch Wrytings as ye have of the ſame, to thintent that I and my Counſel may explore and try them what they be, and thoſe that be eſtemed and judged to be undoubtedly true Reliques, ye ſhal not fayle at convenable Tyme to have againe with certayne Inſtruction how they ought to be uſed; that is to ſay, as Memorials of them whoſe Reliques they be, in whom and by whom Almighty God did Worke all that ever they vertuouſly wrought; and therefore onely he ought in them all to be glorified, lauded, and prayſed; ſo that he which rejoyceth may in the Lorde rejoyſe; to whom be all Honour and Glorye, for ever and ever. *Amen.*

*Item*, That the Bell called the Pardon, or *Ave* Bell, whiche of longe Tyme hath been uſed to be tolled Three Tymes after, or before Divine Service, be not hereafter in any Parte of my Dioceſſe any more tollyd.

I exhorte, deſire, require, and alſo (as ferre as I maye) commaunde you all and every of you to provide you Copies of theſe Injunctions, and firmly to obſerve and performe them, and every of them, as ferre as they concerne you, and that for your Wealthe and my Diſcharge to God and the Kynge, of whom I have min Auſtorite in this Behalf.

G O D   S A V E   T H E   K Y N G E .

*Imprinted at London in Fleteſtrete, at the Sygne of the Sonne, by John Byddell, and are to Sell at the Cloſe Yate in Salysbury.*

Number 60.

*An Omiſſion in the Injunctions ſet forth by Cromwell in the King's Name, in the 1ſt Vol. Hiſt. Refor. Coll. of Rec. P. 160.*

*This comes in after the Line 30, Page 161.*

**I**TEM, That every Parſon, or Proprietary of any Pariſh Church within this Realm, ſhall on this ſide the Feaſt of *St. Peter ad Vincula* next coming, provyde a Book of the whole Bible, both in *Latin*



*Latin*, and also in *English*, and laye the same in the Quire, for every Man that will to read and look therein, and shall discourage no Man from the Reading any Part of the Bible, either in *Latin* or in *English*; but rather comfort, exhort, and admonish every Man to read the same as the very Word of God, and the Spiritual Food of Man's Soul, whereby they may the better know the Dutys to God, to their Sovereign Lord the King, and their Neighbour: Ever gently and charitably exhorting that using a sober and modest Haviour in the Reading and Inquisition of the true Sense of the same; they do in no wise stiffly or eagerly contend or strive one with another about the same, but refer the Declaration of those Places that be in Controversy to the Judgment of them that be better Learned.

*An Omission in Boner's Injunctions; the Lines that are in Italicks ought to be put* 1 Vol. Hist. Ref. Col. Rec. P. 252.

*This comes in Page 255, Line 35.*

**I**TEM, That no Parsons, Vicars, ne Curates, permit or suffer any manner of Common-Plays, Games, or Interludes to be play'd, set forth, or declared within their Churches, or Chappels, *where the Blessed Sacrament of the Altar is, or any other Sacrament ministred, or Divine Service said or sung; because they be Places constitute and ordained to well disposed People for Godly Prayer, and wholesom Consolation.* And if there be any of your Parishoners, or any other Person or Persons, that will obstinately, or violently, inforce any such Plays, Interludes, or Games to be declared, set forth, or played in your Churches, or Chappels, contrary to this our Forbidding and Commandment, that then you, or either of you, in whose Churches, or Chappels, any such Games, Plays, or Interludes, shall be so used, shall immediately thereupon make relation of the Name of the Person, or Persons, so obstinately and disobediently using themselves, unto me, my Chancellor, or other my Officers, to the Intent that they may be therefore reformed and punished according to the Laws.

## Number 61.

*The Petition of Gresham, Lord-Mayor of London, to the King, for the City Hospitals.*

**M**OST redowted, puyfant, and noble Prince. My most dradd, beloved, and naturall Soveraigne Lorde, I your poore humble, and most obedient Servaint, dailly considering, and ever more and more perceivynge by your Vertuous Begynninge, and Charitable Proceedings in all your Causes, your Persone, and Majestie Royall, to be the Elected and Chosen Vessel of God, by whom not only the very and true Worde of God, is, and shall be sett forth, and according to the trewgh and verytie of the same; But also to be he whom God hath constituted and ordeyned, both to redresse and reforme all Crimes, Offences, and Enormities, beyng repugnant to his Doctrine, or to the Detryment of the Common Welth, and Hurt of the Poor People beyng your Natural Subjects; and farther to forsee, and vigilantly to provide for the Charitable Reformation of the same. Which thynk hath, and yet doth encourage me, and also my bounden Dewtie obligeth me, in especiall beyng most unworthy your Levetenant, and Mayer of your Cytie Royall of *London*, to enforme and advertise your most Gracious Highnes of one Thing in especiall, for the Ayde and Comfort of the Poor, Syke, Blynde, Aged, and Impotent Persons beyng not able to help themselves, nor having no Place certen where they may be refreshed, or lodged at, tyll they be holpen and cured of their Diseases and Sicknes. So it is most Gracious Lorde, that nere, and withyn the Cytie of *London*, be iij Hospitalls, or Spytells, commonly called Seynt *Georges* Spytell, Seynt *Barthilmewes* Spytell, and Seynt *Thomas* Spytell, and the New Abbey of *Tower-Hill*, founded of Good Devotion by Auncient Fathers, and endowed with great Possessions and Rents, only for the Releeffe, Comforte, and Helping of the Poor, and Impotent People, not beyng able to help themselves, and not to the Mayntenance of Chanons, Priests, and Monks, to live in Pleasure, nothing regarding the Miserable People lying in every Street, offendyng every clene Persone passing by the Way, with theyre fylthy and nasty Savours. Wherefore may it please your Merciful Goodness enclyned to Pytie and Compassion, for the Reliffe of Christs very Images, created to his own Similitude, to Order by your High Authorite, as Supreme Head of this Church of *England*, or otherwise by your Sage Discrecion, that your *Mayor* of your Cytie of *London*, and his Brethren the Aldermen for the Tyrne being, shall and may from henceforth, have the Order, Disposicion, Rule, and Governauce, both of all the Lands, Tenements, and Renewes Apperteynyng, and belongyn to the said Hospitalls, Governours of theym, and of the Ministers which be, or shall be withyn any of them: And then your Grace shall facillie perceyve, that where

*Cotton Library*  
*Cleop. E. 4.*  
 P. 222.



now a small Number of Chanons, Preefts, and Monkes, be founde for theyr own Profit only, and not for the Common Utilitie of the Realme, a great Number of Poore, Needy, Syke, and Indugent Persones shall be refreshed, maynteyned, and comforted, and also healed and cured of their Infirmities, frankly and freely by Physicions, Surgeons, and Potycaries, which shall have Stipende and Salarie only for that Purpose; so that all Impotent Persons not able to labour shall be releved, and all Sturdy Beggars not willing to labour shall be punished: For the which doyng, your Grace shall not alonely merit highly towards God, but shewe your selffe to be more Charitable to the Poor, then your Noble Progenitor Kyng *Edgar*, Foundour of so many Monasteries. Or Kyng *Henry* the Thyrde, Renewer of *Westmynster*: Or Kyng *Edwarde* the Thirde, Foundor of the New Abbey: Or Kyng *Henry* the Fifte, Foundor of *Syon* and *Skene*; but also shall have the Name of Conservator, Protectour, and Defendour of the Poor People, with their contynuall Prayer for your Health, Welthe, and Prosperitie long to endure.

*Your Humble, and most*

*Obedient Servant,*

*Rychard Gresham.*

---

Number 62.

*A Part of a Proclamation, chiefly concerning Becket.*

*CottonLibrary  
Titus, B. 1.*

AND whereas his most Royall Majestie, heretofore most prudently considering, as well the great and manifold Superstitions and Abuses which have crept in the Harte and Stomake of many his true Simple and Unlerned Subjects, for lack of the sincere and true Application, and the Declaring of the true Meaning and Understanding of Holy Scriptures, Sacraments, Rites and Ceremonies; as also the sondry Strifes and Contentions, which have and may growe amonges many of his saide Loving Subjects, for Lacke of the very perfect Knowledge of the true Entent and Meaning of the same; hath divers times most straitly commanded all and singuler his Archbishops, Bishops, and other Ministers of the Clergie of this his Noble Realme, in their Sermons and Preaching, plainly, purely, sincerely, and with all their possible Diligence, to set forth first to the Glorie of God, and Trouthe of his most Blessed Word; and after, the true Meaning and End of the said Sacramentalls and Ceremonies;

to

to the intent that all Superstitious Abuses and Idolatries being avoided, the same Sacramentalls, Rites and Ceremonies, might be quietly used, for such only Intent and Consideration, as they were first instituted and meant. His Majestie having Knowledge, that this his most Godly and most Vertuouse Commandment, hath not ben executed according to his Trust and Expectation; therefore straitly estones chargeth and commandeth, all his said Archbishops and Bishops of this his Realme, not only in their own Persons, with more Diligence to preach, teach, open and set forth, to his People and Loving Subjects within their Cures, committed to them by his Highnes for that Purpose, as often as they conveniently maie, the Word of God sincerely and purely; declaring such Difference between Thinges commanded by God, and the Rites and Ceremonies aforesaid, and the Use of them, in such wise, as his People, being under their Cures by his Highnes to them committed, maie be brought to the true Knowledge of their Lively Faith to God, and Obedience to his Highnes, with their Love and Charity also to their Neighbours: But also his Highnes straitly chargeth and commandeth, all Archdeacons, Deans, Provosts, Parsons, Vicars, Curates, and other Ministers, and every of them in their own Persons, within their Cures, truly and diligently to do the same. And further, in all their said Sermons and Collations, to stirre and exhort the People to Charitie, Love and Obedience; and also to rede and heare with Simplicite, and without any Arrogancie, the very Gospell and Holie Scripture, and to conforme, by earnest Deeds, their Mindes and Willes unto the same; avoiding all manner of Contencion, Strife and Occasions, upon Pain not only to incurre his Majesties Indignacion; but also for their Slacknesse and Negligence in the Executing of their Cures and Charges committed unto them by his Highnes, to be imprisoned and punished at his Majesty's Pleasure.

*Item*, Forasmuch as it appeareth clearly, that *Thomas Becket*, sometime Archbishoppe of *Canterbury*, stubbornely to withstand the Holsome Lawes established against the Enormities of the Clergy, by the King's Highnes most Noble Progenitor, King *Henry* the Second, for the Common Welth, Rest, and Tranquillity of this Realme; of his froward Mind, fled the Realme into *France*, and to the Bishop of *Rome*, Maintenour of those Enormities, to procure the Abrogation of the said Lawes, whereby arose much Trouble in this said Realm. And that his Death, which they untruly called Martirdome, happen'd upon a Reskewe by him made: And that, as it is written, he gave opprobrious Wordes to the Gentlemen which then counsailed him to leave his Stubbornes, and to avoide the Commotion of the People, risen up for that Reskewe. And he not only called the one of them Bawde, but also toke *Tracy* by the Bosome, and violently shoke and plucked him in such maner, as he had almost overthrown him to the Pavement of the Church. So that uppon this Fray, one of their Company perceiving the same, struck him, and so in the Throng *Becket* was slain. And further, that his Canonization was made only by the Bishop of *Rome*, because he had been a Champion to mainteine his Usurped Authority, and a Bearer of the Iniquitie



Iniquitie of the Clergie. For these, and for other great and urgent Causes long to recite, the King's Majestie, by the Advice of his Counsell, hath thought expedient to declare to his Loving Subjects, that notwithstanding the said Canonization, there appeareth nothing in this Life and exteriour Conversation, wherby he should be called a Saint, but rather esteemed to have been a Rebel and Traitor to his Prince. Therfor his Grace straightly chargeth and commandeth, that from henceforth the said *Thomas Becket* shall not be esteemed, named, reputed, nor called a Saint; but Bishop *Becket*: And that his Images and Pictures, through the hole Realme, shall be put down and avoided, out of all Churches, Chappelles, and other Places. And that from henceforth, the Days used to be Festivall in his Name, shall not be observed; nor the Service, Office, Antiphones, Collettes, and Praiers in his Name redde, but rased and put out of all the Bookes. And that all other Festivall Daies already abrogate, shall be in no wise solemnised, but his Grace's Ordenance and Injunctions thereupon, observed; to the intent his Grace's Loving Subjects shall be no longer blindly led, and abused, to committ Idolatrie, as they have done in Times passed; upon Paine of his Majesties Indignacion, and Imprisonement at his Grace's Pleasure.

Finallie, His Majestie willeth, and chargeth all his said True, Loving, and Obedient Subjects, that they, and every of them for his Parte, shall keepe and observe all and singuler the Injunctions made by his Majestie, upon the Paine therein contained, and further to be punished at his Gracis Pleasure.

### G O D S A V E T H E K I N G .

*Westm' xvj. Novembris, Anno Regni Regis Henrici  
Ostavi xxx.*

Number 63.

*An Original Letter of the King's, much to the same  
Purpose.*

*By the King.*

HENRY R.

Cotton Library  
Cleop. E. 6.  
P. 224.

**T**Rufty and Welbeloved, we grete you well. And whereas we, chiefly and principally regarding and tendring the Quiet, Rest, Prosperite and Tranquillite of our Nobles and Commons, and ther

ther Conservacion no les than our own, directed lately our Letters unto you, and other Justices of our Peace throughout this our Realme, conteining our Admonition and gentil Warening, to have such speciall Regard to the Dewties of your Office, according to the Trust we have reposed in you, that not only for thimportance it is both unto us and our Commonwelthe, ye shuld see our Dignitie of Supremacie of our Church (wherwith it hath pleased Almighty God, by his most certain and undoubted Word, to endowe and adorn our Auctorite and Crown Imperiall of this our Realme) to be set forth, and impressed in all our Subjects Herts and Mindes; and forsee, that the Mayntenors of the Bishop of *Rome's* Usurped and Fayned Auctorite, with all his Papistical Supersticions and Abuses, with which he hath in Times past abused the Multitude of our Subjects; of whose Yoke, Tyranny and skornfull Illusion, we have, by God's Providance, deliver'd this our Realm, and other his Satellyts, which secretly did uphold his Faction, shuld be by you diligently ferched, enquired and tried out, and so brought to our Justice, to receive Condign Punishment, according to their Demerits; but also that Tale-tellers about the Cuntries, and Spreaders of Rumors, and false Inventors of News, to put our People in Fears, and to styrre them to Sedicion, should be apprehended and punished, to the terrible Example of others. Also, that Vagabonds, and valyant Beggars, shall be avoided, and have worthy Correction: And for the same Purpos, to keep Watches, and to see commun Justice with Indifferencie, and without Corruption, to be observed and ministred unto all our Subjects; like as by the Purport and Contents of our said Letters, ye may more amply perceive. We have been credibly informed, that fundrie of you have for a Time so well done your Dewties, and endeavored your selfs fulfilling our said Admonicions, and causing the Evil-doers to be punished according to ther Demerits, that our Loving Subjects have not been disquieted of a long Season, untill now of late, that some ungracious, cankred, and maliciousse Persons, have taken Boldnes tattempt with fundry divelish Persuasions, to move and seduce our true Subjects; using false Lyes, and most untrewre Rumors. And amongst them, we understand, fundry Parsons, Vicars and Curates of this our Realme, to be Cheef; which (to bring our People to Darknes) of their owne perverse Minde, not only to blinde our Commons, do rede so confusely, hemmyng and hacking the Word of God, and such our Injunctions as we have lately set forth, that almost no Man can understande the trewe Meanyng of the said Injunctions, and also secretly have suborned certain Spreaders of Rumors and false Tales in Corners, which do interpretat and wraft our trewe Meanyng and Intencion of our said Injunctions, to an untrewre Sense: For wheras we have ordayned by our said Injunctions, for the avoiding of fundry Strives, Processis and Contentions, rising upon Aege, Lyneall Descents, Title of Inheritance, Legitimation, or Bastardy, and for Knowledge whether any Person is our Subject born or no: Also for fundry other Causes, that the Names of all Children christen'd from henceforth, with their Birth, their Fathers and Mothers Names; and likewise all Marryages and Burials, with the Time and Date therof, should be re-



gifted from Tyme to Tyme in a Booke, in every Parish-Church, safely and surely to be kept. They have brutid and blowen abroad, most falsely and untreuly, that we do intend to make sum new Examinations, at all Christnyngs, Weddings and Buryalls; the which in no wise we never meanyd, or thought upon. Alledging, for to fortify and colour their false and manyfest Lyes, that therein we go about to take away the Liberties of our Realm; for Conservation whereof, they sayne, that Bishop *Becket* of *Canterbury*, which they have tofore called Saint *Thomas*, dyed for: where in deede ther was never such Thyng don nor ment in that Tyme, nor since: For the said *Becket* never swarved nor contended with our Progenitor, King *Henry* the Second; but only to let, that those of the Clergie shuld not be punished for their Offences, nor justefied by the Courts and Lawes of this Realm; but only at the Bishop's Pleasure, and after the Decrees of *Rome*. And the Causes why he dyed, were upon a wyllfull Reskew and Fraye, by him made and begon at *Canterbury*; which was nevertheles afterward alledged to be for such Liberties of the Church, which he contended for, during his Life, with the Archbishop of *Yorke*; yea, and in case he should be absent, or fugitive out of the Realme, the King shuld not be crowned by any other, but constrayned tabyde his Retorne. These, and such other detestable and unlawfull Liberties, nothing concerning the Commun Wele, but only the Partie of the Clergie, the said *Thomas Becket* most arrogantly desired, and traytorously sewed, to have contrary to the Lawes of this our Realme. To the which most false Interpretations, and wraisting of our trewe Meanyng, they have joyned such myschevouise Lyes, and false Tales, for Marking of Cattalls, and others lyke sedyciouse Devises, whereupon our People were lately styrred to Sedicion and Insurrection, to their utter Ruine and Destruction, onles Allmighty God, who by his Divine Providence gave unto us habundance of Force, (as he allwayes doth unto Rightfull Prynces) had so with Clemencie illumyned us, that whereas we, with the Edge of the Sword, and by our Lawes might have overthrowen and destroyed them, their Wives, Children, and Posterite for ever; We nevertheles, as ye can right well remember, extended upon them at that Time our benygn and mercifull Pardon. Those miserable, and Papistical, Superstitiouse Wretches, nothing regarding the same, nor caryng what Daunger and Myscheef our People shuld incurre, have both rayfed the said old Rumors, and forged newe sediciouse Tales, intending (as much as in them lyeth) a newe Commocion, and all to satisfye their Cankered Herts. Wherefore, and for the immynent Daunger to you, and to all our good Subjects, and Trouble that might enfews, onles good and earnest Provision to repreffs them be taken thereupon: We desire and pray you, and nevertheles straitly charge and command you, that within the Precynct and Lymyt of your Charge, ye shall not only endeavour your selfs, and imploy your most Diligence, to inquire and fynde out such Canker'd Parsons, Vicars and Curats, which do not truely and substantially declare our said Injunctions, and the very Word of God, but momble confusely, saying that they be compelled to rede them,

them, and byd their Parishioners nevertheles to do as they did in Tymes past, to live as their Fathers, and that the Old Fashion is the best, and other Carstie Sediciouse Parables; but also with your most effectual Vigillancie do inferche and try out such Sediciouse Tale-Tellers, and Spreaders abroad of such Bruts, Tydings, and Rumours, touching us in Honour, or Suretie, the State of our Realm, or any Mutation of the Lawes, or Customes thereof, or any other Thing which might Cause any Sedition, and the same with their Setters-forth, Mayntenors, Counsaylers, Fautors, and Adherers with all Diligence to apprehend and commytte to Ward, or Prison, without bayl or mynprife till Evidence to be given against them, at the Arrivall of our Justice in that Country, or otherwise upon your Advertisement to us, or to our Counsell, to be given, to our further Pleasure known, they may be punished for their Sediciouse Demerits according to the Lawe, to the fearful Example of all others: Imploying and Indevoring your self therunto, so earnestly, and with such dexteritie as we may have Cause to think that ye be the Men which above all Thing desire the Punishment of Evil Doers and Offenders, and that will let for no travail to set forth all Things for the Common Peas, Quiet, and Tranquility of this our Realme: And like as the Daunger is Immynent no les to your Self and your Neighbours then to other, so ye of your own Mind shuld procure and see with Celeritie our Injunctions, Laws, and Proclamations, as well touching the *Sacramentaries* and *Anabaptists*, as others, to be set forth to the Good Instruction, and Conservation of our People, and to the Confusion of those which would so Craftely undermin our Common Wealth, and at the last destroy both you, and all other our Loving Subjects, although we should give unto you no such Admonishion: Therefore sayle ye not to follow the Effect, Admonishion and Commandment both in our said Letters, and in these Presents, and to Communicate the Whole tainour of these, and with such Justices of our Peas, your Neighbours, and other in that District, and to give unto them the trew Copie therof, exhorting them likeas by these we desire and pray, and nevertheles straitly Charge and Command you, and every of you, that you will shew your Diligence, Towardnes, and Good Inclination to see every Thing for his Parte, put in Execution accordingly, as ye and they tender our Pleasure, and will deserve our Condigne Thanks, given under our Signet at our Manner of *Hampton-Court*, the Day of *December*, in the 30th Year of our Reign.



## Number 65.

*The Design for the Endowment of Christ-Church in  
Canterbury.*

CottonLibrary  
Cleop. E. 4.  
P. 301.

	<i>l.</i>	<i>s.</i>	<i>d.</i>
<b>F</b> IRST a Provost	100	00	00
<i>Item</i> , 12 Prebendaryes, each of them at 40 <i>l.</i> by the Year	480	00	00
<i>Item</i> , 6 Preachers, every of them 20 <i>l.</i> a Year	120	00	00
<i>Item</i> , a Reader of Humanitie in <i>Greke</i> , by the Year	30	00	00
<i>Item</i> , a Reader in Divinitie in <i>Hebrew</i> , by the Year	30	00	00
<i>Item</i> , a Reader both in Divinitie and Humanitie, in <i>Latin</i> , by the Year	40	00	00
<i>Item</i> , a Reader of Civil	20	00	00
<i>Item</i> , a Reader of Physike	20	00	00
<i>Item</i> , 20 Students in Divinitie to be found 10 at Oxford, and 10 at Cambridge, every of them 10 <i>l.</i> by the Year	200	00	00
<i>Item</i> , 40 Scolers to be taught both Grammar and Logik in <i>Hebrew</i> , <i>Grek</i> , and <i>Laten</i> , every of them 5 Markes by the Year	200	Markes	
<i>Item</i> , a Schole-Master 20 <i>l.</i> and an Husher 10 <i>l.</i> by the Year	30	00	00
<i>Item</i> , 8 Pety-Canons to Sing in the Quer, every of them 10 <i>l.</i> by the Year	80	00	00
<i>Item</i> , 12 Layemen to sing also, and searve in the Quer, every of them 6 <i>l.</i> 13 <i>s.</i> 4 <i>d.</i> by the Year	80	00	00
<i>Item</i> , 10 Choristers, every of them 5 Markes by the Year	38	06	08
<i>Item</i> , a Master of the Children	10	00	00
<i>Item</i> , a Gospeler	006	13	04
<i>Item</i> , a Epistler	005	06	08
<i>Item</i> , 2 Sacristens	006	13	04
<i>Item</i> , 1 Chief Butler, his Wages and Diett	004	13	04
<i>Item</i> , 1 Under Butler, his Wages and Diett	003	06	08
<i>Item</i> , a Cater to Buye their Diett, for his Wages, Diett, and making of his Books	006	13	04
<i>Item</i> , 1 Chief Cook, his Wages and Diett	004	13	04
<i>Item</i> , 1 Under Cook, his Wages and Diett	003	06	08
<i>Item</i> , 2 Porters	10	00	00
<i>Item</i> , 12 Poor Men being Old, and Serving Men, decayed by the Warres, or in the King's Serving, every of them at 6 <i>l.</i> 13 <i>s.</i> 4 <i>d.</i> by the Year	80	00	00
<i>Item</i> , to be distributed Yearly in Alms	130	00	00

*Item*,

	<i>l.</i>	<i>s.</i>	<i>d.</i>
<i>Item</i> , for Yearly Reparations	100	00	00
<i>Item</i> , 6 be employed Yearly, for making and mending of High Wayes	40	00	00
<i>Item</i> , a Stuard of the Lands	006	13	04
<i>Item</i> , an Auditor	10	00	00
<i>Item</i> , for the Provost's Expences, and receyving the Rents, and Surveying the Lands, by the Year	006	13	04

Number 65.

*A Letter of Thomas Lord Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, to Cromwell, upon the New Foundation at Canterbury.*

*An Original.*

**M**Y very singular Good Lord, after my most hartie Commendations, these shall be to advertise your Lordshippe, that I have received your Letters, dated the 27th Day of *November*: And therewith a Bill concerning the Divise for the New Establishment to be made in the Metropolitan Church of *Canterbury*; by which your Lordshippe requireth my Advice thereupon by Writing, for our Mutual Consents. Surely my Lord, as touching the Books drawn, and the Order of the same, I think that it will be a very Substantiall and Godly Foundation; nevertheless, in my Opinion, the Prebendaries, which will be allow'd 40*l.* a Peece Yearly, might be altered to a more Expedient Use: And this is my Consideration, for having Experience, both in Tymes past, and also in our Daies, how the said Secte of Prebendaries have not only spent their Time in much Idleness, and their Substaince in superfluous Belly Chere, I think it not to be a convenient State, or Degree, to be mainteyned and established: Considering Firste, that commonly a Prebendarie is neither a Learner, nor Teacher, but a Good Viander. Then by the same Name they look to be Chief, and to bere all the hole Rule and Preheminence, in the College where they be Resident: By means whereof, the Younger of their own Nature, given more to Pleasure, Good Chere, and Pastime, then to Abstynance, Studye, and Learning, shall easily be brought from their Books to follow the Appetite and Example of the said Prebendaries being their Hedds and Rulers. And the State of Prebendaries hath been so excessively abused, that when Learned Men hath been admitted unto such Room, many Times they have desisted from their Good and Godlie Studies, and all other Vertuous Exercise of Preaching and Teaching: Wherefore if it may so stand with the King's Gracious Pleasure, I would wish that not only the Name of a Prebendarie were exiled his Graces Foundations, but also the superfluous Conditiones of such Persons. I cannot deny

*Cotton Library  
Cleop. F. 1.*



but that the Beginning of Prebendaries, was no lesse purposed for the Maintenance of Good Learning, and Good Conversation of Living, than Religious Men were: But for as much as both be gone from their First Estate and Order, and the one is found like Offendour with the other, it maketh no great Matter if they perish both together: For to say the Truth, it is an Estate which *St. Paule*, reckoning up the Degrees and Estates allowed in his Time, could not find in the Church of Christ. And I assure you, my Lord, that it will better stand with the Maintenance of Christian Religion, that in the stede of the said Prebendaries, were 20 Divines at 10 *l.* a Peece, like as it is appointed to be at *Oxford* and *Cambridge*; and 20 Students in the Tongues and *French*, to have 10 Marks a Peece; for if such a Number be not there Resident, to what intent should so many Reders be there. And surely it were great petie that so many good Lectures should be there redde in vain: For as for your Prebendaries, they cannot attend to applie Lectures for making of good Chere. And as for your 20 Children in Grammar, their Master and their Hufsher be daily otherwise occupied in the Rudiments of Grammer, then that they have Space and Time to hear the Lectures. So that to these good Lectures is prepared no convenient Auditorie. And therefore my Lord, I pray you let it be considered what a great Losse it will be, to have so many good Lectures Redde without Profit to any, saving to the 6 Preachers; farther, as concerning the Reader of Divinitie and Humanitie, it will not agree well, that one Man should be Reader of both Lectures, For he that studieth in Divinitie must leave the Reading of Profane Authors, and shall have as much to doe as he can to prepare his Lecture to be substantially redde. And in like manner he that redeth in Humanitie, hath not need to alter his Studie, if he should make an Erudite Lecture. And therefore in mine Opinion, it would be Office for ii sundry Learned Men. Now concerning the Dean, and others, to be elected into the College, I shall make a Bill of all them that I can here of in *Cambridge*, *Oxford*, or elsewhere, mete to be put into the said College, after my Judgment: And then of the hole Number, the King's Highness may choose the most Excellente, assuring you my Lord, that I know no Man more mete for the Dean's Room in *England*, then Doctor *Crome*, who by his Sincere Learning, Godly Conversation, and Good Example of Living, with his great Soberness, hath done unto the King's Majestie as good Service, I dare say, as any Priest in *England*. And yet his Grace daily remembreth all others that doth him Service, this Man only except, who never had yet, besides his Gracious Favour, any Promotion at his Highness Hands. Wherefore if it will please his Majestie to put him in the Dean's Room, I do not doubt but that he should shew Light to all the Deans, and Ministers of Colleges in this Realm. For I know that when he was but President of a College in *Cambridge*, his House was better ordered than all the Houses in *Cambridge* besides. And thus my Lord you have my finale Advice concerning the Premisses, which I referr unto the Kinges Graces Judgment, to be allowed or disallowed at his Highness Pleasure. Sending unto your Lordshipp herewithall the Bill  
again

again, according to your Request. Thus, my Lord, most hartely fare you well.

*At Croyden, the xxixth  
Day of November.*

Your own ever assured

*T. Cantuarien'.*

Number 66.

*A Part of a Letter concerning the Debates of the Six  
Articles in the House of Lords.*

AND also Newes here ; I assure you, never Prince shew'd himself so Wise a Man, so well Lernerd and so Catholick, as the Kinge hath done in this Parlyment. With my Penne I cannot expresse his marvelous Goodnes ; which is come to such effecte, that we shall have an Acte of Parliament, so spirituall, that I think none shall dare saye, in the Blessed Sacrament of the Aulter, doth remaine eyther Bred or Wyne after the Consecration ; nor that a Priest may have a Wife ; nor that it is necessarie to Receive our Maker *sub utraque Specie* ; nor that private Masses should not be used as they have be ; nor that it is not necessarie to have Auricular Confession. And notwithstanding my Lord of *Canterbury*, my Lord of *Ely*, my Lord of *Salisburie*, my Lord of *Worcester*, *Rocester*, and Saint *Davyds* defended the contrary longe tyme, yet finally his Highnes confounded them all with Goddes Lerner. *Yorke*, *Duram*, *Winchester*, *London*, *Chichester*, *Norwicke*, and *Carlile*, have shewed themselves honest and well Lernerd Men. We of the Temporaltie have been all of one Opynyon, and my Lord Chancellor and my Lord Privye Seale, as good as we can devise. My Lord of *Cant'* and all theis Bishopes have given ther Opinion, and came into us, save *Salisburie*, who yet contynueth a lewed Fole. Fynally, all *England* have cause to thank God, and most hertelie to rejoyse of the King's most Godlie Proceedings.

*Cotton Library  
Cleop. E. 5.  
P. 129.*



## Number 67.

*A Letter of the Visitor's, sent to Examine the Abbot of  
Glaffenbury.**Ex MSS.  
D. Tanner.*

PLEASE hyt your Lordship to be advertised, that we came to *Glaffenbury* on *Fryday* last past, about Tenn of the Clock in the Forenoone: And for that the Abbot was then at *Sbarpham*, a Place of hys, a Myle and somewhat more from thabbey, We, without any delay, went unto the same Place; and there, after certain Communication, declaring unto him theeffect of our coming, examined him upon certain Articles. And for that his Answer was not then to our Purpose, we advised him to call to his Remembrance that which he had as then forgotten, and so declare the Truth. And then came with him the same Day to the Abbey; and there of new proceeded that Night to search his Study for Letters and Books: and found in his Study secretly laid, aswell a written Book of Arguments, against the Divorce of his King's Majestie, and the Lady Dowager: Which we take to be a great Matter. As also divers Pardons, Copies of Bulls, and the Counterfit Lyfe of *Thomas Bequet* in Print. But we could not find any Letter that was materiall. And so we proceeded again to his Examination, concerning the Articles we received from your Lordship, in the Answers whereof, as we take it, shall appear his Canker'd and Traiterous Heart and Mind against the King's Majestie, and his Succession; as by the same Answers, syled with his Hand, and sent to your Lordship by this Bearer, more plainly shall appear. And so, with as fair Words as we could, we have conveyed him from hence into the *Tower*, being but a very weak Man, and sickly. And as yet we have neither discharged Servant nor *Monk*; but now the Abbot being gone, we will, with as much Celerity as we may, proceed to the dispatching of them. We have in Money, 300*l.* and above; but the Certainty of Plate, and other Stuffe there, as yet we know not, for we have not had Opportunity for the same; but shortly we intend (God willing) to proceed to the same; whereof we shall ascertain your Lordship, so shortly as we may. This is also to advertise your Lordship, that we have found a fair Chalice of Gold, and divers other Parcels of Plate, which the Abbot had hid secretly from all such Commissions, as have bine there in Times past; and as yet he knoweth not that we have found the same: Whereby we think, that he thought to make his Hand, by his Untruth to his King's Majesty. It may please your Lordship, to advertise us of the King's Pleasure, by this Bearer, to whom we shall deliver the Custody and Keeping of the House, with such Stuff as we intend to leave there, convenient to the King's Use. We assure your Lordship, it is the goodliest House of that Sort, that ever we have seen. We wold that your Lordship did know it, as we do;  
then

then we doubt not, but your Lordship would judge it a House mete for the King's Majesty, and for no Man else: Which is to our great Comfort; and we trust verily, that there shall never come any Double Hood within that House again. Also this is to advertise your Lordship, that there is never a one Doctor within that House; but there be Three Batchelors of Divinity, which be but meanly Learned, as we can perceive. And thus our Lord preserve your Good Lordship.

*From Glaftenbury, the 22d  
Day of September.*

Yours to Command,

*Richard Pollard.  
Thomas Moyle.  
Richard Layton.*

To the Ryght Honorable, and their  
Syngular good Lord, my Lord  
Pryvye Seale, thys be dd.

This agrees with the Original,  
in the Possession of

THOM. TANNER.

---

Number 68.

*Cromwell's Letter to the King, when he was committed  
to the Tower.*

**M**ost Gracyous King, and most Mercyfull Soverayng, your most humble, most obbeyfand, and most bounden Subject, and most lamentable Servant and Prysoner, prostrate at the Feet of your most Excellent Majestye, have herd your Pleasure by the Mouth of your Comptroller; which was, that I should wrytte to your most Excellent Highnes suche Things as I thought mete to be wrytten, considering my most myferable State and Condicyon. For the which your most haboundant Goodnes, Benignite and Lycens, the Immortall God, Three and One, rewarde your Majestye. And now, most Gracyous Prynce, to the Matter. Fyrst, Wher I have been accused to your Majestye of Treason, to that I saye, I never in all my Lyfe thought willinglye to do that Thing that might or should displease your Majestye, and much les to doe or saye that Thing, which of it self is so highe and abominable Offence, as God knoweth, who, I doubt not, shall reveale the Trewthe to your Highnes. Myne Accusers your Grace knoweth: God forgive them. For as I

*Cotton Library  
Titus, B. 1.*



ever have had Love to your Honour's Person, Lyfe, Prosperite, Health, Wealth, Joye and Comfort, and also your most Dear and most entyerly beloved Son, the Prynce his Grace, and your Proceedings. God so helpe me in this myne Adversyte, and confound me, yf ever I thought the contrarye. What Labours, Paynes, and Travailes I have taken, according to my most bounden Deutie, God also knoweth. For if it were in my Power, as it is God's, to make your Majestye to live ever yong and prosperous, God knoweth, I would, yf it had been, or were in my Power, to make you so riche as ye myght enriche all Men, God helpe me, as I would do it yf it had been, or were in my Power, to make your Majesty so puifsaint, as all the Worlde should be compellyd to obbey you, Christ he knowyth I woulde; for so am I of all other most bounde; for your Majesty hath been the most Bountiful Prince to me, that ever was King to his Subjects: ye, and more like a Dear Father, your Majesty not offended, then a Master. Such hath been your most Grave and Godly Councyles towards me at fundrye Tymes: in that I have offended I ask your Mercy. Should I now for suche exceeding Goodnes, Benignite, Liberalite and Bountye, be your Traytor, nay then the greatest Paynes were too lityll for me. Should any Faction, or any Affection to any Poynt, make me a Trayter to your Majestye, then all the Devylls in Hell confounde me, and the Vengeance of God light appon me, yf I should ons have thought it. Most Gracyous, Soverayng Lord, to my Remembrance, I never spake with the Chancellor of the Augmentations and *Throgmorton* together, at one Tyme. But yf I did, I am sure, I spake never of any such Matyer; and your Grace knoweth, what maner of Man *Throgmorton* hath ever been towards your Grace Proceedings: And what Master Channcler hath been towards me, God and he best knoweth. I will ne can accuse hym. What I have been towards hym, your Majestye right well knoweth. I would to Christ I hadd obeyed your often most gracious, grave Counsayles and Advertifments, then it had not been with me as now it is: Yet our Lorde, if it be his Will, can do with me, as he did with *Susan*, who was falsly accused. Unto the which God, I have onely commytted my Soule, and Bodye and Goods at your Majesties Pleasure, in whose Mercye and Pyete I do hollye repose me: For other Hope than in God and your Majestye, I have not. Syr, As to your Common Welth, I have, after my Wytt, Power and Knowledge, travayled therin, having had no Respect to Persons, (your Majestie onely except, and my Duty to the same) but that I have done any Injustice or Wrong willfully, I trust God shall be my Witnes, and the World not able justlye to accuse me: And yet I have not done my Duty in all Things, as I was bounde. Wherefore I aske Mercy. That I have herde of any Combinations, Conventicles, or such as were Offenders of your Laws, I have (though not as I should have done) for the most parte revealed them, and also caused them to be punished; not of Malise, as God shall judge me. Nevertheless, Sir, I have medelled in so many Matiers under your Highnes, that I am not able to answer them all. But one Thing I am well assured of, that wittingly and willingly, I have not had Will to offend your High-

Highnes. But harde it is for me, or any other medling as I have done, to live under your Grace, and your Lawes, but we must daily offende: And wher I have offended, I most humbly aske Mercy and Pardonne at your Gracious Will and Pleasure. Amongst other Things most Gracious Soveraigne, Master Comptroler shewed me, that your Grace shewed hym that within these 14 Days ye committed a Matter of great Secrecye, which I did reveal contrary to your Expectacyon: Syr, I do remember well the Matter, which I never revelid to any Creature: But this I did, Sir, after your Grace hade opened the Matter, fyrst to me in your Chamber, and declared your lamentable Fate, declaring the Things wich your Highnes myslyked in the Queen; at which Time I shewed your Grace that she often desired to speak with me, but I durst not: And ye said why should I not, alleging that I might do much good in goeing to her, and to be plain with her in declaring my Mind: I theruppon taking Opertynte, not being little greyved, spake prevely with her Lord Chamberlayn, for which I aske your Grace Mercie, desiring him, not naming your Grace to him, to finde some Means that the Queen might be inducid to order your Grace plesantlie in her Behaveour towards you, thinking therbie for to have hade some Faults amended to your Majesties Comfort; and after that by general Words, the said Lord Chamberlain, and other of the Queens Counsayle being with me in my Chamber at *Westminster*, for Lycens for the Departure of the strange Maydens, I then required them to Counsayle thair Mistresse to use all Pleasautnes to your Highnes: the which Things undoutedly were bothe spoken before your Majesty committed the Secret Matter unto me, onlie of Purpose that she might have been induced to such Pleasant and Honorable Passyons, as might have been to your Graces Comfort, which above all Things, as God knoweth, I did most covit and desire: but that I opened my Mouth to any Creature after your Majestie committed the Secresie therof to me, other than onlye to my Lord Admyrall, which I did by your Graces Commandment, which was uppon *Sunday* last in the Morning, whom I then founde as willing and glad to seek Remedye ffor your Comfort and Resolution, and saw by him that he did as much lament your Highnes Fate as ever did Man, and was wonderfullye grieved to see your Highnes so troubled, wishing greatly your Comfort, for the attaining whereof, he said your Honour salvyd, he would spend the best Blood in his Body, and if I would not do the like, ye, and willingly Die, for your Comfort, I would I were in Hell, and I would I should receyve a Thousand Deths. Sir, this is all that I have done in that Matter, and if I have offended your Majestie therin, prostrate at your Majesty's Feet, I most lowlye aske Mercy and Pardon of your Highnes. Sir, ther was also laide unto my Charge at mine Examinacion, that I had Retained contrarye to your Lawes; and what Expofycion may be made uppon Retaynours, I know not, but this will I saye, if ever I retayned any Man, but such onlye as were my Howshold Servants, but against my Will, God Confound me. Most Gracious Soveraign I have been so called on and sewyd to by them that said they were my Friends, that constrained therunto I retayned thair Chyldren and Friends, not as Retayners,



tayners, for their Fathers and Parents did Promise me to finde them, and so toke I them, not as Retayners, to my great Charge, and for none Evil, as God best knoweth, interpret to the contrary who will. Most humbly beseeching your Majestie of Pardon, if I have offended therein ; and I do knowlege my self to have been a most miserable and wretched Siner ; and that I have not towards God and your Highnes behaved my self as I ought and should have done ; for the which mine Offence to God, whiles I live I shall continually call for his Mercy, and for mine Offences to your Grace, which God knoweth, wer never malicious, nor willfull : And that I never thought Trefon to your Highnes, your Realme, or Posterite : So God helpe me, either in Word, or Dede ; nevertheles, prostrate at your Majesty's Feet in what Thing soever I have offended ; I appell to your Highnes for Mercy, Grace, Pardon, in such wise as shall be your Pleasure ; beseeching the Allmightie Maker, and Redeemer of this World, to send your Majesty continuall and long Helth, Welthe, and Prosperitie, with *Neslor's* Yeres to Reigne, and your most Dear Son, the Princes Grace, to prosper alwayes, and conteneue after you : and they that would contrarie, short Life, Shame, and Confusion : Writin with the quaking Hand, and most sorrowfull Harte, of your most sorrowfull Subject, and most humble Servant and Prisoner, this *Satyrday* at the *Tour* of *London*.

*Thomas Crumwell.*

---

Number 69.

*Questions concerning the Sacraments.*

The First Question.

**W**HAT a Sacrament is by the Scripture ?

The Second Question.

What a Sacrament is by the Antient Authors ?

The Third Question.

How many Sacraments there be by the Scriptures ?

The Fourth Question.

How many Sacraments there be by the Antient Authors ?

The

## The Fifth Question.

Whither this Word Sacrament be, and ought to be, attributed to the Seven only? And whither the Seven Sacraments be found in any of the Old Authors?

## The Sixth Question.

Whither the Determinate Number of Seven Sacraments be a Doctrine, either of the Scripture, or of the Old Authors, and so to be taught?

## The Seventh Question.

What is found in Scripture of the Matter, Nature, Effect, and Ver-  
tue of such as we call the Seven Sacraments; so as although the Name be not there, yet whether the Thing be in Scripture or no, and in what wise spoken of?

## The Eighth Question.

Whether Confirmation, *cum Chrismate*, of them that be Baptized, be found in Scripture?

## The Ninth Question.

Whether the Apostles lacking a Higher Power, as in not having a Christian King among them, made Bishops by that Necessity, or by Authority given by God?

## The Tenth Question.

Whether Bishops, or Priests, were First? And if the Priests were First, than the Priest made the Bishop.

## The Eleventh Question.

Whether a Bishop hath Authority to make a Priest by the Scripture, or no? And whether any other, but only a Bishop, may make a Priest?

## The Twelfth Question.

Whether in the New Testament be required any Consecration of a Bishop and Priest, or only appointing to the Office be sufficient?



## The Thirteenth Question.

Whether (if it fortun'd a Christian Prince Learned, to Conquer certain Dominions of *Infidels*, having none but Temporal Learned Men with him) if it be defended by God's Law, that he, and they, should Preach and Teach the Word of God there, or no? And also make and constitute Priests, or no?

## The Fourteenth Question.

Whether it be forefended by God's Law, that (if it so Fortune that all the Bishops and Priests of a Region were Dead, and that the Word of God should remain there unpreached, and the Sacrament of Baptism, and others unministred,) that the King of that Region should make Bishops and Priests to supply the same, or no?

## The Fifteenth Question.

Whether a Man be bound by Authority of this Scripture, (*Quorum Remiseritis*) and such like, to confess his Secret Deadly Sins to a Priest, if he may have him, or no?

## The Sixteenth Question.

Whether a Bishop, or a Priest, may Excommunicate, and for what Crimes? And whether they only may Excommunicate by God's Law?

## The Seventeenth Question.

Whether Unction of the Sick with Oil, to remit Venial Sins, as it is now used, be spoken of in the Scripture, or in any Antient Authors?

---

Number 70.

*An Answer to the former Queries ; with some Remarks  
on them, in the King's Hand written on the Margin : Together with some Persons Names ; but these are  
not written by the King.*

*Cotton Library  
Cleop. E. 5.*

1. **S**cripture useth the Worde ; but it defineth it not.

Why then should we call them so ?

2. In them is found no proper Definition, but a general Declaration of the Worde, as a Token of an Holly Thinge.

3. So named only Matrimony ; in Effects moo ; and at the left 7, as we finde in the Scripture expounded.

4. Auctors use the Word *Sacrament*, to signifie any My-sterie in the Old and New Testament ; but spiritually be-  
note Baptisme, Euckarist, Matrimonie, Chrisme, *Impositio Manuum, Ordo.*

Why these Seven to have the Name, more then the rest ?

5. The Worde, bycause it is General, is attribute to other thenne the Seven ; but whether it ought specially to be applied to the One only, God knoweth, and hath not fully revealed it soe as it hath been received.

*Arch-Bb. Cant. St. David's*

Why then hath the Church so long erred, to take upon them so to name them ?

6. The Thing of al is found, but not named al Sacra-ments, as afore.

7. The Doctrine of Scripture is to teach the Thinge, without Numbring or Namyng the Name *Sacrament*, say-  
ing only the Matrimony.

Old Auctors Number not precisely.

8. Scripture speaketh,

(1.) Of Baptisme manifestly.

(2.) Of the Holy Communion manifestly.

(3.) Of Matrimony manifestly.

(4.) Of Absolution manifestly.

(5.) Of Bishops, Priests and Deacons, Ordred *per Imposition Manuum cum Oratione*, expreffely.

*Arch-Bb. Cant.*

Then Pennance is chang-  
ed to a New Name, the Ab-  
solutio of Pennance. I read  
that without it we cannot  
be saved after Relapse, but  
not so of Absolution : And  
Pennance to Sinners is com-  
manded, but Absolution of  
open Crimes is left free to  
the Askers.

6. Laying of the Hands of the Bishop after Baptisme, which is a Parte of that is done in Confirmation, is grounded in Scripture.

Laying on of Hands being  
an old Ceremony, is but a  
small Proof of Confirmation.

7. Unction of the Sick, with Prayer, is grounded in Scripture.

*Arch. Cant. S. David's, Cox.*

Then shew where.

The Thing of Confirmation is found in Scripture ; the Name *Confirmation* is not there.

*Arch-Bp. Cant. S. Davids.*

The Answer is not direct,  
and yet it proveth nither of  
the Two Parts to be ground-  
ed in Scripture.

Of *Chrisma* Scripture speaketh not exprefsly ; but it hath been had in high Veneration, and observed fynnes the Beginning.



Where is this Distinction?  
Now, since you confesse that  
the Apostles did occupate  
the one Part, which you now  
confesse belongeth to Princes,  
how can you prove that Or-  
dering is only committed to  
you Bishops?

*Ubi hoc?*

Arch-Bp. *Cant.*

S. *David's*, *Cox.*

Arch. *Cant.*

B. *David's*.

9. The Calling, Naming, Appointment, and Preferment of one before an other, to be Bishop or Priest, had a Necessite to be don in that Sort, a Prince wanting. The Ordering appereth taught by the Holy Ghost in the Scripture, *per Manuum Impositionem cum Oratione*.

10. Bishops, or not after.

11. Scripture warranteth a Bishop (obeying High Powers as his Prince Christianed) to Order a Priest, *per Manuum Impositionem cum Oratione*: And so it hath been from the Beginning.

12. Of other, Scriptures speaketh not.

*Manuum Impositio cum Oratione*, is required, which is a Consecration; so as only Appointing is not sufficient.

13. It is to be thought, that God in such Care assisting the Perfection of such an Enterprize, would further teach and inspire the Conscience of such a Prince, what he should and might doe, more then is yet openly taught by the Scripture: which, in that Case, were a good Warrent to follow. For a secret Vocation supplieth, where an open wanteth.

14. Sinnes the Beginning of Christes Church, wherein Christ himself made Distinction of Ministers, the Order hath had a Derivation from one to another, *per Manuum Impositionem cum Oratione*. How it should begin again of an other Face, where it faileth by a Case, Scripture telleth not; no Doctor writte of it, that I have rede.

15. Bounde ordinarily.

16. They may, being before of their Prince auctorised to Minister for open, publike, dedly Synne.

Of Excommunication by others, we rede not in the New Testament.

17. The Thing is in Scripture, and in auncient Authors, according wherunto the Use should be: How it is in dede used, is a Matter of Fact, and not of Lernyng.

Against the 15th Article, these Names are set down.

<i>Yorke.</i>	<i>Curwen.</i>	<i>Edgworth.</i>
<i>Duresme.</i>	<i>Simon.</i>	<i>Day.</i>
<i>Carlisle.</i>	<i>Oglethorp.</i>	<i>Redman.</i>
<i>Winchester.</i>		<i>Robinson.</i>

And a little below.

<i>Canterbury.</i>	<i>Laton.</i>
<i>Hereford.</i>	<i>Tresham.</i>
<i>Rocheſter.</i>	<i>Cox.</i>
<i>Westminster.</i>	<i>Crayford.</i>
<i>S. David's.</i>	

But these Lists are not in the King's Hand.

## Number 71.

*Answers to these Queries.*

1. **S**cripture sheweth not what it is : but useth the Worde *Sacrament* in *Latyn*, for the Worde *Mysterium* in *Greek*. *Cotton Library  
Cleop. E. 5.*

2. *Sacrament*, by the Authours is called, *Sacri Rei Signum*, or *Visibile Signaculum*, *Sacro sanctum Signaculum*, *Visibile Verbum*, *Visibilis Forma Invisibilis Gratiae*; and perfytt Diffinition we fynde noone.

3. In Scripture, we fynde no Determyne Number of Sacraments.

4. There be very many in the most general Signification; and there is no precise, or determinate Number of Sacraments in the Auncient Authours.

5. Not only to the Seven; but to many more. We fynde in the Olde Auctours, Matrymony, the Holly Communyon, Baptisme, Confirmation, Ordre, Pennance, and Extrem Unction. In Pennance, it is doubted of the Name of *Sacrament*.

6. As touching the determinate Numbere of Seven only, we fynd neyther in the Scripture, nor Auncient Auctours, any such Doctrine that ther shulde be Seven onely.

7. Of *Baptisme*, Scripture speaketh, that by it Synnes be remitted.

Of *Eucharistia*; That we be united by it to Christe, and receive thereby Spirituall Nurrishment, to the Comforte of our Soules, and Remission of our Synnes.

Of *Matrymony*; That the Acte of it is made Lawfull, and without Synne; and Grace given, wherby to directe ordynately of the Lustes and Appetites of the Fleshe.

Of *Pennance*; That by it we be restored again to the Favour of God; from which we did fall by Synne.

Of *Ordre*; That by it, Grace is given to mynistr effectually in Preaching the Worde of God, and Ministracion of the Sacramentes.

Of *Confirmation*, (which is conteyned in Scripture, speaking *de Impositione Manuum post Baptisma*) it appeareth by Scripture, how thereby Encrease of Grace is given.

Of *Inunction of the Sick*, Scripture speaketh, that by Unction of the Sick, and Prayer of the Priestes, Comforte is given to the Sicke, and Synnes be forgiven him.

8. *Impositionem Manuum post Baptisma*, which we call Confirmation, we reade in the Scripture: But that it was don *Chrismate*, we fynde not in the Scripture expresse. But in the Old Auctours, we fynde, that *Chrisma* hath been used in the sayd Confirmation.



9. *Making of Bishops* hath Two Partes; Appointment, and Ordering. Appointment; whiche the Apostles, by Necessity, made by Common Election, and sometyme by their own severall Assignement, could not then be don by Christen Princes; because at that Tyme they were not: And now, at these Dayes, apperteineth to Christian Princes and Rulers. But, in the Ordering, wherein Grace is conferred, as afore the Apostells did folowe the Rule taught by the Holly Ghoste, *Per Manuum Impositionem, cum Oratione & Jejunio*.

10. Christe made his Apostles first, which were of his Making bothe Prestes and Bishops; but whether at one Time, some doubt.

After that, the Apostells made bothe Bishops and Prestes: The Names wherof in the Scripture be confounded.

11. A Bishop having Auctorite of his Christian Prince to give Orders, maye, by his Ministerye geven to him of God in Scripture, ordeyne a Preste. And we rede not, that any other, not being a Bishope, hathe, sence the Beginning of Christ's Church, ordered a Preste.

12. Onely Appointment is not sufficient, but Consecration, that is to saye, Imposition of Handes, with Fasting and Prayour, is also required. For so the Apostles used to order them that were appointed; and so have been used continually: And we have not rede the contrary.

13. In that Necessite, the Prince and his Lernerd Men shulde Preache and Teache the Worde of God, and Baptize. But as for Making and Constituting Prestes, the Prince shall and may thenne do, as God shall thenne by Inspiration teache him: Which God hath promised to do allwayes to his Church, in Revling and Teaching every necessary Knowledge, where any Doubt requiring Discussion doth arryse.

14. The Aunswer to the other Question next before, dissolveth this.

15. He that knoweth himself gylty of any secrete deadly Synns, must, if he will obtaine the Benefite of Absolucion ministred by the Preste, confesse the same secrete Synnes unto him.

*Absolution* to be ministred by a Preste, if a convenient Preste may be had, is necessarie.

*Absolution* by a Preste, is the surest waye, if he may be conveniently had.

16. Bishops and Prestes auctorised by the Prince, may Excommunicate, by Godes Lawe, for publique and open Crimes: But that other thenne Bishops or Prestes may Excommunicate, we have not rede in Scripture. Some Scolemen saye, that other thenne Prestes, or Bishops deputed therunto by the Church, maye Excommunicate; because it is an Acte *Jurisdictionis*, and not *Ordinis*.

17. We fynde it spoken of in Scripture, and in Olde Authors.

## Number 72.

*The Examination of Q. Katherine Howard.*

**B**Eing again examined by my Lord of *Canterbury* of Contracts and Communications of Marriage between *Deerham* and me : I shall here answer faithfully and truly, as I shall make Answer at the last Day of Judgment ; and by the Promise that I made in Baptism, and the Sacrament that I received upon *Allhallowes-Day* last past. First, I do say, that *Deram* hath many Times moved unto me the Question of Matrimony ; wherunto, as far as I remember, I never granted him more than before I have confessed : And as for these Words, *I promise you, I do Love you with all my Heart*, I do not remember that ever I spake them. But as concerning the other Words, that I should Promise him by my Faith and Troth, that I would never other Husband but him, I am sure I never spake them.

Examined what Tokens and Gifts I gave to *Deram*, and he to me : I gave him a Band and Sleeves for a Shirt. And he gave me a Heart's-Ease of Silk for a New-Years-Gift, and an Old Shirt of Fine *Holland* or *Cambricke*, that was my Lord *Thomas* Shirt, and my Lady did give it him. And more than this, to my Remembrance, I never gave him, nor he to me, saving this Sommer Ten Pounds about the Beginning of the Progresse.

Examined whether I did give him a finall Ring of Gold upon this Condition, that he should never give it away. To my Knowledge I never gave him no such Ring, but I am assured upon no such Condition.

Examined whether the Shirt, Band, and Sleeves were of my own Work. They were not of my Work ; but, as I remember, *Clifton's* Wife of *Lambeth* wrought them.

And as for the Bracelet of Silkwork, I never gave him none ; and if he have any of mine, he took it from me.

As for any Ruby, I never gave him none to set in Ring, nor for other Purpose. As for the *French Fenel*, *Deram* did not give it me, but he said there was a little Woman in *London* with a crooked Back, who was very cunning in making all Manner of Flowers. And I desired him to cause her to make a *French Fenel* for me, and I would pay him again when I had Money. And when I was First come into Court, I paid him as well for that, as for diverse other Things, to the Value of Five or Six Pound. And Truth it is, that I durst not wear the said *French Fenel*, until I had desired my Lady *Breerton* to say that she gave it me.

As for a small Ring with a Stone, I never lost none of his, nor he never gave me none.

As for Velvet and Satten for Billyments, a Cap of Velvet with a Feather, a quilted Capp of Sarcenet and Money, he did not give me, but at my desire he laid out Money for them to be paid again. For all



all which Things I paid him, when I came into the Court. And yet he bought not for me the quilted Cap, but only the Sarcenet to make it of. And I delivered the same to a little Fellow in my Lady's House, as I Remember, his Name was *Rose*, an Embroiderer, to make it what Work he thought best, and not appointing him to make it with *Freer's* Knots, as he can testify, if he be a true Man. Neverthelesse, when it was made, *Deram* said, What Wife here be *Freer's* Knots for *Fraunce*.

As for the Indenture and Obligation of an Hundred Pound, he left them in my Custody, saying, that if he never came again, he gave them clearly unto me. And when I asked him whether he went, he said he would not tell me untill his Return.

Examined whether I called him Husband, and he me Wife. I do Answer, that there was Communication in the House that we Two should Marry together; and some of his Enemies had Envy thereat, wherefore, he desired me to give him Leave to call me Wife, and that I would call him Husband. And I said I was content. And so after that, commonly he called me Wife, and many Times I called him Husband. And he used many Times to Kifs me, and so he did to many other commonly in the House. And, I suppose, that this be true, that at one Time when he kissed me very often, some said that were present, *they trowed that he would never have Kissed me enough*. Whereto he answered, *Who should Lett him to Kifs his own Wife?* Then said one of them, *I trowe this Matter will come to passe as the Common Saying is. What is that, quoth he. Marry, said the other, That Mr. Deram shall have Mrs. Katherine Howard.* By *St. John*, said *Deram*, *you may guesse Twice, and guesse worse*. But that I should Wink upon him, and say secretly, *What and this should come to my Lady's Ear?* I suppose verily there was no such Thing.

As for Carnall Knowledge, I confesse as I did before, that diverse Times he hath lyen with me, sometime in his Doublet and Hose, and Two or Thre Times naked: But not so naked that he had nothing upon him, for he had alwayes at the least his Doublet, and as I do think, his Hose also, but I mean naked when his Hose were putt down. And diverse Times he would bring Wine, Strawberryes, Apples, and other Things to make good Chear, after my Lady was gone to Bed. But that he made any special Banquet, that by Appointment between him and me, he should tarry after the Keyes were delivered to my Lady, that is utterly untrue. Nor I never did steale the Keyes my self, nor desired any Person to steal them, to that Intent and Purpose to lett in *Deram*, but for many other Causes the Doores have been opened, sometime over Night, and sometime early in the Morning, as well at the Request of me, as of other. And sometime *Deram* hath come in early in the Morning, and ordered him very lewdly, but never at my Request, nor Consent.

And that *Wilks* and *Baskervile* should say, what Shifts should we make, if my Lady should come in suddenly. And I should Answer, that he should go into the Little Gallery. I never said that if my Lady came, he should go into the Gallery, but he hath said so himself, and so he hath done indeed.

As for the Communication of my going to the Court, I remember that he said to me, that if I were gone, he would not tarry long in the House. And I said again, that he might do as he list. And further Communication of that Matter, I remember not. But that I should say, it grieved me as much as it did him, or that he should never Live to say thou hast swerved, or that the Teares should trickle down by my Cheeks, none of them be true. For all that knew me, and kept my Company, knew how glad and desirous I was to come to the Court.

As for the Communication after his coming out of *Ireland*, is untrue. But as far as I remember, he then asked me, if I should be Married to Mr. *Culpepper*, for so he said he heard reported. Then I made Answer, What should you trouble me therewith, for you know I will not have you ; and if you heard such Report, you heard more than I do know.

*Katherine Howard.*

Number 73.

*A Letter of Sir W. Paget's, of his Treating with the  
Admiral of France.*

*An Original.*

PLEASE it your most Excellent Majestie to be advertised that the 16th of this Present, I received Letters from my Lordes, and others of your Majesties Privey Counsaile, conteyning such several Conferences as your Majestie, and certain of your said Counsaile, have had with the *French* Ambassader there sithens my last Dispeche. And Yesterday having the Furst Opertunitie to speke with the Admiral, I said unto him, that albeit it was likelyhode that the King, his Master's Ambassader then in *England*, did from Time to Time advertise them of the Proesse of the Matier now in Treatie ; yet your Majestie reputing him to be a Man of Honor and singular Vertue, and such a one, as with Right Judgment doth consyder the hole State of his Master's Causes, with the Circumstances ; and therefore conceiving no little Affection towards him, had commanded me to signifie unto him, to the Intente he might knowe certainly the Plainnes of every Thing, what Communication had now last been had with their Ambassador there. For the which, rising from his Seate, and making a gret and humble Reverence ; after that he had given Thanks unto your Majestie, and with Two or Three Great Othes declared his



Affection towards you; I entred the Accomplishment of your Majesties Commandment. And when I had declared unto him from Point to Point at length, and Word by Word (for it was a Lesson meet to be learned without Book) as is conteyned in the said Letter, aswel the Communicacion had with your Counsaile at the Furst Congresse, and such Kingly and Philosophicall Conference as your Majestie had with him your self; as also the Seven Points uttered by your Majesties Counsaile at their last Assemblies; and finally, the Epiloge of all together pronounced of your said Counsaile as of themselves; which he herd all together, not without Twenty Sighes, and casting up his Eyes, for I marked him when he was not ware of it; accrossing himself, and gyving a gret Sigh, he saide, As for the Amytie which ought to be between our Masters, how much I have travailed, and do travaile for the Confirmation of it, God is my Judge; and almost all the World knoweth that I am an *English-French* Man, and that next after my Master, I esteem the King your Master's Finger, more than I do any Prince's Body in all the World, and would be glad to give all the Goods I have in the World, that this Matter went through between them; for I perceive by my Master that he will not lyve alone, and yet I am sure he will seek no new Friendship, nor accept none offred, until the King your Master have refused this. As touching this Matter, I knowe they be two Princes of such Honour, and of Wise Conduct in all their Things; that though this Marriage had never been spoken of, they would have continued Friends according to their Treaties, and this Overture was never opened, neither for Confirmation, nor for encrease of Amitie between them; for greater cannot be, but Marriage and Commiſſion of Blood with Blood, doth unite and knit Generation to Generation, and Posteritie; the Benefit whereof how great it will be; how many Inconveniencies may therby be avoided by Proceſſe of Time; the Wifest Man may soner think then be able to expreſs. But, alas, said he, what is Two Hundred Thousand Crowns to give in Marriage with so great a King's Daughter to Monsieur *Dorleans*. Four Hundred, Five Hundred Thousand is nothing to him; Monsieur *Dorleans* is a Prince of great Courage; Monsieur *Dorleans* doth aspire to Great Things, and such is his Fortune, or els I am wonderfully deceived. It will grieve my Master much when he shall here of this basse Offer, as we have not herd yet from our Ambassador; I marvel therof not a little; nay to tell you plainly, as one Friend should tell another, there is farre gretter Offers, if we would herken unto them, we might have in redy Money with the Daughter of *Portugall*, Foure Hundred Thousand Ducates, with the Increase that hath grown of it sithens her Father's Departure, which will amount to asmuch and more. At the Furst breaking of this Matter, it was said the Man must desyre the Woman; now that we have desired her, you will give nothing with her, for what is Two Hundred Thousand Crowns, and herewithall giving a great Sigh, stayed. And I because I perceived his Tale, such as was meet to be answered, said unto him, Monsieur L' Admiral I have no more to say unto you on my Master's Behalf, then I have said unto you already. But for because you have made a long Discourse as  
it

it was fumewhat replying to that that I have rereported; if it shall like you to give me Leave to say myn own Fantasye, as a Man that would this Thing shuld take effect, if it may be equally done, I woll saye it. Yes, quoth he, with all my Hart: Why shuld not we talke together friendly, as Two that be Servants to Two great Friends; and I neither to take your Words to be spoken as of an Ambassader, nor you to take my Words to be spoken of him that holdeth the Place about his Master that I do? Sir, quoth I, as touching the Benevolence you bear unto my Master, you may think it well employed; as well for that my Master (I think) conceirne like Opinion of you in that Parte, as also for that you have proved my Master alwayes to be a perfect Friend unto your Master. And to saye to you frankly myn Opinion: Albeit I am no Man at Home, neither of great Place, nor of great Counsaile, yet have I beene of Court: And Men, you knowe, of like Sorte, whenne they mete together, will be oftentimes talking of Matiers that they have litle to do in, and bable of Heresayes. And I being one of that Sorte, have many tymes herd, that my Master hath been allwayes much affected unto your Master, and hath shewed towards him great Kindnes, when that if he would have taken Offers for the contrary, he might have had inestimable Benefites. Yea, and that he hath been so well mynded unto your Master, that neither the Maner of your Truce taken with the Emperour, nor your Strangenes at the Emperour's being here, nor *Pole's* Passage, nor the Conveying of *Brancester*, nor the Reteining of the Hofyer that called himself *Blancherose*, nor *Cowbridge*, nor nothing els could alienate him from you, such hath been his Friendship towards you. And therefore, (I said) if you love him, *vous avez Raison*. And if you have set furth this Mariage for Love, let it appere. Is not Two Hundred Thousand Crowns a Faire Offer? I graunt you well, that Monsieur *D'orleans* aspireth to Gret Things, and is of great Courage: And Reason it is, for he is a Great King's Sonne; and such a King, as both may and must, if he will have his Courage mainteyned, give him wherewithall. It is not Reason, that my Master shuld mainteyn his Courage. My Master hath a Sonne of his owne, whom I trust he shall live to see a Man of Courage, and will, I doubt not, provide him thereafter. And as for his Daughter, he doth consyder her as Reason requyreth. Had King *Loweys* any more with one of my Master's Systers, than Three Hundred Thousand Crownes; and the King of *Scotts*, with another, any more than One Hundred Thousand? If our Friendship be advisable unto you, (for that was his Terme) as you say it is, seke it by reasonable Meane, I doubt not but you shall obtaine it; and ask reasonably with her, and it shall be granted you to. By my truth, quoth he, and so we doe. Doe you so; quoth I? I have allwayes noted you a Man of Reasone, and so rereported you: Turne the Case, quoth I. Would you remitt Eight Hundred Thousand Crownes, discharge an Hundred Thousand a Year, for the Mariage of your Daughter? Yea, by my truth, would I; quoth he. For the Eight Hundred Thousand Crowns I compte nothing: And as for the Pension, She shuld have redubled here in *France*; and we would



would be Amys to Amys, and Enemies to Enemies: I meane, *pour la Defence de nostre Estats*, quoth he. *Par nostre Dame*, quoth I, you shall not be myn Auditour. Here is all the Matier, quoth I. You take a wrong Pathe: You compte these Eight Hundred Thousand Crownes nothing; and we, if it were wayed in an indifferent Ballance, think they should waye down Tenne Hundred Thousand. We have a Saying in *England*, *A Penny at a time is worth a Pound*. He that should lend me Three or Four Hundred Crowns at my Nede, shuld do me even more Pleasure, then to offer me Tenne Hundred when I neded not: So much esteeme I Money lent at such a tyme. Consyder our Parte, quoth he, and we must knowledge it great: Consyder your Parte, quoth he, it is nothing. The Payn is past, and not to be reckened upon. You say not much amiss, quoth I, if we had an Evil Debter; but our Debter is Riche ynough, and a good Debter. And though he have been bold of a long Respite with his Friend, yet he will pay it, quoth I. I doubt not, quoth he, but the Princes will observe their Treaties. My Master hath, and will, I am sure, quoth I; and so I think will yours. I wot not what to say, quoth he. Marrye, quoth I, do that that I have said heretofore: Aske reasonably for the Dote, and make a Recyproque for the rest, if you would be eased of it. Marke this, for it is to be embraced, and a great Mariage to Monsieur *D'orleans*. By my Trough, quoth he, the Dote you have offered is nothing: And if I wer as King *Lewys* and the King of *Scotts* wer, I would rather take your Daughter in her Kyrstel, and more Honour wer it for me, then, being Monsieur *D'orleans*, to take her with Eight Hundred Thousand Crowns. But I wote not what you meane by that Reciproque. Mary, quoth I, it is to do somthing again of like Goodnes to the Thing, that you desire to have done unto you. As, quoth I, you desire to have our Daughter, and for her you will give your Sonne: There is one for an other. Your Sonne is the Reciproque of our Daughter. You would have Two Hundred Thousand Crowns with her; the Reciproque of that must be a like Jointer. Here is Sonne for Daughter, Dowery for Dote. Now, if you will be discharged of 600000 Crowns; what other Thing, that is as good, shall we have for that, and also for our Pencion? Devise a Reciproque. O Monsieur *L'Ambassadeur*, quoth he, I understand your Reciproque well. The King your Master is a Gentle Prince, and a Great Prince; and what Grive shuld it be to him, to lett passe Eight Hundred Thousand Crowns, and ywys we be not able to pay them. In Faith, quoth I, seing he hath borne so long with you for sum: And if you will give some in Hand, I think he will give you Terms for the rest. Ah Monsieur *L'Ambassadeur*, quoth he! and shoke his Head. As for the Pension, quoth he, you shall have a Reciproque here, a Dowery mete for it. Nay, quoth I, your Relative agreeth with a wrong Antecedent. My Master is the Antecedent, and the Reciproque must be to him, and not to Monsieur *D'orleans*, for he should have the Benefite by it. Nay, quoth he, it is your Master's Daughter, and it is no more but for your Master to give from

from himself to his Daughter. Ywys, the Queen of *Navarre's* Daughter is a greater Mariage. And as for the Eight Hundred Thousand, if I were a right Man, and able to give, I would paye a grete Pece of it my self, er it shuld stick. What the Queen of *Navarre's* Daughter is, I know not, quoth I: But if you might have my Master's Daughter upon these Conditions, you might say, you had such a Mariage as was never herd of. And here we stay'd both. At the last, quoth he, suddenly, When it was told me Yesternight, that you sent to speke with me, I thought it was for these Matiers: And all this Night I have turned and tossed, and thought upon them. I would God it had never been spoken of, if it take not effect. And evyn now cummyth into my Head the Overture that the King your Master made ones unto me. What Overture was that, quoth I? Mary, quoth he, the Overture of the Mariage of the Lady *Elizabeth*, his Daughter; you to have had Recompence for the perpetuel Pencion upon Monsieur *de Vandome's* Lands: And for the Pencion Vyager, to have bene converted to a Estate. Without any other Recompence, quoth I? Yes, quoth he. We shuld have bene Enemys to Enemys, and left the Bishop of *Rome*. That was sumwhat, quoth I; and yet not a Reciproque; because you shuld not have given as good as you tooke. But then, was none Arrerage, quoth I? And here he paused again. I will tell you my Fantasy, quoth he; but you shall promise me by your Faith, that I shall never heare of it again. I woll speke it unto you, as a Freinde to a Freinde; and peradventure neither of both Parties will like it. Sir, quoth I, you shall never take Dishonour by Things you shall say to me. What, quoth he, if the Overture shuld take effect in one Parte? As how, quoth I? Mary, quoth he, the Arrerage to be remitted, for the Mariage of your Daughter. And because you think it great, we to becum Friends to Friends, and Enemys to Enemys, and so to enter Warre together: And of that, that shuld be conquered by commyn Expenses, to lay out first a Recompence for your Pension Viager, and the perpetuel Pencion to be supplied, as the King your Master devised. How like you this Devise, quoth he? Mary, said I, if you will heare a Fool's Answer, I like it not: For what need we to fight for that we have already? Mary, quoth he, then you shuld have it *in perpetuum*. What if you desyred this for a Reciproque? Mary, quoth I, peradventure my Master might purchase more Land another waye than that might cost him. Why shuld we desire Warre, quoth I; we have no Quarrell? It is true, quoth he; but we would be the Authors. And if you covenanted to be Enemye to Enemye, would you not joyne Warre with us? By my Trough, Sir, quoth I, you be entred now into a Deep Matier, which passeth my Capacitie. It is a great Matier indeed, quoth he: But I talk with you privement, neither because I would have you to declare this to your Master, nor for that I will declare it to myne: And yet both you and I may use Meanes to the same Ende. Well, quoth I, I see you make Cursey at the Matier, and would have a great Commodity, and yet are loth to offer for it. But I say unto you as a Friend, Aske, and offer reasonably, and go roundly to worke, and make an ende of it. For, I fear, I may say to you,



if you will not, others will. Yea, quoth he, we knowe the Emper-  
or practiseth with you, as he doth with us; and that the Bishop  
of *London* hath brought him Three fayre Palfreys from the King  
your Master, for a Present. I name no Man, quoth I: But whe-  
ther the Emperor practiseth with you, I reoport me to his Offers and  
his Demands. I think, he practiseth with us both, quoth he, onely  
to dissever us: For with your Master he will not joyne, onles he  
will returne again unto the Pope. For so his Nuntio told the Chan-  
celor, and the Chancelour told the Queen of *Navarre*; who fell out  
with him upon the Occasion of that Conference, and told him, he  
was ill ynough before, but now sithens he hath gotten the Marke of  
the Beast, (for so She called it, because he was lately made Priest)  
he was worse and worse. But to my Purpose, quoth he: I think  
the Emperor practiseth with us both; he seeketh nothing els, but to  
dissever us. You speake of his Offers and his Demaunds, quoth he;  
knowe you what they be? No, quoth I. And yet, indeed, I did  
cume by the Knowledge of them within 24 Howres before. Mary,  
quoth he, he would make the Duke of *Orleans* King of *Naples*,  
and give us the Seigneurye of *Flanders*. They be faire Offers, quoth  
I: But what be his Demands? Wherat he smiled. By my Trough,  
quoth he, I will tell you. He desireth a Renunciation of the Title  
of *Milan* and *Navarre*, and the Restitution of *Piedmount* and *Savoy*.  
What say you to it, quoth I? The King, my Master, will none of  
it, quoth he; for he thinketh, that the next War that shuld fall,  
being so great Distance between the Father and the Sonne, the Em-  
peror would send the Duke of *Orleans* to his Father, *une Baton  
blanche*. I have herd saye, quoth I, the Duke of *Cleves* also la-  
boureth now fore to have his Wife Home, and smyled therwith.  
Why, quoth he, heare you any thing? Yea, mary, quoth I; I hear  
saye, the Emperor is in great Practise with the Duke of *Cleves*; and  
that he hath made him Half a Promise, that for to have *Gelders*  
quietly, he and his Wife will renounce the Title of *Navarre*. Which  
indeed I had never herd. But musing upon the Word before, it  
came into my Head at that Time, and chauncyng then to speake  
it, I stricke the Admirall into a great Dumpe. Wherin, when he  
had pawfed a great while, I said, Sir, I desease you. No, no, Mon-  
sieur *L'Ambassadeur*, quoth he: She is too young and sickly, to go  
out of this Country. When Monsieur *de Cleves*, quoth he, hath  
done the King fume good Service, and declared himself to all the  
World to be *pour Le Roy*, then shall he have his Wife. You know  
what you have to do, Sir, quoth I: But seeing you see the World  
so full of Practises, it is good Dealing with them that meane plain-  
ly. Yo say Trough, quoth he; and so it is. We knowe, the Em-  
peror doth nothing but practise with us, as he doth with your Mas-  
ter: And we knowe, how he offereth your Master, to accord  
hym with the Pope, without Breache of his Honour; and that  
it shall be at the Pope's Suite. I am privye, quoth I, of no  
fuche Matiers; but if the Emperor desyre my Master's Friend-  
ship, I cannot greatly blame him, consyderinge he knoweth  
partely by his own Experience, and partely by evident Tokens  
towards

towards other Men, my Master is a Friendly Friend. And as for the Bishop of *Rome*, quoth I, if he sue to be restored to my Master's Favour again; I think it will be herd for him to obteyn it, for Vertue and Vice cannot stand together in one Predicament. Call you him Vice, quoth he, he is the very Diuel. I trust once to see his Confusion. I have begune to pick him a little, I trust to pick him better. Every Thing must have a Tyme and a Beginning. But when begin you, quoth I; I think, quoth he, er it be ought long. The King, my Master, will conuerte all the Abbeis of his Realme, into the Possession of his Laye Gentlemen, and so go furth by little and little, (if you will join with us) to overthrow him altogether; why may not we have a *Patriark* here in *France*? Which Purpose, I think, he doth perceiue, and his Legate therfore, now in *Almayn*, offred that for a Reformation there should be a Council called, and appointed the Place either *Mantua*, *Verona*, or *Cambray*: He had as lief be hanged, quoth he, as have a General Council; and even then will that be his Sentence. I would fayne see you ones begyne somewhat, quoth I. A Monsieur *Le Ambassadeur*, quoth he, I am sherevvely matched. Why so, quoth I, is not your Master a King, and if he mynde that you speake of, who can match you? He favoreth Wondrous well, quoth he, but every Thing I saye must have a Tyme: who was a greater Champyon for the Pope then was your Master, now who is more contrary? If they might ones, quoth he, speke together, I think it will be one of the grettest Benifites that ever came to *Chrisendome*, but that cannot well be, untill these Matiers cum to some nerer Point. The Faulte is not in us, quoth I, that it is not at a nerer Point. Nor it shall not be long of us, quoth he; but paradventure sum of your Master's Counsaile moveth him more to the Emperor's Friendship. And what is that Friendship in comparison of this Friendship. *England* is a Kingdome perpetuel, and so is *France*. Our Masters, their Children, their Succession, may joyne for ever. We be under one Clyme, and of one Complexion: We be at Hande one to another. The Emperor is but one, and when he is Dead, sum *Almayn* may be Emperor, I wot not who, Truth it is, *Spayne* is a Kingdome, but what is that alone: As for *Flanders*, it shall be our Friend if we joyne together. And as for *Italy*, when the Emperor is Dead, who shall be Master trowe you. And if the Emperor might live allways, what is his Friendship. He careth not if Friend, Father, and all together shuld sinke, so as his insatiable Desyre to Reign might be satisfied: Did he not suffer Two of his Brethren-in-Lawe to perishe for lack of Fifty Thousand Crowns; furst the King of *Hungarye*, and after the King of *Denmark*, whom he might have restored with Ten Thousand Crowns. He is a Covetous Man, saving the Honour of a Prince, and yet he is now base ynough, and therefore let us take him while he is Lowe, before he take his Breth. Sir, quoth I, you are a Man of a great Trade, and knowe to Discourse of Things better than I am able to conceyve. If you esteeme the Effect of this Matier so necessary for you, and the Emperor's Friendship such as you speke of; take then a direct waye for the compassing of it. And if you have any Thing in your Stomachs, that you would have uttered, but not to many, let your Ambassadour  
utter



utter it to sum one, and lett him utter it not coldly, but frankly ; and that is the next waye to make an Ende. Would God Monsieur *Le Ambassadeur*, quoth he, lay it in my Hande, it shuld then be sone at an Ende. Put to your Good Will, quoth I, in an Honest Cause, God will help you : I marvaile much, quoth he, we here not from our Ambassader there ; so do I, quoth I, by lykelyhood he is ill at ease, or his Man is like by the Way, or some other like Matier. When send you into *England*, quoth he : I have no great Matiers to write of, quoth I ; and yet I am determind within a day or two to send into *England* ; for I have appointed my Bank to be made at *Paris*, but now I must sende to have it changed to *Lyons* ; because I here saye the King goeth thither. I pray you, quoth he, conveye a Lettre to our Ambassadeur in *England*, which I will send to you to morrow, which I promised him. And brake our Communication, and so ready to depart, and standing, I asked him whither the Ambassadeur was come to the King out of *Almayn*, or no ? He asked me which Ambassadeur ? I told him for Aid against the *Turk*. No, no, quoth he ; Thinketh Men my Master is so unwise to aid the Emperour and King *Ferdinand* for the Defence of *Hungarye*, their private Dominion ? Should my Master mainteyn their Estate at his Dispens, which keep his State from him ? Not but if it wer to defend *Almayn*, my Master would help the best he could. What doth the King your Master ? Giveth he any Ayde ? I know not, quoth I, that any hath been yet asked. If any be, I think his Majesty will make a reasonable Answer ; and thus we departed.

Sir, your Majestie hath heard truely reported, the diverse Communication and Varietie of Matier that hath passed between the Admirall and me : Wherin when I consyder myn accustomed Protestations me thinketh, he shuld take none Advantage of me ; and on the other side, when I remember the Simplesnes of my Wit with the Scarcitie of myn Experience, joynnyng therewithall their Proceeding with other your Majesties Ambassadeurs heretofore, whose Saing they reaporte at Will for their Purposes ; I cannot but tremble, fearing that sumthing may have passed me to hotely, sum what to coldly, sumthing spoken more then neded, or sumthing left out that shuld have been spoken. But sure you ar my Sayntuary, and my Trust is only in your Equanimite ; whom I beseech most humbly of your gracious and favourable Interpretation, and of your Benignitie, to consyder that this is the furst time that ever I came *in arenam* ; and he with whom I am matched, is an old Player ; nevertheles, if I had Experience or Wit to judge a Man, I would think him by his Words and Countenance to be none Imperiall, and an utter Enemye to *Rome* ; and yet I must note a Practise in him, for that he hath promised me twise one shuld be sent over, and none is yet sent. And besides that, whereas he hath told me heretofore, that no Man knewe of this last Treatye, but he and Madame *Destampes*, adding yesterday the Queen of *Navarre*. I know of the Demands the Ambassadeur hath made there, by other Meanes then by your Majesties Signification : But your Majestie knoweth him farre better I am sure, than my foolish Wit can comprehend. And therefore I leave to your most Excellent Wisdome the Judgment of his Proceedings,

ings, the Circumstance whereof your Majestie knoweth without Addition or Diminucion of any thing, as nere as I could carye it away.

As touchinge the Occurrents of this Court, it may please your Majestie to be advertised, that the Emperor's Grand Escuyer passed by *Paris* Eight Days agoe into *Flanders*, and came not att the Court.

It is said here that the Emperor is in great Practise, with your Majestie, for the Marriage of the Lady *Mary*, your Majesties Daughter, which they think here the rather to be true, for that you have sent the Bishop of *London* to be Ambassador there, whom they note here to be an Imperial, Saing commonly that the Marriage between *France* and *England* is dashed.

Certain Merchants of *Lyons*, and Monsieur *Langey*, a Partener with them, have Sentence for them of Threescore and Tenne Thousand Crowns against the State of *Florence*, and Reprisalls out for Execution.

*Salmaiti* and *Antenori*, Two *Florentynes*, having their Houses in *Lyons*, who wer *fideinssores de soluendo indicato*, be fled into the Emperor's Dominion in *Bresse*.

The *Florentynes* take the Matier greivously, and think there is no Justice in *France*, for they had moved theyr Case before in all the Universities and Courts of *Italy*, and thinking it out of Doubt, offred to put it to the Judgement of *France*, wherof now they repent them, and will in no wise stand to it. And to advertise your Majesty of the Case briefly; the State of *Florence* bought of certain Marchants of *Lyons* a Quantitie of Wheate to such a Sume, to be delivered at *Florence* before such a Day. The Wheat arryved not before Eight Daies after the Tyme appointed. The *Florentines*, constreyned by Necessity, provided themselves other ways, and say the Bargain is voyde. The *Lyonhois* alledge *tempestatem* for the Lett, and say that *emptio* is *contractus bonæ fidei*, and that therefore the *Florentynes* must fulfill their Bargayn; and so leaving their Wheat there, went their wayes.

Error is founde in the Admirall's Processe, and the Sentence revoked; wherby the Application of his Lands to the Crown, and the *Amende Pecuniaire* that he shuld have made to diverse Townes here in *Bourgoyne* is adnichilated, and he *restitutus in integrum*.

I thinke your Majestie heareth from your Agent at *Venice* that *James Bey*, sumtyme a Christian Man, is cuming from the *Turque* in Ambassade to *Venice*; and, as I think, by this Tyme arryved there, if the Emperour have not intercepted him, who hath layed waye for him in *Ragusa*: His cuming is nothing pleasant to the *Venycians*; the Cause therof being as the *Venycians* conjecture, the same that I have written to your Majestie before; that is to saye, Passage through their Cuntrey, or to be Enemyes to Enemyes, or to redeem the same with sum great Sumes of Money, if nothing els be asked.

Seignior *Horacio* being heretofore accustomed to be lodged at the Court, or near as the Place required, is lodged now Four Leaggs of, and yet the King lyeth in a great Town; wherof the Nuntio's Secretarye complayning to the Admirall, the Admirall answered him in Coler, he had one gyven him, and he refused it. We cannot give



him here a Palais as though he were at *Paris*, and turned his Back, and would talk no longer with the Secretary.

I send unto your Majestie herewith an other Charte of *Algiere*, set furth after a sorte, with the Emperors Assiege before it; the Plate wherof varieth from the other I sent your Majestie before: And yett I trust your Majestie will take the same in good Parte; for as they came to my Hands, being sent to such Personages as they wer; thone to the *French* King, and this to the Duke of *Ferrare*; I thought it my Duety to sende both unto your Majestie, leaving unto your Excellent Wisedome the Judgment, whither this, or the other be true, or neither of them bothe.

I sende also unto your Majestie a little Book, both printed here in *Paris*, conteyning the Conclusion of their Dyet in *Almayn* against the *Turk*; whither the same be true, or no, I doubt not but your Majestie knoweth by such Advertisements as you have out of those Partes. And thus having nothing els to writte unto your Majestie at this Time, I beseeche God to send you most prosperously and long to Reigne. From *Chabliz* in *Bourgoyn*, the 19th of *April*.

*Your Majesties*

*Most Humble, Faithful, and*

*Obedient Subject, Servant,*

*And Daily Oratour,*

William Pagett.

---

## *P O S T S C R I P T.*

**A**Fter I had Written to your Majestie this Letter redy to send the same furthwith; and defferring the Dispeche onely uppon Attendance of the Admirall's Letter, to be conveyed into *England*; because the same came not, I sent the same Night one to the Courte, which is Four long Leaggs hens to the Admirall to know his Minde therein; which Messenger he returned to me with this Letter herinclosed, written and defaced as your Majestie seith the same; upon Motion wherof, I was at his Lodging the next Day, by Eight in the Morning, but I found him not there. At my cumming a Letter was delivered me from certain of your Majesties Privy Counsaile, the Tenor wherof, both before and sithens I have observed as far as my Wit can extend, like as your Majestie rather by your great Judgment, and gracious Interpretation of my Discourses, then by my simple

Writings

Writtings may gather. Anone cummeth Monsieur *Admirall*, accompanied with Monsieur *Longeville*, Governour to the Duke of *Orleans*, and with more Solemnitie than was wont to be, took me with them to the Church, to passe the Tyme (they said) untill the King wer up. Monsieur *Longeville* left the Admirall and me walking, and entring Communication after this Sorte. Monsieur *Le Ambassadeur*, I have been bold to put you to this great Payne this Morning; but this Matier troubleth me so fore, that I am at my Wittes Ende: By ----- I could not sleep for it all this Night. We have received Letters from our Ambassadeur in *England*, conteyning the same Discourses that you have declared, which my Master is forye to heare; mervailing that the King, his good Brother, would offer that Summe to his Sonne with his Daughter, that some of his Gentlemen would not accept. The Pope offred to Monsieur *de Guyse* Sonne, with his Nepce, Two Hundred Thousand Crownes, and he refused it. To see us so farre asunder, after so long a Traitye, by ----- it greveth me. For you must understand, that all which be of Counsaile about my Master, be not of one Opinion. And upon the Receipte of our last Lettres, it was said to me, We told you wherto the Enterprise of this Matier would cum at length: But surely I have never repented me, nor myn Affection can never diminishe, for the Friendship that hath been showed on your Parte, aswell in commyn, as to my particular. And as for the Pope's and the Emperors Lyes and Falsetes, we know well ynough. Wherefore, for the Love of God, let us growe to some Friendly Point. After I had declared unto him for some Recompence of his Affection, what good Affection I beare to *France*; I said unto him, Monsieur *L'Admirall*, you knowe, we commun now privately, and therefore you shall hear my private Opinion. Seing that you knowe other Men's Proceedings with you to have been so indirect as you speake of, and (as your self hath confessed unto me oftentimes) that the King's Majestie, my Master, hath been so perfect and sincere a Friende unto you at all Tymes; embrace this Friendship; consyder this Friend; and think that he is to be desired rather with One Hundred, than any other with Tenne Hundred. You said, your Master will not live alone. Ywys, my Master may have Company enough, if he would slippe out of the Couple from you. Yea, quoth he, I know; but so will not every Man of this Counsaile knowe, their Faulseties. True it is, quoth he, your Friendship hath been much, and we do recognise it, and think our selfs in Obligation to requite it. But we can do no more than we can do. But to come to a Point; the Matier consisteth in these Termes. Within these two Yeres, we shall owe you a Million; after the which Tyme, we must pay you during the King your Master's Life (God grant it to be long) a Hundred Thousand Crownes yearly, and afterward Fyfty Thousande perpetually, you saye. As for the Pencions, quoth he, there may be sumwhat sayde for Things that shuld be done by Treaties: For our Defence, Things shuld have been done; Shipps and Men, and I wot not what. And here he began to hack and to hume. Monsieur *Le Admirall*, quoth I, speke out plainly: for if you have any thing

*An Oath.**An Oath.*

to



to say in that Parte, I can answer. Well, well, quoth he, let those Things passe: You can clayme no Pencion yet these Two Yeres. And herewithall the King sent for him. With whom, after Masse, he went to the Standing in a Forest hereby; promising me to return ymedyately after Dyners, and praying me hartely to tary his Return. Monsieur *Le Admirall*, quoth I, in his Eare, if you talk with the King your Master of this Matier, deduce him to some Conformitie. I speake for the Affection I beare unto you: For I may say to you, there be others that wooe harder thenne you, and yet hitherto we have not given like Eare. But you know, a Man may droppe Water so long upon a Stone, that it may sooke in. And herewith, Monsieur *Longeville* tooke me at his Hand by and by, and had me to Monsieur *D'orleans* Lodging, where I had an exceeding gret Feast and Chere. About Two of the Clock the Admirall sent for me; and after our Meeting, every Man avoided out of the Chamber. Monsieur *Le Ambassadeur*, quoth he, let us devise some good Meane, to joyne these Two Princes together. Then must you, quoth I, go another way to work. Devide your Treatye into Two Partes: Treat a Mariage, and treat the Redemption of the rest you desire. Well, be it, quoth he: But I understand not yet very well your Reciproque; (and here he began to be plaissant in his Countenance, and to set his Wordes merily :) And yet, quoth he, our Ambassador writteth of the same Terme, but I wot not what. You will not, quoth I, understande it: But you must learne it; for els I feare (whereof I would be wondrous sorry) that this Matier will not go forward. Let me hear again, quoth he. I told him even the same Lesson, that is declared in the former Parte of this Letter. It is not, quoth he, a Hundred Thousand Crownes, or Two Hundred Thousand, that can enriche my Master, or impoverishe yours: And therefore, for the Love of God, quoth he, let us go roundly together. We aske your Daughter, quoth he: For her, you shall have our Sonne, a gentye Prince, quoth he, and set him out to Sale. We aske you a Dote with her; and for that after the Som you will give, She shall have an Assignment after the Custome of the Country here. And as for the rest, quoth he, what Reciproque demand you? What will you, that we do for you? As for the rest of the Money, quoth I, take Order for the Payment of it; and for the Pencions, devise a Reciproque. Devise you, quoth he, what you will have us to do for it. Nay, quoth I, offer you furst, for it passeth my Capacitye: And Reason is so: for the first Commodity shall be yours. It is no Mattier, quoth he; we will offer furst, and you shall aske next: Or you shall offer furst, and we shall aske nexte: All is one. But I will now, as I did laste Daye, speke unto you after myn own Passion, after myn own Affection; for I would all the World knew I am not Imperial. And here, with many Qualifications and Termes, he set forth his Passion and Affections. You will give us your Daughter, and a Summe with her, (it maketh no Matier what;) howbeit, I trust, your gentle Prince will aske no Money of us: And as for the Reciproque of the rest, and therewith stayed. Well, quoth he, to speake frankly to

to you myn Affection; will you enter the Warre with us against the Emperor? and be Enemye to Enemye, for the Defence of all such States as we have at this present, and of such as we shall Conquere together; or of such as shall be comprised in Treaty: The King your Master to sett upon Land in *Flanders*, Tenne Thousand *Englishmen*, and we Tenne Thousand *Frenchmen*; Pay the Wages of Five Thousand *Almayns*, and we of asmany; Finde Two Thousand Horsemen, and we Three Thousand; Finde a certain Number of Shippes, and we as many. And yett shall the King my Master chaffe the Emperor in other Places, he was never so chaffed: and spende a Hundred, yea Two Hundred Thousand Crowns a Month other wayes. And of such Lands as shall be conquered, the Pencion furst to be redoubled, and the rest to be devided equally. What a Thing will it be to your Master, to have *Graveling*, *Dunkirk*, *Bur-burg*, and all those Quarters joining to his *Calais*? Mary, quoth I, all the Craft is in the Catching. And here I put him a foolish Question; What if you spent your Money, and conquered Nothing? Mary, quoth he, then should the Pencion stand still as it standeth. Monsieur *Le Admirall*, quoth I, these Matiers you talk of, be of too great Importance for my Witt; and I have also no Commission to medle in them. But to saye my Fantasye, I knowe of no Quarrel that my Master hath against the Emperor. ----- quoth he, why say you so? Doth he not owe your Master Money? Hath he not broken his Leages with him in 600 Points? Did he not provoke us, and the Pope also, to joine for the Taking of your Realme from you, in Preye for Disobedience? And hath he not caused even now the Pope, to offer a Council at *Mantua*, *Verona*, *Cambray* or *Metz*; (which Place he added now last) the Chief Cause wherof, is to pick you? A Pestilence take him, fause Dissembler, quoth he: Saving my Dutie to the Majestie of a King. If he had you at such an Advantage, as you maye now have him, you shuld well knowe it at his Hande. And here he went furth at large against the Bishop of *Rome*, and the Emperor; discoursing what Commoditie shuld ensue of this Warre; and that he would have it in any wise beginne this Yere, now that the Emperor wer so lowe; and had, as he saithe, for all his Millions, never a *Sols*. And that he would the Matier should take effect shortely; for the Yere goith awaye: reckening how many Moneths were now lost mete for the Warre: And how the Conquests should be fortified in the Winter; and the Warre recommenced in the Sommer. And that their Chiefe Points resolved, his Master shuld (if your Majestie would) turne into *Picardy*, to Entrevieu. And a great Discourse, Sir, passing min Experience, shewing themselves by his Wordes and Countenance wonderfully gredy of presant Warre: which when he had ended; what say you, Monsieur *Le Ambassadeur*, quoth he? Will you saye nothing to me in this Matier? Sir, quoth I, and told him Trueth, I wote not what to saye. Why do you not, quoth he? Open the Bottom of your Stomack to the King my Master, quoth I, by your Ambassadour there, by whom you have begun and treated this Matier. And also I noted in our other Conference, that you would not have these

An Oath.



Discourfes reaported again of your Mouth. Monsieur, quoth he, this is indeed but my Devife. Howbeit, to fpeake frankly to youe, I have fpoken nothing therin, but I think to perfwade my Mafter to it: And write fo to the King your Mafter, quoth he, and alfo the hole Devife. That fhall be as you will, quoth I. Nay, quoth he, I pray you to write, fo as you write as devifed of me; and repeted the Overture hole together, as is before expreffed. Sir, quoth I, feing you require me, I will write it, fo that you will promife me to confirme my Tale by your Ambaffador there. Yes, quoth he; and clapt his Hande in mine. But I pray you, quoth he, fend one in Diligence, that no Tyme be loft. Will you not write, quoth I? Yes, quoth he: But your Poft will be there before ours. And fo departed.

Sir, I befeeche your Majeftie moft humblie on my Knees, graciously to accept my Good Will, albeit my Witt be not able to ferve you in fo great an Affaire; and to pardon me, of your moft Gracious Goodnes, if any Thing have been faid, more or lefs thenne was meet to have been fpoken for the Advancement of your Purpofes: Of my Faulte wherin, if it fhould please your Majeftie to advife me of, I fhould have the more Witt another Time, and take the better Hede in a femblable Cafe: For furely, Sir, I have an exceeding Good Will to ferve you; and if my Witt wer as good, I am affured I fhould ferve well, and that knoweth God: To whom I pray daily, for your prosperous and long Continuance. From *Chab-liz*, the 22d of *April*.

*Your Majefties*

*Moft Humble, Faithful, and*

*Obedient Subject, Servant,*

*And Daily Oratour,*

William Pagett.

To the King's Moft Excellent Majeftie.

1542.

Number

## Number 74.

*Bishop Thirleby's Letter concerning the Duke of Norfolk  
and his Son.**An Original.*

**I** Would' write unto you my Harte (if I coulde) against those Two *Paper-Office.*  
Ungracious, Ingrate, and Inhumane *non Homines*, the Duke of  
*Norfolk* and his Sonne. The Elder of whom, I confesse that I did  
Love, for that I ever supposed hym a true Servant to his Master;  
like as both his Allegiance, and the manifold Benefits of the King's  
Majestie bounde him to have been; but nowe when I sholde begyn  
to wright to you herin, before God I am so amased at the Matter,  
that I know not what to say; therefore I shall leave them to receyve  
for their Deads, as they have worthily deservyd; and thank God  
of his Grace that hath openyd this in Tyme, so that the King's Ma-  
jestie may see that reformed: And in this Point, wher Almighty  
God hath not nowe alone, but often and sondry Tymes hertofore,  
not only letted the Malice of suche as hathe imagenyd any Treason  
against the King's Majestie, the Chiefe Comforte, Wealth, and Pro-  
sperite of all good *Englishmen* next under God; but hath so wonder-  
fully manifest, that in suche Tyme that his Majesties High Wisdome  
myght let that Malice to take his Effecte, all good *Englishe* cannot  
therfore thanke God enough. And for our Parts, I pray God, that  
we may thorough his Grace, so contynue his Servants, that hereafter  
we be not founde unworthy to receyve suche a Benefyte at his Hands.  
On *Christmas* Even, about 10 of the Clock after Noon here aryved  
*Somerſet* with the Letters of the King's Majesties most Honourable  
Counsell, Dated the 15th of *December* at *Westminster*, wherby I per-  
ceyved the Malicious Purpose of the said Two ungracious Men:  
And for the Execution of the King's Majesties Commandment de-  
clared in the same Letters, I fuyd immediately for Audience to the  
Emperor, who entred this Town within halfe an Houer after *Somer-  
ſet* was come. The Emperor praied me of Pacience, and to declare  
to the Secretarie *Joyſe*, that I wolde saie to him. For he said he  
had determyned to repose him selfe for 3 or 4 Days; and had ther-  
fore for that Tyme refused Audience to the Nuntio, the Ambassa-  
dor of *France*, and the Ambassador of *Venice*, which had sued for  
Audience. On *Christmas*-Day on the Morning, at Nine of the  
Clocke, *Joyſe* came to my Lodginge, to whom I declared as well  
as I coulde the great Benefits theis ungracious Men had receyved at  
the King's Majesties Hands, and how unkindly and traytorously  
they went about to fearve him, with the rest as myn Instructions  
led me. The King's Majestie, my Master (taking the same Affection  
to



to be in the Emperor, his good Brother, towards him, that his Highnes hathe to the Emperor, (*ut Amicorum omnia sint communia, gaudere cum gaudentibus, flere cum flentibus,*) hath commanded me to open this Matter to the Emperor: That as naturally all Men, and much more Princes, ought to abhorre Traytors, and specially suche as had receyved so great Benyfites as theis Men had: So his Majestie might rejoyse that the King's Highnes his good Brother had founde forthe this Matter, or the Malice coulde be brought to Execution. Secretary *Joyse* said that he would Advertise the Emperor herof accordingly, and after a little Talke of the Haughtines of the Earle of *Surrey*, and a few Salutations, he bad me fare well. When I asked him for Monsieur *de Grandevela*, to whom I said, that I wolde tell this Tale, for that I doubted not but that he, and all Honest Men wolde abhorre such Traytors: He said that he was not yet come, but he wolde this Day Advertise him herof by his Letters: for I wright (quoth he) daily to him. Albeit that this be the Hole, and the Effecte of that I have done in the Execution of the King's Majesties Commandment, declared in my said Lord's Letters, yet I will as my Dutie is, Answer a-part their said Letters to the King's Majestie: herin I dare not wright. For to enter the Matter, and not to detest that as the Cause requireth, I think it not convenient. And again on the other side, to renew the Memorie of these Mens Ingratitude, (wher with all Noble and Princely Harts above all others be fore wounded) I thinke it not Wisdome. Therefore I beseeche you hartely, amongst other my good Lords, there to make my most humble Excuse to his Majestie for the same. This ungracious Matter that hath happened otherwise than ever I could have thought, hath caused you to have a longer Letter than ever I have bene accustomed to wright. Ye shall herwith receyve a Scedule of Courte Newis, whiche havynge lernyd while I wrote this; Secretary *Joyse* hathe prayed me to sende the Letter herwith enclosed to the Emperor's Ambassador in *England*, which I pray you to cause to be delivered, and hartely fare you well. From *Halebourne* the *Christmas-Day* at Night, 1546.

*Your assured Loving Friend,*

Thomas Westm'.

Herewith ye shall also receyve the Copie of my Letters of the 19th of this Mongth, sent by *Skipperus*, &c.

## Number 75.

*A Letter of the Duke of Norfolk's, after he had been examined in the Tower.*

**M**Y very good Lords, whereas at the being here with me of Titus, B. 1. P. 94. my Lord Great Chamberlayne, and Mr. Secretary, they examynd me of divers Thyngs, which as near as I can call to my Remembrance were the Effects as here after doth ensfew.

First, whether ther was any CIPHER betwene me, and any other Man: For Answer wherunto, this is the Truth, there was never CIPHER between me and any Man, save only such as I have had for the King's Majestie, when I was in his Service. And as God be my Judge, I do not remember that ever I wrote in CIPHER, but at such Time as I was in *France*. My Lord Great Master that now is, and my Lord of *Rockford* being in Commission with me, and whether I wrote any then, or not, as God help me, I do not remember; but and I wrote any Thing, I am sure both their Hands were at it: And the Master of the Horse privy to the same: I do remember that after the Death of the Bishop of *Hereford*, *Fox*, it was shew'd me that the said Bishop had left a Letter, which I had sent him, amongst his Writings, which being found by a Servant of his, that is now with Master *Deny*, who shewd the same to the Bishop of *Durham* that now is, he caused him to throw the same in Fier; as I do remember, it was my said Lord Bishop of *Durham* that advised him to burn it: And as I also do remember, the Matter that was conteyned therin, concerned Lewde Speaking of the *Northern* Men after the Time of the Comotion against the said *Cromwell*: If there had been any Thyng concerning the King's Majestys Affairs, neyther the Bishoppe, nor he, were he now alyve, would not have concealed the same; and whether any Part of that was in Cypher, or not, as I shall Answer to God, I do not remember.

The effect of another Question there asked me, was, as near as I can call to my Remembrance, Whether anie Man had talked with me, that and ther were a Good Peace made betwene the King's Majestie, the Emperor and the *French* King, the Bishoppe of *Rome* would brek the same againe by his Dispensation? And whether I enclined that waies, or not, to that Purpose? As God help me now, at my most Nede, I cannot call to my Remembrance, that ever I heard any Man living speak like Words. And as for mine Inclinations, that the Bishoppe of *Rome* should ever have Authority to do such Thing; if I had Twentie Lives, I would rather have spent them all against him, then ever he should have any Power in this Realme: For no Man knoweth that better then I, by Reding of Stories, how his Usurped Power hath increased from Time to Time. Nor such Time as the King's Majestie hath found him his Enemy, no living Man



hath, both in his Harte and with his Tounge, in this Realme, in *France*, and also to many *Scotish* Jantlemen, spoken more fore against his said Usurped Powre, then I have done, as I can prove by good Witnes.

Also my said Lord and Mr. Secretary asked me, whether I was ever made privy to a Letter, sent from my Lord of *Winchester* and Sir *Henry Knevet*, of any Overture made by *Grandville* to them, for a Way to be taken between his Majestie and the Bishope of *Rome*; and that the said Letters should have come to his Majestie to *Dover*, I being there with him. Wherunto this is my true Answer: I was never at *Dover* with his Highnes since my Lord of *Richmond* died, but at that Time, of whose Death Word came to *Syttyngborne*: And as God be my Helpe, I never heard of no such Overture, save that I do well remember, at such Time as Sir *Francis Biryan* was fore fike, and like to have died, it was spoken in the Councill, that my Lord of *Winchester* should have said, He cou'd devise a Way, how the King's Majestie might have all Things upright with the said Bishope of *Rome*, and his Highnes Honour saved. Suche were the Words, or much like. Wherupon, as I had often said in the Councill, one was sent to the said Sir *Francis*, to know, if ever he heard the said Bishope speake like Words; which he denied: And as I do remember, it was Sir *Rauf Sadeler*, that was sent to the said Sir *Francis*. And to say that ever I heard of any such Overture made by *Grandville*, or that ever I commoned with any Man concerning any such Mater, other then this of the Bishope of *Winchester*, as God be my Help, I never dyd; nor unto more thenne this, I was never pre-vye.

Now, my Good Lords, having made Answer according to the Truth of such Questions as hath been asked me, most humblie I beseeche you all to be Mediators for me to his most Excellent Majestie, to cause such as have accused me (if it might be with his high Pleasure) to come before his Majestie, to lay to my Charge afore me, Face to Face, what they can say against me: And I am in no doubt, so to declare my selfe, that it shall appere I am falsly accused. And if his Pleasure shall not be, to take the Paine in his Royall Person, then to give you Commandment to do the same. My Lords, I trust ye think *Cromwell's* Service and mine hath not be like; and yet my Desire is, to have no more Favour shew'de to me, than was shew'de to him, I being present. He was a fals Man; and sewerly I am a trewe poore Jantleman.

My Lords, I thinke surelie there is some fals Man, that have laid some great Cause to my Charge, or else I had not be sent hither. And therefore, estsonyts most humblie I beseeche to finde the Names, if they and I may not be brought Face to Face, yet let me be made privy what the Causes are; and if I do not answer truely to every Point, let me not live one Howre after: For sewerlie I would hide nothing of any Questions that I shall know, that doth concern my self, nor any other Creature.

My Lords, there was never Gold tried better by Fier and Watter than I have been, nor hath had greater Enemys about my Sovereign Lord, than I have had, and yet (God be thanked) my Trough  
hath

hath ever tried me, as I dout not it shall do in theis Causes. Suerly, if I knew any Thought I had offended his Majestie in, I would fuerly have declared it to his Person.

Upon the *Tuysdaye* in *Whitsonweek* last past, I broke unto his Majestie, moste humbly beseeching him to helpe, that a Mariage might be had between my Daughter and Sir *Thomas Semour* : And wheras my Son of *Surey* hath a Son and divers Daughters ; that, with his Favour, a Crosse Mariage might have been made between my Lord Great Chamberline and them. And also wher my Son *Thomas* hath a Son, that shall (be his Mother) spend a Thousand Marks a Yere, that he might be in like wise married to one of my said Lord's Daughters. I report me to your Lordships, whether myn Intent was honest in this Motion, or not. And whereas I have written, that my Truth hath been severely tried, and that I have had great Enemies. First, the Cardinall did confes to me at *Affer*, that he had gone about Fourteen Years to have destroyed me ; saying, he did the same by the setting upon of my Lord of *Suffolk*, the Marquis of *Exeter*, and my Lord *Sands* ; who said often to him, that if he found not the Means to put me out of the way, at length I should seuerly undo him.

*Cromwell*, at such Tyme as the Marquis of *Exeter* suffred, examined his Wife more streitly of me, then of all other Men in the Realme, as She sent me word by her Brother, the Lord *Montjoy*. He hath said to me himself many times, My Lord, Ye are an happy Man, that your Wife knoweth no Hurt by you ; for if She did, She would undo you.

The Duke of *Buckingham* confessed openly at the Bar, my Father sitting as his Judge, that of all Men living he hated me most, thinking I was the Man that had hurt him most to the King's Majestie : Which now, quoth he, I perceive the contrary.

*Rice*, who had married my Sister, confessed, that (of all Men living) he hated me most ; and wished many times, how he might find the Meanes to thrust his Dagger in me.

What Malice both my Neeceys, that it pleased the King's Highnes to marie, did bere unto me, is not unknown to such Ladies as kept them in this Sute ; as my Lady *Herberd*, my Lady *Tirwit*, my Lady *Kynston*, and others, which heard what they said of me. Who tried out the Falshod of the Lord *Darcy*, Sir *Robert Constable*, Sir *John Bulmer*, *Aske*, and many others, for which they suffer'd for ? But only I. Who shewed his Majestie of the Words of my Mother-in-Law, for which She was attainted of Misprision ? But only I. In all Times past unto this Time, I have shewed my self a most trewe Man to my Sovereign Lord. And since these Things done in Tymes past, I have received more Proffight of his Highnes, then ever I did afore. Alas ! who can think, that I, having been so long a trew Man, should now be false to his Majestie ? I have received more Proffight then I have deserved : And a Poore Man, as I am, yet I am his own near Kinsman. For whose Sake should I be an untrew Man to them ? Alas, alas, my Lords, that ever it should be thought any Ontruthe to be in me.

Fynally,



Fynally, my good Lords eftsonys moſt Humble I beſeech you to ſhew this ſcrible Letter to his Maieſtie, and all joyntle to beſeech his Highnes to grant me the Petitions that are conteyned in the ſame, and moſt eſpecyall to remyt out of his moſt Noble Gentle Hart ſuch Diſpleaſure as he hath conceyved againſt me: and I ſhall dewryng my Lyff pray for the continuence of his moſt Royall Eſtate long to endure,

*By his Highnes Poor Priſoner,*

T. Norfolk.

---

Collection of RECORDS belonging to  
BOOK IV, V, and VI.

---

Number 1.

*Inſtructions given by Luther to Melanchthon 1534; of which, one Article was erroneouſly publiſhed by me in my II<sup>d</sup> Vol. and that being complained of, the whole is now publiſhed.*

Cogitationes meæ ſunt : (viz. Lutheri.)

**P**Rimo ut nullo modo concedamus de nobis dici, quod neutri neutros antea intellexerint. Nam iſto pharmaco non medebimur tanto vulnere, cum nec ipſi credamus utrumque verum hoc eſſe, & alii putabunt à nobis hoc fingi, & ita magis ſuſpectam reddemus cauſam, vel potius per totum dubiam faciemus, cum ſit communis omnium. Et in tantis animorum turbis, & ſcrupulis non expedit hoc nomine addere offendiculum.

*Forſam novum.* Secundo, cum hætenus diſſenſerimus, quod illi ſignum, nos Corpus Chriſti aſſeruerimus, plane contrarii in Sacramento. Nihil minus mihi videtur utile, quam ut mediam & novam ſententiam ſtatuamus: Qua & illi concedant Corpus Chriſti addeſſe verè, & nos concedamus panem ſolum manducari. Ut enim conſcientiam taceam, conſiderandum eſt certe; Quantam hic fenestraſt aperiemus in re omnibus communi cogitandi: Et orientur hic fontes quæſtionum & opinionum: Ut tutius multo ſit illos ſimpliciter manere in ſuo ſigno: Cum nec ipſi ſuam nec nos noſtram partem, multo minus utrique totum orbem pertrahemus in eam ſententiam: Sed potius irritabimus ad varias cogitationes. Ideo vellem potius ut ſopitum maneret diffidium

dium in duabus istis Sententiis, quam ut Occasio daretur infinitis Quæstionibus ad Epicurismum profuturis.

Tertio, Cum stent hic pro nostra Sententia, primum Textus ipse apertissimus Evangelii, qui non sine causa movet omnes Homines, non solum pios: Secundo, Patrum dicta quam plurima, quæ non tam facile possunt solvi; nec, tuta Conscientia, aliter quam sonant, intelligi, cum bona Grammatica textui fortiter consentiat. Tertio, Quia periculosum est statuere, Ecclesiam tot annis per totum Orbem caruisse vero Sensu Sacramenti; cum nos fateamur omnes, mansisse Sacramenta & verbum, etsi obruta multis abominationibus.

Quarto, Dicta Sancti Augustini de Signo, quæ contraria nostræ Sententiæ videntur, non sunt firma satis contra ista jam tria Dicta. Maxime, cum ex Augustini Scriptis clarè possit ostendi, & convinci, eum loqui de Signo præsentis Corporis, ut illud, contra *Adamantum*, non dubitavit Dominus appellare Corpus suum, cum daret Signum Corporis sui: Vel de Signo Corporis Mystici, in quo valdè multus est, præsertim in Joanne: Ubi copiosè docet, manducare Carnem Christi, esse in Corpore mystico; seu, ut ipse dicit, in Societate, Unitate, Charitate Ecclesiæ: Istis enim Verbis utitur.

Quinto, Omnium est fortissimus Augustinus, quod dicit, Non hoc Corpus, quod videtis, manducaturi estis, &c. Et tamen Conscientia memor apertorum Verborum Christi, (Hoc est Corpus meum) hoc dictum S. Augustini facile sic exponit: Quod de visibili Corpore loquatur Augustinus, sicut sonant verba (Quod videtis) ita nihil pugnat Augustinus cum claris verbis Christi: Et Augustinus infirmior est, quam ut hoc uno dicto tam incerto, imo satis consono, nos moveat in contrarium sensum.

Sexto, Ego S. Augustinum non intelligo aliter (sic & ipse Patres ante se forte intellexit) quam quod contra Judæos & Gentes docendum fuit, apud Christianos non comedi Corpus Christi visibiliter, & more corporali. Hac ratione Fidem Sacramenti defenderunt. Rursus contra Hypocritas Christianorum docendum fuit, quod Sacramentum non esset salutare accipientibus, nisi spiritualiter manducarent, id est, Ecclesiæ essent uniti & incorporati. Et hac ratione Charitatem in Sacramento exegerunt. Ut ex Augustino clarè accipi potest; qui, absque dubio, ex prioribus Patribus, & sui Seculi usu, ista accepit.

Septimo, Istis falsis, nihil est quod à me peti possit. Nam & ego hoc dissidium vellem (Testis est mihi Christus meus) redemptum non uno Corpore & Sanguine meo: Sed quid faciam? Ipsi forte Conscientia bona capti sunt in alteram Sententiam. Feramus igitur eos. Si sinceri sunt, liberabit eos Christus Dominus. Ego contra captus sum bona certè Conscientia (nisi ipse mihi sim ignotus) in meam Sententiam. Ferant & me, si non possunt mihi accedere.

Si verò illi Sententiam suam, scilicet de Præsentia Corporis Christi cum Pane, tenere velint, & petierint nos invicem tamen tolerari; ego planè libenter tolerabo, in spe futuræ Communionis. Nam interim communicare illis in Fide & Sensu non possum.

Deinde, Si politica Concordia quæritur, ea non impeditur diversitate Religionis: Sicut novimus posse Conjugia, Commercia, aliaque politica constare, inter diversæ Religionis Homines: Primo Co-



rinth. 7. Christus faciat, ut perfectè conteratur Satan sub nostris pedibus. Amen.

Nostra autem Sententia est, Corpus ita cum Pane, seu in Pane esse, ut reverà cum Pane manducetur: Et quæcunque motum vel actionem Panis habet, eandem & Corpus Christi. Ut Corpus Christi verè dicatur ferri, dari, accipi, manducari, quando Panis fertur, datur, accipitur, manducatur; id est, Hoc est Corpus meum.

*Coll. Corp. Christi,*  
Febr. 4. 95-6.

We have collated this with the Original Paper of *Luther*, and find it to agree exactly. Witness our Hands,

*John Jaggard.*

*Rob. Moss.*

*Will. Lunn.*

---

Number 2.

*The Lady Mary's Letter to the Lord Protector, and to the rest of the King's Majesty's Council, upon their suspecting some of her Household had encouraged the Devonshire Rebellion.*

My LORD,

*Ex MS. D.G.*  
*Cooke.*

I Have received Letters from you, and others of the King's Majesty's Council, dated the 17th of this present, and delivered unto me the 20th of the same, whereby I perceive ye be informed, that certayn of my Servants should be the Chief Stirrers, Procurers, and Doers in these Commotions; which Commotions (I assure you) no less offend me, than they do you and the rest of the Council. And you write also, that a Priest and Chapleyn of mine, at *Sampford Courtney* in *Devonshire*, should be a Doer there. Of which Report I do not a little marvel; for, to my Knowledge, I have not one Chaplain in those Parts. And concerning *Pooley*, my Servant, which was sometime a Receiver, I am able to answer, that he remayneth continually in my House, and was never Doer amongst the Commons, nor came in their Company. It is true, that I have another Servant of that Name dwelling in *Suffolk*; and whether the Commons have taken him or no, I know not, for he resorteth seldom to my House. But by Report, they have taken by Force many Gentlemen in these Quarters, and used them very cruelly. And as touching *Lionell* my Servant, I cannot but marvell of that Bruit, specially

specially because he dwelleth within Two Miles of *London*, and is not acquainted within the Shire of *Suffolk*, or *Norfolk*; nor at any Time cometh into these Parts, but when he waiteth upon me in my House, and is now at *London* about my Businesse, being no Man apt or meet for such Purposes, but given to as much Quietness as any within my House.

My Lord, it troubleth me to hear such Reports of any of mine, and specially where no Cause is given, trusting that my Household shall try themselves true Subjects to the King's Majesty, and honest quiet Persons; or else I would be loath to keep them. And where you charge me that my Proceedings in Matters of Religion, should give no small Courage to many of those Men to require and do as they do: That Thing appeareth most evidently to be untrue, for all the Rising about these Parts is touching no Point of Religion; but even as ye ungently, and without desert charge me, so I, omitting so fully to answer it, as the Case doth require, do and will pray God, that your new Alterations, and unlawful Liberties, be not rather the Occasion of these Assemblies, than my doings, who am (God I take to witnesse) inquieted therewith. And as for *Devonshire*, no indifferent Person can lay their Doings to my Charge; for I have neither Land, nor Acquaintance in that Country, as knoweth Almighty God, whom I humbly beseech to send you all as much Plenty of his Grace, as I would wish to my self. So with my hearty Commendations, I bid you farewell. From my House at *Kennynghall* the xxth of *July*.

*Your Friend to my Power,*

M A R Y.

### Number 3.

*A Letter of Christopher Mont concerning the Interim.*

Christophorus Montius S. D.

Wolph. Musculo.

CUM harum Lator mihi indicasset se Dominum nosse, nolui eum sine meis ad te reverti literis. Cum ego Augustâ discederem: discessi autem, hujus nihil dum ibi innovatum fuit per Ecclesias, sed optimi quique vehementer verebantur Superstitiones induendas pro-

*Ex MS.  
Tigur.*

pediem



pediem      Concionator ad S. Georgium mihi significavit, Senatū à Concionatoribus eflagitare, ut modo in his calamitatibus civitatem non defererent, sed porro in ea permanerent, se eos maturè & in tempore certiores facturos, modo viderint superstitionem imminere, quasi modo non in media urbe dominetur. Rogavit quoque Senatus, ut Concionatores Populo Interim quam compositissimis & coloratissimis verbis possent, proponerent, quod major pars recusârunt, dicentes se hoc scriptum laudare nulla ratione neque constantia posse, quod communi suffragio damnassent, duo tamen se id facturos receperunt, quod & factum audiavi ad S. Crucem & Mauricium. Non dubito te audiisse, de eo Scripto, quod huc nuper allatum fuit ex Saxonia. Utinam Germana virtus & Constantia alicubi permanens emineat, ut si non fortiter agendo, saltem fortiter adversa propter Domini gloriam ferendo, professionem & officium nostrum testentur. Dux Gemini pontis Augustâ discessisse dicitur, ut qui *Interim* indictionem & promulgationem Diocesano præstandam & committendam dixerit, neque se neque suos huic executioni idoneos Ministros esse. Tamen qua conditione dimissus sit, certo nondum didici. Bremenses discessisse audio nondum reconciliatos, nam tam graves eis conditiones præscribi audio, ut quas omnino etiam si eas acceperint, præstare non possint. Multi putant consultò tam gravia præscribi, ut sub specie contumaciæ & obstinationis, obsidione pressi & expugnati Frisiæ jungantur. Civitas quoque ea plurimis rebus agendis aptissima est, ut quæ supra Visurgim & Albim posita accessum aperiat ad Chersonesum totam occupandum. Qua lege Constantienses redierint domum ex Domino nosse cupio. Rogo quoque ut mihi significare velis quæ concordiæ & communicationis spes ipsis inter se Helvetis sit. Literas quas ad me perlatas voles, cura ad D. Bucerum adferri. Bene vale. Argentinæ 18. Jul. 1548. Literas tectas exuras.

---

Number 4.

*A Part of a Letter of Hooper's to Bullinger, giving an Account of the Cruelty of the Spaniards in the Netherlands.*

Ex MS.  
Tigur.

**N**OS 14. Aprilis relicta Colonia, iter versus Antwerpiam, per Campiniam Brabantinam, sterilem, ac arenosam, instituimus. 18. ejusdem, venimus omnes, Dei Gratia, salvi & incolumes Antwerpiam. 20. Die, Precibus Oratoris Regis nostri, qui apud Cæsarem nunc agit, compulsus, Bruxellam me contuli, unâ cum Joh. Stumphio, ut videret mollietiem ac miseras Aulæ, præterea servitutem Civium Bruxellensium, qui jam Hispanorum Imperium, latrocinium ac furtum, violationem Filiarum, Uxorum impudicitiam, minas denique ac plagas perditissimæ Gentis ferre coguntur; ut Statum ac Conditionem

tionem suæ Patriæ altius consideraret, ardentius pro illo oraret, ac diligentius suos admoneret, ut alienis malis edoctos cautiores redderet. Cæsarem non vidimus, quòd rarò Cubiculum suum egreditur, nec Filium, qui Pascha suum egit extra Civitatem, in Monasterio quodam. Ducem Saxoniae Jo. Stumphius vidit per fenestram. Ego bis fui in Ædibus illius valdè humaniter acceptus à suis Germanis, qui ei adhuc inserviunt, ad numerum 30. Voluit Dux, bis vel ter, me admittere ad Colloquium; sed impedivit semper primi Capitanei Hispanorum præsentia. Vivit constanter in sua Fide. Non valet, quantum ad Valetudinem Corporis spectat, de liberatione illius nulla penitus asfulget spes, nisi quod absit, Religionem suam mutet: non malè sperat de Verbo Dei. Catus Landgravius Captivus detinetur Auldenardi, septem milliaribus à Gandavo: Homo omnibus numeris miser & inconstans: nunc omnem Obedientiam Cæsari, ac Fidem pollicetur; Missam, ac cætera impia sacra, obviis ulnis amplectitur, nunc Cæsarem, cum suo interdicto, execratur ac detestatur. Dominus misereatur illius; misere affligitur, ac meritas pœnas perfidiæ suæ jam luit. Et vidimus, præterea Lazarum Scuendi proditorem illum, quem nostis. De Brandeburgensi, ac aliis Germanis, Hispanorum mancipiis, nihil opus est quod scriberem. Legatus Papæ, per totam Quadragesimam, in sua Aula est concionatus, quàm impiè non scribam. Hoc tamen pro certo scio, non bene convenire inter Papam & Cæsarem, nec inter Gallum ac Cæsarem. Uterque valdè sibi timet à Cæsare: Cæsar vicissim à fulmine Papæ maximè timet. Jam agitur seriò inter illos, an Concilium Generale Tridenti, an Bologniæ sit celebrandum. Papa urget, mandat, rogat ac jubet, ut Cæsar consentiat de Bolognia: Is renuit, negat ac pernegat, omnibus modis: & potius dicit se omnes Amicitias cum Papa desinere, quam illum locum, Bologniam scil. admittere: Quid monstri in hoc, ex parte Papæ, lateat, facile divinare licet. Diffidit Regno suo valde; nam hoc didici ab Oratore nostro, quòd si Cæsaris Confessor esset mediocriter pius, esset maxima spes, quod brevi in Cognitionem Christi induceretur. Nam apertè mihi retulit, & Cæsarem, & Consiliarios suos omnes regi, impelli, duci ac trahi, per Confessorem, qui omnia Papæ suasu & concilio agit. Et facile credo: Nam ante septem Menses, cum Cæsar adhuc erat in superiore Germania, fuit derelictus à suo Confessore, quod crudelius voluit sævire in pios Viros, & in integrum Papatum restituere. Cæsar obtulit ei Episcopatum in Hispania, ad 20. Millia Coronatorum per Annum: neglexit Cæsar Liberalitatem, & Cæsarem ipsum hisce Verbis, Ecclesiæ Christi me solum debeo, sed non Tibi, non Dono tuo, nisi Ecclesiæ mavis majori studio inservire. Jam de Cæsaris animo ergo Helvetiam. Omnes in hoc consentiunt illum vestræ libertati hostiliter invidere, propterea nullum non movere lapidem, ut rumpat inter vos concordiam: si hac via res non succedat, omnia aget pollicitationibus. Cavete igitur, ne lætet vos inani spe. Denique absque dubio vos aggredietur hostili manu, non ut sic vincat, vel multos ex suis exponat periculo, sed ut vobis incutiat timorem. Rogo itaque ut unanimiter ac mutuò vos diligatis, Deum timete, sanctè vivite, strenuè pugnate, ac expectate Victoriæ à Deo, qui procul dubio vobis aderit ac defendet. Adhuc putem vobis non imminere periculum, sed sitis semper parati: & absit procul omnis secu-



ritas, ne obruat inopinantes. Adhuc Cæsar bene scit, se non posse pro Voto uti rebus Germaniæ. Doluit illi sæpius, (ut accepi à Viris fide dignis) aliquid tentâsse in Religione: quidem si Germanis permisisset liberam maximè fuisse in re illius. Aiunt Cæsarem brevi profecturum, Gandavum & à Gandavo iterum petiturum Bruxellam, vel ascensurum versus Spiram. Copias militum habet prope Bremam ac civitates maritimas, sed otiosas: Nihil proficiunt res, à civibus multum timetur, indies magis ac magis Civitates suas muniunt & comeatum habent ad quinque annos, non multum Cæsaris gratiam amplius ambiunt. Quam graves exactiones à suis Cæsar jam exigit credo se non ignorare. Dicam tamen tristem ac deplorandam Orationem, quam effudit pia mulier, hospita nostra in Campinia: Si inquit ferre potuerim in sinu meo magnam ac jam nunc molestam turbam liberorum meorum, fugerem ac per stipem victum quærerem, nam Cæsare ac Reginæ exactores labores sudores nostri exantlant. Hac ex parte Angli etiam jam valde laborant, concessa est Regi quinta pars omnium bonorum. Sed adhuc de Helvetia unum. Heri 25. Aprilis invitatus ad prandium à quodam cive Antverpenfi, qui optimè novit Helvetiam, ac sæpe in omnibus civitatibus Helvetiorum exposuit merces suas, is mihi retulit, se frequenter vidisse in aula Cæsaris ex eo quod Cæsar superiorem partem Germaniæ reliquerit, publicos Ministros Civitatis Lucernanæ, nam bene novit illos ex colore vestium, metuendum est, ne arcana patriæ per hujusmodi patefiant, vel aliquid majus malum lateat.

*The Rest of the Letter relates to private Concerns.*

### Number 5.

*The Oath of Supremacy, as it was made when the Bishops did Homage in King Henry the VIIIth's Time. The last Words were struck out by King Edward the VIth.*

*Ex MSS.  
Rymer.*

**Y**E shall say and swere as foloweth, I shall be Faithful and True, and Faith and Trowth I shall bere unto your Majestie, and to your Heires Kings of this Realme; and with Liff and Lymme, and Erththelie Honour for to Live and Dye as your Faithful Subject, agayne all Persons of what Degre, State, or Condition soever they bee: And I shall prefer, sustayne, and mayntayne the Honour, Surtie, Right, Preheminance, and Prerogatif of your Majestie, and your Heires Kings of this Realm, and Jurisdiction of your Imperiall Crowne of the same, afore and agaynst all maner of Persones, Powers, and Auctorities whatsoever they bee: And I shall not witynglie do, or attempt, nor to my Power suffer to be done, or attempted any Thing, or Things, prively, or apartly, that may be to the Dymunytion, or Derogation of your Crowne of this Realme; or of the Lawes, Liberties, Rights, and Prerogatifes belonging to the same, but put myne effectual Endeavour from Tyme to Tyme, as the Case shall

shall requier to advance and increas the same to my Wit and uttermost of my Power: And in nowise hereafter I shall accept any Othe, or make any Promise, Pact, or Covenant, secretly, or apertlye by any maner of Means, or by any Colour of Pretence to the contrary of this my Othe, or any Part therof. And I shall be diligentlye attendant uppon your Majestye, and to your Heires Kings of this Realme, in all your Commaundements, Causes, and Busynesses. And also I knowledge and recognize your Majestie ymmediately under Almightye God to be the Chief and *Supreme Hede of the Church of England*, and clayme to have the *Bishepriche of Chester*, Holye and allonlye of your Gift: And to have and to hold the Proffites Temporal and Spiritual of the same allonlye of your Majestie, and of your Heires Kings of this Realme, and of none other: And in that sorte and none other, I shall take my Restitution owt of your Handes accordinglye, utterly renownsing any other Suit to be had herefore to any other Creature liffyng, or hereafter to be, except your Heires. And I shall to my Wit, and uttermost of my Power observe, keep, mayntayn, and defende all the Statutes of this Realme made agaynst the Reservations and Provisions of the Bishop of *Rome*, called the Pope, of any of the Archiebushopriches, or Bushopriches in this Realme, or of other your Domynions. And also I shall observe, fullfill, defende, mayntayn, and kepe to the uttermost of my Power all the hole Effects and Content of the Statute made for the Surtie of your Succession of your Crowne of this Realme, and all the Causes and Articles mentioned and conteigned in the saide Statute: And also all other Statutes made in conformation, or for the due Execution of the same. And all theis Things I shall do without colour, fraude, or any other undue Mean agaynst all Persons, Powers, and Auctorities of the World, whatsoever they be. And in one wise for any maner of Cause, Colour, or Pretence, prively, or apertlye I shall move, do, or attempt; nor to any Power suffer to be done, or attempted any Thing or Things to the contrary herof, So help me God, all Sayntes, and the Holye Evangels.

*Per me Roland' Co' & Lich' Electum.*

---

Number 6.

*A Letter of Peter Martyr's to Bullinger of the State of the University of Oxford, in the Year 1550, June 1.*

S. D. Literis tuis vir eximie mihi que in Christo plurimum observando, longè antea respondisse debueram, ad quod faciendum, non solum institutum officium inter amicos, verum etiam quod suavissimæ fuerunt & bene comitatæ aliis symmistarum epistolis jucundissimis: vehementer extimulabar sed quando redditæ sunt adversa valetudine non-

*Ex MS.  
Tiguri.*

nihil



nihil afflictabar : & statim ut convalui, ea mole negotiorum penè sum oppressus, ut quod maximè cupiebam facere non licuerit, cujusmodi autem fuerint hæ occupationes paucis expediam. Præter quotidianas Interpretationes Pauli, quod totum ferme hominem sibi vendicat, si velit in eis pro dignitate versari, accessit ex legibus modò latis à Regia Majestate, huic Academiæ novum onus. Quippe decretum est, ut frequenter publicæ Disputationes de Rebus Theologicis habeantur, hoc est alternis hebdomadis, quibus mihi præcipitur, ut & intersim & præsim. Deinde in hoc Regio Collegio ubi dego, singula quæque septimana, Theologicæ Disputationes agitantur, quæ cum ad illas audiendas aditus omnibus patet, indentidem publicæ dici possunt, hisque sum constitutus pariter, atque aliis censor. Est itaque cum adversariis perpetuò luctandum, & quidem pertinacissimis, quò fit, ut velim nolim facilè cogar, alias non rarò seponere literas, & vocationi cui sum obstrictus, totum tempus mihi concessum transmittere. Verum certè scio boni consules, nec in malam partem capias (quæ tua est humanitas) quod à contemptione profectum non esse animadvertes. Gaudeo quas scripseram literas, abs te hilari lætoque animo fuisse susceptas : neque vulgares ago gratias, quod tuum præsidium, si quid me possis cojuvare, tam promptè atque alacriter offers. Recompenset Deus istum Animum, ut ego illum sincera charitate complector ! Hic verò scitò negotium religionis procedere non quidem eo successu, eoque ardore quo velim, sed tamen plus quàm nostra peccata mereantur, & aliquantiò felicius, atque mihi ante quatuor menses polliceri ausus essem. Permulta certè sunt quæ nobis obstant, cumprimis adversariorum copia, concionatorum inopia, & eorum qui profitentur Evangelium crassa vitia, & quorundam præterea humana prudentia, qui judicant religionem quidem repurgandam sed ita vellent demutari quam minimè fieri possit quod cum Animo sint & *judicio civiles*, existimant maximos motus republicæ fore perniciosos. Verum tu ipse cernis, cum innumeræ corruptiones, infiniti abusus, & immensæ superstitiones in ecclesia Christi passim inoleverint, fieri non posse ut justa habeatur instauratio nisi quæ deflexerunt in vitium, ad suos genuinos ortus purissimos fontes & inadulterata principia revocentur. Satan astutè sanctos conatus aggreditur, vellet enim hoc prætextu q. numerosissimas papatus relinquere reliquias. Partim ne homines ejus facilè obliviscerentur. partim verò ut reditus ad illum faciliior maneret. Ad vicissim inde Consolationis hausimus, quod Regem habemus verè sanctum, qui tanto studio Pietatis flagrat, ea est, hac ætate, prædictus Eruditione, eaque Prudentia jam nunc & Gravitate loquitur, ut omnes in admirationem stuporemque se audientes, convertat. Quamobrem, orandus est Deus contentissimis Votis, ut eum Regno & Ecclesiæ multò diutissimè conservet. Sunt & complures Heroes, Regnique Proceres, bene admodum sentientes ; & aliquos Episcopos habemus, non pessimos, inter quos est uti signifer Cantuariensis. Deinde in eorum Album cooptatus est Hooperus, magna porrò bonorum omnium lætitia ; utque audio, contigit ei Populus non malus : Me illum spero visurum, quando ad suum Episcopatum iter faciet. Nam si Glocestriam se conferet, quæ est ejus Ecclesia, per nos hac transibit. Quo autem pacto duci potuerit, ut fieret Episcopus, referrem pluribus, nisi compertissimum haberem, illum ipsum (quæ est ejus in te observantia)

observantia) omnia fusissimè scripturum. Est alius præterea Vir bonus, Michael Coverdallus, qui superioribus annis agebat in Germania Parochum : Is multum in Devonia, & prædicando, & interpretando Scripturas, laborat ; eum te probè nôsse arbitror, qui Excestrensis Episcopus fiet. Nilque potest commodi, ut & utilius fieri ad Religionis Repurgationem, quam si homines hujus farinae ad Ecclesiæ Administrationem impellantur. Contulit etiam se huc Dominus Alasco, quum ejus Phrysiæ Imperatorium *Interim* admisit, utque olfacio, Londini Germanorum Ecclesiæ præerit ; quod mihi vehementer placet. Degit nunc apud D. Cantuariensem. Accepisti jam quo loco nostræ Res in Anglia sint, quæ adhuc nonnihil melioris spei efficit ; Pax ista, cum Rege Gallorum facta, quæ videtur indies magis corroborari. Solum nonnulli verentur, ne in bonorum perniciem, quod jactitare incipiunt Papistæ celebretur Concilium : Verum si sapuerimus & hoc genus Cogitationum, in Deum rejiciamus. Sermones quos edidisti, fuerunt hoc tempore utiles monilares, qui ut ex mediis Scripturis sanctis recitati sunt, ita & grati fuerunt ; & spero, non absque fructu legentur. Johannem ab Ulmis, & Stumphium, quos mihi commendasti, eâ quâ possum Charitate complector ; atque ipsi vicissim me colunt, & observant ; Ad me ventitant sæpius ; & si quid vel scribendum, vel aliud agendum, mea causa sit, præstare non detrectant, sed lubenti volentique animo faciunt ; qua de causa, illis non parum debeo. Sed audio, Stumphium ad vos delatum esse, quod contra quàm vestris Legibus liceat, nescio quod ab Anglis Stipendium accipiat ; id verò certò scias, falsum esse. Vixit hic aliquandiu in nostro Collegio, sed sua pecunia ; quod posthac non illi fraudi sit, utque ulla specie mali abstineat : Hic discessit, & in Oppido, apud Civem Bibliopolam, divertit. Modò quod superest, tuos, tuorumque Preces, quanta possum cum instantia imploro ; quo progrediatur in hoc Regno Domini Opus, atque tandem Corda Patrum in Filios, & Corda Filiorum in Patres suos, nostro Ministerio revocentur. Oxonij, primâ Junij 1550. Valeas in Domino ; & me, ut facias, ama.

Tuus, ex Animo,

*Petrus Martyr.*

Salutes, quæso, isthic meo Nomine, omnes bonos in                      Fratres ; ac nominatim, D. Bibliandrum, & Doctorem Ghisnerum.

### INSCRIPTIO.

Clarissimo, Pietate & Doctrina, Viro,  
D. Henrico Bullingero, Ecclesiæ Tigurinæ Pastori Fidelissimo, Domino suo ac Fr. Colendissimo, Tiguri.



## Number 7.

*A Mandate in K. Edward's Name, to the Officers of the Archbishop of Canterbury ; requiring them to see, that the Articles of Religion should be Subscribed.*

Mandatum pro Publicatione nonnullorum Articulorum,  
veram proponi Fidem concernentium.

Reg. Cranmer,  
F. 65.

**E**Dwardus Sextus, Dei Gratia, Angliæ, & Franciæ, & Hiberniæ Rex, Fidei Defensor, & in Terra Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ & Hiberniæ Supremum Caput. Dilectis Sibi, Officiali Curiae Cantuar' & Decano Decanatûs de Arcubus Londin' ac eorum Surrogatis, deputatis, aut locum tenentibus, Uni vel Pluribus, Salutem, Quoniam nuper, per Literas nostras Regias, Signeto nostro obsignatas, Reverendissimo in Christo Patri, Consiliario nostro Fidelissimo, Thomæ Cantuariensi Archiepiscopo, totius Angliæ Primati & Metropolitano, dederimus in Mandatis. Quatenus ipse, ad Dei Optimi Maximi Gloriam illustrandam, nostramque, & Ecclesiæ nostræ Anglicanæ (cujus Caput Supremum, post Christum, esse dignoscimur) Honorem, & ad tollendam Opinionis Dissensionem, & Consensum veræ Religionis firmandum, nonnullos Articulos, & alia rectam Christi Fidem spirantia, Clero & Populo nostris, ubi libet infra suam Jurisdictionem degentibus, pro Parte nostra exponeret, publicaret, denunciaret & significaret; prout in Literis nostris (quarum Tenores, pro hic insertis haberi volumus) latius continetur, & describitur. Vobis igitur, & eorum cuilibet, tenore præsentium, districtè præcipiendo nostra sublimi Regia Auctoritate, mandamus; Quatenus moneatis, monerive faciatis, peremptoriè, omnes & singulos Rectores, Vicarios, Presbyteros, Stipendiarios, Curatos, Plebanos, Ministros, Ludimagistros cujuslibet Scholæ Grammatices, aut aliter vel alias Grammaticam, apertè vel privatim profitentes, aut pubem instituentes, Verbi Dei Prædicatores, vel Prælectores, necnon quoscunque alios, quamcunque aliam Functionem Ecclesiasticam, (quocunque Nomine, aut Appellatione, censetur, habetur, aut nuncupetur) obtinentes & habentes. Oeconimos quoque cujuslibet Parochiæ, infra Decanatum de Arcubus prædictum, existentes aut degentes, quod ipsi omnes, & eorum quilibet, per se compareat, & compareat personaliter, coram dicto Reverendissimo Patre Cantuar' Archiepiscopo, in Aula Ædium suarum apud Lambeth, die Veneris vicesimo tertio die præsentis Mensis Junij, inter Horas septimam & nonam, ante Meridiem ejusdem Diei. Hisque tunc iis ex Parte nostra fuerint significanda, humiliter obtemperaturos, facturosque ulterius & recepturos, quod consonans fuerit Rationi, ac suo convenerit erga nostram Regiam Dignitatem Officio. Mandantes quatenus, dictis Die, Loco & Horis, eundem Reverendissimum, de Executione hujus Regij nostri Mandati, unà cum Nomi-

Nominibus, & Cognominibus, omnium & singulorum, per vos Monitorum, ritè, rectè, & auctenticè reddatis, certiozem, unà cum præsentibus, uti decet. Teste Thomâ Cant' Archiepiscopo, prædicto, decimo nono die Junii, Anno Regni nostri Septimo.

*Certificatorium factum super Executione Mandati prædicti.*

**R**everendissimo in Christo Patri & Domino Domino Thomæ, Permissione Divina, Cantuariensi Archiepiscopo, totius Angliæ Primati & Metropolitano; Auctoritate Illustrissimi in Christo Principis, & Domini nostri Domini Edwardi Sexti, Dei Gratia, Angliæ, Franciæ, & Hiberniæ, Regis, Fidei Defensoris, ac in Terrâ Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ & Hibernicæ, Supremi Capitis; sufficienti Auctoritate fulcito Johannes Gibbon Civilium Legum Professor, vestræ celcitudinis observantissimus, pariter eidem addictissimus decanatus vestr' Beatæ Mariæ Virginis, de Archibus London, Commissarius omnem que decet Reverentiam, & Obedientiam, tanto Reverendissimo Patri debitam cùm Honore. Mandatum Illustrissimi & Potentissimi Domini nostri Regis, presentibus annexum, nuper accepimus, cujus vigore pariter & auctoritate omnes & singulos Rectores, Presbiteros, &c. Dat. Vicesimo Secundo Die Mensis Junii, Anno Domini Milleffimo Quingentesimo Quinquagesimo Tertio.

Number 8.

*By the King.*

*The King's Mandate to the Bishop of Norwich, sent with the Articles to be subscribed by the Clergy.*

**R**ight Reverende Father in God, Right Trustie and Well-beloved, We Grete you Well: And bicause it hath pleased Almightye God in this latter Time of the World, after long Darkenes of Knowledge to reveale to this his Church of *Englande*; whereof we have under Christ the Chief Charge in Earth; a sincere Knowlege of the Gospell, to the inestimable Benefit of Us and our People, redeemed by our Saviour Christ. We have thought it mete, and our Dutie for the Pure Conservacion of the same Gospell in our Church, with one Uniforme Profession, Doctryne, and Preachinge, and for the avoyding of many Perilous and Vain Opinions, and Errors, to sende unto you certayne Articles, devised and gathered with great Study,

and



and by Council, and good Advice of the greatest learned Parte of our Bishoppes of this Realm, and sundry others of our Clergie; which Articles we Wyll and Exhort your self to Subscribe, and in your Preachings, Redings, and Teachings, to observe and cause to be subscribed and observed, of all other which do, or hereafter shall Preache, or Reade, within your Dioces. And if any Person, or Persons, having Benefice within your Dioces, shall from henceforth, not only refuse wylfully to sett their Hands to these Articles, but also obstinately Exhort their Parrochians to withstande the same, and Teache the People in a contrary way; Our Pleasure is, that beinge duly proved, ye shall advertise Us, or our Cownsaile of the hoole Mattier, fully to thintent suche furter Ordre may by Direction from Us, or our said Cownsaile, to be taken as the Case shall require, and shall stande with Justice, and th'Ordre of our Lawes. And further, that when, and as often as ye shall have any manner of Person presented unto you to be admitted by yowe as the Ordinary to any Ecclesiastical Ordre, Ministry, Office, or Cure, within your Dioces, that ye shall before you admit him, conferre with him in every theis Articles. And finding him therto consentinge, to cause him Subscribe the same in one Legier Book to be fourmed for that Purpose, which maye remayne as a Registre for a Concorde, and to let him have a Cotype of the same Articles. And if any Man in that Case shall refuse to consent to any of the said Articles, and to Subscribe the same, then we Will and Command you, that neither ye, nor any for you, or by your Procurement in any wise shall admitt him, or allowe him as sufficient and mete to take any Ordre, Ministry, or Ecclesiastical Cure. For whiche yower so doinge, we shall discharge yowe from all maner of Penalties, or Daungers of Actions, Suits, or Pleees of Premonirees, *quare impedit*, or such lyke. And yet our Meaning is, that if any Partie refuse to Subscribe any of these Articles, for lack of Learning and Knowledge of the Trewth, ye shall in that Case by Teachinge, Conference, and Prouf of the same by the Scriptures, reasonably and discretely move, and perswade him therto before yow shall Peremptorilye Judge him as unhable and a Recusant. And for the Tryall of his Conformitie, ye shall according to your Discrecion prefix a Time and Space convenient to Deliberate and give his Consent, so that be betwixt Three Weks and Six Weks, from the Time of his First Accessee unto yowe. And if after Six Weks he wyll not consent and agree wyllinglie to Subscribe, then ye may lawfullye, and shall in any wyse refuse to admytt, or enable him. And where there is of late sett fourthe by our Authoritie a Cathechisme for the Instruction of Younge Scolers in the Feare of God, and the Trewe Knowledge of his Holy Religion, with expresse Commaundymment from us to all Scole Maisters to teache and instruct their Scholars the saide Cathechisme, making it the Beginning and First Foundation of ther Teaching in their Scholes: Our Pleasure is, that for the better Exequution of our said Commaundymment, ye shall Yearely, at the least once visit, or cause to be visited, every Schole within your saide Dioces, in which Visitation yt shall be enquired both howgh the Scole Maister of every such Schole hath used himself in the Teaching of the said Cathechisme; and also howgh the Scholars do receyve and followe the same, making

king playne and full Certificate of the Offendors, contrary to this our Ordre, and of their severall Offences, to the Archbishop of that Province, within the Monethes from Tyme to Tyme after every such Offence. Yeoven undre our Signet at the Manor of *Grenewich* the 1xth Daye of *June*, the viiith Yeare of our Reign.

This is Faithfully Transcribed from the Beginning of a Folio MS. Book in the Principal Registry of the Lord Bishop of *Norwich* ----- After which immediately follow,

*Articuli de quibus in Synodo Londinensi, Anno Domini 1552. ad tollendam Dissensionem & Consensu veræ Religionis, firmandum inter Episcopos & alios eruditos Viros, convenerat Regiâ Auctoritate in lucem Editi.*

42 Articles as in the Appendix of IId Volume of the History of the Reformation, N. 55. Subscribed by about 50 Original Hands, thus:

*Per me* Milonem Spenser.

*Per me* Johannem Barrett.

*Per me* Petrum Watts, &c.

Feb. 12, 1713.

Examined by

*Thom. Tanner.*

### Number 9.

*Ornatiss. Viris Dominis Sands, ac Regentibus & Non-Regentibus Academiæ Cantabr.*

**Æ**Quum est, ut qui se Literarum Studiis dediderunt, & in veri Inquisitione versantur, illius Disciplinæ veritatem profiteantur, quæ ad vivendum est utilissima, & ad judicandum cum Verbo Dei convenientissima. Cùm autem in redintegranda Religione, multum



diuque Regiæ Majestatis Autoritate, & bonorum atque eruditorum Virorum judiciis fit elaboratum, & de Articulis quibusdam in Synodo Londonensi Anno Domini 1552. ad tollendam opinionum disputationem, conclusum: Æquissimum judicavimus, eosdem Regiâ Autoritate promulgatos, & omnibus Episcopis ad meliorem Dioceſeos suæ Administrationem traditos, vobis etiam commendare, & visitationis nostræ Autoritate præcipere ac Statuere de his, ad hunc modum.

Singuli Doctores & Bachallores Theologiæ, & singuli præterea Artium Doctores, solenniter & publice, ante creationem suam, hoc Jurejurando sequenti se astringant, & in Commentarios Academiæ, ad id designatos, suâ ipſerum manu referant. Quod ni fecerint gradus sui capiendi repulſam patiantur.

Ego N. N. Deo Teste promitto ac spondeo, primo me veram Christi Religionem, omni Animo Complexurum, Scripturæ Autoritatem Hominum judicio præpositurum, Regulam Vitæ & summam Fidei, ex Verbo Dei petiturum, cætera quæ ex Verbo Dei non probantur, pro humanis & non necessariis habiturum. Autoritatem Regiam in hominibus summam, & externorum Episcoporum Jurisdictioni minime subjectam æſtimaturum; & contrarias Verbo Dei Opiniones, omni voluntate ac mente refutaturum. Vera consuetis, Scripta non Scriptis, in Religionis Causâ antehabaturum. Deinde me Articulos, de quibus in Sinodo Londonensi Anno Domini 1553. ad tollendam Opinionum Dissensionem & consensum veræ Religionis firmandum inter Episcopos & alios eruditos Viros convenerat, & Regiâ Autoritate in lucem editos, pro veris & certis habiturum, & omni in loco tanquam Consentientes cum Verbo Dei defensurum, & contrarios Articulos in Scholis & Pulpitis vel respondendo vel concionando oppugnaturum. Hæc omnia in me recipio, Deoque Teste, me Sedulo facturum promitto ac Spondeo.

An. 1553, 1 Jun. Ex MS.  
Coll. Corp. Chr. Cant.

Tho. Ely *Canc.* Joannes Cheeke.  
Gul. Meye. Tho. Wendy.

### Number 10.

*King Edward's Devise for the Succession, written with his own Hand.*

Ex MSS.  
Petyti.

**F**OR lack of Issue Male of my Body, to the Issue Male coming of the Issue Female, as I have after declared. To the said Frances Heirs Males, if she have any; for lack of such Issue before my Death, to the said Jane and Heirs Males; to the said Katherine's Heirs Males;

to

to the Lady *Mary's* Heirs Males: To the Heirs Males of the Daughters, which She shall have hereafter. Then to the Lady *Marget's* Heirs Males. For Lack of such Issue, to the Heirs Males of the Lady *Jane's* Daughters; to the Heirs Males of the Lady *Katherine's* Daughters, and so forth, till you come to the Lady *Marget's* Heirs Males.

2. If after my Death the Heir Male be entred into Eighteen Year old, then He to have the whole Rule and Governance thereof.

3. But if He be under Eighteen, then his Mother to be Governes, till He enters Eighteen Year old: But to do nothing without the Advice and Aggreement of Six Parcell of a Councill, to be pointed by my last Will, to the Number of 20.

4. If the Mother die before the Heir enter into Eighteen, the Realm to be governed by the Councill: Provided that after He be Fourteen Year, all Great Matters of Importance be opened to Him.

5. *If I died without Issue, and there were none Heir Male; then the Lady Frances to be Gouvernes Regent. For lack of her, her Eldest Daughters; and for lack of them, the Lady Marget to be Governes after, as is aforesaid, till some Heir Male be born; and then the Mother of that Child to be Governes.*

6. *And if, during the Rule of the Governes, there die Four of the Councill; then shall She, by her Letters, call an Assembly of the Councill, within One Month following, and chuse Four more: Wherein She shall have Three Voices. But after her Death, the Sixteen shall chuse among themselves, till the Heir come to Fourteen Year old; and then He, by their Advice, shall chuse them.*

The last Two Paragraphs, in *Italicks*, are dash'd out, yet so as to be legible.

## Number II.

*The Council's Original Subscription, to Edward the VIth's  
Limitation of the Crown; in these Words:*

EDWARD.

WE whose Hands are underwritten, having heretofore many times heard the King's Majesty, our most Gracious Sovereign Lord's earnest Desire, and express Commandment, touching the Limitation of the Succession in the Imperial Crown of this Realm, and others his Majesty's Realms and Dominions; and having seen his Majesty's own Device, touching the said Succession, first wholly written with his most Gracious Hand, and after Copied out

*Ibid.*

in



in his Majesties Prefence, by his most High Commandment, and confirmed with the Subscription of his Majesties own Hand; and by his Highnes deliver'd to certain Judges, and other Learned Men, to be written in full Order: Do, by his Majesties Speciall and Absolute Commandment, eftsoones given us, agree, and by these Presents signed with our Hands, and sealed with our Seales, promise by our Oaths and Honours, to observe fully, perform and keep, all and every Article, Clause, Branch and Matter, contained in the said Writing delivered to the Judges and others, and superscribed with his Majesties Hand in Six several Places: And all such other Matter, as his Majesty, by his last Will, shall appoint, declare or command, touching or concerning the Limitation of the Succession of the said Imperiall Crown. And we do further promise, by his Majesty's said Commandment, never to vary or swerve, during our Lives, from the said Limitation of the Succession; but the same shall, to the uttermost of our Powers, defend and maintain. And if any of us, or any other, shall at any time hereafter (which God forbid) vary from this Agreement, or any Part thereof; we, and every of us, do assent to take, use and repute him, for a Breaker of the Common Concord, Peace and Unity of this Realme; and to do our uttermost, to see him or them so varying or swerving, punished with most sharp Punishments, according to their Deserts.

*T. Cant. T. Ely, Canc. Winchester. Northumberland.  
J. Bedford. H. Suffolk. W. Northampton. F. Shrewsbury.  
F. Huntington. Pembroke. E. Clinton. T. Darcy.  
G. Cobham. R. Ryche. T. Cheyne.*

*John Gate. William Petre. John Cheek. W. Cecill.  
Edward Mountague. John Baker.*

*Edward Gryffin. John Lucas.  
John Gosnald.*

---

Number 12.

*Articles and Instructions, annexed to the Commission, for  
Taking the Surrender of the Cathedral of Norwich.*

**F**irst, the said Commissioners shall repair to the Cathedral-Church of *Norwich*, declaring to the Dean and Chapter of the same, that the King's Majesty's Pleasure is, for diverse good and reasonable Causes and Considerations, to have the said College to be surrendered and given up into his Majesty's Hands; to the intent, that the same shall be altered in such Good and Godly wise, as the King that dead

dead is, (whose Soul God pardon) amongst other his Godly Purposes and Intents, and the King's Majesty that now is, by the Advice of his Honourable Council, hath determined. And that they shall practise and conclude with them, for and in his Highness's Name, for the same Surrender, to be had, done and performed, in such Manner and Form, as by their Discretions shall be thought most reasonable and convenient.

2. And after the said Surrender, and Gift made of the said College, and of all Lands, Tenements, Hereditaments and Possessions of the same, by the Dean and Chapter thereof, to the Use of the King's Highness, according to a Deed and Writing, devised and delivered to the said Commissioners for that Purpose; the said Commissioners to take Order, with the Dean and Prebendaries, Canons, and all other Officers and Ministers of the said Cathedral-Church, that they shall be, remain, continue and minister there, in such sort as they do, until the Alteration of the said Church shall be made perfect. Declaring further to the same Dean, Prebendaries and Canons, that they, and every of them, shewing themselves willing and conformable, according to the King's Majesty's Commission, shall, from the Time of the said Surrender, have as much in Profit and Commodity, for and towards their Living, as they had before the same Surrender, in such wise, as they shall have good Cause to be well satisfied and contented.

3. Also the said Commissioners shall make an Inventory of all the Plate and Jewels, Ornaments, Goods and Chattels of the said Cathedral-Church, and deliver the same to the Dean and Prebendaries, by Bills indented: And the said Commissioners are to take Order with them, that the same may continue, remain, and be used there, until the New Erection of the said Church, to the Intents and Purposes that they were ordained for: And declaring further, that the same shall be assigned, and given to them, upon the New Erection and Foundation of the said Cathedral-Church.

4. Also the said Commissioners, calling to them the Officers and Ministers of the said Cathedral-Church, shall cause a perfect Book, Rental or Value, to be made, of all the Possessions, as well Spiritual as Temporal, of the same Church, with the Rents, Resolute, and Deduction of the same: And also to note and certify the Decays thereof, if any be: And to cause the same Rentals, Book or Value, to be certified and delivered into the Court of Augmentations and Revenues of the King's Majesty's Crown, with as convenient Speed as it may be done.

5. *Item*, The said Commissioners are to do and execute, all such other Things as they shall think convenient and necessary, to the full Accomplishment of this Commission; and to certify the Truth and Circumstance of the same, together with this Commission.

*Vera Copia,*

H. Prideaux.



## Number 13.

*An Original Letter of Queen Mary's to King Philip, before He wrote to Her.*

CottonLibrary

**M** Onsieur, mon bon & perpetuel Allie: Entendant que l'Ambassadeur de l'Empereur, Monseigneur & bon Pere, residant ches moy Depeschoyt le Porteur de cestes devers vostre Haultesse. Encores que ne niayes particulieusement escript dois, que nostre Alliance à este traictee. Si est ce me sentant tant obligee, de la sincere & vray Affection que me portes, que ves confirmee, tant par les effectz que par les Lettres escriptes, audict Ambassadeur, & par la Negociation que le Sieur *d'Egmont* & aultres, & l'Ambassadeur de mondict Seigneur ont traicte. Je ne peu delaisser, vous tesmoigner le Vouloir & Debuoyr, que jay de vous correspondre a jamais: Et vous Mercie treshumblement tant de bons Offices, & joynctement vous advertis, que le Parlement, qui represente les Estats du mon Royaulme, à approuve les Articles de nostre Maryage sans Contradiction, comme trouvant les Conditions dicelluy Honorables, Advantaigens, & plusque Raisonnables; que me met en entiere Confidence, que vostre Venue par deca sera seure & agreable. Et esperant de brief supplier le surplus Verbalement, je feray Fin aux presentes; priant le Createur qui vous donnat, Monseigneur, mon bon & perpetuel Allie, faire vostre Voyage par deca en prosperite & sante, me recommandant tresaffectueusement & humblement à vostre Haultesse.

*A Londres, le xx.  
d'April.*

Vostre Entierement,  
Assuree,  
Et plus Obligee Alliee,

M A R Y E.

## Number 14.

*Queen Mary's Letter to the Earl of Suffex, to take Care of Elections to the Parliament.*

M A R Y the Queen.

*Ex MSS.  
Petyti.*

**R** ight Trusty and Welbeloved Cosen, we greet you well. And where for diverse Causes, tending principally to the Advancement of God's Glory, and the Commonwealth of this our Realme,  
we

wee have thought Convenient to call our High Court of Parliament to the 12th of the next Moneth, as by our Writ of Summonds, sent unto you for that Purpose, ye may at better length perceive; likeas for your own Part, wee doubt not but you will be ready to assist us with your best Advice and Counsaile for the furtherance of our Good Purpose, in such Matters as are to be treated of in our said Parliament; so to the End the same may be more gravely debated, and circum-spectly handled, to the Honour of Almighty God, and General Comodity of our Loving Subjects, wee have thought convenient specially to require and pray you to admonish on our Behalfe such our Good and Loving Subjects, as by Order of our Writs, have the Elections of Knights, Citifens, or Burgeses, within our Rule, to choose of their Inhabitans, as being eligible, by Order of our Lawes, may be of the Wise, Grave, and Catholick Sort. Such, as indeed, mean the true Honour of God, with the Prosperity of the Common-Wealth. The Advancement wherof wee, and our Dear Husband the King, doe chiefly professe and intend, without Alteration of any particular Man's Possession, as amongst other false Rumours, the Hinderers of our Good Purposes, and Favorers of Heresies, doe utterly report. And to the End wee may the better confer with you about these Matters that are to be treated of in our said Parliament, our Pleasure is, you do put your self in a Readiness to make your Repair hither, so as ye may be with us against the Feast of *All-Saints* at the furthest. Given under our Signet at our Palace of *Westminster* the 6th of *October*, the IId Year of our Reigne.

## Number 15.

*Cardinal Pole's First Letter to Queen Mary.*

**B**enedicta Manus Omnipotentis Dei, quæ non solum Majestatem Ex MS. p. nes me. tuam in alto Throno, & Possessione Regni collocavit; (quod multos Annos ad eam spectabat, & ab omnibus bonis optabatur, atq; inter Sacras Preces petebatur a Divina Clementia :) Sed etiam eò res deduxit, ut non modo res ipsa, verum etiam ratio ipsius rei conficiendæ omnes Amicos incredibili lætitia perfundat, & precipuè Pium Animum tuum, quia sine sanguine res peracta est, prope cum magna clades esset timenda propter fraudes Adversariorum, quæ non parvis viribus erant suffultæ ad eam justissima Successione privandam; atque cum propter longum spacium sibi divinitus concessum ad suas infidias subtexendas, putarant se ad finem optatum cum scelere suscepti confilii pervenisse, sine novis auxiliis, sed solis viribus quas Spiritus Dei excitavit in Animis mortalium, effectum est Divinâ Providentiâ, ut Brevi momento Temporis irriti ac delusi sint omnes Mortalium apparatus: Ita conversi sunt, qui Humanæ Malitiæ Militabant ad protegendum



gendum Honorem Dei, Majestatis tuæ incolumitatem, ac totius Regni salutem.

Si quis Itaque miratur cur tua Majestas nullis externis Viribus, paucis etiam subditis audentibus ejus partes amplecti, potuerit Regnum ita Usurpatum adversus tantam Hominum malitiam & Potentiam recuperare; aut si quis rogaret, quo modo factum est istud? Res ipsa respondere poterit; Spiritus Sanctus supervenit in corda Hominum, qui ea ratione tibi Regnum restituere voluit; atque hoc uno Exemplo non solum vestris Populis, sed Universis Christianis, & Barbaris Nationibus Manifestum fit, quia nullum fit Consilium, nec Prudentia, nec Fortitudo contra Dominum Deum, & quod excelsus dominetur, in Regno Hominum, & cui voluerit, & quando voluerit dabit illud. Ejus Divinæ Providentiæ in rebus Humanis Credulitas (Præcipium nostræ Religionis Fundamentum) si unquam in istud Regnum introduci, & confirmari debuit, per ullam Manifestam Experientiam; hoc maxime tempore introduci necesse est, quo propter impiorum tam diuturnam Authoritatem, ita erat in Animis Hominum debilitata & in eorum Animis præsertim, qui prudentiores, sapientioresque putabantur, ut penitus videretur extincta. Cum Divinæ itaque Bonitati placuerit, ita evidentibus signis suam potentiam in tua Majestate extollenda, tunc cum à suis inimicis, & à multis aliis prorsus oppressa putabatur, declarare; hoc est cur maximè omnes Boni, & Pii Gloriantur, & quod tibi magis gratum esse certò scio, quam Regiam Dignitatem. Atque, si ulla fæmina debuit Deum laudare iis Verbis suæ Sanctissimæ Matris, cujus nomen refert, quibus ea usa est ad exprimendam lætitiā propter Divinam Providentiā ad fui. Humanique generis salutem, cum spiritu Sancto repleta inquit, Magnificat Anima mea Dominum, cum iis quæ sequuntur; tua Majestas justissima de Causa eum Psalmum canere potest; cum in se ipsa sentiat, quod omnes vident, ut Divina Bonitas respexit Humilitatem ancillæ suæ: Et fecit potentiam in brachio suo, statim deposuit Potentes de sede & exaltavit humiles. Hoc dictum de Divina Providentiā erga Majestatem tuam semper manifestius in Administratione cognoscetur tua, cum increnento illo letitiæ, quod desideratur ad honorem & laudem Divinæ Majestatis. Enimvero mea erga Deum, & suam Ecclesiam Pietas, & erga Majestatem tuam me cogit ut unum tibi in memoriam revocem initio regnandi; quod est cum ita singulare Beneficium à Deo acceperis, diligenter consideres è quibus radicibus perturbationes pullularint, rerum adjutitiam pertinentium & ad veræ Religionis cultum; quippe cum illæ indies cum tanta ruina succreverint, in isto Regno Privata & Publica, quanta non ignorantur: atque si hoc ita feceris; percipies profectò Principium & Causam omnium malorum tunc pululasse, cum perpetuus humani generis Adversarius Patri tuo persuasit impurum Concilium; ut divortium fieret Matris tuæ optimæ Reginæ, atque illi magnæ in Deum, in ipsam, in te in seipsum injuriæ, majus additum est scelus, quod à Matre Spiritus divortium fecit omnium Christianorum; à Sancta Catholica Obedientiā & ab Apostolica Reverentiā. Ex hoc iniquo & impio semine tot pestiferi fructus nati sunt, ut ita Regnum corruerint, ut nullum neque justitiæ neque Religionis vestigium apparuerit: Tanquam relegatæ sint ambæ, quando Reverentiā, & Obedientiā Ecclesiæ ejecta fuit; neque prius sunt

redituræ,

redituræ, quam Divina Obedientia in Animum recepta sit eorum, qui rebus præfuerint. Hoc facile tua Majestas illi servo suo potest credere, qui omnium viventium plura, & istâ, Majestatis vestræ Causâ passus est: Neque ullam defendendæ Causæ tuæ rationem prætermisi, ubi aliquod extaret remedium, quo toties molestiis sublevarem. Quod nisi mei labores eum finem consecuti sint, quem semper desideravi; sæpius vel vitam ipsam periculis exponens; tamen nunc multo magis lætor, quam si ipse adjutor fuisssem; cum apertissimè cognoverim, Divinæ Providentiæ in Majestatem tuam propensam voluntatem: Nam profectò noluit Deus ulla humanâ manu te adjuvari, neque Cæsaris, neque ullius Principis: Quamvis nunquam cessavit Pontifex Cæsarem ad opem ferendam adhortari: Neque mea defuit diligentia, utrisque ad hoc pium opus sollicitantibus, sed Divinitus Res protracta est donec statutum tempus à Deo adventarit, quo Divinâ manu sublevaberis. Interim usus est Deus eadem ratione, qua erga carissimos & dilectissimos uti consuevit, quos nutrit, & educat in omni calamitatum, ærumnarumque genere: Ut gratiæ suæ semen altiores radices in corde ipsorum posset extendere, meliusque floreat, ac nobiliores fructus producat, cum visum fuerit in pristinam fælicitatem revocare. Istud nunc omnes boni expectant, atque ego in primis, cui major occasio concessa est dotes Animi tui, quæ Divinitus tibi concessæ sunt à teneris cognoscendi. Ea res me multò etiam magis impellit, ut Majestati tuæ id significem dere tanta, quanta est Ecclesiæ Obedientia, me magis etiam sollicitum esse, quàm antea, qua mente sis erga Religionem, & quo pacto affecta: nam cum circiter trecenta millia passuum distam ab Urbe Roma, nuper ad me de rebus Britannicis est delatum; per literas summi Pontificis certior factus sum, te ad summum imperium esse provectam, & quod ego sim delectus Legatus à Sancta sede Apostolica ad Majestatem tuam & Cæsarem, atque ad Galliarum Regem, ut tibi gratularer pro Victoria Dei in hac Causa ipsius Dei: Sed quia quanti res sit intelligo, censui non inutile fore, si Majestatis tuæ mentem quo pacto Deus moverit, prius percunctatus fuero: Cujus causâ præsentem nuncium cum meis literis mitto: Neque istud quidem, quia de optima voluntate tua subdubitem, quoniam te semper gratam, erga Deum fuisse cognovi, & acceptorum non immemorem, legumque divinarum observatissimam, inter quas Obedientia Apostolicæ sedis continetur, cui maximè omnium favere debes. Nam certè quidem Majestatis tuæ Pater nullâ aliâ de Causa Apostolicam Obedientiam reliquit, nisi quia nollet Pontifex Romanus Causæ suæ favere turpi. & iniquo ejus desiderio assentiri. Sed quoniam tot annos tanta facta est mutatio, tantæque malitia conata est evellere ex Animis Hominum penitusque restringere hanc ipsam Obedientiam & Observantiam, mihi visum est non absurdum fore, si ex te ipsa percunctarer, quod tempus aut quæ ratio aptior, commodiorque videretur futura ad ipsius Vicarii Christi Legatione perfungendum, idque ad istius Regni Beneficium & Consolationem, cujus Fælicitas & Quies semper magis oppressa fuit, ex qua Sancta Obedientia expugnari cepta est, coactaque solum vertere. Decrevi igitur prius responsum expectare, quod ut expectationi meæ optimæ respondeat, ab Omnipotente Deo suppliciter peto, omniumque piorum spei, quam habent de Majestate tua conceptam, idque ad confirmationem, & incrementum



Fælicitatis tuæ, & istius Regni. Quod si mihi benignam audientiam concefferis, spero futurum Dei optimi maximi Beneficio, ut intelligas in hac ipsa Obedientia Ecclesiæ consistere, & collocatum esse fundamentum & stabilimentum omnium bonorum ipsius Regni. Sic igitur rogans Omnipotentem Deum, ut pro sua infinita Misericordia Majestatem tuam fortunet in ipso imperio, in quo collocavit, finem faciam dicendi. Cænobio Megazeni Benaci. Eidus Sextilis. 1553.

*Reginaldus Polus.*

Number 16.

*The Queen's Answer to it.*

**O**Ptime sobrine Pole, in Christo Observandissime; accepi literas tuas, quas tuus familiaris mihi reddidit, ex quibus intellexi perpetuam tuam optimam voluntatem erga hoc Regnum, Patriam tuam nimirum, & erga Legitimos Hæredes, cum summa lætitiæ significatione ob ea, quæ placuerunt Divinæ Clementiæ Omnipotentis Dei in ostendenda sua erga me vera, justissima, infinitaq; Misericordia; propter quam me tibi etiam non parum debere sentio, cum monitus amantissimos præterea in literis addideris: Quod si nullum naturæ vinculum inter nos intercederet, quod certè maximum intercedit; tamen vel hac unâ de Causa maximas tibi deberem gratias, quod me tam amenter monueris; atque ego dabo operam pro viribus, ut monitis tuis satisfaciam, quippe cum neq; unquam fuerim, nec sim, neq; ut Divinæ Misericordiæ confido unquam futura sim Catholicæ adhortationis in tuis literis contentæ adversaria. Quod attinet ad meam Obedientiam, & debitam Observantiam erga sponsam Christi, & Matrem Divinam, suam Catholicam & Apostolicam Ecclesiam, harum literarum lator poterit te commodè docere; Is non poterit explanare quanta sit Animi mei molestia, propterea quod non possim Animi mei Sententiam, in hac re prorsus patefacere; sed cum primum data erit facultas sinceritatis Animi mei erga Divinum cultum explicandæ, Obedientiæq; quid Sentiam exequendæ, faciam te per literas certiozem. Quod spectat ad Coronationem, idem Nuncius omnia planè explicare poterit, multa; alia quibus illum adesse volui; cum mirificè Omnipotentis Dei Misericordia confidam, futurum ut hæc Comitæ omnia statuta abrogent, unde omnium calamitatum hujusce Regni semina pollularunt. Spero autem futurum ut delictorum veniam à summi Pontificis Clementia obtineam, cui te rogo, ut meo nomine humillimè gratias agas pro sua multiplici in me Bonitate, ut in eadem persistat Clementia, omnemq; præteritorum commissorum Oblivionem concedat; hunc igitur remitto spe postulationis non irritæ  
futuræ

futurae operâ tuâ; quando tantum Benevolentiae, & fraternae Charitatis, mihi pignus obtulisti: Me itaque plurimum Sancto Patri, ac tibi commendans, finem facio scribendi.

Westmonasterij, *Sexto*  
*Idus Octobris.*

*Maria Regina.*

Number 17.

*Cardinal Pole's General Powers, for Reconciling England  
to the Church of Rome.*

JULIUS Papa III.

**D**ilecte Fili noster, Salutem & Apostolicam Benedictionem. Dudum, cum charissima in Christo Filia nostra, Maria Angliæ tunc Princeps, Regina declarata fuisset, & speraretur Regnum Angliæ, quod, sæva Regum Tyrannide, ab Unione Sanctæ Ecclesiæ Catholicæ separatum fuerat; ad Ovile Gregis Domini, & ejusdem Ecclesiæ Unionem, ipsa Maria primum regnante, redire posse. Nos Te, præstanti Virtute, singulari Pietate, ac multa Doctrina insignem, ad eandem Mariam Reginam, & universum Angliæ Regnum, de Fratrum nostrorum Consilio, & unanimi Consensu, Nostrum & Apostolicæ Sedis, Legatum de Latere destinavimus. Tibique, inter cætera, omnes & singulas utriusque Sexus, tam Laicas quam Ecclesiasticas, Seculares, & quorumvis Ordinum Regulares, Personas, in quibusvis etiam Sacris Ordinibus constitutas, cujuscunque Statûs, Gradûs, Conditionis & Qualitatis existerent, ac quacunque Ecclesiasticâ, etiam Episcopali, Archiepiscopali, & Patriarchali; aut mundano, etiam Marchionali, Ducali, aut Regia Dignitate præfulgerent: Etiam si Capitulum, Collegium, Universitas, seu Communitas forent: quarumcunque Hæresium, aut novarum Sectarum, Professores, aut in eis culpabiles, vel suspectos, ac credentes, receptatores, & fautores eorum, etiam si relapse fuissent, eorum Errorem cognoscentes, & de illis dolentes, ac ad Orthodoxam Fidem recipi humiliter postulantes, cognita in eis, vera & non ficta, aut simulata Pœnitentia, ab omnibus & singulis per eos perpetratis, (Hæreses, & ab eadem Fide Apostasias, Blasphemias, & alios quoscunque Errores, etiam sub generali Sermone non venientes, sapientibus) peccatis, criminibus, excessibus & delictis; nec non Excommunicationum, Suspensionum, Interdictorum, & aliis Ecclesiasticis, ac Temporalibus etiam Corporis afflictivis, & capitalibus sententiis, censuris & pœnis, in eos Præmissorum occasione, à Jure vel ab Homine latis, vel promulgatis; etiam si in iis viginti, & plus annis inforduisent; & eorum Absolutio, Nobis & Divinæ Sedi, & per Literas, in die Cœnæ Domini legi consuetas, reservata

*Ex MS. penes me.*



fervata existeret, in utroque, Conscientiæ videlicet, & contentioso foro, plenariè absolvendi, & liberandi, ac aliorum Christi fidelium consortio aggregandi: Nec non cum eis super irregularitate, per eos, Præmissorum occasione, etiam quia sic ligati, Missas & alia divina Officia, etiam contra Ritus & Ceremonias ab Ecclesia eatenus probatas & usitatas, celebrassent, aut illis alias semiscuissent. Contracta nec non Bigamia per eosdem Ecclesiasticos, Seculares, vel Regulares, verè aut fictè, seu alias qualitercunque incurfa; (etiamsi ex eo quod Clerici in Sacris, constituti, cum Viduis vel aliis corruptis, Matrimonium contraxissent, pretenderetur) rejectis & expulsis tamen prius Uxoribus, sic de facto copulatis. Quodque Bigamia, & irregularitate ac aliis præmissis non obstantibus, in eorum Ordinibus, dummodo ante eorum Lapsum in Hæresin hujusmodi, ritè & legitimè promoti vel ordinati fuissent, etiam in Altaris Ministerio ministrare, ac quæcunque & qualitercunque etiam curata Beneficia, secularia vel regularia, ut prius, dummodo super eis alteri jus quæsitum non existeret, retinere: Et non promoti, ad omnes etiam Sacros & Presbyteratus Ordines, ab eorum Ordinariis, si digni & idonei reperti fuissent, promoveri, Beneficia Ecclesiastica, si iis alias canonicè conferentur, recipere & retinere valerent, dispensandi & indulgendi: Ac omnem infamiæ, & inhabilitatis maculam sive notam, ex præmissis quomodolibet insurgentem, penitus & omnino abolendi; nec non ad pristinos Honores, Dignitates, Famam & Patriam, & bona etiam confiscata; in pristinumque, & eum, in quo ante præmissa quomodolibet erant, Statum restituendi, reponendi, & reintegrandi: Ac eis, dummodo corde contriti eorum errata & excessus, alicui per eos eligendo Catholico Confessori, sacramentaliter confiterentur, ac Pœnitentiam salutarem, eis per ipsum Confessorem propterea injungendam omnino adimplerent, omnem publicam Confessionem, Abjurationem, Renunciationem, & Pœnitentiam jure debitam, arbitrio suo moderandi: vel in totum remittendi. Nec non Communitates & Universitates, ac singulares Personas quascunque, à quibusvis illicitis Pactionibus & Conventionibus, per eos cum Dominis aberrantibus, seu in eorum favorem, quomodolibet initis, & iis præstitis Juramentis, & Homagiis, illorumque omnium observatione; & si quem eatenus occasione eorum incurrissent Perjurij reatum, etiam absolvendi, & Juramenta ipsa relaxandi. Ac quoscunque Regulares & Religiosos, etiam in Hæresin hujusmodi ut prefertur lapsos, extra eorum regularia loca absque dictæ Sedis licentia vagantes, ab Apostasiæ reatu, & Excommunicationis, aliisque Censuris ac Pœnis Ecclesiasticis, per eos propterea etiam juxta suorum Ordinum instituta incurfis, pariter absolvendi. Ac cum eis ut alicui Beneficio Ecclesiastico curato, de illud obtinentis consensu; etiam in habitu Clerici secularis, habitum suum regularem, sub honesta toga Presbyteri secularis deferendo, deservire, & extra eadem regularia loca remanere, liberè & licitè possint, dispensandi. Nec non quibusvis Personis, etiam Ecclesiasticis, ut quadragesimalibus, & aliis anni temporibus & diebus, quibus usus ovorum & carniū est de jure prohibitus, butiro & caseo, & aliis lacticiiniis; ac dictis ovis & carnibus, de utriusque seu alterius, spiritualis, qui Catholicus existeret, medici Consilio, aut si Lo-

corum

corum & Personarum Qualitate inspecta, ex defectu Piscium aut Olei, vel indispositione Personarum earundem, seu alia Causa legitima id Tibi faciendum videretur, ut tuo arbitrio uti & vesci possint, indulgendi & concedendi. Nec non per Te in præteritis duntaxat Casibus, aliquos Clericos seculares, tantum Presbyteros, Diaconos, aut Subdiaconos, qui Matrimonium cum aliquibus Virginibus, vel corruptis Secularibus, etiam Mulieribus, de facto eatenus contraxissent, considerata aliqua ipsorum singulari qualitate, & cognita eorum vera ad Christi Fidem conversione, ac aliis circumstantiis, ac modificationibus tuo tantum arbitrio adhibendis; ex quibus aliis præsertim Clericis in sacris Ordinibus hujusmodi constitutis, quibus non licet Uxores habere, scandalum omnino non generetur; citra tamen Altaris, ac alia Sacerdotum Ministeria, & Titulos Beneficiorum Ecclesiasticorum, ac omni ipsorum Ordinum Exercitio sublato, ab Excommunicationis Sententia, & aliis Reatibus propterea incurfis; injuncta inde eis etiam tuo arbitrio pœnitentia salutari, absolvendi ac cum eis dummodo alter eorum superstes remaneret, de cætero sine spe Conjugij, quod inter se Matrimonium legitimè contrahere, & in eo postquam contractum foret, licitè remanere possent, Prolem exinde legitimam decernendo, misericorditer dispensandi. Ac quæcunque Beneficia Ecclesiastica, tam Secularia quam Regularia, & quæ per Rectores Catholicos possidebantur, de ipsorum tamen Rectorum Catholicorum consensu, seu absque eorum præjudicio, cuicunque alteri Beneficio Ecclesiastico, ob ejus fructus tenuitatem, aut Hospitali jam erecto vel erigendo, seu Studio Universali, vel Scholis Literariis; uniendi, annectendi, & incorporandi, aut fructus, redditus, & proventus, seu bonorum eorundem Beneficiorum dividendi, separandi, & dismembrandi; ac eorum sic divisorum, separatorum & dismembratorum partem aliis Beneficiis, seu Hospitalibus, vel Studiis aut Scholis, seu piis Usibus, similiter arbitrio tuo perpetuo applicandi & appropriandi. *At cum Possessoribus bonorum Ecclesiasticorum, (resitutis, prius si Tibi expedire videretur, immobilibus per eos indebitè detentis) super fructibus malè perceptis, ac bonis mobilibus, consumptis, concordandi, & transigendi, ac eos desuper liberandi & quietandi.* Ac quicquid Concordiis & Transactionibus hujusmodi proveniret, in Ecclesia cujus essent bona, vel in Studiorum Universalium, aut Scholarum hujusmodi, seu alios pios Usus convertendi; omniaque & singula alia, in quæ in præmissis, & circa ea quomodolibet necessaria & opportuna esse cognosceres, faciendi, dicendi, gerendi, & exercendi. Nec non Catholicos locorum Ordinarios, aut alias Personas Deum timentes, Fide insignes, & Literarum Scientia præditas, ac Gravitate Morum conspicuas, & Ætate veneranda; de quarum Probate & Circumspectione, ac Charitatis Zelo plena Fiducia conspici posset, ad præmissa omnia, cum simili vel limitata Potestate, (Absolutione & Dispensatione Clericorum, circa Connubia, ac Unione Beneficiorum, seu eorum fructuum & bonorum separatione, & applicatione, ac concordia cum Possessoribus bonorum Ecclesiasticorum, & eorum liberatione duntaxat exceptis) substituendi & subdelegandi: Ac diversas alias Facultates, per diversas alias nostras tam sub plumbo quam in forma Brevis confectas literas, concessimus, prout in illis plenius continetur.

N. B.



tur. Verum cum Tu ad Partes Flandriæ, ex quibus brevissima ad Regnum transfreatio existit, Te contuleris, ac ex certis rationalibus Nobis notis Causis inibi aliquandiu subsistere habeas, ac à nonnullis, nimium forsan scrupulosis, hæsitetur; an Tu, in Partibus hujusmodi subsistens, prædictis ac aliis Tibi concessis Facultatibus, uti ac in eodem Regno locorum Ordinarios, aut alias Personas (ut præmittitur) qualificatas; quæ Facultatibus per Te, juxta dictarum Literarum Continentiam pro Tempore concessis utantur, alias juxta earundem Literarum tenorem substituere & delegare possis. Nos causam tuæ Subsistentiæ in eisdem partibus approbantes, & singularum Literarum prædictarum tenores, præsentibus pro sufficienter expressis, ac de verbo ad verbum insertis, habentes, Circumspectioni tuæ, quod quamdiu in eisdem partibus de licentia nostra moram traxeris, Legatione tua prædicta durante, etiam extra ipsum Regnum existens; omnibus & singulis prædictis, & quibuscumque aliis Tibi concessis, & quæ per præsentibus Tibi conceduntur; Facultatibus etiam erga quoscunque Archiepiscopos, Episcopos, ac Abbates, aliosque, Ecclesiarum tam Secularium, quam quorumvis Ordinum Regularium, nec non Monasteriorum, & aliorum Regularium Locorum Prelatos, non secus ac erga alios inferiores Clericos, uti possis; nec non erga alias Personas, in singulis Literis prædictis quovismodo nominatas, ad Te pro Tempore recurrentes, vel mittentes; etiam circa Ordines, quos nunquam aut malè susceperunt, & Munus Consecrationis, quod iis, ab aliis Episcopis vel Archiepiscopis, etiam Hæreticis & Schismaticis, aut alias minus ritè & non servata forma Ecclesiæ consueta impensum fuit: Etiam si Ordines & Munus hujusmodi, etiam circa Altaris Ministerium temerè executi sint, per Te ipsum, vel alios, ad id à Te pro Tempore deputatos, liberè uti; ac in eodem Regno, tot quot Tibi videbuntur Locorum Ordinarios alias Personas (ut præmittitur) qualificatas, quæ Facultatibus per Te, eis pro tempore concessis (citra tamen eas quæ solum tibi ut præfertur concessæ existunt) etiam te in partibus Flandriæ hujusmodi subsistente, libere utantur; & eas exerceant & exequantur: Alias, juxta ipsarum Literarum continentiam ac tenorem substituere & subdelegare. Nec non de Personis quorumcunque Episcoporum vel Archiepiscoporum, qui Metropolitanam aut alias Cathedralis Ecclesias de manu Laicorum etiam Schismaticorum, & presertim qui de Henrici Regis & Edvardi ejus nati receperunt, & eorum regimini & administratione se ingrefferunt, & eorum fructus redditus & proventus etiam longissimo tempore, tanquam veri Archiepiscopi aut Episcopi temere & de facto usurpando, etiam si in Hæresin aut præfertur, inciderint, seu ante Hæretici fuerint, postquam per te unitati Sanctæ Matris Ecclesiæ restituti existiterint, tuque eos rehabilitandos esse censueris, si tibi alias digni & idonei videbuntur, eisdem Metropolitanis & aliis Cathedralibus Ecclesiis denuo, nec non quibuscumque aliis Cathedralibus etiam Metropolitanis Ecclesiis per obitum vel privationem illorum Præfulum, seu alias quovis modo pro tempore vacantibus, de Personis idoneis pro quibus ipsa Maria Regina juxta consuetudinis ipsius Regni, tibi supplicaverit Authoritate nostra providere ipsasque Personas eisdem Ecclesiis in Episcopos aut Archiepiscopos præficere: Ac cum iis qui Ecclesias Cathedralis

thedrales & Metropolitanas, de manu Laicorum etiam Schismaticorum ut prefertur, receperunt, quod eisdem seu aliis ad quas eas alias rite transferri contigerit, Cathedralibus etiam Metropolitanis Ecclesiis, in Episcopos vel Archiepiscopos præesse ipsasq; Ecclesias in Spiritualibus & Temporalibus regere & gubernare ac munere Consecrationis eis hæcenus impenso uti, vel si illud eis nondum impensum extiterit, ab Episcopis vel Archiepiscopis Catholicis per te nominandis suscipere libere & licite possint. Nec non cum quibuscvis per te ut præmittitur pro tempore absolutis & rehabilitatis, ut eorum erroribus & excessibus præteritis non obstantibus, quibuscvis Cathedralibus, etiam Metropolitanis Ecclesiis in Episcopos & Archiepiscopos præfici & præesse, illasq; in eisdem Spiritualibus & Temporalibus regere & gubernare: Ac ad quoscunq; etiam Sacros & Presbyteratos Ordines promoveri, & in illis aut per eos jam licet minus rite susceptis Ordinibus etiam in altaris Ministerio Ministrare nec non munus Consecrationis suscipere, & illo uti libere & licite valeant; dispensare etiam libere & licite possis, plenam & liberam Apostolicam Authoritatem per presentes concedimus Facultatem & Potestatem: Non obstantibus Constitutionibus & Ordinationibus Apostolicis, ac omnibus illis quæ in singulis Literis præteritis Voluimus non obstare, cæterisq; contrariis quibuscunque.

*Datum Romæ apud Sanctum Petrum,  
sub Annulo Piscatoris, Die 8. Mar-  
tis 1554. Pontificatus nostri Anno  
Quinto.*

### Number 18.

*A Letter from Cardinal Pole to the Bishop of Arras, upon  
King Philip's Arrival in England, and his Marriage  
to the Queen.*

A Mons<sup>r</sup>. d' Arras.

M<sup>to</sup>. Ill<sup>re</sup>. è Rev<sup>do</sup>. Sig<sup>re</sup>.

**H**Avendo à quest' hora ricevuto particolari avisi dopo l' arrivo del Serenissimo Principe del Regno d' Inghilterra, del felice successo del Matrimonio mi e parso convenire al debito mio rallegrarmene con S. Majestà Cesarea siccome fo con l' alligata la quale indirizzo à V. S. per la confidenza che ho nella solita sua cortesia, pregandola sia contenta presentarla a sua Majestà col baciarle riverentemente le mani da parte mia. L' Abbate Sagante suo l' altr' hieri mi communico  
una



una Lettera di V. S. che dava particolar avviso della ritirata de Franzesi il che mi fu di molta consolatione. Ben si e visto di quant' importanza sia la presenza di S. Majeſtà. Ancor non e arrivato ill meſſo mio da Roma, ma ſpero non poſſa tardar molto: ſubbito che farà gionto, non mancarò di darne avviso a V. S. alla quale di cuore mi raccomando e prego N. Sig<sup>r</sup> Iddio la conſervire favorisca a ſuo ſervitio. Di Bruxelles alli 29 di Luglio 1554.

*Reginaldo Card. Pole.*

Number 19.

*A Letter from Cardinal Pole to the Cardinal de Monte, acknowledging the Pope's Favour in ſending him full Powers.*

Al Card. di Monte,

Rev<sup>mo</sup>. & Ill<sup>mo</sup>. Sig<sup>r</sup>. mio Oſſ<sup>mo</sup>.

SCRiſſi a V. S. Reverendiſſima per l'ultime mie, l'avifo dell' arrivo in Inghilterra del Sereniſſimo Principe, il qual' e poi ſtato con la Sereniſſima Regina a Vinceſtre, ove hanno celebrato il ſponſalitio il di San Giacomo con gran ſollennita come V. S. Reverendiſſima piaciendole potra intendere dall' eſſibitor di queſta, al quale mi rimetto in quel di piu, che in tal propoſito io le poteſſi dire e bacio humilmente la mano di V. S. Reverendiſſima & Illuſtriſſima in ſuo buona gratia raccomandandomi. di Bruxelles alli 29 di luglio 1554.

In queſt' hora e giunto l' Ormaneto con l' Eſpeditione che e piaciuto darle alla Santità di noſtro Signore, tutto ſecondo quello, che ſi poteſſe deſiderare dalla pietà e benignità ſua in ſervitio di Dio, e della ſua Chieſa in queſta cauſa coſſi importante del che prego V. S. Reverendiſſima ſia contenta baciarne humilmente a nome mio i piedi a ſua Beatit<sup>ne</sup> alla quale con la prima occaſione non mac caro di dar pieno avifo di quanto farà biſogno. In vero l' arrivar dell' Ormaneto non poteva eſſer più a tempo, e ſpero che N. Signor' Iddio ci fara gratia, che le coſe ſ' indirizzeranno in modo che ſua Santità col ſervitio di ſua Divina Maeſtà ne reſterà conſolata. Il tempo non patiſce che per hora io poſſa eſſere più lungo, e di nuovo bacio humilmente le mani di V. S. Reverendiſſima & Illuſtriſſima.

*Reginaldo Card. Pole.*

Alli 29 di luglio 1554 il Signore Ormaneto arrivo a Bruxelles con l' infratta ſpeditione.

## Number 20.

*A Breve empowering Cardinal Pole to execute his Faculties with relation to England, while he yet remained beyond Sea, and out of England.*

*Al. Card. Polo.*

## JULIUS Papa III.

**D**ilecte Fili noster salutem & Apostolicam Benedictionem. Superioribus mensibus ex diversis tunc expressis causis te ad Charissimam in Christo Filiam nostram Mariam Angliæ Reginam Illustrem, & Universum Angliæ Regnum primò, & deinde pro conciliando inter eos pace ad Charissimos in Christo Filios nostros Carolum Romanum Imperatorem semper Augustum, & Henricum Francorum Regem Christianissimum, nostrum & Apostolicæ sedis Legatum de latere de Fratrum nostrorum Concilio destinavimus. Et licet te multis, & quidem amplissimis facultatibus, quibus etiam in partibus Flandriæ existens, quoad Personas & Negocia Regni Angliæ hujusmodi uti posses per diversas nostras tam sub plumbo, quam in forma brevis confectas litteras muniverimus, prout in illis plenius continetur. Quia tamen ob Schismata, & alios errores, quibus dictum Regnum diutius inflectum fuit, multi casus potuerunt contingere, qui provisione per dictam sedem facienda indigebunt & sub dictis facultatibus veluti infiniti, & inexcogitabiles comprehendi nequiverunt, & insuper à nonnullis hæsitatur an tu facultatibus hujusmodi in insulis & Dominiis eidem Mariæ Reginæ subjectis uti possis, quibus item facultatibus apud Carolum Imperatorem & quibus apud Henricum Regem præfatos existens utaris: Nos de tuis fide, pietate, religione, doctrina, & prudentia, in Domino benè confidentes, & volentes omnem in præmissis hæsitandi materiam amputare, circumspectioni tuæ, ut ubicumq; fueris etiam extra partes Flandriæ Legatione tua hujusmodi durante, omnibus & singulis tibi concessis hæctenus, & in posterum concedendis Facultatibus, quo ad Personas & Negotia Regni ac Insularum & Dominiorum hujusmodi per te vel alium vel alios juxta ipsarum Facultatum continentiam, & tenorem uti, ac omnia & singula quæ tibi pro Omnipotentis Dei, & nostro ac ejusdem sedis honore, nec non Regni, Insularum & Dominorum prædictorum ad Sanctæ Catholicæ, Ecclesiæ, Communionem, reductione ac Personarum in illis existentium Animarum salute expedire judicaveris & si ea in generali mandato & Facultatibus tibi alias concessis non veniant, sed specialem expressiorem & mandatum magis speciale requirant, dicere, facere, exercere, & exequi, nec non quandiu pro pace hujusmodi tractanda, vel aliis



Negociis nostrum, & sedis prædictæ honorem concernentibus, apud dictum Carolum Imperatorem fueris, omnibus & singulis Facultatibus olim dilecto Filio Hieronimo Tituli St. Matthæi Presbitero Cardinali tunc apud ipsum Carolum Imperatorem nostro & præfatæ sedis Legato de latere concessis, & in omnibus Provinciis, Regnis, Dominiis, Terris, & Locis, sub illis comprehensis. Si vero apud dictum Henricum Regem extiteris eis omnibus, que dudum dilecto Filio Hieronimo Sancti Georgii ad velum Aureum Diacono Cardinali tunc apud Henricum Regem eundem, nostro & dictæ sedis legato concessæ fuerunt, Facultatibus, & in omnibus Provinciis Regnis, Dominiis, Terris, & locis sub illis comprehensis uti liberè & licitè valeas, in omnibus & per omnia perinde ac si illæ tibi specialitur & expresse concessæ fuissent, Apostolica autem tenore presentium concedimus, & indulgemus, ac Facultates tibi concessas prædictas ad hæc omnia extendimus. Non obstantibus Constitutionibus & Ordinationibus Apostolicis, ac omnibus illis, quæ in singulis Facultatibus tam tibi, quam Hieronimo Presbitero, & Hieronimo Diacono Cardinalibus præfatis concessis, volumus non obstare cæterisq; contrariis quibuscq; dat. Romæ apud S. Petrum, sub annulo piscatoris Die xxvi Junii 1554, Pontificatus nostri Anno Quinto.

*Jo. Larinen'.*

Number 21.

*A Second Breve containing more special Powers, relating to the Abbey-Lands.*

JULIUS Papa III,

**D**ilecte Fili noster salutem & Apostolicam Benedictionem. Superioribus mensibus oblata nobis spe per Dei Misericordiam, & Charissimæ in Christo Filiæ nostræ Mariæ Angliæ Reginæ, summam Religionem, & Pietatem, Nobilissimi illius Angliæ Regni, quod jamdiu quorundem Impietate, à reliquo Catholicæ Ecclesiæ Corpore à vulsum fuit, ad ejusdem Catholicæ & Universalis Ecclesiæ unionem, extra quam nemini salus esse potest, reducendi; te ad præfatum Mariam Reginam, atque Universum illud Regnum, nostrum & Apostolicæ sedis Legatum de latere, tanquam Pacis & Concordiæ Angelum, de venerabilum Fratrum nostrorum, Sanctæ Romanæ Ecclesiæ Cardinalium Consilio atque unanimi assensu, destinavimus, illisque Facultatibus omnibus munivimus, quas ad tanti Negotii confectionem Necessarias putavimus esse, seu quommodolibet opportunas. Atque inter alia

alia Circumſpectione tua, ut cum bonorum Eccleſiaſticorum Poſſeſſoribus, ſuper fructibus malè perceptis, & bonis mobilibus conſumptis, concordare & tranſigere, ac eos deſuper liberare & quietare, ubi expedire poſſet, Authoritatem conceſſimus & Facultatem, prout in Noſtris deſuper conſectis Literis plenius continetur : Cum autem ex iis Principiis, quæ ejusdem Mariæ Sedulitate & Dili-gentia, rectaque & conſtante in Deum Mente, tuo & in ea re coope-rante Studio atque Conſilio, præſatum reductionis opus in prædicto Regno uſque ad hanc diem habetur, ejusdemque præclari Operis per-fectio indies magis ſperetur ; eoque faciliores progreſſus habitura res eſſe dignoſcatur, quo nos majorem in bonorum Eccleſiaſticorum Poſ-ſeſſionibus, in illa ſuperiorum Temporum confuſione, per illius Pro-vinciæ homines occupatis, Apoſtolicæ Benignitatis & Indulgentiæ ſpem oſtenderimus. Nos nolentes tantam dilectiſſimæ Nobis in Chriſto Nationis Recuperationem, & tot Animarum pretioſo Jeſu Chriſti Domini noſtri Sanguine redemptarum, Salutem, ullis terrena-rum rerum reſpectibus, impediri ; more Pij Patris, in Noſtrorum & Sanctæ Catholicæ Filiorum, poſt longum periculofæ peregrinationis tempus, ad Nos reſpectantium & redeuntium, peroptatum complexum occurrentes ; Tibi, de cujus præſtanti Virtute, ſingulari Pietate, Doctrina, Sapientia, ac in Rebus gerendis Prudentia & Dexteri-tate, plenam in Domino Fiduciam habemus, cum quibuſcunque bo-norum Eccleſiaſticorum, tam mobilium quam immobilium, in præ-fato Regno Poſſeſſoribus, ſeu Detentoribus, pro quibus ipſa Sereniſſima Regina Maria interceſſerit, de bonis per eos indebitè detentis, Arbitrio tuo, Authoritate noſtra, tractandi, concordandi, tranſigendi, componendi, & cum eis ut præſata bona ſine ullo ſcrupulo in poſterum retinere poſſint, diſpenſandi, omniaque & ſingula alia, quæ in his, & circa ea quomodolibet neceſſaria & opportuna fuerint, con-cludendi & faciendi. Salvo tamen in his, in quibus, propter rerum magnitudinem & gravitatem, hæc Sancta Sedes merito tibi videretur conſulenda, noſtro & præſatæ Sedis, beneplacito & confirmatione, plenam & liberam Apoſtolicam Authoritatem, tenore præſentium, & ex certa ſcientia, concedimus Facultatem. Non obſtantibus Literis, fælicis Recordationis Pauli Papæ II. Prædeceſſoris noſtri, de non alienandis bonis Eccleſiaſticis, niſi certa forma ſervata, & aliis quibuſvis Apoſtolicis, ac in Provincialibus & Synodalibus Conciliis, Ediſtis Generalibus, vel Specialibus Conſtitutionibus, & Ordinationibus. Nec non quarumvis Eccleſiarum & Monafteriorum, ac aliorum re-gularium & piorum Locorum, Juramento, Confirmatione Apoſto-lica, vel quavis alia Firmitate roboratis, Foundationibus, Statutis & Conſuetudinibus, illorum Tenores pro ſufficienter expreſſis habentes contrariis quibuſcunque.

N. B.

Paper-Office.

N. B.

*Datum Romæ apud S. Petrum, ſub  
Annulo Piſcatoris, Die 28. Junij  
1554. Pontificatûs Noſtri Anno  
Quinto.*



## Number 22.

*A Letter to Cardinal Pole, from Cardinal de Monte, full of High Civilities.*

*Al. Card. Polo.*

Rev<sup>mo</sup>. & Ill<sup>mo</sup>. Sig<sup>r</sup>. mio Col<sup>mo</sup>.

**R**itornando à V. S. Reverendissima & Illustrissima l'Auditor fuo con l'Espeditioni, che ella vedrà, à me non occorre dirle altro se non supplicarla, che si degni mantenermi nella sua bona gratia, è di non si scordare d' haver qui un Servitore che in amarla, & offerverla non cede à qualsivoglia altra Persona, è che il maggior Favore, che io sia per aspettare sempre da V. S. Reverendissima & Illustrissima farà, che le piaccia di comandarmi in tutto questo, che mi conoscerà buono per servirla; il che sò d' haverle scritto più volte, e non mi è grave di replicarlo. Sua Sanctità sta cossi bene della Persona come sia stata di dieci anni in quà, ringratiato Iddio: e saluta e benedice V. S. Reverendissima & Illustrissima e li desidera, e prega ogni prosperità nelle sue Negociationi importantissime, a tutta la Christianità, & io le bacio humilmente le Mani. Di Roma alli xv. di Luglio 1554.

*H. Card. di Monte.*

## Number 23.

*A Letter from Cardinal Morone to Cardinal Pole, telling him how uneasy the Pope was, to see his Going to England so long delayed; but that the Pope was resolved not to Recal him.*

*Al. Card. Polo.*

Rev<sup>mo</sup>. & Ill<sup>mo</sup>. Sig<sup>r</sup>. mio Of<sup>mo</sup>.

**A**Vanti la partita mia di Roma hebbi la Lettera di V. S. Reverendissima delli 25 di Maggio in risposta delle mie, che gli haveuo scritto pur alli 6 di Maggio, quando vennero li primi avist del Nuncio,

cio, doppo che V. S. Reverendissima fu ritornata alla Corte dal Viaggio di Francia, hebbi ancora l'altra di 28 del Medesimo, con la Querela Christiana, che ella fa contro di me, anzi per dir meglio con la Dottrina che V. S. Reverendissima con Sancta Charità querelandosi m' insegna, sopra la quale non m' occorre dir altro, se non che ella ha gran Raggione, & che io l' ho fatto torto a scriverle in quel modo, di che in una parte mi pento, e spero che ella mi habbi perdonato; nell' altra mi allegro, havendo havuto occasione di Guadagnar questa sua altra Lettera, e dato a lei occasione di esplicarsi in questo modo in Lettre come ha fatto, e ne ringrazio Dio prima, e poi lei ancora, che si sia degnata mandarmi Lettera così grata, la qual potrà servire a più d' un proposito.

La prima di 21, Fù in summa communicata da me a Nostro Signore parendomi necessario chiarir bene sua Sanctità, sì per Giustificatione delle attioni passate di V. S. Reverendissima come per non lasciar, che sua Sanctità stesse nella disperatione dimostraia già delle cose d' Inghilterra, e della bontà del mezzo della Persona sua: e Benche S. Sanctità non haveffe pazienza secondo l' ordinario suo di leggere, o di udir la Lettera, nondimeno le dissi talmente la summa, che mostrò restare satisfattissima, e disse esser più che certa, che quella non haveua dato causa ne all' Imperatore, ne ad altri d' usar con lei termini così estravaganti. E quanto alla Revocatione di V. S. Reverendissima sempre persisteva che non si potesse fare senza grand indignità sua, e dishonor della Sede Apostolica, e carico dell' Imperatore istesso, e di V. S. Reverendissima, e gran pregiudicio del Regno d' Inghilterra: & Benche dicesse di scrivere alla Cæsarea Majestà, nondimeno non si risolveua in tutto, com anco non si risolveua nella materia delli beni Ecclesiastici, sopra la qual sua Sanctità ha parlato molte volte variamente; e nel rescrivere alla Regina d' Inghilterra, & al Principe di Spagna, come V. S. Reverendissima haverà inteso da M. Francisco Stella, & intenderà hora dall' Ormaneto, il qual sarà portator di questa, e tandem vien' espedito in tutti li punti quasi conformi al bisogno, & al desiderio suo.

Io son venuto a star qui a Sutrio fin le prime acque d' Agotto, che poi piacendo a Dio ritornerò a Roma. E le cause della partita mia V. S. Reverendissima hora l' intenderà dal prefato Ormaneto, non essendo stato opportuno scriverle prima; non ho havuto altro scrupolo se non partirmi, restando il Negocio, e l' Espeditioni dell' Ormaneto così in pendente. Ma conoscendo la sufficienza, e la diligenza, e la buon' Introduttione, che hanno quelli Ministri di V. S. Reverendissima giudicando, non poterui far di più di quel che già più volte haveua fatto, pensai che essi haveriano potuto supplire meglio di me, come hanno di poi fatto.

Non occorre al presente che io le scriva più a lungo venendo il detto M. Nicholò informato, che non e bisogno affaticarla in leggere mie Lettere. Resta solo che Iddio conduca esso, e M. Antonio a salvamento essendo il viaggio in ogni parte da qui in Fiandra tanto pericoloso, doppo che io preghi. che sua Majestà divina prosperi e felicitì V. S. Reverendissima, ad Honor e Gloria sua in quell' Attioni, che ha per le mani, come son certo farà, e che quella mi ami, e mi comandi



mandi al solito, perche comme ho detto, faccio conto, s' altro non mi interviene, avanti che di quella possi haver risposta da lei, poter' esser di ritorno a Roma, e con questo faccio fine, e baciandole humilmente la mano in bouna Gratia di V. S. Reverendissima mi raccomando. Di Sutrio, alli 13 di Lug'io 1554.

*Il Card. Morone.*

*Al Card. Polo.*

Number 24.

*A Letter from Ormanet to Priuli, giving an Account of what pass'd in an Audience the Bishop of Arras gave him.*

*A Monsieur Priuli.*

Clariss<sup>mo</sup>. e M<sup>te</sup>. Rev<sup>do</sup>. Sig<sup>r</sup>. mio.

**Q**uesta mattina affii per Tempo io gionfi al Campo, & ancor che io poco sperassi d' haver commoda audienza da Monsieur d' Arras, stando si sul Marchiare, nondimeno l' hebbi con la Gratia di nostro Signore Iddio, assai commoda e grata, e fui gratiosamente visto da S. Signoria alla quale feci intendere tutto quello, che mi era stato commesso da Monsieur Illustrissimo. La Risposta fù che l' Imperatore haveua molto a cuore queste cose della Religione, e che non haverebbe mai mancaco d' aiutare questa sant' impresa, come ha sempre fatto in simili occasioni con pericoli fin della Vita, ma che quanto all' opportunità del tempo, la quale era stata il principio e fundamento del mio Raggionamento, a lui pareva, che si fosse caminato alquanto prosperamente, non si sapendo altro doppo la venuta del Rè d' Inghilterra, che la Celebration' e solennità del matrimonio, e che pur Sarebbe stato a proposito, innanzi che s' andasse più oltre, veder che camino pigliavano le cose del Regno, e che dovendosi dar conto a sua Majestà di quello, perche io ero stato mandato, esso giudicava necessario che si fosse venuto più al particolare circa due cose, la forma delle faculta d' intorno questi beni (che gran differenza Sarebbe se fosse stata commessa la cosa o al S. Cardinale, o alli Serenissimi Principi) e poi il modo che voleua tener sua Sig. Reverendissima circa questo affetto, e qui esso tocco che fosse stato bene vedere la Copia delle Faculta. A la cosa del tempo io risposi che per questa opera era sempre maturo, immò che non se ne doveua perdere momento per il pericolo dell' anime, oltre che dovendosi dar principio a quest' impresa col far capace ogn' uno di quello, che veramente fosse il ben suo, e persuaderlo ad abbracciarlo, il qual' Officio spetta principalmente al Signior Legato, non si vede che a far questo il tempo non sia sempre maturo, soggiogendo che S. Majestà non dovrebbe mai

lasciar passar l'occasione di questa venuta del Principe suo figliuolo in dar compimento a questa riduzione, perciò che facendosi hora, l'honor di questa impresa sarebbe stato attribuito a lui. Quanto al particolar delle facultà, dissi che havendo detto a S. Signoria che questo affetto era stato commessa all' arbitrio di S. Signoria Illustrissima mi pareva d' haver satisfatto assai, e che del modo del procedere ella non era ancora risoluto, non si potendo pigliare in una cosa tale alcuna resolutione se non sul fatto, e doppo che ella fosse stata presente, per la necessaria informatione di molte cose che corrono in questa materia, circa la quale toccai alcuni altri punti, che S. Signoria Reverendissima intendere più lungamente alla mia venuta. La conclusione fu che esso non mancherebbe d' informar sua Majestà del tutto, e per far ogni buon officio in questo, e qui mi disse dell' animo che haveva sempre havuto d' aiutar queste cose della Religione, e del desiderio che teneva di servir sempre S. S. Illustrissima ringratiandola che l' adoperasse io. Circa l' aspettar la risposta di S. Majestà mi disse che non potendo esso far' all' hora questo officio per la partita del campo, io me ne venissi a Valentiana, dove havuta la resolutione da S. Majestà mi farebbe chiamarè: e che non mi pigliassi altro affanno di questo, e così me ne son venuto quà con questo disegno, di dar tempo tutto dimane a S. Signoria di far quest' officio, e posdimane non essendo chiamato ritornarmene a sollicitare l' espeditione. Io ho voluto dar questo conto di quello che fin' hora e passato acciò che non ritornando io, a quel tempo che fossi stato aspettato, non si stesè in qualche suspension d' animo. Sua Majestà sta gagliarda, e cavalca, e va personalmente vedendo l' essercito, e le cose come passano, il qual' essercito hoggi innanzi mezzo giorno e partito da Dolci quattro leghe lontano di quà, & e andato ad un altro viaggio chiamato lieu S. Amando lontano di quà, quello una legua, e più vicino al campo Francese, il quale questa mattina e partito da Crevacore e venuto una legua più in quà. Bascio la mano a Mons<sup>r</sup> Illustrissimo e mi raccomando a V. S. da Valentiano. L' ultimo di Luglio 1554.

*Ser' Nicolò Ormaneta.*

Number 25.

*The Letter that the Bishop of Arras wrote to Cardinal Pole upon that Audience.*

*Al Card. Poio.*

Il.<sup>mo</sup>. e Rev.<sup>mo</sup>. Sig.<sup>r</sup> mio Or.<sup>mo</sup>.

**T**Rovomi con due Lettere di V. S. Illustrissima nella prima delle quali elle si rallegra della felice arrivata del Principe N. S. adesso Rè d' Inghilterra in quel Regno, e del consumato Matrimonio, la



la Lettera del medesimo per S. Majestà Cesarea ho data io medesimo, alla quale e piaciuto sommamente l' officio tanto amorevolmente da V. S. Illustrissima: dipoi arrivò assai presto il suo Auditore portator di questa, venuto da Roma, dal quale ho inteso quanto V. S. Reverendissima li haveva commesso di riferirmi sopra le Lettere Credentiali, che egli mi ha portato, di che tutto ho fatto relatione a S. Majestà Cesarea, la quale mi ha comandata risponderle quello che esso suo Auditore le potrà riferire, non giudicando S. Majestà conveniente, che V. S. Reverendissima pigli il camino d' Inghilterra fin tanto, che consultato il tutto con quelli Serenissimi Re, come fa con un corriero espresso partito hoggi, s' intenda da loro il stato presente delle cose di la e quello che conforme a questo quel Regno potria al presente comportare, accio che inteso il tutto S. Majestà possa meglio risolversi alla risposta che ella haverà a dare a V. S. Reverendissima su quella che di sua parte ha proposto il detto suo Auditore: non dubitando punto che come sua Maestà e V. S. Illustrissima hanno il zelo, che esse & ambidoi i Rè hanno alle cose delle Religione, che terranno per certo, che non lascieranno preterir punto di quello che convenghi al rimedio d' esse nel punto Regno: caminandovi contal moderatione, che in luogo di farvi del bene, non si troncase per sempre il camino al remedio. E senza più a V. S. Illustrissima bacio humilmente la mano. Dall' exercito Cesarea appresso Buchain li iij d' Agosto 1554.

Di V. S. Reverendissima

*Humil Ser<sup>e</sup> il Vescovo d' Arras.*

### Number 26.

#### *Cardinal Polle's Answer to the Bishop of Arras his Letter.*

A Mons<sup>r</sup>. d' Arras.

Molto Ill<sup>re</sup>. Rev<sup>do</sup>. Sig<sup>r</sup>.

**D**Alla Lettera di V. S. e dalla relatione del mio Auditore ho inteso quanto e piaciuto a sua Maestà farmi per hora sapere della mente sua, intorno il negocio della mia legatione in Inghilterra, riservandosi a darmene maggior resolutione, quando haverà inteso da quelli Serenissimi Principi il presente stato delle cose di la, perilche haveva spedito subito un corriero; Io mio sono molto rallegrato, vedendo che in mezo di tanti, & sì urgenti negotii della guerra S. Majestà habbia havuto tanta cura, e sollicitudine di questa causa di Dio, la quale quando sia ben conclusa, non dubito le porterà seco ogni buon succession tutto il resto; starò a spettando quello che piacerà a S. Ma-  
jestà.

jestà di farmi sapere, poiche haverà havuto risposta d' Inghilterra, ne altramente pensai prima mi convenisse fare. Et in questo mezo pregarò la bontà d'Iddio, che cossi faccia ben intendere a tutto il corpo di quel Regno questo tempo, nel quale sua Divini Maestà lo visita con la gratia sua, come son certo intendino benissimo i capi loro, acciò che non si habbita a dir contra di essi, miluus cognovit tempus suum, populus autem hic non cognovit tempus visitationis suæ, ma havendo Iddio data gratia e quei Catholici Principi, a i quali tocca far' intendere & essequir' a gli altri, quellò che in questa causa con l' honor di S. Majestà tarà di salute, & universal beneficio di tutti, spero che le Maestà loro non siano per mancare di far' in ciò quello, ch' ogn' uno aspetta dalla pietà loro, essende massimamente eccitati, & aiutati, & in ciò dall' authorità e prudentia di sua Majestà Cesarea : havendo inteso che a V. S. sia stato di satisfatione veder copia del Breve della facultà concessami da N. S. circa la dispositione di i beni ecclesiastici, io glie la mando con questa, pregandola sia contenta farmi intendere dalla ricevuta, e molto la ringra io dell' amorevolezza sua verso di me, e della cortesia usata al detto mio Auditore. Dal Monasterio di Diligam. alli 5 d' Agosto 1554.

*Reginaldo Card. Polo.*

Number 27.

*Cardinal Pole's Letter to King Philip.*

*Al Re d' Inghilterra.*

Ser<sup>me</sup> Rex.

CUM maximè antea lætatus essem, cognito ex fama ipsa, & literis meorum optatissimo Majestis tuæ in Angliam adventu, & felicissimis nuptiis, quæ cum Serenissima Regina nostra summo omnium gaudio & gratulatione celebratæ sunt : tamen hanc meam lætitiæ magnoperè cumularunt Serenitatis tuæ literæ a Domino Comite de Horne, cum is in castris apud Majestem Cæsaream remansisset, heri missæ ad me per nobilem Virum D. de S<sup>co</sup>. Martino Majestis tuæ domesticum, eundem cui ego has ad illam perferendas dedi. Etenim expressam in illis imaginem vidi ejus humanitatis ac benignitatis, qua Majestatem tuam præter reliquas eximias virtutes excellere omnes prædicant, quæ quidem virtus ab animi verè Regii altitudine proficiscitur. Itaq; ego Majestati tuæ ob hoc benevolentiae signum mihi impertitum maximas ut debeo gratias, ac tamen per alia Litteras uberius hoc ipso officio functus sum, tamen iterum illi de hoc felici matrimonio divina



providentia, ut planè persuasum habeo, ad istius Regni quietem conciliato, gratulor. Idq; eo magis quod confido brevi futurum, ut ad coram sibi Pontificis Maximi nomine gratulandum, quemadmodum in mandatis habeo, Majestatis tuæ pietas aditum mihi patefaciat cum summo totius Ecclesiæ gaudio, & istius Regni salute. Reliquum est ut Majestati tuæ omnia obsequia, quæ illi vel pro Legationis munere publice præstare possum, vel jam ut meo Principi ac Domino privatim debeo, deferam, atque pollicear. Quæ quidem in rebus omnibus, quæ ad ejus amplitudinem, laudem, honoremque pertinebunt Studiosissimè semper præstabo. Deus Opt. Max. Majestatem tuam una cum Serenissima Reverendissima Regina custodiat, ac diutissimè felicitatem conservat. Mon<sup>no</sup>. Deligà prope Bruxellas VII Idus Augusti 1554.

*Reginaldo Card. Polus.*

Number 28.

*A Letter of Cardinal Pole's to the Pope, giving an Account of a Conference that he had with Charlest he Vth, concerning the Church Lands.*

*Beatissime Pater.*

**E**Molto tempo che non havendo cosa d'importanza, non ho scritto a V. Santità per non molestarle: facendole col mezzo del mio Agente intendere tutto quello che occorreva; e benchè hora io non habbia da dirle quanto desiderarei, nondimeno mi è parso conveniente scriverle, e darle conto del raggiamento prima havuta con Monsieur d' Arras & poi di quel che ho negoziato con sua Majestà. Mons. d' Arras illa ex che fu il giorno istesso che sua Majestà torno, essendomi venuto a visitare, trovandosi all hora meco Monsieur il Nuncio, mi disse, che sua Majestà havea veduta la Lettera che io mandai ultimamente per l' auditor mio, e che ella era benissimo disposta verso questo negotio della Religione in Inghilterra come si conveniva, e si poteva credere per la sua Pietat, & anche per l' interesse, che ne sequeria de quel Regno & de questi Paesi per la congiunzione che è tra loro. Si che quanto a questa parte di disponer sua Majestà non accader far altro. Ma che era ben necessario, che io venissi a particolari, & atrattar de gli impedimenti, e della via di rimoverli: Sopra che sua Maesta mi udiva molto volentieri, Jorispofi che veramente non era da dubitare del buono e pronto animo di sua Maesta,

e che

e che io ni era stato sempre persuassissimo. Na che quanto pertineva all'ufficio mio per esser io stato mandato da V. Santità per far intender L'ottima sua mente verso la salute di quello Regno, e la prontezza di porgere tutti quei remedii che dall' autorità sua potesser venire; a me non toccava far altro, che procurar d'haver l'adito: E che ad esse Principi, quali sono sul fatto, & hanno il governo in mano, le apparteneva, far intendere gli impedimenti, che fossero in contrario: E tornando pur esso Monsieur d'Arras che bisognava che io discendessi alli particolari, io replicai che in questa causa non conveniva in modo alcuno che si procedesse come si era fatto in quella della pace; nelle quale ciascuna delle parti stava sopra di se non volendosi scoprire, ma solo cercando di scoprirne, l'altra, per rispetto de gli interesse particolari; perciò che questa è una causa commune e nella quale V. Santità e sua Maestà Cesareà, & quei Principi hanno il medesimo fine, & noi ancora come ministri. Confermo cio esser vero quanto al tratar della pace, con dire in effetto in tratar del negozio della pace io mi armo tutto. Ma pur tuttavia tornava a dire, che io doveffi pensare e ragionar in particolare, con sua Maestà di questi impedimenti. E Monsieur il Nuncio al hora voltatosi a me disse, che in effetto era bisogno venire a questi particolari: E così al fine restammo che ognuno ci pensasse sopra.

Alli xi poi nell andar da S. Maestà, Monsieur d'Arras torna a replicarmi il medesimo; nell'audientia di S. Maestà, nella quale si trovo presente Monsieur il Nuncio, e Monsieur d'Arras, poiche mi fui ralegrato con sua Maestà, che havendo liberato questi suoi paesi della Molestie della Guerre, doppo tanti travagli, e d'animo e di corpo fusse tornato piu gagliarda e meglio disposta che quando si parti; in che si videva che il Signior Iddio haveva preservata & preservava, a maggior cose in honor di S. Divina Maestà a beneficio commune. Sua Maestà confermo senterfi assai bene, e disse dele indispositione che haveva havuta in Arras e altre cose in simil proposito: Entrai poi a dire della Lettera, che io haveva scritta a S. Maestà della risposta che Monsieur d'Arras mi haveva fatta, che era stata di rimeterli al breve. Retorno di sua Maestà qui, e dissi che se haveffi a tratter questo negozio con altro Principe, della Pietà del quale non fussi tanto persuaso, quanto io sono certo di quella di sua Maestà, dimostrata da lei con tanti segni, e nella vita sua privata, e nell'attioni publiche, cercarei de essortarlo per tante vie quante si potria ad abbracciar, e favorir questa così santa causa. Ma che non essendo bisogno fare questo con S. Maestà, e tanto piu per esser in questa causa con honore d' Iddio, congiunto anco il beneficio di S. Maestà & del Serenissimo Re suo figliuolo, solo aspettava da lei ogni ajuto per remover gli impedimenti, che fossero in questo negozio: i quali per quanto io poteva considerere sono di duo forti: Uno pertinente alla Doctrina Catollica, nella quale non poteva esser in alcun modo indulgente, per esser cosa pertinente alla fide ne poteva sanar altrimenti questo male, che con introdure de nuovo la buona Doctrina. L'altro impedimento essendo de i beni, gli usurpatori di quale, sapendo la severità delle Leggi Ecclesiastiche, temevano per questa causa di ritornar al Obedienza della Chiesa, disse dissi che in questa parte V. San-  
tita



tita poteva, & era disposta ad usar la sua benignità & indulgenza: E primo quanto alle Censure e pene incorse, & alle Restituzione de frutti percetti, che era di grand' importanza, V. Santità aveva animo nell' una nell' altra di questo due cose d' usar ogni indulgenza, rimittendo liberamente il tutto: Ne pensava d' applicar parte alcuna de' detti beni a se, ne alla Sede Apostolica, come multi temevano: Benche di Ragione lo potesse fare, per le ingiurie & danni ricevuti; ma che voleva convertir il tutto in servizio d' Iddio, & a Beneficio del Regno, senza haver pur una minima considerazione del suo privato interesse: Et confidandosi nella Pietà di quei Principi, voleva far loro quest' Honore di far per mezzo del suo Legato, quelle grazie che parebbero convenienti secondo la proposta & intercessione delle loro Maestà, a quelle Persone che esse giudicassero degne d' essere gratificate, & atte ad ajutar la Causa della Religione. Sua Maestà rispondendo ringratio prima molto V. Santità mostrando di conoscere la sua bona mente, & con dire, che ella in vero aveva fatto assai: Poi disse che per gli impedimenti & occupationi della guerra, non aveva potuto attendere a questo negozio, come faria stato il suo desiderio: Ma che hora gli attenderia; & che aveva già scritto e mandato in Inghilterra, per intender meglio in questa parte il stato delle cose, & aspettava in breve risposta: Et che bisognava ben considerare fin dove si potesse andare nel rimover questo impedimento d' beni; il quali essò per l'esperienza che aveva havuto in Germania, conosceva esser il principale. Perch'ioche quanto alla Dottrina, disse, che poco se ne curavano questi tali, non credendo ne all' una ne all' altra via: Disse anche che essendo stati questi beni dedicati a Dio, non era da concedere così ogni cosa, a quelli che li tenevano: E che se bene a lei io dicessi fin dove s' estendesse la mia facoltà, non però si aveva da far intendere il tutto ad altri: E che sarà bisogno veder il breve della facoltà, per ampliarle dove fusse necessario: Alche io risposi haverlo già fatto vedere a Monsieur d' Arras, il quale non disse altra: E dubitando io che questa non fusse via di maggior dilatione dissi a S. Maestà, che devendosi come io intendeva e come S. Maestà doveva saper meglio, fare in breve il Parlamento, era d' avvertire grandemente, che non si facesse senza Conclusione nella causa dell' obediienza della Chiesa; che quando altrimenti si facesse, farebbe d' un grandissimo scandalo a tutto il Mondo, e danno alla detta causa: E che se bene la Regina a fare un così grande atto, aveva giudicato haver bisogno della congiuntione del Re suo Marito, come che non esse bonum Mulierem esse solam, se hora che Iddio ha prosperito e condotto al fine questa santa congiuntione, si differisse più l' esecuzione di questo effetto, che dove esser il Principio & il Fundamento di tutte le loro Regie attioni, non resterebbe via di satisfar a Dio, ne a gli Huomini: E dicendo S. Maestà che bisognava anco haver grand' rispetto alla mala Disposizione de' gli interessati, e quanto universalmente sia abborito questo nome d' obediienza della Chiesa, e questo cappel rosso, e l' habito ancora de' i Religiosi, Voltatosi all' hora a Monsieur Nuncio e in tel proposito parlando de' frati condotti di Spagna dal Re suo figliuolo, che fu consigliato far loro mutar l' habito, se bene ciò non si feci, ne si conve-

niva fare: con dire anco di quanto importanza fusse il tumulto del Popolo, & in tal proposito toccando anche de i mali officij, che non cessavano di fare per ogni via i nemici esterni. Io risposi che volendo aspettare che tutti da se si disponessero, e che cessasse ogni impedimento, saria un non venir mai a fine, perchioche, gli interessali massimamente, altro non vorriano se non che si continuasse nel presente stato, con tenere & godere esse, tutto quello che hanno. In fine fu concluso che si aspettasse la risposta d' Inghilterra, col ritorno del Secretario Eras, che saria fra pochi di, e che in questo mezzo io pensassi, e conferissi di quelle cose con Monsieur d' Arras. V. Beatitudine puo con la sua prudenza vedere in che stato si trovi questa causa; e come sara necessario, che qui si trattino le difficulta sopra questa beni; e per non tediarla con maggior lunghezza, quel di piu che mi occurreria dirle V. Santita si degnira intendere dall Agente mio, alla quale conla debita reverenza bacio i santissimi piedi pregando il Sig. Iddio, che la conservi longamente a Servizio della sua Chiesa. Di Bruxelles alli 13 d' October 1554.

*Reginaldus Card. Polus.*

Number 29.

*A Part of Mason's Letter to Queen Mary, concerning  
Cardinal Pole.*

**C**ardinal *Poole* having been sent to these Quarters for Two Purposes, th' one for the Meanning of a Cyvill Peas between the *French* King and the Emperor; and the other for the helping to conclude a Spirituall Peas, as he termeth yt, in the Reigne of *England*; perceyving neither of them both to come to such a pass as his good Mynde doth desyre, dothe begynne, as me semeth, to be owte of Comfort: And being in manner clerely in dispayre of th' one, yf he receyve not shortlye some Likeliadde of the other, being wery of so much Tyme spent wythout Frute, begynneth in that case to talk of his Return to *Italy*. If he return without the seing of his Countrey, lyke as he shall retourne a sorrowful Man, so shall the Realme have lost the Fruition of such a one, as for his Wyfdome, joyned with Learning, Vertue and Godlynes, all the World seeketh and adoureth. In whome it is to bee thought, that God hath chosen a speciall Place of Habitation. Such is his Conversation; adorned with infinite Godly Qualities above the ordinary Sorte of Men. And who soever within the Realme lyketh him worst, I wold he might have with him the Talk of one Half Howre: It were a right stony Harte, that in a small Tyme he could not soften. If



it be his Fortune to depart, without shewing the Experience herof in the Realme, his going away shall be, in myne Opinion, like the Storye of the Gospell, of such as dwelt in *Regione Geresenorum*, who uppon a fond Feare, desyred Christe, offring himself unto them, *ut discedere a Finibus illorum*.

Thus, most humbly desyring your Grace to pardone my bolde and presumptiouse meddling in Matters passing my Capacitye. I commit the same to the Tuicion of Almighty Godde.

From *Bruxells*, the vi<sup>th</sup>  
of *Octobre* 1554.

Your Grace's

Most Humble, Faithful,

and Obedient Subject,

John Masone.

To the Queen's most Excellent Majestie.

Number 30.

*A Letter of Cardinal Pole's to Philip the II<sup>d</sup>, complaining of the Delays that had been made, and desiring a speedy Admittance into England.*

Serenissime Rex,

**J**AM Annus est, cum istius Regiæ domus fores pulsare cæpi, ne dum quisquam eas mihi apperuit. Tu vero, Rex, si queras, ut solent qui suas fores pulsare audiunt, quisnam pulset? Atque ego hoc tantum respondeam, me esse qui, ne meo assensu Regia ista domus ei clauderetur, quæ tecum simul eam nunc tenet, passus sum me Domo & Patria expelli, & exilium viginti annorum hac de causâ pertuli. An si hoc dicam, non vel uno hoc nomine dignus videar, cui & in Patriam reditus, & ad vos aditus detur? At ego, nec meo nomine, nec privatam Personam gerens pulso, aut quidquam postulo, sed ejus nomine ejusque Personam referens, qui Summi Regis & Pastoris Hominum in Terris vicem gerit. Hic est Petri Successor; atque adeo ut non minus verè dicam, ipse Petrus, cujus Autoritas & Potestas, cum  
antea

antea in isto Regno maximè vigeret ac floureret, postquam non passa est  
jus Regiæ domus ei adimi, quæ nunc eam possidet, ex eo per summam  
injuriam est ejecta. Is Regias per me fores jampridem pulsat, & ta-  
men quæ reliquis omnibus patent ei uni nondum aperiuntur. Quid  
ita ejus ne pulsantis sonum an vocantis vocem non audierunt, qui  
intus sunt? Audierunt sane, & quidem non minore cum admi-  
ratione Divinæ Potentiæ & Benignitatis erga Ecclesiam, quam  
olim Maria illa affecta fuerit, cum ut est in Act's Apostolorum,  
Rhode ancilla ei nuntiasset Petrum quem Rex in vincula con-  
jecerat, ut mox necaret, & pro quo Ecclesia assidue precabatur è  
carcere liberatum ante ostium pulsantem stare. Ut enim hoc  
ei cæterisque qui cum illa erant magnam attulit admirationem, ita  
nunc qui norunt eos qui Petri Authoritatem Potestatemq; in isto Reg-  
no retinendam esse contendebant, in vincula Herodiano Imperio con-  
jectos, & crudelissime interfectos fuisse, quin etiam Successorum Petri  
nomina è libris omnibus sublata in quibus preces Ecclesiæ pro  
eorum incolumitate ac salute continebantur, qui inquam hæc norunt,  
facta ad omnem Memoriam Petri Autoritatis à Christo tradiæ penitus  
ex Animis Hominum delendam, qui fieri potest ut non maximè admi-  
rentur hoc Divinæ Benignitatis & Potentiæ pignus ac Testimonium:  
Petrus nunc quasi iterum è carcere Herodis liberatum, ad Regiæ do-  
mus fores unde hæc omnia iniquissima in eum edicta emanarunt, pul-  
santem stare, & cum hoc maximè mirandum est, tum illud non mi-  
nus mirum, à Maria Regina domum hanc teneri: Sed cur illa tamdiu  
foras aperire distulit. De ancilla quidem illud Mariæ Scriptum est,  
eam Petri Voceaudita præ nimio gaudio suæ quasi oblitam, de aperi-  
endo non cogitasse: Rem prius, ut Mariæ aliisq; qui cum ea erant  
nunciaret, accurrisse, qui cum primo an ita esset dubitassent, mox  
cum Petrus pulsare pergeret aperierunt, neq; illum domo recipere sunt  
veriti, etsi maximam timendi causam habebant, Herode ipso vivo &  
regnante. Hic vero quid dicam de Maria Regina, gaudeo ne eam an  
timore esse prohibitam quominus aperuerit; presertim cum ipsa Petri  
Vocem audierit, cum certo sciat eum ad domus suæ januam jamdiu  
pulsantem stare: Cum admirabilem Dei in hac re potentiam agnoscat,  
qui non per Angelum, ut tunc Petrus è carcere Herodis, sed sua man-  
nu eduxit, dejecta porta ferrea quæ viam ad Regiam ejus domum in-  
tercludebat: Scio equidem illam gaudere, scio etiam vero timere;  
neq; enim nisi timeret tam diu distulisset. Verum si Petri liberatione  
gaudet, si rei miraculum agnoscit, quid impedimento fuit quo minus  
ei ad januam lætabunda occurreret, eumque meritis Deo gratias agens,  
introduxerit, Herode presertim mortuo, omniq; ejus imperio ad eam  
delato? An fortassis Divina Providentia quæ te dilectum Petri Filium  
& ei Virum destinarat, illam timore aliquo tantisper affici permisit,  
dum venisses, ut utriusq; ad rem tam præclaram & salutarem agendam,  
opera atque officium conjungeretur: Equidem sic antea hunc Mariæ  
Reginæ conjugis tuæ timorem, quod etiam ad eam Scripsi sum interpre-  
tatus: Ac propterea ad te nunc, Virum ejus, Principem Religiosissi-  
mum, scribo, & abs te ipsius Petri Christi Vicarii nomine postulo, ut  
illi omnes timoris causas prorsus excutias: Habes vero expeditissimam  
excutiendi rationem, si consideres eique proponas, quam indignum sit  
si dum te illa Corporis sui sponsam accerserit, cum non deessent quæ



timenda viderentur, tamen omnem timorem sola vicerit, nunc te tanto Principi illi conjuncto, timore prohiberi quominus aditum ad te aperiat sponsæ animæ suæ, mecum una & cum Petro tamdiu ad fores expectanti; qui presertim tot & tam miris modis custodem ejus se, defensoremq; esse declaravit. Noli enim, Rex, putare, me aut solum ad vestram Regiam domum, aut uno tantum Petro comitatum venisse; cujus rei hoc quidem tibi certum Argumentum esse potest, quod tamdiu persevero pulsans: Nam si ve ego solus venissem, solus jampridem abiissem, querens & exposulans quæ aliis omnibus pateant, mihi uni occlusas esse fores; si ve una mecum solus Petrus, jampridem is quoque discessisset, meque secum abduxisset, pulvere pedum excusso, quod ei preceptum fuit a Domino ut faceret quotiescunque ejus nomine aliquo accedens non admitteretur. Cum vero nihil ego, quod ad me quidem attinet conquerens, perseverem, cum Petrus pulsare non desistat, utrumque scito ab ipso Christo retineri, ut sibi sponso animæ utriusque vestrum aditus ad vos patefiat. Neque enim unquam verbor dicere, Christum in hac Legatione, qua pro ejus Vicario fungor, mecum adesse: Quamdiu quidem mihi conscius ero me nihil meum, me non vestra, sed vos ipsos toto animo omnique studio querere. Tu vero, Princeps Catholicæ, cui nunc Divina Providentia & Benignitate additum est alterum hoc præclarum Fidei Defensoris cognomen, quo Reges Angliæ Apostolica Petri Autoritate sunt aucti atque ornati, tecum nunc considera quam id tuæ Pietati conveniat, cum omnibus omnium Principum ad te Legatis aditus patuerit, ut tibi de hoc ipso cognomine adepto gratularentur, solum Successoris Petri qui hoc dedit, Legatum, qui propterea missus est ut te in solio Regni Divina summi omnium Regis quam affert pace & gratia, confirmet, non admitti? An si quidquam hic ad timorem proponitur, quominus eum admittis non multo magis Christi hac in re metuenda esset offensio, quod ejus Legatus qui omnium primus audiri debuit, tamdiu fores expectet, cum cæteri Homines qui multo post venerunt, nulla interposita mora, introducti auditq; sint & honorifice dimissi. At hic conqueri incipio; conqueror quidem, sed idcirco conqueror, ne justam tuæ Majestati causam de me conquerendi præbeam, quam sane præberem, si cum periculi, quod ex hac cunctatione admittendi Legati à Christi Vicario Missi, nobis vestroq; Regno impendet, Regiam sæpe admonuerim, nihil de ea re ad Majestatem tuam Scriberem; quod officium cum tibi à me pro eo quo fungor munere maxime debeatur, id me satis persoluturum esse arbitror, si his Literis ostendero quantam periculi ei immineat, cui illud vere dici potest, distulisti Christum tuum. Is autem Christum differt, qui Legatum missum, ab ejus Vicario, ad requirendam Obedientiam Ecclesiæ, ipsi Christo debitam, ex quo nostra omnium pendet salus, non statim admittit. Differs vero, tu Princeps, si cum accercitus fueris, ut pro munere Regio viam ad hanc Divinam Obedientiam in tuo isto Regno restituendam munias, ipse alia agas.

## Number 31.

*The Lord Paget's and the Lord Hastings's Letter concerning Cardinal Pole.**An Original.*

**I**T maie please your most Excellent Majesty to be advertised, that arriving here upon *Sunday* last in the Forenoone, we had Audience of the Emperor's Majestie in the Afternoone, notwithstanding that the same had that Daie received the Blessed Sacrament, wherby we noted a great Care in him, for the Expedition of us hence again: After dew Commendation made unto him by us, on your Majesties Behalfe, and the Causes of our comyng declared unto him with suche Circumstances, as by the Tenure of our Instructions, we have in Charge to open unto him, he rejoyced very much to here the same; and first giving unto you both most hartly Thanks for your Commendations, and then enquiering very diligently of your good Prosperities and Wellfares, and specially (Madame) of the State of your Majesties Personne, he roused himself with a merry Chere, and said, that among many great Benefits, for the which he thought himself most bounden unto God, this was one of the gretest, that it had pleased him to hold his Blessed Hand over that Realme; and so taking occasion to rehearse in what good Estate, and great Reputation, he knew the Realme of *England* had bene in the Beginning; and afterward into what Calumnies the same fell into, much (he said) to his Regret; he gave God Thanks, not only for the great Miracles, which he had shewed upon your Majestie to make you his apt Minister for the restoring of that Kingdome to the Auncient Dignite, Welth, and Renowne, but also for that it hath pleased him to give you so sone, so certaine a Hope of Succession; wherof like as he hath Cause for his Parte, (he said) to Rejoyce and take great Comforte, so hath all *England* greater Cause to think themselves most bounden unto God, to please him, and to serve him for the same: These Tydings, he said, of the State of your Majesties Personne (Madame) with the Reaport that we had made unto him of the great Conformite, and holl Consent of the Noble Men, and others in their Proceedings before your Majesties, touching the receiving of my Lord Cardinal into *England*, and their earnest Submissions to the Obedience, and Union of the Catholique Church, were so pleasant unto him, as if he had been half Deade, yet they shuld have been ynoughe to have revived him again. These and many other such like Wordes he used to declare the Joy, and Contentment of his Minde, for the good Success of this Mater. In the mayning wherof there, if any Thing (said he) shuld fortune; wherin his Advice might be thought requirde, your Majesties shuld not onley find the same ready, but also in any other Thing that laie in him, which might serve to your Honors, and the Benefite of the Realme: To this when for our Parts had joined such Talk, as to this Purpose semed to our Poor Witts Convenient, declaring your Godly Dispositiones in this Mater, how much you reposed your selfs upon his great Wisedome and Experience; what Confidence you had



in his Fatherly Love, and Friendly Affections towards your Majesties, and the Benefite of your Realms: We toke our leaves of his Majestie, and repaired furthwith unto my Lord Cardinal, whose Gladnes of our comyng we shall not need with many Words to declare unto your Majestie; nor yet what Speech he used to set furth, how much he was bounden unto your Majesties for your Gracious Dispositions towards him, and how much both you and he were bounden to Almighty God, for the bending of your Harts this waies, for your Majesties shall and maie perceive the same more plainly by himself at his comyng unto your Presence. This under your Majesties Corrections we maie be told to write unto you, that we believe verely, that whensoever he shall be in *England*, the same shall fare the better for him, for he is the Man of God, full of all Godlines and Vertue, ready to humble himself to all Facions that may do good; and therefore he is contented, not only to come into *England* in such sort as your Majesties have appointed, not as a Legate, but as a Cardinal, and Ambassador to your Majesties, but in any other sort whatsoever it be, that your Majesties will apoint; he assuring your Majesties, that touching the Matter of Possessions, all Things shall come to passe, on the Pope's Behalfe, in such sort as every Man there shall have Cause to be contented. Yesterday Night he toke his Leave of the Emperor, and so did we also, This Daie he repaireth onwards his Journey, to an Abbaye Two Miles hence, whither he hath used much to resorte, the Tyme of his abode here. To Morrow at Night to *Dendermount*; *Thursday* to *Gawnte*; *Friday* to *Bruges*; *Saturday* to *Newport*; *Sunday* to *Dunkirke*; *Monday* to *Calice*; (for his weake Body can make no great Journies) and his Estate also to be considered. In this Journey we shall not faile to do him all the Honour and Service we can, aswell for that we take it to be our special Charge, as for that also his great Vertues have wonne us, and bind us to the same: We have written now, besides our speaking at our passing by, to the Lord Depute of *Calice*, for all Things to be in a redines for his Transportation; so as we trust we shall not have occasion to tarry long there. And thus we beseeche Almighty God to preserve both your Majesties long, and long to live together to your own good Contentments, and to the great Comfort, and Benefit of us your poor Subjects. From *Bruxells* the 13th of *November* in the Morning, 1554.

*Your Majesties,*

*Most Humble, Faithful,*

*And Obedient Servants*

*William Paget.*

*Edw. Hastings.*

To the King and Queens Majesties.

## Number 32.

*An Original Letter of Mason's, of a Preacher that pressed  
the Restitution of Church-Lands.*

**A**FTER most hartie Commendations, I have sent to my Lords at this present the Emperor's Commissaries Answer made at the Diets, to a Letter lately sent from the *French King* to the said Diets, of the Circulls of *Germany* assembled at *Francfort*. And forasmuche as yt chanced me at the Closing up of my Lettre, to have the Sight of an other Answer made to the said Lettre, by some bearing good Will to the Emperor's Affaires, I thought good to coppye it, and to send it unto you; albeit by the reading thereof, yt may appere yt was made by some Man, rather to asseye his Witte, and to declare his Affection, then of intent to answer particularly the Matier. It was this Morning told me, by one of the Emperor's Counsell, who misliked much the Matier, that a Preacher of ours, whose Name he reherfed, betithe the Pulpit jolyly in *England*, for the Restitution of Abbaye Lands. If it be so meant by the Prince, and be thought convenient so to be, then doth he his Duetie; but yf contrarely, yt be neither meant nor thought convenient, it is a strange Thing in a well ordered Commonwealth, that a Subject shall be so hardie to crye unto the People openly such Learning, as wherby your Winter Works maye in the Somer be attempted with some Storme. And wer the Thing fitt to be talked of, yet were the Princes and the Counsell, who might remedy it, meter to be spoken with therein, then the Multitude, who therby may receyve an yll Impression, and an Occasion of lewd Thinking, and lewde Talking, and lewd Doing also, if it may lye in their Powers; and that is all, that of Sowing thies Maters amongs them can ensue. These unbridled Preachings were so much to be misliked in the yll governed Tyme, as Good Men trusted, in this Good Governance, it should have been amended. And so maye it be, when it shall please my Lords of the Counsell as diligently to consyder it, as it is more then necessarie to be looked unto. The Partye, me thinketh, might well be put to Silence, if he were asked, How, being a Monk, and having professed and vowed solemnly wilfull Poverty, he can with Conscience keep a Deanery, and Three or Four Benefices? I heare, by the Report of other Ambassadors here, of the Return of the Realme to the Unitie of Christen Church, whereof all good Men have much cause to rejoyse. I would have been glad to have been able, at the least, to have confyrmed the News by some certaine Knowledge: But being the Ordenarye of Ambassadors of *England*, to knowe least of all others of the Matiers of the Realm, I must content my self; trusting that, as I am enformed, the Ambassador ther hath lost his Name: For that it is not thought necessarie the Father to have an Ambassa-  
dor



dor to the Sonne, so shall with Tyme, this Office on this Side being no more needfull then it is, be discharged also. Or if myne Abode shall be longer, then wold I att Leisure be a Suter to you, to be a Mean for besure to come over for Three Weeks, or a Month, to see the King's Highnes, and to doe his Majesty my Duty, and so to return. I mean no Haste, but as Matter and Occasion may serve hereafter. Thus I commit you to the Keeping of Almighty God. At *Brussels*, the 12th Day of *December* 1554.

Your most assuredly

*John Masone.*

12th of *December* 1554.

*To the Right Honourable Sir W<sup>m</sup>.  
Peter, Kt. King and Queen's  
Principal Secretarye.*

Number 33.

*Cardinal Pole's Commission to the Bishops, to Reconcile all  
in their Dioceses to the Church of Rome.*

*Ex. Reg.  
Norwic.  
F. 58. b.*

**R**eginaldus, Miseratione divina, Sanctæ Mariæ in Cosmedim Sanctæ Romanæ Ecclesiæ, Cardinalis Polus, Nuncupatus Sanctissimi Domini nostri Papæ, & Sedis Apostolicæ, ad Serenissimos Philippum & Mariam, Angliæ Reges, & universum Angliæ Regnum, de Latere Legatus. Venerabili, ac Nobis in Christo Dilecto, Episcopo Norwicensi, seu ejus in Spiritualibus [V. cario] Generali, Salutem in Domini sempiternam. Cum Sanctissimus in Christo Pater Dominus noster, Dominus Julius, divini Providentia Papa Tertius, inter alias Facultates, pro hujus Regni, omniumque Personarum in eo existentium, Sanctæ Ecclesiæ Catholicæ Reconciliationem faciendam necessarias, Nobis in nostra hac Legatione concessas, hanc specialiter indulgerit, ut quoscunque in Hæresium & Schismatis errores lapsos, ab iis, & à quibuscunque censuris & pœnis propterea incuris, absolvere, & cum eis super irregularitate præmissorum occasione contracta dispensare, & alia multa ad hæc necessaria, seu quomodolibet opportuna facere. Et hoc idem munus Catholicis locorum Ordinariis, & aliis

aliis Personis Deum timentibus, fide insignibus, & Literarum scientia præditis, demandare possumus; prout in ejus Literis, tam sub plumbo, quam in forma brevis expeditis plenius continetur. Cumque Dei Benignitate, & Serenissimorum Regum Pietate, Regnum hoc universaliter, & omnes Domini, Spirituales & Temporales, aliæque Personæ communitatum, in eo quod proximè celebratum est, Parlamento congregato singulariter primo: Et deinde universum Corpus Cleri Provinciæ Cantuariens', & omnes serè Personæ singulæ dictum Corpus representantes, coram nobis existen', aliæque pleræque fuerint Sanctæ Ecclesiæ Catholicæ, per Nos ipsos reconciliatæ. Speramusque fore, ut omnes aliæ quæ reconciliatæ adhuc non sunt, reconciliari debeant; difficileque, & potius impossibile sit, ut tam numerosa Multitudo per Nos ipsos reconcilietur. Ideo vices nostras, in hoc, Locorum Ordinariis, & aliis Personis ut supra qualificatis, delegandas duximus: Circumspectioni igitur vestræ, de cujus Probitate, & Charitatis zelo, plenam in Domino Fiduciam obtinemus, Auctoritate Apostolica, Nobis, per Literas ejusdem Sanctissimi Domini nostri Papæ concessa, & per nos vobis nunc impensa, omnes & singulas utriusque Sexus, tam Laicas quam Ecclesiasticas, Seculares, & quorumve Ordinum Regulares vestræ Civitatis & Dioces' Personas, in quibusvis etiam Sacris Ordinibus constitutas, cujuscunque Status & Qualitatis existant, Etiam si Capitulum, Collegium, Universitas, seu Communitas fuerit, quarumvis Hæresum aut novarum Sectarum Professores, aut in eis culpabiles vel suspectas, ac credentes, receptatores, aut fautores eorum, suos errores agnoscentes, ac de illis dolentes; & ad orthodoxam Fidem recepi humiliter postulan' cognita in ipsis, vera, & non ficta, aut simulata \* Potentia, ab omnibus & singulis Hæresum, Schismatis, & ab orthodoxa Fide, Apostasiarum & Blasphemiarum, & aliorum quorumcunque similium errorum; etiam sub generali Sermone non venientium peccatis, criminibus, excessibus & delictis; de quibus tamen jam inquisiti, vel accusati, seu condemnati non fuerint, & quibusvis Excommunicationis, Suspensionis, & Interdictorum, & aliis Ecclesiasticis & Temporalibus, Censuris & Pœnis, in eas præmissorum & infracriptorum occasione, à Jure vel ab Homine latis vel promulgatis; etiam si in eis pluribus Annis inforduerint, & earum Absolutio, dictæ Sedi etiam per Literas in Cœna Domini legi consuetas, reservata existat in utroque Conscientiæ, scilicet & contentioso foro, eos vero qui jam inquisiti, vel accusati, aut condemnati fuerint, ut præfertur, ad cor revertentes in foro Conscientiæ, tantum plenariè absolventur & liberentur. Necnon cum eis super irregularitate, per eos præmissorum occasione contracta, etiam quia sic Ligati, Missas & alia Divina Officia, etiam contra Ritus & Ceremonias hætenus probatas & usitatas celebraverint, aut illis alias se immiscuerint, contracta quoque irregularitate, & aliis præmissis non obstantibus, in suis Ordinibus, etiam ab Hæreticis & Schismaticis Episcopis, etiam minus ritè, dummodo in eorum collatione, Ecclesiæ Forma & Intentio sit servata, per eos susceptis, & in eorum susceptione; etiam si Juramentum contra Papatum Romanum præstiterint; etiam in Altaris Ministerio ministrare, ac quæcunque, quotcunque, & qualiacunque; etiam Curata invicem tamen se Compatientia, Beneficia Secularia vel Regularia, Dignitatibus in Collegiatis, Ecclesiis Principalibus, & in Cathedralibus,

\* *L. Pœnitentia.*



E. 60. a.

dralibus, etiam Metropolitanis post Pontificalem, majoribus exceptis; etiam à Schismaticis Episcopis, seu aliis Collatoribus; etiam Laicalis Pietatis prætectu habita, Auctoritate Apostolica retinere, dummodo alteri Jus quæsitum non sit, & non promotos ad omnes etiam Sacros, & Presbiteratus Ordines, à suis Ordinariis, si digni & idonei reperti fuerint, ritè & legitimè promoveri, ac Beneficia Ecclesiastica etiam curata, si eis alias canonicè conferantur, recipere & retinere valeant, qualitate temporis, Ministrorum defectu, & Ecclesiæ Neceffitibus, Utilitatibusque ita poscen' dispensand' & indulgend' ac omnem inhabilitatis & infamiæ maculam, siue notam, ex præmiss' quomodolibet insurgen' penitus & omnino abolend'. Necnon in pristinum, & eum in quo ante præmissa quomodolibet erant, Statum ita ut omnibus & singulis Gratiis, Privilegiis, Favoribus & Indultis, quibus cæteri Christi Fideles gaudent, & gaudere quomodolibet possunt, uti & gaudere valeant, in omnibus, & per omnia; perinde ac si à Fide Catholica in aliquo nunquam defecissent, restituend' & reponend' & redintegrand', & eis, dummodo Corde contriti, sua errata & excessus, Circumspectioni vestræ, alicui alteri per eos eligend', Catholico Confessori sacramentaliter confiteantur; & Peniten' salutare eis præmiss' injungend' omnino adimpleatur: omnem publicam Confessionem, Abjurationem, Renunciationem & Pœnitentiam, jure debit' arbitrio vestro moderan', vel in tot' remitten'. Necnon quoscunque Regulares & Religiosos, extra eorum regularia loca, absque Sedis Apostolicæ Licentia, errantes ab Apostasiæ reatu & Excommunicationis, aliisque Censuris & Pœnis Ecclesiasticis, per eos propterea, etiam juxta suorum Ordinum instituta incurs', injuncta eis pro modocula, Pœnitentia salutari pariter absolvend': Et super quacunque irregularitate propterea, per eos contracta, ac cum eis ut alicui Curato Benefic' de illud obtinen' consensu, etiam in habitu Clerici Secularis, habitur' suum regularem sub honesta toga Presbiteri Secularis deferen', deferuire, & extra eadem loca regularia remanere ad beneplacitum nostrum, liberè & licitè possunt, eadem Auctoritate Apostolica, ob defectum Ministrorum, & alias prædictas causas, dispensandi. Ac quoscunque quum in Sacris Ordinibus constituti, Matrimonia etiam cum Viduis & corruptis Mulieribus de fact' contraxerint, postquam Mulieres sic copulat' rejecerint, illisque abjuraverint, ab hujusmodi excessibus, & Excommunicationis Sententia imposit', eis pro modo culpæ, Pœnitentia salutari, in forma Ecclesiæ consueta absolvend': Ac cum eis, postquam Pœnitentiam peregerint, & continenter ac laudabiliter vivere cogniti fuerint, super Bigamia propterea per eos contract'; Ita ut ea non obstan', in quibusvis susceptis & suscipiendis Ordinibus; etiam in Altaris Ministerio ministrare, ac alicui Beneficio Ecclesiastico, de illud obtinentis consensu, deferuire; & extra tamen Dioecesin, in qua fuit copulatus eisdem de caus' dispensand'. Necnon Parochialium Ecclesiarum tuæ Diocesis Rectores siue Curatos, de quorum Fide, Probitate, Circumspection' ac Charitatis zelo, plena Fiducia conspici possit, ad quarumcunque utriusque Sexus suæ Parochiæ Personarum Laicarum, tantum Absolutionem, & Ecclesiæ Catholicæ Reconciliationem, ut præfertur, Auctoritate Apostolica, faciendam. Et si qui ex Curatis prædictis ad id idonei non fuerint, in eorum defectum alias idoneas

neas

reas & sufficientes Personas, qui eorum Vices suppleant nominand' & deputand' quas sic per eas nominat' & deputat' in locum nostrum in Ræmissionibus, absolutionibus, & reconciliationibus substituimus eiisque vices nostras subdelegamus: plenam & liberam Auctoritate Apostolica nobis ut præmittitur concessa, tenore presentium concedimus Facultatem: vosque in præmissis omnibusque in nostrum locum substituimus præmissis ac regula de infor desen' & ordinationibus Apostolicis, & omnibus illis, quæ in Literis Prædictis Sanctitas sua voluit, non obstare, contrariis non obstantibus quibuscunque presentibus in præteritis casibus locum haben' & ad beneplacitum nostrum duraturis. Dat' Lambeth' prope Londin' Winton' Dioc' Anno à Nativitate Domini Millesimo Quingentesimo Quinquegesimo Quinto Quarto Calen' Februarii Pontificatus Sanctissimi in Christo Patris & Domini nostri Domini Julii Divina Providentia Papa Tertii Anno Quinto Regni.

*Car<sup>lis</sup>. Polus, Leg.*

*M. Antonius Faita, Secr.*

### Number 34.

#### *Articles of such Things as be to be put in Execution.*

1. **T**HE Divorce of married Priests according to the Canons.
2. The Restitution of them by Penitence, thereupon to recommende them to other Diocesses as Penitents.
3. To certifie the Exhibitie of Benefices, which for want of Livings, have noo Curats.
4. To certifie the Counsaill of as maney as they know to have taken into their Hands the Goods of the Church.
5. To certifie what Chauncells of Benefices impropered \* by some decaye, as they need present Reparacion; and to signifie therewith in whome the Fault is.
6. Not to confirme aney Lease of aneye Benefice, to the Prejudice of the Successor.
7. To cause the Churches decay'd with vacant Fruits and Goods, ministred with what remaineth in the Executors Names.
8. To interrupt them that Eat Flesh by pretence of Dispensacion granted by the Princes.
9. To appoint suche as dwell in Scites of Monasteries, to repaire to some Church for to hear the Service.
10. To keep the Registre for Buryinge, Christininge, and Marriage.
11. A Fourme of Sute for Layemen to receyve their Tythe in Spiritual Courts.

*Elibro Memo-  
randum temp.  
Tho. Thirlby Jo.  
Hopton, & Jo.  
Parkhurst, Ep  
Norwic. in Reg.  
Prin. RP. Dom.  
Ep. Norwic.  
F. 56.  
\* L. be so in.*

Number



*Instructions given by the Cardinal to the Bishops, and their Officials.*

F. 55. 6.

**S**inguli Domini Episcopi, necnon Officiales Ecclesiarum quæ nunc vacant pro exequutione eorum quæ à Reverendissimo Domino Legato sunt eis demandata Ordinem quam infra script est, poterint observare.

Primum vocatum ad se totum singularum civitatum, quibus singuli presunt Clerum, de hiis quæ sequuntur, instuere procurabunt.

De Paterno Amore & Charitate quam Sanctissimus Dominus noster Julius Papa Tertius erga Nationem Anglicam declaravit, qui ut primum cognovit Serenissimam Mariam fuisse Reginam declaratam Reverendissimum Dominum Reginaldum Cardinalem Polum de suo Latere ad has Partes Legatum misit ut Regnum hoc tot jam Annos ab Ecclesia Catholica separatum, ad ejus unionem reducere, & in errorem lapsos Consolari atque in Dei Gratiam restituere studeret.

De ejusdem Domini Legati adventu, quanta Lætitia & honore is exceptus fuerit tum à Serenissimis Regibus, tum ab aliis omnibus.

De hiis quæ in Proximo Parlamento Acta & conclusa sunt. Scilicet de omnibus Dominis de Parlamento & Universo Regno à Schismate & Censuris incurfis absolutis & Ecclesiæ Catholicæ, reconciliatis: de omnibus Legibus quæ contra Authoritatem Sedis Apostolicæ & Romani Pontificis fuerant per Henricum Octavum & Edvardum Sextum latæ & promulgate, revocatis & abolitis. De restituta Sanctissimo Domino nostro Papæ & Ecclesiæ Romanæ eadem Obedientia quæ ante hoc perniciosissimum Schisma prestabatur.

F. 57. a.

**DE AUCTORITATE** Episcopis restituta & maximè ut possint contra Hæreticos & Schismaticos procedere, & eos juxta Canonicas Sanctiones coercere & punire: hiis ita expositis veniant ad Facultates sibi ad eodem Reverendissimo D. Legato concessas, quæ recitentur, & hic omnes qui in Schismata vel alios Errores lapsi sunt invitentur ad Absolutionem & Reconciliationem Humiliter & ex toto corde petendam. Necnon dispensationes tam super Ordinibus quam super beneficiis Necessarias & opportunas postulandas; deinde præfigatur dies infra quem dicti de Clero Humiles & Penitentes compareant ad petendum suppliciter Absolutionem, Reconciliationem & Dispensationes Prædictas: secundum vero Dominium Episcopi postquam illi omnibus Erroribus suis renunciaverint & promisserint Sacramentaliter ipsis, aut alteri Sacerdoti Catholico Confessuros esse Errores suos Penitentiam sibi injungendam adimpleturos eos absolvent, & Ecclesiæ reconciliabunt, & cum ipsis juxta formam Facultatum perpetendum Necessitatibus prout sibi visum fuerit, dispensabunt: adhibendo semper convenientem distinctionem inter eos, qui solum in Schisma & Hæreses inciderunt, & eos qui ea etiam Publicè docuerunt & alios ad peccandum induxerunt.

EODEM

EODEM DIE constituetur Dies Festus & Solemnis in quo astante in Ecclesia Populi Multitudine Domini Episcopi omnes Curati Ecclesiis suis, omnia eadem quæ Clero jam exposit' fuerint Populo quoq; insinuabunt & omnes invitabunt Paternæ & cum omni affectu, ut agnitis erroribus suis ad Ecclesiæ Catholicæ gremium revertantur: promittendo fore, ut omnibus preterita Crimina omni condonentur & remittantur modo eos ex animo illorum peniteat, & illis renuncient. Prefigatur autem terminus, ut pote tota paschatis Octava, infra terminum omnes Ecclesiæ reconcilientur alioquin eo lapsi contra ipsos & eos qui post, reconciliationem ad vomitum averſi fuerint severissimi procedetur, dicatur etiam de Facultate concessa à Reverendissimo Domino Legato Episcopis, & aliis ut absolvere possint, omnes quicumq; ad vos reversi fuerint.

Idem Domini Episcopi & Officiales nominabunt & deputabunt, Ecclesiarum Parochialium Rectores seu alias Personas idoneas, quæ Laicos ab Heresi, Schismate, & quibuscunq; Censuris absolvant juxta Facultatum Formam & tenorem. Data per Episcopos formula quæ in Absolutione & Reconciliatione uti debeant.

Eadem poterint cum Clero totius Dioces' observari prout commodius visum fuerit. Domini Episcopi & officiales præfati, necnon omnes Curati seu alii ad id deputati, habeant Librum in quo nomen & cognomen Parochianorum reconciliatorum inscribantur; & postea sciatur qui fuerint reconciliati & qui non..

Idem Domini Episcopi & Officiales Octava Paschatis elapsa poterint facere visitationem Civitatis primo, deinde Dioc' & se qui non fuerint reconciliati, poterint eos ad se vocare, & cognoscere propter quas ab erroribus suis nolint recedere, & si in eis obstinate perseverarint, tum con' eos procedent.

In hac secunda visitatione attendant diligenter quæ in hoc brevi compendio sunt notata, & maximè faciant ut omnes Ecclesiasticæ Personæ ostendant Titulos suorum Ordinum & Beneficiorum, ut si in eis aliquis alius defectus in sit illis, provideant & omni studio procurent ut Errores quibus Dioceses eorum sunt infectæ extirpentur, ut veritas fidei tum in concionibus tum in confessionibus doceatur: deputando Personas idoneas ad conciones faciendas, & confessiones audiendas. Id & curent; ut Sacrorum Canonum instituta in omnibus observentur & Nomen Divi Thomæ Martyris necnon Sanctissimi Domini nostri Papa ex Libris dispunctum in illis restituatur & pro eo Secundum morem Ecclesiæ ut ante Schisma fiebat oretur.

In publicationibus hujusmodi erit ante omnia facienda commemoratio miserationum & in felicitatis preteritorum temporum & Magnæ Gratiæ, quam nunc Deus pro sua Misericordia Populo huic exhibuit, hortando omnes ad hæc grato animo cognoscendum, & infinitas Gratias Divinæ ipsius Bonitate assiduè agendum.



Hortandi & sunt omnes ut devote orent Dum pro Salute & Felici statu horum Serenissimorum & de hoc Regno optimè meritorum & merentium Regum & Sperialitur pro filici statu Serenissimæ & Piissimæ Reginæ.

Faithfully transcribed from the Old  
Book aforementioned, with which  
Collated by

Thom. Tanner.

Number 35.

*The Process and Condemnation of Bishop Hooper, and the  
Order given for his Execution.*

Condemnatio Johannis Hooper super Articulos Hæreticam pravitatem concernentes.

*ACTA Die Lunæ xxviii Die Januarii Anno Domino in sequendo computationem Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ M ccccc liiii in Ecclesia Parochiali Sancti Salvatoris in Burgo de Southwarke Winton' Dioc' eorū Reverendo Patre Domino Stephano Permissione Divina Winton' Episcopo, &c. Auctoritate sua Ordinaria illic judicialiter seden' assisten' sibi Reverend' in Christi Patribus Episcopis, &c. In Presentia nostra Antonii Husey, Roberti Johnson, & Willielmi Day, Notariorum, &c.*

*Officium Domini contra Johannem Hooper.* Quibus Die & loco Productus fuit in Judicium Joannes Hooper Clericus de & super Hæretica pravitate, Publicè & Notoriè infamatus: cui dictus Reverendus Pater palam proposuit, quod cum ipse Superiori Die eorū eodem Reverendo Patre & nonnullis aliis à Privato Consilio Dominorum Regis & Reginæ ad hoc specialiter destinatis evocabatur & exhortatus fuerat, ut agnoscens transactæ Vitæ suæ & Perversæ Doctrinæ Errores & Hereses, rediret cum cæteris ad unitatem Ecclesiæ: Oblataque fuerat ei sic volenti preteritorum Erratorum & facinorum suorum condonacio. Ipseque Johannes tunc indurato animo sic redire renuerit. Propterea in Presentiarum in Publicum justitiæ forum ad respondendum Articulis Heretica pravitate concernen' coram eodem Reverendo Patre Auctoritate sua Ordinarie sedente evocatus fuit. Offerens preterea Publice tunc & ibidem quod si adhuc se reconciliare veller, libenter in gremium Sanctæ Matris Ecclesiæ reciperetur

reciperetur. Et ipse Johannes Hooper non solum facere renuit, verum etiam in nonnullas Blasphemias impudenter perrupit. Et deinde Dominus Episcopus, &c. inter cæteros complures Articulus, & Capita, hos sequentes eidem Johanni Hooper specialiter objecit.

In Primis, Quod Tu Johannes Hooper, existens Presbyter & Religiosus, Regula à Jure approbata expressè professus, quandam Mulierem de facto, cum de jure non debuisti, in Uxorem, sive Conjugem accepisti; & cum illa, tanquam Uxore & Conjuge tua, cohabitasti in Nephariis & illicitis cum ea amplexibus cohabitando, Matrimoniaq; pretenso hujusmodi licita, & de jure divino valida fuisse, & esse, tam infra Dioc' Winton', quam alias quamplures Dioc' hujus Regni Angliæ, asseruisti, prædicasti, docuisti, Librisq; editis publicasti & defendisti, & sic asseris & credis in præsentis. Et ministramus conjunctim, & de quolibet.

Ad quem quidem Articulum respondet & fatetur, Se Presbyterum & Religiosum professum, quandum Mulierem in Uxorem legitimè accepisse, & cum eadem tanquam cum Uxore legitima cohabitasse: Et quod hujusmodi Matrimonia, in locis prædictis, licita, & de Jure divino valida fuisse, & esse, asseruit, prædicavit, docuit, & Libris editis publicavit & defendit; sicq; asserit, credit, & defendere paratus est in presenti, ut dicit.

Secundo, Quod Tu Joannes Hooper, in locis prædictis, asseruisti, prædicasti, docuisti, & Libris editis publicasti & defendisti; sicq; credis, tenes asseris & defendis, Quod propter Culpam Fornicationis, sive Adulterij commissam, Personæ legitimè conjugatæ, possunt ex Verbo Dei, ejusq; Auctoritate ac Ministerio ab invicem pro Adulterio à Vinculo Matrimonij seperari & divorciari: Sicq; licebit Viro aliam accipere in Uxorem; & Mulieri similiter, alium accipere in Maritum.

Ad quem quidem Articulum respondit affirmativè, Quodque paratus est defendere contenta in eodam, contra omnes Adversarios, esse vera, de Jure divino & humano.

Tertio, Quod Tu, locis prædictis, asseruisti, tenuisti, publicasti, libris edictis docuisti & defendisti; sicque credis, asseris, tenes, & defendis in præsentis, Quod in Eucharistia, sive Sacramento Altaris, verum & naturale Christi Corpus, & verus & naturalis Christi Sanguis, sub speciebus Panis & Vini verè non est: Et quod bi est materialis Panis, & materiale Vinum tantum, absque veritate & præsentia Corporis & Sanguinis Christi.

Ad quem quidem Articulum, sub hoc contemptu verborum, respondit; viz. *That the very Natural Body of Christ, is not Really and Substantially in the Sacrament of the Altar: Saying also, That*  
the



*the Mass is the Iniquity of the Devil; and that the Mass is an Idol.*

Præmissis expeditis, Dominus assignavit eidem Johanni Hooper, ad comperendum in hoc loco crastina die, inter Horas 8<sup>m</sup> & 9<sup>m</sup> ante Meridiem, ad vidend' ulteriorem Processum, &c. Quibus Die & Loco, inter Horas assignatis, coram dicto Reverendo Patre, Winton' Episcopo, &c. assistentibus sibi Reverendis Patribus, &c. in nostra Notariorum prædictorum Præsentia, rursus comperuit dictus Johannes Hooper, quem Dominus Episcopus Wintonientis, multis rationibus, ad sese reconciliandum, suavit & exhortavit: Dictus tamen Johannes Hooper, in Pertinacia & Malicia sua perseverans, perrupit in Blasphemias, dicendo etiam publicè, *That Matrimony is none of the Seven Sacraments: And that if it be a Sacrament, he can prove Seventy-score Sacraments.* Deinde Dominus Episcopus, perspecta ejus pertinaci duritia, tandem tulit contra eum Sententiam definitivam, in Scriptis condemnando eum pro Hæretico & Excommunicato: Et consequenter cum tunc ibidem tradidit Curia Seculari, atq; in manus Davidis Woodroff, & Willielmi Chester, Vicecomit' Civitatis Londini; qui eundem Johannem Hooper tunc secum abduxerunt. Super cujus Sententiæ Prolatione & Lectura, idem Reverendus Pater requisivit nos Notarios, &c. ad conficiendum Instrumentum, Testesq; subscript' ad perhibendum Testimonium, &c. Præsentibus tunc ibidem Nobilibus & Egregiis Viris, &c. & aliis quampluribus, in Multitudine copiosa tunc ibidem congregatis, &c.

Faithfully Transcribed from a *Folio* Book of Proceedings in Ecclesiastical Courts, Collected in Queen *Mary's*, or the Beginning of Queen *Elizabeth's* Time, by *Anthony Style*, Notary Publick; now in the Hands of

*Thom. Tanner.*

### Number 36.

*The Queen's Letter, ordering the Manner of Hooper's Execution.*

*Cott. Libr.  
Cleop. E.5.*

**R**ight Trusty and Well-beloved, &c. Whereas *John Hooper*, who of late was called *Bishop of Worcester and Gloucester*, is, by due Order of the Lawes Ecclesiastique, condemned and judged for a moste obstinate, false, detestable Heretique, and committed to our Secular Power, to be burned according to the holsome and good Lawes

Lawes of our Realme in that Case provided. Forasmuche as in those Cityes, and the Diocesse therof, he hath in Tymes paste preached and taught most pestilent Heresyes and Doctryne to our Subjects there: We have therefore geven Order, that the said *Hooper*, who yet persisteth obstinate, and hath refused Mercy when it was graciously offred, shall be put to Execution in the sayd Cytie of *Gloucester*, for the Example and Terror of suche as he hath there seduced and mistaught, and bycause he hath doone moſte Harme there. And woll that you, calling unto you some of Reputation dwelling in the Shire, such as ye thinke best, shall repayre unto our said Cytie, and be at the said Execution, assisting our Mayor and Shrieves of the same Cytie, in this Behalf. And forasmuche also as the said *Hooper* is, as Heretiques be, a vain-glorious Person, and delyteth in his Tongue, and having Liberty, may use his sayd Tongue to perswade such as he hath seduced, to persist in the myserable Opinion that he hath sown among them: Our Pleasure is therefore, and we require you to take Order, that the said *Hooper* be neither, at the Tyme of his Execution, nor in goyng to the Place therof, suffered to speak at large; but thither to be ledde quietly, and in Sylence, for eschuyng of further Infection, and such Inconvenyence, as may otherwise ensue in this Parte. Whereof sayle not, as ye tender our Pleasure.

A True Copy of an Old Paper in my Custody, which seems to be the first Draught of a Letter from the Queen to the Lord *Chandois*, &c. who went to see Execution done on Bishop *Hooper*.

*Thom. Tanner.*

### Number 37.

*A Letter of Bishop Hooper's to Bullinger, written out of Prison.*

*Hoperus Bullingero.*

**G**Ratiam & Pacem à Domino. Literas tuas, Compater Charissime, *Paper-Office,* datas Tigur' 10 Octobris, 11 Decembris accepi. Fuere mihi per jucundæ, quia plenæ Consolationis. Ex quibus, Animum, Amorem, & Pietatem tuam erga me pristinam, facile intellexi. Habeo tibi Gratias immortales, quod hisce Temporibus difficillimis, nostri non te capit oblivio: Semper te, ob eximias tuas Virtutes, & præclara Dei in te Dona, præ cæteris amavi. Et quod à me, uti scribis, hæc te-



nus per annum integrum nullas acceperis Literas ; hoc accedit, non quia non scripserim, sed quas scripseram parum candidis reddendas commisi. Nec omnes quas ad me miseris accepi, sed vel in Curia Tabellarij periire, vel invidia malorum fuerunt incerceptæ. Idem accidit & Literis & Libello Domini Theodori. Nam de Concione Domini in monte, quam mihi destinavit, nihil intellexi, usque ad aliquot dies post mortem Sanctissimi Regis nostri Edwardi. Et id quidem in Confinibus Valliæ, in bibliotheca pij cujusdam Viri, quem Ecclesiis quibusdam Decanum constitui. Sed quas nunc scripsisti omnibus Concaptivis meis Fratribus, legendas curabo mitti. Incolumitatem & Constantiam vestræ Ecclesiæ, vobis omnibus gratulor : Et Deum precor, propter Filium suum Jesum Christum, illam, contra Tyrannidem Antichristi semper muniat, ac defendat. Apud nos, in integrum, vulnus quod accepit, sanatum est ; & pro Capite Ecclesiæ denudè habetur, qui Membrum Ecclesiæ Christi non est. Ab aliis, Res nostras, & Statum Reipublicæ intelliges. Versamur in maximis periculis, quemadmodum hætenus, jam per sesquiannium fermè. Indies hostes Evangelij magis ac magis negotium faceßunt. In carcere seorsim servamur, & omni ignominiarum fastidio afficimur : Mortem quotidie minitantur ; quam nihili facimus. Ferrum & flammæ, in Christo Jesu, fortiter contemnimus. Scimus cui credimus ; & certi sumus, quod animas nostras deposituri sumus bene faciendo. Interim adjuvate nos vestris Precibus, ut qui in nobis bonum opus incepit, perficiat usque in finem. Domini sumus ; faciat quod videatur bonum in oculis suis. Rogo, ut subinde digneris Literis tuis Uxorem meam, modestissimam & piam mulierem consolari ; & exhortari, ut studiosè Liberos nostros, Rachelem Filiolam tuam, optimæ indolis adolescentulam, ac Filiam Danielem piè educat, in Cognitione & Timore Dei. Præterea, tuæ Pietati jam mitto duos Libellos legendos, judicandos, ac corrigendos, si quæ occurrant, Verbo Dei parum Convenientia : Cui Titulum feci. *Hyperaspismus de vera Doctrina & Ufu Cænæ Domini* ; quem Senatui Angliæ dedicavi hoc nomine, ut publicè, in Curia Parlamento, adversariis nostris respondeamus. Alteri Titulum feci, *Syntagma, de falsa Religione dignoscenda & fugienda*. Et rogo, ut quam citissimè fieri possit, imprimantur. Hic, apud omnes pios & doctos, uterque Liber est approbatus. Scripsi præterea multas Literas alias ad Episcopos, ut Libros in Parlamento promoverent, & illos imprimi etiam cupio, ut omnes intelligant, quam iniquè & injustè nobiscum agitur. Non opus est, ut multa hac de re scribas : Ex ipsis Libellis & Literis, facilè intelliges quid volo. Et si Froscoverus vester aliis gravioribus Libris impediatur imprimendis ; rogo, ut Basileam mittat, ad D. Operinum, qui valdè castè imprimit, & omnia nitidè in lucem emittit. Hoc faciet, scio, modò Libelli tuis Literis ad se veniunt commendati : Quod ut facias, vehementer oro. Nihil est quod mihi metuatis, quasi propter Libellos atrocius & severius hostes Evangelij sævient : Habeo Salutis meæ fidelissimum Custodem, & Propugnatorem, Patrem nostrum Cælestem, per Christum Jesum, cui meipsum totum commendavi : Illius Fidei ac Tutelæ meipsum commendando ; si dies meos elongaverit, faxit, ut sint ad Gloriam Nominis sui ; sin huic brevī & flagitiosæ Vitæ finem voluit, æque duco, Fiat Voluntas

*Luntas illius. Quia furtim scribo, breviores & perturbatiores Literas tuæ præstantiæ facio, quas boni consule quæso. Raptim ex Carcere xi Decembris 1554. Saluta officiosè castam tuam Conjugem, cum tota tua Familia, domi & foris, ac alios omnes ut nosti*

*Tuæ præstantiæ ut debeo Studiosissimus*

J. Hooperus.

## INSCRIPTIO.

*Præstantissimo Viro, Domino Henrico Bullingero, Compatri suo longè Charissimo Tiguri.*

## Number 38.

*A Letter of Mason's concerning a Treaty began with France, and of the Affairs of the Empire.*

**A**FTER my hearty Commendations. Your last was of the xxiiii<sup>d</sup> of the last Month, and my last to you wer of the vii<sup>th</sup> of this present. By these you shall understand that the Emperor hath appointed Monsieur *De L' Allain*, Governor of *Hennalt*; Monsieur *De Boningcourt*, Governor of *Arthoys*; the Bishop of *Arras*; the President of the Counsel here, named *Viglius*; and the President of the Counsel of *Mallynes*; to resort to *Gravelynghes*, for the Tretynge of a Peaxe with such others as may lyke the *Frenche* Kynge to send to *Ardres*; wherof the Connestable, and the Cardinal of *Lorrayne*, he hath alredye appointed. But by reason of the Death of the Pope, I thinke the Cardynal of *Lorrayne* goeth another way. In whose Place ys to be thought some other shall be appointed, with the others, to aniver to the Numbre assigned by the Emperor. The Cardynal, and my Lord Chawncelor came out of Hand to *Callais* to be Mediator on the Queen's Behalf, to bring these Princes, yf their Will be, to some Composition. O Lorde assist them so with his Grace, as *Christendome* may have a Treattyng Tyme. The iv<sup>th</sup> of this Month the King and Queen went to *Hampton-Court* to keep their *Easter*; wheather *Easter* done they retorne to *London*, or goo to *Wyndesore*, the certentye ys not yet knowen. *Bolls* of *Cambridgeshire*, and Sir *Peter Mewtas*, remayne still in Prison. The first in the *Tower*, and thother in the *Flete*, and lytle Words made of them; so yt is thoght



the Suspition was more vehement then founde to be of any grete Ground. The Dean and Prebendaries of *Westminster* have laid fore Lawe to defend th' alteration of the Church into an Abbay; in which Matter, Dr. *Cole* sheweth hymself very slowte, alleging that Monks have no Institution of Christ, wherein Prestis have the Advantage of them, &c. What thende will be, yt is not known; but yt is feared they shall be put to chose, whether they will depart with their Wills, or against their Wills.

The Emperor hath by reason of his long unseasonable Cold, ben very ill handled of his Gowte, whereof he is now indifferently well amended.

The Princes of *Almayne* do moche myslyke the Arryving of Cardinal *Moron* at *Augusta*; for the Satisfaction of whom, the Emperor hath given full Auçtoryte to the Kynge his Brother, as so ys the Cardinal lyke to retayne, *con la picca in sacco*. The Duke of *Alva* ys not yet departed owt of *England*; neither yet in the Way, so far as I can yet here, albeit his Baggage, and a good Number of his Company are arrived at *Callais*. On *Tuesday* last, the Ambassadors, or Agents, Name them as you will, of *Cremona*, *Novaria*, and *Lodi*, passing between *Dover* and *Callais* hitherward, were taken by a *French* Shallop; but it is thought, they shall shortly be set at Libertye, as well for that they were publycke Persons, and not Subjects to the Emperor, as for that they were taken out of an *English* Vessel. Their Money and Baggage is saved, whatsoever is become of their Persons, Thus for lack of other Matter, I bid you most hartely well to fare. From *Bruxells* the xivth Day of *April*, 1555.

*Your own most assuredly*

John Masone.

Endorsed

To the Honourable Mr *Petre Vannes*,  
the Queen's Majesties Ambassador  
at *Vennis*.

This Letter is Faithfully transcribed  
from the Original in the Hands  
of

*Thom. Tanner.*

Number

## Number 37.

*A Translation of Charles the Vth's Letters, Resigning the Crown of Spain to King Philip.*

**T**O our Counsellours, Justyces, the Nobilyte, Curats, Knights, and Squiers; all kinde of Ministers, and Offycers; and all other our learn'd Men that within that our Town of *Toledo*, greeting. *Paper-Office.*  
 By such Letters as I have from Tyme to Tyme taken Order to be wrytten unto you, since my Departing out of the Kingdome of *Spain*, you have fully bene advertised of the Successes of myne Affayres; and namely how that for Religion's sake, I enterprised the Warre of *Almayne*, uppon the great Desire I had, as Reasone was; and according to my bounden Dewty to reduce, and to returne agayne those Countreys into the Unitye of the Church, procuring and seeking by all the Means I could, to sett Peas and Quietnes in all the Estates of *Christendome*, and do what might be done for the Assembling, and Assisting of a Generale Counsale, bothe for the necessarye Reformation of many Things; and so draw home also therby, with lesse Difficultye, such as had separated themselves, and were swerved from the Catholike Faith of Christ. Which my great Desyre having brought, by God's Goodnes, to a very good Pointe; the *French* Kinge suddenly, without all Reasone, or any good Foundation, alluring to his Ayde the *Almaynes*, and making a League with them, agaynst theire Othes and Fydelityes, brake with me, and opened the Warre agaynst me, bothe by Sea and the Land. And not satisfyed herewith, he procured the coming of the *Turques* Armye, to the Notable Damage of *Christendome*; and namely of our Estates, and Seigneueryes; wherby I was forced, and dryven to bring an Armye to my no little Trouble, atwell by my great Payns taken in myne own Persone in the Felde, as by my Traveil otherwise; which thereuppon I was constrained to endure, in the treating and maynayng of sundry urgent and great Matters daylie and contynually falling out upon the same; which were the greate, and in Effect, the only Occasions of the greate and pauncfull Infirmary, and Indisposition of my Body; which I have since had these Yeres passed, and yet have, wherby I find myself so encumbered, and so destitute of Healthe, that not onely have I been, or am able by myne owne Persone to discharge such a Traveil, and to use such a Diligence in Resolutions, as was requisyte; but have also, which I do confesse, been a Lett, and an Hindrance to sundry Things wherof I have had, and now have a greate Conscience. And I wold to God I had sooner taken therein such an Order as I now am determyned to take: Which nevertheles for many Considerations, I could not well doe, in the Absence of the High and Mighty Prince, the King of *England* and *Naples*, and my Right Dear and Right Well-beloved Sonne: For that it was necessary many Things to be First communicated unto him, and to be



treated with him. And for this Purpose, after the Marriage put in dew Execution with the High and Excellent Princeſſe, the Queen of *England*, I laſtly took Order for his coming hither: And within a ſhort Tyme after, I took Order to reſigne, and to renounce unto him, lyke as I have done all thoſe my Eſtates, Kingdomes, and Seigneueries, of the Crown of *Caſtella* and *Leon*, with all their Membres and Appertennes, in ſuch ſorte as more fully and more amplye is conteyned in ſuch Inſtruments as I have ſigned and agreed unto of the Date of theſe Preſents; truſting that with his greate Wyſedome and Experience, wherof I have hitherto had a right greate Prooſe in all ſuch Things as have been paſſed and handled by him for me, and in my Name, he will now for himſelf, and in his own Name, Govern, Order, Defend, and Mainteyne the ſame with Peas and Juſtice. And not doubting but that according unto your Olde and Comendable Loyaltye, Fayth, Love, and Obedyence, which you have borne, and do beare, both to him and to me; wherof for my Parte, I have had alwayes large Experyence by your Deeds, you will ſerve him and obey him as apperteyneth to my Truſt and your Duties; for the Good-Will borne to you ſo many Yeres. Commanding you nevertheles, and ſtraightly charging you that diſplaying and ſetting upp Banners, and doing all other Ceremonies, and Solemnities requiſyte, and which have been accuſtomed to have been done in like Caſes, for the dew Execution of the Purpose above ſayed, in the ſame Manner and Sorte as yf God had taken me unto his Mercy, you doe Obey, Serve, and Honour, from henceforth the ſaide King, accompliſhing his Will and Pleaſure in all ſuch Things as he ſhall by Word and Writing Command you, as you ought to doe to your true and natural Lord and King: Even as you have, and ought to have, during my Reigne paſſed to you from me: Wherin beſydes that you ſhall doe your Dueties, and doe that as you are bound to doe, you ſhall doe unto me acceptable Pleaſure. Given at *Bruffells* the 17th of *Januarie*, 1556.

Coppye of the Lettre ſent by the Emper-  
ror to ſundry Eſtates in *Spaine*, upon  
the reſigning of the ſame unto the  
King's Majeſtie; turned out of *Spaniſh*  
into *Engliſh*.

## Number 40.

*A Remembrance of those Things that your Highnes's Pleasure was I shold put in Writing, as most Convenient in my Pore Judgment, to be commoned and spoken of by your Majestie, with your Counsell, called to your Presence thys Afternoone.*

*Written in the Hand of Cardinal Pole.*

**F**Urst of al, that your Majestie shold put them yn Remembrance Titus B. 2. P. 177. of the Charge the Kyng's Highnes gave them at his Departure; which beyng reduced to certen Articles, and put in Writing, it seemeth wel if some of the Lords for ther sudden Departure after ther Charge had not the same in Writing, that it were reherfed and given unto them with Exhortation to employ al ther Diligence for the due Execution thereof.

And whereas amongst other Charges, thys was one, that those that be named in the first parte Counsellours, were al to be present in the Courte, thys first your Highnes may require them that they do observe: Specially beside, for the Weight of the Matters that be now in Hand; the Tyme besyde being so shorte, after the Parliament to examyn them. And that the King's Pleasure ys, as the Matters be proposed in the Counsell, afore the further Execution of them, to be ynformed therof, to knoe his Pleasure theryn. And amongst other, hys Majestie beyng in Expectation to know the uttre Resolution of the Councell, twychyng those Matters that be to be intreatyd thys Parliament. Thys ys that your Majestie looketh of them thys Day, to send with all spede to the Kyng's Highnes.

And wheras for the Dylation of the Kyng's comyng, your Majestie thought it well to put in Consulte, whether it were better therfor to make a Dilation and Prorogation of the Parliament to *Candelmas*, beyng thought bey ther Opinion, that for Necessite of Money that is to be demanded in the Parliament, and otherwyse can not be provided, the Prorogation of that should be much dispendiose. Your Majestie not disallowing ther Deliberation; but consydering wyth all the great Need of Money for to be had, for the Discharge of the present Necessite, which requyreth present Provision of Money, as is for the setting forth of the Ships, as wel for the Emperors Passage to *Spain*, as for the King's Return.-- And besyde thys, for the Payment of that is dew at *Calise*, as for your Credyte wyth the Merchants approchyng the Day of Payment; and for the Debt of *Ireland* also, of al these it may please your Majestie to know thys Day of our Counsell what is don.



And bycause the most ordynarie and just way, touching the Provision of Money to pay your Highnes Detts, is to call in your own Detts; which Charge hath been specially committed afore, and is principally considered and renewed in the Writing the Kyng's Highnes left tychyng such Affayres, that his Counsell shold presently attend into, wher be ther Names also that same: The Charges speciall therefore, your Majestie shall do wel this day to charge them with the same; that with all Diligence they attend to the Prosssecution therof, givying them all Autoryte that shal be necessary for them, to make the most speedy Expedition theryn. Wylling them withall, that they never let pass one Week, but in the end of the same, at the least, your Majestie may know specially of that is coming yn, and that Order it taken for the rest.

Also yf it pleasyd your Majestie in generall, for all Matters which be intreated in the Counsell, which requyre Commission and Execution, to give thys Order, that those that have had Commission to execute any Matter, let never passe the Weke, but they ynforme the Counsell what Execution is made of ther Commyssions: And that the Counsell themselves should never begyn Entretance of new Matters the Second Week; but that they have Information first, what is done in those which wer commytted to be executyd the Week afore; I think it should help much to the speedy Expedition of all Causes: Thys ys my poore Advyse, remitted al to the godly and prudent Judgment of your Majestie.

#### Number 41.

#### *Some Directions for the Queen's Council; left by King Philip.*

Cotton Libr.  
Titus, B 1.

**I**Mprimis, pro meliori & magis expedita Deliberatione, in iis quæ in Consilio nostræ agenda sunt ex reliquis Consiliariis nostris; eos, quorum Nomina sequuntur, feligendos putavimus; quibus specialem Curam omnium Causarum Status, Finantiarum, & aliarum Causarum Graviorum Regni, committendam duximus & committimus.

Legatus Cardinalis POLUS, in Causis magnis, ubi voluerit, & commodè poterit.

D. Cancellarius. . . . . D. Thesaurarius. Comes de Arundell.  
Comes de Pembroke. Episcopus Eliensis. D. Paget.

M<sup>r</sup>. Rochester Comptroller. M<sup>r</sup>. Petre Secretarius.

Consiliarii

Confiliarij prædicti omnes & singuli erunt præsentēs in Aula, & intelligent, & considerabunt omnes Causas Status, omnes Causas Financiarum, Statum Possessionum, Debitorum, & quomodo Debita cum honore solvi possint; & generaliter, omnes alias Causas majoris momenti, tangentes Honorem, Dignitatem, & Statum Coronæ.

Et quo melius Consiliū Nobis dare possint, hortamur eos in Domino, quod omnem discordiam, si quæ inter eos sit, mutuo remittentes, concorditer, amicè, & in timore Dei, ea in Consiliis proponant & dicant, quæ Dei Gloriam, Nostrum & Regni nostri Honorem & Utilitatem, promovere possint.

Volumus, quod quoties aliqua erit Occasio, Nos adeant, vel aliquos ex se mittant, per quos intelligere possimus Deliberationes suas, in omnibus Causis quæ coram eis proponuntur, & ad minus ter qualibet Septimana, referant Nobis quæ fuerint per eos acta & deliberata.

Dicti Consiliarij deliberabunt de Parlamento, quo tempore habendum sit, & quæ in eodem agi & proponi debeant: Et quæ agenda & proponenda videbuntur in Parlamento, in Scriptis redigi volumus, ante Parliamenti initium.

Quod singulis diebus Dominicis, communicent reliquis Consiliariis præsentibus, ea quæ videbuntur eis communicanda.

Quod habeant specialem Curam pro Debitorum solutione, diminutione Sumptuum, & provida gubernatione & collectione Reddituum, Terrarum, Possessionum & Vectigalium, & pro Administratione Justitiæ.

### Number 42.

#### *A Letter to the Ambassadors, concerning the Restitution of Calais.*

**A**fter our right hartly Commendations to your good Lordships, *Paper-Office.* by our last Letters of the 4th of this Mounth, we signified unto you our well Lyking of your Opinions, to have the Matter touching *Calleys* moved in the Parliament: And that we being also of the same Mynde our selfs, ment to propose the Case there with all the Expedition we might, and to make you Answer of that sholde be farther resolved therein, as shortly as we could. Sence which Tyme, uppon Consultation had amongst our selfs, how the Matter shold best be opened and used there: And being of Opinion, as we have byn from the Begynning, that it were not convenient to have the same broken to the hole House, but only to the Nobilite, and some other of the best and gravest Sort; We thought it also necessarie, before we proceeded any farther, both to declare our Opinions unto the Queen's Majestie, and to understande her Highnesses good Pleasure and Resolution therein. Whose Majestie, up-



pon the opening thereof unto her, thought mete for good Respects, we sholde fyrst write unto the King's Highnes to such effect, as by the Coppie of our Letters presently addressed to his Majestie, for that Purpose, (which you shall receyve herewith) you may at better length perceyve; and then understanding his Highnes Answer, sholde either goe forward with our former Deliberacion, or otherwyse use the Matter, as we sholde see Cause. Wherefore, lyke as we have thought good to give your Lordships Knowledge by these, so when we shall have receyved the King's Majesties Answer herein, we will not fayle to signify unto you with Diligence, what shall be farther resolved touching this Matter. And in the mean tyme, we byd your good Lordships right hartely well to fare.

The Queen's Majestie remayneth yet still both sicke and very weake; and although we hope of her Highnes Amendsment, for the which we daylye praye; yet are we dryven both to feare and mistrust the worst; which we beseeche Almighty God to remedye, when it shall lyke hym.

After that we had written the Letters inclosed to the King's Majestie, we receyved yours of the 4th of this Instant; by the which we do understande, that the *French* Commissioners contynue still of the same Mind that they were at your Meeting with them, not to leave the Possession of *Calais*. By your sayd Letters appereth allso, that the King's Majestie tolde you, that his Commissioners were agreed with the *French* well nere upon all Matters; and that his Highnes nevertheless wolde not agree to any Conclusion, but that the Queen's Majestie sholde be fyrst satsified for the Matters of this Realme.

After that we had considered the Effect of these your Letters, considering of what Importance the Leaving of *Calice* is for this Realm; howe much it wolde touche the Honour of their Majesties, and of this Crowne, that so many Restitutions being made on bothe Sydes, this sholde be suffred to passe unrestored; and fynally, howe yll the Subjects of this Realme will digest this Matter, if there sholde any suche Thing be agreed unto; we neither can of our selfs well consyder what to answer, nor think mete to propose it to the Parliament, untill we may yet once agayne heare from you. And where Policy fayleth, we are compelled to use Playnes. You knowe these Warres, wherein *Calice* is lost, began at the King's Majesties Request, and for his Sake. We doe consider, that other his Majesties Friends and Confederats, be restored to Things taken many Yeres past. And what may be judged in this Realme, if this Peas be concluded, and *Calice* left in the *French* King's Hands, so many other Restitutions being made, it may be easely considered. On the other Syde, His Majesties Commissioners being so nere an Agreement for all other Matters, muche were to be indured for the Welthe of *Christendome*.

And it hath byn confideryd here, howe much this Realme is travayled and spent allready with these Warres.

These Things being amongst us confideryd, knowing his Majesties gracious Disposition and Favour towards this Realme, we think good your Lordships doe plainly open these Considerations to hym, in  
such

such good sorte as you may think good. And fyrst to desyre to understande his Majesties Disposition playnely, if you may for *Calice*: the remayning whereof in the *French King's Hands*, doth as much importe for his *Lowe Countries*, as for this Realme.

And Secondly, that it may please his Majesty to gyve us his good Advise for our further Doings, and manner of Proceeding in this Matter; wherein albeit our Meaning is to use the Advise of the Rest of our Nobilitie and Parliament, yet do we stay that to do, untill we have Answer again from you, and understande his Majesties playne and determinate Answer therein. And we do hartely pray your Lordshipes to use your accustomed good Wisdomes in the good opening of the Premisses, and to send us Answer as soon as you may.

November the 8th, 1558.

Minute from the Counsell unto the  
Earle of *Arrundell*, and the Rest  
of the Commissioners beyonde the  
Sees.

---

Number 43.

*A Letter of the Ambassadors concerning Calais.*

*An Original.*

**A**fter our Right Heartie Commendacions to your good Lordships, *Paper-Office.*  
by *Francisco Thomas* the Post, we have receyvid Two Letters from your Lordshippes. The First of the 29th of the last Month: And the Later, of the First of this present. With other Letters directed to the King's Majestie; upon the Receipt whereof, we having mette together, and consulted upon the Contentes of the same, determined to open to the King's Majestie by our Letters, the Matters whereof your Lordships wrote unto us; for his Majestie is not in these Parties heere, but is at *Bruxelles*, or beyond. The Copy of our Letter to his Majestie in that Behalfe, we send your Lordshipes heerwith. And where your Lordshipes wryte unto his Majestie, that by our Letters doth appeare that the *French King* by no means will leave the Possession of *Callais*: And that he would rather hazard his Crown, then to consente to the Restitution of it: True it is, that we wrote to your Lordshipes, that the *French Commissioners* yn their Conference with us, and with the King's Commissioners, have ever refused to consent to the Restitution of *Callais*. And that the *French* have  
declared



declared to one of the King's Commissioners, that the *French* King for to hazard his Crowne, will not forgo *Callais*. And albeit that for because of the good Face sett upon that Matter by the *French* Commissioners, we somewhat mistrusted, that that which they spoke, was the King their Masters Determynacion: Yet indeed, did we not affirm it to be so. No, nor did not then utterlye despayre, but that the *French*, yf they wer kept somewhat shor'te, would at the length relente; for elies to what Purpose had it been agreed and appointed, that both the King's, and the *French* King's Commissioners, shuld retourne to their Masters, to declare what hath been done already, and to know what their Masters further Pleasure was theruppon. And forasmuch as we have ever been of Opyinion, that yf the King's Majestie refuse to conclude any Thing with them, without the Restitution of *Callais*; that may the sooner induce the *French* to agree to it. And likewise yf they perceyve the King's Majestie, or his Mynisters, not so earnest therin, but that by a Bragge of the *French*; they will the sooner gyve over, and stande the more fayntely for the Restitution of it; that will make the *French* the bolder, and to stand the more earnestlye in their Refusal. Therefore we have not thought it meet to use anye kynde of Wordes to the King, wherby his Majestie might by anye Meanes thinke that the Queen's Highnesse, and the Realme of *England*, coude be contente to conclude a Peace without the Restitution of *Callais*. Aswell for because our Instructions importe that, as also trustinge that that wold move his Majestie, and his Commissioners to be the more Careful for the Restitution of it. And seeinge that his Majestie, and his Commissioners, have ever sayde, that they will conclude nothing without the Queen's Highnes be first satisfyed: Yt seemed to us, that if her Highnes, and your Lordshipes, did stande earnestlye in the Repetition of *Callais*: That the *French* at this Time must either forsake *Callais*, or elles the Peace. And in Case this Occasion to redemaunde *Callais* be now forsloune, God knoweth when ever *England* shall have the lyke again. And where your Lordshipes wryte, that the King's Commissioners beeinge so neere to agree with the *French* upon the hole, much wer to be endured for the Wealth of *Christendom*: It is even so indeede as your Lordshipes wryte. Mary that all other shuld have Restitution of their owne, and poor *England* that beganne not the Fraye, bear the Burthen and the Losse for the Rest; and specially of such a Jewel as *Callais* is, we feare will seeme very harde and strange to all the Realme. And yet yf the Losse of *Callais* might Purchase a sure Peace to *Christendom*, that wer yet some colour why somewhat the rather to agree to it. But yf we may be so bold to saye playnely our Myndes unto your Lordshipes; we not onely thinke not that, that the leaveing *Callais* to the *French*, shall purchase *Christendom* a sure Peace; but rather ar perswaded that nothing can more evidentlye shew, that the *French* entend no Peace to contynue, speciallye with *England*, then the retention of *Callais*, yf they earnestlye and finallye persist theron. Your Lordships do right well understande what Advantage the *French* have to annoy us by *Scotland*, which now is much ruled by *France*. And in Case any Peace be made, then shall the *French* have good Tyme and Leasure to establish and order their

Matters

Matters so yn *Scotland*, specially considdering the Mariage of the *Doffyn*, and the Queen of *Scotts*, is now done; that *Scotland* shall be every whitte as much at their Commandment, as any Part of *France* is. And what the *French* pretend unto by that Mariage, is not unknowne to your Lordshipes.

If now *Callais* shall remayn yn their Hands too, wherby neither *England* shall have the Commoditie to offende their Enemyes, nor to succour their Friends, nor lykewyse to receyve succour from their Friends at their Need, but by very uneasy Means: Yea, and wherby *England* shall in a manner be excluded from knowledge of all Things, done both by their Enemyes, and by their Freends; or at the least, the Knowledge therof shall not come, but so late, that it will feurve to little Purpose. And that *Callays* lyeth so commodiously to be a Scourge for *England*, as it was before King *Edward* the Third took it: Which caused him to adventure himself, and his Son the Prince, to come but with a meane Armye from *Normandye* into *France*, and thence through all *Picardye*, to go to beseege *Callais*: He beinge contynuallye poursewed by his Ennemyes with greate Armyes, with the which he was enclosed and compassed about, and fynallye constrained more than once to Fight it out, and specially at *Crecy*, where his Enemy's Armye was thyrse as greate as his, and to lye so longe at the Seege before *Callais*, as he did. This Scourge of *England*, so well knowne by Experyence then, and therefore so dearly bought by King *Edward* the IIIId, and now not yet known for lacke of Experyence; yf the *French* shall retayne yn their Hands, they having likewise *Scotland* on the other side, how dangerous this shall be to *England*, is easy to be confydered. These, and other Consyderations, make us to be of Opyinion, that leaving *Callais* to the *French*, they will be content to delyver you a Peece of Parchemyn sealed with a little Wax; but that they meane anye contynuance of Peax, we cannot be perswaded, no more then King *Francis* did by a Nombre of Peeces of Parchment sealed, which he sent to King *Henry* the VIIIth: Nor the *French* King that now is, did, by the Parchemyne sealed, which he sent to King *Edward* the VIth. And whereas now the King's Majesties Contreys ar in Warre with *France*, as well as *England*: If the Peace be ones made, the *French* will soon seek Occasion to fall out with *England* againe; and then may it perhaps chaunce so, that *Spaine* will not think it necessarye for them to venture yn Warre againe with *France*. Whereas now the Kings Majestie cannot Honorablye, nor entendith not (as he himself hath declared and said) to make any Peace without us. So that the Premisses confydered, we cannot for our Parts thinke, that *Chriftendom* shall be restored to a good Peace, though we forsake *Callais*, but that then we shall be more oppressed with War than before. And in Case we must needs have War, as good it seemeth to contynue in it yet for a while, being conjoynded to the King's Majestie, who beareth the Chief Burthen and Charges of it; then shortelye after to begynne a new, and to stand in Danger to have all the Burthen lye on our Neckes. And then should we know what a Jewell we had forsaken, when we did agree to forgo *Callais*; and that by the Retencion of *Callais*, the *French* meant nothing les, then the quietnes of *Chriftendom*.



We have thought it our Dutie to declare to your Lordships what our Opyion is heerin. Which neverthelſſe we pray your Lordships to accepte yn good Parte.

I the Biſhop of *Ely* returned to *Cercamp*, according to the King's Majeſties Appointment; where I have contynued til now that I came hither to conſult upon theſe Matters with my Colleagues. And all this while hath there nothing ben done yn our Matters for *England*; but the other Comiſſioners have ben buſye continuallye. And as far as I can learn, they are not yett all agreed upon the Matters of *Piedmount*, nor of *Corſica*, nor *Siena*. Yea, and as I heere, the *French* begyne now to call the Matters of *Navarre* in queſtion; and to aſk Reſtitution thereof; yn ſo much, that ſome begyne to thinke contrary to that hath ben commonlye thought hi hereto; that the Ende of this Matter will be, that all ſhall departe, *re infecta*.

After we had written thus farre, I the Earle of *Arundall*, receyved a Letter from the Biſhope of *Arras*, of the 17th of this Preſent; wherein amonge other Things he writeth thus. *Monſieur Leveſque de Ely vous aura dit en quels termes nous eſtions a ſon Partement en ce Purgatoire. Et hier les Francois nous declarerent qu'en toutes chaſſes condeſcendront ils pluſtot que de venir a ce de Calais: Ne qu'il leur eſchappe: Et nous leur declarasmes derechef au contraire que ſans ſatisfaire a Royaume d'Angleterre nous ne traiterons en facon quelconque avec eux & fut noſtre depart ſur ce til qu'il y a plus d'apparence de rompre que de concluſion.*

So that by this lykewiſe it may ſeme, that they agree not beſt: But whether that be for *Callais* onelye, we doubt much. And thus we bid your good Lordships moſt hartely well to fare. From *Arras* the 18th of *November*, 1558.

*Your good Lordships moſt aſſuredly.*

Arundell.

Thomas Elye.

N. Wotton.

## Number 44.

*A Letter of Jewel's to Peter Martyr, from Strasburg, of  
the State of Affairs in England.*

Scripta (ut videtur) 1553.

Juellus ad Martyrem.

S. P.

**D**E prima illa nostra Profectione, & de novis omnibus, quæ tum <sup>et alibi</sup> ferebantur Basileæ, scripsi ad te per D. Simlerum nostrum. <sup>et alibi</sup>  
Quinto postridie vix pervenimus Argentinam; tantoper miseri co-  
acti sumus hæere in luto. Hic omnes nostros invenimus incolu-  
mes, & cupidissimos tui. Quid Sandus, Hornus, aliique nostri  
fecerint in Anglia, nihil adhuc audivimus. Neque id sanè mi-  
rum. Profecti enim Argentinæ ad Viceſimum primum Decem-  
bris, vix Viceſimo post die potuerunt pervenire Antuerpiam,  
quod Rhenus constrictus glacie, illorum Navigationem impediret.  
Hoc tantum audimus, Reditum illorum Reginae esse gratissimum; id-  
que illam non obscurè præ se ferre. Si Episcopi pergant porro ut  
cæperunt, erit brevi magna Vilitas Episcopatum. Certum enim  
est, Christophersonum, Rabulam illum Ciceſtensem, esse mortuum;  
quod idem de Watſono quoq; Lincolnienſi nunciatur: Quod si ita  
est, vacant hoc tempore Episcopatus quatuordecim. Whitus tuus,  
in funere Mariæ, quemadmodum ad te scripsi cum eſſem Basileæ, ha-  
buit ad Populum insanam, & turbulentissimam Concionem; Omnia  
potius tentanda esse, quàm ut quicquam de Religione immutaretur.  
Bonum factum, si quis exules reduces interfecerit. Accusatus est Se-  
ditionis à Marchione Vintonienſi Theſaurario, & Hetho Archiepiſ-  
copo Eboracenſi. Londinenſis jussus est, reddere Hæredibus D. Rid-  
læi, quæcunque illis per vim & injuriam eripuerat. Vocabitur brevi  
ad Causæ dictionem; interim jubetur, se domi continere, tanquam  
in carcere. Regina edixit, ne quis habeat Concionem ad Populum,  
neve Papista, neve Minister Evangelij. Id alij factum putant, quòd  
cum unus tantum eſſet Minister Verbi tum temporis Londini, Bent-  
hamus, tantus eſſet numerus Papistarum. Alij, quòd audita una tan-  
tum Benthami publica Concione, Populus inter se cæperit litigare de  
Ceremoniis: Et alij Genevenſes esse vellent, alij Francofordiani.  
Quicquid est, utinam ne nostri Homines nimium prudenter & poli-  
ticè versari velint in Causa Dei. Multi putant D. Coquum fore  
Magnum Cancellarium; Hominem bonum quidem, & pium, uti  
noſti; sed illi muneri, meo judicio, non aptissimum. Eliensis hæret  
ahud apud Philippum, dum aliquid de ista præclara Pace, si Deo  
placet, transigatur; quæ qualis, aut quam firma, & diuturna futura  
ſit, Θεῶν ἐν γένεσι κεῖται. D. Isabella, spero, vocabitur in Angliam.  
Video



Video enim alios quoque nostros Homines, de ea re seriò cogitare. D. Zanchius etiam scribet ad Reginam: Erat scripturus ad totum Parliamentum, nisi ego dissuasissem; id enim mihi videbatur alienum. Cranmerus Puer relictus est Argentinæ apud Abelum, ut meæ Fidei committeretur: Ego ab Abelo mutuo sumpsi Coronatos pueri nomine. Oro Julium, ut Sarcinam & Pecuniam, quam reliquimus numeratam apud te, ad illum mittat Argentinam. Ille tibi curabit cautionem, eamq; vel deponet apud D. Zanehium, vel, si mavis, ad te mittet. Bene vale, mi dulcissime Pater, & plus quam Animi dimidium mei. Nolo ad te omnia; oportuit enim me etiam ad D. Bullingerum aliquæ scribere: Cui ego Viro, pro summa ejus erga me Humanitate, debeo omnia. Sed ea, quæcunque sunt, non dubito, tibi cum illo fore communia.

D. Hetonus, D. Abelus, D. Springhamus, D. Parkhurstus, te plurimùm salutant, & cum tibi cupiant omnià, nihil tamen magis cupiunt hoc tempore quàm Angliam. Saluta D. Muraltum, Hermannum, Julium, Juliam, & omnes tuos meosque, meo nomine.

D. Fr. Beti, & D. Acontius, sunt nunc Argentinæ: Uterque te plurimùm salutant. Ego D. Beti reddidi Literas D. Isabellæ: Id obsecro, ut illi significes.

*Argentinae, 26.  
Januar.*

JOHANNES JUELLUS

Ex Animo, & semper, Tuus.

## INSCRIPTIO.

*Ornatissimo Viro, D. Petro Martyri,  
in Ecclesiâ Tigurinâ Professore S.  
Theologiæ, Domino suo Colendis-  
simo.*

Number 45.

*A Letter of Gualter's to Dr. Masters, advising a Thorough Reformation.*

Domino Richardo Mastero, Medico Regio, Amico veteri, & Fratri suo dilecto.

*Ex MSS.  
Tigur.*

**G**ratulabar mihi non parùm, Annis superioribus, quando regnante Edvardo Sexto Sanctæ Memoræ, tu prior scribendi Officium, quod multis annis intermissum fuerat, repetere cæpisti. At nunc multò

multis magis & tibi & mihi gratulor, Vir doctissime, & Frater in Christo conservande, quòd ea Tempora Angliæ vestræ, per Dei Clementiam, reducta esse audimus; quando sub Regina piissimæ Tutela, per illorumque, Deum verò colendi Libertas restitueretur, & Amicitia Libere tutò hinc inde ferri & referri poterunt. Apud nos in hac ætate Nilum Dei Sapientiam & Donitatem, qui Ecclesiæ suæ Ærummas suis vicibus temperare solet, ne tentationum fluctibus toti obruamur. Paxit idem ille, ut Spei filium, quam de Angliæ Regno jam omnes conceperunt, satisfiat. Quod eò magis futurum put, si quotquot illic in aliquo Dignitatis gradu collocati estis, Ecclesiæ & Religionis Curam ad vos cum primis pertinere memineritis, nec illorum admiseritis Consilia, qui cum Papatum nec honore defendi, nec totum retineri posse vident, ad artes convertuntur, quibus Religionis Forma mixtam, incertam & dubiam fingunt, & eandem, sub Evangelicæ Reformationis prætextu, Ecclesiæ obtrudunt; ex qua deinde facillimus est ad Papisticam Superstitionem & Idolomaniam transitus. Quod non eò scribo, quòd tales apud vos esse sciam, sed quod ne tales sint metuo. Jam enim annis aliquot in Germania, magno Ecclesiarum malo experti sumus, quantum ejusmodi Homines valeant. Eò quod illorum Consilia, carnis judicio, Modestæ plena, & ad alendam Concordiam, cum primis idonea esse videantur, & credibile est, publicum illum humanæ Salutis hostem, apud vos quoque sua flabella inventurum, quorum opera Papatûs semina retinere studeat. Quibus Scripturæ sanctæ, & Verbi divini armis, constanter resistendum fuerit, ne dum circa prima initia, aliquam mediocrem animorum offensionem declinare studemus; multa ad tempus dentaxat duratura admittantur, quæ postea vix ullo studio, & non absque gravissimis tentationibus omnino tolli possint. Exemplum hujus mali Germanicæ Ecclesiæ multa viderunt, quorum consideratione edocti, suspecta habemus quæcunque cum sincera Verbi Doctrina, aliqua ex parte pugnant. Nec me alia ratione, ut hæc moneam, adduci credas, quam quod Angliæ vestræ, ob veterem Consuetudinem, cujus-vel fera Recordatio mihi etiam hodie jucundissima est, mirifice faveo. De Rebus nostris certiore te reddet Parkhurstus, noster Frater, & Hospes meus dilectissimus, quem tibi commendatissimum esse velim. Sustinuit ille jam toto quinquennio, graves exilij molestias; inter quas tamen, admirabilem Fidei Constantiam, & Patientiam incredibilem conjunxit. Nunc spe læta plenus, in Patriam contendit, ut Ecclesiæ renascentis Causam pro suo talento adjuvet. Nec dubito, quin bonam operam præstiturus sit, cum Scripturarum Cognitionem habeat præclaram, & Veritatis studiosissimus sit, & à Contentionibus abhorreat, quarum studiosi vix aliquem in Ecclesia fructum faciunt. Optimè ergo feceris, si tua Authoritate illum juves, & pro virili provehas. Mihi verò nilil jucundius fuerit, quam si ex tuis Literis intelligam, nostræ Amicitie memoriam penes te adhuc salvam esse, quæ certè in animo meo nunquam intermori poterit. Vale, Vir præstantissime. Tiguri, 16. Januarij 1559.



Number 46.

*A Letter of the Earl of Bedford's to Bullinger, from  
Venice.*

T I T.

Doctissimo Viro Domino Bullingero, Sacræ Theologiæ  
Professori eximio Tiguri.

*Ex MSS.  
Tigur.*

CUM meus in Te Amor singularis, & perpetua Observantia, quâ te semper Religionis Causâ sum persecutus, tum tua erga me incredibilis Humanitas, multis modis à me perspecta, cum Tiguri fuerim, (Bullingere Doctissime) fecerunt, ut hæc Literas animi erga Te, mei pignus certissimum, & veluti Tabulas obsignatas mei in Te perpetui amoris quas extare volui, huic adolescenti ad Te darem. In quibus ita tibi gratias ago, propter tuam Humanitatem, ut etiam me tibi relaturum pollicear, si quâ in re tibi unquam gratificari queam. Atque hæc ita à me dicta velim accipias, non sicut Homines qui hodie verborum quandam speciem inducunt, & officiosam formam, magis id adeo ut videantur, quàm quod esse velint id quod præ se ferant: Sed potius, ut ab animo sincero, & prorsus tibi devinctissimo profecta, certissimum tibi persuadeas. Itaque, si quid tuâ Causâ unquam facere possim, (quod quàm exiguum sit non ignoro) illud tamen, quantulumcunque erit tuum erit totum. Sed de hoc satis, & fortasse superque, præsertim etiam cum adhuc mihi statutum sit, (si alia non intervenerint, quæ inceptum iter alò evadere possint) ut vos obiter invisam in Angliam reversuro. Ubi id vivâ voce confirmare, quod hic nudis verbis solummodò declarare possum. Juvenis, qui has Literas perfert mihi, nunciavit de obitu Conradi Pellicani, (quem Honoris Causâ nomino) quod ut audiui, sanè quam pro eo ac debui, graviter molestèque tuli, non tam suâ, quam Ecclesiæ universæ Causâ. Is enim hujus vitæ Curriculum, in curis, vigiliis, assiduis studiis, literatis Hominibus promovendis, gloriosissimè confecit, ac denique moriendo quemadmodum vivebat ad meliorem vitam in Cælum translatus est. At illa multum desiderabit plurimis nominibus, virum absolutissimum: Itaque, ut illius Causâ lætor, ita hujus vicem non possum non magnopere dolere. At hujus mæstitiæ causam tui (ut spero & opto) præsentia faciè mitigabi, quem Ecclesiæ, bonisque omnibus, diù incolumem Deus Opt. Max. per suam Misericordiam esse velit. Venet. 6. Calend. Maias.

Tui Nominis Studiosissimus,

F. BEDFORD.

Domino Gesnero, & Domino Gualthero, meis amicissimis  
diligenter à me, q' æso, Salutem dicito.

Number

## Number 47.

*A Letter of Jewel's to Peter Martyr, of the State he found  
Matters in when he came to England.*

S. P.

**T**Andem tamen aliquando, Quinquegesimo, videlicet, Septimo post Die, quam solvissemus Tiguro, parvenimusque in Angliam. *Ex MSS. figur.* Quid enim necesse est multa *περὸν μαλ' ἔειν*, apud te præsertim, qui rem potius ipsam quæras, & longos istos logos non magni facias? Interea verò, Deum immortalem, quæ illa Vita fuit, cùm & Aqua, & Terra, & Cælum ipsum nobis indignaretur, & omnibusque modis reditum nostrum impediret? Quid quæris? Omnia nobis toto illo tempore odiosissima, & adversissima acciderunt. Verùm hæc antea ad te, & ad D. Bullingerum fufus, cùm adhuc hærerem Antwerpia. Nunc accipe cætera. Quanquam hic, ut verè dicam, arte opus est & myrothecus: Non tam quidem, quod mihi nunc ornanda, & polienda sint nova, quæ nescio an ulla sint hoc tempore. Scio tamen à te plurima expectari, quàm quòd recantanda sint vetera. Illa enim ferè omnia, quæ ego ad te jam antea scripsi ex itinere, multò tùm erant alia, & longe auditu jucundiora, quàm quæ postea re ipsa inveni domi. Nondum enim ejectus erat Romanus Pontifex: Nondum pars ulla religionis restituta: Eadem erat ubique missarum proluvies: Eadem pompa, atq; insolentia Episcoporum. Illa tamen omnia nunc tandem mutare incipiunt, & pene ruere. Magno nobis impedimento sunt Episcopi: Qui, cum sint, ut scis, in superiori Conclavi inter primores, & proceres, & nemo ibi sit nostrorum Hominum, qui illorum fucos, & mendacia possit, coram dicendo refutare, inter Homines Literarum, & rerum imperitos soli regnant, & paterculos nostros facile vel Numero, vel Opinione Doctrinæ circumscribunt. Regina interea, etsi aperte faveat nostræ Causæ, tamen partim à suis, quorum Consilio omnia geruntur, partim à Legato Philippi Comite *Ferio* Homine Hispano, ne quid patiatur innovari mirificè deterretur. Illa tamen quamvis lentius aliquantò, quàm nos velimus, tamen & prudenter, & fortiter, & piè persequitur institutum. Et quamvis hætenus Principia, paulo visa sunt duriora, tamen spes, est aliquando rectè fore. Interea, ne Episcopi nostri queri possint se potentia tantum, & lege esse victos, res revocata est ad Disputationem, ut novem ex nostris, Scoræus, Coxus, Wichedus, Sandus, Grindallus, Hornus, Elmer, Ghestus quidam Cantabrigiensis, ex egr, cum quinque Episcopis, Abbate Westmonasteriensi, Colo, Cheadæo, Harpes feldo, de his rebus coram Senatu colloquamur. Prima nostra assertio est: In publicis precibusq; & Administratione Sacramentorum alia uti Lingua, quàm quæ à Populo intelligatur, alienum esse à verbo Dei, & à consuetudine Primitiva Ecclesiæ. Altera est; Quamvis Ecclesiam Provinciale,

etiam



ctiam injussu Generalis Concilii, posse vel instituere, vel mutare, vel abrogare Cereemonias, & Ritus Ecclesiasticos, sic ubi id videatur facere ad *Ædificationem*. Tertia sacrificium illud propitiatorium, quod Papista fingunt esse in Missa, non posse prolati ex Sacris Literis. Pridie Calendarum Aprilis instituitur Prima conflictatio. Episcopi interim, quasi partâ Victoriâ, jamdudum Magnificè Triumphant. Ubi Froschoverus ad nos venit, scribam de his rebus omnia disertius. Regina te gerit in oculis. Literas tuas tanti fecit, ut eas iterum, tertiosq; cupidissimè relegerit. Librum tuum, ubi advenerit, non dubito, fore multò gratiorem. Oxonii à tuo dicessu duæ præclaræ virtutes incredibiliter auctæ sunt, inscitia, & contumacia: Religio, & spes omnis Literarum, atq; ingeniorum funditùs periit. Brochas Episcopus Gloucestriensis bestia impurissimæ Vitæ, ex multò impuriore Conscientiæ, paulò antequam Moreretur, miserabilem in modum exclamavit, sese jam se ipso judice esse damnatum. Faber tuus præclarus, scilicet, Patronus castitatis deprehensus est in adulterio: Ex ea Causa, quod aliqui vix solet fieri, cùm Maria adhuc viveret, novò more, nullo exemplo jussus est cedere Lectione Theologica. Bruernus simili, sed longè flagitiosiori de scelere coactus est relinquere Professionem Linguæ Hebræicæ. De Martiali nihil Scribo, ne Chartas contamirem. De Westono audisti antea. Sed quid istos, inquires, Commemores? Ut intelligas, quibus iudicibus oportuerit B. Cranmerum, P. Ridlæum, P. Latimerum condemnari. De Scotis, de Pace, de Bello nihil. Ternas ad te dedi Literas ex itinere: Quæ utrumq; ad te pervenerint, nescio. Sed quoniam longè absumus, longiùs, ô Deum Immortalem, & diutius multò, quàm vellem, Literæ nostræ interdum ventis & fortunæ committendæ sunt. Vale, mi Pater, & Domine in Christo Colendissime, Saluta D. Bullingerum, D. Gualterum, D. Simlerum, D. Gesnerum, D. Lavaterum, Julium, Juliam, Martyrillum, D. Hermannum, & convictores tuos Trevicenses. Omnes nostri te salutant. Londini 20 Martii, 1559.

*Jo. Juellus.*

Istæ sunt Primæ, quas ad te scribo, ex quo redii in Angliam. Ita posthac subscribam omnes, ut scire possis, si quæ forte interciderint.

## INSCRIPTIO.

Doctissimo Viro D. Petro Martyri Vermilio.  
Professori Sacræ Theologiæ in Ecclesia  
Tigurina Domino suo Colendissimo.

*Tiguri.*

Number 48.

*A Letter of Juell's to Bullinger, concerning the State of Things in the Beginning of this Reign.*

S. P.

**G** Ratissimæ erant mihi Parkurstoque meo literæ tuæ, ornatissimè Ex 138  
 vir, vel quòd à te sint, cui quantum debeamus, nunquam pos- Tigur.  
 sumus oblivisci, vel quo suavitatis, & humanitatis erga nos tuæ, quam  
 toto nos tempore exilii nostri experti sumus maximam, altissima verti-  
 gia retinerent. Atque utinam possimus aliquando pietatis tuæ partem  
 aliquam compensare. Quicquid erit, animus certe nobis nunquam  
 deerit; Quod nos hortaris, ut strenuè ac fortiter nos geramus, erat  
 ille aculeus non tantum non ingratus nobis sed etiam penè necessarius.  
 Nobis enim in hoc tempore non tantum cum adversariis, sed etiam  
 cum amicis nostris, qui proximis istis annis à nobis defecerunt & cum  
 hostibus conjurarunt, jamque acrius multò, & contumacius resistunt,  
 quàm ulli hostes, quodque molestissimum est, cum reliquiis Hispano-  
 rum, hoc est cum teterrimis vitiis, superbia, luxu, libidine luctan-  
 dum est. Facimus quidem nos, fecimusque quod potuimus. Deus  
 bene fortunet, & det Incrementum. Sed ita hætenus vivimus, ut vix  
 videamur restituti ab exilio. Ne dicam aliud: ne suum quidem ad-  
 huc restitutum est cuiquam nostrum. Quanquam, & si molesta no-  
 bis est ista tam diuturna expectatio, tamen non dubitamus, brevi  
 rectè fore. Habemus enim Reginam & prudentem, & piam, & nobis  
 faventem & propitiam. Religio restituta est in eum locum, quo sub  
 Edwardo rege fuerat, ad eam rem non dubito, tuas, reipublicæque  
 vestræ literas & exhortationes multum ponderis attulisse. Regina  
 non vult appellari aut scribi. Caput Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ: graviter  
 enim respondit, illam dignitatem soli esse attributam Christo: nemini  
 autem mortalium convenire. Deinde illos titulos tam foedè contami-  
 natos esse ab Anti-christo ut jam non possint amplius satis piè à quo-  
 quam usurpari. Academiæ nostræ ita afflictæ sunt, & perditæ, ut Ox-  
 onii vix duo sint, qui nobiscum sentiant, & illi ipsi ita abjecti &  
 fracti, ut nihil possint. Ita Soto fraterculus, & alius, nescio quis,  
 Hispanus Monachus, omnia ea, quæ D. Petrus Martyr pulcherrimè  
 plantaverat, everterunt à radicibus, & vineam Domini redegerunt in  
 Solitudinem. Vix credas tantam vastitatem afferri potuisse tam parvo  
 tempore. Quare & si magnam alioqui voluptatem capturus sim, si  
 vel canem Tigorinum videre possem in Anglia, tamen non possum esse  
 Author hoc tempore, ut juvenes vestros aut literarum aut religionis  
 causâ ad nos mittatis, nisi eosdem remittit velitis ad vos, impios & bar-  
 baros. Rogavit me nuper D. Russellius qua maximè re tibi, aliisque  
 tuis fratribus, & Symmisticis gratum facere. Hoc videlicet, sensit, vel-  
 lé se Humanitatis vestræ, quam semper prædicat & hospitii causa ali-  
 quid ad vos dono mittere. Ego verò nihil tibi tuisque fore gratius,  
 quàm si religionem Christi studiose ac fortiter propagaret & papista-  
 rum insolentiam imminueret. Quod ille & recepit se facturum, &



certè facit, quantum potest: Venerunt hodie Londinum Legati Regis Galliae, qui gratulantur de pace; Princeps legationis est juvenis Morancius. De nuptiis Reginae adhuc nihil. Ambit quidem filius Johannis Frederici, & frater secundus natu Maximiliani. Vulgi tamen suspicio inclinatur in Pikerimum hominem Anglum, virum & prudentem & pium, & regia corporis dignitate præditum. Deus bene vertat, quicquid erit. Istæ primæ sunt, quas ad te seorsim scripsi, ex quo redii in Angliam: Sed quoniam, quæ scripsi ad D. Martyrem, scio illum propter summam inter vos conjunctionem tecum habuisse communia non dubito, quæcunque ad illum scripsi, eadem ad te quoque scripta dicere. Bene vale mi pater, & Domine in Christo colendissime. Saluta optimam illam mulierem uxorem tuam: D. Gualterum D. Simlerum D. Zuinglium, D. Lavaterum. Si quid unquam erit, in quo possim, aut tibi aut tuis esse voluptati, aut usui, polliceor tibi non tantum operam, studium, diligentiam, sed etiam animum & corpus meum  
22. Maij Londini, 1559.

Tui Studiosis

*Jo. Juelluo.*

## INSCRIPTIO,

Viro longè Doctissimo D. Henricho Bullingero Pastori Ecclesiæ Tigurinæ Dignissimo & Domino suo Colendissimo.

*Tiguri.*

## Number 49.

*A Letter of Jewell's to Peter Martyr, concerning the Disputation with the Papists at Westminster.*

Idem ad P. Martyrem.

S. P.

*Ex MSS.  
Tigur.*

**D**E illis Disputationibus inter nos, & Episcopos, quas proximis Literis Scripsi indictas fuisse in ante Calendas Aprilis quid factum sit, paucis accipe. Sic enim visum est continuare Orationem sine præmis. Primum ergo, ut omnis causa jurgiorum & otiosæ contentionis tolleretur, Senatus decrevit, ut omnia utrinque de scripto legerentur, & ita describerentur tempora, ut primo die assertiones tantum utrinque nudæ proponerentur: Proximò autem conventu, ut

nos illis responderemus, & illi vicissim nobis. Pridiè ergò Kal. April. cum magna expectatione, majori credo frequentia convenissimus Westmonasterii, Episcopi, pro sua fide, nec scripti, nec picti quicquam attulerunt, quod dicerent, se non satis temporis habuisse ad res tantas cogitandas: Cum tamen habuissent plùs minùs decem dies, & interea copias auxiliares Oxoniò & Cantabrigiâ, & undiq; ex omnibus angulis contraxissent. Tamen ne tot Viri viderentur frustra convenisse, D. Colus subornatus ab aliis venit in medium, qui de prima quæstione, hoc est, de peregrina Lingua, unus omnium nomine peroraret. Ille verò cum omnibus nos contumeliis & convitiis indignissimè excepisset, & omnium seditionum aucthores & faces appellâisset, & suppositione pedum, projectione brachiorum, inflexione laterum, crepitu digitorum, modò dejectione modò sublatione superciliorum, (nôsti enim hominis vultum & modestiam) sese omnes in partes & formas convertisset, huc postremò evasit, ut diceret, Angliam ante mille trecentos Annos recepisse Evangelium. Et quibus, inquit, Literis, quibus annalibus, quibus monumentis constare potest, Preces tum publicas in Anglia habitas, fuisse Anglicè. Postea cum in illo Circulo sese satis jamdiu jastavisset, adjecit seriò, & vero vultu, atq; etiam admonuit, ut omnes hoc tanquam quiddam de dictis melioribus diligenter attenderent, atque annotarent, Apostolos ab initio ita inter sese distribuissè operas, ut alij Orientis Ecclesias instituerent, alij Occidentis. Itaque Petrum & Paulum, in Romana Ecclesia, quæ totam propè Europam contineret, omnia Romano sermone, hoc est, latinè docuissè. Reliquos Apostolos in Oriente, nullo unquam alio Sermone usus fuisse, nisi Græco. Tu fortasse ista rides: Atqui ego neminem audiavi unquam, qui solenniùs & magistratiùs insaniret. Si adfuisset Julius noster, centies exclamâisset, *Pob! Horson Knave.* Verùm ille, inter alia, nihil veritus est, mysteria ipsa & penetralia, atq; adyta prodere Religionis suæ. Non enim dubitavit graviter & seriò moneere, eitamfi alia omnia maximè conveniunt, tamen non expedire, ut Populus, quid in sacris ageretur, intelligat. Ignorantia enim, inquit, Mater est veræ Pietatis, quam ille appellavit Devotionem. O Mystica sacra, atque Opertanea Bonæ Deæ! Quid tu me putas interim de Cotta Pontifice cogitâsse? Hoc videlicet illud est, In Spiritu & Veritate adorare. Mitto alia. Cum ille jam calumniando, convitiando, mentiendo magnam partem illius temporis, quod nobis ad disputandum datum erat, exemisset; nos postremò nostra pronuntiavimus de scripto, ita modestè, ut rem tantum ipsam diceremus, nihil autem læderemus adversarium, postremò ita dimissa est Disputatio, ut vix quisquam esset in toto illo Conventu, ne Comes quidem Salopiensis, quin Victoriâ illius diei adjudicaret nobis. Postea inita est Ratioe, ut proximo die Lunæ, de secunda Quæstione eodem modo diceremus; utque die Mercurij, nos illorum primi Diei Argumentis responderemus, illi vicissim nostris.

Die Lunæ, cum frequens Multitudo, ex omni Nobilitate cupidissima, audiendi convenisset, Episcopi, nescio pudoreve superioris diei, an desperatione victoriæ, primùm tergiversari, habere se quod dicerent de prima Quæstione, nec oportere rem sic abire. Responsum est à Senatu, Si quid haberent, id tertio post die, prout ab initio convenerat, audiri posse: Nunc hoc potius agerent, neve turbarent Ordinem.



nem. Dejecti de hoc gradu tamen huc evaserunt, si dicendum omnino sit, nolle se priores dicere; se enim in Possessione constituisse: Nos, si quid vellemus, priori loco experiremur. Magnam enim se facturos injuriam causæ suæ, si paterentur, nos posteriores discedere cum applausu Populi, & aculeos Orationis nostræ recentes in auditorum animis relinquere. Senatus contrà, Hanc ab initio institutam fuisse Rationem, ut illi, quod dignitate priores essent, priori etiam loco dicerent: nec eam nunc mutari posse. Mirari verò se, quid hoc sit Mysterij, cum omnino necesse sit, alterutros priores dicere; alioqui enim nihil posse dici: Et præsertim, cum Colus in primis Disputationibus etiam injussus, ultrò prior ad decedendum profiluerit. Postremò, Cum altercationibus magna pars temporis extracta esset, nec Episcopi ullo pacto concedere vellent de secundo loco, ad extremum sine Disputatione discessum est. Ea verò res incredibile dictu est, quantum imminuerit Opinionem Populi de Episcopis: Omnes enim ceperunt jam suspicari, quod nihil dicere voluissent, ne potuisse quidem illos quicquam dicere. Postero die, Vitus Vintoniensis, amicus tuus, & Vatsonus Lincolnienfis, de tam aperto contemptu & contumacia, damnati sunt ad Turrim: Ibi nunc castrametantur, & ex infirmis præmissis concludunt fortiter. Reliqui jubentur quotidie, præstò esse in Aula, & expectare quid de illis Senatus velit decernere. Habes *ἐντευξην ἀτελῆν* & penè *ἀνεύτευκτον*; quam tamen, quò melius rem omnem intelligeres, descripsi pluribus, fortasse, quam oportuit. Benè vale, mi Pater, Decus meum, atque etiam Animi dimidium mei. Si quid est apud vos novarum rerum, hoc tempore, id malo esse proximarum Literarum Argumentum. Saluta plurimum, meo nomine, venerandum illum Virum, & mihi in Christo Dominum colendissimum, D. Bullingerum, D. Gualterum, D. Simlerum, D. Lavaterum, D. Wolphium, D. Gesnerum, D. Hallerum, D. Frisium, D. Hermannum, & Julium tuum meumque. Nostri omnes te salutant, & tibi omnia cupiunt. Londini, 6. April. 1559.

*Post-script'*

Jo. Juellus tuus.

Istæ sunt secundæ, quas ad te scribo, ex quo redij in Angliam.

## INSCRIPTIO.

D. Petro Martyri, Professori Sacræ Theologiæ in Ecclesia Tigurina, Viro Doctissimo, & Domino suo in Christo Colendissimo.

Tiguri.

## Number 50.

*A Letter of Jewell's to Peter Martyr, of the Debates in the House of Lords; and of the State of the Universities; and concerning the Inclinations to the Smalcaldick League.*

S. P.

**A** Ccepi ternas à te Literas, omnes eodem ferme tempore: Quæ <sup>Ex MSS. figur.</sup> cum multis de causis mihi essent, ut certe debebant, jucundissimæ, vel quòd essent à te, vel quòd Rerum tuarum Statum significarent, & amorem erga me tuum: Tamen nullâ alâ causâ mihi visæ sunt jucundiores, quàm quòd officium meum requirerent, neq; vel oblivionis vel tarditatis, blandè ac tacitè accusarent; quorum alterum magnitudo tuorum erga me meritorum, alterum negotia mea non sinunt. Scripsi quidem ego ad te ternas Literas, ex quo redij in Angliam; quas tamen video, cum tu illas tuas scriberes, nondum ad te pervenisse. Et fieri potest, ut sæpe sit, ut aut hæreant uspiam, & ignavæ atq; otiosæ imitentur Religionem nostram, aut etiam perierint in itinere. Sed quicquid est, nulla potest in ea re magna jactura fieri. Erant enim penè inanes, quòd non multum adhuc esset, quod aut tu audire libenter velles, aut ego scribere. Nunc agitur Causa Pontificis, & agitur utrinque fortiter. Episcopi enim sudant, ne quid errasse videantur: Atq; ea Causa moratur, & impedit Religionem. Difficile est enim Cursum incitare. Fecimus, Abbas Westmonasteriensis, opinor, ut auctoritatem addent Professioni suæ, cum peroraret in Senatû, Nazaræos, Prophetas, Christum ipsum, & Apostolos conjecit in Numerum Monachorum. Nemo Causam nostram acrius oppugnat, quam Eliensis. Is & locum suum in Senatu, & ingenium retinet. Episcoporum prædia redacta sunt in fiscum: Illis ex permutatione dabuntur Sacerdotia, quæ antea attributa erant Monasteriis. Interim de Scholis, and cura Literarum magnum ubique Silentium. Regina de te honorificè & loquitur, & sensit. Dexit nuper D. Russelio, se velle te accersere in Angliam; id enim ille, alii-que urgent, quantum possunt. Sed nisi & seridè, & cupidè, & honorificè petaris, nunquam ero author, ut venias. Nihil equidem magis, aut miserius cupio, quam te videre, & dulcissimis illis Sermonibus tuis frui, sive (quod ô utinam aliquando contingat) in Anglia, sive etiam Tiguri. Verùm quantum video obstabit desiderio nostro, inauspicata illa ex Saxis ac Saxonibus damnata *παρασεία*. Nostræ enim nunc cogitat Fœdus Smalcaldicum. Scribit autem ad illam quidam è Germania, illud Fœdus non posse ullo pacto coire, si tu ad nos venias. Illum autem quendam, si addo aliquando fuisse Episcopum, si nunc esse exulem, si hominem statum, si veteratorem, si aulicum, si Petrum, si Paulum, magis eum fortasse nôris, quam ego. Sed quicquid est, nos Articulos omnes Religionis, & Doctrinæ nostræ



stræ exhibuimus Reginae, & ne minimo quidem apice distans à Confessione Tigurinâ. Quanquam Amicus tuus Inventum : scio quod, summi tuctur mordicus, & nobis omnibus narsicè recenset. At huc nemini nostrum ne de obulo quidem prospectum est. Itaque ego nondum abieci insignia illa, quæ mihi sinxi Tiguri, Librum & crucem. Goodmannum audio esse apud nos ; sed ita, ut non ausit venire in publicum. Sed quanto satius fuisset sapuisse in tempore ? Si velit agnoscere errorem, nihil erit periculi. Verum, ut homo est satis acer, & in eo, quod semel suscepit, nimium pertinax, non nihil vereor, ne nolit cedere. Libri tui nondum venerunt : Id ego tanto magis miror, quod tot Angli jam pridem redierint Francofordiâ. Munus tuum ubi advenerit, non dubito Reginae fore gratissimum. Illud ego, quoniam tu ita jubes, quamvis alioquin sit per se ornatissimum, tamen si dabitur facultas, verbis ornabo meis. De illo autem Libro, quem tu seorsim ad me misisti, equidem non invenio, quibus verbis tibi agam gratias. Itaque malo, & huic humanitati tuæ, & superiorum tuorum erga me meritorum magnitudini ultrò succumbere. Certè et si te nunquam ex animo eram dimissurus, tamen hâc commonefactione, & inmemosyno excitatus, tanto acrius & reverentius colam, quoad vixero, Nomen tuum. Alij tui Libri jam pridem allati sunt à Bibliopolis, & emuntur cupidissimè. Omnes enim libenter videre cupiunt, quibus Venabulis illa Bestia confossa sit.

Benè vale mi Pater, & Domine in Christo Colendissime. Saluta D. Bullingerum, D. Bernardinum, D. Gualterum, D. Simlerum : Dicerem & Frenchamum, nisi illum putarem jamdudum aut in Balneo esse, aut in via. Hoc enim Anni tempore, cum auditur Cuculus, vix solet esse apud se. *Londini, 28. Apr. 1559.*

Tui Cupidissimus,

Tuoq; Nomini Deditissimus,

Istæ sunt Quartæ.

JOHANNES JUELLUS.

## INSCRIPTIO.

*Doctissimo Viro, D. Petro Martyri,  
in Ecclesiâ Tigurinâ Professore S.  
Theologiæ, Domino suo Colendissimo.  
Tiguri.*

## Number 51.

*A Letter of Jewell's to Peter Martyr of the State of Affairs  
both in England and Scotland.*

Ejisdem ad Eundem.

**H**Actenus min⁹ frequenter ad te scripsi, mi Pater, quod multa <sup>Ex MS.</sup> me negotia publica, privataq; impedirent. Nunc scribo, non <sup>Tigur.</sup> quod plus nunc otii sit, quàm antea, sed quod minus posthac futurum sit multò, quàm nunc est. Alterum enim jam pedem in terra habeo, alterum penè sublatum in equum. Mox enim ingredior longinquam & difficilem legationem constituendæ religionis ergò per Redingum, Abandonam, Glocestriam, Brittollium, Thermas, Welliam, Exonium, Cornubiam, Dorcestriam, Sarisburiam. Ambitus itineris nostri erit plus minus septingentorum milliarium: Vix ut quariò demùm mense putem nos esse redituros. Quare ne me interea putares esse mortuum, etsi ante duodecim dies, nescio quid, ad te scripserim de rebus communibus, tamen non alienum fore duxi, si nunc quoque paucis te quasi in degressu salutarem. Res nostræ satis nunc sunt in proclivi: Regina optimè animata: Populus ubique sitiens religionis. Episcopi, potiùs, quàm ut relinquant Papam, quem toties jam antea abjurarunt, malunt cedere rebus omnibus. Nec tamen id religionis causa faciunt, quam nullam habent, sed constantiæ, quam miseri nebulones vocari jam volunt conscientiam. Sacrifici jam tandem mutata religione passim abstinere à cætu sacro, quasi piaculum summum sit, cum populo Dei quicquam habere commune. Est autem tanta illorum nebulonum rabies, ut nihil suprà. Omnino sperant, & prædicant, est enim, ut scis, genus hominum prædictiosissimum, & valdè deditum futuritionibus ista non fore diuturna. Sed, quicquid futurum est, nos agimus Deo Optimo Maximo gratias, quòd res nostræ eò jam tandem loco sint, quo sunt. In Scotia fervent omnia. Knoxus cinctus mille satellibus agit conventus per totum regnum. Regina vetula coacta est sese includere in præsidium. Nobilitas conjunctis animis, & viribus restituit ubique religionem invitis omnibus. Monasteria passim omnia æquantur solo, vestes scenicæ, calices sacrilegi, idola, altaria comburuntur: Ne vestigia quidem priscae superstitionis & idololatriæ relinquuntur. Quid quæris? Audiisti sæpè, σκοθιστὶ πειν: Hoc verò est σκοθιστὴ ἐκκλησιαστικῇ. Rex Galliar, qui nunc est, scribit se Regem Scotiar, & hæredem Angliar, si quid Reginae nostræ, quod Deus avertat, contingat humanitus. Sed mirari non debes, si nostri homines molestè ferant: Et quo res eruptura tandem sit, Θεὸς ἐν γέννασι κεῖται. Fortasè, ut sit, communis hostis conciliabit nobis vicinum Scotum. Quod si sit, etsi accedant etiam nuptiæ, sed desino divinare. D. Hetonus te salutatur, idque non min⁹ amicè, quàm si illi pater esset. Aliquot nostrum designamur Episcopi. Coxus Eliensis, Scoræus



Scoræus Erfordienfis, Alanus Roffenfis, Grindalus Londinenfis, Barlovus Chicheftrenfis, & ego minimus Apoftolorum Sarisburienfis. Quod ego onus prorfus decievi excutere. Interea in Academiis mere eft ubique folitudo. Juvenes diffugiunt potius, quàm ut velint in religionem confentire. Sed comites jamdudum exspectant, & claman, ut veniam. Vale ergo, vale, mi Pater, & dulciffimum decus meum; faluta venerandum virum, & mihi mille nominibus in Chrifto Colendiffimum. D. Bullingerum, ad quem etiam feorfim fcriberim, fi efferet otium. Saluta D. Gualterum, D. Simlerum, D. Lavaterum, D. Hallerum, D. Gefnerum, D. Trifium, D. Hermannum. Habeo quinque piftolettos aureos à D. Barth. Compagno ad venerandum fenem D. Bernardinum, & ab eodem ad eum literas. Scriberem ad eum de rebus omnibus, nifi excluderet anguftia temporis. Quanquam hoc, quaefo te, ut illi fignifices, præter iftos aureos, nihil adhuc confectum effe. Res aulicæ, quantum video, ita funt difficiles, ut nesciam, an quicquam poffit exprimi. Regina jam abeft procul gentium in Cantio, ut agi nihil poffit. Vale, mi Pater, vale. Quantum ego tibi optare poffum, tantum vale. Et Juliam tuam, Annamque & Martyrillum meo nomine Londini Calendis Augufti, 1559.

Jo. Juellus tuus,  
Tibi omnibus modis deditiffimus.

### INSCRIPTIO.

Viro longè Doctiffimo D. Petro Martyri  
Vermilio Profitenti Sacram Theologi-  
am in Ecclefia Tigurina.

*Tiguri.*

Number 52.

*A Letter of Jewell's to Peter Martyr, before he went his  
Progress into the Western Parts of England.*

Ejusdem ad Eundem.

S. P.

Ex MSS.  
Tigur.

**E**T quid tandem ego ad te Scribam? Nos enim adhuc omnes peregrini fumus domi noſtræ. Redi ergo, inquires, Tigurum. Utinam, utinam, mi Pater, id mihi aliquando liceat. Te enim, quantum  
2 video,

video, nulla spes est venturum unquam in Angliam. ô Tigurum, Tigurum, quantò ego nunc sapius de te cogito, quàm unquam de Anglia, cum essem Tiguri. Quamvis autem, ut dixi, in Patria nostra finis hospites, excipimus tamen interdum quædam ἀγάλα καὶ ἀδὴγάλα. Verum πολλάκι τὸ κακὸν κατακείμενον ἔνδον ἄμεινον. De religione transactum est, utinam bonis auspiciis, ut esset eo loco, quo fuit ultimis tuis temporibus sub Edouardo. Sed, quantum quidem ego adhuc videre possum, non est ea alacritas in nostris hominibus, quæ nuper in Papistis fuit. Ita miserè comparatum est, ut mendacium armatum sit, velias autem non tantum inermis, verùm etiam sæpe odiosa. Agitur nunc de sacro & scenico apparatu, quæque ego tecum aliquando ridens, ea nunc, à nescio, quibus, nos enim non advocamur in consilium, seriò, & graviter cogitantur, quasi religio Christiana constare non possit sine panni. Nos quidem non ita otiosi sumus ab animo, ut tantè possumus facere istas ineptias. Alii sectantur auream quandam, quæ mihi plumbea potius videtur, mediocritatem: Et clamant, dimidium plus toto. Quidam ex nostris designati sunt Episcopi, Parkerus Cantuariensis, Coxus Norwicensis, Barlovus Cicestrensis, Scoræus Herefordensis, Grindallus Londinensis. Nam Bonerus iussus est cedere: qui quando adituri sint possessionem, nescio. Ego ex isto flore, quod tu de vino soles, facile divino, quæ sit futura vindemia. Adversarii in erim nostri παραψυλακτεσι, & pollicentur sibi, ista non fore perpetua. In Scotia, nescio quid, audimus tumultuatum de religione: Nobiles eiectionis Monachis occupasse Monasteria: Et aliquot milites prædarios Gallos in tumultu occidisse: Reginam iratam edixisse, ut Knoxus concionator inflato cornu, est enim ille in Scotia mos solennis, si quem volint extorrem facere, ex omnibus finibus ejiceretur. Quid de illo factum sit, nescio. Nunc instituitur legatio in totam Angliam de formanda religione. Sandus ibit in Lancastriam: ego in Devoniam: Alii aliò. Regina non vult appellari caput Ecclesiæ, quod mihi certè non displicet. Interim, quid il cavetso de la Caisa cogitet, aut murmuret, aut quas turbas daturus sit, tu quoniam propius abes, facilius audire potest. Papistæ nostri odiosissimè pugnant, neque alii ulli contumacius, quam qui à nobis discesserunt. Tanti est semel gustasse de Missa. Qui bibit inde, furit: Procul hinc dinedite, queis est Mentis cura bonæ: Qui bibit inde, furit: Vident exceptò illò palladio omnia ventura in periculum. Pax inter nos & Gallum ita convenit, ut Caletum, octo post annos redeat in potestatem Anglorum. Quod ut Julius noster credat, opus est incredibili, & robustà fide. Quicquid erit tamen nos eo nomine exspectamus pignora è Gallia. De nuptiis Reginæ adhuc nihil. Tamen ambit hac tempore Suecus, Saxo, Carolus Ferdinandi, Mitto Pikerinum Hominem Anglum. Tamen, quid malim, scio. Et ista sunt ut scio μυσκότερα: Et apud nos proverbii loco dici solet matrimonia esse fatalia. Bene vale, mi Pater, & Domine in Christo Colendissime. Saluta quæso optimum senem D. Bernardinum, D. Muraltum, D. Wolphium meo nomine. Liber tuus, quem Reginæ misisti dono, redditus est à D. Cæcilio: Ad meas manus, nescio quo casu, non pervenit. Ego tamen, quoties sum in aula, diligenter exquiro, numquid illa vel-



lit : Et adhuc nihil audio. Sed quicquid erit, faciam ut intelligas, Londini.

Istæ sunt quintæ, tu vide an aliquæ perierint.

### INSCRIPTIO.

Doctissimo, Viro D. Petro Martyri,  
Professori Sacræ Theologiæ in  
Ecclesia Tigurina, Domino suo  
Colendissimo.

Tiguri.

### Number 53.

*A Declaration made by the Confederate Lords of Scotland,  
to the Queen of England ; of their taking Arms against  
the Queen Dowager of Scotland, and the French.*

Cott. Libr.  
Calig. B. 10.  
Fol 24.

IT may be, that on the *French* Parte it will be saide, that it be-  
hoveth them to subdue the Rebellion in *Scotland* ; and to that  
End only bringe all this Power thither: First it may be, and that  
truly saide, the Begynning and Ground, yea, and the Proceeding hi-  
therto being truly considered, is no Rebellion. For true it is, that  
when the *French* Kyng had long sought to compasse the Yonge  
Queene of *Scotland*, and to have her caryed owt of *Scotland* into  
*Fraunce*, there was great Difficultie made yn it by the *Scots*, and att  
length brought to passe only by the continuall Travayle of the Mo-  
ther, being Dowager Queene ; partly by Corruption with Money, partly  
by Authoritie, partly by fayre Promises ; and yet was the Matter  
thus ended, that before her Person coulde be transported thence, As-  
surance was made by Treaty, by Othe, by Parlement, by the Great  
Seal of *Fraunce*, by the Seal of the *Dolphyn*, that *Scotland* should  
not be otherwyse governed, but by the Lawes, by the Nobilitie, by  
the People of the Land ; that the Offices of the Land shuld remayne  
in the Nation of *Scotland* ; that no Garrisons shuld be kepte by the  
*French*. After that Tyme much Labour and Practise was made by  
the Queene Dowager to procure the Favour of the Nobilitie of *Scot-  
land*, to accomde to the Mariadge of the Queene with the *Dolphyn* ;  
and fynally that obtayned in a Parlement in *Scotland*, and was the  
Crowne assigned to the Queene, and the Heirs of her Body ; and for  
default therof, to the Duke of *Chastellerault*, and his Hires, and so he  
declared

declared the Seconde Person. Then also was on the Parte of *Fraunce*, Othes taken, Chartres delyvered under the Greate Seale of *Fraunce*, and confirmed by the Yong Queene under her Seal, and by the Dolphin under his Seale, that *Scotland* shuld be governed by the Counsaile of the Land; that no Liberties shuld be violated; that *Edinburg* Castell shuld be delyvered to the Lord *Arskin* to be kept, for the Preservation of the Rights of the Realme; and *Dunbritton* Castell shuld be delyvered to the Duke for his Interest as Heyre Apparent. These Things were done, and Duplicats made of the Grants of *Fraunce*. One Parte delyvered to be kept in *Edenburgh* Castell in the Treasury; the other delyvered to the Duke: Hereupon an Ambassade was sent in Anno 1558, of 8 Persons, 2 Bishops, 2 Earles, 4 Lords of *Scotland*, and the Mariadge then concluded in *Fraunce*; which done thur, was attempted that the Ambassade shuld return home, and in Parlement obtayne, at the Yong Queenes Request, that the Crown of *Scotland* might be given to the Dolphin her Husband; which Matter, the Ambassade so much misliked, and utterly refused; alledging that it could never be obtayned; that in the End they were thus abused, yt was devised they should retourne, and procure that a Matrimoniall Crowne shuld be granted to the Kyng: By which Words they weare made believe there was a great difference; and yet they could not lyke the Matter, but required leave to retourne Home, and they would doo that they might. In their Departure at *Deepe*, theyr Nombre was made in one Night sodenly lesse by one Bishop, 2 Erles, and 2 Barons, and so departed Home the other Three, much amased att the Matter. At theyr return, the Dowager Queene practised all the Ways she could in Parlement, to obtayne this Purpose; which she sought by Two Ways, one by rewarding those who had not received Favour of the Duke in the Time of his Governauce, partly for the Favour they bare at that Time to *England*, parte for other Respects; and so sett an Enmitie betwixt the Duke and them. One other way, she offered to certayne of the Lords a Permission to lyve freely accordyng to their Conscience in Religion; and at length she became very stronge, and in Parliament obtained this Matrimoniall Crowne, with these Conditions, that the Duke's Right shuld not be empayred therby. Thus proceeded she towards her Purpose, and daily usurped against the Liberties and Premises made. She spared not to begin with the greatest. She committed to Prison the Chancellor of the Realme, the Erle *Huntley*; being one of the Principal Friends to the Duke. She took a great Fyne of him, and took the Seale from hym; committed that to one *Rubay*, a *Frenchman*, an Advocate of *Paris*. Not content therwith, She committed the sayd Erle to Prison, untill She had put hym to a great Raunsome; which She took of hym: And to flatter hym, gave hym the Name of Chancelor, and put the Office in *Rubay*'s Handes. Nexte to this, She hath taken the Office of the Comptroller of the hole Realme, to whom belonged the Charge of the whole Revenues of the Crowne; and hath also committed it to another *Frenchman*, a Servant of her owne, named *Vulemore*. She hath also sequestred all Matters of Counsaill of the Governauce of the Land, from the *Scottish* Men borne, and retayned all the Secreties to *French* Men. But these weare



but small Thynges, yff greater had not followed. Having Peace with *England*, She kept all the Garrisons of *French* Men still in the Countrey, who lyved upon Discretion; which was a new Offense to *Scotland*. Wages they had none out of *France* at all: The Revenue of the Crowne, which was not greate, was sent into *Fraunce*; and to paye the *French* Band, a new Devise was made. She procured out of *Fraunce* a certayne Nombre of *Franks*, being altogether in a certayne Coyne of *Sowces*, which had bene, for theyr Emtnesse, decried and barred in *Fraunce* Two Yeres before, and were but Bullion: These She made currant in *Scotland*, to paye the Soldiours. She also erected a Mynte, and therein abassed a grete Quantite of the *Scottish* Money, and therewith also payed her Soldiours. In that Mynte also, She permitted certayne of the Principalls of the *French* to Coyne theyr owne Plate, to theyr owne most Advantage: Which Matter both did notable great Hurt in all *Scotland*, and much offended the Realme.

Now follows the Practises of the Queene with diverse Noblemen, to becom Parties agaynst the Duke: Meanes was made, fyist to have wonne the Lord *Arjkin*, to deliver the Castell of *Edenburgh*; next, to have stolen it: But this prevailed not. In this Season, and before also, which had much exasperated the People of the Land, the Queene gave away Abbeyes, that fell voyd, to *French* Men: Som to her Brother, the Cardinal *Guyse*, som to other. And generally, She hath kept in her Hands these Three hole Yeres, almost all the Ecclesiastical Dignities that have fallen voyde; saving such as wer of any Value, which She gave to *French* Men. Generally She governed all Things so, as She never would in any Matter followe the Counsell of the Lordes and Nobilitie, which, at her first Coming to the Regiment, were appoynted to be of Counsell. Agaynst these her Doynge, many Intercessions were made by the Nobilitie, both joyntly together in good Companies, and Advices also gyven aparte, by such as were fory to see that this Governance wold be so dangerous, as it could not be borne: But nothing avayled. And then followed a Practise, of all other most dangerous and strange, and, for a Personage of Honor, a great Indignity. The Principall Matter that was coveted by the Queene, was to have cutt away the Duke, and his House, and to make a Party agaynst hym: By Persuasion, this was devised. The Lord *James*, being a Bastard, Son of the last Kynge, a Man of greate Courage and Wysdom; and certayne Erles and Barons of the Realme; in whom were considered these Two Thynges, No great Love towards the Duke, nor certayne Ceremonies of the Church; and yet being Men of Courage, were borne in Hand by the Queene, that She her selfe wold beare with theyr Devotion in Religion, and upon Condition that they would joyne with her Governauce agaynst the Duke, for the favour or *Fraunce*, they shuld lyve freely according to theyr Conscience in Religion, without any Impedymment. Herupon they were somewhat boldned, and therby incurred the Censures of the Church, and were also, by a private Lawe of the Land, ignorantly in danger of Treason: Whereupon Proceffe was made, they endangered. And then was it Tyme for the Queene to tempt them to forget theyr Country, and become

*French.*

*French.* But when no Inticement could prevayle, then began She to threaten them with the Lawe, and would needs declare them Traytors. This Matter the Queene pursued; taking it for a great Advantage. But, for their Defence, the Nobilitie of the Realme made much Labour. Nothyng would staye the Queene; but forthwith She produced her Garrisons to the Feld, proclaimed them Traytors, gave away their Lands, entred with Men of War in o a principal Towne, called *St. John's Towne*, changing the Provost of the Towne, agaynst the Wyll of the Burgesis; and left there Four Bands of Men of Warre, to fortessie her New Provost. And She synding the whole Realme much offended herwith, and charging her daily with Misgovernance, and Violating the Liberties of the Realm, and her Power there not sufficient to procede, as She ment, to Conquer the Land; She sent for the Duke, and the Erle *Huntley*, and pretended in this Necessitie a new Good Will to them; who travayled for her, and stayed all the adverse Part in Quietness: And then She promised all Matters to be stayed and redressed at Parlement the next Spring: And promised also diverse other Thyngs, for the Benefite of the Land. And then the Duke, and the Erle *Huntley*, tooke upon them to make a Quiet with the adverse Part. And whiles this was in doying, the Duke's Sonne and Heyre was sought and sent for, to the Courte in *Fraunce*: From whence he was certainly advertised by diverse of most secret Knowledge, that his Ruine shuld follow, and that he should be accused, and executed for Matters of Religion. At the length he abode, untill certayne of good Authoritie were depeched from the Court, to bryng hym eyther quick or dead. Before their comming, he escaped, without daunger: And they toke his yonger Brother, a Child, abowt Fifteen Yeres of Age, and commytted him to Prison. In this Tyme, Thyngs being well appeased in *Scotland*, and every Noble Man returned to theyre Countrees, by the Duke's Means principally, who shewed most Favour to the Quene, and had gaged his Fayth to the Nobilitie of *Scotland*, for keping of all Thynges in quiet, untill the Parlement; there arrived certayne Bands of Souldiours out of *Fraunce* into *Leethe*; whose comming made such a Change in the Queene, as She newly caused the Towne of *Leeth* to be fortified, being the principall Porte of the Realme, and placed Twenty two Enseignes of Souldiors, with One Band of Horsemen, therein. Herupon the Nobilitie challenged the Duke: Who had nothing to saye; but entreated the Queen, by his most humble Letters, to forbear these mannor of Doings; wherein he could not prevayle. The Force of the *French* was then encreased, *Leeth* fortified, all Ammunition carried into the Towne, nothyng left to the *Scotts*, whereby either well to defend themselves, or to annoye the Towne. Beside this, out of *Fraunce* there came dayly *French* Powre by Sea; yea ther went allso, not denyed by the Queen's Majestie of *England*, Captayns by Land through *England*. Well, at the Length, the Duke, and all the Nobilitie, made new Intercession by theyr Letters, that She would forbear this Fortification: For otherwyse her Purpose of Conquest wou'd appeare to the wole Realm; wher-



upon would grow great Diquiet. But her Comfort grew to greater out of *France*, that She despised all Requestes. And thus came the Matter to the Termes which the *French* courted: For now thought they it would be but 3 or 4 Dayes Work to subdue *Scotland*: Whereunto nevertheless besydes theyre owne Powre, She entreatyned Two or Three meane Lords, such as lay betwyxt *Leeth* and *Barwick*, which was the Erle *Bothwell*, and Lord *Setan*, who be the only Two, of all the Nobilitie of *Scotland*, that keepeth Company with the Queen; and yet, as they do notify themselves by their Doyngs, and the rest of the Nobilitie, with the Barons and Burgeses of the Realme, synding no Hope of Remedy at her Hands, but perceyving an eminent Danger to the Realme, which could not be avoyded by any Entreaty, assembled themselves, as regrating the afflicted Realme. They began depely to consyder, on the one Part, the Right of their Sovereign Lady, being married to a Strange Prince, and out of her Realme, in the Hands of *Frenchmen* only, without Counsell of her own Natural People; and therwith the Mortalitie of her Husband, or of her self, before She cold have Issue: And on the other Side, what the Dowager, being a *French* Woman, Systar to the House which ruleth all in *France*, had done, attempted, and dayly persisted in ruining unnaturally the Liberties of her Daughter, the Queen's Subjects, for Ambition, to knite that Realme perpetually to *France*, whatsoever becam of her Daughter; and so to execute ther old Malace upon *England*, the Stile and Title wherof they had already usurped; were in the end constrainned to constitute a Councyle, for the Governauce of the Realme, to the Use of theyr Sovereyn Lady: and therwith humbly to signifie to her the reasonable Suspension of the Dowager's Authoritie; which to mayntayn, they have of themselves, as Naturall Subjects, convenient Strenght, being fore oppressed with the *French* Powre; which untill this presant Day they do, as theyr Powers can endure; being very mean and unable that to do, compared to the meanest Force of *France*: So as although they have been of long Tyme occasioned thus to doe; and now for Safety, as well of theyr Sovereign's Right, as of the Ancient Right of the Crown, have been forced to spend all ther Substance, to hazard theyr Lives, theyr Wifes and Children, and Country: Yet can they not longer preserve themselves and the Realm from Conquest, by this Power that is now arrived in *Scotland*, and is in Readines to be sent thither before next Spring. And therefore they have communicated their hole Cause to certayn of the Queen's Majesties Ministers upon the Borders, and seek all the Ways they can, how they might, without Offence of hir Majesty, committ theyr Just and Honorable Cause to the Protection of hir Majesty, onely, requiring this, That theyr Realme may be saved from the Conquest by *France*, and the Right of theyr Sovereign Lady preserved, with all other Rights of their Nation of *Scotland* depending thereupon.

August, 1559.

*The Petition of the Lords of Scotland signed with there own Hands.*

WE desire yat he hall nommeris of *Frenchmen* of weir being presentlie within yis Realme, may be removed with speed; that we may in Tymes coming leif quyetlie without feir of thair trouble.

*Item*, That we may haif Place to sute of the King and Queen our Sovereignis lyk Articlis as ar necessarie for us, for Pacification and Perfect Government of the Realm without Alteration of our Anteaunt Liberties.

\* The Earl of *Aran* always signs thus, for the Title of *Aran* was in his Father at that Time.

\* *James Hamilton.*

*Ard. Argyll.*

*Glencarn.*

\* This seems to be the Lord *James*, afterwards made Earl of *Murray*.

\* *James Stewart.*

† *Alex. Gordon.*

† The Earl of *Huntley's* Son.

\* *John.*

\* Cannot be read.

*R. Boyd.*

*Uchiltre.*

*John Maxwell.*

*Ruthuen.*

\* Probably the Earl of *Atholl's* Son.

\* *James Stewart.*

### Number 54.

*A short Discussion of the Weighty Matters of Scotland,*  
Aug. 1559.

*In Sir W. Cecyll's Hand.*

Question, Whether it be mete that *England* should helpe the Nobilitie, and Protestants of *Scotland*, to expell the *French*:  
or no?

*Cott. Libr.*  
*Calig. B. 10.*

That



## That No.

- I. It is against God's Law to ayd any Subjects against their Naturall Prince, or their Ministers.
- II. It is dangerouse to doo it; for if the Ayd shal be no other than may be kept in Secretie, it cannot be great; and so consequently it shall not suffice. If it shall be open, it will procure Warres, and the End therof is uncertain.
- III. It maye be dowted that when Money spent is, and Aide shall be given, the *French* maye Compownd with the *Scottes*, and Pardon that Error, to joyne both in Force ageynst *England*; which is more easy to be beleved, because they had rather make a shamesfull Composition with *Scotland*, than suffer it to be rejoyned, and united to the Crown of *England*.
- IV. It may be dowbted, that to staye the Progres of Religion, ageynst the See of *Rome*, the Emperor, the King Catholicke, the Pope, and the Potentates in *Italy*, the Duke of *Savoie*, will rather conspyre with the *French* King, than to suffer theis Two Monarchies to be joined in one Manner of Religion. And in this Part may be dowted that many, aswell *Scottes*, as *English*, that can lyke very well to have these Two Kingdomes perfectly knitt in Amyttee, will not allowe them to be knitt in a lyke Religion.

## That Yea.

- I. First, It is agreeable, both to the Law of God, and Nature, that every Prynce, and Publyck State, shuld defend it self; not only from Perrills presently sene, but from Dangers that be probably sene to come shortly after.
- II. Secondly, Nature and Reason teacheth every Person, Politick, or other, to use the same Manner of Defence, that the Adversary useth in Offence.

Uppon theis Two Prynciplees agreed will evidently follow,  
that *England* both maye, and ought to Ayde *Scotland* to  
kepe owt the *French*.

1. First. The Crowne of *England* hath a good Title to the Superiory of *Scotland*; and owght to defend the Libertyes thereof, as Themperor is bound to defend the State of *Millane*, or of *Bobeme*, being held of the Emperre. And to prove this Superiory, remayne undowted Prooffes under Seale, of sondry Homagees done to this Crowne by the Kings of *Scotland* successively, Of their Accesses to the Parlements of *England*, Of the Episcopall Jurisdiction of the See

of *York* over *Scotland*: In Consideration wherof, if it may appere that the *French* meane to subdue *Scotland*, and so to exempt that Realme from the Amytye of *England*, it semeth that *England* is of Duety, and in Honour bound to preserve the Realme of *Scotland* from such an Absolute Dominion of the *French*.

2. *Item*, Beside this Interest that *England* hath in the Crowne of *Scotland*, for the quiet Possession, whereas *France* hath onely by there Warres kept the Realme of *England* \*. It is most manifest that *France* A Word seems wanting; probably, in Danger. cannot any wise so redely, so puissantly, so easely, offend, yea, invade, and put the Crown of *England* in Daunger, as if they may recover an absolute Authorite over *Scotland*: And before that be proved, it semeth not out of Order, though not very nedefull to make manifest that the *French* ar to be taken as Enemyes in Will, though not in manifest Words.

How long Time they have bene Enemyes to *England*, how brickle, how false, how double ther Pactts of Peace have bene, the Storyes be Witnesse, theis Seven Hondred Yeres. Was there ever King of *England*, with whom they have not made Warres? And now of late, uppon what Occasion they made Peace with *England*, is too manifest. It was by reason of Wearynes and Poverty, which was such, as the late *French* King forboare not to expresse in his Letters to the Queen of *England*, mentioning the Invasions made in *Brytaine* by Sea. And indede this is to be received as a Principle, that *France* cannot be poor above One or Two Yeres, nether can so long be out of Wars. The Revenues of the *French* Crown, are Tynge unknown: The Insolency of the *French* Nation, being in Hope of Victory, is not unknown. The long old Hatred of the House of *Guise*, which now occupyeth the Kyng's Authorite, agaynst *England* hath been often well understood.

And to come nerer to the Matter; it is manifest many wayes what manner a Platt that House hath made, to bereave the Queen's Majesty of hir Crowne. In Queen *Mary's* Tyme, the *French* did not let to divulge ther Opinions agaynst this Lawful Title of the Queen's Majesty; and as it was well knowen, had not Almighty God favored the Queen's Majesty to come to the Crowne with such universall Joy of hir People, the *French* had proclaimed ther Title both in *France* and *Scotland*.

And likewise in the Treaty of the Peace at *Chasteau* in *Cambresis*, it appeared what they would have compassed, when they pressed the *Burgundians* to conclude with them, and over-pass the Treaty with *England*; alledging, that they could not tell how to Treat with *England*, but to the Prejudice of ther Right; the Dauphiness, his Daughter, then having Right to the Crown of *England*. How bold they wold have been, if at that tyme She had been Queen of *France*, and her Husband King, as he now is? For then the Wisdom of the Constable governed the Rashness of the *Guisians*.

Since the Peace concluded, whilst the *French* King lived, what Means they made at *Rome* to have made the Queen's Majesty to be declared Illegitimate, is manifest; and so as it is known that the same Sentence is brought into *France*, under the Pope's Bulls: Likewise, at the Confirmation of the Peace betwixt *Spain* and *France*, at



the Solemnities even when the *French* King was slayne, it appereth, what manifest Injurye and Dishonour they did to the Queen's Majesty, to assign the Arms of *England* and *Ireland* to the *French* Queen, and that in all their Pageants : And being admonished thereof by the Ambassador, wold nether make Collorable Excuse, nor leave it ; but both continued therein, and also to despise the Queen's Majesty's Ambassador, and Ratification of the Peace with the Stile, *M. Meilas* serv'd them with Silver Vessell stamped with the same usurped Armes. How lightly they have esteemed the Queen's Majesty, in all this Tyme appereth: For here they be bound by Treaty to deliver 4 Hostages, notwithstanding that they have been pressed therto, they have sent but Three ; wherof One or Two be such, as if they had not been here ; but whether the Queens Majestie had not suffered the Dishonour, to have one of her Subjects murdered, and no Redress therof, but as it appered when they had committed the Murder, they disdained, and quarrelled against such as did but seke to understand the Offenders.

Now the very Cause why they stay the Prosecution hereof is this, their Interruption and Parboylls unlooked for in *Scotland*, which doth so occupy them as they nether can ne dare to utter ther former Maliciose Purpose untill that be ended.

But surely besid there old Cankered Malyce to this Realm, this Matter so inflameth the House of *Guise*, that they will not forbear one Day longer than of mere necessity they shall be constreyned, to bord this Realm with that fayned Tytle, and to avance the same. It is knowen that they have sent a great Seale into *Scotland* with the Armes, and very Stile and Title of *England* and *Ireland*, and what more manefest Arguments can be to shew what they mean aud intend then these. In Princes Practices it is mere Childeishness to tarry until the Practices be set abrode, for then were it as good to tarry till the Trumpet sound Wars. All Things have there Causes precedeing before, but nothing hath his Causes precedeing more secretly than the Practices of Princes ; and of all other none is so conning as the *French*.

It followeth to be considered, that now the *French* have no convenient way to Invade *England* but by *Scotland* ; by *Carlisle* they were accustomed, by Sea is not so convenient for them, the same being too chargeable for them to assaile : Wherefore if it be sene that they will persue their Purpose and that by *Scotland*, then Reason must force *England*, to confesse that to avoyde this Danger so apparant, can no way be devised, but to help that the *French* have not such Rule and Overhand in *Scotland* as that they may by that Realm invade *England*.

Lastly, It is to be considered how dangerouse it is for *England* to be invaded by the way of *Scotland*.

First, If the *French* shall present to *England* a Battle, either they will do it with Strangers, or *French* and Strangers : If they win, which God forbid, they put in hazard this Crown. And though they Lese, yet do they not put there own Kingdom of *France* in Danger. And therefore it is double the Danger for *England*, to venter Battle upon the Frontiers of *England*, to a Battle upon the Marches of *Calais*, or *Bulloyness*. A

## A Conclusion.

It seemeth the weightiest Matter to be considered, that either hath, or can chance to *England*, What is presently to be done for the Aid of *Scotland*: For if it shuld be nedeful the Delay will adventure the Whole: And if Loss come, it is unrecoverable. Wherefore it were good that the Cause were well and secretly weighted: First, by Discreet and Wise Men, that have Experience, affected to the *English* Nation, special Love to the Queens Majesties Person; and that done, to send by some Colour for the Nobilitie, and to consult with them, or ells to send some trusty Persons with Credit to understand their Minds.

---

## Number 55.

*The Bond of Association, with this Title, Ane Contract of the Lords and Barons, to defend the Liberty of the Evangell of Christ.*

*Copied from the Original at Hamilton.*

**A**T *Edinburgh*, the Twintie seventh of *Apryll*, the Year of God Ane thousand Fyve hundred Threescore Years: We whaes Names are underwritten, haif promittit and obliedged our selves faithfully, in the Presence of our God, and be thir Presents promitts, that we altogether in General, and every one of us in Special, be himself, with our Bodies, Goods, Friends, and all that we may do, fall set forwart the Reformation of Religion, according to Goddes Worde; and procure, be all Means possible, that the true Preaching of Goddes Word, may haif free Passage within this Realme, with dew Administration of the Sacraments, and all Things depending upon the said Worde. And sicklyke deiply weighing with our selves the Misbehaviour of the *Franch* Ministers heir, the intolerable Oppressions committed be the *Franchmen* of Weir, upon the pair Subjects of this Realme, be Maintenance of the Queen Dowriare, under Collour and Pretence of Authority; the Tyranny of their Captains and Leaders, and manifest Danger of Conqueist, in whilk this Countrie presently stands; be Reason of diverse Fortifications on the Sea-Coast, and other Novelties of late attemptat be them; promitts that we fall al weel every one with others, as altogether with the Queen of *England*'s Armie, presently come in for our Deliverance, effectually concurr and joyn together, taking one fold and plain Part of the Expulsion of the said Strayngars, Oppressors of our Liberty, furth of this Realme, and Recovery of our Ancient Freedomes and Liberties; to the end in Tyme coming, we may, under the Obedience  
of



of our King and Queen our Soverains, be only Reulyt be the Laws and Customes of the Countrie, and by the Men of the Land: And that never any of us all haiff pryvy Intelligence, be Writing, or Message, or Communication, with any of our said Enemys or Adversars in this Cause, bot be the Advyce of the rest, at leist of Fyve of our Numbers: Attour, that we fall tender this present Cause, as if it were the Cause of every one of us in particular; and that the Cause of every one of us now joynd together, being leiful and honest, shall be all our Causes in General. And he that is Enemy to the Cause forsaid, fall be Enemy to us all: In so far, that whatfomever Person will plainly resist thir our Godly Interpryfis, and will not concurr as ane guid Member of this Common Weill; we fall fortify the Authority of the Counsell, to reduce them to their Deuty: Lyke as we fall fortify the said Authority of the Counsale, in all Things tending to the Furtherance of the said Cause. And giff any particular Debate, Quarrel or Contraversee fall aryse, for whatfomever Cause, bygain, present or to come, betwixt any of us; (as God forbid) in that Case, we fall submit our selves, and our said Questions, to the Decision of the Counsale, or to Arbitrators, to be named be them. Provyding allwayes, that this be not prejudicial to the ordinar Jurisdiction of Judges: But that Men may persue their Actions by Ordour of Law, Civilly or Criminally, befor the Judges Ordinars, gif they please.

---

Number 56.

*A Letter of Jewell's to Peter Martyr, setting forth the Progress that Superstition had made in Queen Mary's Reign.*

Juellus ad Martyrem.

S P.

*Ex MSS.  
Figur.*

**T**Andem tamen aliquando Londinum redij, confecto molestissimo itinere, confecto corpore. Tu fortasse me, quòd nihil scriberem, putabas esse mortuum. Ego verò interea tres totos menses longinqua, & perdifficili Legatione distinebar. Cum essem Bristolij, redditæ mihi sunt Literæ tuæ, quas secum Randolphus noster adduxerat: ita amicè scriptæ, itaq; suaves, ut mihi omnem illam molestiam itinerum, atque occupationum prorsus exciperent ex Animo. Tanquam enim si præsens adfuisses, ita tum mihi videbar tecum colloqui. Randolphus, antequam ego redirem, abierat in Gallias: Itaque ego miser, privatus sum bona parte suavitatis tuæ, quam tu illi præsens præsentì verbis commendaveras. Literas meas in itinere intercidiisse, video: Quas enim ego octavas dederam, eas video ad te vix quintas perve-

pervenisse. Sed de Legatione, inquires, illa vestra quid tandem factum est? Accipe ergo uno verbo, quod mihi exploratu perlongum fuit. Invenimus ubique animos Multitudinis satis propensos ad Religionem; ibi etiam, ubi omnia putabantur fore difficillima. Incredibile tamen dictu est, in illis tenebris Mariani temporis, quanta ubique proruperit Seges, & Sylva Superstitionum. Invenimus passim votivas Reliquias superstitionis Divorum, clavos, quibus fatui Christum confixum fuisse somniabant; &, nescio quas, Portiunculas Sacrae Crucis. Magarum & veneficarum numerus ubique in immensum excreverat. Ecclesiae Cathedrales nihil aliud erant, quam speluncae latronum, aut si quid nequius, aut saevius dici potest. Si quid erat obstinatae malitiae, id totum erat in Presbyteris, illis praesertim, qui aliquando stetissent à nostra Sententia. Illi nunc, credo, ne parum confidera è videantur mutasse voluntatem, turbant omnia: Sed turbent, quam velint. Nos tamen interim, illos de gradu, & de Sacerdotiis exturbavimus. Hardingus, Homo constans, locum mutare maluit, quam sententiam. Sidallus subscripsit quidem, sed constanter; hoc est, per invitum. Smithæus autem tuus; quid ille? inquires. An potest à Nazareth quicquam proficisci boni? Mihi crede, ut veterem illam suam Constantiam retineret, nunc tandem etiam quinto recantavit. Fatus, cum videret Religionem esse immutatam, mutata veste, statim fugam ornaverat in Scotiam. Sed cum hæreret in finibus, captus est, & retractus ex itinere. Ibi statim Homo gravis, & Columnen atque Antistes Religionis, accessit ad nos, reliquit omnes suos, & repente factus est Adversarius infestissimus Papistarum. I nunc, & nega Transubstantiationem. Papistarum acies penè sua sponte ceciderunt. O, nisi nobis deesset operæ, non malè de Religione sperari posset. Difficile enim est currum agere sine jumento, praesertim adverso monte. Heri, ubi primùm Londinum redij, audi vi ex Episcopo Cantuariensi, te invitari ad nos, & tibi Lectionem illam tuam veterem asservari. Quid sit, nescio: Hoc tantum possum affirmare, neminem adhuc delectum esse, qui Oxonij doceat sacras Literas. Equidem te, mi Pater, videre percipio, & praesertim in Anglia. Quid enim ni cupiam, quem toties cupio etiam nunc videre Tiguri? Sed novi tuam Prudentiam: Nosti Genium, & Ingenium Insularum. Ea, quæ nunc videmus, esse inchoata, utinam sint boni Principia. Nihil est hodie illâ Scholiâ desperatius. Putabis te, cum ibi esses, pene lussisse operam: Ita in latissima aliquando Segite, nunc infelix Lolium, & steriles dominantur avenæ. Liber tuus de Votis, ut alia tua omnia, avidissimè distrahitur. Omnes nunc expectamus, quam mox editurus sis alias Commentationes in Librum Judicum, & in duos Libros Samuelis. Omnes enim nunc nostri sciunt, te illos Libros habere præ manibus, & velle edere. Suecus, & Carolus Ferdinandi F. mirificissimè ambiunt. Sed Suecus impensè: Ille enim, modo impetret, montes argenteos pollicetur. Sed illa fortasse Thalamos propiores cogitat. Alanus noster obiit diem suum, postquam designatus esset Episcopus Rossensis. Ex Scotiâ hoc tempore nihil audimus, quod tibi possit videre novum. Docetur Evangelium, Ecclesiae assidue colliguntur, & omnia priscae Superstitionis Monumenta convelluntur. Galli tamen sperant, se posse & Regnum, & Religionem re-



tinere. Quicquid futurum est, scribam ad te aliàs pluribus. Instat nunc Annus sexagesimus, de quò mihi tu solebas aliquando ex Torquato quodam Stato, nescio quæ, mirifica prædicare. Faxit Deus, ut verum & solidum Gaudium gaudeamus, ut aliquando Oibi terrarum patefiat ὁ ἄνθρωπος τῆς ἀπολείας, & in omnium oculos incurrat Evangelij Jesu Christi Veritas. Vale, mi Pater, & Uxorem tuam meis verbis resaluta, Mulierem mihi quidem ignotam, sed nunc ex tuis Literis, & Abeli nostri Prædicatione, notissimam. Gratulor & te illi, & illam tibi.

Saluta D. Bullingerum, D. Gualterum, D. Bernardinum, D. Hermannum, Julium, Juliam, Martyrillum. Frenshamum meum longum valere jubeo. Puto enim illum jam solvisse à vobis, & esse cum Christo. Omnes nostri te salutant, tibi que omnia precantur. Londini, 2 Novembr. 1559.

Tuus ex Animo,

*Jo. Juellus.*

D. Etonus instantissimè rogavit, ut te suo Nomine salutarem. Si posset ipse Latinè scribere, non uteretur manu mea. Crede mihi, Nemo de te aut sæpius, aut honorificentius loquitur. Uxor etiam ejus Salutem, & tibi dicit, & Uxori tuæ.

### INSCRIPTIO.

Doctissimo atque Ornatissimo Viro,  
D. Petro Martyri, profitenti Sacras Scripturas in Ecclesia Tigurina.

### Number 57.

*A Letter of Jewell's to Peter Martyr, concerning the Earnestness of some about Vestments and Rituals.*

Idem ad Eundem.

Ex MSS.  
Tigur.

**B**Iduo, postquam ex longo & perdifficili itinere rediissem, & lassus de via, atq; anhelans, nescio quid, ad te scripsissem, redditæ mihi sunt à te literæ ternæ eodem tempore: Quarum suavissimâ lectione ita sum exhilaratus, ut omnem illam superiorum dierum molestiam prorsus abiecerim ex animo. Etsi enim quoties de te cogito, quod certò assidue, & in singulas Horas facio, & nisi facerem,

rem, ingratus essem, ipsa cogitatione, & memoriâ tui nominis perfundor gaudio, tamen cum literas tuas ad me scriptas lego videor mihi esse Tiguri, & te videre coram, & tecum amantissimè colloqui: Quod equidem, mihi crede, pluris aestimo, quam omnes opes Episcoporum. De Religione quod scribis, & veste scenica, ô utinam id impetrari potuisset. Nos quidem tam bonæ causæ non defuimus. Sed illi, quibus ista tantopere placuerunt, credo, sequuti sunt inscitiam presbyterorum: Quos, quoniam nihil aliud videbant esse, quam stipites, sine ingenio, sine doctrina, sine moribus, veste saltem comica volabant populo commendari. Nam ut alantur bonæ literæ, & surrogetur seges aliqua doctorum hominum, nulla, ô Deus bone, nulla hoc tempore cura suscipitur. Itaque quoniam vera via non possunt, istis ludicris ineptiis teneri volunt oculos multitudinis. Sunt quidem istæ, ut tu optimè scribis reliquæ Amorehæcorum. Quis enim id neget? Atque utinam aliquando ab imis radicibus auferri, & extirpari possint, nostræ quidam nec vices ad eam rem, nec voces deerunt. Quod scribis esse quosdam, qui nullam adhuc significationem dederint suæ erga te voluntatis, subolfacio equidem quos dicas. Sed, mihi crede, non sunt eo numero, aut loco, quô tu fortasse putas, quoque omnis Israel illos sperabat fore. Nam si essent. Non scripserunt hætenus ad te, non quod noluerint, aut tui ciliati fuerint, sed quod puduerit scribere, nunc uterque laborat gravissimè, è quartana, sed Ἀρχιμωβρος, quoniam est naturâ tristiori, multò gravius. Ingemuisti, pro tua erga communem causam pietate; cum audires nihil prospectum esse cuiquam nostrum. Nunc ergo rursus ingeme. Nam ne adhuc quidem quicquam. Tantum circumferimus inanes titulos Episcoporum, & à Scoto, & Thoma defecimus ad Occamistas & Nominales. Sed, ut scis, magna sunt momenta regnorum. Regina ipsa & causæ favet, & nobis cupit. Quamobrem, etsi satis dura sunt ista initia, tamen non abjicimus animos, nec desinimus sperare lætiora. Facile intereunt, quæ facile maturitatem assequuntur. De Libro tuo, memini me, antequam discederem Londino, ad te scripsisse pluribus. Sed illæ literæ, fortasse, ut fit, periere in itinere. Hoc etiam adscripsi, Reginam ultro & cupidè legisse, Epistolam, & apud ipsam, atque in universum doctrinam, atque ingenium tuum mirificè prædicasse: Librumque illum tuum ab omnibus bonis tanti fieri, quanti haud scio an aliud quicquam in hoc genere. Nihil autem tibi hætenus donatum esse, hei mihi, quod ego dicam? Pudet me, nec scio, quid respondeam. Tamen Regina scdulo sciscitata est nuntium, quid ageres, ubi viveres, quâ valetudine, quâ conditione esses, an posses per ætatem iter facere. Omnino velle se omnibus modis te invitari in Angliam, ut, qui tua voce coluisses Academiam, eandem nunc dissipatam, & miserè habitam eadem voce irigares. Postea tamen, nescio quo pacto, Deliberationes Saxonicae, & Legationes Segulianæ ista Consilia peremerunt. Tamen quidquid est, nihil est hoc tempore celebrius, quam Petrum Martyrem invitari, & propediem venturum esse in Anglam. ô Utinam res nostræ aliquando stabilitatem aliquam, & robur assequantur. Cupio enim, mi Pater, te videre, & suavissimis Sermonibus, & amicissimis Consiliis tuis frui. Quem ego diem si videro, vel potius, uti spero, ubi videro quas Samarabrinas, aut Sarisburias non contemnami? Vale dulce decus meum, atque animi plusquam dimidium mei. Salu-



ta uxorem tuam optimam mulierem meo nomine. Deus faxit, ut feliciter pariat, & pulchra faciat te prole Parentem. Saluta D. Bullingerum, D. Gualterum, D. Lavaterum, D. Simlerum, D. Gesnerum, D. Frisium, Julium, Juliam, & Martyrillum, D. Hermanum tuum, meumque. Nostri omnes te salutant. Londini 5 Novemb. 1559.

Tuus ex animo quantus quantus,

Jo. Juellus.

## INSCRIPTIO.

*Doctissimo atque Ornatissimo Viro,  
D. Petro Martyri, profitenti sa-  
cras literas in Schola Tigurinâ  
Domino suo Colendissimo.*

*Tiguri.*

## Number 58.

*A Letter of Jewell's to Peter Martyr, full of Apprehensions.*

Ejusdem ad Eundem.

S. P.

**E**T S I ante non ita multos dies ad te scripserim, & hoc tempore nihil hic fit, quod tu magnopere scire velis, tamen, quoniam te ita velle non dubito, illud ipsum, nihil malo scribere, quam istum nuntium, quem fortè audieram velle Coloniam proficisci, inanem à me dimittere. Religio apud nos eo loco est, quo jam antea ad te scripsi sæpius. Omnia docentur ubique purissimè. In ceremoniis & larvis passim plusculum ineptitur. Crucula illa argenteola malè nata, malè auspicata, adhuc stat in larario Principis. Me miserum: Res ea facile trahetur in exemplum. Spes erat aliquando tandem ereptum iri. Idque ut fieret, nos omnes dedimus diligentur, & adhuc damus operam. Sed jam quantum video conclamatum est. Ita prorsus obfirmati sunt animi. Nimis prudenter ista mihi videntur geri, nimisq; mysticè. Et quo tandem res nostræ casuræ sint, Deus viderit. Ἰπποβορᾶδες morantur currum. Cæcilius causæ nostræ impensè favit. Episcopi adhuc designati tantum sunt: Interim prædia pulchrè augent fiscum.

fiscum. Academia utraque, & ea præsertim, quam tu non ita pridem doctissimè atq; optime coluisti, miserrimè nunc disjecta jacet, sine Pietate, sine Religione, sine Doctore, sine spe ulla Literarum. Multi de te cogitant primarii, & tibi non ignoti viri, & te primo quoque tempore, vel invitis omnibus Seguleiis, accersitum cupiunt. Ego vero, qui tibi, si quis alius mortalium, & animo, atq; unicè cupio, author sum, ut si voceris, quod tamen inter ista arma futurum vix puto, tamen ne quid præcipites. Novi ego Prudentiam tuam: Et tu vicissim, spero, Observantiam erga te meum. Equidem hoc possum verè affirmare, neminem esse Hominem, cui conspectus tuus jucundior futurus sit; quam mihi. Tamen, ut sunt res nostræ fluxæ, incertæ, instabiles, utque uno verbo dicam, insulares, magis te saluum audire absentem cupio, quàm præsentem videre cum periculo. Sed ista parùm opportunè. Literas enim filere æquum est inter arma. Nos terra mariq; juvamus vicinum Scotum. Nôsti enim, Tùm tua res agitur paries cùm proximus ardet. Gallum adventurum aiunt cum omnibus copiis. Et fortassè non minoribus excipietur. Londini 16 Novemb. 1559.

*Jo. Juellus,*

Totus tuus.

Istæ sunt Nonæ.

## INSCRIPTIO,

Ornatissimo & longè Doctissimo Viro,  
D. Petro Martyri, profitenti Sacras  
Scripturas in Schola Tigurina, Domino suo Colendissimo.

*Tiguri.*

Number 59.

*The Queen's Letter to the Emperor, concerning her Aversion to Marriage.*

*An Original.*

**N**OS, in ipsius animi nostri sensus diligentur inquirendo, non <sup>Paper-Office.</sup> Invenimus in nobis Voluntatem ullam deserendi hanc Solitariam Vitam, sed potiùs, juvante Deo, libentem animi Inductionem in eadem diùtius porro vita perseverandi: nos certè necessario ob eam ipsam causam eo in his literis utemur sermone, qui cum corde nostro omnino consentiat, quem ut amanter accipiet, & benevale interpretetur



vestra Majestas, admodum rogamus. In quo nostro sermone, si novum aliquid inesse videatur, quod facile potest accidere, si ætas nostra cum reliquis conditionis nostræ rationibus consideretur. Nullum tamen nos novum hoc tempore, aut subitum Consilium suscipere, sed vetus potitus retinere videri jure debemus; cum tempus quidem fuit, quo tempore consensisse ad præclar sane & honorata Connubia eripere nos potuisset, è certis quibusdam magnis mæroribus & periculis: De quibus rebus non amplius dicemus; nos tamen nec discriminis mala, nec libertatis cupiditate moveri potuimus, ut animi nostri Voluntatem ullo modo ad eam rem adduceremus. Itaque haud volumus, vel aperte recusando videri, Vestram Majestatem offendere, vel contra, occasionem dando id verbis concedere, quod mente & voluntate non instituimus.

5 Januarii, 1559.

Vestrae Majestatis bona Soror

& Consanguinea,

ELISABETHA R.

R. Ascamus.

---

Number 60.

*A Letter of Bishop Jewel's to Peter Martyr, concerning the Cross in the Queen's Chapel.*

Ejusdem ad Eundem.

S. P.

**O**Mni Pater, quid ego ad scribam? Rei non multum est, temporis verò multò minus; sed quoniam te scio delectari brevitate, te authore scribam brevius. Nunc ardet L's illa Crucularia. Vix credas in re fatua quantum homines, qui sapere aliquid videbantur, insaniunt. Ex illis, quos quidem tu noris, præter Coxum, nullus est. Crastino die instituetur de ea re Disputatio. Arbitri erunt è Senatu selecti quidam viri. Actores inde Cantuariensis & Coxus; hinc Grindallus Londinensis Episcopus, & ego. Eventus ἐν κριτῶν γένει κριταί. Rideo tamen, cum cogito, quibus illi, & quam gravibus, ac solidis rationibus defensori sint suam Cruculam. Sed quicquid erit, scribam posthac pluribus. Nunc enim, sub judice lis est; tamen quantum auguror, non scribam posthac ad te Episcopus. Εὐὲ ἐγὼ jam res pervenit,

pervenit, ut aut Cruces argenteæ & stanneæ, quas nos ubique confregimus, restituendæ sint, aut Episcopatus relinquendi.

Sed quid ago? destituor tempore, & obruor negotiis, & invitus cogor finem facere. Tamen hoc scire debes, Vitum, amicum tuum summum, & popularem Episcopum Vintoniensem, & Oglethorpum Carliolensem, & Bainum Litchfildensem, & Tonstallum Saturnum Dunelmensem, ante aliquot dies esse mortuos. Samsonus ruri agit longè gentium; Parkurstus in Regno suo. Itaque mirum videri non debet, si ad vos scribant infrequentius.

Saluta, quæso, Reverendissimum Patrem D. Bullingerum, D. Bernardinum, D. Wolphium, D. Hermannum, & Julium: Ad quos ego omnes libenter scriberem hoc tempore, si esset otium. Saluto optimam illam Mulierem, Uxorem tuam, & Ancam, & Martyrillum tuum. Etonus, Etona, Abelus, Abela, Grindallus, Sandus, Scoræus, Falconerus, Elmenus, te salutant, & cùm tibi omnia cupiunt, nihil magis cupiunt, quàm Angliam. Quanquam, ut adhuc sunt Res nostræ, crede mihi, pulchrum est esse Tiguri. Benè vale, mi Pater, benè vale. Londini, 4 Februarij 1560.

Tibi Deditissimus,

Jo. Juellus tuus.

## INSCRIPTIO.

Doctissimo Viro D. Petro Martyri,  
Vermilio, profitenti Sacras Li-  
teras in Schola Tigurina, Domi-  
no suo Colendissimo.

Tiguri.

## Number 61.

*A Letter of Bishop Sands, expressing the Uneasiness he was in, by Reason of the Idol in the Queen's Chapel.*

Edwinus Wigornensis ad Martyrem.

Salutem in Christo.

**Q**UOD nullas tam diu, Vir Reverende, Literas ad te dederim, non officij quidem erga te mei oblitus, aut quid tua de me mereatur Humanitas leviter perpendens, id feci, sed negotiorum multitudine obrutus, scribendi munus pro tempore invitus intermisi, quod cum  
Tabel.



Tabellarij jam sese offert opportunitas, diutius differendum non cen-  
 seo. Sub Augusti initium, cum Literas ad te dedissem, in partes An-  
 glia boreales, ad abusus Ecclesiae tollendas, & Ritus Pietati & verae  
 Religioni consonantes, eidem restituendos, tanquam Inspector & Visi-  
 tator, ut vocant, cum Principis Mandato dimissus; & illic ad No-  
 vembris usque initium, assidue in obeundo quod mihi creditum erat  
 munere, non sine maximis cum Corporis tum Animi Laboribus versa-  
 tus, Londinum tandem redij. Ubi novae rursus Curae advenientem  
 acceperunt, majorque negotiorum moles humeros premebat: Opera  
 enim mea in Episcopatu Wigornienfi administrando à Principe requi-  
 rebatur, tandemque reluctanti, Episcopi munus imponitur. Volui  
 quidem ut antea Carliolensem, ad quem nominatus eram, hunc etiam  
 Episcopatum omnino recusare; at id non licuit, nisi & Principis In-  
 dignationem mihi procurare, & Christi Ecclesiam quodammodo dese-  
 rere voluissem. Sub hac, Literas tuas, omni humanitate plenissimas,  
 Burcherus mihi tradidit; quibus, per eundem, quem hinc discederet,  
 respondere distuli; partim, quod Res Anglicae tum temporis non ita  
 mutatae, sed in eodem quasi gradu consistentes, exiguae scribendi  
 materiam suppeditabant; partim verò, quod novum illud Onus (sic  
 enim veriùs quam Honos dici potest) novis Curis & Negotiis me mi-  
 rum in modum distrahebat. En diuturni Silentij mei causam habes,  
 Vir plurimum observande. Eucharistiae Doctrina hactenus Dei Be-  
 neficio non impugnata, nobis salva & incolumis manet, mansuramq;  
 speramus. Pro viribus enim & ipse, & alij Fratres Co-episcopi, illam  
 quoad vixerimus, Deo juvante tuebimur. Deo Imaginibus, jampridem  
 nonnihil erat Controversiae. R. Majestas, non alienum esse à Verbo  
 Dei, immo in commodum Ecclesiae fore putabat, si Imago Christi cru-  
 cifixi, una cum Maria & Joanne, ut tales, in celebriori Ecclesiae lo-  
 co poneretur, ubi ab omni Populo facillimè conspiceretur. Quidem  
 ex nobis longè aliter judicabant; praesertim cum omnes omnis generis  
 Imagines, in proxima nostra Visitatione, idque publica Authoritate,  
 non solum sublatae, verumetiam combustae erant: Cuius huic Ido-  
 lo, praeter ceteris, ab ignara & superstitiosa plebe Adoratio solet adhi-  
 beri. Ego, quia vehementior eram in ista re, nec ullo modo con-  
 sentire poteram, ut lapsus Occasio Ecclesiae Christi daretur; non mul-  
 tum aberat, quin & ab Officio amoverer, & Principis Indignationem  
 incurrerem. At Deus, in cuius manu Corda sunt Regum, pro Tem-  
 pestate Tranquillitatem dedit, & Ecclesiam Anglicam ab hujusmo-  
 di offendiculis liberavit: tantum manent in Ecclesia nostra Vestimenta  
 illa Papistica, Capas intellige, quas diu non duraturas speramus.  
 Quantum, ex eo quod te tuaque praesentia jam destituitur, Anglia de-  
 trimenti capiat, hic Ecclesiae & Religionis negotium, diligenter & sae-  
 pissimè apud eos, quibus Reipublicae Cura imminet, commemorare  
 soleo. Nescio tamen quomodo animis eorum, in alias res gravissimas  
 intentis, nihil hactenus de te accersendo statutum video. Semel sat  
 scio Reginae in animo fuit, ut te vocaret: Quid verò impedivit, pu-  
 to te facillè ex te colligere posse. Causa Christi multos semper habet  
 adversarios; & qui optimi sunt, pessimè semper audiunt. Sacramen-  
 tum illud Unitatis, magnas facit hodie divisiones. Novum tibi Con-  
 jugium gratulor: Precor ut felix faustumque sit; quemadmodum &  
 mini

mihi ipsi opto, qui eam Conjugij Legem nuper subij. Mirus hic belli apparatus est, partim ad propulsandam Gallorum vim, si fortè dum Scotiam sibi subjugare conentur, nostras fines invaserint, partim ad auxilium Scotis contra Gallos ferendum, sicubi Pacis fœdus nobiscum initum violaverint Galli. Det Deus, ut omnia in Nomina sui Gloriam, & Evangelij Propagationem cedant. Hæc priusquam me Wigorniam recipiam, quo brevi profecturum me spero, Literis tibi significanda duxi. Fusius verò scripsissem, nisi quod sciam Fratrem nostrum Juellum, Episcopum Sarisburiensem, sæpe & diligenter de rebus nostris omnibus te certiolem facturum. Si qua in re tibi gratificari queam, crede mihi, mi Honorande Petre, me semper uteris quoad vixero; immò etiam post Vitam, si fieri potest, pro arbitrato tuo.

Saluta quæso plurimùm meo nomine, Clarissimum Virum D. Bullingerum. Debeo ipsi Literas, imò omnia ipsi debeo; & tantum solvam quantum possim, si quando offerat sese Occasio. Saluta Uxorem tuam, Julium cum Julia, D. Hermannum, Paulum & Martyrillum meum; quibus omnibus omnia fœlicia precor. Vale, Humanissime, Doctissime, ac Colendissime D. Petre. Londini, festinanter, Aprilis primo 1560.

Tuus ex Animo,

Edwinus Wigornensis.

## INSCRIPTION.

Clarissimo ac Doctissimo Viro,  
D. Doctore Petro Martyri,  
Domino suo plurimùm Colendo.

Tiguri.

## Number 62.

*A Letter of Dr. Sampson's to Peter Martyr, setting forth his Reasons of not Accepting a Bishoprick.*

Idem ad Eundem.

*Argent. Dec. 17.*

**E**Go te per Christum rogo, mi Pater optime, ne graveris mihi <sup>Ex MSS.</sup> quàm citissimè respondere ad hæc pauca. Quomodo nobis agendum sit in Titulo illo, vel concedendo, vel denegando. <sup>Tiguri.</sup> Supremum



Caput post Christum Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ, &c. Univerſa Scriptura videtur hoc ſoli Chriſto tribuere, ut Caput Eccleſiæ vocetur. Secundò, Si Regina me ad aliquod Munus Eccleſiaſticum, dico, ad Eccleſiam aliquam regendam vocaret; an ſalva Conſcientia recipere poſſum, quum hæc mihi videantur ſufficere excuſationis loco, ne in id conſentirem. 1. Quod propter Diſciplinæ Eccleſiaſticæ defectum, Epiſcopus, vel Paſtor, non poſſit ſuo fungi Officio. 2. Quod tot ſint civilia Gravamina, Epiſcopatui, vel Paſtori impoſita, ut puta, primorum (ut dicimus) Frugum, i. e. Redituum primi Anni, tum Decimarum, ad hæc in Epiſcopatibus tot & tanta, inſumenda ſunt in equis alendis, in armis, in aulicis, quæ ſemper præſtò debent eſſe; & ut tu nòſti, ut quam minima pars Epiſcopatuum relinquitur, ad neceſſaria Epiſcopo munia obeunda, nempe ad Doctos alendos, ad Pauperes paſcendos, aliaque facienda quæ illius Miniſterium reddant gratum. 3. Ut hoc ad Epiſcopos præcipuè referatur, quod nunc ſcribo, tanta eſt in eorum electione degeneratio à primâ institutione, neque Cleri enim, neque Populi conſenſus habetur, tanta ſuperſtitioſi ornatus Epiſcopalis vanitas, ne dicam indignitas, quanta vix puto benè ferri poſſit, ſi modo omnia nobis facienda ad id quod expedit. Quod ad me attinet, non hæc ſcribo quaſi talia ſperarem; immò Deum precor ex animo, ne unquam talia mihi contingant onera; ſed à te ſiſſimo meo Parente conſilium peto, quo poſſim Inſtructior eſſe, ſi talia mihi obtingant. Ego ſic reſponderem, Me quidem paratum eſſe in aliquo quocunque velit illa, inſervire Concionandi munere, cæterum Eccleſiam Regendam me non poſſe ſuſcipere, niſi ipſa prius juſta Reformatione Eccleſiaſticorum munerum, facta, Miniſtris Jus concedat omnia ſecundùm Verbum Dei adminiſtrandi, & quantum ad Doctrinam, & quantum ad Diſciplinam, & quantum ad bona Eccleſiaſtica. Si autem quæ ſit illa Reformatio, quam peto, interrogetur; ex prioribus tribus Articulis, poteris tu conjicere, quæ ego petenda putem. Simpliciter, mi Pater, apud te ſolum depono Cordis mei ſecreta; teque per Chriſtum rogo, ut mea ſecretò apud te ſolum teneas, & mihi quam citiſſime reſcribas, quid mihi hic faciendum putes: Adde etiam quæ addenda putas, ut urgeatur illa Reformatio, & aliquid de ipſa Reformatione. Literas tuas ad Hetonum mitte: Ille curabit ad me transferri. Cæterùm, te per Chriſtum rogo, ut quanta poteris feſtinantia ſcribas. Ego brevi iturus ſum verſus Angliam. Habemus Papiſtas, Anabaptiſtas, & plurimos Evangelicos Adverſarios, & Doctrinæ & piæ Reformationi: Contra hos, ut tueatur, Gloriam Chriſti, promoveatque Vexillum Chriſti, quis idoneus? O mi Pater, pro me roga Deum inceſſanter.

Tuus totus,

Th. Sampſon.

## INSCRIPTIO.

Clariffimo Viro, D. D.

Petro Martyri.

Tiguri.

Number

## Number 63.

*A Second Letter of Sampson's, expressing great Uneasiness  
that Matters were not carried on as he wished.*

Idem ad Eundem.

**Q**Uas scripsisti Literas quarto Novembris, accepi tertio Januarij. Ex MSS. Figur.  
Jam unum Annum egi in Anglia, non ita quietum; vereor autem, ne sequens Annus plus molestiarum mihi pariat. Non tamen solus timeo mihi, sed omnes nobis timemus. Nec tamen audeo scriptis mandare, quæ imminere nobis videntur mala. Vos ergo Sanctissimi Patres, Teque imprimis, D. Petre, Pater & Præceptor Charissime, per Jesum Christum obtestor, ut strenuè Deum deprecari velitis: Hoc, hoc, inquam, contendite, ne Veritas Evangelij vel obfuscetur, vel evertatur apud Anglos. Gratias tibi ago, suavissime Pater, quod tamen sis diligens in scribendo. Satisfecisti tu, satisfecit & D. Bullingerus mihi, in Quæstionibus; utrisque immortalis Deus noster rependat. Consecratio Episcoporum aliquorum jam habita est: D. Parkerus Cantuariensis, D. Cox Eliensis, D. Grindall Londinensis, D. Sands Vigorniensis, notos tibi nomino: Unus alius, Wallus, etiam est Episcopus, sed tibi ignotus. Sequentur brevi, D. Pylkintonus Vintoniensis, D. Benthamus Coventrensis, & tuus Juellus Sarisburienfis, brevi, inquam, ut audio, sunt isti consecrandi, (ut nostro utar vocabulo.) Ego in limine hæreo, neque enim vel egressus, vel ingressus datur. O quam vellem egredi. Deus ipse novit, quam hoc aveam. Episcopi sint alij; ego vellem aut Concionatoris solius, aut nullius munus subire: Domini fiat Voluntas. O mi Pater, quid ego sperem, cum exulet ex Aula Verbi Ministerium; admittatur autem Crucifixi Imago, cum accensis Luminaribus. Altaria quidem sunt diruta, & Imagines per totum Regnum. In sola Aula, Crucifixi Imago cum Candelis retinetur. Et mihi Popellus id non solum libenter audit, sed & sponte imitabitur. Quid ego sperem, ubi tres ex Novitiis nostris Episcopis, unus veluti sacer Minister, secundus loco Diaconi, tertius Subdiaconi loco, Mensæ Domini astant, coram Imagine Crucifixi, vel certè non procul sito Idolo, cum Candelis, ornati aureis Vestibus Papisticis, sicque sacram Domini Cænam porrigebant, sine ulla Concione? Quæ spes boni, cum à multis istis Idololatriæ Reliquiis Religionem nostri petere volunt, & non à viva Dei Voce sonante? Quid sperem ego, cum concionaturis injungi debeat, ne Vitia asperè tangantur; cum Concionatores, si quid dicant quo displiceat, non ferendi putantur. Sed quo me capit æstus iste animi, silendum est: Vix capita nostræ imminentis Miseriæ tetigi. Deus æternæ, nostri misere, per Christum Deum & Salvatorem nostrum. Unicam hanc à vobis Quæstionem proponam solvendam: Mi Pater, te volo uti Mediatore apud D. Bullingerum, & D. Bernardinum. Hæc est: Num Imago Crucifixi, cum accensis Candelis, in Mensa Domini posita, num, inquam, sit inter Adiaphora ponenda.



ponenda. Si non fit, sed pro re illicita & nefaria ducenda, tum hoc quæro, si Princeps ita injungat omnibus Episcopis & Pastoribus, ut vel admittant in suas Ecclesias imaginem cum candelis, vel Ministerio Verbi cedant, quid hic faciendum sit? Annon potius deferendum Ministerium Verbi & Sacramentorum sit, quam ut hæ Reliquiæ Amorum admittantur? Certè vident nonnulli ex nostris aliquo modo huc inclinare, ut hæ pro Adiaphoris accipi vellent. Ego omnino puto, potius abdicandum Ministerium, si modo id injungatur. Jam te rogo, mi Pater, tuas hic partes unica vice age; hoc est, ut quàm diligentissimè & citissimè me certiolem facias, quid vestra pietas hic censet, quæque sit omnium vestrum sententia tui inquam D. Bullingeri. & D. Bernardini. Hujus Autoritas, ut audio, maxima est apud Reginam. Quod vellet aliquando scribere, hortatum illam, ut strenuè agat in Christi negotio: Testor ex animo, quod certè sciam (Fidenter dico) quod verè Filia Dei sit. Opus tamen habet ejusmodi Consiliariis qualis ille est: nam quod Augustinus Bonifacio dixit, id ferè in omnibus Principibus verum est; nempe, quòd plures habeant qui Corpori, paucos qui Animæ consulunt. Quod autem ab illo contendo vellem, & à vobis petere si auderem. Ego tamen hac in re vestræ me subijcio prudentiæ. Callet ut nôsti Linguam Italianam, Latinè & Græcè etiam benè docta est. In his linguis si aliud scribatur à vobis, vel à Domino Bernardino, omnino puto rem gratissimam vos facturos Regiæ Majestati, & operam navaturos Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ utilissimam. Deus vos spiritu suo ducat in perpetuum. Benè vale; Et rescribe unica hac vice quàm poteris festinanter. Saluta meo nomine officiosissimè D. Bullingerum, tuamq; uxorem. Saluta Julium. Quæ jam scripsi, tantum apud D. Bullingerum & D. Bernardinum promas. Nollem enim ego rumores spargi meo nomine. Imò nec hoc vobis scriberem, nisi sperarem aliquid inde boni eventurum. Forsan vel scribetis (ut dixi) vel saltem bonum mihi dabitis consilium in proposita Quæstione. Agite vos pro vestra pia prudentia. Iterum vale. Raptim. 6. Januar.

Tuus ex Animo,

*Tho. Sampson.*

Si quid scribatur Regi Majestati, vel à te vel à Domino Bernardino, vel D. Bullingero, non quasi vos ab alio incitati fueritis scribendum, ut vos melius nostris, &c. Salutat te ex animo noster Chamberus. Mea Uxor quartana vexatur. Giana bene valet. Puto etiam Hetonum cum sua bene valere. Rure ago inter Rusticos, Christum pro meo modulo tractans. Tu pro me Deum roga. Literas tuas Sprengiamus, vel Abelus ad me perferri curabit.

## INSCRIPTIO.

Clarissimo Theologo D. Petro Marty-  
ri, Sacrarum Literarum Professo-  
ri Fidelissimo.

Tiguri.

Number

## Number 64.

*Archbishop Parker's Letter to Secretary Cecil, pressing the filling the Sees of York and Duresme then vacant.*

*An Original.*

**A**fter Salutations in Christ to your Honore, This shal be instant-<sup>Paper. Other</sup>ly to desire you to make Request to the Queen's Majestie, that some Bishops myght be appoynted in the *North*: you wold not beleve me to tell howe often it is requyred at dyverse Men's Hands, an howe the People there is offended that thei be nothing caryd for: Alasse ther be Peple rude of ther own Nature, and the more had nede to be loked to, for reteyning those in quyet and cyvilitie. I feare that whatsoever is nowe to husbandly saved, wil be an occasion of funder Expence in keeping them down, yf (as God forsend) ther shuld be to much *Iryshe* and Savage. Paradventure, Terence counsell-eth not a mysse, *pecuniam in loco negligare summum interdum lucrum*. I know the Queen's Highnes Disposition to be graciously bent to have her Peple to know and fear God: why shuld other hynder her good Zeale for Money sake as yt is most commonly judged. If such as have ben named to *York* and *Duresme*, be not acceptable, or of themselves not inclyned to be bestowed ther, I wold wishe that some such as be placed already, wer translated thither. And in myn Opyinion, yf you wold have a Lawyer at *Yorke*, the Bishop of St. David's, Dr. Yonge, is both Wytty, Prudent, and Temperate, and Man like.

The Bishop of *Rocheſter* were well bestowed at *Durifme* nye to his own Contrye, wher tho ther ij Bishopryks might be more easly provided for, and lesse Inconvenience, though they for a Tyme stood voyde: And if to the Deanry of *Duresme*, to joyne with him wer Mr. Skynner apoynted, whom I esteem Learned, Wise, and Expert. I think you cowd not better place them; nowe yf eyther of them, or any of us all shall be feared to hurt the State of our Churches, by exercising any extraordinayre Practising, for Packing and Purchasing; this Feare myght sure be prevented. We have Olde Presidents in Lawe practised in Tymes past, for such Parties suspected to be bownd at their Entrye to leave ther Churches in no worſe Case by ther defaults then thei fownd them, and then what wold you have more of us. I have a forty me weryed you in this Sute, and yet I see these strange Delays determyned. I shall not cease to trouble you therein: If ye here me not for Justyce sake, for the Zeale ye must beare to Christes Deare Soulys, Importunyte shall wyne one Day I dout not: For I see yt hath obtained even a *Judicibus iniquis quarto magis a misericordibus*: Thus concluding, I shall offer



my Prayer to God that ye may fynd Grace in your Sollicitations to the Queen's Majestie for the Comfort of her Peple, and Discharge of her own Soule. At *Lambeth* this 16th of *October*.

*Your to my uttermost Power,*

Matthew Cantuar.

### Number 65.

*A Letter of Bishop Jewell's to Peter Martyr concerning the Council of Trent, the Lord Darly's going to Scotland, with an Account of his Mother.*

Idem ad Eundem.

Ex MSS.  
Tigur.

**S** Alutem plur. in Christo. Gratissimæ mihi fuerunt Literæ tuæ, mi Pater, non solum quod essent à te, cujus omnia mihi debent esse, ut sunt gratissima, verumetiam quod omnem statum renascentis in Gallia Religionis luculentissimè desciberent: Quòdque ego me, cùm eas legerem, & te ita propè abesse scirem, propius etiam aliquantò te audire, & propius tecum colloqui abitrarer. Nam quamvis res Gallicæ ad nos rumoribus, ut fit, & nuntiis adferebantur, tamen & certiores, & multò etiam jucundiores visæ sunt, quod à te scriberentur, ab illo præsertim, quem ego scirem partem illarum fuisse maximam. Quod scribis, illos, qui rerum potiuntur, omnio velle Mutationem in Religione aliquam fieri, non tam studiò & amore pietatis, quàm quòd Papistarum ineptias videant nimis esse ridiculas, quodque non putent populum aliter posse in officio contineri; quicquid est, quacunq; causa ista fiant, modò prædicatur Christus, εἴτε προφάσει, εἴτε ἀλεθεΐα, καὶ ἐν τῷ τῷ Καίρῳ, ἀλλὰ καὶ Καρῆσειναι. Tamen fieri non potest, quin disputatio illa vestra multum & Evangelium promoverit, & adversarios adflixerit. Quod autem scribis, Interim quoddam à quibusdam, & Faraginem Religionis quæri, Deus id avertat: Scio omnes in Republ. magnas mutationes odiosas & graves esse: Et multa sæpè à Principibus, temporis causâ, tollerari. Atque illud fortasse ab initio non fuit incommodum. Nunc verò, postquam erupit Lux omnis Evangelii, quantum quidem fieri potest, vestigia ipsa erroris una cum ruderibus, utque aiunt, cum pulvisculo auferenda sunt. Quod utinam nos in ista λινοςολία, obtinere potuissemus: Nam in dogmatis prorsus omnia ad vivum refecavimus, & ne unguem quidem latum abimus à doctrina vestra. Ce ubiquitate enim nihil est periculi. Ibi tantum audiri ista possunt, ubi saxa sapiunt.

Apud

Apud nos, de Religione omnia sunt pacata. Episcopi Mariani servant Turrim, & antiquum obtinent. Quod si Leges æquè nunc vigerent, atq; olim, sub Henrico, facillè succumberent. Est Genus Hominum contumax & indomitum: Ferro tamen & metu vincitur. Edidimus nuper Apologiam de mutata Religione, & Discessione ab Ecclesia Romana. Eum ego Librum, etsi dignus non est qui mittatur tam procul, tamen ad te mitto. Est multis in locis vitiosus, qualia sunt ea ferè omnia, quæ apud nos excuduntur; tanta est Typographorum nostrorum Negligentia. Regina nostra prorsus decrevit, nolle mittere ad Consilium: quod, an allum, aut uspian sit, nos nescimus. Certè si uspian, aut ullum est, perarcanum, & valdè obscurum est. Nos nunc cogitamus publicare Causas, quibus inducti ad Concilium non veniamus. Ego quidem sic fla uo & sentio, istis Congressionibus & Colloquiis, nihil posse promoveri hoc tempore, nec Deum velle uti istis mediis, ad propagandum Evangelium. Regina nostra, magno nostro cum dolore, innupta manet; neq; adhuc quid velit sciri potest. Tametsi, quò Suspiciones nostræ inclinent, satis te jamdudum scire arbitror. Suecus diuturnus precus, & valdè assiduus, nuper admodum dimissus est. Ille, acceptâ repulsâ, minatur, quantum audio, in Scotiam: Ut, cùm apud nos hæere non possit, saltem possit in Vicinia. Est Mulier quædam Nobilis, Domina Margareta, Neptis Henrici Octavi, Mulier supra modum infensa Religioni, supra etiam Rabiem Marianam. Ad ejus filium, juvenem, plus minùs octodecim annos natum, summa rerum judicatur spectare, si quid Elisabethæ, quod nolimus, quodque Deus avertat, accidat. Ejus Mulieris Maritus, Leoneſius Scoſus, proximis istis diebus conjectus est in Turrim. Filium, aiunt, vel ablegatum esse à Matre, vel profugisse in Scotiam. De eo, ut solet fieri, Sermo est multiplex. Regina Scotiæ, ut scis, innupta est: Potest inter illos convenire aliquid de Nuptiis, Quicquid est, credibile est, Papiſtas aliquid moliri: Sperant enim adhuc, nescio quid, non minùs quàm Judæi Messiam suum. Nuntius Pontificis hæret adhuc in Flandia: Nondùm enim impetrare potest fidem publicam, ut tutò veniat in Angliam. Episcopus Aquitanus, Legatus Philippi, astutus, & callidus Veterator, & factus ad Insidias, satagit quantum potest, ejus Causa; saltem, ut audiatur; ne tam procul frustra venerit. Sperat enim uno Colloquio aliquid, nescio quid, posse fieri. Est Puella quædam Nobilis, Domina Catherina, Ducis Suffolchiensis Fila, ex Sanguine Regio, eoq; nominatim scripta ab Henrico Octavo in Testamento, ut si quid accidisset, quarto loco succederet. Ex eo, Comes Herfordiensis, Juvenis, Ducis Somersetenſis Filius, suscepit Filium, & multi putant ex Stupro, sed up ipsi dicunt, ex legitimis Nuptiis. Se enim clàm inter se contraxisse, & advocato Sacrificatore, & paucis quibusdàm arbitris, junxisse Nuptias. Ea Res turbavit animos multum. Nam si sunt veræ Nuptiæ, Puer, qui susceptus est, alitur ad Spem Regni. O nos miseros, qui non possumus scire, sub quo Domino victuri simus. Deus nobis Elizabetham, spero, diù vivam & incolumem conservabit. Id nobis erit satis. Tu, mi Pater, ora Deum, ut Rempublicam nostram, & Ecclesiam conservet. Vale, mi Pater, vale. Vale, dulce Decus meum.

Saluta



Saluta meo Nomine Uxorem tuam, D. Bullingerum, D. Gualterum, D. Lavaterum, D. Zwinglium, D. Hallenum, D. Wikium, D. Gefnerum, D. Frisium, D. Wolphium, Julium, Juliam, & Martyrilum.

Salisberiæ, 7. Febr. 1562,  
E Anglia.

Tui Nominis Studiosissimus,

*Jo. Juellus*, Anglus.

## INSCRIPTIO.

Viro longè Doctissimo, D. Petro Martyri, Vermilio, Professori Sacræ Theologiæ in Schola Tigurina, Domino suo Colendissimo.  
Tiguri.

*P. S.* Regina Elisabetha, omnem nostram Monetam auream, argenteamque ad pristinam Probitatem restituit, & puram, putamq; reddidit: Opus planè Regium, quodq; tu mireris tam brevi Tempore potuisse fieri.

---

Number 66.

## TWO INSTRUMENTS.

The First is, *The Promise under the Great Seal of Francis the II<sup>d</sup>. to Maintain the Succession to the Crown of Scotland in the Family of Hamilton, in case Queen Mary should Die without Children.*

*An Original.*

**F**Rancois fils aîné du Roy & Dauphin de Viennois, a tous ceux qui ces presentes Lettres verront, Salut. Nous ayant de la Part de notre tres cher & tres honoré Seigneur & Pere le Roy de France, entendu que des le dixsepteme Jour de Juin, il fit expedier ses Lettres Patentes, a notre tres cher & tres amé Cousin, Jaques Duc de Chateleraut, Comte de Aran, & Seigneur D'ammilton, Chevalier de son Ordre cy Devant, Gouverneur du Royaume d'Ecosse; par lesquelles Lettres lui auroit, accordé que en cas que notre tres chere & tres amée Cousine, Marie Reine d'Ecosse, decedat sans hoirs de son Corps, que Dieu ne veuille, il succede à la Couronne d'Ecosse, &  
pour

pour y parvenir lui aider & subvenir, desirant notre dit Seigneur & Pere, que nous Vueillons ratifier & approuver, ladite promesse par luy faite a notre Cousin, scavoir faisons que nous voulans singulièrement, entretenir & observer la Foy & Parole de nostre dit Seigneur & Pere, & lui Obeïr en tout ce que lui est affecté & recommande, & aussi pour l'amour particuliere, que avons porté & portons a icelui notre dit Cousin, & a sa maison pour l'Affectiō quil a toujours demonstrée envers notre dit Seigneur & Pere, & la bien de la Couronne de France. Nous a ces Causes, & autres a ce nous mouvant, avons entant que besoin seroit tant pour nous, que pour nos Successeurs confirmé & ratifié, confirmons & ratifions par ces Presentes, le contenu es dites Lettres de notre dit Seigneur & Pere, du dix septieme Join, Mille Cinq cent Quarante neuf: Promettant en bonne Foi, avenant que notre dite Cousine, la Reine d'Ecosse, decedat sans Hoirs de sons Corps, le laisser Jouir dudet Royaume, & pour cet effet le secourir & aider selon le contenu des dires Lettres. En temoin de ce nous avons signé les Presentes de notre propre Main, & a Icelles fait Mettre, & apposer notre Scel. Donné a Paris, le dixneuvieme Jouir d'Avril, l'An de Grace, Mille Cinq cent Cinquante huil.

FRANCOIS.

Par Monseigneur le Dauphin,

CLAUSSÉ.

The Second is,

*The Promise made to the same Effect, Henry the II<sup>d</sup>. King of France, before Queen Mary was sent out of Scotland.*

*An Original.*

**H**ENRY, par la Grace de Dieu, Roy de France; a tous ceux qui ces presentes Lettres verront, Salut. Scavoir faisons, que ayant egard aux bons, grands, vertueux, agreable, & tres recommandables Services, fait par notre tres cher & tres amé Cousin, le Comte de Aran, Chevalier de nostro Ordre, Gouverneur du Royaume d'Ecosse, a feu notre tres honnoré Seigneur & Pere, que Dieu absolve; depuis le trepas du feu Roy d'Ecosse, dernier decédé, a nous & a la



Couronne de France Consecutivement, & Specialement pour avoir Moyenné, l'accord du Mariage de ma tres cher & tres amee Fille & Cousine la Reine d'Ecosse, avec notre tres cher & tres amé Fils le Dauphin de Viennois. Pour de nostre Part donner a Connoitre a Ice-lui notre dit Cousin, l'Affection que lui portons, & le grand desir que nous avons de le favoriser en toutes raisonnables Choses qui le pourront toucher: Lui avons par ces Presentes en Parole de Roy, promis & promettons, advenant qu'il plus a Dieu appeller a sa part la dite Reine d'Ecosse, sans Hoirs Issus de son Corps, & que par Voye de fait avvenu que ses Ennemis voulussent entreprendre l'empêcher, lui ou les Siens descendans, de lui par droite Ligne, qu'ils ne vinssent a la paisible Jouissance da la Couronne du Royaume d'Ecosse; Comme plus proche d'Icelle apres le Trepas de la dite Reine, que nous lui tendrons la Main a lui, & aux Siens a l'econtre de leurs Ennemis quelconque; & les aiderons & supporterons en toutes sortes, selon que requierent les anciennes Alliances & Confederations, qui ont de tout tems été & sont encore entre nous, notre Royaume & Pais, & Celui d'Ecosse. Et quand a l'Article du Traité, que nous avons fait avecques le dit Gouverneur, par lequel sommes tenus de le faire, tenir quite & decharger del' Administration, qu'il a euë & aura dudit Royaume durant la Minorité d'Icelle notre dite Fille & Cousine, sans qu'il en soit autrement comptable, & du tout lui en faire bailler, & delivrer Lettres de decharges de la dite Dame, par le Consentement de notre dit Fils son Mary, quand elle sera d'age. Nous derechef rati-fions & approuvons le dit Article par ces Presentes, & nous oblige-ons ainsi le faire ensemble de l'en decharger envers la dite Dame & son futur Mary. En temoin de ce nous avons signé ces Presentes, & a notre Main, Icelle fait mettre, & apposer notre Scel. Donné a Paris, le dixseptieme Jour de Juin, l'An de Grace, Mille Cinq cent Quarante neuf; & de nostre Regne le troisieme.

H E N R Y.

Par lè Roy,

*De L' Aubespine.*

## Number 37.

*Instructions to the Queen's Commissioners treating in  
Scotland.**An Original.*

**A**fter our Right Harty Commendations, we have receyved your *Paper Office.* Letters of the 11th of this Mounth, and by the same do understande at good length your Proceedings with the *French* Commissioners hitherto, and in the Ende of the Death of the Dowager of *Scotland*: For your Advertisements whereof, we give unto you, on the Queen's Majesties Behalf, most harty Thanks: And like as her Highnes doth well allowe your Opinion for the signifying unto King *Philippes* Ambassadors, that we be entred into Treaty with the *French*, and are in very good way towards Accorde, and finde not Things altogether so harde to be brought to Composition as was supposed; so hath her Majestie taken Order, that one shall be out of Hande sent to declare the same unto them, with signification also what her Highnes hath harde of the Dowager's Death. As touching the other Points of your Letter wherein you require her Highnes Resolution; we have considered the same, and uppon Reporte of our Opinions to the Queen's Majestie, her Highnes hath resolved as followeth; Fyrst, in case the *French* Commissioners uppon the understanding of the Dowager's Death, will nedes presse to return back againe without following their Commission; her Highnes in that Case is pleased, that after you shall have provoked them by such good Meanes as you can best devise, to contynue; if in the Ende, they will nedes breake of, and returne, you shall agree they may so do, and there-uppon consulting with our very good Lorde, the Duke of *Norffolke*, and imparting the State of the Case unto the Lords of *Scotland*, to take Order by their good Advice, how the Purpose intendyd for expelling of the *French*, and assuring of that Realme, according to that hath byn heretofore determined, may best and most spedely be brought to passe, which in Case the *French* break of from Treatie, her Majestie wolde sholde be gon thorough withall without any longer delay, or loss of Time; the rather for that it appeareth by all Advertisements, that the *French* seeke nothing so much as to wyn Tyme, and draw forth Matters in length to serve theyr Purpose wythall; which must not be endured: And where your desire to know what you shall doe, if the *French* Commissioners that be with you, will require the Presence of some of theyr Colleages in the Town; her Highnes thinketh, as you doe, that the same is in no wise to be grauntyd, nor the said Commissioners that be in *Lyth* to be suffered to issue, or treate of this Matter otherwise then is perscribed by your Instructions.



Instructions. As touching the last Point, where ye desire to know what shall be done, in case the said *French* Commissioners shall require Assistance of such *Scottishmen* as were of the *French* Faction: Her Highnes thinks fyt, yf the same shall be demaunded, that the Lords of *Scotland* be made privie thereunto; and in case they and you shall not see some reasonable cause of the contrary, her Majestie thinketh, and so do we also, that it may without Daunger be granted, wherein nevertheles you may use your good Discretions as you shall see may best stand with the Advancement of his Highnes Service. And forasmuche as one *Parrys*, an *Ireshmen*, who hath, (as we think you doe well enough remember) byn a Fugitive out of this Realme nowe a long time together,) is as we understande come from the *French*, and hathe now yelded himself into the Lorde *Greys* Hands: We hartely pray you, in Case you may conveniently, to talk with the said *Parrys*, and understand of him what he can say touching the Practises that hath byn attemptyd in *Ireland*, or any other Thing concerning the State of the Queen's Majestie, or her Realme; and to lett us know what he is able to say therein, to the Intent if his Meaning and Doing shall appere unto you to deserve the same, we may be Sutors unto her Highnes for his Pardonne, and for suche farther Consideracion of hym, as his Doing shall deserve. And thus we wish you most hartely well to fare. From *Greenwich* the 15th. of *June*, 1560.

*Your assured Loving Friends,*

Winchester. W. North, &c.

E. Clynton. Willm. Petre Se.  
Tho. Parrys.

Number 68.

*The Commission of the Estates to move Queen Elizabeth to take the Earl of Arran to her Husband.*

*Taken from the Original now at Hamilton.*

THE Lords of Parliament, and others Under-written, havand Consideration how the Kingdome of *England* is joynt with this, Be an Dray March, how Puissant it is; what Incommodity we and our Forefathers have felt, be the continual Weirs betwixt the Tuo Nations;

Nations; and be the contrar, how Profitable there Amytie may be to us, what Welth and Commodity we may obtain theithrow; hes thought good divysed and ordained, that the O.casion presently opened up to us shal be followed, that is, sute made to the Queen of *England* in the best Manner, That it may please her Majesty, for Establishing of one perpetual Friendship, to joine in Marriage with the Earl of *Arran*; being of the lawfull Blood of this Realme; and faillzieing of Succession of the Queen, our Sovereain Ladies Body, next his Father, the Dukes Grace of *Chastellerault* declared be Act of Parliament, Second Person of the Realme, Air Apparant to the Crown; and for that Purpose that Honourable Persons be sent in Ambassate, fra them yn Behalf of the Estates. And to the Effect, the Sute may be made in the most Honourable Manner, and to her Majestys best Contentation, they have devised that presently in plane Parliament it shal be devised, that certain Ambassadors be sent to her Majesty, fra the Estates, to give her Hieness Thanks for the guid Will she has ever born to this Realme, sen she came to her Crown, and desire she hes that it may continue an free Kingdom in thantiant Liberty, sufficiently of late declared, be her Support liberally granted for the Relief thereof; and for the guid Quietnes we presently enjoy, purchast to us be her Majestys Means and Labours; and they are withall to desire of her Heeness to give strait Commandments to her Wardains, and Officers upon the Borders, to continue with ours, for suppressing of broken Men, and stanching of Thift, with sic other Things as are necessar for the Common Weel of this Realme: And that the States give Power to the Lords of Articles, and others Underwritten, to devise sic Commision and Instructions as are necessar, for that Purpose, to be sealed, and subscribed be Six of the Principals of every Estate, whilk sal be as sufficient, as giff it were subscribed and sealed be the hail Estates; and therafter the Lords of Articles, and ours under specified, to devise the Instructione and Commision touching the Heid of the Marriage.

### Number 69.

*The Queenes Majesties Answer declared to Her Counsell  
concerninge the Requests of the Lords of Scotlande.*

*In Sir W. Cecil's Hand.*

HER Majestie reduced the Answer into Three Points.

- I. **T**HE First was, That where the Three Estats had sent the Lords of *Scotland* to present their hartly Thanks to her Majesty for the Benefits received this last Yere by her Majesties Ayde given to them. Her Majesty is very glad to perceave her Good Will,  
VOL III.
8 D
and

The 8th of  
Decemb. 1550  
Fol. 133.  
Caligula B.



and Chardgs so well bestowed as to see the same thankfullie accepted and acknowledged; and findeth the same to have been seasonablie planted that produceth so plentifull Fruct, with the which her Majesty doeth so satisfie herself, as if at any Time the like Cause shall happen wherein her Friendship, or Ayde, shall, or may Profit them for their just Defence, the same shall not be wantinge. And although in former Times it appeared that sondry Beneficts bestowed upon divers of the Nobilitye here by her Majesties most noble Father, had not such Succes, nor was answered with like thankfullnes: Yet her Majestye doth nowe evidently se the Cause thereof to be for that the Meaneninge of her Father's Beneficts were interpreted, and supposed to be to the Discomoditye of the Land, and these her Majesties be evidently sene to bend directlye to the Safetie of that Realme. And so the Diversitie of the bestowinge hath made the Diversitie in the Operacion and Acceptation of them.

2. The Second Point is, where the same Estates have by their Parlyament accorded, That suyte should be made for the Mariage with her Majesty of the Earle of *Arrayne*; her Majestye cannot interpret that Motion to come but both of a good Meaneinge of the same Estaits, pretendinge thereby to knit both theis Kingdomes presently in Amytye, and hereafter to remaine in a perpetuall Amytye; and of a great Good Will of the same Estates towards her Majestye, offeringe to her the best and choicest Person that they have, and that not without some Daunger of the Displeasure of the *French* Kinge in so doinge: For answer hereunto, her Majesty findeing herself not disposed presently to Marry, (although it may be that the Necessitie and Respect of her Realme shall hereto hereafter constrain her) wished that the Earle of *Arrayne* should not forbear to accept such Mariage as may be made to him for his own Weill and Surety; and that all other Means be used to the Continewance of Amytie firmly betwixt these Kingdomes; whereunto her Majesty thinketh many good Reasons ought to induce the People of both Realmes, and in a Manner to continewe as good Amytye therby, as by Mariage: For it appeareth, that if every Nobleman of *Scotlande* will well consider how necessarye the Friendship of this Realme is to that, for the preservation of their Liberties; they shall chiefly for Safegard of themselves joyne together in Concord with this Realeme, and so every one particularly minding his own Suretye, of Consequence the Love and Amitye shall be Universall; by which Means her Majesty thinketh the Amitye may be well assured, though no Marriage be obteyned. And as to the Person of the Earle of *Arrayn*, her Majesty surely hath heard a verie good Report of him, and thinketh him to be a Noble Gentleman of great Woordineffe, and so thinketh surely that he shall prove hereafter.

3. Thirdly and Lastly, Her Majesty thancketh the said Lords for their Paines and Travell; and although she doubteth nether of their Wisdome, nor of the Providence of the Estates at Home in *Scotland*, yet for demonstracion of her hearty Good Will, her Majesty cannot forbear to require them not to forget the Practises that be past, by such as before Tyme sought the Subverfon of them; and nowe much more will doe it, if there maye be left any Entry for

Corruption,

Corruption, be Reward, or other Scope of Praiſe. And therefore her Maieſty wiſheth, that they all do perſiſt, firſt in a good Concorde, making their Cauſes come amongſt themſelves; and not to diſſeuer themſelves in any Faſtions, but to foreſee well Things before they chauce: For that her Maieſtie thinketh this prove verie true, That Darts foreſeen, hurt verie little, or not at all. And for her Maieſties Parte, there ſhall no reaſonable Thing be neglected, that may furder this comun Action of Defence of both the Realmes, againſt any common Enemye.

## Number 70.

*A Letter of the Engliſh Ambaſſador, to Queen Mary of Scotland, for her Ratifying the Treaty of Leith.*

**P**leaſeth it your Maieſtie. The ſame may remember, that at my *Paper-Office* Lord of *Bedford's* being in this Court, He and I demanded of you, on the Behalfe of the Queen's Maieſtie, our Miſtreſs, your good Siſter and Couſyne, your Ratification of thaccord latelye made at *Edinburgh* in *Scotland*. Whereunto you made Answer, amonge other Things, that your Counſell being not about youe; namely your Uncle, my Lord Cardinall of *Lorraine*, by whom you are adviſed in your Affaires, and alſo for that your Maieſtie had not heard from your Counſell in *Scotland*, from whom you looked to hear then verie ſhortlye; you could make us no direct Answer therin. Put that heering from them, and having conſulted with your Counſell heere; you would ſatiſfie her Maieſtie in the ſame. Sins whiche Tyme, her Maieſtie having Knowledge of the coming to you of the Lord *James*, your Brother, who paſſed lately through *England* hitherwards, by whom (her Maieſtie judgeth) you will be adviſed, bothe in Reſpect of his Ranke and Eſtimation in your Realme of *Scotland*, and alſo for that he hathe the Honour to be your Maieſties Brother, and of good Credite with you: And nothing doubting of your Conſultation with my ſaid Lord Cardinall, and others of your Counſell here ſins that Tyme; her Maieſtie hathe preſentie commanded, and authorized me to put your Maieſtie in Remembrance therof againe; and to renew the Demande of your Confirmation of the ſaid late Accord. Therefore I have preſently depechid to you this Gentleman, Bearer heerof, her Maieſties Servant: By whom, I beſeeche you, to let me underſtand your reſolute Answer in that behalf. And uppon Knowledge of your Pleaſure, to delyver me the ſaid Ratification; and of the Tyme and Place, I will not faile (God willing) to reſort, whither your Maieſtie will appoint me to come for that Pourpoſe.

By



By demanding of this Ratification, as the Queen's Majestie, my Mistres, your good Sister, dothe shew the great Desyre she hathe, to lyve from hence forth in all assured good Love, Peas and Amytie with you, and your Realme; so, in her Opyinion, there is nothing that can argue your reciproke good Will, to answer to the lyke for your Parte agayne, so much as the Stablishing the same by this Knot of Friendship which God hath appointed, and hath been Ch. if Worker therin, for both your Quyetnesses and Comforts; being now the onlie Refuge of you both. And so I pray Almighty God, long to preserve your Majestie in parfaiet Healtie, Honour and Filicitie. From *Paris*, the 13th of *Aprill* 1561.

Number 71.

*A Letter of Mary Queen of Scotland, delaying to Ratify the Treaty of Leith.*

*An Original.*

Monfieur Ambassadeur,

*Poper-Office.*

J' Ay len la Lettre, que vous m'aves escrité par le Gentilhomme present Porteur, & pour ce j'étant sur mon Partement de ce Lieu, Je ne puis vous faire reponce plustat qu'à Remis, ou jespere d'estre au Sacré de Roy: Je ne feray cette plus long que pour vous dire, quant a Lord James, qui est devers moy, Il y est venne pour son devoir, comme devers sa Souveraine Dame, que Je suis, sans Charge ou Commission, qui concerne autre Chose que son son droit. Je prie Dieu, Monfieur Ambassadeur, vous avoir en sa Garde. Escrit a Nanci, ce 22. d' Avril 1562.

Vostre bien bon Amy,

M A R I E.

## Number 72.

*An Original Letter of the Ambassador's to the Queen,  
upon that Affair.*

**I**T maye please your Majestie to be advertised, that haveing writ- *Paper-Office.*  
ten this other Lettre, and being ready to have depeched it to  
your Majestie; Mr. *Somer*, your Highnesses Servant, arryved heere  
from *Nanci* in *Lorraine*, from the Queene of *Scotland*, with Answer  
to my Lettre, which (by your Majesties Commandment) I wrote  
to her, in such Sorte, as I have advertised by my former, and ther-  
with sent to your Majestie the Coppies of my Lettres to the saide  
Queen and Cardinall of *Lorraine*. Which her Answer being by  
Lettre, (having also said as much by Mouth to Mr. *Somer*) toge-  
ther with the said Cardinall's Answer; I send your Majestie here-  
with. And though your Majesties said Servant used the best Speech  
as he coude, to get some direct Answer of her, accordinge to her  
late Promesses, putting her in Remembrance of her Words to my  
Lord of *Bedford*, and to me at *Fontainebleau*: Yet other Answer  
nor Direction, then is contained in her Letter, coude he not gette of  
her. And seinge She hath defferrid to make me further Answer, till  
my next Meetinge with her, which She reckonith shall be at *Reims*,  
at the *French* King's Sacre, as appearith by her said Lettre; where,  
She and the Cardinal told Mr. *Somer*, She mynded to be the 8th of  
*Maye*; for that it is said the Sacre shall be the 15th; and for that  
your Majestie hath commanded me, for some Respects, not to be at  
it; I know not when I shall have the Opertunitie and Meanes, to  
speake with the said Queen for her Answer. Therefore seing I can-  
not be at *Reims*, (as indeede, besydes your Majesties Command-  
ment, myne Indisposition of my Bodye will not suffer me to come  
there) and also for that (as I heere) the said Queen myndeth not  
to come into these Parties this good while; If it wold please your  
Majestie, to send hither your Lettres of Credit directed unto her,  
therby to authorize Mr. *Somer*, your Majesties said Servant, to de-  
mande and receyve her Answer therein, in myne Absence, by reason  
of my Sicknesse; I take it, your Majestie shall the sooner have her  
direct Answer. If your Majestie finde this good, it may please the  
same, to send such your Letters hither, with good Speed, that the  
Answer may be had, before She departt agayne from *Reims*.

And though I thinke verily, that her Answer will be such as I  
have already advertised your Majestie She made to my Lord *James*,  
(which is Means to draw into Tyme still the greater Length) yet  
the same, or anye other, being made to your Majestie by her self;  
you shall the better know, how to proceede with her in the Matter  
afterwards.



The said Queen of Scotland was accompaigned at Nancy with the Dowager of *Lorraine*, (whom they call there *Son Altezze*) the Duke and Duchesse of *Lorraine*, Monsieur de *Vaudemont*, the Cardinales of *Lorraine*, and *Guyse*, and the Duke d' *Anville*. One of the chiefeſt Cawſes of her going thither from *Joinville*, (being 18 *Lorraine* Leagues of) as I heere, was to Chriſten Monsieur de *Vaudemont*'s yong Sonne, born lately at *Mallegrange*, a Quarter of a League from *Nancy*.

I wrote to your Maieſtie, by my Letters of the 23<sup>d</sup> of this Preſent, that the Queen of Scotland wold Authorize my ſaid Lord *James*, (as She had told him her ſelf) to have the Speciall Charge of the Government of the Affaires in *Scotland* till her comminge thither; and would, for that Purpoſe, give him Commiſſion under her Seale. For which Commiſſion, and other Letters, he left a Gentleman of his with the ſaid Queen, to bring it after him to this Towne. The Gentleman is returned from the Queen, with her Letters, but hath brought no Commiſſion: And I underſtande, that She hath now changed her Mynd in that Point; and will appoint none to have Authorike there, till She come her ſelf. And as to ſuch Sutes and Requeſtes, as are made to her for Benefices, and ſuch other Thinges as are to be beſtowed; She will not diſpoſe of any of them, nor make other Answer therin, till her comminge thither. Which (it is thought) She dothe, to beſtowe the ſame upon ſome ſuch as She ſhall ſee worthy of her Favour and Preferment, and upon others, to winne them the ſooner to her Devocion. The Speciall Cauſe why She hath changed her Opinion of my Lord *James*, (as I heere) is; For that She coude by no meanes diſſwade him from his Devocion and good Opinion towards your Maieſtie, and the Obſervation of the League between your Maieſtie and the Realme of *Scotland*. And alſo for that She, nor the Cardinall of *Lorraine*, coude not winne nor divert him from his Religion; wherein they uſed verie great Meanes, and Perſwaſions. For which Reſpects, the ſaid Lord *James* deſervith to be the more eſtymed of your Maieſtie. And ſeeing he hath dealt ſo plainely with the Queen his Sovereine, on your Maieſties Behalf, and ſlewed himſelf ſo conſtant in Religion, that neither the Feare of his Sovereine's Indignacion coude waver him, nor great Promeſſes winne him; your Maieſtie may (in myne Opinion) make good Accompt of his Conſtancy towards you: And ſo deſerveth to be well entertayned and made of, by your Maieſtie, as one that may ſtand you in no ſmall Steade, for the Advancement of your Maieſties Deſire. Sins his being heere, he hath dealt ſo franckly and liberally with me, that I muſt beleve he will ſo contynue after his Return home. And in caſe your Maieſtie wold now in Tyme, liberally and honorably conſider him with ſome good Means, to make him to be the more beholding to your Maieſty; it wold, in my ſimple Judgment, ſerve your Maieſtie to great Purpoſe. He departeth hence homeward about the 4<sup>th</sup> of *Maye* by the way of *Diepe*, and myndith to Land at *Rye*: Wherof I thought good to advertiſe your Maieſtie, that it may pleaſe the ſame to give Order, for him and his Company, to be receyved and accommodated, as apertenith: Which will be well beſtowed

showed upon him, for the good Reporte he made of his late Reception there, and of the great Favour your Majestie shewed him at his coming hitherwards.

I understand that the Queen of *Scotland* maketh accompt to fynd a good Partie in her Realme, of such as are of her Religion. And amongs other, the Earle of *Huntley* hath promysed, that having the Duke on his side, he, with such other as he holdeth assured, will be able enough to make Head to the contrary Parte. And so hath he promised to bring greate Things to passe there, for the Queen's Purpose and Affection.

I understand, (and so gather partly by my said Lord *James* own Words) that soone after his Retourne Home in *Scotland*, he shall Marye the Earle Marshall's Daughter.

As I have written heertofore to your Majestie, that this Realm was in danger of great Unquietnes amonge themselves for Religion; so the 28th of *April*, the same beganne to appeare in this Towne. Certain Gentlemen, and others, about a Hundred assembled together in a Private House in the Suburbes, where they had a Sermon, and Psalmes singing, as is used in all Assemblies. Wherewith the People offended, assembled to great Numbers, forced the Walles of a Garden joining to the House; made a great Breach with such Toolles as they coude gett, and would have entred with Violence to have wrought their Cruaulty uppon the Gentlemen. The other seeing none other Remedye, their Perswasions serving to litle effect with such an unruly Sorte: Defended themselves with such Weapons and Harguebouzes as they had provided against all Events; and so slew 7 or 8 of the Assailants, and defended the House till the Justice, and Court of Parliament of this Town appeased and retyred the People. And the Night following, the Deffendants shifted themselves away thence, without further Harme; hitherto nothing elles is done heerupon. What will ensue, it is to be feared. In the mean Time, the People murmure greatly at the Slaughter. And the other Parte are not a little moved generally, to be so assaulted and molested, contrary to the King's Edicts, which permitte all Men to live according to their Consciences, so they give none occasion of Slander, or Offence to the People, or Publique Preaching, and that to command all Men not to Reproach or Injury the one, the other, for their Living in that sorte. Between these Two Partyes, the Justice is so litle feared, and Pollicy hath now so litle Place, that greater Things are to be feared, unlesse better and speedyer Order be provided to appease all, then I can see towards.

I understand that the Queen of *Scotland* had hitherto no great Devotion to *Ledington*, *Grange*, and *Balnaves*, wherof I am nothing sory. But she mindeth to use all the best Meanes she can to wyne them to her, which she trusted well to compasse.

And wheras I have advertised your Majestie that the Baron *de la Garde* shulde cary this King's Order to the King of *Sweden*: I understand now, thai it is to the King of *Denmarke*, and not to the other.

Having written thus farre, I understand, that wheras it was determined



terminated that the King should have departed the 28th of *April* from *Fontainbleau* towards *Reims* to his *Sacre*: The same is retarded, by reason that the Queen Mother is fallen Sicke of a Catarre. So that both his Departure from thence, and the Time of his *Sacre* is now uncertain, and dependeth wholly upon the said Queen Mother's Recovery.

Though I take in that your Majestie hath received from your Ministers in *Germany* the Pope's Demand of the Princes Protestants of *Germany*, and their Answer therunto; yet having recovered the same here, I thought in my Duty to send it to your Majestie as I do heerewith. And thus I pray God long to preserve your Majestie in Health, Honour and all Felicitie. From *Paris* the First of *Maye*, 1561.

*Your Majesties Humble,*

*And most Obedient,*

*Subjeēt and Servant,*

N. Throckmorton.

---

Number 73.

*A Letter of Bishop Jewell's to Bullinger, chiefly concerning the Affairs of France, and the Queen espousing the Prince of Conde's Cause.*

Idem ad Bullingerum.

Salutem Plurimam in Christo.

Ex MSS.  
*Tigur.*

**R** Eddita mihi sunt non ita pridem Literæ tuæ, Scriptæ Tiguri ad quintum diem Martii: Quæ quamvis essent ὑπομεμψιμοιροι, & querulæ, tamen mihi perjucundæ videbantur; non tantum quod à te essent, cujus omnia scripta dictaque mihi semper visa sunt honorifica, sed etiam quod officium meum ita obnixè requirerent, & meam in scribendo negligentiam & socordiam excitarent. Ego verò, mi Pater, & Domine Colendissimè, etsi minùs fortasse ad te sæpè scribo quàm velim, tamen quoties occasio aliqua offertur, ne hoc quidem officium intermitto. Binas enim dedi nuper ad te Literas, alteras Francofor-  
-diam

diam ad nundinas Martias, alteras statim à Paschate. Quæ si adhuc, ut sit, subsistant fortè in itinere, tamen expedient se aliquando, & postremò uti spero, ad te pervenient. Ego interim de te cogitare, & honorificè ut debeo, de te loqui nunquam desino. De Gallicis rebus ad te scribere hoc tempore, esset fortasse putidum: Omnia enim ad vos etiam sine ventis & navibus afferuntur. Sanctissimus nihil relinquet intentatum. Flectere si nequeat superos, Acheronta movabit. Videt enim jam non agi de reduviis, sed de vita & sanguine. Utinam ne nostri sese patiantur circumveniri. Dux Guisanus, ut, nescio qua spe moderandæ Religionis, & recipiendæ Confessionis Augustinæ, moratus est Principes Germaniæ, ne se admiscerent huic bello; ita omnibus modis persuadere conatus est Reginæ nostræ, non agi nunc in Gallia negotium Religionis; esse manifestam conjurationem, causam esse Regis, cui illam, cum Regium locum teneat, non oporteat adversari. Interea id egit, ut Neptis sua, Regina Scotiæ, ambiret gratiam, atque amicitiam Reginæ nostræ, & munuscula mitteret, & nescio quas fides daret: Velle se, hac ætate, honoris causa venire in Angliam; & æternum amicitæ Fœdus, quod nunquam postea convelli possit, velle sancire. Misit ea adamantem maximi pretii, gemmam pulcherrimam, undique vestitam auro, & commendatam pulchro & eleganti carmine. Quid quæris? Putabant festivis colloquiis, & venationibus, & blanditiis, animos nostros abduci facilè posse à strepitu bellico, & confopiri. Interea, Regina nostra, cum subodorata esset rem omnem, & quid ageretur intelligeret; neque enim id erat adedò difficile, mutare Consilium de profectioe, à Guisanis paulatim alienari, & ad Principem Condensem non obscurè inclinare. Tulit id Guisanus indignè, Consilia sua non procedere; accepit contumeliôsè Legatum nostrum, proposuit Edicta publicè, Reginam Angliæ insidias facere Regno Galliarum, & solam istos tumultus concitasse. Ista, Regina nostra patienter ferre non potuit, nec sanè debuit. Statim apertè agere, Legatum, uti audio, revocare, militem scribere, navibus omnibus undecunque, atque ubicunque essent, & suis & alienis vela tollere, ne quis exire posset, & quid ageretur nuntiare. O si ea id antea facere voluisset, aut si nunc Principes Germaniæ hoc exemplum sequi vellent. Facilius, & minori jactura, Sanguinis Christiani tota res posset transigi. Et Regina quidem misit hoc tempore in Germaniam, ad Principes; & nunc in Aula Legatus à Guisano, cum novis, ut opinor, blanditiis, ut nos moretur & impediat. Sed non ita erit facile, spero, imponere videntibus. Res Scotiæ de Religione satis sunt pacatæ. Regina sola Missam suam retinet invitis omnibus. Incredibilis fuit hoc anno toto, apud nos, coeli atque aëris intemperies. Nec Sol, nec Luna, nec Hyems, nec Ver, nec Æstas, nec Autumnus, satisfecit officium suum. Ita affatim, & penè sine intermissione pluit, quasi facere jam aliquid Cælum non queat. Ex hac contagione nata sunt monstra: infantes fœdum in modum deformatis corporibus, alii prorsus sine capitibus, alii capitibus alienis; alii trunci sine brachiis, sine tibiis, sine cruribus; alii ossibus solis cohærentes, prorsus sine illis carnibus, quales ferè imagines mortis pingi solent. Similia alia complura nata sunt è porcis, & equabus, è vaccis, è gallinis.



Messis hoc tempore apud nos Angustius quidem provenit, ita tamen ut non possimus multum conqueri. Sarisberiae 14 Augusti, 1562.

Tuus in Christo,

J. Juellus Anglus.

### INSCRIPTIO.

Ornatissimo Viro, Domino Henrico  
Bullingero summo Pastori Eccle-  
siae Tigurinae Domino suo Colen-  
dissimo.

Tiguri.

Number 74.

*An Extract out of the Journal of the Lower-House of  
Convocation.*

ACTA in Inferiori Domo Convocationis, Die Sabba-  
ti Decimo Tertio Die Februarii, Anno 1562.

Ex MSS.  
Gul. Petyt in.  
the Inner-  
Temple.

**D**ICTO Die Sabbati Decimo Tertio Die Februarii, in Inferiori Domo Convocationis Cleri Provinciae Cant' post meridiem hora constituta convenerunt frequentes Dominus Proloquutor cum cæt. infra nominatis ubi post Divini numinus implorationem Legebantur quidem Articuli approbandi vel reprobandi a cætu quorum Articulorum tenor talis est.

1. That all the Sundays of the Year, and Principal Feast of Christ, be kept Holy Days, and other Holy-Days to be abrogate.

2. That in all Parish Churches, the Minister in Common-Prayer, turn his Face towards the People, and there distinctly read the Divine Service appointed, where all the People assembled may hear and be edified.

3. That in Ministering the Sacrament of Baptisme, the Ceremonie of making of the Crosse in the Child's Forehead, may be omitted, as tending to Superstition.

4. That for as much as divers Communicants are not hable to Kneel during the Time of the Communion, for Age, Sicknes, and sundry other Infirmities; and some also Superstitiously both Kneel, and Knock, that

that the Order of Kneeling may be left to the Discretion of the Ordinarie, within his Jurisdiction.

5. That it be sufficient for the Minister, in time of Saying of Divine Service, and Ministering of the Sacraments, to use a Surplice: And that no Minister say Service, or minister the Sacraments, but in a comely Garment, or Habit.

6. That the Use of Organs be removed.

Unde orta fuit superiorum, proband' vel reproband' Disceptatio, multis affirmantibus eosdem à se probari, ac multis affirmantibus illos à se non probari; multisque aliis volentibus, ut eorum Probatio, vel Reprobatio, referatur ad Reverendissimos Dominos, Archiepiscopum & Prælatos, plurimis item protestantibus, se nolle ullo modo consentire, ut aliqua contenta in his Articulis approbentur; quatenus ulla ex parte dissentiant Libro Divini & Communis Servicij, jam Authoritate Senatusconsulti publicè in hoc Regno suscepto; neque velle, ut aliqua Immutatio fiat contra Ordines, Regulas, Ritus, ac cæteras Dispositiones in eo Libro contentas.

Tandem incepit fuerunt publicæ Disputationes fieri à nonnullis doctis Viris ejusdem Domus, super Approbatione, vel Reprobatione dicti Quarti Articuli: Ac tandem placuit Discessionem, sive Divisionem fieri Votorum, sive Suffragiorum singulorum; quæ mox subsequuta fuit: Atque numeratis Personis pro parte Articulos approbante, fuerunt Personæ 43; pro parte varò illos non approbante, neque aliquam Immutationem contra dictum Librum Publici Servicij jam suscepti, fieri petente fuerunt Personæ 35.

Ac deinde, recitatis singulorum Votis, sive Suffragiis, prompta sunt quemadmodum in sequenti folio liquet & apparet.

## DISPUTATORES.

Decanus Wygorn'	Mr. Laur. Neuell.
Mr. Byckley.	Mr. Talphill.
Archid' Covent'	Mr. Crowley.
Mr. Nebynson.	Mr. Tremain.
Mr. Pullen.	Mr. Hewet.
Mr. Cotterell.	Decanus Eliens'
Mr. Joh. Waker.	

Pro parte Articulos prædictos approbante, fuerunt omnes subscripti; Viz.

D. Proloquutor, Decanus S.	Decan' Heref,	-	-	-
Pauli.	Mr. Soreby	-	-	-
Mr. Leaver	Mr. Bradbriger	-	-	-

Mr. Pe-



Mr. Peder	-	-	-	Mr. Hyll	-	-	-
Mr. Watte	-	-	-3	Decan' Oxon.	-	-	-
Decan' Lychef.	-	-	-	Mr. Savage	-	-	-
Mr. Spenser	-	-	-	Mr. Pullan	-	-	-
Mr. Beyfley	-	-	-	Mr. Willſon	-	-	-
Mr. Nebinſon	-	-	-	Mr. Burton	-	-	-2
Mr. Bowier	-	-	-	Mr. Heamond	-	-	-
Mr. Ebden	-	-	-	Mr. Weyborn	-	-	-
Mr. Longlonde	-	-	-	Mr. Day	-	-	-
Mr. Tho. Lancaſter	-	-	-	Mr. Rever	-	-	-
Mr. Ed. Weſton	-	-	-2	Mr. Roberts	-	-	-5
Mr. Wyſdon	-	-	-	Mr. Calphill	-	-	-3
Mr. Sall	-	-	-2	Mr. Godwyn	-	-	-2
Mr. Joh. Walker	-	-	-2	Mr. Pratt	-	-	-
Mr. Becon	-	-	-	Mr. Trenun	-	-	-2
Mr. Proctor	-	-	-2	Mr. Leaton	-	-	-
Mr. Cockerell	-	-	-	Mr. Kemper	-	-	-
Mr. Todd, Archid' Bed.	-	-	-2	Mr. Ronayer	-	-	-
Mr. Crouley	-	-	-	Mr. Abis	-	-	-

*Perſons 43. Voices 58.*

Pro parte Articulos non approbante, ac proteſtante ut ſupra, ſunt ſubſcripta; Viz.

Decan' Weſt	-	-	-2	Mr. Cheſton	-	-	-
Mr. Coterell	-	-	-4	M. Chanddelor	-	-	-
Mr. Latymer	-	-	-3	Mr. Bonder	-	-	-
Decan' Elien.	-	-	-	Mr. Juſt. Lancaſter	-	-	-
Mr. Heuwette	-	-	-3	Mr. Pondde	-	-	-
Mr. Ric. Walker	-	-	-2	Mr. Conſtantyne	-	-	-
Mr. Warner	-	-	-	Mr. Calberley	-	-	-
Mr. Tho. Whyte	-	-	-	Mr. Nich. Smith	-	-	-
Mr. Knouall	-	-	-2	Mr. Watſon	-	-	-
Mr. Jo. Priſe.	-	-	-	Mr. Walter Jones	-	-	-3
Mr. Bolte	-	-	-2	Mr. Garth	-	-	-3
Mr. Hughes	-	-	-3	Mr. Turnebull	-	-	-
Mr. Brigewater	-	-	-2	Mr. Robynſon	-	-	-
Mr. Lougher	-	-	-3	Mr. Bell	-	-	-
Mr. Pierſon	-	-	-	Mr. Ithell	-	-	-
Mr. Merick	-	-	-	Mr. Byckley	-	-	-
Mr. Luſon	-	-	-	Mr. Hugh Morgan	-	-	-3
Mr. Greenfell	-	-	-3				

*Perſons 35. Voices 59.*

Number

## Number 75.

*Bishop Horn's Letter to Gualter, concerning the Controversy about the Habits of the Clergy.*

Robertus Hornus Gualtero.

**L**iteras tuas, mi Gualtere primas, quàm amanter & jucundè accepim, vel hinc existimare debes, quòd de Tigurinæ Reipubli-<sup>Ex MSS. Tig r.</sup> Statu, in cujus Fide ac Liberalitate exul collocatus fueram, tum de tui reliquorumque amicissimorum, & de me optimè meritorum valetudine cognoscebam. Accedebat tua in Johannis Evangelium Lucubratio; scribendi, ut tu ais, Occasio, quam ita probo, ut ad veram Scripturarum Scientiam & Pietatem conferre multùm judicem, & non solum à Tyronibus, quibus tu potissimùm studes, sed ab ipsis Professoribus legendam existimem. Id Fœdere Gallico & Helvetio, per spiciam Tigurinam probo, quæ astutias Gallicas, Religionis prætextu adumbratas, olfecit & patefecit. Bernenses etiam Vicinos vestros spero, suasu vestro ab inhonesto fœdere assensum cohibituros. De Peste, quæ Regionem Tigurinam invasit, opinionem habeo, quod impiorum causa etiam ipsi pij affliguntur. Quà perculsus Pater Bullingerus, quòd periculum evasit, debemus putare eum qui duriora Tempora sustulit, fœlicioribus esse à Domino reservatum. Tuam domum à contagione tutam, divinæ Clementiæ quæ laboribus tuis voluit otium, ascribo. Res nostræ ita se habent, quòd ut vos vicinas Gallicas, sic nos intestinas Papisticas timemus Insidias. Primates Papistici in publicis custodiis, reliqui exilium affectantes, scriptis quibusdam in vulgus disseminatis, sese in gratiam, nos in odium vocant. Ansam minutam sanè & ejusmodi nacti. Controversia nuper de quadratis Pileis & Superpelliciis, inter nos orta, exclamârunt Papistæ, non esse quam profiteamur, unanimem in Religione Fidem; sed variis nos opinionibus duci, nec in una sententia stare posse. Auxit hanc Calumniam publicum Senatus nostri Decretum, de profliganda Papistica impietate, ante nostram Restitutionem sancitum; quo sublata reliqua fece, usus Pileorum quadratorum & Superpelliciorum Ministris remanebat. Ita tamen ut superstitionis opinione careret, quod discretis Decreti verbis cavetur. Tolle hoc Decretum non potest; nisi omnium Regni Ordinum, quorum conspiratione atque consensu, nobis penes, quos tunc non fuit sciendi vel abrogandi Authoritas, Pileis & Superpelliciis uti, vel aliis locum dare injunctum est. Ubi his sumus, ne munera Christiana, per nos deferta, occuparent adversarij. Sed cum jam hæc Res in magnam Contentionem inter nostros devenerit, noster Grex pusillus etiam in duas abierit partes; altera, ob illud Decretum deferendum Ministerium, altera non deferendum putet. Peto abs te, mi Gualtere, quod de hac Controversia, quæ nos unà vexat, senseris ut quæ in primo tempore scribas. Speramus certè proximo



mis comitiis, illam Decreti partem abrogaturos. Sed si id obtineri non poterit, quoniam magna ope clàm nituntur Papistæ, Ministerio nihilominus divino adhærendum esse judico; ne deserto eo, ac à nobis ea conditione repudiato, sese insinuarent. Quâ de re, Sententiam, mi Gualtere, expecto tuam; An hæc, quæ sic facimus, salva Conscientia facere possimus. De vestra etiam Ecclesia ita sum sollicitus, ut quoniam multos fideles Ministros ex peste interiisse suspicor, per tuas Literas scire vellem eorum Nomina qui jam supersunt. Dominus Ihesus, magnus Gregis sui Custos, Vos, & Universam suam Ecclesiam custodiat. In eodem vale. Datum è Fernomiano Castro, 16 Calendis Augusti 1565.

Tuus in Christo,

Rob. Winton.

### INSCRIPTIO.

Ornatissimo Theologo, Domino  
Gualtero, Tigurinæ Ecclesiæ  
Ministro Dignissimo.

### Number 76.

*Bullinger's Letter to Bishop Horne, concerning that Question.*

Bullingerus Horno, de Re Vestitaria.

(Eadem iterùm recurrit, aliâ Manu.)

Reverendissimo Patri in Christo, Domino Roberto Horno, Episcopo Wintonienfi (in Angliâ) Vigilantissimo; Domino suo plurimùm Observando, Salutem,

Ex MSS.  
Tigar.

Quæ de Controversia de Vestitu Ministrorum, inter vos exorta, scribis, Reverende in Christo Pater, prius etiam ex Johannis Abeli, communis nostri Amici, Literis intellexeram, quibus nuper respondi. Doluit mihi vehementer, & adhuc dolet, hanc occasionem adversariis datam esse, quâ inter se committereantur, qui apud vos puriorem Veritatis Doctrinam prædicant. De Causa verò non libenter pronuntio, cùm illius Circumstantias omnes fortassis non nôrim. Ne  
tamen

tamen abs te, & allis amicis requisitus, officio deesse videar; hic repetere volui, quæ nuper in literis ad Abetum datis comprehendi. Probo Zelum eorum, qui Religionem ab omnibus fordibus Papisticis repurgatam volunt. Scio enim illud Prophetæ, quo Deus monet, ut scortationes à facie simul & uberibus removeamus. Interim vestram quoque probo Prudentiam, qui, ob vestitum, Ecclesias non putatis deferendas. Etenim cum finis ministerii sit ædificatio & conservatio Ecclesiæ, magna circumspeditione nobis opus est, ne ab hoc declinemus; dum causam per se bonam & sanctam defendimus. Nec modo videndum est qualis jam sit Ecclesiæ conditio, quam deferere statuimus, sed quæ, futura sit nobis ab illa digressio. Si meliorem fore certum est, abire licet. Sin verò deteriorem fore, non aut malis atque infidis operariis locum demus. At quantum ego conicere possum, hoc unum quærunt adversarii vestri communes, ut vobis ejectis, ut Papistas vel ab his non multum diversos Lutheranos Doctores & antistites surrogent. Quod si fiat, non modo Ecclesiasticus ordo omnis turbabitur & crescet Cæremoniarum Ineptissimarum numerus, verum etiam Idola reducuntur (quæ à Lutheranis defendi scimus) ἀρχολατρεία circa Sacram Domini cænam instaurabitur, privata absolutio & sub hac confessio auricularis paulatim subrepet, & infinita alia fient, quæ & Publicè turbas dabunt, & privatim multos pios in periculum adducent. Nam non dubito vas in vestro ministerio eò usque profecisse ut plurimos habeatis in toto Regno nobiles, cives, agricolas, omnis denique ordinis & loci Homines, qui de Religione optimè sentiant, & Doctrinam omnem abominantur, quæ superstitionibus & idololatriæ fenestras aperit, & quibus intolerabile erit Tyrannidem in Ecclesia denuò stabiliri, quæ Populi infelicis conscientias gravet. Hi certè, si vos ab Ecclesiæ gubernaculis discedatis, adversariorum libidini subjicientur, qui examina & inquisitiones cum publicas tum privatas adversus eos instituent, hæreseos & seditionis accusabunt, & per hos totam causam Religionis, Reginae Serenissimæ & totius regni proceribus suspectam atque invisam reddent. Horum ergo artibus & improbitati prudenter occurrendum fuerit, ne illis sponte demus, quod jam annis aliquot magno studio & labore quæsierunt. Quod si quis me rogat, an ergò eos probem, qui decreta ejusmodi ut primi fecerunt, vel nunc observata volunt, quibus fordes Papisticæ salventur? Ingenuè & libere respondeo, illos mihi non placere. Nam aut imprudenter nimis agunt, si ex nostrorum numero sunt: Aut malo dolo Ecclesiarum Libertati insidias stituunt. Etsi feces istas tanquam ad Dei cultum & conscientiarum animæque salutem necessarias vobis obtruerent, quidvis potius ferendum esse judicarem, quàm ut Ecclesias pium Populum ab ingenua fidei professione abstrahi per illos pateremini. Sed cum in decreto illo disertis verbis (ut tu scribis) cautum sit, quadratos pilcos cum superpelliceis absque omni superstitionis opinione retineri debere, simul vestris quoque Conscientiis cautum esse puto. Licebit enim vobis, ni fallor, facti vestri rationem reddere, superstitionis opinionem ex omnium animis remove & protestatione uti, quæ scandalum omne è medio auferat. Interea Serenissima Regina & Illustissimi Proceres Regni edoceantur, moveantur & exsultent, ne Reformationem tanta cum laude & magna cum totius orbis admiratione institutem, scorbis & fordibus ejusmodi inficiant atque polluant,

neve



neve vicinis Ecclesiis Scoticis & Gallicis aliquam præbeant dissensionis suspicionem. Scio à quibusdam quæstiones moveri multas de regum & magistratus autoritate, an quid hujus ille in Ecclesia statuere, & an horum decretis ministri obedire debeant? At ego Disputationes illas in hac Causa non ita necessarias puto, cum (ut modo dixi) superstitionis opinio per ipsius decreti verba excludatur. Et cavendum est, ne coram populo de magistratus autoritate disputando, alicujus turba authores, simus. In comitiis verò Regni Publicis, ista tractari debent legitime, & qui per occasionem privatim Reginam & Principes Officii admonere possunt, ii suis partibus minime deesse debent. Hac Reverende in Christo pater, habui quæ nunc scriberem, quia meam in hac Causa sententiam audire cupiebas. Nolim ego alicujus Conscientiam gravare, sed cavendum puto nedum nobis aut existimationi nostræ privatim consulimus, Ecclesias totas in gravius aliquod periculum adducamus. Et meam hanc sententiam à Pauli mente non dissentire puto, qui omnia omnibus fieri solius fuit, ut quàm plurimos lucrificeret: Et qui Timotheum circumcidere voluit, ne Judæos illius loci à Religione Christiana alienaret, & illius ministerio commodius uti posset: Qui tamen alibi nihil prorsus dandum esse putavit iis, qui in circumcissione salutis meritum collocabant. Sed non errabant in ejusmodi controversiis, quotquot ædificationem Ecclesiæ suorum consiliorum atque actionum scopum atque finem constituerint. De rebus nostris non est quod scribam. In anni superioris lue ita nobis prospexit Dominus, ut neminem ex ministrorum numero amiserimus. In agro unus & alter obiit. Velitatur nunc & nonnihil pestis in Urbe nostra, sed non sævitura videtur. Sumus in manu Domini, ejus voluntas fiat. Ad vigessimum Novembris Electorum Principum conventus erit Wormatiæ in quo de pace per Germaniam constituenda deliberabitur & quædam de Episcopis & eorum Reformatione tractabuntur quæ maximi momenti erunt. Deus optimus maximus suo Spiritu omnium mentes & Consilia regat ad sui nominis gloriam & Ecclesiæ incolumitatem. Uxorem tuam honestissimam matronam, mea plurimum salvere jubet. Vale Pater in Christo Reverende. Tiguri 3 Novembris, Anno 1565.

Quæ Stamphii Manu hoc Loco  
Scripta. P. 135.

## Number 73.

*Bullinger's Answer to Humphreys and Sampson on the same Subject.*

Ornatissimis D. Laurentio Humfredo, & D. Thomæ Sampsoni,  
Anglis, Dominis meis & Fratribus in Christo.

**D**ominus JESUS benedicat vobes, Viri Ornatissimi & Fratres Charissimi, ac fervet vos ab omni malo. Accepi literas vestras, ex quibus intellexi te lamentari, conqueri, quod mea responsio data ad tuam quæstionem in via videtur amissa. Ego verò, mi Frater tunc non vidi, neque nunc video, quorsum oportuerit copiosiores scribere Literas. Tu enim rogabas tunc duntaxat, quæ esset mea de re vestitaria, de qua contenditur in Anglia, sententia? Ad hanc quæstionem brevibus tibi respondendum putavi, nam brevibus meam Sententiam dicere potui; dum sciebam beatæ memoriæ D. Pet. Martyrem & Oxoniæ & hic eandem quæstionem tractavisse sæpius & fusius, quibus quod adjicerem non habebam. Memini verò in Literis ad te Sampsonem Fratrem datis, meæ quidem Sententiæ factam tum quidem fuisse mentionem, & ut iterum uno & altero verbo quod sentio dicam: Nunquam probaverim, si vestrum jubeamini exequi Ministerium, ad aram Crucifixi imagine oneratam magis quàm ornatam, & in veste Missatica hoc est in alba & in Copa quæ à tergo quoque ostendet Crucifixi imaginem. Attamen ex Literis allatis ex Anglia intelligo 5 nulla nunc est de ejusmodi vestitu contentio, sed quæstio est, an liceat Ministris Evangelicis portare pileum rotundum vel quadratum & vestem albam, quam vocant super pellicium, qua Minister ornatus, à vulgo discerantur? Et an oporteat Ministerium vel stationem sacram citius relinquere, quàm hujusmodi uti vestibus? Respondi ad hanc quæstionem præteritis nundinis Reverendo Viro D. Rob Horn. Vintoniensi Episcopo & quidem brevibus repentes verba D. Martyris. Scripserat eidem paulò ante Symmysta & affinis meus charissimus D. Rod. Gualtherus. Cujus exemplum hisce inclusum ad vos & ad alios Fratres nostros mitto. Ergo si nos audire vultis, nostrumque judicium de re vestitaria expetitis, sicut ultimis vestris ad me Literis significabatis, en habetis in illa Epistola meum judicium. Cui si acquiescere non poteritis, dolemus sanè quàm vehementissimè, & cum nullum aliud nobis ampius supersit Consilium, Dominum, qui in omnibus & semper respiciendus est, ex animo & incessanter oramus, ut ipse sua gratia atque potentia rebus succurret succonsulat afflictis.

Quæstiones tu Haman sive Frater, proposuisti, plures verò ejusdem Argumenti Sampsonus contexuit. Licet verò pro mea simplicitate nunquam probaverim vel in tot distrahi quæstiones & nodis injectis in precationibus, quæ alioqui simpliciores per se, brevibus & satis perspicuè expediri potuerant, aliquid tamen annotabo ad singulas,



ut hac quoque in re vobis Dominis meis observandis & Fratribus charissimis, quantum per meam possum infantiam atamen retusam magis quàm acutam, inserviam. Vos autem oro, ut benignè hæc à me pro vestro amantissimo accipiat & de his animo judicetis purgato affectibus atque tranquillo. A contentionibus abhorreo prorsus, & nihil magis supplex peto à Domino, quàm ut ab Ecclesia amoveat contentiones, quæ ab initio & semper plurimum nocuere veræ Pietati & Ecclesiam pacatam & florentem lacerarunt.

Cùm quæritur, an debeant Ecclesiasticis leges præscribi vestiaræ, ut iis distinguantur à Laicis? Respondeo ambiguitatem esse in verbo debere. Si enim accipiat pro merito & quod ad salutem pertineat acquirendam, non arbitror hoc velle vel ipsos Legum Auctores. Si verò dicatur posse hoc fieri decori, ornatûsque vel dignitatis & ordinis gratia, ut sit similis quædam observantia, aut tale quid intelligatur, quale illud est, quod Apostolus vult, Episcopum vel Ministrum Ecclesiæ *κόσμιον*, compositum inquam vel ornatum esse, non video, quid peccet, qui veste hujusmodi induitur, aut qui hujusmodi veste uti jubet.

2. An Ceremonialis cultus Levitici Sacerdotii sit revocandus in Ecclesiam? Respondeo. Si pileus & vestis non indecora Ministro qui Superstitione caret jubeatur usurpari à Ministro, nemo sanè dixerit verè Judaïsmum revocari: Preterea repeto hic, quod ad hanc Quæstionem video respondisse D. Martyrem, qui cum ostendisset Sacramenta veteris legis fuisse abolita quæ nemo debeat reducere in Ecclesiam Christi, quæ habeat Baptisma & cœnam Sacram, subjecit: Fuerunt nihilominus in lege Levitica Actiones aliquot ita comparatæ, ut propriè Sacramenta dici non possent: Faciebunt nostræ ad decorem & ordinem & aliquam commoditatem, quæ ut lumini naturæ congrua & ad nostram aliquam utilitatem conducentia ego & revocari, & retineri posse judico. Quis non videt Apostolos pro panè & convictu credentium faciliore mandasse gentibus, ut à Sanguine & prefocato abstinerent? Erant hæc citra controversiam Legalia & Levitica. Decimas quoque hodie multis in locis Institutas esse ad alendos Ministros, nemo nostrum ignorat. Psalmos & Hymnos cani in sacris cœtibus manifestum est, quod Levitæ quoque usurparunt. Utque hoc non omitam. Dies habemus fastos in memoriam Dominicæ Resurrectionis & alia: An verò illa omnia erunt abolenda quia sunt vestigia legis Antiquæ? Vides ergo non omnia Levitica sic esse antiquata, ut quædam ex iis usurpari non possint: Hæc ille.

3. An vestitum cum Papistis communicare liceat? Resp. Nondum constat Papam discrimen vestium induxisse in Ecclesiam, imò discrimen vestium constat Papa esse longè vetustius. Nec video, cur non liceat vestitu non superstuito sed politiore & composito, communicare cum Papistis. Si nulla re cum illis communicare liceret, oporteret & templa omnia deferere, nulla accipere stipendia, non uti Baptismo, non recitare Symbolum Apostolorum & Nicænum, adeòq; abjicere orationem Dominicam. Neque vos mutuatis ab eis ulla ceremonias. Res vestiaria ab initio Reformationis nunquam fuit abolita, & retinetur adhuc non lege Papistica, sed vi edicti Regii, ut res media & politica.

4. Ita

4. Ita sanè, si ut in re civili utamini Pileo aut Veste peculiari, non hoc redolet Judaïsmum, neque Monachismum; nam hi volunt videri à civili vita separati, & constituunt meritum in peculiari sua Veste Sic Eustathius, Sebastia Episcopus, damnatus est, non simpliciter propter peculiarem Velem, sed quòd in Veste Religionem constitueret. Noti sunt Gangrenf. Conc. Canones, Laodicensi, & VI. Synodi. Quod si ex plebe nonnulli sunt persuasi, recolare hoc Papismum, Judaïsmum & Monachismum, adineneantur, & rectè de tuis instruantur. Quod si importuni quorundam clamoribus, hac de re ad vulgus profusus, multi inquieti redduntur, videant qui hoc faciunt, ne graviora sibi onera imponant, Regiamque Majestatem iritent, denique multos fideles Ministros in discrimen adducant, ex quo vix emergere queant.

5. An qui Libertate sua hætenus acquieverunt, vi Regij Edicti, hac Servitute, implicare se & Ecclesiam salva Conscientia possint? Respondeo; Cavendum ego cenfeo, ne odiosius disputetur clametur & contendatur de re vestiarum, atque importunitate hac detur occasio Regiæ Majestati, ut liberum amplius illis non relinquat, qui libertate hætenus usi sunt; sed clamoribus non necessariis irritata, mandet sumere vestes illas Ecclesiasticas, vel cedere statione sua, Mirum sanè mihi videtur (ineam sententiam, viri Ornatissimi, & fratres Charissimi, dixerim) quòd vobis persuadeatis, salva conscientia vos & Ecclesias servituti vestiarum subicere non posse, & non potius expenditis si in re politica & indifferenti uti nolitis & perpetuè contendatis odiosius, ejusmodi servituti & vos & Evangelicos subiciatis, qui statione vestra cedentes, lupis exponitis Ecclesias, aut saltem parum idoneis doctoribus, qui non æquè ac vos ad docendum populum sunt instructi. An verò Ecclesias in libertatem asseruistis, quando occasionem datis, Ecclesiam pluribus etiam gravioribus quoque oneribus opprimendi? Num ignoratis, quod multi quærant, quomodo erga Evangelicam prædicationem si is affecti & quales vobis successuri sint, quid de illis sperandum sit?

6. An Vestitus Clericalis res sit indifferens? Videtur sanè res indifferens, cum sit civilis; Decoris, Ornatus, Ordinisque habeat rationem, in quo Cultus non constituitur.

Hæc, brevibus, ad tuas volui respondere, Doctissime & Dilectissime mi Frater Laurenti. Jam venio etiam ad D. Sampsonis nostri Quæstiones; in quibus exponendis, fortè ero brevior.

1. An Vestitus peculiaris, à Laicis distinctus, Ministris Ecclesiæ unquam fuerit constitutus; & an hodie, in Reformata Ecclesia, debeat constitui? Respondeo: In veteri Ecclesia, fuisse peculiarem Presbyterorum Vestitum, apparet ex Historiâ Ecclesiasticâ Theodoretii, Lib. II. c. 27. & Socratis, Lib. VI. c. 22. Pallio in sacris usos esse Ministros, nemo ignorat, qui veterum Monumenta obiter inspexit. Idèd antea admonui, diversitatem Indumentorum non habere suam originem à Papa. Eusebius rectè testatur, ex vetustissimis Scripturibus, Johannem Apostolum Ephesi Petalum, seu Laminam gestasse Pontificalem in Capite: Et de Cypriano Martyre testatur Pon-



tius Diaconus, quòd cum jugulum carnifici præbere vellet, ei prius birrum dedisse, Diacono verò dalmaticam, atque sic ipsum in lineis stetisse indutum. Præterea, Vestis candidæ Ministrorum meminit Chrysostomus: Ac certum est, Christianos, cum à Gentilismo ad Ecclesiam converterentur, pro Toga induisse Palli. Ob quam rem, cum ab infidelibus iriderentur, Tertullianus Librum de Pallio conscripsit eruditissimum. Alia hujusmodi plura præferre possem, nisi hæc sufficerent. Mallem quidem nihil invitis injici Ministris, & eos ea uti posse consuetudine qua Apostoli. Sed cum Regia Majestas Pileum tantummodò & candidam injicit Vestem, in qua Cultum (quod sæpe jam repetitum est) non constituit; eademque res apud veteres, dum meliores adhuc essent res Ecclesiæ, usurpatæ sint abique superstitione & culpa; optarem, bonos Ministros in his, non ut in proa & puppi, quemadmodum dicitur, totum constituere Religionis præfectum: Sed dare aliquid tempori, & de re indifferenti non odiosius alterari, sed modestè indicare, hæc quidem ferri posse, sed proficiendum cum tempore. Propiores enim esse Apostolicæ simplicitati, qui discrimina illa ignorent, aut non urgeant, interim tamen à Disciplina in amictu non sunt alieni.

2, 3. An Vestium Præscriptio conveniat cum Christiana Libertate? Resp. Res indifferentes admittere aliquam Præscriptionem, adeoque Coactionem, ut sic dicam, quoad usum & non quoad virtutem; ut aliquid scilicet, quod natura sit indifferens, ut nimirum Conscientiæ obtrudatur, & ita animis injiciatur Religio. Tempora certè & Loca sacrorum Cœtuum, certè habentur inter indifferentia; & tunc si hic nulla sit Præscriptio, quanta obsecro confusio conturbatioque oriretur?

4. An ullæ Ceremoniæ novæ, præter expressum præscriptum Verbi Dei, cumulari possint? Resp. Me non probare, si novæ cumulantur Ceremoniæ: Sed aliquas institui posse non negâim, modò in eis non statuatur Dei Cultus, sed instituantur propter Ordinem & Disciplinam. Christus ipse Encœniorum Ceremoniam, vel Festum servavit, nec tamen lege præceptum legimus hoc Festum. In summa, Propositionum, vel Quæstionum de res vestiaria, potior pars de eo disputat, an de Vestibus Leges in Ecclesia condi vel debeant, vel possint? Ac Quæstionem revocat ad genus. Quidnam, videlicet, de Ceremoniis statuere liceat? Ad has Propositiones paucis respondeo: Me quidem malle nullas Ceremonias, nisi rarissimas, obtrudi Ecclesiæ: Interim fateor, non posse statim Leges de his, fortè non adeo necessarias, aliquando etiam inutiles, damnari impietatis, turbasque & schisma excitare in Ecclesia, quando (videlicet) superstitione carent, & res sunt sua natura indifferentes.

5, 6. An Ritus Judæorum antiquatos revocare, Religioniq; Idololatrarum propriè dicatos, in usus Reformatarum Ecclesiarum liceat transferre? De hac Quæstione antea respondi, ubi disserui de Leviticis Ritibus. Nolim verò Ritus idololatricos, non repurgatos ab Erroribus, transferri in Ecclesias Reformatas. Rursus verò & ex adverso quæri

quæri potuerat; An recepti Ritus, remota Superstitione, propter Disciplinam & Ordenim, retineri sine peccato non possint?

7. An Conformatio in Ceremoniis necessariò sit exigenda? Respondeo, Conformationem in Ceremoniis, in omnibus Ecclesiis fortè non esse necessariam. Interim, si præcipiatur res non necessaria, rursus tamen non impia, ob eam Ecclesia non videtur deferenda. Non fuit in Ritibus Conformitas in omnibus, in Ecclesiis vetustioribus: Quæ tamen conformibus utebantur Ritibus, eas non vituperabant Conformitate carentes. Facile autem credo, Viros prudentes atque politicos, Conformationem Rituum urgere, quòd existiment hanc facere ad Concordiam, & quòd una sit Ecclesia totius Angliæ; in qua re, si nihil impij videatur, non video, quomodo ejusmodi non malis institutis vos hostiliter objiciatis?

8. An Ceremoniæ, cum aperto scandalo conjunctæ, retineri possint? Respondeo, Scandalum vitari oportere. Videndum interim, ne sub scandalo nostras Affectiones contegamus: Non ignoratis aliud quidem datum, aliud verò acceptum, & ultrò accersitum esse scandalum. Non disputo nunc, An Vos, sine grandi scandalo d.to, deferere possitis Ecclesias, pro quibus Christus mortuus est, propter rem indifferenterem.

9. An ullæ Constitutione ferendæ in Ecclesia, quæ natura sua impiæ quidem non sunt, sed tamen ad Ædificationem nihil faciunt? Resp. Si Constitutiones impietate carent, quas vobis imponere vult Regia Majestas, ferendæ sunt potius, quàm deferendæ Ecclesiæ. Si enim Ædificatio Ecclesiæ hac in re potissimum est spectanda; deferendo certè Ecclesiam, plus destruxerimus Ecclesiam, quàm Vestes induendo. Et ubi abest Impietas, nec læditur Conscientia, ibi cedendum non est, licet aliqua imponatur Servitus. Interim verò quæri rursus poterat, An sub Servitute justè referamus rem vestariam; quatenus facit ad Decorem & Ordenem?

10. An in Reformatis Ecclesiis à Principe præscribendum in Ceremoniis, sine voluntate & libero consensu Ecclesiasticorum? Resp. Si Voluntas Ecclesiasticorum semper sit expectanda Principi, nunquam fortè sapientissimi & piissimi Reges, Afa, Ezechias, Josaphat & Josias, alijque Principes boni, Levitas & Ministros Ecclesiarum redegerint in ordinem. Quamvis nolim prorsus excludi Episcopos à Consultationibus Ecclesiasticorum. Nolim rursus eam sibi potentiam vindicare, quam sibi usurpârunt contra Principes & Magistratus in Papatu. Nolim item tacere Episcopos, & consentire ad iniqua Principum instituta.

11, 12. Postremæ Quæstiones duæ propiùs ad rem ipsam accedunt: An consultius Ecclesiæ sic inservire; an propterea Ecclesiastico munere rejeci? Et, an boni Pastores, jure ob hujusmodi, Ceremonias neglectas à Ministerio avocari possint? Resp. Si in Ritibus nulla est Superstitio, nulla Impietas, urgentur tamen & imponuntur bonis Pastoribus, qui mallent illos sibi non imponi: Dabo sanè, & quidem



ex abundanti, onus & servitutem ipsis imponi; sed non dabo ideo iustissimis ex causis, Stationem vel Ministerium propterea esse deferendum, & locum cedendum lupis, ut antea dictum est, vel ineptioribus Ministris. Præsertim, cum maneat libera Prædicatio, - - - - possit obtrudere servitus, & multa huiusmodi alia, &c.

Dixi quæ videbantur mihi dicenda de propositis Quæstionibus, non nescius alios pro sua eruditione, longè elegantius meliusque potuisse excussisse; sed quia ita voluistis, ut responderem, feci quod potui, liberum aliis relinquens de his & calamum & iudicium. Quod superest, nullius ego his Conscientiam urgere volo, examinanda propono; moneoque, ne quis in hac Controversia, ex φιλονεικία, sibi faciat Conscientiam. Hortor item vos omnes, per Jesum Christum, Dominum meum, Ecclesiæ suæ Servatorem, Caput & Regem, ut probè quisque apud se expendat: Utra nam re plus ædificarit Ecclesiam Christi, si propter Ordinem & Decorem Vestibus utatur, ut re indifferenti, & hæcenus ad concordiam utilitatemque Ecclesiasticam nonnihil facienti; an verò propter rem vestiariam deferere Ecclesiam, occupandam postea, si non à lupis manifestis, saltem à Ministris minus idoneis & bonis? Domine Iesus det vobis videre, sapere, & sequi quod facit ad Gloriam ejus, & Ecclesiæ Pacem & Salutem.

Valete in Domino, unà cum omnibus fidelibus Ministris. Orabimus scdulo pro vobis Dominum, ut ea sentiat & faciat, quæ sancta sunt & salutaria. D. Gualtherus amicissimè vos salutatur, & omnia sælicia vobis precatur. Faciunt hoc ipsum reliqui etiam Ministri. Tiguri, Calendis Maij, Anno Domini M DLXVI.

Vester ex animo totus,

Heinrychus Bullingerus, Sen.

Tigurinæ Ecclesiæ Minister.

Admonitum te volo, chare mi Sampson, ne quid D. Bibliandri edas, nam quæ habetis excerptæ sunt ab Auditoribus ejus, & non sunt scripta à D. Bibliandro. Habent autem Hæredes ejus Commentaria, ejus manu scripta in Biblia, vel in vetus Testamentum. Indignissimè enim ferunt, si quid sub ejus nomine ederetur, quod ipse non scripsisset. Interim gratias ago humanitati tuæ, quòd de his nos fecisti certiores. Et Literæ tuæ 16 Febr. scriptæ, demùm mihi traditæ sunt 26 Aprilis.

## Number 78.

Humphreys and Sampson's Letter to Bullinger, *insisting on the Question.*

Laurentius Humfredus, & Thomas Sampson, Bullingero.

CUM diligentia tua clarissimo Viro, in scribendo nobis probatur: Ex MSS. Tiguri. Tum verò ex Literis illis quidem humanissimis incredibilis tuus erga nos amor & Ecclesiæ nostræ singularis cura, & concordie ardentissimum studium apparent. Quæstiones aliquot in finibus P. T. in quibus jus & quasi cardo totius Controversiæ sita esse videbatur. Quibus est à P. T. accurate responsum, nobis tamen quod bona cum venia tua dicimus, non est satisfactum plenè. Primò respondet P. T. Ministris præscribi posse leges Vestitias ut iis colore & forma à Laicis distinguantur: Esse enim civilem observationem & Apostolum velle Episcopum esse *κόσμιον*. Cum hæc quæstio de Ecclesiasticis Homini- bus proposita sit & ad Ecclesiasticam politiam spectet: Quo modo habitus Ministrorum singularis & clericalis civilem rationem habere possit, non videmus. Ut Episcopum *κόσμιον* esse debere fatemur; sic ad ornatum mentis non ad cultum corporis cum Ambrosio referimus. Et ut in vestitu honestatem dignitatem, gravitatem requirimus: Sic decorum ab hostibus Religionis nostræ peti negamus. Secundo respondes Hypotheticè, si pileus & vestis non indecorus Ministro, & quæ superstitione carent, jubeatur usurpari à Ministris Judaismum propterea non revocari. At qui esse potest vestis simplici Ministerio Christi conveniens, quæ Theatro & Pompæ Sacerdoti Papistæ serviebat? Neque enim (quo nostri P. T. persuadent) pileus quadrus & vestitus externus solummodo exiguntur sed etiam sacras vestes in templo adhibentur, superpelliceum, seu alba chori vestis, & capa revocantur. Quæ Judaismi *μυήματα* quædam esse & simulacra non modò Papistæ ipsi in suis Libris clamitant, sed P. T. non semel ex Innocentio docuit. D. Martyris præceptoris nostri colendissimi testimonio libenter subscribimus. Sed quæ ille affert exempla ad decorum & ordinem pertinent, hæc Ecclesiam deformant, *εὐταζίαν* perturbant, condecenciam omnem evertunt: Illa lumini naturæ congruunt; hæc prodigiosa & monstrosa sunt: Illa juxta Tertulliani regulam meras necessitates & utilitates habebant: Hæc inepta prorsus & supervacanea & inutilia sunt, nec ædificationi nec ulli bono usui conducentia sed verius ut ejus Martyris nostri verbis utamur, cultui, quem hodie quotquot pii sunt execrantur, splendide inservierunt. Vestium Ecclesiasticarum discrimen hodiè receptum Papisticum esse inventum ipsi Papistolæ Gloriantur, Othonis Constitutiones loquuntur, Liber Pontificalis ostendit, oculi & ora omnium comprobant. Usus Decimarum Stipendii, Baptismi, Symboli, & ante Papam natum divino instituto inolevit. Et cum

Augustino



Augustino quicquid in aliqua Hæresi Divinum ac Legitimum reperimus, id & approbamus & retinemus, non inficiamur. Hoc autem quia erroris illius ac dissensionis proprium est, veraciter cum eodem arguimus & certamus. Quod addis, rem vestiarum ab initio reformationis non fuisse abolitam, in ea rursus vestri minimè vera retulerunt. Multis enim in locis Serenissimi Regis Edvardi VI. temporibus absque superpelliceo cæna D. pure celebrabatur: Et Copa quæ tum lege abrogata est nunc Publicio decreto restituta est. Hoc non est Papismus extirpare, sed denuo plantare, non in Pietate proficere sed deficere. Vestitum Sacerdotalem civilem esse ais: Monachismus, Papismus, Judaismus redolere negas. De superpelliceo quid blaterent Papistæ habitus Clericorum apud eos quanti fiat, & quo Religioni dicatus sit Prudentiam tuam ex libris eorum intelligere non dubitamus. Deinde Monachatum ac Papismus sapit illa ambitio & Pharisæica peculiaris, vestitus præscriptio; cui illi hodiè non minùs quam olim Morachi suæ cucullæ tribuunt. Neq; verò simul ac semel irrupit sanctitatis & meriti opinio, sed paulatim & sensim irrepsit. Quod ne hic quoque fiat, quod veremur, indecirò non ab re cunctamur, & principiis obstare conamur. Cum Eustathio non facimus, qui in veste religionem collocabat, imò his, qui singulares & religiosas vestes sui Sacerdotii indices superstitione requirunt adversamur. Idem etiam de Canone Consilii Gangrensis & Laodicei & Synodi VI. dicendum, & libertate in qua hactenus stetimus, discedere servitutis autoramentum quoddam esse judicamus. Neq; hic nos rimati sumus, non odiose contendimus, acerbis contentiones semper fugimus, amicas consultationes querimus; lupis non cedimus, sed coacti & pulsi loco inviti & gementes discedimus. Fratres & Episcopos Domino suo stare & cadere permittimus, eandem erga nos æquitatem at frustra petimus. In ritibus nihil est liberum: nec ad hoc nobis R. M. irritata est: Sed aliorum suasu ducta est: at nunc demum non quod Ecclesiæ expedit, sed quod aliquo modo licet, constituatur: & quod omninò impium non est, id sanum & salubre, id sacrosanctum, id ratum habeatur. Ceremonias & vestes sacerdotum, cum religionis testes, & professionis notæ sunt, non civiles esse: & ab hostibus omnium consensu mutò corrogatæ, non decore haberi: & Anathemate divino notatæ & piis omnibus invisæ & malis ac infirmis admirabiles, sine quibus nec nos ministros esse, nec Sacramenta ritè administrari credunt, in rebus indifferentibus numerari nec possunt nec debent. Habebant Patres antiqui suas vestes, sed nec Episcoporum omnium proprias, nec à Laicis distinctas. Exempla D. Joan. & Cypr. singularia sunt. Sisinius hæreticus erat, nec aut laudatus aut nobis imitandus proponitur. Pallium omnium erat Christianorum commune, ut Tertull. in illo libro refert, & T. P. alibi notavit. Chrysostomus candidæ vestes meminit, sed obiter: nec commendat sed reprehendit: & fuerit ne sacerdotum an aliorum Græcorum linea aut lanea alba an munda nondum constat. Certè ad populum Antiochenum ab eodem, & ab Hieronymo opponitur sordidæ & apud Blondum de pallio laneo fit mentio. Quare ex ambiguo nihil concludi potest. Vestium præscriptionem non congruere cum Christiana libertate Bucerus est testis, qui discrimina vestium propter præsentem abusum in Ecclesiis Anglicanis, propter pleniorum declarationem detestationis Antichristi,

tichristi, propter p<sup>ri</sup>ncipalem professionem Libertatis Christianæ, propter tollendas inter nos diffinitiones omnino esse da esse cessavit. His enim verbis usus est in Epistola ad D. Alasco, qui totus noster fuit. Cadendum quidem aliquando tempore sed ad tempus sic ut progredimur semper, regrediamur nunquam. Absit ut nos vel Schismata in Ecclesia altercando occidamus: Scimus vel scitatis utiliter nos opponendo Carcerum morumque: absit (optime Bull.) res naturæ indifferentes impietatis damnumque. Absit ut sub scandalo nostras affectiones contegamus, vel ex *propterea* conscientiam faciamus. Hæc sœx & fermentum papisticum (non vixit) omnis diffinitionis est seminaria: illud tolli & sempiternâ obliuione obui ac repelli volumus, ne ulla extant Antichristianæ superstitiones vestigia. In Papa primas & supercilium semper nobis displicuerunt: Et tyrannis in Ecclesia Libera placeat? Libera Synodus apostolice Christianos contraxerunt nodos hætenus solvit: Cur nunc ad unius aut alterius arbitrium referentur omnia? Ubi hæc votum & vocem regnat libertas, ibi valet & viget veritas. Breviter sic habet rectum, primum hæc nobis potissimum fidem facere, Authoritatem Scripturarum, simplicitatem ministerij Christi, puritatem ecclesiarum primarum & optimarum quæ brevitatis studio commemorare superfedemus. Ex altera verò parte legem nullam, nullum decretum generale, vel Dei optimi maximi, vel repurgatæ alicujus ecclesiæ, vel universalis concilii (quæ August. regula est) legere nobis hætenus contigit vel audire. Pærecit illud comperimus, hæc quæ adducta sunt hætenus, exempla particularia esse, & universale non confirmare. Ad hæc statuimus, non quicquid est licitum ullo modo, obtrudendum, sed quod Ecclesiam ædificat omni modo, esse introducendum; nec quod alicui licet, id statim licere omnibus. Doctrinam castam & incompactam (Deo sit laus) habemus: in cultu, religionis parte non infima cur claudicabimus? cur manum Christum potius, quam totum, quam purum ac perfectum recipimus? Cur à Papistis hostibus, & non a vobis statibus reformationis exempla petimus? Eadem est nostrarum ecclesiarum confessio: eadem doctrinæ & fidei ratio: cur in ritibus & ceremoniis tanta dissimilitudo? tanta diversitas? Signatum idem: cur si qua adeo variant ut dissimilia vestris, similia papisticis existant? Idem dux & Imperator Christus: cur in Ecclesiis nostris vexilla hostium eriguntur: quæ si homines Dei si ullo zelo preestitimus, jam nolum detestari & demoliri iussimus. Nos de Ipse pos semper agnosce sentimus: illo rum factum ca videt interpretatur: cum nos omni crucem cum ipsis ex osculantes & nunc eundem Christum prædicantes, item jugum suavissimum una ferentes ferre non possunt? Cur in carcere concludunt? cur propter vestem persequuntur? Cur iustu ac bonu spoliant? Cur libri publicè traducant? Cur causam malam posteritati, edicto scripto commendant? Verterunt etiam in idioma nostrum Scholasticas aliquot D. Bæci, P. Martini, & nunc tuas privatis ad nos Literas nobis invitis & insciis in publicam exhibuerunt. Unde cum tuam causam agunt, suum h. norem vendicant, nec Ecclesiæ nostræ, nec Fratribus suis, nec dignitati tuæ, nec seculo alteri consulunt. Quo autem P. T. intelligat, non levem aut ludicram, sed magni ponderis esse controversiam, Nec de pileo solum, aut superpellico certari, sed de re



gravissima nos conqueri, Stipulas aliquot, & quisquillas Papisticae Religionis mittimus, ex quibus facile, quæ est tua prudentia, reliqua conicias: Et remedium aliquod, quæ est tua Pietas, primo quoque tempore exogites. Oramus autem, D. nostrum Jesum Christum, ut hos tumultus & turbas confopiat, gloriam suam asserat, operarios in vineam extrudat, quo Messis læta & uberrima proveniat. Teque oramus, ut Consilio Paterno, Scripto Publico, Literis Privatis Agas, Satagas, facias, efficias, ut vel hæc mala tollantur, vel boni Viri nondum persuasi tolerantur, ne quos Doctrinæ firmissimum Vinculum copulavit, Ceremonia Romana disjungat. Salutem dicas Gualtero, Symlero, Lavatero, Wolphio Dominis colendis, quibuscum si contuleris, & nobis & Ecclesiæ universæ gratissimum feceris. D. Jesus suo Tugurio, vestro Tyguro benedicat. Julij Anno 1566. Hæc paucis & raptim, & non tam respondendi, quam admonendi Causa, quæ in hanc Sententiam dici possent infinita sunt. Tu nunc non quid fiat, aut fieri possit, sed quid fieri debeat pronuncia.

Tuæ Paternitatis Studiofissimus,

Laurentius Humfredus.

Tho. Samson.

## INSCRIPTIO.

Domino Henrico Bullingero, Ecclesiæ Tigurinæ Ministro Fidelissimo, & Doctissimo Domino in Christo nobis Colendo.

Number 79.

*A Paper of other things complained of besides the Heads.*

*Ec MSS.  
Tiguri.*

1. **A** Liquot Maculæ quæ in Ecclesia Anglicana adhuc hærent. In Præcibus publicis & si nihil impurum, est tamen Species aliqua Superstitionis Papistica. Quod non modò in matutinis & vespertinis, sed in sacra etiam Cæna videre est.

2. Præ-

2. Præter Musicæ sonos fractos & exquisitissimos, Organorum usus in Templis invalescit.
3. In Administratione Baptismi, Minister infantem alloquitur, ejus nomine sponsores, parente absente, de Fide, de Mundo, Carne, Dabolo deterendo respondent, Baptizatus cruce signatur.
4. Mulierculis etiam domi baptizandi potestas facta est.
5. In Cœna Dominica sacræ vestis, nempe Capa & Superpellicium adhibentur; communicantibus Genuflexio injungitur; pro pane communi, placentula Azyma substituitur.
6. Ex r. T. m. lum, & Ministris in ulve sum. d. gulis, vestes Papisticæ præscribuntur; & p. l. l. l. i. s. u. m. l. i. n. e. u. m. r. e. c. e. s. u. m. v. e. c. a. n. t. g. u. s. t. a. n. t. & u. t. i. q. u. e. p. i. l. e. s. q. u. a. d. o. s. l. u. p. i. p. p. i. a. t. o. g. a. s. l. o. n. g. a. s. à P. a. p. i. s. t. i. s. m. u. o. s. u. m. p. t. i. a. s. c. i. r. c. u. m. f. e. r. u. n. t.
7. De servo aut m. Religionis, Discipline, quid dicemus? Nulla est, nec habet fam. virgam Ecclesiæ nostræ: Nulla Censura exerceatur.
8. Conjugium Ministris Ecclesiæ, publicis Regni Legibus, concessum & sancitum non est; sed eorum Liberi, à nonnullis, pro s. j. u. r. i. s. h. a. b. e. n. t. u. r.
9. Solennis Dispensatio fit, more ritque Papistico, per Annulum.
10. Mulieres adhuc cum velo purificantur.
11. In regimine Ecclesiastico, multa Antichristianæ Ecclesiæ vestigia servantur. Ut enim olim Romæ, in foro Papæ, omnia fuerunt venalia; sic in Metropolitani Curia, eadem ferè omnia prostant: P. u. a. l. t. a. t. e. s. S. c. e. r. d. o. t. i. o. r. u. m. L. i. c. e. n. t. i. a. p. r. o. n. o. n. r. e. s. i. d. e. n. d. o. p. r. o. n. o. n. i. n. i. t. i. a. n. d. o. S. a. c. r. i. s. p. r. o. e. s. u. c. a. r. n. i. u. m. d. i. e. b. u. s. i. n. t. e. r. d. i. c. t. i. s. & i. n. q. u. a. d. r. a. g. e. s. i. m. a. q. u. o. e. t. i. a. m. t. e. m. p. o. r. e. n. i. s. i. d. i. s. p. e. n. s. e. t. u. r. & n. u. m. e. r. e. t. u. r. n. u. p. t. i. a. s. c. e. l. e. b. r. a. r. e. p. i. a. c. u. l. u. m. e. s. t.
12. Ministris Christi libera prædicandi potestas adempta est: Qui jam concionari nolunt, h. i. r. i. t. u. u. m. i. n. n. o. v. a. t. i. o. n. e. m. s. u. a. d. e. r. e. n. o. n. d. e. b. e. n. t. s. e. d. m. a. n. u. s. s. u. b. s. c. r. i. p. t. i. o. n. e. C. e. r. e. m. o. n. i. a. s. o. m. n. e. s. a. p. p. r. o. b. a. r. e. c. o. g. u. n. t. u. r.
13. Postremò, Articulus de spiritali manducatione, qui disertis verbis oppugnabat, & tollebat realem Præsertiam in Eucharistia, & manifestissimam continebat veritatis explanationem, Edwardi VI. temporibus excusus, nunc apud vos evulgatur mutilatus & truncatus.

Laur. Humfredus.



## Number 80.

*Bullinger's Answer to their Letter, declining to enter further into the Dispute.*

Præstantissimis Viris, D. Laurentio Humfredo, & D. Thomæ Sampsoni, Anglis, Dominis meis Colendis, & Fratribus Charissimis.

Ex MSS.  
Ligon.

**E** Pistolam illam vestram, Domini colendi & Fratres charissimi, quâ meâ responderis de re vestiariâ scriptâ, accepimus & legimus. Cujus quidem hæc summa est, vobis per nostram nondum esse satisfactum. Prævidimus hoc futurum, Fratres: Ideoq; mox ab initio, si bene meministis, in Epistola mea hæc præmisimus verba. Ergo, si nos audire vultis, nostrumque Judicium de re vestiaria expenditis, sicut ultimis ad me Literis vestris significabatis, en habetis in illa (Gualtheri) Epistola meum judicium. Cui si acquiescere non potestis, dolemus sanè quam vehementissimè, & cum nullum aliud nobis supersit consilium, Dominum, qui in omnibus & semper respiciendus est, ex animo & incessanter oramus, ut ipse sua gratia atque potentia, rebus graviter afflictis, &c. His jam nihil ampliùs addere nec possumus, nec volumus. Respondere quidem ad vestra objecta possemus, sed nolumus ullam novis & nunquam terminandis Disputationibus, scriptis vel rixis dare occasionem. Toties scripsit Martyr beatæ Memorïæ, cum adhuc viveret in Anglia, sed subinde aliæ atque aliæ suggerebantur, repetebanturque Quæstiones, ut videam ægre ullis verbis Scriptisve satisfieri posse. Rogati à vobis fraterno amore suscipimus, quod nobis coram Domino videbatur ecclesiæ fore fructuosum. Diximus nobis quidem videri utilius ad tempus uti illis vestibus & cum oculis creditis manere, quàm rejectis illis pariter & ecclesiis deferere. Ulterius progressi non sumus, neque ullas papisticas sordes ac superstitiones probavimus: de quibus in illis disputationem ne suscepimus quidem, quippe ignari, quæ inter vos controverterentur, & de quibus nunc quoque scribitis, De re magni ponderis esse apud vos controversiam, nec de pileo solum aut superpelleceo certari, sed de re gravissima vos conqueri. Licet quidem epistola illa nostra ad vos privatione de re vestiaria conscripta, insciis nobis à quibusdam sit edita, speramus tamen pios & prudentes viros, nostri, neque in comitiis neque extra comitiis deorsuro, quati videamur ea nunc apprehendere & restituere velle, quæ pii omnes libris nostris edocti, dudum nos reprehendere norunt. Sciasimus vobis, sicut & ante nos & una nobiscum D. Martyr, quod nobis quidem videbatur, pro hoc tempore Argumento vel re, recipiendam vobis, esse honestum & utile. Hoc quia hætenus placere non potuit, committimus nos totum Deo Negotium, petimusq; ut nobis non sitis ingrati, sed nihilominus amici, pergentes amare nos, vestri amantes in Domino, quem ex Animo oramus ut ipse, qui Fidelis est Custos Ecclesiæ suæ, Dissidium hoc infelix, inter vos exortum, componat & Ecclesiæ suæ Tranquillitatem

reddat. Memineritis Fratres, obsecramus, per Dominum Jesum, à Ministris Ecclesiarum non tantum requiri, ut sint fidelis Sermonis tenaces, sed ut simul sint prudentes domus Dei dispensatores, rationem habentes familiæ, temporumque; & ut patienter, per Charitatem, plurima sustineant, concordiam veram in Domino foveant, deniq; per omnia Ecclesiam in pace conservent, nimiaq; sua vehementia, morositate aut importunitate, bonum quidem sed non prudenter volendo, non incommodent piis & pietati. Dominus Jesus concedat vobis Spiritum suum sanctum, & dirigat vos in viis suis. Valete Fratres.

Datum Tiguri, 10 Septembr.  
Anno Dom. 1556.

Heinrychus Bullingerus,

Suo & sui GUALTHERI Nomine.

Number 81.

*Bullinger and Gualter's Letter to the Earl of Bedford,  
pressing him to find a Temper in that Matter.*

Illustrissimo Principi, Domino Francisco Russello, Comiti Bedfordiensi, &c.

CUM anno superiori intellexissemus apud vos, Illustrissime Princeps, contentionem aliquam de Habitu Ministrorum exortam esse, vehementer timebamus, ne ea ulterius progressa, aliquid majoris mali daret Ecclesiæ: Et ideo à viris piis & cordatis requisiti, consilium dedimus, quod tunc nobis tutum & piū videbatur. Monuimus enim Ecclesiarum Ministros, ne ob rem non adeo magni momenti ab Ecclesiis discederent, & eas lupis & superstitiosis seductoribus vexandas relinquerent. At non fefellit nos gravioris periculi metus, quem nos tunc concepisse diximus. Audimus enim, jam non de solo vestitu apud vos contendendi, sed insuper multa alia obtendi piis Ministris; quæ merum Papatum redolent, imò in Antichristi Schola primum fabricata sunt, & proinde salva pietate recipi aut dissimulari non possunt. Dolorem autem nobis non levem parit, quod Epistolam quam privatim ad amicos pauculos ea de re dedimus, typis excusam esse fertur, & quod multi nostrum de re illa vestitaria judicium ad alia usque extendunt, quæ Controversa esse tunc nesciebamus, & quæ

Ex MSS.  
Tigur.



à nobis nunquam probari potuerunt. Et sanè iustissimi doloris causa est, nostri nominis autoritate pios Fratres gravari, quibus consilium & consolationem afferre, potius quam molestiam exhibere studuimus. Magis tamen utimur scandali consideratione, quod inde exortum esse non dubitamus. Auget præterea tristitiam nostram infælix Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ conditio; quam cum semper amaverimus, non possumus non sanguinariis Fidei purioris hostibus totis animis commoveri, quòd quæ vixdum liberata nonnil florere cæperat, nunc intestinis dissidiis labefactatur. Et quia de tua virtute, Illustrissime Princeps, nobis satis constat, & non pauca extant tuæ Pietatis argumenta, ad tuam Excellentiam Literas dandas esse putavimus, de qua pij quàm plurimi spem non mediocrem conceperunt. Rogamus autem ut apud Serenissimam Reginam, & in Comitibus (quæ brevi futura aulimus) apud regni proceres, causam Ecclesiæ pro more tueri pergat, neque suum patrocinium piis Fratribus neget; qui etsi aliqua in re peccarunt, veniam tamen merentur, quando illos ferventi pietatis zelo commotos fuisse; constat & hoc unum quærere ut, Ecclesiam ab omnibus Papisticis sordibus resurgatam habeant. Neq; illi modò nobis digni videntur, quos pij Principes propugnent; sed tota hæc causa ejusmodi est, ut qui in illa agenda studium & industriam adhibent, eo facto demùm testentur, se Principum nomine dignissimos esse. Dignatus est illustres viros eo honore Dominus, ut Ecclesiæ ejus nutritij dicantur, quæ sanè laus omnem hujus mundi gloriam atq; dignitatem longè superat. Erunt autem fideles nutritij, si Ecclesiam non modò ex hostium manibus eripiant, verbi Prædicationem instaurant, & Sacramentorum usum legitimum restituant; verùm & caveant, ne quæ Christo adduci debet Sponsa incontaminata, ullo superstitionum fuco defædetur, aut ullis Ritibus à simplicitate Christiana, alienis à fide sua suspectam reddat. Et notum est illud Hoseæ, qui Ecclesiam Israeliticam monebat, ut scortationes non ab uberibus modò, verùm & à facie removeret. Quare etiam atq; etiam Excellentiam tuam rogamus, ut quod hætenus fecit, nunc imprimis facere pergat, & sua Authoritate apud Serenissimam Reginam & Regni Proceres efficere studeat, ne cum magna totius orbis admiratione instituta Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ Reformatio, novis sordibus & postliminio reductis infeliis Papatûs reliquiis, deformetur. Nam si id fiat, non modo inconstantia nota multis in Regno vestro florentissimo inuretur, verùm etiam infirmi offenduntur, & vicini Scotiæ, Galliæ & Flandriæ Ecclesiis, scandalum præbebitur sub cruce adhuc laborantibus, cujus pænæ in authores ejus proculdubio redundabunt. Imò ex vobis exemplum sument vicini veritatis Evangelicæ hostes; ut ipsi quoq; in suis locis, liberiores verbi Dei cultum novis tyrannicæ superstitionis legibus circumscribant. Liberiùs hæc dicimus, Illustrissime Princeps, non quòd de tua pietate quicquam dubitemus, sed id partim tua humanitate incredibili freti faciamus, partim rei necessitate adducti tuæ Excellentia, & multis aliis de hac causa cogitandi materiam & occasionem ampliorum præbere cupimus. Precamur autem Deum optimum maximum, ut Ecclesiæ suæ miseratus, pacem illi restituat, & T. E. tuq; similes Principes suo Spiritû regat, suo favore prosegat, & potenti brachio servet,

ver, ad sui Nominis Gloriam, & Ecclesiæ suæ Conservationem. Tiguri, 11 Sept. Anno 1566.

Tuæ Excellentiae Deditissimi,

Henricus Bullingerus, Sen. &

Rod. Gualtherus.

Number 82.

*Bullinger and Gualter's Letter to Bishop Grindal and Bishop Horn, for quieting the Dispute.*

Reverendis in Christo Patribus, D. Edmundo Gryn-dallo Londoniensi, & de Roberto Horno Wintoniensi, in Anglia Episcopis, Dominis nostris Colendissimis & Fratribus Charissimis.

Reverendi in Christo Patres, Domini Honorandi, & Fratres Charissimi.

**R**Umores perlatum est ad nos, confirmato eodem nonnullorum Litteris Fratrum aliunde ad nos allatis, Epistolam illam meam, <sup>Ex MSS. Tigur.</sup> quam Mense Maio, privatim Scripsimus ad Honorandos Fratres nostros D. Humfredum, & Sampsonem, vobisque Dominis nostris & Fratribus Charissimis, certo Consilio exposito à nobis in Epistola ad vos data communicavimus, Typis excusam atque publicatam esse, eaque ipsa illos confirmari, qui jam multos Ecclesiarum Ministros pios & doctos exauthorarunt, non quidem ob rem vestiarum, de qua illa nostra Scripta est Epistola, sed alios complures ob articulos, apud vos controversos. De quibus in Epistola illa nostra nullam instituimus Disputationem, quos tamen omnes dicimur contra exauthoratos defendere atque approbare. Nos quidem incendium inter vos exortum non augere, sed extinguere studio vestri Sancto sumus conati, & non probare vel improbare articulos de quibus nihil nobis constabat. Proinde luculenta nobis fieret injuria, si nostra Epistola raperetur eo quasi eos etiam articulos, quos tunc ignoravimus, cum de re vestiarum scriberemus, approbare videremur. Summa sententiæ nostræ erat, Ecclesiæ Christi Sanguine redemptas, minimè esse deferendas propter peccatores



leos & vestes, res indifferentes, cum non propter cultum ullum, sed propter ornatum politicè usurpari jubeantur. Nunc verò audimus (utinam rumore falso) requiri à Ministris novis quibusdam subscribant articulis, aut statione sua cedant. Articulos verò esse hujusmodi, tantum in templis figuratum, & peregrina lingua, unà cum strepitu organorum esse retinendum, Mulieres in casu necessitatis privatim posse; & debere baptizare infantulos. Magistrum quoq; infantem oblatum baptismo rogare debere quæstiones, olim catechumenis propositas. Baptizantes item Ministros usurpare exufflationes, exorcismos, crucis characterem, oleum, sputum, lutum, accensos careos & hujus generis alia: Docendum esse Ministris in perceptione Cœnæ Domini, opus esse genuflexione (quæ speciem habet adorationis) nec panem frangendum esse communiter, sed cuilibet communicaturo crustulam ori ejus esse inferendam à Ministro. Neq; verò modum Spiritualis manducationis, & præsentia Corporis Christi in Sacra Cœna explicandum, sed relinquendum in medio. Præterea dicitur, ut quondam Romæ omnia fuerint venalia, ita nunc in Metropolitani Curia, proflare eadem, pluralitates videlicet Sacerdotiorum, licentiam pro non residendo, pro esu carniū diebus interdictis, & in quadragessima, & rebus similibus, pro quibus nisi quis numeret, nihil impetret. Uxores item Ministrorum longè arceri à suis maritis, quasi impura sit conjugatis cohabitatio, perinde ut quondam factitatum est apud Antichristi Sacerdotes; aiunt autem illis omnibus non licere vel privatim vel publicè contradicere, quinimò adigi Ministros, ne hanc camarinam siquidem Ministrare Ecclesiis velint, commoveant. Adeoq; omnem potestatem gubernationis, vel potestatis Ecclesiasticæ penes solos esse Episcopos, neq; ulli Pastorum permitti, in rebus hujusmodi Ecclesiasticis, suam dicere sententiam. Quæ si vera sunt, plurimum sanè non nobis tantum, sed Piis omnibus dolent. Oramusq; Dominum, ut hæc ex Sancta Christi Ecclesia quæ in Anglia est eluat, prohibeatq; ne quicumque Episcoporum, statione sua, dejiciat Pastorem ullum hujusmodi articulos recipere, aut approbare respicientem. Et quanquam de vestra Pietate Sinceritateque hoc nobis persuasissimum habeamus, vos si quid hujus (tam crassa enim extare apud vos vixdum credimus,) in usu apud vos est, ferre & dissimulare ea ad comitia usq; regni opportuna, quibus de superstitione abolenda commodè & prudenter agatur: Et si qui sint, qui nostra illa Epistola abutantur ad quoslibet abusus confirmandos, vel tamen non esse de eorum numero, nihilominus hortamur vestram Pietatem per Dominum Jesum, ut seriò de emendandis expurgandisq; istis similibusq; superstitionibus, si ita res habet, ut dicitur, cum vestris Coepiscopis, & aliis Viris sanctis prudentibusq; consulteris, nosq; ab injuria illa nobis ab aliis irrogata, fideliter vindicetis. Non enim istos articulos, uti perlati sunt ad nos, unquam probavimus. Rogamus insuper Humanitatem vestram, ut hæc à nobis benigno animo accipiat, qui vestrae concordia item sinceritatisq; in Religione Regni Anglici sumus studiosissimi, & vobis in Christo addictissimi. Dominus Jesus benedicat vobis, & servet ab omni malo. Salutate obsecramus nostro nomine, reliquos Reverendissimos Patres in Christo, Dominos meos Honerendos & Fratres Charissimos Angliæ Episcopos. Regiæ quoq; Serenissimæ semper nos commendate. Cui optamus  
vitam

vitam longævam, & gubernandi felicitatem, firmum tranquillumq; & tutum Regnum, & omnia quæ pii exoptare possunt.

Data Tiguri, Septemb. 6.

Anno 1556.

Vestræ Pietatis Humanitatisque  
Deditissimi,

Heinrychus Bullingerus, &

Rod. Gualtherus, Tigurinæ  
Ecclesiæ Pastores & Mi-  
nistri.

Number 83.

*A Letter of Bishop Grindal, and Bishop Horn, giving a full Account of their Sense of all the Matters complained of in the Church of England.*

N. B. Ex Præcipuis.

Edmondus Londinensis, & Robertus Wintoniensis, Bul-  
lingero Heinricho, & Rodolpho Gualtero.

**F**ruditas vestras Literas ad Humfredum, & Sampsonem, commo-  
dissimas, cum ad nostras de vestibus animorum dissensiones, tum <sup>Ex MSS.</sup> verborum altercationes atq; pugnas sedandas, quam libentissimè acce-  
pimus: Acceptas non sine certo Consilio, parcentes tamen Fratrum <sup>Tigur.</sup> nominibus, Typis excudi atq; publicari curavimus, indeq; fructum  
amplissimum quidem, quemadmodum sperabamus, percepimus. Nam  
fanis quidem viris, universum Evangeliorum institutum & finem  
spectantibus, multum profuere: Ministros certè nonnullos qui de de-  
ferendo Ministerio propter rem vestiariam, quæ jam sola controversa  
ac causa contentionis apud nos fuerat, cogitarunt, persuasos ne Eccle-  
sias fraudari suâ operâ sinerent propter tantillum, confirmatosq; red-  
didere, & in vestram sententiam retraxere: Plebem autem quæ per  
importunos quorundam clamores concitata in varias partes distraheba-  
tur, piosq; Ministros contumeliâ afficiebat, quasi concordia quadam  
illis placavere ac leniere temperantia: Morosis vero & nihil preter-  
Vol. III. 8 M quam



quam quod ipsi statuerant preferre valentibus, etsi non satisfacere, eo tamē eis profuere, ut pios convitiis minus proscindere, pacemq; Ecclesiæ salutarem sermonibus suis morologis non adedō audacter sādare, velint aut possint. Ex hiis quosdam esse exauthoratos, etsi sua ipsorum culpa, ut gravius in illos nos dicamus, fatemur & dolemus. Verum illud æquiori animo ferendum putamus, quod non sint multi sed pauci, & ut pii, certē non adedō docti. Nam solus Sampsonus inter eos qui exauthorati sunt, & pius pariter ac Doctus est habendus. Humfredus verò ac Doctiores omnes in sua hætenus statione manent. Quod si vestra Epistola Typis excusa ac publicata fuisset, ut qui exauthorarunt, confirmarentur: Si qui exauthorati sunt, propter alios articulos apud nos controversos & non ob rem solam vestitariam de gradu fuissent dejecti suo: Si deniq; illa Epistola quæ verbis adedō exquisitis ac perspicuis solam controversiam vestitariam pertractat, ut alio transferri non possit ad approbandes articulos vobis ignotos, nec dum apud nos Dei gratia controversos (nam nulli nobis cum Fratribus articuli in contentionem hætenus venerunt nisi hic solus vestitarius) reperetur: Luculenta profectò vobis, quos amamus, colimus, & in Domino Honoramus, fuisset injuria: Sicut nobis manifesta adhibita est calumnia ab hiis qui Authores fuerunt vanissimi rumoris, quo ad vos perlatum fuit, à Ministris Ecclesiæ requiri novis quibusdam subscribant articulis, aut statione sua cedant. Summa controversiæ nostræ hæc est: Nos tenemus Ministros Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ sine impietate uti posse vestium discrimine publica autoritate jam præscripto, tum in Administratione Sacra, tum in usu externo, præsertim cum ut res indifferentur proponantur, tantum propter ordinem ac debitam legibus Obedientiam usurpari jubeantur. Et omnis Superstitionis Cultus ac Necessitatis quod ad Conscientias attinet, opinio, legum ipsarum præscripto & sincerioris Doctrinæ Prædicatione assidua quantum fieri potest amoveatur, rejiciatur, ac omnino condemnatur. Illi contra clamitant vestes has in numerum τῶν ἀδιαφορῶν, jam haud quaquam esse ascribendas, impias esse, Papisticas ac Idolatricas: Et propterea, omnibus piis uno consensu Ministerio cedendum potius, quàm cum istis Panniculariis Papisticis, sic enī loquuntur, Ecclesiæ inservire: Licet Doctrinam sincerissimam prædicandi nec non omnimodes Errores seu abusus sive in Ritibus, sive in Doctrina, sive in Sacramentis, sive in Moribus, per sanam Doctrinam subaccusandi, exagitandi, condemnandi, summam habeamus Libertatem. Istud istorum immaturum Consilium accipere non possumus: quomodo nec impetuosas eorum Adhortationes, quibus Pacem Ecclesiæ indefinenter pro suggestu disturbant, Religionemq; nostram universam in Periculum trahunt, ferre debemus. Nam istiusmodi suis celementibus, serenif. Reginæ Animum alioqui ad optimè merendum de Religione propensum, irritari, prohi dolor, nimium experti sumus: Procerum quorundam Animos, ut de aliis taceamus, ægros, imbecilles, vacillantes, hiis vulnerari, debilitari, abalienari, certò certius scimus. Ecquis dubitare possit, quin Papistæ hujusmodi Occasione nacti virus suum pestilentissimum eruabunt, evoment in Evangelium Jesu Christi, ejusq; Professores omnes, in spem erecti, jam Oportunitatem se habere suam sibi ereptam Helenam recuperandi. Quodsi inconsulto nostro Consilio acquiesceremus, ut omnes cunctis viribus impetum in vestes Legibus Constabilitas, contra Legem

Legem faciamus, perimamus, ac deleamus omnino, aut simul omnes Munia exuamus. Papisticum profectò, vel saltem Lutheranopapisticum haberemus Ministerium, aut omnino nullum. Illud autem Deum Optimum Maximum testamur, Fratres in Christo honorandi; neque culpa evenisse dissidium hoc nostra, nec per nos stare quo minus istiusmodi veste è medio tollerentur: Imò sanctissime, licet, juremus, laborasse nos hætenus quanto potuimus studio, fide, diligentia, ut id effectum daremus, quod fratres postulant, & nos optamus. Verùm in tantas adducti angustias, quid faciendum? (multa vobis, qui prudentes & ad pericula Ecclesiis impendentia perspicienda cælis sagaces, conjicienda relinquimus) nisi ut cum non possemus quod velimus, velimus in Domino quod possumus. Hætenus rem controversam & plenam dissensionis inter nos, ut se habet, exposuimus. Nunc vero quod reliquum est, accipite: Falsissimus omnino est ille rumor, si tamen rumor dicendus sit (novimus enim prudentiam vestram, ac modestiam, & laudamus) de receptione, subscriptione, & approbatione novorum istorum Articulorum quos recensetis. Nec magis sunt veraces, qui sive scriptis suis Epistolis, sive verbis coram, hoc prætextu vobis fucum facere, nobis autem calumniam inurere sunt conati. Pleriq; enim omnes isti Articuli falso nobis obijciuntur; perpauci recipiuntur: Horum omnino nulli, Fratribus sua subscriptione approbandi obtruduntur. Cantum in templis figuratum, unà cum strepitu organorum, retinendum non affirmamus imò prout docet, insectamur. Peregrinam linguam, exufflationes, exorcismos, okum, sputum, lutum, accensos cereos, & ejus generis alia, ex Legum præscripto nunquam revocanda, penitus amisit Ecclesia Anglicana. Mulieres posse aut debere baptizare infantulos, nullo modo prorsus assentimur. In Cænæ Dominicæ perceptione, panem communiter frangere, cuilibet communicaturo non ori inferere, sed in manus tradere: Modum spiritualis manducationis, & presentiae Corporis Christi in sacra Cæna, explicari Leges jubent, Usus confirmat, Oblatratores nostri Anglo-Lovanienses nefariis suis scriptis testantur. Uxores Ministrorum non arcentur à suis Maritis; cohabitant, & eorum Conjugium apud omnes (semper Papistas excipimus) habetur honorabile. Denique non minus falsum est quod oblatrant, penes solos Episcopos omnem esse Ecclesiasticæ gubernationis potestatem, etsi primas illis dari non negamus. Nam in rebus hujusmodi Ecclesiasticis in Synodo deliberari solet. Synodos autem indicitur, Edicto Regio, eo tempore quo habetur totius Regni Parliamentum, ut vocant. Adfunt Episcopi, adfunt etiam totius Provinciæ Pastorum doctiores quique, qui triplo plures sunt quàm Episcopi. Hij seorsum ab Episcopis de rebus Ecclesiasticis deliberant, & nihil in Synodo statuitur, aut definitur, sine communi eorum ac Episcoporum, aut majoris saltem illorum partis, consensu & approbatione: tantùm abest ut Pastoribus non permittatur in hujusmodi rebus Ecclesiasticis suam dicere sententiam. Recipimus quidem, seu potius toleranter ferimus, donec meliora Dominus dederit, interrogationes infantium, & crucis characterem in Baptismo, in Cænæ perceptione genuflexionem; & Regiam Facultatum Curiam, quam Metropolitani vocant. Quæstiones istiusmodi non adeò accommodè infantibus proponi, etsi ex



Augustino videantur emendicatæ, publicè profiteamur, ac sedulò decemus. Crucis Characterem frontem jam baptizati infantis notare; etsi Minister palàm conceptis verbis, profiteatur signatum esse Cruce infantulum, solummodò in signum quòd in posterum illum non pudebit fidei Christi crucifixi, idque ex vetustiori Ecclesia videatur transumptum, tamen non defendimus. Genuflexionem in sacræ cœlæ perceptine, quoniam ita Lege constitutum est, permitimus: Ea tamen expositione, seu potius cautione, quam ipsi genuflexionis auctores, viri sanctissimi ac Martyres Jesu Christi constantissimi, adhibuerunt, diligentissimè populo declarata, promulgata, inculcata. Quæ sic ad verbum habet: Etsi in Libro Patrum statutum sit, ut communicantes genuflectendo sacram accipiant communionem, id tamen eo trahi non debere declaramus, quali ulla adoratio fiat aut fieri debeat, sive Sacramentali pani ac vino, sive ulli reali & essentiali præsentia ibi existenti, naturalis carnis & sanguinis Christi. Nam Sacramentalis panis & vinum permanent in ipsis suis naturalibus substantiis, & propterea non sunt adoranda: Id enim Idololatria horrenda esset, omnibus Christianis detestanda. Et quantum ad corpus naturale ac sanguinem salvatoris nostri Christi attinet, in Cœlo sunt & non sunt hic. Quandoquidem contra veritatem veri naturalis corporis Christi est, pluribus quàm uno inesse locis, uno atque eodem tempore. Facultatum Curia, undecunque est allata, Regia est, non Metropolitani. Is enim prudens Pater, doctus & ad sincerissimam Religionem propagandam optimè affectus, omnimodas Romanas fæces prorsus eluere peroptat, conatur, satagit. Et licet omnes hujus Fiscalis Curia, sicut etiam alios nonnullos abusus, è medio tollere non possumus, eos tamen carpere, contumeliis insequi, ad tartara usque, unde proreperunt, detrudere non desistimus. Nobis credite, fratres venerandi: Unicuique licet Ministro omnibus istiusmodi articulis, cum modestia & sobrietate contradicere. Pastores verò articulos istos nobis falsò impositos, recipere aut approbare nolentes, statione sua haudquaquam dejicimus. Pergite ergo nos amare, admonere, juvare, ut incendium inter eos exortum, solummodo pro re vestiaria, extinguatur. Nosque operam dabimus, quantum fieri possit, quemadmodum in proximis Comitibus fecimus, & si nihil obtinere potuimus; ut omnes errores & abusus ad amussim verbi Dei corrigantur, emendentur, expurgentur. Commendamus vos Fratres Gratia Domini nostri Jesu Christi, quem oramus ut vos incolumes, vestrasque Ecclesias in pace quam diutissimè conservet. Salutate nostro nomine Fratres ac Symnistas Tigurinos omnes.

Londini, 6 Februarij,  
Anno Dom. 1567.

Vestrum omnium  
Amantissimus,

Edm. London.

Robertus Winton.

Addita

## Addita Manu Winton' sequentia.

Obsecro & ego vos, Fratres mihi plurimùm observandi, (ignoscatis mihi) quod Literis vestris ad me privatim scriptis, hæcenus non responderim; nec pro doctissimis vestris Commentariis ad me transmissis, ullas hæcenus gratias retulerim. Neque illud ipsum mihi vitio vertant Wolvius & Lavaterus; quos quæso, meo nomine, plurimùm salutate, & me apud illos excusate. Scio enim Officij mei rationem hoc ipsum efflagitasse; & vos, illosque, meas Literas desiderasse, non dubito. Efficiam posthac, scribendo vos omnes expleam, & Officio non desim meo. Salutem etiam à me dicite, oro, D. Simlero, Zuinglio, Halero. Vivite omnes, ac valete in Christo.

Totus Vester,

Robertus Winton.

## INSCRIPTIO.

Ornatissimis Viris, D. Henricho  
Bullingero, & D. Radulpho  
Gualtero, Tigurinæ Ecclesiæ  
Pastoribus fidelissimis.

## Number 84.

*A Letter of Jewell's to Bullinger, concerning the Debates  
in Parliameut relating to the Succession, and the Heats  
in the Disputes about the Vestments.*

Johannes Juellus Henricho Bullingero.

S. P. in Christo.

**P**roximæ Literæ meæ, Ornatissime Vir, cum Londinum tardius. *Ex MSS. Tigur.*  
culè venissent, & Francofordiam ad Nundinas proficisci non  
possent, re infecta, domum ad me reversæ sunt. Quod nonnihil ve-  
reor, ne nunc quoque in istas accadat. De prolixis & pereruditis il-  
lis tuis ad me Literis proximis, prolixè tibi ago gratias. Nunc mihi  
de Synodo illa Francofordiensi, ut de re obscura, & controversa,  
8 N egre-



egregiè satisfactum esse, & fateor & gaudeo. Res nostræ Ecclesiasticæ, publicæ privatæque, eo loco nunc sunt, quo fuerunt. Lovanienses nostri clamant, & turbant, quantum possunt: Et habent fautores, etsi non ita multos, plures tamen multò quam velim. Et quamvis complures sint, & in universum in omnes scribant, tamen nescio, quo meo fato, omnes in me feruntur unum. Itaq; dum illis respondeo, ne me esse otiosum putes. Habuimus, proximis istis Mensibus, Comititia totius Regni: Illis ego, propter Valetudinem, interesse non potui. Scriptæ sunt Leges de Religione, quibus Papistarum obstinata malitia, atq; insolentia in officio continentur. Actum etiam est de Successione; hoc est, cûi Familiæ Jus Regni debeatur, si quid Elizabethæ Reginae humanitus acciderit, quod nolumus. Ea Contentio mensem unum, atque alterum omnium animos occupavit; cum Regina ea de re agi nollet: Reliqui omnes vehementer cuperent, & utrinque magnis viribus, & studiis pugnaretur. Quid quæris? Effici postremò nihil potuit: Regina enim, ut est scemina imprimis prudens & provida, Hæc ede semel designato, suspicatur, aliquid sibi creari posse periculi. Nôsti enim illud, plures Orientem Solem adorant, quam Occidentem. De Religione, Causa illa vestitaria magnos hoc tempore motus concitavit. Reginae certum est, nolle flecti: Fratres autem quidam nostri ita ea de re pugnant, ac si in ea una omnis nostra Religio versaretur. Itaq; Functiones abjicere, & Ecclesias inanes relinquere malunt, quàm tantillum de sententia decedere. Neq; aut tuis aut D. Gualtheri doctissimis scriptis, aut aliorum piorum Virorum monitis moveri volunt. Agimus tamen Deo gratias, qui non patitur nos inter nos, hoc tempore, gravioribus Quæstionibus exerceri. Unus tantum quispiam è nostro numero, Episcopus Glocestrensis, in Comitibus apertè, & fidenter dixit, probari sibi Lutheri sententiam de Eucharistia; sed ea seges non erit, spero, diuturna. In Hibernia, nonnihil hoc tempore tumultuatur. Insula ea, uti scis, paret nostris Regibus. Johannes quidam Onclus, spurius, conscripsit nuper militem, & nostros insolenter provocavit. Sed plus in ea re moræ est, quàm periculi. Is enim longè abdit sese in paludes, & solitudines; quo noster miles consequi facilè non possit. E Scotia vero, (quid ego dicam? aut tu, quid credas?) horrenda atq; atrocia nuntiantur. Ea quamvis ejusmodi sint, ut credo, vix possint, tamen ex Aula usq; ad me scribuntur, & passim jactantur, & creduntur ab omnibus. Regem juvenem, aïunt, proximis hisce admodum diebus, unà cum uno famulo, quem habuit à cubiculis, interfectum esse d mi suæ, & exportatum foràs, & relictum sub dio. Crede mihi, horret animus ista commemorare. Si ista vera sint, ne sint; tamen si sint, quid causæ fuerit, aut quibus ille insidiis petitus sit, faciam te posthac, ubi omnia rescivero, de rebus omnibus certiolem. In Præsentia, nec ea, quæ ita constanter jactarentur, reticere potui, nec ea quæ comperta non haberem, nimium fidenter affirmare. Julium nostrum, audio, Tiguri esse mortuum: Mitto tamen ad illum viginti Coronatos Gallicos, si vivit, ut illi cedant: sin autem, quod nolim, est mortuus, ut in Epulum Scholasticum infumantur. Si esset otium, scriberem ad D. Lavaterum, ad D. Simlerum, ad D. Wolphium, ad D. Hallerum, & alios: Imprimis vero ad D. Gualterum; ad quem, hætenus homo ingratus, nunquam scripsi. Quæso, ut hosce omnes,

atque

atque etiam in primis D. Rodolphum, & D. Henricum tuos, meo nomine plurimum valere jubeas. Vale, mi Pater, & Domine in Christo Colendissime.

Sarissberiæ in Anglia.

Feb. 24, 1567.

Tuus in Christo,

Jo. Juellus, Anglus.

## INSCRIPTIO.

D. Henricho Bullingero Ministro Ecclesiæ Tigurinæ Fidelissimo, Viro longè Doctissimo, & Domino suo Colendissimo.

Tiguri.

Number. 85.

*A Letter of Jewel's to Bullinger, of the State Affairs were in, both in England, Ireland, Scotland, and the Netherlands.*

Salutem Plurimam in Christo Jesu.

**Q**UID ego dicam, Doctissime Vir & Clarissime Pater? Et pudet <sup>Ex MSS.</sup> & dolet, pudet primum, non scripsisse sæpius, deinde dolet, <sup>Tigur.</sup> eas ipsas quas scripsi, non potuisse ad vos pervenire, obsecro tamen te, ne putes mihi aut Scholam Tigurinam, aut Rempublicam, aut illam vestram Humanitatem tantam tam citò ex Animo elabi potuisse. Equidem vos omnes in oculis, & in sinu gero, & te imprimis. Mi Pater, lumen jam unicum ætatis nostræ. Quod autem ad Literas attinet, equidem, præterquam anno illo superiore cum peste, & lue omnia ubique clausa essent, cæteroquis nunquam intermisi scribere, ad te, ad Lavaterum ad Simlerum, & ad Julium. Quod nisi facerem, videri, vix possem, non dico officii, sed ne Humanitatis quidem rationem ullam retinere. Et de aliis quidem meis Literis superioribus, quid factum sit, nescio. Proximus autem audio in navali conflictu exceptas fuisse à Gallis, atque ablatas Caletum. Sed Missa ista facio. Nunc accipito de rebus nostris, quos tibi, pro tua pietate, magis cordi esse, fat scio. Primum de Religione omnia domi Dei Optimi Maximi Beneficio pacata sunt. Papinæ exules turbant, & impediunt quantum possunt & evulgatis libris, nescio, quo meo, fatone, dicam, an merito,



rito, me petunt unum, idque termini maximis clamoribus uno tempore. Illis omnibus dum unus respondeo, tu me ne putes esse otiosum. Offertur mihi inter alia, causa illa Ubiquitaria, quam ego in senis illius nostri Tubingensis gratiam, ut potui, utque res tulit, de industria ornavi pluribus: Sed nostra lingua, utpote nostris Hominibus. Si quidem otium erit, partem aliquam transferam, & ad vos mittam. De illo autem sene, equidem non video quid debeam statuere. Ita mihi videtur, magis magisque in singulos dies delirare. Legi enim novum Menandri phasma, quod nunc nuper dedit: Et tibi, & de illo Libro, & de omnibus Literis tuis, & de omni tua Humanitate, ago gratias. Respublica domi, forisque, terra marique tranquilla est. Pacem habemus cum Gallis constitutam. Flandrica etiam illa turba jam tandem confluit. Mercatores utrinque commeant, Flandri ad nos, & nostri vicissim ad illos. Granvelanus, cujus unius nequitia hæc omnia cæpta sunt, id egit, ut, turbatis, atque impeditis emporiis, cum neque in-vehi quicquam, neque exportari posset, attonitis mercatoribus, & oppidano vulgo, quod verè è lanificio victum quærit, ad otium, atque inopiam redacto, popularis aliquis motus, & seditio domestica sequeretur. Ita enim sperabat Religionem unà posse concuti. Sed Deus ista consilia convertit potiùs in authorem. Nostri enim in officio, uti par erat, remanserant. Flandricum autem vulgus, digressis nostris Mercatoribus, & Emporio Embdæ constituto, eam rem indignè ferre, atque etiam tantum non tumultuari. Hiberni, uti te audisse scio, nobis parent, & nostris utuntur legibus. In illam insulam, Papa ante aliquot admodum dies immisit Hominem sceleratum, & callidum, cum mandatis, qui huc illuc concursaret. Erat enim Hibernus, qui gentem feram & silvestrem contra nos Religionis causa commoveret. Quid quæris? Nebulo statim primo appulsu comprehenditur, & excussus, & vinctus ad nos mittitur. Ita facerrimus Pater prorsus decrevit, cum flectere non possit superos, Acheronta movere, In Scotia ita ut volumus. Regina sola Missam illam suam retinet. invitis omnibus. Parkhurstus, Hoperus, Sampson, Sandus, Leverus, Chamberus valent, & officium faciunt. Biennium jam est, quod ego illorum quenquam viderim. Vale, mi Pater. Dominus Jesus te quàm diutissimè servet superstitem, & incolumem. Saluta D. Gualterum, D. Lavaterum, D. Simlerum, D. Lupum, D. Hallerum, D. Gesnerum, D. Frisium, D. Zuinglium, D. Wikium; ad quos singulos darem Literas si esset otium, vel potius nisi prorsus obruerer Negotiis.

Sarisburyæ, in Anglia, Ca-  
lend. Martiis, 1565.

Tui Nominis Studiosissimus,  
Tibique Deditissimus,

Jo. Juellus, Anglus.

Number

## Number 86.

*The End of a Letter written to Zurich, setting forth the  
Temper of some Bishops in these Matters.*

— **N**UNC Patres illud petimus, & in Christo contendimus Ex MSS. Tigur.  
etiam atq; etiam, (quod vos ultrò benignissimè polliciti  
estis) ut Londinensis, Wintoniensis ac Cantuariensis Episcoporum ani-  
mos exacerbatos molliatis, & si non ampliùs aliquid potestis, saltem  
hoc tantùm exoretis: Ut & in Fratres nostros in Anglia remanentes miti-  
ores esse velint, & faces ex suis Ecclesiis removentes, si non adjuvare, at  
saltem tolerare, & ipsorum factis connivere velint. Atq; vos Reveren-  
dis Nordovicensi, Wigornienti, & Dunelmensi Episcopis, in vestris  
Epistolis, pollicitis justas suæ pietatis laudes persolvatis: Atque illis,  
simul & Fratribus Ministris studentibus repurgationi Ecclesiarum, ani-  
mos pergendi in proposito addatis. Hæc, si pro vestra summa Digni-  
tate (ut confidimus) impetraverimus, non modò non fatigabimus alias  
Ecclesias novis precibus, sed & nos, omnesq; verè pii, omnia vobis ob  
pacem & concordiam, vestra opera, Ecclesiæ partam debebimus; &  
Deus optimus maximus vobis, per Dominum nostrum Jesum Christum,  
æternam Coronam tribuet. Amen.

Vestræ Dignitatis Studiofissimi,

Georgius Witherus, }  
Johan. Bartholottus, } Angli.



## Number 87.

*Bullinger and Gualter's Letter to the Bishops of London, Winchester, and Norwich, interceding for Favour to those whose Scruples were not satisfied in those Matters.*

Intercessionales pro Tolerantia.

Londinenſi, Wintonienſi, & Norvicenſi, Epiſcopis in Anglia.

Reverendi Viri Domini Colendiſſimi, & Fratres in Domino Chariffimi. Dominus Jeſus benedicat vobis & ſervet vos ab omni malo.

Ex MSS.  
Tigur.

**Q**UO vehementius favemus vobis Reverendi Domini & Fratres Chariffimi, eò dolemos gravius deſidere vos à Patribus aliquot, Viris Doctis, in Anglia gradu ſuo dejectis. Atque ideo dilectioni noſtræ dabitis, quod frequentius eadem de re aures veſtras obtundimus. Vidimus & accepimus veſtram in hanc cauſam excuſationem: Interim Angli exules ad nos veniunt, qui affirmant Londinenſis Eccleſiæ Doctores, nec non aliarum in Anglia Eccleſiarum, in Mariana perſecutione probatos Homines, quorum fide diligentia Eccleſiæ Anglicanæ in ſæviſſimis iſtis tempeſtatibus conſervatæ ſint, nunc pelli, nec pelli tantum, ſed gravi etiam perſecutione premi, adeoque & in tetras retrudi carceres. Addunt plures eſſe in Hibernia Eccleſiarum Miniſtros, qui non aliter ſentiant aut faciant, quàm illi ipſi qui in Anglia ſuſtinent perſecutionem. Illos autem Epiſcopi ſui Beneficio, & apud Regiam M. interventu agere in ſumma tranquillitate. Unde iſti colligunt, ſi Epiſcopi qui in Anglia ſunt apud R. Majeſtatem intercederent, fore ut & ipſi tranquille ſibi commiſſas poſſit retinere & gubernare Eccleſias. Et quod hac in cauſa præcipuum eſt, Epiſcopos non diffiteri meliorem habere cauſam afflictoſ & dejectos. Nam agnoſcere eos Eccleſiam rectius conſtitui & conſtitutam gubernari ſine illis cæremoniis ritubusve & iſtitutis, quam cum illis, adeò ut ipſiſmet afferatur optio, malint ipſi ſibi Eccleſiam deligere ſine illis, quam illis oneratam ſibi dari. Id quod inde quoque colliqueſcat maniſeſtiſſimè, quod in Regni Comitibus, non ſemel Epiſcopi petierint, à R. M. ut tollantur illa & purgatioſ ornatiorque aut minus ſaltem onerata fiat Eccleſia. Quæ cum ita ſint reverendi Domini & Fratres Chariffimi, incitabit vos ipſos haud dubiè veſtra pietas ad conſultandum, quomodo fieri poſſit commodè & maturè, ut Fratribus iſtis afflictoſ conſultetur, & ne ita gravi perſecutione premantur, quin potius R. Maj. Clementia tolerantur, donaque in ipſis utilia Eccleſiæ, per abdicationem non extinguantur. Non eſt autem quod multis rationibus aut exemplis

plis, vos alioqui peritissimos omnis pietatis & æquitatis, urgeamus; tantum hoc oramus per Dominum, ut si apud R. M. afflictis afflictionem vel imminuere, vel prorsus adimere potestis, pro Christiana Charitate, illis omnem vestram fidelem impendatis operam; & nostram hanc fraternam admonitionem boni consulatis, solitoque amore nos vestri amantissimos prosequi pergatis. Valete, Honorandi Domini.

Tiguri, 26 Augusti  
1567.

Bullingerus, & Gualterus.

Number 88.

*A Part of a Letter of Jewell's to Bullinger, of the State Affairs both in England and Scotland.*

— **C**ontentio illa de Ecclesiastica Veste linea, de qua vos vel Ex MSS; Tigur. ab Abele nostro, vel à D. Parkhursto audisse non dubito, nondum etiam conquievit. Ea res nonnihil commovet infirmos animos: Atque utinam omnia etiam tenuissima vestigia Papatus, & è templis, & multò maximè ex animis omnium auferri possent. Sed Regina ferre mutationem in Religione, hoc tempore, nullam potest. Res Scotiæ nondum etiam satis pacatæ sunt: Nobiles aliquot primi nominis apud nos exulant. Alij domi remanserunt, & sese, si vis fiat, ad resistendum parant, & ex arcibus suis excursiones interdum faciunt, & ex Papistarum agris agunt, feruntque quantum possunt. Regina ipsa, etsi animo sit ad Papismum obfirmato, tamen vix satis exploratum habet, quo se vertat: Nam de Religione adversariam habet magnam partem, & Nobilitatis, & Populi: Et, quandum quidem nos possumus intelligere, numerus indies crescit. Submiserat proximis istis mensibus Philippus Rex, Abbatem quendam Italum cum auro Hispanico, hominem vafrum, & factum atque instructum ad fraudes, qui & Regem Reginamq; juvaret veteratorio Consilio, & impleret omnia tumultibus. Rex novus, qui semper hætenus abstinuisset à Missis, & ultrò accessisset ad Conciones, ut se Populo daret, cum audiret navem illam appulsuram postridie, factus repente confidentior, sumptis animis, noluit longiùs dissimulare. Accedit ad Templum; jubet sibi de more dici Missam. Eodem ipso tempore, D. Knoxus, Concionator in eodem oppido, & in proximo templo, magna frequentia clamare in Idolomanias, & in universum Regnum Pontificium, nunquam fortius. Interea, navis illa Philippica jactata tempestatibus, & ventibus fluctibusq; concussa, & fracta, convulso malo, ruptis lateribus, amissis gubernatoribus, vectoribus, & rebus omnibus inanis,



inanis, & lacera, & aquæ plena, refertur in Angliam. Hæc ego divinitus non dubito contigisse, ut Rex fatuus intelligat, quàm sit auspicatum audire Missas. E Galliis multa turbulenta nunciantur. Dominus illa Guisana non potest acquiescere sine aliquo magno malo: Verùm illa vobis multò propiora sunt, quàm nos. Darius, & Saccus, cruentissimè inter se conflixerunt, & adhuc dicuntur esse in Armis: Uterq; affectus ex maximis incommodis; nec adhuc uter sit superior, dici potest. Libri vestri (tuus, Reverende Pater, in Danielem, & tuus, Doctissime Ludovice, in Josuam) incolumes ad me delati sunt: Ego & Deo optimo Maximo de vobis, & vobis de istis laboribus & studiis, deq; omni vestra humanitate, ago gratias.

Misi in hoc tempore ad Julium nostrum, in annuum Stipendium, viginti Coronatos; & alteras totidem ad vos duos, ut eos vel in cœnam publicam pro more vestro, vel in quemvis alium usum pro vestro arbitrio consumatis.

Deus vos, Ecclesiam, Rempublicam, Scholamq; vestram conservet incolumes. Salutate D. Gualterum, D. Smierum, D. Zuinglium, D. Gheslerum, D. Wikium, D. Hallerum, D. D. Hen. & Rod. Bullingerum meo nomine. Sarisburie, 8 Februar. 1566.

Vestri Amans, &c

Studiosus in Deo,

Jo. Juellus.

### Number 89.

*The Nobilitie, Gentillmene, Barons, with Superintendants, Ministers and others, professinge the Evangell of Jesus Christ, within this Realm: To the Kings and Queens Majestie, and the Christian Estat of yis Realme presentlie met into Parliament, wisbeth the Feare of God, with the Spirit of rightuous Judgment.*

Cott. Libr.

**F**Orasmuckill as in the Convention of the Kirke, halden at *Edenburgh* the 25th Day of *June* last past, certayn Gentelmen then were directed to the Queens Majestie, with certaine Articles concerning the Religion, desiring her Majesties Answer therupon: To the whilks howbeit her Majestie then gave sum particular Answer, nocht the less her Majestie remitted the ferder Answer to this present Parliament. And therfore wee, of our Dewty, can doe noe

lesse nor crave the full Answer of the said Articles in this present Parliament, conforme to the Queens Grace own Appointment. And alsua in respect that the Parliament, halden at *Edinburghe* the 10th of *July* 1560 Years, it was determin'd and concluded, the Masses, Papistrie, and Papis Jurisdiction, to be simply abolyshit and put away out of this Realme, and Christs Religion to be retained universally and approv't. And in like manor, in respect that the Queens Majestie, by many, divers and fundry Proclamations, hes ratefyt and approv't Christs Religion; quhilke She fand publickly resaved in this Realme at her Arrivall, and specially upon the fiftene Daye of *September* last at *Dunde*: The Kinge and Queens Majestie, with the Advyse of thair Secreat Counsaill, promiset as well be the Act of Sacreat Counsaile, as by divers and fundry Proclamations mad ther-upon, publickly in the principall Burghis of this Realme, to establish in this present Parliament the Religion of Christ, quhilke thei fand publickly and universally standing at the Arivall in *Scotland*; and all Acts, Lawes and Constitutions, Comon, Civill, or Municipiall, prejudiciall to the same, to be abolished and put away, as the said Acts and Proclamations mair fullelye proports. Desiringe thairfore the Premisses to be considered, together with the said Articles, and the Queens Majesties Answers to the same, with the Kirks Replie thareupon as followis.

### *The ARTICLES.*

Theis are the Articles, which the Nobilitie, Barons, Gentlemen, Burgeosis, and other Professors of Christs Evangell, crave with all Humilitie at the Queens Majestie and her Honorable Consaile, within this Realme of *Scotlande*.

*Imprimis*, That the Papistical and Blasphemous Mass, with all Papistree, Idolatry, and Pope's Jurisdiction, be universallie suppressed and abolished thorowgout this whole Realme, not only in the Subjects, but also in the Queenes Majestie owne Person, with Punishment against all Persons, that shall be deprehendet to transgresse and offend in the same: And that the sincere Word off God, and Christs true Religion, nowe presently received, might be established, approved, and ratified througheout thole Realme, aswel in the Queenes Majestie owne Person, as in the Subjects, without any Impedymment: And that the People be astricted to resort, upon the Sondaies at least, to the Praiers and Preaching of Godes Worde, like as they were astricted before to resort to the Idolaters Masse: And theis Heads to be provided by Act off Parliament, with the Consent of the Estates, and Ratifycacion of the Queenes Majestie.



*Secondlie*, That feur Provision be appointed for Sufſtentation of the Myniſtrye, aſwel for the Tyme preſent, as for the Tyme to come; and that ſuche Perſons as are publickely admytted in the Myniſtrye, may have there Livings aſſigned unto them, in the Townes where they travell, or at the leaſt next adjacent thereto: And that they have not occaſion to crave the ſame at the Hands of any others. And that the Benefices nowe vacant, or that have vaked ſithence the Monethe of *Marche*, Anno 1558. or that hereafter ſhall happen to vake, be diſponed to qualified and learned Perſons, able to preche Goddes Worde, and to diſcharge the Vocation concernynge the Myniſtrye, by Tryall, and Admiſſion of the Superintendents: And that no Biſhopricke, Abbaty, Priorye, Deaconrye, Provostrye, or enye other Benyfice having many Churches annexed thereto, be diſponed altogether at eny time to come, to eny one Man: But at the leaſt, the Churches thereof be ſeverallye diſponed, and to ſeveral Perſons, ſo that every Man having Charge may ſerve at his owne Church, according to his Vocation. And to this Effect, that the Glebbis and Manſes be given to the Myniſtrye, that they may make Reſidence at there Churches, wherethrough they may diſcharge there Conſciences, conform to there Vocation, and alſo that the Churches may be repaired accordinglye; and that a Lawe be made and eſtabliſhed hereupon by Act of Parliament, as ſaid is.

*Thirddie*, That none be permytted to have Charge of ſcoules, Colledges, or Universities, or yet privatly or publickly inſtruct the Youth, but ſuch as ſhall be tryed by the Superintendents, or the Viſitors of the Church, found ſound and able in Doctrine, and admitted by them to there Charges.

*Fourthlie*, For Sufſtentacion of the Poore, that all Lands founded to Hoſpitalitie of Old, be reſtored again to the ſame Uſe: And that all Lands, Anuell Rents, or any other Emoluments pertayninge any wayes ſomtyme to the Friers of whatſoever Ordre they had been of, or Anuall Rents, Altarage, Obits perteoninge to the Priests, be applyit to the Sufſtentacion of the Poor, and Uphold of Scoles in the Townes, and other Places whear thaye lie.

*Fifthlie*, That all ſic horrible Crymes, as now abounds in this Realme, without any Correction, to the great Contempt of God and his Holye Worde, ſic as Ydolatry, Blaſphemy of Godes Name, maniſeſt brekinge of the Sabbath Day, with Wichcraft, Sorcery and Inchantment, Adultery, Inceſt, maniſeſt Whordome, Mentenence of Bordells, Murther, Slaught, Reyſe and Spulze, with many other deteſtable Crymes, may be ſeverely puniſhed; and Judges appointed in every Province or Dioces, for Eexecution thereof, with Power to doe the ſame, and that by Act of Parliament.

*Laſt*, That ſom Order be devyſit and eſtabliſhit, for the Eaſe of the poore Laborers of the Ground, concerninge the reaſonable Payment of thair Teynds, and ſettinge of thair Teyndis to an over yair Heads, without yaire owne Advyſe and Conſent.

*The Queen's Majesties Answer to the Articles, presentit  
to her Highnes by certaine Gentlemen, in the Name  
of the hall last Assemblie of the Kirke.*

**T**O the First, Desiringe the Mass to be suppressed and abolscht, as well in the Head as Members, with Punysment against the Contradoenars; as also that Religion now professed to be establisht be Acte of Parliament. It is Answerit, First, for the Part of her Majestie selfe, that hir Highnes is yt na wyse perswadit in the said Religion, nor yett that any Impyetic is in the Masse; and therefore beleves that her Lovinge Subjects will noe wayes presse her to receive any Religion agaynst her Conscience: Quilke suld be to her continuall Troble, be remorse of Conscience, and ther though an perpetuall Inquietnes. And to deal plainly with her Subjects, her Majestie neather will, nor may leave the Religion, qucharin she hes ben noryscht, and upbrought, and believes the same to be well grounded; knowinge besides the Grudge of Conscience, gyf she shold receve any change in her owne Religion, that she shold leave the Friendship of the King of *France*, the Auncient Allia of yis Realme, and of other great Princes hir Frinds and Confederats: Quha wold take the same in Evil Part. And of quhom she may luke for thare great Support in har Necessities and have fand no other Confederation that may contraven the same. She will be loth to put in hasard the losse of all her Frinds in an instant; prayinge all her lovyng Subjects, seing they had Experience of hir Goodnes, that she has neither in Tymes by past, nor yet means hereafter to prease the Conscience of any Man, but that they may Worshippe God in sick sort as they ar perswadit to be the best, that they will allwayes nocht presse hir toffend hir awne Conscience. As to the Establisment in the Body of the Realme; these your selfis knawis as appears well by your Articles, that the sam can nocht be done, be thonly Consent of hir Majestie, but requires necessarily the Consent of the Thre Estates in Parliament. And therefore soe sone as the Parliament halds, that Thing quhilke the Thre Estates agree upon amangst your selves, hir Majestie shall grant the same unto you. And alwais fall make you suer yat na Man shall be troblit for using your selves in Religion accordinge to your Consciences: So that no Man shall have Cause to doubt that for Religious Causes Mens Lyves, or Heritags, shall be in haserid.

To the Second Article, That her Majestie thinks it no wayes resonable that she shuld defraud her selfe of sa greate a Parte of the Patrimony of the Crowne, as to put the Patronages of the Benifices, furch of her owne Hands. For her own Necessity, in beringe of her, and Comon Charges, will requyre the Retention of ane Guide Part in her owne Hands; Nochtelles her Majestie is well pleasit that Consideracion being had of hir owne Necessity, and quhat may be sufficient, for the resonable Sustentation of the Ministers, and speciall

Assignation



Assignment be made to you, in Places maist comodius and with the quhilk her Majestie shall not intromitt, but suffer the same to run to thaim.

The Answer of the rest of the Articles is refered to the Parliameut.

---

*The Kirk's Reply to the Queen's Majesties Answers  
aforesayd.*

---

**F**irst, what her Majestie Answers that she is not perswadit in the Religion; neather that she understands any Impietie in the Masse, bot that the same is well grounded, &c. This is no smale greafe to the Christian Harts of her Godlie Subjects; consideringe that the Trompet of Christ's Evangell hes ben sa lange blawin in this Countrie; and his Mercy so plainly offerit in the same: That her Majestie yet remaynes unperswadit of the Trewth of this our Religion; for our Religion is not ells, but the same Religion quhilke Christ in the last Days revelit, fra the Bosome of his Father: Quharof he mad his Apostells Messengers, and quhilke they preachit and establisht amoungst his Faithfull to continu till gaine coming of the Lord Jesus: Quhilke differs from the Impietie of the *Turks*, the Blasphemy of the *Jewes*, and Vaine Superstition of the Papists. In this that onlie our Religion hes God the Father, his only Sonne our Lord Jesus, his Holy Spirit speakinge in his Prophets and Apostles, for Authors therof: And the Doctrine and Practice for Ground of the same. The quhilke Assurance no o'her Religion upon the Face of the Yearth can justly alleage, or plainly prove; yea, quatsoever Assurance the Papists hes for their Religion, the same hes the *Turks* for mayntenance of the *Alcarone*; and the *Jewys* far greter for the Defence of their Cerimonies; quihidder it be Antiquity of Tyme, Consent of People. Authority of Princes, great number or multitud consenting together, or any other sike like Cloks, that they can pretent. And therefore as we are dolorous that her Majestie in this our Religion is not perswadit, so maist reverently wee require in the Name of the Eternal God, that her Highnes wald embrace the Meanes quharby she may be perswadit in the Trewth. Quhilke presently we offer unto her Grace, aswell by Preachinge of his Worde, quhilke is the chiefe Means appointed be God to perswade all the Chosen Children of his infailable Veritie. As be publick Disputacon against the Adversaries of this our Religion descivers of her Majestie whensoever it shall be thought expedient to hir Grace. And as to the Impietie of the Masse, we dare be bauld to affirme, that in that Idoll thare is great Impietie, ye it is na thinge ells but a Messe of Impietie, fra the Beginninge to the Endinge. The Author, or Sayer, the Action it selfe, the Opinion therof conteanit, the Hearers of it, Gasars upon it, avoure it pronouncis Blasphemy,

Blasphemy, and comytts maist abhomynable Ydolatri, as we have ever offerit, and yet offer our selves maist manifestly to prove. And quhar hir Majestie esteemes that the Change of hir Religion should dissolve the Confederacy and Allyance, that she hes with the Kinge of *France*, and other Princes, &c.

Assuredly Christ's true Religion is the undowtid Means to knit up furly perfect Confederacy and Friendship, with him that is King of all Kings; and quha hes the Harts of all Princes in his Hands. Quhilk aucht to be more precious unto her Majestie, nor the Confederacy of all the Princes of the Yearth; and without the quhilke, neather Confederacy, Love, or Kindness, can long endure.

Concerning her Majesties Answer to the Second Article, quhar as she thinks yt no ways resonable to defraud hir selfe of hir Patronage of the Benefices, quhilk her Majestie esteemes to be a Portion of hir Patrimony. And that hir Majesty is mindit to retaine an gud Part of the Benefices in her own Hands to support her Comon Charges: As to the First Point, our Mind is not that hir Majestie, or any other Patrone of this Realme, shuld be defraudit of their just Patronages, but we mean that quhen soever hir Majestie, or any other Patrone dois present any Personage to any Benefice, that the Parson presently shuld be tryed and examined by the Learned Men of the Kirke, Sic appertaineth, at the Superintendaunts appointit there to. And as the Presentacion of the Benefices appertayne to the Patrons, so ought the Collation therof by Lawe and Reason appertayne to the Church; of the quhilke Collation, the Kirk shuld not be defrauded, mair nore the Patrons of their Presentation; for otherwise, if it shall be Lawfull to the Patrons absolutely to present, quhom thai please, without Triall or Examination, quhat than can abyde in the Kirke of God, but mere ignorance without all Ordre. As to the Second Parte concerninge the Retention of a gude Parte of the Benefices in her Majesties owne Hands, this Point abhorris sa far fra gud Conscience, as well of God's Law, as fra the Public Ordre of all Comon Laws; That we ar loth to open up the Ground of the Matter, be any long Circumstances. And therefore maist reverently we wish that hir Majestie wold consider the Matter with her selfe, and with her Wise Councell, that howsoever the Patronages of the Benefice may appertayne to her selfe, yet the Retention thereof in hir own Hands undisponing them to qualyfyt Persones, is both Ungodly, and also contrary to all Polyticke Order, and Finall Confusion to the Pure Saules of the Common People: Quha be this Means shuld be instructit of their Salvation. And quhar hir Majestie concludis in her Second Answer, that she is content that an sufficient & reasonable Sustentacion of the Ministers be provydat to tham, by assignation in Placis most commodious and easiest to tham; consideracion beinge had of hir owne Necessitie. As we are altogether desirous that hir Gracis Necessitie be relevit, so our Duty craves that we should notefie to your Grace, the true Order that shuld be observed in this Behalf, quhilk is this, The Teynds are properly to be reputed to be the Patrimony of the Kirke, upon the quhilks befor all Things they that travells in the Ministry thair of, and the pore indigent Members of Christ Boddy are to be sustenit. The Kirks also repaired, and the Youthead brought up in gud Letters: Quhilks Things be and done, than other



Necessitie resonable might be supported accordinge as her Majestie, and hir Godlie Counsaile could think expedient. Allways we cannot but thank her Majestie most reverently, of her liberall Offer, of Assignations to be made to the Ministers for their Sustentation. Quhilk not the lesse is so generally conceived that without mare speciall condescendinge upon the particularity therof, no Expectacion is able to follow thereupon. And so to conclud with her Majestie at this Parliament, we desire most earnestly the Performance of the said Articles, beseeching God that as they are Resonable and Godly in thamselvis: so your Majesties Hart, and the Estates jointly convenit, may be inclinitt and perswadit to the Performance thereof.

### Number 90.

#### The Supplication to the Queen's Majestie of *Scotlande.*

*To the Queen's most Excellent Majesty, her Grace's  
Humble Subjects, professing the Evangell of Christe  
Jesus within this Realme, wisheth longe Prosperitte,  
with the Spirit of Righteous Judgment.*

*Cotton Libr.  
Calig. B. 10.*

**I**T is not unknown unto your Majestie, that within this Realme the Evangell of Jesus Christ was lately so planted, the Trewe Religion so established; Idolatry, to wit, the Masses, and all that therto appertenyth, together with the Usurped and Tyrannicall Power of that *Romaine* Ante-Christ, called the Pope, so suppressed, aswel by the Mighty Power and Hand of God, as by just Lawes and Decrees of Parliament, that none within this Realme durst in Publick have gainsaid the one, nor mayntenet the other. It is further known, that such as in whose Hands, God of his Mercye had prospered the Begynninge of this his Worke, were going forward to an exact and perfect Reformation, concerninge the Policy of the Church, accordinge to the Word of God, and Sustentation of them that Travell in the same. But theis nowe our most Just and Godlie Begynnings have nowe bene staied and trobled nere the Space of Yeres, to the great Grief of all Godlie Hartes within this Realme. Shortlie after your Grace's Arrival, was that Idol the Masse erected up againe: And there after were wicked Men Enemyes to Christ Jesus, and his Holy Evangell reposed in the Places wiche they never possessed, and were admitted to receive the Fruts, that by no just Lawe can apperteane to them: And that under color they shold pay ther Thirds to your  
Majesties

Majesties Comptroller, and suche as he shold depute for the receiving of the same; to thend as we understand, that our Mynysters and Mynistrye might have bene planted and sustayned according to Gods Comaundement. And albeyt we were plainly forwarned, that suche Begynnynges wold not have eny happy Ende; yet the Love that we bare to the Tranquyllitie of your Realme, and Esperance and Hope that we had, that God of his Mercye wold molyfye your Highnes Hart, to heare his Blessed Evangell publickly preached, we quyetly past over many Things that were in our Harts, as also many tymes by our Supplicacions unto your Majestie, we desired to have bene redressed: But howe litle we have proffyted to this Daie, bothe great and small amongst us begynne now to consider. For Laws we see violated, Idolatrye encreased, your Highnes owne Gates (against Proclamations) made patent to the foolish People, to commytt Idolatrye: The Patrimony of the Church we see bestowed upon Persons most unworthie, and to other Uses then was at first intended: And thereby, The Tyrannye of that *Romaine* Antichrist to be intruded upon us againe; our Mynisters brought to extreme Povertie; some of them trobled in her Function, some Prechers hurt, and no Redresse maide. Fornication, Adulterye, Incest, Murther, Sorcerers, Bewytchers, and al Impietie, so to abounde universallie within this your Highnes Realme, that God cannot lange spare to stricke the Heade and the Members, onlesse speedye Repentance followe. We therefore, nowe contynuinge in our former humble Sewte, most humbly requere of your Majestie a speedye Reformation of the Innormities aforesaid, and a favorable Answer of our just Petycions; as more fullye your Majestie please receive in Articles; most humbly beseeching your Highnes to have this Opynon of us, that as to this daie your Grace have founde nothinge in us, but dewe Obedyence to your Majesties Lawes and Auctoritie, which we have given, because we are thonly Part of your People that treuly fear God, so to esteame of us, that God, his Christ Jesus, and his trewe Religion which we professe, (and by his Grace shal be) to us more dear then Lives, Possessions, or respect of Prosperitie. And therefore yet againe we the hole Bodye, professing Christ Jesus within this Realme, humbly crave of your Majestie, that ye give us not occasion to thinke, that ye entende nothinge but the Subversion of Christ Jesus his true Religion, and in the Overthrowe of it, the Distruction of us the best part of the Subjects of this your Graces Realme: For this before the World we plainly professe, that to that *Romaine* Antichrist we will never be subyeect, nor yet suffer (so far as our Power may suppress it) any of his usurped Auctoritie to have Place within this Realme. And thus with all humble and dewtifull Obbedyence, we humbly crave your Graces favorable Answer, with these our appointed Commissioners.



## Number 91.

*A Letter of Parkhurst Bishop of Norwich to Bullinger, concerning the State of Affairs in Scotland, and the Killing of Signior David.**Ex MSS.  
Tigur.*

**S** Alvus sis in Christo, optime Bullingere. Secundo Februarij scripsi ad te, & unà cum Literis misi viginti Coronatos, vel decem Coronatos & Pannum pro toga: Nam hoc Abeli arbitrio permisi. Tuas accepi 23 Maij. Paulò post Londinensis Episcopus, exemplar Responsionis tuæ ad Literas Laurentij Humphredi, & Thomæ Sampsonis, ad me misit. Quæ scripsisti, typis apud nos excuduntur, & Latinè, & Anglicè. Accepi præterea, 12 Julij, Confessionem Fidei orthodoxæ, c. pulcherrimum libellum. Mense Martio, Italus quidam, vocatus Senior David, Necromanticæ artis peritus, in magnam gratiam apud Reginam Scotiæ, è Reginæ cubiculo (illa præsentè) vi extractus, & aliquot pugionibus confossus, miserè periit. Abbas quidam ibidem vulneratus, evasit ægrè, sed paulò post ex vulnere est mortuus. Fraterculus quidam, nomine *Black*, (niger Visularius) Papistarum antesignanus, eodem tempore in Aula occiditur: Sic niger hic Nebulo, nigra quoq; morte peremptus, invitus nigrum subitò descendit in orcum. Consiliarij, qui tum simul in unum cubiculum erant congregati, ut de rebus quibusdam arduis consultarent, audientes has cædes, (nam priùs nihil tale sunt suspicati) alij hac, alij illac, alij è fenestris sese proturbantes certatim aufugerunt, atque ita cum vitæ periculo, vitæ consulebant suæ. Regina Scotiæ Principem peperit: Et cum antea Maritum (nescio quas ob causas) non tanti faceret, jam plurimi facit. D. Jacobum, suum ex parte fratrem, quem antea exofum habuit, nunc in gratiam recepit, nec solum illum, sed omnes (utinam verum esset) proceres evangelicos, ut audio. Evangelium quod ad tempus sopiebatur, denuò caput exerit. Cùm hæc scriberem, ecce Scotus quidam è Patria profugiens, Vir bonus & doctus, narravit mihi, Reginam ante decem hebdomadas Puerum peperisse; nec dum esse baptizatum. Rogo causam. Respondet, Reginam velle Filium in summo Templo, cum multarum Missarum Celebratione tingi. At Edinburgenses id omnino non permittunt: Nam mori potius malunt, quàm pati, ut abominandæ Missæ in suas Ecclesias iterum irrepant. Metuunt Edinburgenses, ne illa è Gallia auxiliares vocet Copias, ut facilius Evangelicos opprimat. Oremus Dominum pro piis Fratribus. Mandatis dedit cuidam pio Comiti, ut Knoxum apud se manentem, ex ædibus ejiciat. Dominus illam convertat, vel confundat. Plura scribere non possum; diu ægrotavi, nec dum plenè convalui. Est hæc scribendo debilitata manus.

Vale, Charissime mi Bullingere. Salutem quæso adscribas omnibus, atque adeo omnibus Piis, meo nomine. Dominus sua dextra protegat Ditionem Tigurinorum. Raptim Ludhamiæ, 21 Augusti 1566.

Tuus,

Joh. Parkhurstus, M.

## INSCRIPTIO.

D. Henricho Bullingero.

Number 92.

*A Letter of Grindall's to Bullinger, giving an Account of the State of Affairs both in England and Scotland; and of the Killing of Signior David.*

Salutem in Christo.

Clarissime D. Bullingere, ac Frater in Christo Charissime,

**D.** Johannes Abelus tradidit mihi Literas tuas D. Wintoniensi, *Ex MSS.* Norvicensi, & mihi communiter inscriptas, unâ cum scripto *Tigur.* vestro de re vestiaria: Quorum ego exemplaria ad D. Wintoniensem & Norvicensem statim transmissi. Quod ad me attinet, ago tibi maximas gratias, tum quod nostrarum Ecclesiarum tantam curam geris, tum quod me, hominem tibi ignotum, participem facis eorum, quæ ad nostros de rebus controversis scribuntur. Vix credibile est, quantum hæc Controversia, de rebus nihili, Ecclesias nostris perturbavit, & adhuc aliqua ex parte perturbat. Multi ex Ministris doctioribus, videbantur Ministerium deserturi. Multi etiam ex Plebe, contulerunt Consilia de Secessione à nobis facienda, & occultis cætibus cogendis; sed tamen, Domini benignitate, maxima pars ad sanio rem mentem rediit. Ad eam rem Literæ vestræ, plenæ Pietatis ac Prudentiæ, plurimum momenti attulerunt: Nam eas latinè, atque anglicè, Typis evulgandas curavi. Nonnulli ex Ministris, vestro judicio atque auctoritate permoti, abjecerunt priora Consilia de deferendo Ministerio. Sed & ex Plebe quamplurimi miriùs sentire cæperunt, postquam intellexerunt nostros Ritus, à vobis (qui iisdem non utimini) nequaquam damnari Impietatis, quod ante publicatas vestras Literas, nemo illis persuasisset. Sunt tamen, qui adhuc manent in priorè Sententia; & in his, D. Humfredus & Sampsonus: Nihil verò esset



facilius, quàm Regiæ Majestati eos reconciliare, si ipsi ab instituto discedere vellent. Sed quum hoc non faciunt nos apud Serenissimam Reginam ista contentione irritatam, nihil possumus. Nos, qui nunc Episcopi sumus, in primo nostro reditu, priusquam ad Ministerium accessimus, diu multumque contendebamus, ut ista de quibus nunc controvertitur, prorsus amoverentur. Sed cùm illa de Regina & Statibus in Comitibus Regni impetrare non potuimus, communicatis Consiliis, optimum judicavimus, non deferere Ecclesias propter Ritus non adeo multos, eosque per se non impios; præsertim quum pura Evangelij Doctrina nobis interga ac libera maneret, in qua ad hunc usque diem, (utcumque multi multa in contraria moliti sunt) cum vestris Ecclesiis, vestraque Confessione nuper dedita, plenissimè consentimus. Sed neque adhuc pœnitet nos nostri Consilij: Nam interea, Domino dante incrementum, auctæ & confirmatæ sunt Ecclesiæ, quod alioqui Ecebolis, Lutheranis, & Semi-papistis, prædæ fuissent expositæ. Istæ verò istorum intempestivæ Contentiones de Adiaphoris, (si quid ego judicare possum) non ædificant, sed scindunt Ecclesias, & discordias seminant inter Fratres. Sed de nostris Rebus hætenus. In Scotia non sunt res tamen bene constitutæ, quàm esset optandum. Retinent quidem Ecclesiæ adhuc puram Evangelij Confessionem; sed tamen videtur Scotiæ Regina omnibus modis laborare, ut eam tandem extirpet. Nuper enim effecit, ut sex aut septem Missæ Papisticæ, singulis diebus in Aula sua publicè fierent, omnibus qui accedere volunt admissis, quum antea unica, eaque privatim habita, nullo Scoto ad eam admissio, esset contenta. Præterea, quum primum inita esset Reformatio, cautum fuit, ut ex bonis Monasteriorum, quæ fisco adjudicata sunt, stipendia Evangelij Ministris persolverentur: At ipsa jam integro triennio nihil solvit. Joannem Knoxum, regia urbe Edinburgo, ubi hætenus primarius fuit Minister, non ita pridem ejecerit, neque exorari potest ut redeundi facultatem concedat. Publicè tamen, extra Aulam, nihil hætenus est innovatum; & Procures Regni, Nobiles item, ac Cives, multò maxima ex parte Evangelio nomen dederunt, multa, magnaue Constantiæ indicia ostendunt. In his, præcipuus unus est, D. Jacobus Stuardus, Murraciæ Comes, Regiæ Frater, Nothus, Vir pius, ac magnæ apud suos Authoritatis. Perscribitur ad me ex Scotia, Regiæ cum Rege pessime convenire. Causa hæc est: Fuit Italus quidam, nomine David, à Cardinale Lotharingo Regiæ Scotiæ commendatus. Is quum Regiæ à secretis atque intimis esset Consiliis, ferè solus omnia administrabat, non consulto Rege, qui admodum juvenis & levis est. Hoc malè habebat Regem. Itaque facta Conspiratione cum Nobilibus quibusdam, & Aulicis suis, Italum illum Regiæ opem frustra implorantem ex ipsius conspectu arripere, & statim indicta causa multis pugionibus perfodi, atque interfici curavit. Hujus facti immanis memoriam Regina, tametsi nuper Filium Regi peperit, ex animo deponere non potest. Hæc paulò verbosius de Scotia, ex qua fortassis ratò ad vos scribitur.

Oro ut D. Gualterum, ac reliquos Collegas tuos, meo nomine salutes. Dominus te, nobis & Ecclesiæ suæ, quàm diutissimè conservet.

Londini 27 Aug. 1566.

Deditissimus tibi in Domino,

Jm. Grindallus

Episcopus Londinensis,

### INSCRIPTIO.

Reverendo in Christo, D. Henricho Bullingero, Tigurinæ Ecclesiæ Ministro Fidelissimo, ac Fratri in Domino Charissimo.

### Number 93.

#### *A Part of Grindal's Letter to Bullinger, of the Affairs of Scotland.*

-----S Cotia jam in novos motus incidit. Henricus nuper Scotiæ <sup>Ex MSB.</sup> Rex (uti te audivisse existimo) Decimo Februarii elapsi, in <sup>Tigur.</sup> horto quodam, hospitio suo adjacente, inventus est mortuus: De genere mortis nondum convenit apud omnes. Alii dicunt incensis vasibus aliquot pulveris tormentarii, quæ sub cubiculo in quo dormiebat ex industria reposta fuerant, ædes eversas atq; ipsum in hortum proximum projectum fuisse. Alii verò intempesta nocte vi extractum è cubiculo, & potesta strangulatum, ac tum demum incenso pulvere ædes disiectas fuisse affirmant. Hujus cædis apud omnes suspectus erat Comes quidam nomine Bothwellius. Huic Comiti, postquam Uxorem Legitimam interveniente autoritate Archiepiscopi S. Andreæ repudiasset: Decimo Quinto Maii nupsit Scotiæ Regina, atq; eandem ex Comite, Orchardum Ducem creavit. Paulo ante hoc Matrimonium omnes fere Regni proceres, quum nullam in cædem Regis inquisitionem institui viderent, discesserunt ex Aula, & seorsum apud Sterlynum oppidum conventum habuerunt. In hoc conventu, certis inditiis nefandam hanc cædem à Bothwellio perpetrata fuisse, compertum est. Itaq; collecto exercitu ipsum comprehendere satagunt, Bothwellius verò dat



se in fugam: Sed quo profugerit, adhuc nescitor. Reginam alii aiunt obsideri in Arce quadam, alii verò in Arce Edinburgensi, tanquam necis mariti consciam, captivam detineri asserunt. Quomodocunque sit, infames illæ Nuptiæ, non possunt, non in aliquam diram Tragœdiam definere. Sed de his omnibus expectamus indies certiora, de quibus, efficiam brevi ut cognoscas. De persecutionibus, Flandriæ nihil scribo, quod eas vos non latere existimem: Multa apud nos jactata sunt de obfessa Geneva, sed spero vana esse. Dominus Jesus pietatem tuam, nobis & Ecclesiæ incolumen conservet.

Londini, 21 Junii,  
1567.

Deditissimo tibi in Domino

Edmundus Grindallus

Episcopus Londiniensis,

### INSCRIPTIO.

Reverendo in Christo, D. Henricho  
Bullingero, Tigurinæ Ecclesiæ  
Ministro Fidelissimo & Fratri  
in Christo Charissimo.

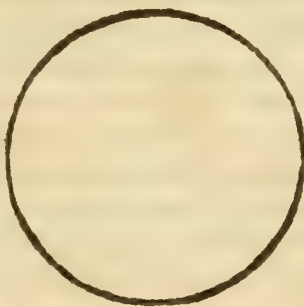
Tiguri.

*This being the last of the Letters sent me from Zurich, which I have put in this Collection; I add to it the Attestation sent me from thence, that the Copies were Faithfully taken from the Originals, and that they were carefully Collated with them.*

*The Attestation of the Burgemaster and Council of Zurich, of the Faithfulness of the Copies of the Letters sent me from the MSS. that lie there.*

**C**onsul & Senatus Civitatis Thuricensis Helvetiorum vulgò Zurich dictæ, præsentibus hisce confitemur ac notum facimus. Apographa illa ex Originalibus in Archivis Civitatis nostræ asservatis Literis, quæ tempore Reformationis ab Ecclesia Anglicana ad nostræ Ecclesiæ tunc temporis Ministros & vice versa emanavêre, ducta & transumpta, omni diligentia & fidelitate descripta esse, ut facta in Cancellaria nostra accuratâ collatione, Copias Originalibus de Verbo ad Verbum ubiq; concordare repertum fuerit, quibus Apographis proinde plenaria fides tutò adhiberi possit. In cujus rei Testimonium præsentis hæc exhiberi, Civitatis nostræ Sigillo muniri, & à Jurato Secretaria nostro subscribi mandavimus, Die Decimo Julii, Anno à Nata Salute Millesimo Septingentesimo, Decimo Tertio.

Locus



Sigilli.

BEATUS HOVRHALBIUS,

Reipublicæ Thuricensis,  
Archigrammaticus.

Manu propria subscripsi.



## Number 94.

*A Relation of Mary Queen of Scotland's Misfortunes, and of her last Will, in the Life of Cardinal Laurea, written by the Abbot of Pignerol his Secretary. Printed at Bologna, Anno 1599.*

**A**Tqui tunc in Scotia tam scelestum, tamque nefarium facinus commissum est, ut illud reminisci, nedum enarrare animus quodammodò exhorreat. Rex, variolarum (ut vulgò aiunt) morbo correptus, ne fortassis Uxorem contagione contaminaret, se in ædes à regiis ædibus Edinburgi sejunctas receperat; ubi, simul ac convalescere cæpit, ab Uxore sæpius invisitur, quodam autem die cum simul cænassent, atq; in multam noctem sermonem, lusumq; protraxissent quo minus itidem simul cubarent, excusationem affert Regina, quod sponsam quandam è nobilibus suis mulieribus ea primam nuptiarum nocte usque ad cubile honoris gratia esset comitatura: Quem morem superiores Reginæ observare semper consueverant. Vix Regina discesserat, cum ecce pulvis tormentarius, per cuniculos subter fundamentum domus coniectus, totum edificium continuò dejecit, ipsumque Regem opprimit: Quamvis nonnulli non ruina interemptum, sed, dum per posticum primo circa ædes audito armorum strepitu in hortum proximum confugeret, unâ cum familiari quodam strangulatum, moxque ædes tormentario pulvere dejectas fuisse malint. Planè constat, exangue Regis Corpus in horto repertum nullo affectum vulnere, nigram tantum modò circa collum maculam habuisse. Indignissima hac Regis divulgata cæde, ingens omnes horror corripuit; quidem iniquos in Reginam sermones jacere: alij per injuriam libellos edere: Nonnulli Comitem Boduellium, quem cædis nefariæ auctorem fuisse conpererant, non sicarium, sed crudelissimum carnificem accusare, adeò interdum vulgus acutissimè indagare, atque odorari omnia solet. Boduellius, licet Hæreticus, Reginæ tamen studiosissimus, fidelissimusque semper extiterat: Nuper eam gravissimo illo seditionis periculo fortiter liberaverat, ab ipsi deniq; perditè amabatur. Quamobrem in spem adductus fore, ut Reginam ipsam in Matrimonio haberet, primò Uxori propriæ (quasi propter adulterium fieri divortium, aliamque ducere liceret) repudium misit, deinde Regi necem crudeliter machinatus est. Regina post, improbissimos de ea, Boduellioque rumores dissipatos, verita ne quis populi motus in eorum perniciem fieret, Edinburgo statuit recedendum, ac se unâ cum parvulo filio ad munitam Strivelini arcem recepit; statuto prius (ut simile vero videtur) quid inter ipsam, & Boduellium foret postea Transigerdum. Nam paucis inde diebus egressa Regina, venatum prodire simulat; tum Bodvellius, veluti ex insidiis, ducentis stipatus equitibus, illam circumvenire, vimque ei intendere visus est. Ergo Regina, unâ cum Bodvellio in arcem regressa, confestim

festum eum Orcadum Ducem, moxque Maritum suum esse declarat, verum Nuptiæ illæ neutiquam faustæ, ac diuturnæ fuerunt: Quippe quæ non Matrimonij dignitate, sed indigni facinoris societate conjunctæ viderentur. Eo tempore, Moravienſis à Scotia aberat, præcæteris tamen relicto Ledingtonio, qui novas, ut occasio daretur, turbas, novasq; rixas faceret. Huic quam facillimum fuit sponte omnium in Reginam Bodvelliumque ira, accensos animos acriter inflammare. Raptim igitur, turbulenteque, Exercitu Edinburgi comparato, subito Strivelinam versus Castra moventur. Id ubi Regina intellexit, secum Mulieres tantum, paucosq; aulicos Homines, adducens obviam prodeundum duxit, venienti debita cum reverentia assurrexerunt. Interrogati, quam de causa armati illuc accessissent, non alia respondisse feruntur, nisi ut atrocem injuriam à Bodvellio factam, ac crudelem, & indignam Regis necem, vimq; ipsimet Reginae illatam vendicarent. At Regina noxam Bodvellij purgare; nihil non ipsa assentiente commissum. Quo sermone adeò sunt commoti, & exarserunt, ut omnes illicò uno ore acclamaverint. Et tu igitur, Domina, apud nos Captiva eris. Nec mora, ad Arcem insulae intra Lacum Levinum in custodiam mittunt; uno ei tantum Lixa, duabusq; infimæ conditionis Mulierculis, ad ei ministrandum concessis.

*Towards the End of the Book comes what follows.*

-----Unum, hoc loco, non videtur silentio prætereundum: Quod cum Sixti Pontificis jussu, Regni Scotiæ, atque in primis Reginae Mariæ Res, in Urbe protegendum munus suscepisset, accidit, ut infelix Regina pridè, quàm securi in Anglia feriretur, supremas tabulas Gallica Lingua, Manuque propria conficeret. Quibus primo, se Religionis Catholicæ studiosissimam semper fuisse professâ est; deinde cavit, ne ad Filium Principem, si falsam Hæresis, quam animo imbiberat, persuasionem non exisset, Anglici Regni Hæreditas ullo unquam tempore perveniret; sed loco sui ad Philippum, Hispaniarum Regem Catholicum pertineret. Hæc Tabulas cum Vincentius Cardinalis accepisset, mira diligentia recognoscendas curavit, ut ad Reginae ultimam Voluntatem aperiendam, Fidemq; faciendam sufficerent. Nam & cum Literis ab eadem Regina prius acceptis contulit, & non à se solum, verumetiam à Ludovico Audeno, Anglo, Episcopo Cassanensi, pio & integerrimo Homine, voluit subsignari: Sicq; firmatas, ac tanquam publica Autoritate roboratas, Comiti Olivario, Hispaniarum Regis Oratori, ad ipsum Regem fideliter transmittendas dedit.



## Number 95.

*A Bond of Association, upon Mary Queen of Scotland's  
Resigning the Crown in Favour of her Son.*

*An Original, in the Library of Glasgow.*

WE quhilk has subscrivit the underwritten Bond, understanding that the Queenis Majesty willing nathing mair earnestlie, nor that in her Lifetime her Majesties Dear Son, our Native Prince, be placit and inaugurat in the Kingdom of this his Native Cuntre and Realm, and be obeyit as King be us, and uthers his Subjects: And being wearit of the great Pains and Travels taken be her in her Government thereof, hes by her Letters demittit and renderit, and given Power thairby to demit and renunce the said Government of this Realm, Liegis and Subjectis thairof, in Favours of her said Son, our Native Prince: To the effect he may be inaugurat thairin, the Crown Royal put upon his Head, and be obeyit in all Things as King and Native Prince thairof, as her Hieness Letters past thair-upon bears. Thairfore, and because it is ane of the maist happy Things that can come to any Pepill or Cuntre, to be governit and sulit by their awn Native King; We, and ilk ane of us, quhilk hes subscrivit thir Presents, be the Tenor heirof, promitties, binds, and obligis us, faithfullly to convene and assëmbil our sels at the Burgh of *Sterling*, or any other Place to be appointit, to the Effect foresaid; and thair concur, assist and fortify our said Native King and Prince, and to the Establisshing, Planting and Placing of him in his Kingdom, and Putting of the Crown Royal thairof upon his Head, and in the Fear of our God being instructit and teichit be his and all other Laws, fall giff our Aith of Fidelity and Homage, and lawfull and dutiful Obedience, to be made by us to him during his Graces Lifetime, as it becomes faithfull, Christian, and true Subjects, to do to thair Native King and Prince. And farther, that we fall with all our Strength and Forcis promote, concurre, fortifie and assist, to the Promoteing and Establisshing of him in his Kingdom and Government, as becomis faithfull and true Subjects to do to thair Prince, and to resist all sick as wald oppon them thairto, or make any Trouble or Impediment to him thairin, and fall do all uther Things, that becomis faithfull and Christian Subjects to do to thair Native King and Prince. In Witness of the quhilk Thing, we  
haif

haif subscrivit thir Presents with our Handis, at *Edinburgh*, the Day of-----, the Year of God 1567 Years.

*James Regent. Huntley. Archibald Argyle. Athol. Mortoun. Mar. Glencairn. Errol. Buchan. Grahams. Alexander Lord Home. William Lord Ruthven. Lord Sanquhar. Ibon Lord Glamis. Patrick Lord Lindsey. Michael Lord Carlisle: With my Hand at the Pen, Alexander Hay, Notarus. William Lord Borthwick. Lord Innermaith. Ucheltrie. Sempill. Henry Lord Methven. Allan Lord Cathcart. Patrick Lord Gray. Robert Com. of Dumfries. James Stuart. Alexander Com. of Culrofs. Adam Com. of Cambuskenneth. Dryburgh. Master of Montrose. Alexander Bishop of Galloway. Cairnprinton. Blairquhan. Tullibarden, Comptroller; with Eighteen more.*

---

Number 96.

*Bond to the King, and to the Earl of Murray, as Regent during his Infancy: Registred in the Council-Books on the 5th of April 1569.*

**U**S, and every ane of us undersciv, and fall in all time cuming, likeas we doe presentlie, reverence, acknowledge and recognise the maist Excellent and Mighty Prince *James* the Sixt, by the Grace of God King of the *Scottis*, our only Sovereaine Lord, and his dearest Uncle, *James* Earl of *Murray*, Lord *Abernethie*, Regent to his Hiennes, his Realme, and Leidges thereof, during his Majesties Minority. His Hiennes his said Regent, and his Majesties Authority, we fall observe and obey, as becomis dutifull Subjectis, our Landis and Livis in the Defence and Advancement thair-of, we fall bestow, and wair. The Skaith, Harm, or Subversion of the samen, we fall never know, nor procure by any meanis, direct nor indirect. All former Bandis, for Obedience of any other Authority, subscrivit or made by us in any tymes, by-gaine, contrarious or prejudicial to his Hiennes, his said Regent and Authority, we renunce and discharge for evir: Affirming and swearing solempnitlie, upon our Faiths and Honouris, to observe and keep this our Declaration and plane Profession, everie Poynt thair-of, be God himself, and as we will answer at his General Judgement: Whairin gif we failzie, we are content to be comptit Faithless, Falsse, Perjurit and Defamit for ever; besyde the ordinar Pain of the Lawis



to be execute upon us, without Favour, as a perpetual Memory of our unnaturall Defection, and inexcusable Untruth. In Witnes whairof, we have subscrivit thir Presents with our Handis as follows, at the Dayes and Tymes particularly under specified.

*Huntley. Craford. Cassilis. Sanguar. Saltoun.  
James Lord Ogilvie. Laurance Lord Oliphant.  
John Mr. Forbes. With Thirty Six more.*

Number 97.

*A Declaration of the Causes moving the Queene of England, to give Aide to the Defence of the People afflicted and oppressed in the Lowe-Countries.*

Kings and Princes, Sovereignes are to yield Account of their Actions only to Almighty God, the King of Kings.

**A**Lthough Kings and Princes, Sovereignes, owing their Homage and Service only unto the Almighty God, the King of all Kings, are in that respect not bounde to yeeld Account, or render the Reasons of their Actions to any others, but to God their onely Sovereigne Lord: Yet (though amongst the most Ancient and Christian Monarchies, the same Lorde God having committed to us the Sovereignete of this Realme of *Englande*, and other our Dominions, which wee holde immediately of the same Almighty Lorde, and so thereby accountable only to his Divine Majestie) wee are, notwithstanding this our Prerogative at this time, specially moved (for divers Reasons hereafter briefly remembred) to publish, not only to our owne Naturall Loving Subjects, but also to all others our Neighbours, specially to such Princes and States as are our Confederates, or have for their Subjects Cause of Commerce with our Confederates and People, what our Intention is at this time, and upon what just and reasonable Grounds, we are moved to give Aid to our next Neighbours, specially to such People of the *Low-Countries*, being by long Warres, and Persecutions of Strange Nations there, lamentable afflicted, and in present danger to be brought into a perpetual Servitude.

Natural Causes of the Ancient continual Traffic betwixt the People of *England* and them of the *Low-Countries*.

First, It is to be understoode, (which percase is not perfectly known to a great Number of Persons) that there hath been, Time out of Minde, even by the Naturall Situation of those *Low-Countries*, and our Realme of *England*, one directly opposite to the other; and by Reason of the ready Crossing of the Seas, and Multiude of large and commodious Havens respectively on both Sides, a continual Traffique and Commerce betwixt the People of *England*, and the Naturall People of the *Lowe-Countries*; and so continued in all Anci.

Ancient Times when the severall Provinces therof, as *Flanders, Holland, and Zealand*, and other Countries to them adjoining, were ruled and possessed by severall Lordes, and not united together, as of late Yeeres they have been by Entermarriages; and at length by Concur-  
Confederations both betwixt the Kinges of England, and the Lordes of the Low Countries, and also the Subjects of both Countries.  
 rences of many and sundrie Titles have also been reduced to be under the Government of their Lordes that succeeded to the Dukedome of *Burgundie*, whereby there hath been in former Ages many speciall *Finances* and *Confederations*, not only betwixt the Kinges of *England* our Progenitours, and the Lordes of the said Countries of *Flanders, Holland, Zealand*, and their Adherents; but also betwixt the very Naturall Subjectes of both Countries, as the Prelates, Noblemen, Citizens, Burgessees, and other Comminalties of the great Cities and Port Townes of either Countrie reciproquely by speciall Obligations and Stipulations under their Seales interchangeable, for Maintenance both of Commerce and Entercourse of Merchantes; and also of speciall mutuall Amitie to be observed betwixt the People and Inhabitants of both Parties, as well Ecclesiasticall, as Secular: And very expresse Provision in such Treaties contained for mutuall Favours, Affections, and all other Friendly Offices to be used and prosecuted by the People of the one Nation towards the other. By which mutuall Bondes, there hath continued perpetuall Unions of the Peoples Hearts together, and so by way of continuall Entercourses, from Age to Age the same mutuall Love hath bene inviolable kept and exercised, as it had been by the Worke of Nature, and never utterly dissolved; nor yet for any long Time discontinued, howsoever the Kinges, and the Lordes of the Countries sometimes (though very rarely) have beene at difference by sinister Meanes of some other Princes their Neighbours, envying the Felicitie of these Two Countries.

And for Maintenance and Testimonie of these natural Unions of the Peoples of these Kingdoms and Countries in perpetuall Amitie, there are extant sundrie Autentique Treaties and Transactions for mutual Commerce, Entercourse and straight Amitie of Ancient Times: As for Example, some very solemnely accorded in the Times of King *Henrie* the VIth our Progeniteur, and *Philip* the IIId, Duke of *Burgundie*, and Inheritour to the Countie of *Flanders* by the Ladie *Margaret* his Grandmother, which was above One Hundred and Forty Years past; and the same also renewed by the Noble Duke *Charles* his Sonne, Father to the King of *Spayne's* Grandmother, and Husband to the Ladie *Margaret*, Sister to our Great Grandfather King *Edward* the IVth: And after that, of newe oftentimes renewed by our most Noble and Sage Grandfather King *Henrie* the VIIth, and the Archduke *Philip*, Grandfather to the King of *Spayne* now being: And in later Times, often renewed betwixt our Father of Noble Memoire King *Henrie* the VIIIth, and *Charles* the Vth Emperour of *Almaigne*, Father also to the present King of *Spaine*.

In al which Treaties, Transactions, and Confederations of Amitie and mutuall Commerce, it was also at all Times specially and principally contained in expresse Words, by Conventions, Concordes, and Conclusions, that the Naturall People and Subjectes of either side, should shewe mutuall Favours and Duties one to the other; and should safely, freely, and securely Commerce together in everie their Countries,

The People of both the Countries bound by special Obligations interchangeable, for mutual Favours, and Friendly Offices.

Treaties extant of Ancient Time, betwixt the Kinges of England, and the Dukes of Burgundie, for the Commerce betwixt their Countries.

Conventions for the Subjectes of either side, to shewe mutual Favours one to the other.



*Spaniards and Strangers lately appointed Governours in the Lowe Countries, to the Violation of the Liberties of the Country.*

*The Destruction of the Nobilitie, and the People of the Countries by Spanish Government.*

*The lamentable Violent Death of the Count of Egmond, the Glory of those Countries.*

*The Rich Townes and Strengthes with the Wealth thereof possessed by the Spaniards.*

Countries, and so hath the same mutuall and naturall Concourse and Commerce bene without interruption contynued in many Ages, farre above the like Example of any other Countries in Christendome, to the Honour and Strength of the Princes, and in the singular great Benefite and enriching of their People, untill of late Yeeres that the King of *Spayne* departing out of his *Lowe Countries* into *Spayne*, hath bene (as is to be thought) counselled by his Counsellours of *Spayne*, to appoynt *Spaniards*, Foreners, and Strangers of strange Blood, Men more exercised in Warres, than in Peaceable Government; and some of them notably delighted in Blood, as hath appeared by their Actions to be the chiefeft Governours of all his said *Lowe Countries*, contrary to the Ancient Lawes and Customes thereof, having great plentie of Noble, Valiant, and Faithful Persons naturally Borne, and such as the Emperour *Charles*, and the King himselfe had to their great Honours used in their Service, able to have bene employed in the Rule of those Countries. But these *Spaniards* being neere Strangers, havinge no naturall Regarde in their Government to the Maintenance of those Countries and People in their Ancient and Naturall Manner of peaceable Living, as the most Noble and Wise Emperour *Charles*; yea, and as his Sonne King *Philip* himselfe had, wilett he remained in these Countries, and used the Counsels of the States, and Natural of the Countries, not violating the Ancient Liberties of the Countries: But, contrarywise, these *Spaniards* being exalted to Absolute Government by Ambition, and for private Lucre have violently broken the Ancient Lawes and Liberties of all the Countries; and in a Tyrannous Sort have banished, killed, and destroyed without Order of Lawe, within the Space of a few Monthes, many of the most Ancient and Principal Persons of the natural Nobilitie that were more Worthy of Government. And howsoever in the Beginning of these Cruel Persecutions, the Pretence thereof was for Maintenance of the *Romish* Religion, yet they spared not to deprive verie many Catholiques, and Ecclesiastical Persons of their Franchises and Privileges: And of the Chiefeft that were executed of the Nobilitie, none was in the Whole Countre more affected to that Religion, then was the Noble and Valiant Count of *Egmond*, the very Glory of that Countre, who neither for his singular Victories in the Service of the King of *Spayne* can be forgotten in the true Histories, nor yet for the Cruelties used for his Destruction, to bee but for ever lamented in the Heartes of the natural People of that Countre. And futhermore, to bring these whole Countries in Servitude to *Spayne*; these Foreine Governours have by long intestine Warre, with multitude of *Spaniards*, and with some fewe *Italians* and *Almains*, made the greater Part of the said Countries, (which with their Riches, by common Estimation, answered the Emperour *Charles* equally to his *Indias*) in a manner Desolate; and have also lamentably destroyed by Sword, Famine, and other Cruel Maners of Death, a great Part of the natural People, and now the rich Townes and strong Places being Desolate of their natural Inhabitants, are held and kept chiefly with Force by the *Spaniards*.

All which pitiful Miseries and horrible Calamities of these most Rich Countries and People, are of all their Neighbours at this Day, even of such as in Ancient Time have bene at frequent Discord with them, thorowe natural Compassion verie greatlie pitied, which appeared specially this present Yere, when the *Frenche* King pretended to have received them to his Protection, had not (as the States of the Countrey and their Deputies were answered) that certaine untimely and unlooked for Complottes of the House of *Guise*, stirred and maintained by Money out of *Spayne*, disturbed the Good and General Peace of *Fraunce*, and thereby urged the King to forbear from the Resolution he had made, not only to aide the oppressed People of the *Lowe Countries* against the *Spaniardes*, but also to have accepted them as his owne Subjects. But in verie truth, howsoever they were pitied, and in a sort for a Time comforted and kept in Hope in *Fraunce* by the *Frenche* King, who also hath oftentimes earnestly solicited us as Queen of *England*, both by Message and Writinge to bee careful of their Defence: Yet in respect that they were otherwise more straightly knitte in Auncient Friendship to this Realme then to any other Countrey, we are sure that they could bee pitied of none for this long Time with more Cause and Grief generally then of our Subjects of this our Realme of *England*, being their most Ancient Allies, and Familiar Neighbours, and that in such Manner, as this our Realme of *England*, and those Countries have been by common Language of long Time resembled, and termed as Man and Wife. And for these urgent Causes and many others, we have by many Friendly Messages and Ambassadors, by many Letters and Writings to the said King of *Spayne* our Brother and Allie, declared our Compassion of this so Evil and Cruel Usage of his Natural and Loyal People, by sundrie his Martial Governours, and other his Men of Warre, all Strangers to these his Countries. And furthermore, as a good Loving Sister to him, and a natural good Neighbour to his *Lowe Countries* and People, we have often, and often againe most Friendly warned him, that if he did not otherwise by his Wisdome and Princely Clemencie restraine the Tyranny of his Governours, and Crueltie of his Men of Warre, we feared that the People of his Countries should be forced for Safetie of their Lives, and for Continuance of their Native Countrey in their former State of their Liberties, to seek the Protection of some other Foreyne Lorde; or rather to yeeld themselves wholly to the Soveraigntie of some Mighty Prince, as by the Ancient Lawes of their Countries, and by speciall Priviledges graunted by some of the Lordes and Dukes of the Countries to the People, they do pretende and affirm that in such Cases of General Injustice, and upon such Violent Breaking of their Priviledges, they are free from their former Homages, and at Libertie to make Choice of any other Prince to bee their Prince and Head. The Proof whereof, by Examples past is to be seene and read in the Ancient Histories of divers Alterations, of the Lordes and Ladies of the Countries of *Brabant*, *Flanders*, *Holland*, and *Zeland*, and other Countries to them united by the States and People of the Countries; and that by some such Alterations as the Stories do testifie, *Philip* the Duke of *Burgundy* came to his Tytle, from which the King of

The *Frenche* King's Offers to have aided and received to his Subjection the oppressed People of the *Lowe Countries*.

The Queen of *Englande's* continual Friendly Advices to the King of *Spayne* for restraining of the Tyrannie of his Governours.



The Queene of England's Meanes used to staie the States of the Lowe Countries from yeelding their Subjection to any other Forreine Prince.

*Spayne's* Interest is derived: But the further Discuſſion hereof, we leave to the Viewe of the Monuments and Records of the Countries. And now for the Purpoſes to ſtay them from yeelding themſelves in any like Sort to the Sovereigntie of any other ſtrange Prince, certaine Yeeres paſt, upon the earneſt Requeſt of ſundrie of the greateſt Perſons of Degree in thoſe Countries, and moſt Obedient Subjects to the King, ſuch as were the Duke of *Aſcot*, and the Marques of *Hwery* yet Living, and of ſuch others as had Principal Offices in thoſe Countries in the Time of the Emperour *Charles*, we yielded at their importunate Requeſts, to graunt them preſts of Money, only to continue them as his Subjects, and to maintaine themſelves in their juſt Defence againſt the Violence and Cruelties of the *Spaniardes* their Oppreſſours, thereby ſtaying them, from yeelding their Subjection to any other Prince from the ſaid King of *Spayne*: And during the Time of that our Aide given to them, and their ſtay in their Obedience to the King of *Spayne*, we did freely acquainte the ſame Kinge with our Actions, and did ſtill continue our Friendly Advices to him, to move him to commaund his Governours and Men of Warre, not to uſe ſuch Insolent Cruelties againſt his People, as might make them to deſpayre of his Favours, and ſeek ſome other Lorde.

The Enterpriſe of the *Spaniardes* in *Ireland* ſent by the King of *Spayne* and the Pope.

And in theſe kind of Perſwaſions and Actions wee continued many Yeeres, not onely for Compaſſion of the miſerable ſtate of the Countries, but of a natural diſpoſition to have the ancient Conditions of ſtraight Amitie and Commerce for our Kingdomes and People to continue with the States and the People of the ſaid Dukedome of *Burgundie* and the Appendants, and namely with our next Neighbours the Countries of *Flanders*, *Holland* and *Zeland*. For wee did manifeſtly ſee, if the Nation of *Spayne* ſhould make a conqueſt of thoſe Countries, as was and yet is apparantly intended, and plant themſelves there as they have done in *Naples* and other Countries, adding thereto the late Examples of the violent hostile Enterpriſe of a power of *Spanyardes*, being ſent within theſe fewe Yeeres by the King of *Spaine* and the Pope into our Realme of *Ireland*, with an intent manifeſtly confeſſed by the Captaines, that thoſe Numbers were ſent aforehand to ſeaſe upon ſome ſtrength there, to the intent with other greater Forces to purſue a Conqueſt thereof: wee did we ſay againe, manifeſtly ſee in what danger our ſelfe, our Countries and People might ſhortly bee, if in convenient time wee did not ſpeedily otherwiſe regard to prevent or ſtay the ſame. And yet notwithstanding our ſaide often Requeſts and Advices given to the King of *Spayne*, manifeſtly for his own Weale and Honour, wee found him by his Counſell of *Spayne* ſo unwilling in any ſort to encline to our friendly Counſell, that his Governours and Chiefetains in his lowe Countries increaſed their Cruelties towards his own afflicted People, and his Officers in *Spayne* offered dayly greater Injuries to ours, reſorting thither for Trafique: yea, they of his Counſell in *Spayne*, would not permit our expreſs Meſſenger with our Letters to come to the King their Maſter's Preſence: A Matter very ſtrange, and againſt the Law of Nations.

The Refuſal of the Queen's Meſſenger, and her Letters to the King of *Spayne*.

And

And the Cause of this our writing and sending to the King, proceeded of Matter that was worthy to be knowne to the King, and not unmete nowe also to be declared to the World, to shewe both our good Disposition towardes the King in imparting to him our Grieves, and to let it appear howe evill we have beene used by his Ministers, as in some part may appear by this that followeth. Although we coulde not have these many Yeres past any of our Servaunts, whome we sent at sundrie times as our Ambassadors to the King our good Brother, as was mete, suffered to continue there without many Injuries and Indignities offered to their Families, and divers times to their owne Persons, by the greatest of his Counsellours, so as they were constrained to leave their Places, and some expelled, and in a sort banished the Countrey, without Cause given by them, or notified to us: Yet we, minding to continue very good Friendship with the King, as his good Sister, did of long Time, and many Yeres give favourable Allowance to all that came as his Ambassadors to us; saving onely upon manifest dangerous Practices, attempted by Two of them to trouble our Estate, whereof the one was *Girald Despes*, a very turbulent-spirited Person, and altogether unskillfull and unapt to deale in Princes Affaires being in Amitie: as at his Retourn into *Spaine*, he was so there also reputed: The other, and last was, *Bernardin de Mendoza*; one whom we did accept, and use with great Favour a long time, as was manifestly seen in our Court, and we thinke cannot be denied by himself: But yet of late Yeeres, (we know not by what Direction) we found him to be a secret great Favourer to sundrie our evill-disposed and seditious Subjectes, not onely to such as lurked in our Realme, but also to such as fled the same, being notoriously condemned as open Rebelles and Traytours; with whome by his Letters, Messages, and secret Counsels, he did in the ende devise, how with a Power of Men, partely to come out of *Spayne*, partely out of the *Low Countries*, whereof hee gave them great Comforte in the Kinges Name, an Invasion might be made into our Realme; setting downe in Writing the manner howe the same should be done, with what Numbers of Men and Shippes, and upon what Coastes, Portes and Places of our Realme, by special Name: And who the Persons should be in our Realme of no small Account, that should favour this Invasion, and take part with the Invadours; with many other Circumstances, declaring his full set Purpose and Labours taken, to trouble us and our Realme very dangerously; as hath beene moste clearly proved and confessed, by such as were in that Confederacy with him: whereof some are fled, and now do frequent his Companie in *France*; and some were taken, who confessed at great length by writing, the whole Course herein helde by the saide Ambassador, as was manifestly of late time published to the Worlde uppon *Francis Throgmorton's*, a principall Traitour's Examination. And when we found manifestly this Ambassador so dangerous an Instrument, or rather a Head to a Rebellion and Invasion: And that for a Yeere or more together, he never brought to us any Letter from the Kinge his Master, notwithstanding our often Requeste made to him, that he woulde by some Letter from the Kinge to us, let it appeare that

The just Causes of Dismissing of B. Mendoza out of England.



that it was the Kings Will, that he should deale with us in his Masters Name, in fundrie Things that he propounded to us as his Ambassadour; which we did judge to be contrary to the Kinge his Masters Will. We did finally cause him to be charged with these dangerous Practices; and made it patent to him, how, and by whom, (with many other Circumstances) we knew it; and therefore caused him, in very gentle sort, to be content (within some reasonable time) to departe out of our Realme, the rather for his own Safety, as one in very deed mortally hated of our People. For the which we graunted him favourable Conduct both to the Sea, and over the Sea. And thereupon we did speedily send a Servant of ours into *Spaine*, with our Letters to the King, only to certify him of this Accident, and to make the whole Matter apparant unto him. And this was the Messenger afore-mentioned, that might not be suffered to deliver our Message, or our Letters, to the King.

And beside these Indignities, it is most manifest, how his Ministers also have both heretofore many times, and now lately practised here in *England*, by meanes of certaine Rebelles, to have procured sundry Invasions of our Realme, by their Forces out of *Spaine* and the *Low Countries*: Very hard Recompences (we may say) for so many our good Offices. Hereupon we hope, no reasonable Person can blame us, if we have disposed our selves to change this our former Course, and more carefully to look to the Safety of our Selfe, and our People. And finding our owne Dangers in deed very great and imminent, we have bene the more urgently provoked to attempt and accelerate some good Remedy: For that, besides many other Advices, given us both at Home and from Abrode, in due Time to withstand these Dangers; we have found the general Disposition of all our own faithfull People, very ready in this Case, and earnest, in offering to us both in Parliaments and otherwise, their Services with their Bodies and Blood, and their Aides with their Lands and Goods, to withstand and prevent this present common Danger to our Realme and themselves, evidently seene and feared, by the subverting and rooting up of the Ancient Nation of these *Low Countries*, and by Planting the *Spanish* Nation and Men of Warre, Enemies to our Countries, there so nere unto us. And besides these Occasions and Considerations, we did also call to our Remembrance our former fortunate Proceeding, by God's speciall Favour, in the Beginning of our Reigne, in remedying of a like Mischief that was intended against us in *Scotland* by certaine *Frenchmen*, who then were directed onely by the House of *Guise*, by Colour of the Marriage of their Neece, the Queene of *Scots*, with the *Dolphin* of *France*: In like manner, as the Offsprings of the saide House have even now lately sought to attaine to the like unordinate Power in *France*: A Matter of some Consequence for our selves to consider; although we hope, the King (our good Brother) professing sincere Friendship towards us, as we profess the like to him, will moderate this aspiring Greatnes of that House, that neither himself, nor the Princes of his Bloud be overruled, nor we (minding to continue perfect Friendship with the King, and his Bloud) be by the said House of *Guise*, and their Faction, disquieted or disturbed in our Countries. But

The Queen of  
*England's*  
Proceeding,  
for the De-  
liverie of  
*Scotland* from  
the Servitude  
wherein the  
House of  
*Guise* meant  
to have  
brought it.

now to return to this like Example of *Scotland* aforesaid, when the *French* had in like manner (as the *Spaniards* have nowe of long time attempted in the *Low Countries*) fought by Force to have subdued the People there, and brought them into a Servitude to the Crowne of *France*; and also by the Ambitious Desires of the saide House of *Guise*, to have proceeded to a Warre by way of *Scotland*, for the Conquest of our Crowne for their Neece the Queene of *Scottes* (a Matter most manifest to the common Knowledge of the Worlde): It pleased Almighty God, as it remaineth in good memorie to our Honour and Comfort, to further our Intention, and Honourable and Just Actions, at that time, in such sort, as by our Aiding then of the Nation of *Scotland*, (being sore oppressed with the *French*, and universally requiring our Aide) we procured to that Realme (though to our great Cost) a full Deliverance of the Force of Strangers, and Danger of Servitude, and restored Peace to the whole Countrie; which hath continued there ever since of many Yeres; saving that at some Time of Parcialities of certaine of the Noblemen, (as hath beene usuall in that Countrie, in the Mynoritie of the yong King) there hath risen some inward Troubles, which (for the most part) we have, in Favour of the King and his Governours, used Meanes to pacifie: So as at this Day, such is the Quietnes in *Scotland*, as the King our Dear Brother and Cousin, by Name *James* the VIth, a Prince of great Hope for many goode Princely Respectes, raigneth there in Honour and Love of his People, and in very good and perfect Amitie with us and our Country. And so our Actions, at that time, came to so good Successe, by the Goodnes of God, at bothe our own Realme, and that of *Scotland*, hath ever since remained in better Amitie and Peace, then can be remembered these manie Hundred Yeeres before: And yet nothing heereby done by us, nor any Cause justly given, but that also the *French* Kinges that have since succeeded, (which have been Three in Number, and all Brethren) have made and concluded divers Treaties for good Peace with us; which presentlie continue in Force on both Parties, notwithstanding our foresaide Actions, attempted for Removing out of *Scotland* of the saide *French* Forces, so transported by the onely Direction of the House of *Guise*.

The Realm of *Scotland* restored to the ancient Freedom, and so possessed by the present King, by the Means onely of the Q. of *England*.

And therefore, to conclude for the Declaration of our present Intention at this time, we hope it shall of all Persons abroade be well interpreted, as wee knowe it will be of such as are not ledde by Parciallity, that upon the often and continuall lamentable Requestes made to us by the Universall States of the Countries of *Holland*, *Zeland*, *Guelders*, and other Provinces with them united, (being desolate of the King of *Spaine*'s Favours) for our Succours to be yeilded to them, onely for their Defence against the *Spaniards*, and other Strangers; and therewith finding manifestly, by our often and importunate Requestes and Advices given to the King of *Spaine*, no Hope of Reliefe of these their Miseries, but rather an Increase thereof, by dayly Conquests of their Townes, and Slaughter of their People; (tho' in very Trueth, we cannot impute the Increase of any late Cruelties, to the Person of him that now hath the Title of Generall Governor, shewing his Naturall Disposition more inclinable to

The Conclusion of the Companies of sending of certain English Soldiers, to the assistance of the English of the Low Countries, and the Assistance of the Archduke of the Realm.



Mercie and Clemencie, then it seemeth he can direct the Heartes of the *Spaniardes* under him, that have been so long trayned in Shedding of Blood, under the former *Spanish* Governours:) And joyning therunto our owne Danger at Hand, by the Overthrow and Destruction of our Neighbours, and Accessse and Planting of the great Forces of the *Spaniardes* so nere to our Countries, with precedent Arguments of many troublesome Attemptes against our Realme: We did therefore, by good Advice, and after long Deliberation, determine, to sende certaine Companies of Souldieres, to ayde the Naturall People of those Countries; onely to defende them and their Townes, from Sacking and Desolation, and thereby to procure them Safetie, to the Honour of God; whome they desire to serve sincerely, as Christian People, according to his Holie Word, and to enjoye their Ancient Liberties for them and their Posteritie, and so consequently, to preserve and contynue the Lawful and Ancient Commerce betwixt our People, and those Countries and ours.

Three special Things reasonably desired by the Q. of England.

1. The End of Wars, with Restitution of the Low Countries to their Ancient Liberties.

2. Surety from Invasion of her own Realm.

3. And Renewing the mutual Traffick between the Countries.

And so, we hope, our Intention herein, and our subsequent Actions will be, by God's Favour, both honourably and charitably interpreted of all Persons, (saving of the Oppressors themselves, and their Partizans) in that we meane not heereby, either for Ambition or Malice, (the Two Rootes of all Injustice) to make any particular Profit hereof, to our Selfe, or to our People: Onely desiringe at this time to obtaine (by God's Favour) for the Countries, a Deliverance of them from Warre, by the *Spaniards* and Forrainers; a Restitution of their Ancient Liberties and Government, by some Christian Peace; and thereby, a Suretie for our selves and our Realme, to be free from invading Neighbours; and our People to enjoy in those Countries, their lawfull Commerce, and Entercourse of Friendship and Marchandise, according to the ancient Usage and Treaties of Entercourse, made betwixt our Progenitors and the Lordes and Earles of those Countries, and betwixt our People and the People of those Countries.

The Causes of taking some Towns into her Majesties Custody.

And though our further Intention also is, or may be, to take into our Garde some fewe Townes upon the Sea-side next opposite to our Realme, which otherwise might be in Danger to be taken by the Strangers, Enemies of the Country: Yet therein considering we have no Meaning at this Tyme, to take and retaine the same to our owne proper Use; we hope, that all Persons will think it agreeable with good Reason and Princely Policie, that we should have the Gard and Use of some such Places, for sure Accessse and Reccessse of our People and Soldiers in Safety, and for Furniture of them with Victuals, and other Things requisite and necessarie, whilst it shall be needful for them to continue in those Countries, for the Aiding therof in these their great Calamities, Miseries, and imminent Daunger, and untill the Countries may be delivered of such strange Forces as do now oppress them, and recover their Ancient Lawfull Liberties and Maner of Gouvernment, to live in Peace as they have heeretofore done, and doe nowe most earnestly in lamentable manner desire to doe; which are the very onely true Endes of all our Actions nowe intended, howsoever malicious Tongues may utter their cankred

cankred Conceits to the contrary, as at this Day the Worlde abounded with such Blasphemous Reportes in Writings and Infamous Libels, as in no Age the Devil hath more abounded with notable Spirits replenished with all Wickednesse, to utter his Rage against Professours of Christian Religion. But thereof we leave the Revenge to God, the Searcher of Hearts, hoping that he beholding the Sinceritie of our Heart, will graunte good Successe to our Intentions, whereby a Christian Peace may ensue to his Divine Honour, and Comfort to al them that Love Peace truely, and wil seeke it sincerely.

---

*An Addition to the Declaration, touching the Slaunders  
published of her Majestie.*

**A**fter we had finished our Declaration, there came to our Hands a Pamphlet written in *Italian*, printed at *Milan*, Entituled *Nuovo avviso*, directed to the Archbishop of *Milan*, conteyning a Report of the Expugnation of *Antwerpe* by the Prince of *Parma*: By the which we found our self most maliciously charged with two notable Crimes, no lesse hateful to the World, then most repugnant and contrary to our own Natural Inclination. The one, with Ingratitude towards the King of *Spaine*, (who as the Author saith) saved our Life being justly by Sentence adjudged to Death in our Sister's Time: The other, that there was some Persons procured to be corrupted with great Promises, and that with our Intelligence as the Reporter addeth in a Parenthesis in those Words (*as it was said*,) that the Life of the Prince of *Parma* should be taken away: And for the better proving and countenancing of this horrible Lye, it is further added in the said Pamphlet, that it pleased the Lord God to discover this, and bring Two of the wicked Persons to Justice. Now knowing how Men are maliciously bent in this declining Age of the World, both to judge, speak, and write maliciously, falsely and unreverently of Princes: And holding nothing so Dear unto us, on the Conservation of our Reputation and Honour to be blamelesse: We found it very expedient, not to suffer Two such horrible Imputations to pass under silence, least for lacke of Answer, it may argue a kind of Guiltines, and did therefore think, that what might be alledged by us for our Justification in that Behalfe, might be most aptly joined unto this former Declaration now to be published, to lay open before the World the Maner and Ground of our Proceeding in the Causes of the *Lowe Countries*.

And for Answer of the First Point wherewith we are charged, touching our Ingratitude towards the King of *Spaine*, as we do most willingly acknowledge that we were beholding unto him in the Time of our late Sister, which we then did acknowledge very thankfully, and have sought many Ways, since in like Sort to requite, as in our former Declaration by our Actions may appeare: So do we utterly denie as a most manifest Untruth, that ever he was the Cause of the saving of our Life, as a Person by a Course of Justice sentenced unto Death, who ever carried our  
self



self towards our said Sister in Dutiful Sort, as our Loyaltie was never called in Question, much lesse any Sentence of Death pronounced against us: A Matter such, as in Respect of the ordinarie Course of Proceeding, as by Proceſſe in Lawe, by Place of Tryal, by the Judge that should Pronounce such Sentence, and other necessary Circumstances in like Cases usual, especially against one of our Qualitie, as it could not but have bene publique<sup>ly</sup> known, if any such Thing had bene put in Execution. This then being true, we leave to the Worlde to judge how maliciously and injuriously the Author of the said Pamphlet dealeth with us, in charging us by so notable an Untruth with a Vice that of all others we do most Hate and Abhorre. And therefore by the manifest Untruth of this Imputation, Men not transported with Passion may easily discern what Untruth is contained in the Second, by the which we are charged to have bene acquainted with an intended Attempt against the Life of the said Prince: A Matter, if any such Thing should have been by us intended, must have proceeded, either of a misliking we had of his Person, or that the Prosecution of the Warres in the *Low Countries* was so committed unto him, as no other might prosecute the same but he.

And First for his Person, we could never learne that he hath at any Time, by Acte, or Speech, done any Thing that might justly breede a Mislike in us towards him, much lesse a Hatred against his Person in so high a Degree, as to be either Privie, or Assenting to the taking away of his Life: Besides, he is one of whom we have ever had an Honourable Conceite, in respect of those singular rare Partes we alwaies have noted in him, which hath won unto him as great Reputation, as any Man this Day Living carrieth of his Degree and Qualitie: And so have we always delivered out by Speeche unto the World, when any Occasion hath bene offered to make mention of him. Nowe, touching the Prosecution committed unto him of the Warres in the *Low Countries*, as all Men of Judgement know that the taking away of his Life carrieth no likelihood that the same shall worke any Ende of the said Prosecution: So is it manifestly known, that no Man hath dealt more<sup>⁹</sup> Honourable then the saide Prince, either in duely observing of his Promise, or extending Grace and Mercie, where Merite and Deserte hath craved the same: And therefore no greater Impietie by any could be wrought, nor nothing more Prejudicial to our selfe, (so long as the King shall continue the Prosecution of the Cause in that forcible Sort he now doeth) then to be an Instrument to take him away from thence by such violent Means, that hath dealt in a more Honourable and Gracious Sort in the Charge committed unto him, then any other that hath ever gone before him, or is likely to succeede after him.

Now therefore how unlikely it is, that we having neither Cause to mislike of his Person, nor that the Prosecution of the Warres shoulde cease by losse of him, should be either Auhour, or any way assenting to so horrible a Fact, we referre to the Judgment of such as looke into Causes, not with the Eyes of their Affection, but do measure and weigh Things according to Honour and Reason. Besides, it is likely if it had bene true that we had bene any way Chargeable,

(as the Author reporteth) the Confessions of the Parties executed, (importing such Matter, as by him is alledged) would have been both produced and published; for Malice leaveth nothing unsearched, that may nourish the Venime of that Humour.

The best Course therefore that both we and all other Princes can holde in this Unfortunate Age, that overfloweth with Numbers of malignant Spirits, is through the Grace and Goodnesse of Almighty God to direct our Course in such sort, as they may rather shewe their Willes through Malice, than with just Cause with Desert, to say ill, or deface Princes, either by Speach or Writing: Assuring our selves, that besides the Punishment that such Wicked and Infamous Libellours shall receive at the Handes of the Almighty for depraving of Princes and Lawfull Magistrates, who are God's Ministers, they both are, and alwayes shall be thought by all good Men, Unworthie to live upon the Face of the Earth.

*Given at Richmount the First of October, 1585; and the  
27th Yeere of the Reigne of our Sovereigne Lady the  
Queene; to be published.*

Imprinted at *London* by *Christopher Barker*, Printer to  
the *Queene of England*, Her most Excellent Ma-  
jestie. 1585.





A N

A P P E N D I X.

C O N T A I N I N G

S O M E P A P E R S

Relating to the

Two Volumes

O F T H E

HISTORY *of the Reformation of the*  
*Church of* ENGLAND.



1. Corrections of some Mistakes in the *Two First Volumes*; sent to me by Mr. Granger, in *Devonshire*.
2. A Letter written to me by *Anthony Wood*, in Justification of his History of the University of *Oxford*: With Reflections upon it, referr'd to *Alphabetically*.
3. A Letter to Mr *Ausont*, which was translated into *French*, upon his Procuring for me a Censure in Writing, made in *Paris* upon the *First Volume* of my History of the *Reformation*.
4. Corrections of the *Two Volumes* of the *History of the Reformation*.
5. Some *Remarks*, sent me by another Hand.
6. Observations and Corrections of the *Two Volumes* of that *History*, by Mr. *Strype*.

A N

## APPENDIX, &amp;c.

## Number I.

*Corrections of the First Volume of the History of the Reformation; sent me by Mr. Granger, in Devonshire.*

P<sup>Ag. 25. Lin. 27.</sup> John Braybook, *Bishop of London,*] For *Robert.*

P. 53. l. 48. *I cannot imagine what moved the Lord Herbert, who saw these Letters, to think that the Cardinal did not really intend the Divorce.]* Possibly, beside the Paper of Instructions here mentioned, the Testimony of King Henry, p. 73. that the Cardinal had always opposed it; and the Information given the King, p. 78. of his having juggled in this Business.

P. 86. l. 33. *So was also Boner, (whom they call Dr. Edmunds.)* Boner was not of Cambridge, but of Broad-Gate-Hall in Oxford: And tho' called Dr. Edmunds (from his Font-Name) in the Life of *Wolfey*, by *Cavendish*; and perhaps vulgarly, as *Stephen Gardiner* was Mr. *Stevyns*, in *Wolfey's* Letter: Yet it seems unlikely, that he alone in the Grace should be written by his Font-Name, when all the others were by their Sir-Name. And therefore we have Reason to think, that this Dr. Edmunds, was *John Edmunds*, at that time Master of *Peter-House*, and of great Note in the University; as we may guess, from the Frequency of his being Vice-chancellor, viz. in the Years 1521, 1526, 1527, and 1540.

P. 261. l. 30. *But in England it went otherwise; and when the Order of the Knights-Templars was dissolved, it was then judged in Favour of the Lord, by Escheat.] Quære.* Because by the Statute *de Terris Templariorum*, neither the King, nor the Lords, were to have by Escheat the Lands that were the *Templars*; but those Lands were to remain to the Prior, and Brethren, of the Order of the Hospital of St. *John of Jerusalem*.



P. 312. l. 38. *The Lord Cromwell also had his Writ; tho' I do not find by any Record, that he was restored in Blood.*] He had his Writ, not by Virtue of any Restoration in Blood, but of his Creation by Patent: Neither, the Day his Father was created Earl; as Mr. Fulman hath it, following Dr. Fuller; but Five Months after his Father's Death, viz. the 18th of December, in the 32d of Henry VIII. when he was created Baron of this Realm, by the Title only of Lord Cromwell, but not distinguish'd by any Place. *Vide Sir W. Dugdale's Hist. of the Baronage.*

P. 328. l. 37. *Dr. Lee, Dean of York.*] *Quære*, if not for Dr. Leighion.

P. 341. l. 9. *Then to be Bishop Suffragan of Ely.*] For Suffragan to the Bishop of Ely.

P. 366. l. 12. *They (viz. the Schoolmen and Canonists) studied to make Bishops and Priests seem very near one another, so that the Difference was but small.*] Tho' most of the Schoolmen asserted Bishops and Priests to be of the same Order, for the Reason here specified, their being equally appointed to the Consecration of the Eucharist, which they thought to be the Highest, and most Perfect Function; yet they allowed the Bishops a Superiority of Jurisdiction, which some of them were content to call a Superior Order; as the Canonists did also generally, notwithstanding their Endeavours to depress the Episcopal Authority, for the Advancement of the Papal.

### Corrections of the Second Volume.

P Ag. 1. Lin. 10. *Lost his Mother the Day after he was born.*] Your Self say Two Days, in the Appendix of Tom. 1. P. 295. His Journal says, a few Days after.

P. 1. in the Margin; *On the 17th, if the Letter of the Physicians be true in Fuller's Church-History.*] It was Copied from its Original in the Cotton Library; and your self give Credit to them, in the forecited Place of your Appendix.

P. 3. l. ult. *Lord St. John, Great Master.*] Supply, of the Household.

P. 25. l. 28. *Ridley is said to be Elect of Rochester, and designed for that See by King Henry.*] *Quær.* How? When in the Commission granted for the Examination, whether the Marquess of Northampton could lawfully Marry, after the Divorcement of his Wife Anne for Adultery? bearing Date Three Months after the Death of King Henry, even May the 7th, 1 Edward VI. Holbeck was Bishop of Rochester, and not at that Time translated to Lincoln.

P. 43. l. 28. *Excepting only the Archbishop of Canterbury's Courts.]* The Archbishop might only use his owne Name, and Seal for Facultys, and Dispensations; being in all other Cases as much restrain'd as other Bishops.

P. 54. l. 45. *Nor is it reasonable to imagine, that the Dutcheſs of Somerſet ſhould be ſo fooliſh, as to think ſhe ought to have the Præcedence of the Queen Dowager.]* She is acknowledged to have been an Insolent Woman, p. 194. and to have had a great Power over her Husband, where it is assign'd as the Chief Cause of procuring an Act of Parliament for the Disinheriting, and Excluding from his Honours, his Children by his former Wife.

P. 90. l. 12. *The Council of Trullo in the 5th Age.]* In the latter End of the 7th, or rather in the Beginning of the 8th.

P. 94. l. 43. *A General Rule was layd downe, that every Common Festival ſhould be præceded by a Faſt.]* The Festivals between Easter, and the Ascension-Day, were not so, on the pretended Reason that the Bridegroom was with them; as also Michaelmas.

P. 164. l. 18. *About which, one Carr writ a Copious and Passionate Letter to Sir John Cheek.]* Nicholas Carr, Regius-Professor of the Greek Tongue in Cambridge, and a great Restorer of Learning in that University.

P. 165, l. 2. *à fine. Dr. Story was made Bishop of Rochester.]* For Dr. Scory.

P. 171. l. 34. *Harle.]* For Harley, afterward Bishop of Hereford.

P. 176. l. 3. *Though I have ſeen it often ſayd in many Letters and Writings of this Time, that at that Iſſue by Charles Brandon was Illigited, ſinc he was certainly married to one Mortimer, before he married the Queen of Franc: Which Mortimer lived long after his Mariage to that Queen; ſo that al her Children were Baſtards. Some ſay he was divorced from his Marryage to Mortimer, but this is not clear to me.]* Charles Brandon first married Margaret, one of the Daughters of John Newil, Marqueſs Mountague, Widow of Sir John Mortimer. Secondly, Anne, Daughter of Sir Anthony Browne, by whom he had Issue, after Marriage, Mary, wedded to Thomas Stanley, Lord Mont-Eagle. Thirdly, Mary, Queen of France, as Sir William Dugdale hath it in the Text; though in the Scheme adjoyn'd by him, the Order is inverted. 1st Anne, 2d Margaret, but repudiata, 3d Mary.

P. 195. l. 37. *One Traheron.]* Bartholomew Traheron, afterward made Lecturer of Divinity at Frankford, on the new molding of the Congregation there, in Queen Mary's Days; and Dean of Chichester in Queen Elizabeth's.

P. 251. l. 40. *Ratcliff, Earl of Suffex, was licenced under the Great Seal, to cover his Head in the Queen's Preſence, the only Peer on whom this Honour was ever conferred. as far as I know.]* Dr. Fuller assures us in his Church History, Book 9. p. 167. that he had seen a Charter granted by King Henry the VIIIth, the 16th of July, in the 18th of his Reign, and confirmed by Act of Parliament, to Francis Brown (a Commoner); giving him leave to put on his Cap in the  
Preſence



Prefence of the King, and his Heirs; and not to put it off, but for his own Ease and Pleasure.

P. 272. l. 16. *There was one Harding, that had been her Father's Chaplain.] Thomas Harding, afterward Antagonist to Bishop Jewel.*

P. 276. l. 16. *Barlow had never married.] Q. Whether he were not at that Time married? Sir John Harring in his Continuation of Bishop Godwin, and who by his being of Somersetshire, was the better capacitated to know, says that he had some Sons; One whereof in his Time, was a Worthy Member of the Church of Wells, and Five Daughters.*

Ibid. l. 21. *Chichester, a much meaner Bishoprick.] Wells had lately been much impoverished by the Alienations in Barlow's Time; the Regret whereof, might probably make him less desirous of returning to it. Afterward its Profits were raised by the Lead Mines, about Bishop Stillingfleet's Time: However, 'tis valued in the King's Books but 535 l. whereas Chichester is 677 l.*

Ibid. Bishop Harley is said to have been deprived, because married, by Fox and Godwin, though no notice be taken of it in the Order.

P. 305. l. 31. *Alphonfus, a Franciscan Fryar, his Confessor.] Alphonfus à Castro, Famous for his Treatise de Hæresibus.*

P. 313. l. 43. *Neer Three Yeares.] Neer Two Yeares.*

P. 318. l. 1. *Shaxton, Bishop Suffragan of Ely.] Again for Suffragan to the Bishop of Ely.*

P. 402. l. 36. *According to a Method often used in their Elections.] There had been but One Election since the Prior and Monks were chang'd into a Dean and Prebendaries.*

P. 403. l. 23. *Par, Bishop of Peterborough.] For Scambler.*

*Thomas Davies of St. Asaph, and Richard Cheiny of Gloucester, being some of the First Set of Bishops, should have been remembred, though Consecrated a while after.*

## Number. II.

*A Letter written to me by Anthony Wood, in Justification of his History of the University of Oxford, with Reflections on it; referred to Alphabetically.*

S I R,

**Y**OUR Book of *The Reformation of the Church of England*, I have lately perused, and finding my self mentioned therein, not without some Discredit, I thought fit to Vindicate my self so far in these Animadversions following, that you may see your Mistakes, and accordingly rectifie them, (if you think fit) in the next Part that is yet to publish.

P. 86. *But after he hath set downe the Instrument, he gives some Reasons, &c.*

The Two First Reasons, (if they may be so called) <sup>(a)</sup> were put in by another Hand; and the other were taken from these Three Books following, <sup>(b)</sup> viz. From Dr. Nicholas Harpesfeild's *Treatise concerning Marriage*, &c. which is a fair Manuscript in Folio; written either in the Time of Queen Marie, or in the Beginning of Queen Elizabeth, and 'tis by me quoted in my Book, in the Place excepted against. From Will. Forest's *Life of Queen Catherine*, written in the Raigne of Queen Marie, and dedicated to her. 'Tis a Manuscript also, and written verie fairlie in Parchment. <sup>(c)</sup> From an *Apologie for the Government of the Univerſitie against King Henry the VIIIth.* Written by a Master of Arts *Septimo Elizabethæ*. 'Tis a Manuscript also, and hath all the King's Letters therein, written to the Univerſitie about the Question of Marriage and Divorce, with several Passages relating to Convocations concerning the said Questions.

So that by this you see I do not frame those Reasons out of mine owne Head (as partiall Men might) but what other Authours dictate to me.

Ibid. [*Upon what Designe I cannot easily imagine.*]

No Designe at all God-wot, but meerlie for Truth's sake, which verie few in these Dayes will deliver.

---

<sup>(a)</sup> I could not know this: He publishes them, and is justly to be charged with them.

<sup>(b)</sup> From such Authorities what else was to be expected?

<sup>(c)</sup> This, as Dr. Lloyd informs me, is *Parson's Book*, an Author of no better Credit than the former; for he was a Master of Arts in *Balio College*, in Queen Elizabeth's Time. See *Wood in Bal. Col.*



Ibid. [*And as if it had been an ill Thing, he takes Paines to purge the Universities of it, &c.*]

It was an ill Thing I think, (I am sure it was taken so to be) for a Prince by his Letters to frighten <sup>(4)</sup> People out of their Conscience, and by Menaces force them to say what must please him. But seeing the Masters would not be frightened, and therefore they were laid aside, (the Matter being discussed by a few old timorous Doctors and Batchellors of Divinity, who would say any Thing to please the King, lest Danger should follow) they ought to be commended, or at least justified for keeping their Consciences safe.

Ibid. [*And without any Proof give Credit to a Lying Story set downe by Sands, of an Assemblie called by Night.*]

*Sands* is not my Authour, for he says no such Thing in his Book *de Schismate*, of an Assembly <sup>(5)</sup> called by Night; my Author for this is the Apologie before mentioned, which adds, that *when a Regent of Baliol College, (whom they called King Henry) heard that the Commissarie, and his Company, were going to dispatch this Night Work, denied the Seale with his Breeces about his Shoulders, for want of a Hood.* See in *Hist. & Antiq. Oxon. Lib. 1. p. 256. A.* <sup>(6)</sup> The Truth is, the Meeting was unseasonable, and their Actions clancular; as being protested against by, and done without the Consent of the Regents. And as for *Sands*, though I cannot well defend him, yet many Things in his Book *de Schismate*, especially those relating to the Universitie of Oxford, I find from other Places to be true. <sup>(8)</sup>

Ibid. [*But it appears that he had never seen, or considered the other Instrument, to which the Universitie set their Seale.*]

The grand Collection, or *Farrago*, which Mr. *Thomas Masters* made (by the Lord *Herbert's* Appointment) in order to the Writing of King *Henry* the VIIIth's Life, I have seen and persued, but could not with all my Diligence find that Instrument (as you call it, yet we, an Act, or Decree) of Convocation; neither in the Three Great Folio's, written by another Hand, containing Materials at large for the said Life; neither in any of the Registers, Records, or Papers, belonging to the Universitie. So that for these Reasons, and that because the Lord *Herbert* says, *it was blurred, and not intended for the King*; and also not under Seal, (you say 'twas) neither passed

<sup>(4)</sup> I do not find there was any frightening Threatnings; none appear in the King's Letters. If he had this from any good Authors, he had done well to have quod'd them. It is not Honourable for the University, as it is not probable, to represent all the Doctors and Batchellors of Divinity, as Men apt to be frightened out of their Consciences; and that only the Masters of Arts were impregnable. It is rather to be supposed that the one Sort were carried away by Faction; and that the others were guided by Learning and Conscience.

<sup>(5)</sup> He says it was called *Clam*; that could hardly be, but in the Night: So this is no material Difference. In the rest you agree with *Sanders*.

<sup>(6)</sup> I see no Reason for this. The Instrument set forth by the Lord *Herbert* shews, that the Persons deputed had good Authority to set the University Seal to their Determination: And they were not tied to Forms, but might have done it at any Time.

<sup>(8)</sup> Yes, such Authors as you quote: You say you cannot well defend *Sanders*. It seems you would if you could. There are lost Words concerning that Scandalous Writer,

in the House by the Majority of Votes; therefore did I omit it, as not Authentick. <sup>(b)</sup> I truly believe, or at least have good Grounds to think, that it was only drawn up, and not proposed; for if it had, it would have been registred: There being nothing proposed, either in Convocation or Congregation, but is registred, whether denied, or not. And the Register of that Time is most exactly kept; and nothing thence, as I can perceive, is torn out.

Ibid. [*There seems to be also another Mistake, in the Relation he gives: For he says, those of Paris had determined in this Matter.*]

I say it so from Warham, archbishop of Canterbury, then Chancellor of the University: Who in his Letters thereunto, desires the Members, to make what Expedition they could, to give in their Answer to the King's Question; forasmuch as Paris and Cambridge had done it already. ----- For this I quote the Book of *Epistles, in Archiv. Lib. Bod. MS. Epist. 197*. Yet, I believe, the Archbishop said this, to hasten the University of Oxon the more; tho' probably it was not so. However, I am not to take notice of that, but to follow Record as I find it. And that I do follow Record throughout all my Book, there is not one (I presume) of the Senate of Antiquaries can deny it: And therefore, how there can be many Things in my Book, (of my framing) that are Enemies to the Reformation of the Church of England, as was suggested by you to Sir Harbottle Grimston, (who thereupon made a Complaint in open Parliament, last April, against the said Book) I cannot see <sup>(k)</sup>. Truth ought to take place; and must not be concealed, especially when 'tis at a Distance. And if our Religion <sup>(l)</sup> hath had its Original, or Base, on Lust, Blood, Ruin and Desolation, (as all Religions, or Alterations in Governments, have had from one or more of them) why

<sup>(b)</sup> All that you say here, is only Negative Authority; but since the Lord Herbert says he saw the Original, though it is not in any of these Collections, you must either believe it, or make him a Liar: And if it was an Original, it must either have been subscribed by the Hands of the Persons deputed; or must have had the Seal put to it. The Beginning of it shews it was not subscribed; for it is in the Name of *John Cattisford*, their Commissary: So it must have been either in the Form of a Notary's Instrument, or must have had the Seal put to it, for he calls it an Original. Perhaps the Blurring of it might either be casual, or when it was brought to Court, the King might have made some Alterations in it, that it might be renewed according to these Corrections. \* *It might be Casual; Lord Herbert says not that it was rased out, &c.*

\*These Words in *Italica*, are in the Bishop of Worcester's Hand.

<sup>(i)</sup> In this you had a Warrant for what you wrote, but I had a better to correct it by.

<sup>(k)</sup> I do profess I do not remember that I ever mentioned your Book to him: And Sir Harbottle himself, when I asked him the Question, said, he never heard me speak of it.

<sup>(l)</sup> This is writ very indecently: Neither like a Divine, nor a Christian.

should



should it be hidden, seeing it is so obvious to all Curious Searchers into Record.

*This is all from him*

*that studies Truth,*

Anthony à Wood.

July the 5th  
1679.

### Number III.

*A Letter to Mr. Aufont, which was translated into French, upon his Procuring for me a Censure in Writing, made in Paris upon the First Volume of my History of the Reformation.*

S I R,

Paris, the 10th of August, 1685.

WHEN I came last to *Paris*, I was told there was a *Censure* of the First Volume of my *History of the Reformation*, going about in Writing. I was glad to hear of this, when I was upon the Place, ready either to justify my self, or to acknowledge such Mistakes as should be offered to me: For I am ready, upon Conviction, to retract any Thing that may have fallen from my Pen as soon as I see Cause for it, with all the Freedom and Candor possible. I should be much more out of Countenance, to persist in an Error, when I am convinced of it, than to acknowledge, that in such a Multitude of Matters of Fact, of which my History makes mention, I might have been misinformed in some Particulars, and have mistaken others; which I was resolved to rectify, when discover'd, in another Edition. This made me very desirous to see, what it was that had been objected to me: And I am much obliged to you for procuring me a Sight of it; for which I return you my most humble Thanks.

When I had read it over, and over again, I confess, I was amazed to find, that he who censured me so severely, had read my Book so slightly; and yet gives way to his Passions, with so little Judgment, and with less Sincerity, that among all the Things that he charges me with, there should not be One Single Particular, that might

might give me occasion to shew my Readiness to retract what I had written.

What can be expected from a Writer, who, after the List I had given, of the many gross Errors of which *Sanders's History* was made up, says, *That I have proved, that he has failed in some Circumstances, that may seem to aggravate the Matter more or less?* If any Man will be at the Pains to read what I have proved, of the Falshoods in that Author, and compare it with the mild Censure here given; he will see Cause to be ashamed of it, and will look for little Sincerity, after so false a Step made in the Beginning. From this, he goes on to his Main Design; and runs out into an Inveective against *K. Henry the VIIIth*, for his Incontinencies, and other Violences.

If I had undertaken to write a *Panegyrick*, or to make a Saint of King *Henry*, he might have triumphed over me as much as he pleased. But I, who have neither concealed, nor excused any of his Faults, am no way concerned in all this.

There are only Two Things that I advance, with Relation to that Prince.

The First is, That whatsoever his Secret Motives might have been, in the Suit of the Divorce; He had the constant Tradition of the Church on his Side, and that in all the Ages and Parts of it; which was carefully searched into, and fully proved: So that no Author, elder than Cardinal *Cajetan*, could be found, to be set against such a Current of Tradition. And in the Disputes of that Age, with those they called Hereticks, all that wrote of the Popish Side, made their Appeal always to Tradition, as the only Infallible Expounder of Scripture: And it was looked on as the Character of an Heretick, to expound the Scripture by any other Key, or Method. So that *K. Henry* had this clearly with him.

The other Particular that I make *Remarks* on, is, that the Reformation is not at all to be Charged with King *Henry's* Faults: For, that unsteady Favour and Protection, which they sometimes found from him, can signify no more to blemish them, than the Vices of those Princes that were the great Promoters of Christianity, signify to cast a Blemish on the Christian Religion. Let the Crimes of King *Clovis*, as they are related by *Gregory of Tours*, be compared with the worst Things that can be said of King *Henry*; and then let any Man see, if he finds so much Falshood, mixed with so much Cruelty, in so many repeated Acts, and in such a Number of Years, in King *Henry the VIIIth*, as he will find in King *Clovis*. Nor do we see any Hints of *Clovis's* Repentance, or of any Restitution made by him, of those Dominions that he had seized on in so Criminal a manner, to the Right Heirs; without which, according to our Maxims, his Repentance could not be accepted of God. And this was the First Christian King of the *Franks*.

I do not comprehend what his Design could be, in Justifying Pope *Gregory the VIIIth's* Proceedings, against the Emperor, *Henry the IVth*, with so much Heat. One that reads what he writes on this Subject, can hardly keep himself from thinking, that he had something in his Eye, that he durst not speak out more plainly:



But that he would not be sorry, if *Innocent* the XIth should treat the *Great Monarch*, as *Gregory* the VIIth did the Emperor, and as *Paul* the IIIrd did King *Henry* the VIIIth. But whatsoever his own Thoughts may be, I desire he would not be so familiar with my Thoughts, as to infer this from any Concession of mine: For I allow no Authority to the Bishops of *Rome* out of their own Diocese. The Additional Dignity that they came to have, flowed from the Constitution of the *Roman Empire*: And since *Rome* is no more the Seat of Empire, it has lost all that Primacy, which was yielded to it merely by Reason of the Dignity of the City. So that as *Byzance*, from being a small Bishoprick, became a Patriarchal Seat, upon the Exaltation of that City; by the same Rule, upon the Depression of *Rome*, the Bishops of that See ought to have lost all that Dignity, that was merely accidental. But suppose I should yield, according to the Notion commonly received in the *Gallican Church*, that the Pope is the *Conservator of the Canons*; that will signify nothing, to justify their Deposing of Princes; except he can shew what those Canons were, upon the Violation of which, Princes may be deposed. If he flies to the Canons of the Fourth Council in the *Lateran*, those being made about 150 Years after P. *Gregory's* Proceedings against the Emperor, will not justify what was done so long before these were made. When he thinks fit to speak out more plainly upon this Head, it will be more easy to answer him.

As for the Supremacy that King *Henry* the VIIIth assumed in Ecclesiastical Matters, he should not have condemned that so rashly as he does, as a Novelty, till he had first examined the Reasons upon which it was founded; not only those drawn from the Scriptures, but those that were brought from the Laws and Practices, both of the *Roman Emperors*, and of the Kings of *England*. His Thoughts or his Pen run too quick, when he condemned the following those Precedents, as a Novelty, without giving himself the Trouble of enquiring into the Practices of former Ages.

He charges me with flying to the Rasure of the Registers in Queen *Mary's* Time, and to the Burning of others in the Fire of *London*, for proving several Things, for which I could bring no better Vouchers; and for Relying so often on a Passionate Writer. I suppose, *Fox* is the Person hereby pointed at.

When he applies the General Censure to any Particular in my Work, I will then shew that it amounts to nothing. I often stop, and shew that I can go no further, for want of Proof: And when I give Presumptions from other Grounds, to shew what was done, I may well appeal to the Rasure, or Loss of Records, for the want of further Proof. But this I never do upon Conjectures, or slight Grounds. And as for *Fox*, I make a great Difference between Relying upon what he writes barely upon Report, (which I never do) and Relying upon some Registers, of which he made Abstracts. For having observed an exact Fidelity, in all that he took out of such Registers as do yet remain; I have Reason to depend on such Abstracts as he gives of Registers that are now destroyed. He might be too Credulous, in writing such Things as were brought him by Report; and in these I do not depend on him: But he was  
known

known to be a Man of Probity, so I may well believe what he delivers from a Record, though that happens now to be lost.

The Censure is next applied to *Cranmer's* Character. He observes great Defects in my *Sincerity*, and (to let me see how civilly he intends to use me, he says he will not add) *my want of Judgment*. I am sure he has shewed a very ill Judgment in charging me so severely in so tender a Point as *Sincerity*: and using a Reserve in another Point, that does not touch me so much. I am accountable both to God and Man for my *Sincerity*: But I am bound to have no more *Judgment* than God has given me; and so long as I maintain my *Sincerity* entire, I have little to Answer for, though I may be defective in the other: But I leave it to you to judge whether the Defect was in his *Sincerity*, or his *Judgment*, when he does not bring any one Particular against *Cranmer*, but what he takes from me. So if I have confessed all his Faults, and yet give a Character of him that is Inconsistent with these, I may be justly charged for want of *Judgment*; but my *Sincerity* is still untainted. When he reckons up his Charges against *Cranmer*, he begins with this, that he was put out of his College for his Incontinence. He was then a Layman, under no Vows, only he held a Place, of which he was incapable after he was married; now what Sort of Crime can he reckon this Marriage, I leave it to himself to make it out. His next Charge is, that though I say he was a *Lutheran*, yet he signed the Six Articles, which he says, proves that he valued his Benefice more than his Conscience.

He wrote this with too much Precipitation, otherwise he would have seen that *Cranmer* never signed those Articles. He disputed much against them before they passed into a Law: Nor could he be prevailed on, though the King pressed him to it, to abstain from coming to the Parliament while that Act passed. He came and opposed it to the last; and even after the Law was made, he wrote a Book for the King's Use against these Articles. There was no Clause in the Act that required that they should be signed. Men were only bound to Silence and Submission. If he was at all Faulty, with relation to that Act, it was only in this, that he did not think himself bound to declare openly against it when it was published. From this, he goes next to charge him for consenting to the Dissolution of King *Henry's* Marriage with *Anne of Cleve*, upon Grounds plainly contrary to those upon which his First Marriage with *Catherine of Spain*, was dissolved. Since one Pretence in the Divorce of *Anne of Cleve* was, that it was not Consummated, though in the other it was declared that a Marriage was compleat, though not Consummated. Whatever is to be said of this Matter, the Whole Convocation was engaged in it. *Gardiner* promoted it the most of any. So the Bishops, who were so Zealous for Popery in Queen *Mary's* Time, were as guilty as *Cranmer*. I do not deny that he shewed too much Weakness in this Compliance. He had not Courage enough to swim against the Stream: And he might think that the Dissolving a Marriage, the Parties being contented, was not to be much withstood. But my Censurer is afraid to touch on the Chief Ground on which that Marriage was dissolved; which was, that the King gave not a pure inward Consent to it, for this touches a tender Point of the Intention



tion of the Minister in the Sacrament; on which I did not Reflect when I wrote my History. By the Doctrine of the Church of *Rome*, the Parties are the Ministers; so if the Intention was wanting, there was no Sacrament in this Marriage: This having been the Common Doctrine of the Church of *Rome*, some Remnant of that might have too great an Effect on *Cranmer*. But if the consenting to an unjust Sentence, in a Time of much Heat, and of a General Consternation, is so Criminal a Thing, what will he make of *Liberius*, *Felix*, *Ossius*, and many more, whose Names are in the *Roman* Calendar. The carrying this too far, will go a great way to the justifying the *Luciferians*. Whatever may be in this, I had opened the Matter of *Anne of Cleve* so impartially, that I deserve no Censure on that Account.

After he had attacked the Matter of my History in these Particulars, he falls next upon my way of Writing. In this, I confess, I am not so much concerned, for if the Things are truly related by me, I can very easily bear all the Reflections that he can lay on my way of Writing. But that he may Censure me with a better Grace, he bestows some good Words on me. "He is not displeased with my Preface, and the Beginning of my Work: But all these Hopes were soon blasted, I fall into a detail of little Stories, with which he was quite disgusted." Yet if he had considered this better, he would have been milder in his Censure. My Design was to shew what Seeds and Dispositions were still in the Minds of many in this Nation, that prepared them for a Reformation, in the Beginning of King *Henry's* Reign, before ever *Luther* had preached in *Germany*, and several Years before that King's Divorce came to be treated of in *England*. I therefore judged it was necessary for me to let the Reader know what I found in our Registers of those Matters: How that many were tried, and some condemned upon those Opinions, that were afterwards reckoned among the Chief Grounds of our separating from the Church of *Rome*. It seemed a necessary Introduction to my Work, to open this as I found it upon Record. My Censurer blames me for not opening more Copiously what the Opinions of the *Lollards* and the *Wickliffs* were: He may see in these Articles that I mention, what the Clergy were then charging them with, and what was confessed by those, who were brought into their Courts. I wrote in *English* for my own Countrymen. There are many Books that give a very particular Account of *Wickliff*, and his Followers: This being so well known, it was not necessary for me to run this Matter up to its Original; all that was incumbent on me was to shew the present State of that Party and their Opinions, and Sufferings in the Beginning of the Reign of King *Henry*: So that a fair Judge will not think that a few Pages spent in opening this, was too great an Imposition on his Patience: This having such a Relation to my main Design in Writing. It is he, and not I, that has transgressed *Polybius's* Rule: He considers these Particulars as little Stories, without observing the End for which I set them down: Though I have made that appear so plainly, that I have more Reason to complain of his Sincerity, than of his Judgment.

His next Exception is, that I give Abstracts of the Reasons on which the Proceedings in the Reformation were grounded. He thinks that in this, I plead as an Advocate, and do not write as a Historian. I do believe there are few Things in my History with which he is more displeased than this. I give no Reasons of my own making, nor do I put Speeches in the Mouths of our Reformers, though if I had done this, he knows that I could have said that I followed the Precedents set me by the best Writers of History, both among the *Greeks* and the *Romans*. But since I was engaged to write of a Reformation of Errors in Doctrine, and of Abuses in Worship and Government, I must have been very defective, if I had not set out the Reasons upon which those of that Time went, as well as I related the Series of what was done by them. Both Father *Paul*, and Cardinal *Palavicini*, in the Histories that they wrote of the Council of *Trent*, have related the Arguments, used of all Sides very copiously. In Political Matters, the chief Use and Beauty of History is, the laying open the secret Reasons of State, upon which all Parties have proceeded : And certainly those who write concerning Matters of Religion, ought to open all that comes in their way, of the Grounds on which any Changes were made.

He thinks all the King's Reasonings for the Divorce were fully answered by Queen *Catherine's* Reasons against it. But he does not consider that he is in a Communion, in which Tradition is set up, as that which must decide all Controversies. King *Henry's* Arguments run all upon Tradition, whereas the Queen pretended to no Tradition, but only brought Arguments of another Sort, which was the way of those called Hereticks : But in that Matter the King insisted upon Tradition, the great Topick of *Papists*. He Censures me for bringing a *Jew* on the Stage, after I had set out the Opinions of the Universities : But it seemed very reasonable to shew the Notions that the *Jews* had of their own Laws.

He returns again to Reflections on the Divorce of *Anne of Cleve*. It seems he had few Things to reflect on, when in so short a Paper he returns twice to the same Matter. From her he passes to *Anne Bullen* ; he fancies my Whole Design in Writing, was to establish her Descent ; but that I do not acquit her Mother of the Imputations *Sanders* had laid on her ; nor her self of the Amours in the Court of *France*, and *K. Henry's* ill Commerce with her. If the Crown of *England* had remained in a Line derived from that Queen, it might be supposed that some would have wrote on such a Design : But that not being the Case, there is little Reason to think that any Man would have given himself the Trouble, only on Design to justify her Title to the Crown. I have made it fully out that a great Part of *Sanders's* Charge on her, was an ill invented Calumny, to bring her Right to the Crown in Question : And by proving some Part of his Relation to be false, I have destroyed the Credit of the Whole. I cannot be obliged to prove the Negative in every Particular, the Proof lies upon the Affirmative, and the Author of a train of Defamation is sufficiently disproved, when it is apparent that some Parts of his Relation must certainly be false. If any of these Slanders had been in any sort believed in that Time, there is no Reason to think that the Pope, or



the Emperor would have published them : For the Court of *Rome* kept none of the Measures of common Decency with the King. Nor were these Things objected to *Anne Bullen* after that her Unhappy Fate gave some Colour to believe every Thing to her Prejudice. Her Brother and She did both at their Death deny all Criminal Commerce together : Nor was any Thing proved against them, only the Testimony of a Dead Woman was alledged to destroy them.

His last Charge relates to *Mire* and *Fisher* ; but how this comes to support his Censure of my Manner of Writing is not so clear. I seem in these Matters to write like one that intended to raise their Character, rather than to depress it : Nor do I justify King *Henry's* Violencies, but set them out as there is Occasion for it. *Mire* knew a Law was made, requiring the Subjects to swear to the King as Supreme Head, under the Pain of perpetual Imprisonment ; upon which he ought to have gone out of *England*, since he resolved not to take the Oath. *Fisher* knew that the Nun of *Canterbury* had in very indecent Words foretold the King's Death, and had not revealed it, as he ought to have done.

He says my History reflects much on the Memory of King *Henry*. I did not undertake to write a Panegyrick on him, but only to write the History of that Time : In doing this, as I have discovered the Injustice of many Scandals that have been cast on him, so I have not spared to lay open many ill Practices, when I was obliged to do it, by that impartial Sincerity to which I obliged my self when I undertook that Work : Though he charges me as byassed by Partiality, a Censure I deserved not. But I do more easily submit to his Charging me with my Ignorance of Law, and of Ecclesiastical Antiquity. Such general Censures are little to be regarded : When he is at Leisure to reckon up the Particulars in which I have erred, I shall be very glad to be instructed by him. For though I have looked a little into Law, and Ecclesiastical History, yet I value my self upon nothing but my Sincerity. It is very easy to lay a detracting Character in some general Words upon any Person. The Artifice is so commonly practised, that it will not pass upon any, but those, who by some Prejudices are prepared to take down every Thing that is boldly asserted. It seems that how great a Mind soever he had to find Fault, he could not find much Matter for his Spleen to work on, when in so short a Paper he is forced to return in Three several Places to the Article of the Divorce of *Anne of Cleve* : And he shews such an Inclination to Censure, that I have no Reason to think he would have spared me, if he had found greater Matters to have objected to me. So all he says that seems to intimate that, must pass for Words of Course, which ought to make no Impression.

Number IV.

*Corrections of the Two Volumes of the History  
of the Reformation.*

VOL. I. Edit. 2.

P. 4. *The Emperor broke his Word,---the Cardinal dissembled his Resentments, &c.*] I have seen a Collection of this Cardinal's Letters; and amongst 'em, the same Letter (I suppose) that is here quoted: Wherein he presses the Emperor's, and the King his Master's Interest, with great Zeal; and solicits the new-elected Pope, to join with them against the *French*; and that in such a manner, as seems to leave no Room for Dissimulation. To the same Purpose, in the following Letter. *Collect. MS. p. 27, 43.*

P. 19. *The King sent---the Bishop of Rochester, &c. to Sit in that Council.*] The Bishop of *Rochester, &c.* was intended to be sent this Year, and again *An. 1513, 14*: But his Journey was stopp'd; as appears both by his own Account of this Matter, and by a *MS. Latin* Life I have of this Bishop, and otherwise.

P. 26. *W. Sautre---burnt by Writ de Hæretico comb.---upon what Grounds of Law, I cannot tell.*] Nor will I pretend to say. But from *Fitzherbert* it seems to appear, that this Writ issued, before this Act of Parliament pass'd; [Fox places *Sautre's* Death, *Anno 1400.*] and that the Custom for the Writ had been formerly so. *De Naturâ Brevium*, p. 269.

Ib. *Relating to the Customs beyond Sea.*] From the same *Fitzherbert*, it appears pretty plain, this was the Customary Punishment in *England*: Who quotes *Breton*, Cap. 17. (Cap. 9. it should be) *Hæretikes fert auxi comburs & arces, & appiert per ceo Liver, que ceo est le Comen Ley. Quod vide in Breton, C. 17.* Who liv'd many Years before.

*The King---writes against Luther.*] No doubt this Book was wrote by the King, as other Books were under his Name; that is, by his Bishops, or other Learned Men. Sir *Thomas More* (who must have known the Authors) gives this Account of it, in his *MS. Life by Roper*: *That after it was finish'd by his Grace's Appointment, and Consent of the Makers of the same, I was only a Sorter out, and Placer of the Principal Matters therein contain'd.* So it seems others were Makers, and Sir *Thomas More* only a Sorter. By the Style, it was guess'd by some to be wrote by *Erasmus*; and he (in Mirth, I suppose) owns, the King might have hit upon his Style, several Letters having pass'd between them.



P. 22. *The Houses being thus suppress'd by the Law, — Belong'd to the King.*] This seems not to agree with what is said P. 261. of this Volume.

P. 34, 5. The Queen, under her Picture, is said to be, *Nata 1486.*] The Book *de Visibili Ro. Monarchiâ*, an Authentick Piece, says thus: *Hæc decimum octavum, ille decimum quintum Ætatis Annum, cum hæ Nuptiæ celebrarentur, expleverat.* P. 135. Sandford, P. 445.

P. 37. *Made Longland, Bishop of L.--possess the King's Mind in Confession.*] In a MS. Life of Sir Thomas More, wrote not many Years after Longland's Death, this Account is given: *I have heard Dr. Draycot, that was his [ Longland's ] Chaplain and Chancellor, say, That he once told the Bishop, what Rumor ran; and desired to know of him the very Truth. Who answer'd, That in very deed, he did not break the Matter after that sort, as is said; but the King brake the Matter to him first; and never left urging him, until he had won him to give his Consent— Of which his Doings, he did sore forethink himself, and repented afterward, &c.* MS. Coll Eman. Cant.

P. 42. *There is great Reason to think, Rastal never writ such a Book, as the Life of Sir Thomas More.*] I do not think the Book was of great Authority; but he wrote such a Book undoubtedly. I have seen, *Certen breef Notes appertaining to Bishope Fythere; Collected out of Sir Tho. More's Lyfe, written by Mr. Justice Resall;* which may be produced, wrote near that Time.

P. 80. *Then was his Palace of York-House--seiz'd on for the King. &c.*] The House of his See could not be forfeited, or seiz'd. It was convey'd over by him to the King; [ the Conveyance confirm'd by the Dean and Chapter of York ] So his Life by Cavendish, Ch. 18. and others.

P. 81. *Lieutenant of the Tower.*] Sir W. Kingston was Constable of the Tower. So Cavendish, Chap. 20.

P. 83. *Another Bill, which because of its singular Nature---and was not printed.*] This Bill was not singular: For An. 35 H. VIII. there pass'd a Bill of the like, or an Higher Nature, which is printed in the Book of Statutes, An. 1544. being an Act for the Remission of the Loan, An. 35 Hen. VIII. c. 12.

P. 85, 6. Your Lordship is very hard upon the Oxford Historian. He had other Vouchers besides Sanders; one of which I have seen in MS. but do not commend his Prudence, in the Representation of that Matter.

P. 86. Your Lordship having been very Nice, in placing the Determination of Oxford before that of the Sorbon; I presume, your Lordship meant the same Exactness, in placing Oxford before Cambridge: And yet it pass'd here, before it did at Oxford; and was deliver'd to the King at Windsor, before Palm-Sunday, by Dr. Buckmaster, Vicechancellor, &c. An. 1529, 30. I have a Letter from Dr. Buckmaster, to Dr. Edmonds, Master of Peter-House, ( the same whom your Lordship mistakes for Edmund Boner ) dated from Cambridge in *Craftino Dominic. Palmarum*, after his Return from Windsor giving some Account of that Matter, not very much to our Advantage.

vantage. But I will not imitate the *Oxford Historian*: Tho' I may do him this Right to say, That in the Conclusion of his Letter, speaking of the Proceedings at *Oxford*, (which it seems, we e tumultuary) he adds, *I hear say also, that Mr. Provoſt* (It seems, *Fox* was sent down thither likewise) *was there in great Jeopardy*. That is the Word; which, I suppose implies Danger.

P. 87. *Sixteen Batchellors.*] *Skip, Hadway, Deye, Bayne, &c.* were only *Masters of Arts*, as appears by the Register: So I suppose, by *Magistri in Theologia*, may be meant, *Masters of Arts*, that were *Divines*, as well as *Batchelors*.

P. 89. *No Money nor Bribes given for Subscriptions.*] The Act of Parliament, *An. 1 Mar. Chap. 1.* charges Corruption with Money---on the Foreign Universities,---and sinister Working, secret Threatnings, &c. on our own. There are several private Authorities to the same Purpose; but I am not concerned to make them good.

P. 91. *Crook died, before he could receive a Reward.*] He lived many years after, to the Reign of Queen *Mary*; and had the Reward due to his Ingratitude to his Patron, who had provided for him. He is well known at *Cambridge*, as well as at *Oxford*.

P. 102. *Laurence---excommunicated King Edbald-----*] *Laurence* did not excommunicate *Edbald*, nor could he; *Edbald* being yet a Heathen; and upon his Conversion, he put away his Wife. *Bed. Hist. Lib. 2. Cap. 5. 6. Malm. Lib. 1.* But I suppose, your Lordship may follow your Authority; and then all is well.

P. 103. *I could never see either MSS. or Printed Books,---except Cajetan's, and Victoria's.* There was a Book printed at *Lunenburg*, *Anno 1532*, dedicated to the Emperor's Ambassador in *England*, *Lustatbius Chapnysius*, &c. It is against the Divorce; and charges very indirect Practices on the other Side, by Moneys, and Bribes, &c. *Cochleus* likewise wrote against the Divorce, *ad Paulum Tertium*; but whether his Book was printed before the Year 1535, I do not know. It was then printed in *Quarto*.

P. 104. *Married his own Sister, &c.*] Not his own Sister, but his Wife's own Sister; or the Sister of one, whom he had carnally known. *Antonin. Flor. Par. 3. Tit. 1. Cap. 11.*

P. 106, 129. Enough has been observ'd upon these Two Pages already; otherwise I have the Proceedings [a Copy] of this Convocation, or Synod, *An. 1533*, (which Mr. *Wharton* seems to place in 1531) from a Publick Instrument, drawn up and attested by a Publick Notary: A further Account whereof, your Lordship may have, if it be of any Use to your Design.

P. 129. *This Protestation---be repeated, when he took the Oath to the Pope;*] That is publicly, and at his Consecration. I know this has been said; but I wish it could be prov'd. I have two Letters [MSS. Latin] of Cardinal *Pole*, to Archbishop *Cranmer*; wherein he charges him, with having done it only in a private manner, and brands his Proceeding therein with such Expressions, as I am unwilling to transcribe. I have likewise seen a Copy of this Protestation, attested by publick Notaries; wherein it is said to have been made in *St. Stephen's Chapel*; but nothing of its being repeat-



ed at his Consecration. If your Lordship has met with any Thing to destroy these Testimonies, I shall be very glad.

P. 137. *Letter---to Reginald (soon after Cardinal) Pole.*] He was then Cardinal; for they exhort him to return to his Duty to the King, and to surrender up his Red Hat. *Letter printed cum Priv.*

P. 151. *A Crime of so high a Nature, was so slightly passed over.*] It was not passed over: For Stow says, [P. 561.] these Fryars, and all the rest of that Order, were shortly after banish'd;-----and that after that, none durst openly oppose themselves against the King's Affections.

P. 155. *Priores and Convent of the Dominican Nuns at Deptford, or Bedford.*] Appen. I suppose it should be the Priores and Convent at *Dartford*, of the Order of St. *Auslin*. Lambard, p. 448. *Dugdale Mon.* Vol. 2. p. 357.

Ib. *Meeting of the Privy-Council at Lambeth, &c.*] Not Privy-Council, (as I suppose): For it is there said, He came before the King's Commissioners. The Abbot of *Westminster*, I suppose, was no Privy-Counsellor; tho' he were a Commissioner.

P. 158. *John Hilsey not Consecrated Bishop of Rochester before 1537.*] I am not sure this has not been taken notice of; but I am very sure, from several Authorities, that he was Bishop *An.* 1535.

P. 166. *One William Tracy of Worcestershire,---his Will brought to the Bishop of London's Court.*] Tracy was of *Teddington* in *Glocestershire*. If the Register says, it was brought into the Bishop of *London's Court*, there is no contradicting such Authority. But *Tyndall's Exposition of Tracy's Will*, says it was brought before the Archbishop: And in *Fox [Commentar. Lat. p. 125.]* the Archbishop is said to have committed the Execution of this Business to Dr. *Parker*, Chancellor of the Diocese of *Worcester*; in which Diocese, *Glocestershire* then was. Nor do I see, how it could be regularly brought into the Bishop of *London's Court*.

P. 187. *Edward the Confessor founded Coventry, &c.*] *Coventry* was not founded by *Edward the Confessor*, but by Count *Leofric*. *Monast.* Vol. 1. p. 303. *Hist of Warw.* p. 100.

P. 189. *Netherlands, where the greatest Trade of these Parts was driven, &c.*] Your Lordship has been since better acquainted with the Trade of the *Indies*; which was then (I suppose) chiefly divided betwixt the *Spaniards* and *Portuguese*, and the *Netherlands* had a very small Share. Sir *W. Temple* (P. 75.) gives this Account: *Before the Revolt, the Subjects of the Low-Countries-----never allowed the Trade of the Indies, but in the Spanish Fleets, and under Spanish Covert, &c.*

P. 213. *Cromwell, the King's Vicar-General,---was not yet Vicegerent.*] In a Publick Instrument, in *Fuller's History of Cambridge*, p. 109. (which we have upon our Registers, and otherwise *MS.*) dated *Octob. 22. 1535*, *Cromwell* is styled *Vicegerent* that Year: And in the Writ of Summons, 1539, (in *Dugdale*) he is styled *Vicarius Generalis*. So that these Two Titles seem to have been us'd promiscuously.

P. 214. Alex. Ale's, a Scotchman---- him Cromwell brought to the Convocation, &c.] An Account of this Conference is publish'd by this *Alex. Ale's*; by him in *Latin*, translated into *English* by *Edm. Allen*; and he is there styled, *Alex Aleane, Scot.* He was sent for into *England* by the Lord *Cromwell*, and the Archbishop----- Sent to *Cambridge*---driven thence-----withdrew to *London*, where he study'd, and practis'd Physick certain Years---met by chance with the Lord *Cromwell*---who took him with him to *Westminster*----where he found all the Bishops gathered together----unto whom all the Bishops and Prelates did rise up and did Obedience as to their Vicar General-- and he sat him down in the Highest Place----then follows an Account of the Debate, and how the Bishops were divided---but, I think, he places this Meeting (I have not the Book by me) in the Year 1537. The Book is without Date, so it does not appear when it was printed.

P. 221. *Book de Unione Ecclesiastica.*] The Title is, *De Unitate Ecclesiastica.* I have not seen the First Edition, being very scarce, and having been kept up in a few Hands; but it was Re-printed in *Germany*, Anno 1555, said in the Preface to have been printed Fifteen Years before; that is, about the Year 1540: But I think there are some Things said in the Body of the Book, that suppose it to be printed sooner. It was without Date.

P. 224. *Bede'sden in Bedfordshire.*] It is in *Buckinghamshire.* Ib. None of our Writers have taken notice of this-----*Dugdale* in his *Monast.* Vol. 3. P. 21. has taken notice of two such New Foundations, viz. *Bisham* in *Berks*; and *Stixwold, Linc.*

P. 252. *Cranmer at that Time of Luther's Opinion.*] *Cranmer* at his Tryal being asked what Doctrine he taught concerning this Sacrament, when he condemned *Lambert* the Sacramentary, expressly says, *I maintained then the Papists Doctrine.* Fox Vol. 3. P. 656. Nor could he well otherwise have argued against *Lambert*, as he then did. To name no more Authorities.

P. 256. *All the Parl. Abbots had their Writs.*] According to *Dugdale*, the Abbots of *St. Edmundsbury* and *Tavestoke*, were not summon'd to this Parliament; Apr. 28, 1539.

P. 266, 7. *The opposite Party---Bonner, &c.*] This does not seem to agree with what is said after, p. 299. *Hitherto he (Bonner) had acted another Part---now began to show his Nature, &c.*

P. 296. *But his Friends complained to the King---he being a Privy Councillor.*] *Gardiner* in his *Declaration of such true Articles, &c.* Printed An. 1546, 8vo. says, he complain'd himself to the King; and expressly says, *when Barnes was sent to the Tower, I was not of the Privy Council*----He seems not to have been much employ'd at this Time, having been left out of the Number of those that compiled the King's Book, or not acting.

P. 303. *Cranmer set out an Order.*] This Order I have seen printed 1541, amongst Archbishop *Parker's* Papers, but it was with the Consent of the other Archbishop, and most of the Bishops.

P. 347. *The Coronation of the Prince of Wales.*] I think *Creation* is the usual Term at this Solemnity.



P. 349. *To discover Things---hitherto unknown.*] This has been taken notice of by *Lesley*, a noted Author, and your Lordship's Countryman; and the Testimonies of my Lord *Paget*, Sir *Edward Montague*, and this *Clark* there appealed to----after follows----*Quæ Testimonia cum juramento perhibita, postquam diligenter & circumspecte perpensa atq; examinata fuissent, Maria Regina de Sententia Consiliorum suorum, ad Honorem Dei & Regni, ad veritatis & Justitiæ Patrocinium, & Legitimæ in Regnum Successionis, ad multa nefanda mala devitanda, quæ illa corruptione ex illo figmento, consecutura erant, jussit exemplar Memorialis suppressitii Testamenti, quod extabat in Cancellariâ conscindi, expungi, aboleri tanquam indignum quod inter vera & in corrupta Nobilissimi Regni exemplaria locum cerneret -- Jo. Leslaus, de titulo & jure Serenissimi Principis Mariæ Scotiæ Reginæ, quo Regni Angliæ Successionem sibi juste vindicat. Rhemis 1580, P. 43, 44. I think it was publish'd in *English* sooner.*

P. 356. *That Fisher and he penned the Book.*] It is true Sir *Tho. More* was only a *Sorter*, and *Fisher* could be no more than one of the *Makers*, though some have asserted it to be his *Work* alone. But as to Sir *Tho. More's* Testimony, I think it may with much more Reason be taken from *Roper* his Son-in-Law, who marry'd his beloved Daughter, and knew his inward Thoughts, than from a Letter to a Minister of State, where *loquendum cum Vulgo*. Your Lordship is a very able Judge of *Stile*, and of the Elegancy wherewith this Book is wrote: Your Lordship has given us a Specimen of the King's *Stile*, in the Marginal Notes of the last Page of this Volume, P. 368. I dare appeal to your Lordship whether you think the *Style* to be the same. The last Words are so Elegant, that I cannot forbear reciting them. *Cum qua nec Pontifex Romanus, nec quisvis alius Prælatas aut Pontifex, habet quicquid agere, præterquam in suas Dioceses.*

However, I am very willing the King should enjoy the Honour of his Book, provided I am allow'd to enjoy my Opinion.

Upon this Occasion, I have only to add, that whereas this *Life* of Sir *Tho. More* by *Roper* is somewhere cited, P. 279, as printed, (if I am not mistaken) I think I may be positive it was never printed. I have in it Manuscript. Sir *Tho. More's* *Life* was twice printed in 4to and in 8vo, and by different Hands, but neither of them by *Roper*, though both of them have borrow'd from him pretty freely.

P. 362. *Gardiner---and Three other Priests---executed,*] *Gardiner* was executed, the other Three were pardon'd, according to an Account I have seen, MS. Their Names are there said to be Master *More*, Master *Heykote*, and Master *Roper*.

## Collection of RECORDS.

P. 186. *Dr. Clyfs.*] We had no such Doctor at *Cambridge* : I suppose it may be a Mistake of the Press, for *Dr. Cliff* ; of which Name there were Two, and both of them *Civilians*.

P. 178. *Injunctions by Cromwell.*] These Injunctions exhibited Anno 1538. were Printed by *Barthelet cum Priv.* containing some small Variations, which might have been noted in the Margin, (as some other little things might) but they are not considerable.

P. 201. *MSS. Dr. Stillfleet.*] I can do your Lordship that Right to say, that these MSS. are Published with Faithfulness enough ; only they might have been quoted as my Lord *Salisbury's*, to whom they belong ; and are probably Two of these Six or Seven Volumes, said P. 171. of this Volume to have been in the Hands of my Lord *Burghley*. There are some few Omissions, or Verbal Mistakes, which might have been noted in the Margin ; I shall only mention some few that alter the Sense. P. 215. *Justification by the Word*, Institution by the Word, MS. *lb. receive them*, retain them, MS. And the same Page, for *Conjunction* should be read *Commixtion*. P. 216. *Significantia*, Sanctificantia, MS. P. 223. *Apostolicis*. Apostolis, MS. P. 227. *Multisque aliis*, nullisque aliis, MS. P. 229. *Prophetam*, Prophetiam, MS. P. 232. *Lacius*, Laicus, MS. P. 238. *Eleventh*, Fifteenth, MS. P. 240. *nonnullis*, novellis, MS. And after *Sentence*, should be read of *Excommunication*. P. 243. *Authors*, Doctors, MS. Such Mistakes might easily happen, either through the Neglect of the Transcriber, or of the Press.

I shall not enter into the Criticism of *T. Cantuarion* to *Leighton's* Paper. The meaning is more plain in *Robertson's* ; for he not having subscribed his Name at the end of his Paper, the Arch-bishop might add his own to attest it ; and *Robertson's* Name afterwards appearing at the beginning of his Paper, the Bishop might dash his own Name, as it now stands, if done by the same Hand.

P. 257. *A Collection of Passages out of the Canon-Law, &c.*] Here your Lordship must have trusted an unskilful Amanuensis : The Copy is so full of Mistakes, I will note a few.

P. 257. *De summa excom.* De Sententia, MS. *Nominat*, noverit, MS. P. 258. *A recta memoria*, A recta memoir, MS. *Efficiund*, officium, MS. *De Summa*, De Sententia, MS. P. 259. *Electi proprietate*, Potestate, MS. *Si modo*, Sinodum, MS. *Non vos*, non nos MS. *De pecunia*, De pœnitentia, MS. *Proprietate*, Potestate, MS. P. 260. *Proprietate* [bis] Potestate, MS. *Fœlicum*, Fœlicis, MS. P. 261. *Ex Clericus*, Quod Clericus, MS. *Si vero*, Quod vero, MS. *Si quibus*, Si quis, MS. *De Summa*, De Sententia, MS. *Nom*, noverit, MS. *De pecuniis*, Pœnitentiis, MS. *Si*, Etsi, MS. *Ad usus*, Adversus, MS. *Nor is it not*, nor it is not, MS. P. 262. *Et quæ sequitur*, quæ sequuntur, MS. *Si quisquis*, Si quisquam, MS. *Quicunque*, Quæcunque, MS. P. 263. *In Clementini*, Clementinis,



MS. *Per excelsa*, pre excelsa, MS. *De præmiis*, De pænitiis,  
MS. *De summa*, De sententia, MS. P. 264. *Ut verum*, ut jeju-  
ni, MS.

*History of the Reformation, Vol. II. Edit. 2.*

**P** Age 1. *Lost his Mother the Day after he was Born.*] The King's Journal, printed by your Lordship, says, *within few Days after the Birth of her Son, died.* Geo. Lilly, who liv'd at the same Time, and near the Place, says, *Duodecimo post die moritur—Chron.* And so the Continuation of Fabian, Octob. 23. These seem to be the best Authorities.

P. 17. *The next Day the Seal was put into the Lord St. John's Hands.*] 29 *Junii sigillum magnum Will. Pawlet Militi Domino S. Jo. de Basing liberatum fuit.* Pat. 1. Edw. 6. P. 4. Dugdal. Orig. Jurid.

P. 39. *The Lord Rich made Lord Chancellor on the 24th of Octob.*] Rich. Rich Miles Dominus Rich constitutus Cancellarius Angliæ 30. Nov. Pat. 1. Edw. 6. P. 3. M. 14. Dugdal. ibid.

P. 58. *There is another Paper given in—but most of the Fathers there cited, are of the later Ages, &c.*] The Fathers and Canons cited in that Paper are, *Hermes, Tertullian, Origen, Basil, Ambrose, Jerome, Augustine, Chrysostome*: The Councils of *Arles, Elvira,* and *Milevi*. If any modern Authorities are cited, I have not noted them.

P. 62. *The Bishops of London, Worcester, Chichester, and Hereford, gave in their Answer once in one Paper.*] The Bishops of London, Worcester, Chichester, and Hereford's Answers related to another set of Questions.

Ib. *Cranmer's Hand is over every one of them.*] Cranmer's Hand is not over Richard Cox, nor *W. Menevens*. nor *John Taylor's*; who have subscribed their own Names.

Ib. *Dr. Cox bath set his Hand and Seal to his Answer.*] I can assure your Lordship, there is no Mystery in this. Cox had sent in his Paper folded, and closed with Wax: The Foldings yet remain, according to which Foldings the Paper had been seal'd, which is now torn, where it had been sealed, and some of the Paper left upon the Wax.

P. 88. *Bucer and Fagius invited over to England, and sent to Cambridge, where Fagius died soon after.*] This your Lordship seems to place in the Year 1548; whereas they did not leave Germany till April 1549, and Fagius died in November following. I have his Will, proved Jan. 12. 1549.

P. 92. *Thus had this Matter been argued in Books--written by Parker, &c.*] Parker's Book was not wrote till the Reign of Queen Mary, *ad leniendum suum in illa Marianâ Persecutione mœrorem*---as said in his Life; nor publish'd till the Reign of Q. Elizabeth, and could have no Relation to this Reign.

Ib.

P. 100. *What his Behaviour was on the Scaffold, I do not find.*] There is a pretty Remarkable Account of his Death and Behaviour, in Bishop *Latymer's* Fourth Sermon, *Edit. 1. p. 56.* (left out of the following Editions) where, amongst other Things, he says, *He [the Admiral] dyed very dangerously, yrksomelye, borryblye.* And surely so he did, if the Letters referr'd to by him on the Scaffold were genuine, which *Latymer* says he saw.

P. 120. *They were required to procure a Resignation of some Colleges, and to unite them with others, &c.*] There were no other Colleges to be suppress'd, besides *Clare-Hall*, in order to found a New College of *Civilians*, either by Uniting it to *Trinity-Hall*, or by Augmenting the Number of *Trinity-Hall* to Twenty Fellows; as appears by King *Edward's* Statutes, (drawn up before the Visitors came down) compar'd with his Injunctions, (all upon the *Black Book*) drawn up after.

Indeed *Trinity-Hall* was to be surrender'd, in order to the Union, or New Foundation; wherein *Gardiner*, Bishop of *Winchester*, then Master, did good Service: Who refus'd to Surrender; and that, I suppose, partly upon Politick Reasons. For had he parted with his Old House, he would never have been made Master of the New Law-College, tho' he were Doctor both of the Canon and Civil Law.

P. 121. *Mr. Cheek---was either put from the Chair, or willingly left it to avoid the Indignation of so great a Man--as Gardiner was, &c.*] *Cheek* was not put from the Chair; not did he part with it, till after he was sent for by the King to instruct the Prince; as appears from the Account of the Life of his Successor, *Nicholas Carr*, p. 59. and otherwise.

P. 129. *The Confusions this Year, occasion'd that Change to be made in the Office of daily Prayers, where the Answer to the Petition, [Give Peace in our Time, O Lord] was now made, [Because there is none other that fighteth for us, but only thou, O God]. This, my Lord, I do not well understand: For this Petition and Answer stand in the First Liturgy of Edward the Sixth, Fol. 4.*

P. 154. *The Earl of Warwick--writ earnestly in his [Hooper's] Behalf, to the Archbishop, to dispense--with the Oath of Canonical Obedience at his Consecration, &c.*] The Oath of Canonical Obedience, (as printed in the Form of Consecration, *An. 1549,*) is so unexceptionable, that there seems to be no Ground for Scruple; being only a Promise of all due Reverence and Obedience to the Archbishop, &c. It seems to have been the Oath of Supremacy, which at that time contain'd Expressions more liable to Exception, being a kind of &c. Oath, requiring Obedience to *Acts and Statutes, made or to be made*; and concluding with, *So helpe me God, All Saintes, &c.*

*Fuller*, who was once of Opinion, that it was the Oath of Canonical Obedience that *Hooper* scrupled, yet alter'd his Opinion [*Worthies in Somersetshire, p. 22.*] upon these, or such like Reasons. If *Parsons* his Authority were of any Weight, he expressly says, it was the Oath of Supremacy. *De tribus Convers. Par. 3. Chap. 6. Sect. 68.*

Ibid.



Ibid. John Alasco, *with a Congregation of Germans, that fled from their Country--upon the Interim, &c.*] They were most of them *Netherlanders, or French* (only a few *Germans*) and consequently not concern'd with the *Interim*; and the Language they officiated in, was the *Low-German and French, &c.* *Utenkov. Narrat. de Institut. & Dissipat. Belgarum, &c.* P. 12, 28, &c. Those that went off with *Alasco*, were *Low-Germans, French, English, or Scots.* Ib. p. 22. This seems confirm'd, by what is said P. 250 of this Volume, of their being of the *Helvetian Confession*, and of their Reception in *Denmark*. However, I am not positive, further than *Utenhovius's* Account will bear me out, which I have not by me.

P. 162. *Dr. Smith--was brought to London, upon Complaints--Cranmer got his Sureties to be discharged; upon which he writ him a Letter.--Soon after he writ another Letter to Cranmer, &c.*] These Letters I have seen: I can assure your Lordship, they are wrote to *Parker*, not to *Cranmer*: And if your Lordship has any doubt of it, I can make it very evident.

P. 163. *He (Dr. Smith) had made a Recantation--of some Opinions--but what these were--the Journal does not inform us.*] The Particulars were, 1. Concerning Submission to Governors in Church and State. 2. Concerning Unwritten Traditions. 3. Concerning the Sacrifice of the Mass, &c. As may be seen in his *Retraction*, printed at *London, An. 1547 cum Priv.* entitled, *A Godly and Faithful Retraction, made and published at Paul's Cross in London, Anno 1547, 15 May; by Master Richard Smith, D. D. and Reader of the King's Majesties Lecture in Oxford; revoking therein certain Errors and Faults, by him committed in some of his Books.* It was repeated at *Oxford, July the 24th, the same Year.*

Ib. *M. Bucer died--on the 28th of February.*] It is not very material, whether he died this Day, or the Day after: But he died the 1st of *March*, if *Parker* and *Haddon's* Account may be taken, who were present, and bore a Part at his Funeral, and were Executors of his Will.

*Nicholas Carr* likewise present, says, *Calendis Martiis* in his Letter to *Cheke*. These, I suppose, are the best Authorities.

P. 165. *Griffith and Leyson, Two Civilians.*] *Griffith Leyson* was only one Civilian: The other Civilian was, *John Oliver, L. L. D.*

P. 196. ---said in the Preface of the Book, that *Cranmer* did the whole Work almost himself.] All that I find in that Preface, is, that these Thirty two were divided into Four Classes; and that what was concluded in one Class, was to be communicated to the rest; and that *Summæ Negotii præfuit Tho. Cranmerus, Archiep' Cant'*; as it was fit he should preside.

Ib. *Dr. Haddon, that was University-Orator at Cambridge.*] *Haddon* never was University-Orator at *Cambridge*; as appears from a very Exact Catalogue upon the Orator's Book, and otherwise.

P. 204. *Wanchop, a Scotchman--who tho' he was blind--*] He was not blind, only short-sighted: *Il quale Huomo di brevissima vista*

*sta era commendato di questa virtu, di correr alla posta meglio d' huomo del mondo.* Hist. del Conc. Trid. l. 2. p. 144.

P. 240. *The Queen---received them all very favourably, except --- Dr. Ridley. --- She gladly laid hold on any Colour, to be more severe to him,---for bringing Boner to London again.] There needed no Colours; he had given too just Offence. In a MS. C.C.C. Miscel. P. this Account is given.*

Sunday, July 16th, Dr. Ridly Bishop of London, preach'd at Paul's-Cross: Where he declared in his Sermon---the Lady Mary and Elizabeth to be Illegitimate, and not lawfully begotten, &c. according to God's Law;---and so found, both by the Clergy and Acts of Parliament, in Henry the VIIIth's Time; which the People murmured at.

P. 244. *Himself [Cranmer] perform'd all the Offices of the Burial, &c.] It is highly improbable, that he who was now under Displeasure, about this Time confin'd to his House, and soon after to the Tower, should be allow'd to Perform these Offices in such manner. Godwin [An. 1553.] Annal. says,---Concionem habente Daio Cicester. Episcopo, qui etiam sacrum peregit vernacula usus Anglicana, & Eucharistiam præsentibus exhibuit, &c. To the same Purpose Holingshed, Vol. 2. p. 1089. And I never could meet with any good Authority for the contrary, except your Lordship's.*

P. 248. -----*Against all that would not change their Religion:] Speaking of Judge Hales. Judge Hales did Change his Religion: So Fox, Vol. 3. p. 957. Judge Hales never fell into that Inconvenience, before he had consented to Papistry. This, probably, was one great Occasion of his Melancholy. So Fox, more expressly in the First Edition of his Book, p. 1116. He was cast forthwith into a great Repentance of the Deed, and into a Terror of Conscience----*And Bradford [Letters of the Martyrs, p. 384.] proposes him as an Example, of one that was fearfully left of God to our Admonition.

P. 251. *He [Horn] had refused to accept of his Bishoprick----*As far as I understand his Meaning, this was meant of the Administration of Episcopal Power: For Horn having said, *The Bishop was not asham'd to lay to my Charge,----that I had exercised his Office in his Bishoprick;* answers,----*I never meddled with his Office: I was in daunger of much displeasure, --- bycause I wold not take upon me his Office, &c.*

P. 252. *One Beal, Clerk of the Council.] His Name in Fox is Hales, Vol. 3. p. 976.*

P. 272. *She [the Lady Jane] sent her Greek Testament ---- to her Sister, with a Letter in the same Language.] The Letter, I suppose, must have been wrote in English, as it stands in Fox, Vol. 3: p. 35. and as printed amongst the Letters of the Martyrs, p. 662:*

*Ibid.* That Lady, under her Picture, is said to have been *Nata 1537.] According to Ascham, (who may be suppos'd, to have given in her Age at lowest) She was aged Fifteen, in the Year 1550, when he found her Reading Plato's Phædon in Greek; which was very unusual at that Age, but would have been Extraordinary indeed at Thirteen.*



P. 275. Goodrick, of Ely, died in April this Year.] There is an Institution upon his Register, by his Authority, May 9th 1554: And in a Catalogue of their Bishops, upon their *Black Book*, it is said, *Decimo Maij, Anno Dom. 1554, --- mortem obiit apud Somerskam, &c.* This, I think, has been taken notice of: I only mention it, because it is from unquestionable Authority.

P. 277. Dr. Martin---studied the Law at Bourges; where Francis Baldwin had publicly noted him for his Lewdness, as being not only over-run himself with the French P-x;---which Baldwin certified in a Letter.] This Letter I have now by me, printed in Bale's Declaration of Boner's Articles, Vol. 47, 48. But it was not Martin, but his Host, that was over-run with the French P-x: *Habitabat in Acad. Biturigum, apud quendam nomine Boium, Sacrificulum turpissimum, --- toto corpore leprosum, & infami morbo Gallico infectum: Tho' Martin's Character there is bad enough.*

P. 279. The Spaniards gave---Occasion, by Publishing Philip's Pedigree,---from John of Gaunt:---This made Gardiner look---to the Liberties of the Crown, &c.] If John Bale be good Authority, the English were forward enough, in Setting forth Genealogies from John à Gaunt;----Gardiner, White, and Harpsfield maintaining the same. Ibid. Fol. 9.

P. 284. The Letters of the Prisoners---gathered---and all printed by Fox,---and put into the Library of Emanuel-College, by Sir Walter Mildmay, &c.] Most of these Letters are printed by Fox; but your Lordship knows, the Letters of the Martyrs were publish'd in a distinct Volume, with a Preface by Coverdale, (probably the Publisher) and printed by John Day, An. 1564; which I could have wish'd had been taken Notice of by your Lordship in this Place.

P. 292. I have noted under Cardinal Pole's Picture, from *Ciaconius*, and *Petramellarius*, that he was at last Cardinal-Presbyter, (tho' First only Deacon) which will hardly consist with what is said Vol. 1. p. 221. that he did not rise above the Degree of a Deacon; tho' I suppose, Cardinals are of equal Dignity.

P. 302. Here I could have wish'd, your Lordship had taken notice of Hooper's Loyalty; which was very signal, as appears from his Printed Apology. *When She was at the worst, I rode my self from Place to Place, (as it is well known) to win and stay the People for her Party. And whereas another was proclaimed; I preferred Her, notwithstanding the Proclamations ----- I sent Horses out of both Shires, (Glocester and Worcester) to serve her in her great Danger; as Sir John Talbot, Kt. and William Ligon, Esq; can testify, &c.* And more to this Purpose.

P. 317. William Wolley-----burnt at Ely;----where Shaxton-----now Suffragan of Ely, condemned them.] Shaxton could not condemn them, being there only as an Assistant: They were condemned by John Fuller, L. L. D. *Vicarium in Spiritualibus Domini Thomæ Episcopi Elien. ----- & ejusdem Commissarium --- legitime constitutum, --- ad negotia infra Scripta expediend. --- in Capellâ B. Mariæ Elien. --- assistentibus ei tunc ibid. Rev. in Christo Patre Nicholao---modo Suffragano*

gano Episcopo.--- Rob. Steward Decano Elien. Jo. Christopherfon S.T.B. Decano Norwic. &c. Registr. Thyraby, Fol. 81, 82. where the Process may be seen.

P. 320. Gardiner's Picture.] If your Lordship has seen this Picture with the Seals, &c. it must be *Gardiner's*; though I have seen two Pictures at *Trinity College*, and *Trinity Hall*, said to be *Gardiner's*, very unlike this. I have often suspected it to belong to *Horn*, who was a severe rough sort of a Man, and gives the Bugle Horns for his Arms (but without a Chevron); which though they are said to belong to the *Gardiners*, yet *Gardiner* when he was Chancellor of *Cambridge*, gives different (Paternal) Arms, as may be seen in the Appendix to Archbishop *Parker's Antiq. Brit.*

*Poinet*, his Successor, describes him thus--- He had a hanging Look, frowning Brows, Eyes an inch within the Head, a Nose hooked like a Buffard, wide Nostrils like a Horse,---a Sparrow Mouth, &c. And truly by this Description, it may be *Gardiner's*.

P. 337. John Hallier, a Priest, was burnt at Canterbury.] *John Hullier*, a Priest, was burnt at *Cambridge*, as appears from *Thyraby's Register*. He is there said to have been Vicar of *Badburham*; of which Vicaridge he was first depriv'd, and afterwards burnt, for maintaining Erroneous and Heretical Opinions. *Fox*, (P. 696) likewise says he was burnt at *Cambridge*, as also the Letters of the Martyrs, P. 517.

P. 339. Knox had written indecently of the Emperor, &c.] This, my Lord, is rather too soft an Expression. *Knox* was accus'd of Treason against the Emperor, his Son, and the Queen of *England*, as may be seen in the *Troubles of Frankford*, where the Words are reported at large. p. 44.

P. 340.--- Brought him, (Pool) under the Suspicion of having procur'd his (Cranmer's) Death. From your Lordship's Opinion of the Cardinal's Probity and Vertue, p. 370, I think I can clear him from this Suspicion from his own Letter, MS. where he thus accosts *Cranmer*. *Ea est mea salutis tue cura ac studium, ut si te ab horribili illâ, quæ tibi nisi resipiscas, impendat, non solum Corporis, sed Animæ etiam mortis Sententiâ, ullo modo liberare possem, id profecto omnibus divitiis atque honoribus, qui cuiquam in hac vitâ contingere possint (Deum testor) libentissime anteponerem.* MS. p. 54.

P. 341. I have not met with her Foundation of it (Westminster) which perhaps was razed---- The King and Queen's Licence, or Patent. Dat. Sept. 7. An. 3. and 4. P. M. may be met with in *Rymer*, (*Apostol. Benedict.* P. 233.) and as there said, *habetur 12. Parte Patentum*. The rest, I suppose, was done by the Pope's Authority. The Cardinal's Licence (towards the Suppressing of the College) may be met with in the *Monastic.* Vol. II. p. 847.

P. 353. Peyto had begun his Journey into England--- Stopt his Journey, &c.] From the Answer to *English Justice*, (suppos'd to be wrote by Sir *Will. Cecil*, or by his Order) it appears that *Peyto* was now in *England*, p. 20, 23, &c. Edit. *Eat.* p. 48; as likewise from the Answer, p. 147, 149. *Ciaconius* says the same Thing *An. Dom.* 1557. and *Pallavicini Hist. Conc. Prid. Lib.* 14. Cap. 2. 5. (and that he was then an Old Decrepit Man) besides other Authorities that might



might be nam'd, if it were material. It was the Bulls that were stopt at *Calice*, with the Nuncio, or Bearer, which may have occasion'd the Mistake of *Godwin*, and others.

P. 364. *He that writ the Preface to Bishop Ridley's Book, De Cænâ Domini, supposed to be [Giindal]* The Author of the Preface to *Ridley's Book*, was *William Wittingham*, according to *Bale* (p. 684, 731.) who knew the Man very well, as well as his Writings.

P. 369. *Reserving nothing to himself, but Pool's Breviary, and Diary.] Ex quibus Polus Deum precari solitus erat. Breviarum vocamus & diurnale. Becatell. p. 80.*

P. 374. *On the 19th at Highgate all the Bishops met her, &c.]* The Queen was at *Hatfield*, Nov. 20. and yet there, Nov. 22. as appears from a Register, or Council Book, which I have seen. Nov. 24. She was at the *Charter-House*, and not sooner, as far as appears from that Book. Nov. 25. She was yet at the *Charter-House*; it does not appear from thence that she was at the *Tower* 'till Decemb. 1.

P. 395. *The last (Coverdale) being Old, had no mind to return to his Bishoprick.]* I suppose *Coverdale* might have other Reasons, for in a Book Intitl'd, *Part of a Register*, I find him rank'd with those that then, or soon after, were styl'd *Puritans*, p. 12, 23, 25, &c. and having been of the *English Congregation at Geneva*, might probably there receive a Tincture, that he could not be brought to consent to Impositions. (*Troubles of Frankfort*, p. 188, 215.) This further appear'd by his Practice at *Archbishop Parker's Consecration*, where, *Togâ lancâ talari utebatur*; and if he would not use the Episcopal Habits on such an Occasion, I am fully perswaded he never would. However, it was very well in your Lordship to treat him with Tenderness, he having been a peaceable good Man, and a very useful Instrument in the Reformation.

P. 396. *Boner was suffered to go about in safety.]* Bishop *Andrews*, who gives a very particular Account of the Treatment of the several Bishops has this Account of *Boner*---- *Bonerus autem Londinensis, qui regnante Mariâ cum lenientiæ præfesset, in odium veneret omni Populo (ut nec tutum esset ei prodire in publicum, ne saxis obrueretur) ille quidem in carcere consenuit* ---- Tort. Torti, P. 146, 147.

P. 396. *Watson, a morose sullen Man---given to Scholastical Divinity, &c.]* *Watson*, who was Fellow, and Master, of *St. John's College*, was noted for polite Learning; I suppose, it was Dr. *John Watson*, that was given to Scholastical Divinity, styl'd *Scotist* by *Erasmus*.

Collection of RECORDS.

PAGE 125, Numb. 20. *Simpliciter & Uxor Viro.*] Similiter & Uxor Viro, MS. *Possunt aliis nubere. Potest alii nubere*, MS. *Æquo jure juxta*—*Æquo jure quo illæ juxta*, &c. MS.

P. 134. *The Sacrament of Thanks.*] The Sacrament of the Altar, MS. *Dr. Tyler*—*D. Tayler*, MS. *De Populo*—*De Poculo*, MS. P. 137. *Scil. (bis) Christi (bis)* MS. And betwixt the 3d and 4th Answer of the Bishop of Coventry and Litchfield, MS. has these Words, *The Prayers of the Priest in the Mass, having before him the Precious Body and Blood of our Saviour Christ, by the Testimony of St. Austin, St. Chrysostome, and other Antient Fathers, are of great Efficacy, and much to be esteemed.*

P. 139. *Mark 19.*] *Mark 14*, MS. *Communicating*—*Communing*, MS. P. 140. *Frequent*—*Fervent*, MS. P. 141. *Carveant*—*Caveat*, MS. *Ib. Come daily*—*Commune daily*, MS. P. 145. *Convenient*. *Expedient*, MS. P. 147. After *Paul Ep. Bristol*. *Dr. Cox*, because all the Benefits of the Mass do also appertain unto the People, it were very convenient to use such Speech therein, which the People might understand, MS. *Ib. Quest. 10.* After *Lincoln's* Answer. *Dr. Cox*, I suppose that the Reservation of the Sacrament began about the Time of *Ambrose, Jerome, and Augustine*. When it began I cannot tell, and for what Purpose it should hang there I cannot tell, MS.

P. 148. *Some Questions, &c.*] Before the Questions thus, *London, Worcester, Chichester, Hereford*. On the Back of the Paper thus, *Worcester, Chichester, and Hereford*. First Answer, for *far and sundry*. *Far asunder*, MS.

P. 157. Numb. 30. *Continuing*. *Conteyning*, MS. C. C. C. P. 158. *To marry a Wife*. *To marry One Wife, &c.*

P. 249. *A Manifesto*—by *Cranmer, &c.* This was printed, *An. 1554* by *V. Pollanus*, under this Title, *Reverendissimo in Christo Patris ac Domini D. Archiepiscopi Cant. Epistola Apologetica*; which seems a more proper Expression for a Subject.

P. 386. *I do not find one Head of a College—was turned out, &c.*] *Day*, Provost of *King's*, was not turned out (as has been said by *Mr. Wharton*) for he resigned, though perhaps not altogether voluntarily, though his Resignation is said to be voluntary. But *Rowland Swinburn*, Master of *Clare-Hall*, was certainly turned out by the King's Visitors, as appears from a Journal of the Visitation, MS. C. C. C. a Copy whereof I have, nor can there be any doubt, but *Gardiner* was turned out at *Trinity-Hall*, where his Successors, *Haddon* and *Mowse*, are stiled Masters *de facto*.

P. 396. *Coverdale not married.*] *Coverdale* was married; he and *Machabeus* married Two Sisters. *Fox*, Vol. III. p. 182. *Hollingshed*, Vol. II. p. 1309. speaks of *Coverdale's* Wife twice in one



Page. Eight of the Protestant Bishops in this Reign were married.  
*Parkhurst, Epigram Juv. p. 56, 165, 6.*

Apol. p. 241.  
 2d Edit. 1533.

In the Introduction Sir *Tho. More* is quoted, as calling Convocations Confederacies. It is not he that calls them so, but the Person whom he answers; for the Words that go before shew this very clearly. *But, I suppose, he calleth those Assemblies at the Convocations by the Name of Confederacies. For, but if he do so. I wot nere what he meaneth by that Word. And on the t'other side if he do so, for ought that I see, he giveth a good Thing, and an Holsome, an Odyouse Heighnouse Name. For if they did assemble after, &c.*

## Number V.

### *Some Remarks sent me by an unknown Person.*

**K** *Elkway's* Reports were published 1602, by *Jo. Crook*, who was afterwards a Judge. He gives a Character of *Keilway*, as a Lawyer of good Reputation; and that he was Surveyor of the Courts of Wards in Queen *Elizabeth's* Reign. It appears that the King's ordering the Attorney General to confess Dr. *Horsely's* Plea, without bringing the Matter to a Trial, was plainly a Contrivance to please the Clergy, and to stifle that Matter without bringing it to a Trial, and so must have satisfied them better than if he had pardoned him. Little Regard is to be given to *Rastall*, who shewed his Partiality in Matters in which the Pope's Authority was concerned; for in his Edition of the Statutes at Large, he omitted one Act of Parliament made in the 2d Year of *Richard the Second*, Cap. 6. which is thus abridged by *Poulton*. *Urban* was duly chosen Pope, and so ought to be accepted and obeyed: Upon which the Lord *Coke* in his *Institutes*, p. 274. infers, that Antiently Acts of Parliament were made concerning the Highest Spiritual Matters; but it seems *Rastall* had no mind to let that be known. He was a Judge in Queen *Mary's* Time, but went beyond Sea, and lived in *Flanders* in Queen *Elizabeth's* Reign, and there he wrote, and printed his Book of Entries.

There is a very singular Instance in the Year Book, 43 *Ed. 3.* 33. 6. by which it appears, that the Bishop of *Litchfield* was sometimes called the Bishop of *Chester*; for a *Quare Impedit* was brought by the King against

against him called Bishop of *Chester*: The Judgment given at the End of it, is, That he should go to the *Great Devil*. This is a singular Instance of an Extraordinary Judgment; there being no Precedent like it in all our Records.

In *Brook's* Abridgment, *Tit. Præmunire*, Sect. 21. it is said, That *Barlow* had, in the Reign of *Edward* the VIth, deprived the Dean of *Wells*, (which was a Donative) and had thereby incurred a *Præmunire*; and that he was forced to use Means to obtain his Pardon: So if he had not his Bishoprick confirmed, by a New Grant of it, he must have lost it, in a Judgment against him in a *Præmunire*. And if he wrote any such Book, it was in order to the obtaining his Pardon. *Brook* was Chief Justice of the *Common-Pleas*, in the 1st of *Queen Mary*: But yet it is no ways probable, that *Barlow* wrote any such Book, as is mention'd P. 270. of the second Volume of the *History of the Reformation*: For he went out of *England*, and came back in the 1st of *Queen Elizabeth*. He assisted in the Consecration of Archbishop *Parker*, and was made Bishop of *Chichester*; which probably would not have been done, if he had written any such Book, unless he had made a Publick Recantation of it; which I do not find that he did. So there is Reason to believe, that was a Book put out in his Name by some Papist, on design to cast a Reproach on the *Reformation*. This is further confirmed, by what I have put in the *History*: For by a Letter of *Sampson's* it appears, that *Barlow* did feebly promise to be reconciled to the Church of *Rome*: But it seems, that was only an Effect of Weakness, since he quickly got beyond Sea; into which the Privy-Council made an Enquiry: That shews, that he repented of that which was extorted from him.

‘ There are in this Paper some Quotations out of *Harmer's Specimen*, on which General Remarks are made, but Particulars are not added. The Writer of this has not thought fit to name himself to me; so I can give no other Description of him, but that he seems to be a Person who has studied the Law, and perused our Historians carefully.’

---

## Number VI.

### *Observations and Corrections of the Two Volumes of the History of the Reformation, made by Mr. Strype.*

PAGE 50. Lin. 20. *Stophileus* was a Bishop; *Simoneta* was Dean of the *Rota*.

P. 54.



P. 54. l. 10. *S. Greg. Cassali* was not then at *Rome*, but at *Orvieto*, where the Pope was at that Time. *Stophileus* was not yet come: And when he came, he did not promote, but hinder'd the King's Business all he could. See *Gardiner's Letters*.

P. 55. l. 10. This was the Third Commission sent from the Pope. The First was sent from *Rome* by *Gambra*, and the Second from *Orvieto*, brought over by *Fox*, but both were disliked; so this was now obtained.

P. 86. l. 32. *Boner* was an *Oxford Man*: But this was *Dr. Edmonds*, Master of *Peter-House*.

P. 112. l. 19. from the Bottom. *They cried out.* It was only *One*: *Quidam respondebat.* Jour. Convoc.

*Ibid.* l. 3. from the Bottom. For 52 r. 62, in the Lower-House 36 present; Proxies 48: In all 84.

P. 126. l. 7. *Slow* is in the right: For in a Letter of *Cranmer's* to *Hawkins*, then the King's Ambassador with the Emperor, dated in June from *Croydon*, he wrote, *Q. Anne was married much about St. Paul's Day last; as the Condition thereof doth well appear, by reason She is now somewhat big with Child.*

*Ibid.* l. 11. *Cranmer* was not present at the Marriage: For in the same Letter he writes, *Notwithstanding it hath been reported throughout a great Part of the Realm, that I married her; which was plainly false: For I my self knew not thereof a Fortnight after it was done. And many other Things be reported of me, which be mere Lies and Tales.*

P. 128. l. 7. from the Bottom. For 13, r. 30.

P. 129. l. 13. from Bott. The Number of those who Voted being only 23, must be understood only of the *Divines*: For the Second Question was put only to the *Jurists*, who (in those Times) exceeded the *Divines* in Number, and they did all Vote in the Affirmative: So that the Numbers did far exceed 23.

P. 131. l. 2. *Cranmer*, in a Letter gives this Account of the Final Sentence of Divorce, in these Words: "As touching the final Determination and Concluding of the Matter of Divorce, between my Lady *Katherine* and the King's Grace: After the Convocation in that behalf had determined and agreed, according to the former Sentence of the Universities; it was thought convenient, by the King and his Learned Council, that I should repair to *Dunstable*,—and there to call her before me, to hear final Sentence in this said Matter. Notwithstanding She would not at all obey thereunto. On the 8th of *May*, according to the said Appointment, I came to *Dunstable*; my Lord of *Lincoln* being assistant to me: And my Lord of *Winchester*, *Dr. Bell*, *Dr. Claybroke*, *Dr. Tregonnel*, *Dr. Sterkey*, *Dr. Olyver*, *Dr. Britton*, *Mr. Bedel*, with divers others Learned in the Law, being Counsellors for the King. And so there, at our coming, kept a Court, for the Appearance of the said Lady *Katherine*: Where we examined certain Witnesses; who testified that She was lawfully cited,—and called to appear, as the Process of the Law thereunto belongeth: Which continued Fifteen Days, after our first coming thither. The Morrow after *Ascension-Day*, I gave Sentence therein; How  
" that

“ that it was indispensible for the Pope, to License any such Marriage”. All this is taken out of *Cranmer's Letter to Hawkins*.

P. 134. l. 3. *Q. Elizabeth* was born the 13th or 14th Day of *September*: For so *Cranmer* wrote to *Hawkins*; and says, That he himself was Godfather at her Christening, and the Old Dutcheſs of *Norfolk*, and the Marchioness of *Dorset*, were Godmothers.

P. 166. l. 11. *Tracy's* Buſineſs was never in the Biſhop of *London's* Court: It was brought into the Convocation, by the *Prolocutor*, on the 24th of *February* 1530; and after 80 Days, the Archbiſhop gave Sentence againſt the Will, and condemned it. In another Seſſion, the Biſhop of *London* read the Sentence in the Archbiſhop's Name. It was alſo decreed, that *Tracy* died a Heretick, and his body was ordered to be dug up, and caſt a great way from Eccleſiaſtical Sepulture. The *Prolocutor* had indeed moved, that his Body ſhould be burnt; but the Sentence went not ſo far: Yet the Execution of it being committed to *Parker*, Chancellor of *Worceſter*, he went further than the Sentence warranted him, and burnt the Body.

P. 192. l. 20. For *Two Hundred Nobles*, r. *Twenty Nobles*. L. 25. for *Dear*, r. *Good*.

P. 198. l. 18. After writ, add, by *Sir William Kingſton*, to *Secretary Cromwell*.

P. 220. l. 8. After *Cott. Libr.* in the Margin, add *Otho C. 10.*

P. 203. l. 19. For *Privy-Council*, r. *his Learned Council in the Law Spiritual*.

P. 204. l. 15. and 14. from the Bott. For *Cooke*, r. *Loke*; and for *Wetſpall*, r. *Wythſpall*.

Ibid. l. 13. from Bott. For *of thoſe*, r. *bothe*; that is, *of other*.

P. 226. l. 25. The 7th Article is wholly omitted, for Providing a Bible in *Latin* and *English*, and laying it in the Quire.

P. 245. l. 5. Not a Convocation, but a Commiſſion from the King, to Biſhops and other Learned Divines. L. 7. add, Both the Archbiſhops, and 17 Biſhops.

P. 247. l. 14. *Summer ſaith*, that *Becket's Bones were burnt to Aſhes*.

P. 327. l. 18. For *Cardine*, r. *Cawardin*.

## *Collection of RECORDS.*

PAGE 95. l. 4. It is not *Cranmer's* own Hand, but writ by another; but after every Article, follows the Proof of it. This ſeems to be *Cranmer's* Original Book, preſented to the King.

P. 127. l. 4. from the Bottom. For *many*, r. *Men*.

P. 148. l. 25. *Reonen*, perhaps *Roanen*: King, Abbot of *Osney*, had the Title *Episcopus Reananſis*: He was afterwards Biſhop of *Oxford*.



P. 162. Here is a whole Article left out, marked before, now inserted in this Volume.

P. 163. l. 13. from the Bottom. This Letter is writ in *Morison's* Hand, who was *Cromwell's* Secretary.

P. 180. l. 6. After *and r. wall.* L. 7. Remove the *Comma* from *duly*, and set it after *otherwise*.

P. 183. l. 21. For *Ministry*, r. *Minister*. L. 2. from the Bottom, after *in*, r. *his*.

P. 184. l. 2. For 6, r. 7. L. 19. *here*, r. *bear*. L. 32. add *H. R.*

P. 200. l. 16. This Letter was drawn by *Gardiner*: but it is not certain that it was sent.

P. 203. The Agreement at the End of these Questions is in *Cranmer's* Hand. *Cott. Libr. Cleopatra*, E. 5.

P. 257. l. 5. There are 26 more Books prohibited at this Time, as appears by a *MS.* of the Bishop of *Ely's*; which follow:

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| 1. <i>The A B C against the Clergy.</i>                                | 15. <i>The Obedience of a Christian Man.</i>  |
| 2. <i>The Book made by Fryar Roys, against the Seven Sacraments.</i>   | 16. <i>The Book made by Sir John Oldcastle.</i>                                     |
| 3. <i>The Wicked Mammon.</i>   | 17. <i>The Summ of Scripture.</i>   |
| 4. <i>The Parable of the Wicked Mammon.</i>                            | 18. <i>The Preface before the Psalter, in English.</i>                              |
| 5. <i>The Liberty of a Christian Man.</i>                              | 19. <i>The Dialogue between the Gentleman and the Ploughman.</i>                    |
| 6. <i>Ortulus Animæ, in English.</i>                                   | 20. <i>The Book of Jonas, in English.</i>   |
| 7. <i>The Supper of the Lord; by G. Joye.</i>                          | 21. <i>The Dialogue of Goodale.</i>   |
| 8. <i>Frith's Disputation against Purgatory.</i>                       | 22. <i>Defensorium Paris; out of Latin into English.</i>                            |
| 9. <i>Tyndal's Answer to Sir T. More's Defence of Purgatory.</i>       | 23. <i>The Summ of Christianity.</i>  |
| 10. <i>The Prologue to Genesis, translated by Tindal.</i>              | 24. <i>The Mirror of them that be Sick and in Pain.</i>                             |
| 11, 12, 13, 14. <i>The Prologues to the other Four Books of Moses.</i> | 25. <i>Treatise of the Supper of the Lord; by Calwyn.</i> [I suppose it is Calvin.] |
|  | 26. <i>Every one of Calwyn's Works.</i>   |

P. 257. l. 12. Add, written by *Tyndal*. L. 16. for *4th* r. *7th*, L. 19. for *and* r. *ad*. L. 23. *and* r. *ad*.

P. 315. l. 18. Add *de Corariis*, an Abbey in *East-Smithfield*. L. 25. add, & *Procurator Cleri Coven. & Litchf.* L. 26. dele *Litchfield*. 2 Col. l. 1. r. *Prior fræ*. L. 6. r. *Buckfestræ*. L. 15. add *de Helvenham*. L. 17. add *Brueza*. After L. 25. add *Nicolas Medcalfe*.

P. 316. l. 6. For *Har.* r. *Bar.* L. 12. r. *Arche.* L. 18. For *Samil,* r. *Savile.*

P. 316, and 319. Two Papers said to be *Cranmer's*, but they are not written by him, nor by his Secretary ; So it does not appear that they are his.

Ib. l. 18. For *discrepet,* r. *discredit.*

P. 324. Col. 3. l. 14. It is not *Redman* : It is difficult to be read. It seems to be *Edmondes.*

P. 364. l. 6. For *the,* r. *our.* L. 16. For *Directors probable,* r. *direct and probable.*

P. 368. l. 8. Of the Marg. fet Comma's after *acceptione,* and *unitate,* and *dele Aunexa.*

Ib. l. 20. *Sic tamen ut eorum jussio atque.* L. ult. for *alius,* r. *aliquis.*

### *Corrections of the Second Volume.*

**P**AGE 1. l. 10. fr. bott. *Queen Jane* died the 24th of *October,* in a Journal written by *Cecil,* that was in 12 Days after King *Edward's* Birth : So it is in the *Herald's* Office. Last Line, The Duke of *Suffolk* was Godfather at his Confirmation, not at his Baptism.

P. 13. l. 11. fr. bott. For *Sheen,* r. *Syon.*

P. 15. l. 9. fr. bott. For *Richard,* r. *Robert.*

P. 26. l. 19. This Rule was not observed ; in some Circuits there were Four Visitors ; in others Six ; in some no Civilians ; in some Two Divines ; in some One Gentleman ; and in some Three. See *Cranmer's* Mem. p. 146.

P. 27. l. 10. These Titles are not as they are in the Original Book : They are only abridged.

P. 28. l. 1. Many Articles and Injunctions : The Injunctions are only abstracted, not the Articles.

P. 29. l. 17. These Articles are not in Bishop *Sparrow's* Collection, but were printed *Anno 1547.*

P. 39. l. 6. fr. bott. *Cloth of State,* not mentioned.

P. 40. l. 1. The Lord *Rich* made the Speech mentioned, though not inserted in the Lord's Journal. L. 2. for *December,* r. *November.* L. 5. 23, r. 24.

P. 43. l. 29. The Archbishop of *Canterbury* might use his own Name in all Faculties and Dispensations.

P. 50. l. 10. For *Tyler,* r. *Taylour.*

P. 71. l. 1. This Catechism was first made in *Latin* by another, but translated by *Cranmer's* Order, and it was revived by him.

P. 81. l. 23. This Proclamation was printed by *Grafton,* among King *Edward's* Proclamations.

P. 94. l. 19. *Rugg,* Bishop of *Norwich,* was not Employed in Compiling the Book, the other Three were.

P. 97 :



P. 97. l. ult. For 12000, r. 10000.

P. 113. l. 15. fr. bott. After *Articles*, add, *before this they drew up their Demands in Seven Articles.*

P. 117. l. 23. That the Service might be sung, or said, in the Choir.

P. 120. l. 12. fr. bott. The Two Colleges of *Clare-Hall*, and *Trinity-Hall*, could not be brought to surrender, in order to the Uniting them: Some Visitors were for doing it by the King's Absolute Power; to this *Ridley* would not agree, and for this he was complained of.

P. 150. l. 19. fr. bott. The Duke of *Somerset* was not then fallen; it was between his Two Falls: The Proceedings in Council are signed by him. L. 18. *Fox* says it, It is so in King *Edward's* Journal.

P. 154. l. Penult. The Passport was signed in *March* 1554, to go with 4 Servants, and 3 Horses.

P. 159. l. 20. For *Beginning*, say the 24th. L. 32. These Reasons were drawn up by *Ridley*.

P. 162. l. 19. fr. bott. This was not before *Cranmer*, but long after, before Archbishop *Parker*.

P. 165. l. 3. Soon after, r. Sometime before, it was on the 14th of *Feb.*

P. 166. l. 5. The greater Part of the Bishops were Enemies to the Reformation.

P. 171. l. 18. fr. bott. The Name of the Sixth was *Knox*.

P. 176. l. 4. fr. bott. And both lie buried in the Chancel of *Bugden* Church, they dying at the Bishop's House.

P. 182. l. 24. fr. bott. He was Sick before; for a Commission was granted to some to do the Business of the Chancery.

P. 196. l. 24. fr. bott. For *First*, r. *Eleventh*. L. 7. fr. bott. *Cranmer's* Part is thus expressed, *Summæ Negotii præfuit*, L. 5. *Haddon* was the King's Professor of *Civil-Law*, and not the University Orator.

P. 219. l. 25. Instead of *Pagnel*, undoubtedly by *Alexander Nowel*. L. 7. fr. bott. *John*, r. *Richard*.

P. 233. l. 5. fr. bott. *Cranmer* came at this Time oft to Council.

P. 234. l. 7. On the 8th of *July* also, they sent for the Mayor and certain Aldermen, and told them of the King's Death, and of the Succession; but bade them keep it secret. L. 18. give Pardon, r. she wrote, *she was ready to remit and pardon; and that she could take their Doings in good Part.*

P. 235. l. 28. For *Robert*, r. *Richard*.

P. 237. l. 10. fr. bott. For *Suffolk*, r. *Suffex*.

P. 243. l. 3. Yet in the 2d Session of this Parliament, a private Act passed, to make void the Duke of *Norfolk's* Attainder. L. 25. for *Humphrey*, r. *Henry*.

P. 246. l. 11. It was not her first Proclamation: For on the 19th of *July* she had by a Proclamation taken on her the Imperial Crown of the Realm.

P. 247. l. ult. *Circuits*, r. the *Quarter-Sessions*.

P. 248.

P. 248. l. 3. *Marshalsea*, r. *the King's Bench*. L. 5. The Reason of the Wounding himself was the Trouble of Mind that he felt for his Compliance, upon Bishop *Days's* Communication with him the Day before.

P. 251. l. 7. fr. Bott. *The Tenth*, r. *the Fifth*.

P. 252. l. 1. *The Day of her Coronation*, r. *a Month before*, for it was on the 1st of *September*. L. 24. *the Tenth*, r. *the Fifth*. This Mistake is taken from *Fabian* and *Fox*.

P. 253. l. 1. Yet *Tregonnel*, a Prebendary of *Westminster*, sate in the House in the 2d Sessions of this Parliament. L. 15. After *Prison*, r. for *Treason, Petty-Treason, or Misprision of Treason*: Such were also excepted who stood attainted, or imprisoned the last Day of *September*.

P. 257. l. 16. For 3d of *November*, r. *the Thirteenth*.

P. 259. l. 13. fr. Bott. Card. *Pole* was stopped in his Journey by *Mendoza*, sent Post to him from the Emperor, desiring him not to proceed in his Journey, upon which he went back to *Diling*, a Town belonging to the Card. of *Ausbourg*.

P. 262. l. 16. from Bott. After *Esther*, add *Judith, Mary the Sister of Martha, and the Virgin Mary*.

P. 286. false printed for 270. L. 2. from Bott. *Poinet* wrote a Book to justify resisting the Queen, which I have seen.

P. 272. l. 5. from Bott. For 21, r. 23.

P. 273. l. 26. *Cheek* was sent to the Tower with the Duke of *Suffolk*, and had Licence to travel. L. 30. *They did not render themselves, but were seized in their Journey; bound and thrown into a Cart, and sent Prisoners to England*. L. 6. from Bott. Seven Persons were discovered to be Complices: The Words spoken from the Wall were against the Queen, the Prince of *Spain*, the Mass, and Confession.

P. 276. l. 16. He was married, and had 7 Sons, and 5 Daughters. L. 23. *Harvey*, r. *Harley*.

P. 279. l. 2. from Bott. The Bill was to *avoid*, and not to *revive* the Statute of the Six Articles.

P. 291. l. 8. from Bott. Thrice in One Day. It was read twice on the 19th, and the 3d Time on the 20th.

P. 275. l. 10. from Bott. *Hopton*, by the Regist. of *Cant.* was consecrated the 28th of *October*; *Anthony Harmar*, p. 134. says it was the 25th of *October*.

P. 314. l. 24. For *Lease*, r. *Leafe*.

P. 315. l. 29. 25th of *June*, r. on the 12th of *July*. L. 33. *Stoning*, r. *Stening*. L. 26. *Sketerden*.

P. 317. l. 17. from Bott. For *Weybridge*, r. *Uxbridge*. L. 11. from Bott. *Wharwood*, r. *Harwood*. L. 10. from Bott. After *marked*, r. *And in this Month of August, Richard Hook suffered at Chichester*. L. 3. from Bott. For *Wolley*, r. *Wolfey*.

P. 318. l. 2. *Shaxton* did not condemn them: Fuller the Bishop's Chancellor condemned them: *Steyward* Dean of *Ely*, and *Christopher* Dean of *Norwich*, with others, were in the Commission, but the Chancellor was the Chief.

P. 320. l. 6. from Bott. For *Edward the VIth*, r. *Edward the IVth*.



P. 321. l. 8. fr. Bott. *Heath* was appointed Chancellor on New-Year's-Day.

P. 323. l. 15. The 13th of *December*. The Parliament was dissolved on the 9th of *December*. L. 24 *Justices of Peace*. The Bill was, that no Servants to Gentlemen, and wearing their Cloths, (except the King and Queen's) should be Justices. It was read the 2d Time on the 12th of *November*.

P. 324. l. 28. After 50000 *l.* and with it to have made a Rebellion. L. 29. For *Petham*, r. *Perkham*. L. 30. *White* was not executed, he discovered the Conspiracy. Ibid. For *Felony*, r. *High-Treason*, and were executed accordingly; there were Eight who suffered; the Three besides those named were *Rosses*, *Bedyland*, *Dethick*.

P. 325. l. 13. fr. Bott. Cardinal *Pole* had Two Brothers, *Artkur* and *Jeffrey*, both arraigned in the Year 1562, for a Conspiracy against Queen *Elizabeth*. *David* was not his Brother, nor a Bastard, for there is no Bull of Dispensation in his Favour, among those sent over at that Time.

P. 346. l. 15. The Reason given in the Cardinal's Letter for raising her Body, is, *Quoniam juxta Corpus Sanctissimæ Fridernidæ jurabat Corpus Catherine Uxoris P. Martyris*.

P. 353. l. 12. The Queen and *Philip* both wrote to the Pope in Favour of Cardinal *Pole*; the Letter is dated, *May 21*. shewing how serviceable he had been in restoring Religion in *England*. The Parliament seconded this by another Letter. L. 15. *Heresy*; they were 22 in Number, their Submission is in *Fox*, p. 17, 92.

P. 360. l. 29. The Complaint was against all the *French* Denisons, as well as others, but the Act was more favourable. L. 4. fr. Bott. and p. 361. l. 4. *Coxley*, r. *Copley*.

P. 363. l. 7. fr. Bott. For the 19th *May*, r. 26th. L. 6. fr. Bott. For 3 *Men*, r. 2 *Men* and 1 *Woman*. There were indeed Three Men burnt on the 19th of *May* at *Norwich*, not at *Colchester*.

P. 364. l. 7. Martial Law: The Words of the Proclamation are according to the Order of the Martial Law. L. 17. fr. Bott. Lord *Burleigh* in the Execution of Justice, says there died by Imprisonment, Torments, Famine, and the Fire, near 400: On this we may depend.

P. 370. l. 20. She understood, and wrote well, both in *Spanish* and *French*.

P. 374. l. 14. Queen *Elizabeth* stayed some Days at *Hatfield*; she came to the *Charter-House*, 24. *November*. On the 28th, she went to the *Tower*, and came to *Westminster* on the 23d of *December*.

P. 375. l. 8. fr. Bott. The Earl of *Pembroke* favoured the Reformation.

P. 376. l. 1. For *Parr*, r. *Parry*.

P. 378. l. 17. fr. Bott. For 5 *December*, r. 13. L. 11. fr. Bott. till the Parliament; the Council set him at Liberty on the 19th *Jan.* and the Parliament met on the 25th.

P. 387. l. 7. The Bishop of *Duresme* came not to the Parliament, for his Presence was needed in the *North*, for guarding the Marches against the *Scots*, and the *French*, ready to invade *England*.

L. 19.

L. 19. The Bishop of *Ely* was absent, being in an Embassy at *Cambray*; but was come over on the 17th of *April*, and joined with the other Dissenting Bishops.

P. 389. l. 12. *Cole's* Speech seems to be a Reply to *Horn*, and so should be set after it.

P. 393. l. 4. Abbot *Feckenham* made that Speech, and not *Hethe*.

P. 396. l. 7. The Oath was tender'd to them in *July*. L. 11. *Christopherson* died before the Parliament met.

P. 397. l. 9. For *Thomas*, r. *Richard*. L. 22. This Matter belongs to the Year 1560, or 1561.

P. 400. l. 10. from the Bottom. This was not a High Commission, warranted by Act of Parliament; but a Commission for a Royal Visitation, by Virtue of the Queen's Supremacy.

P. 402. l. 19. from the Bottom. The 8th of *July*: *Mason* has it the 18th of *July*.

P. 403. l. 23. For *Par. r. Scambler*. L. 28. *May* Dean of *St. Paul's*, was Elected Archbishop; but died before he was Consecrated.

P. 406. l. 21. from the Bott. *A. P. C.* stands for *Andrew Pier-son Cantuar.* L. 18. from Bott. *A. P. E.* stands for *Andrew Pern Eliensis*. L. 12. from Bott. *C. G.* stands for *Christopher Goodman*.

P. 407. l. 9. The New Translation of the *Bible* was not printed before the Year 1572.

## *Collection of RECORDS.*

P Age 6. l. 17. For *Thomas*, r. *William*.

P. 11. l. 19. For *Char*. r. *Chartres*.

P. 16. l. 4. from the Bottom. For *Yates*, r. *Gates*.

P. 21. l. 7. For 1200000, r. 120000. L. 24. for *Richumber*, r. *Ricebank*.

P. 23. l. 18. from Bott. *Archer*, r. *Aucher*.

P. 24. l. 25. *Crafted*, r. *Croftis*. L. 11. from the Bottom, *Yates* r. *Gates*.

P. 25. l. ult. Dr. *John Olyver* was the other Lawyer.

P. 37. l. 27. For *Seditiously*, r. *Seditious*; and for *attagned*, r. *attached*. L. 28. for *James*, r. *Thomas*. L. 29. *attagned*, *attached*. L. 16. from the Bottom, for *R. r. Rabble*.

P. 42. l. 24. from Bott. on, *Confessed*, r. *on Confession*. L. 4. from Bott. The Name was *Knox*.

P. 45. l. 18. *Roberts*, r. *Robert*.

P. 51. l. ult. For *Lecister*, r. *Lister*.

P. 52. l. 15. The *Pirry*, the *Mintmaster*; r. *that Pirry the Mint-master*. L. 16. for *Brabanion*, r. *Brabazon*. L. 10. from Bottom, *August Pyso*, r. *August Py, so*.

P. 61. l. 16. *Archer*, r. *Aucher*.



P. 63. l. 27. *Sturley*, r. *Strelly*.

P. 103. l. *penult.* For *Barker*, r. *Bakere*.

P. 105. l. 8. For *Water-cloth*, r. *Auter-cloth*. L. 24. for good, r. *God*. L. 37. à *quo Sancta*, r. *qui Sanctorum*. L. 8. from the Bottom, before *Realme*, r. *Noble*.

P. 115. l. 3. from Bott. For *Jane*, r. *Jent*.

P. 117. l. 24. For *Soveraigne*, r. *Conscience*.

P. 148. l. 1. These Queries were put by *Cranmer* to those Bishops; but this Paper is all in *Boner's* Hand, with whom these Three Bishops agreed. L. 11. for *sundry*, r. *asunder*. In the Margin, set *London* first.

P. 149. l. *ult.* After these Answers, follows a Reply by *Cranmer*, in other Queries; as, "If you cannot tell what and where the Acts of *John* can profit *Thomas*, being so far distant from him, that he can never hear of him; Why do you then affirm that to be true, which you cannot tell how, nor wherein it can be true?"

"Whether our Praiers for al the Souls departed, do profit the Apostles, Prophets and Martyrs?"

"Whether they know all the Actions of every Man here in Earth?"

"And if not; how do they rejoyce of those good Actions, which they know not?"

"Whether our Evil Deeds do them hurt, as our Good Deeds profit them?"

"Whether the Presentation of the Body and Blood of Christ, do stand in all the Words and Actions that the Priest useth in the Mass, which now we do use?"

"Whereby is it known, that in the Primitive Church were Priests, that preached not?"

"Why may not we as well alter the Mass into the *English* Tongue, or alter the Ceremonies of the same, as we alter the Communion to be under both Kynds, that in other Churches is Uniformly Ministred to the People under one Kind; seeing that the Uniformity of al Churches, requireth no more the Uniformity in one, than in the other?"

P. 183. l. 5. from Bott. For *Security*, r. *Surety*.

P. 184. l. 4. Dele *such*. L. 21. for *daily*, r. *diligently*.

P. 205. l. 20. After *another*, r. *holding up the Forefingers*. L. 24. for *saying*, r. *sacring*.

P. 206. at Bottom, follow *Proverbs* the 5th: *The Ear that hearkeneth to the Reformation of Life, shall dwell among the wise: He that refuseth to be Reformed, despiseth his own Soul: but he that submitteth himself to Correction, is wise.*

3. Reg. 18. *Elias*, How long halt ye between two Opinions? If the Lord be God, follow him; but if Baal be he, go after him.

P. 208. This Letter was not written to Archbishop *Cranmer*, but to Archbishop *Parker*.

P. 232. Set on the Margin here, *Ex Chartaphylacro Regio*.

P. 234. l. 2. from the Bottom. For *met*, r. *meant*.

P. 239. This seems not to be the Proclamation, declaring *Jane Grey* to be Queen; but rather her Letters-Patents, declarative of her Right of Succession.

P. 243. in the Margin. For *C. 20. r. C. 10.* The same Error is in P. 245, and 246.

P. 252. l. ult. For *Ungodliness*, r. *Ungodly Rate*.

P. 253. l. 2. *Slander*, r. *no little Slander* L. 11. After *Dio-cese*, r. *and Jurisdictions*. L. 20. *to them*, for *to thende*. L. 30. *Hand*, r. *Signet*. L. 5. from the Bottom. After *Person*, r. *with other Persons*.

P. 254. l. 13. from Bott. After *Officers*, r. *as they*.

P. 255. l. 5. from Bott. For *Unthriftiness*, r. *Unchristiness*. L. 4. from Bott. Dele *each*.

P. 269. The 17th Article is in the MS. scratched out, and crossed.

P. 282. l. 8. Add *Counsellour*.

P. 283. l. 6. After *Cousins*, add *other*. L. 20. For 26, r. 25. L. 12. from the Bottom. For *their* r. *the*. L. 9. from the Bott. For *and* r. *or*.

P. 284. l. 16. After *amongst*, r. *nigh*. L. 4. from the Bottom, after *Sessions*, r. *at the least once*.

P. 314. l. 16. from the Bottom. Put a Comma between *Dudley* and *Ashton*, L. 4. from Bott. *Pronouncing*, r. *Procuring*.

P. 315. l. 14. *Perseverance*, r. *Preservation*.

P. 328. l. 16. from Bott. For *Heed*, r. *Head*.

P. 329. l. 20. *Came*, twice, for *can*.

P. 330. l. 12. For *fear*, r. *too far*. L. 14. *Oppresse*, r. *re-  
presse*.

P. 331. l. 4. After *more*, r. *Chaplains*: After *Memory*, r. *said*: After *the*, r. *seldomer*: Dele *or*. L. 7. from the Bot-  
tom, *Renew*, r. *review*: Dele *certain*. L. 6. from the Bott. *When*,  
r. *where*.

P. 337. l. 22. At the End of this Paper, there is added in the MS. Testimonies confirming it, out of *Ambrose*, *Jerom*, *Chrysostom*, *Dionysius*, *Cyprian* and *Auclin*, and the Constitution of *Justinian*; and they are to be seen printed in *Fox's* first Edition. The Names at the End are not Subscriptions: They are added in *Parker's* Hand; who forgot to write *Sands* among them, for he was one of them.

P. 348. l. 7. For *G*, r. *E*; for his Name was *Edward*. Set in the Margin, to Number 6. Ex. MSS. C. C. C. *Miscel-  
lanea* B.

P. 350. l. 11. Set here in the Margin, *Paper Office*.



P. 396. l. 20. *Worcester, r. Winchester. Lin. ult. Worcester was not entirely suppress'd : For he was entitled Bishop of Worcester, and enjoyed a great Part of the Revenues of Gloucester and Worcester, and kept great Hospitality with them.*

P. 398. l. 8. from the Bottom. *Queen Mary did set forth in August 1553, a Proclamation, for Assigning the Value of the Coin.*

---

A. TABLE

---

A  
T A B L E  
OF THE  
RECORDS and PAPERS

That are in the  
C O L L E C T I O N,

With which the Places in the History to which they relate, are marked: The First Number, with the Letter *C*, is the Page of the *Collection*; The Second, with the Letter *H*, is the Page of the *History*.

B O O K I, II, III.

- |  |     |                |
|--|-----|----------------|
| 1. <b>T</b> HE Bull of Pope Paul the IVth, annulling all the Alienations of Church-Lands,                            | C.  | H.             |
|  | 347 | <i>Introd.</i> |
| 2. A Letter of Queen Katherine's to K. Henry, upon the Defeat of James the IVth, K. of Scotland,                     | 350 | 17             |
| 3. A Letter of Cardinal Wolsey's to K. Henry; with a Copy of his Book for the Pope,                                  | 351 | 18             |
| 4. A Letter of Cardinal Wolsey's to K. Henry, about Foreign News; and concerning Luther's Answer to the King's Book, | ib. | <i>ibid.</i>   |
| 5. A Letter of Cardinal Wolsey's to K. Henry, sent with Letters that the King was to write to the Emperor,           | 352 | <i>ibid.</i>   |
| 6. A Letter of Cardinal Wolsey's to the King, concerning the Emperor's Firmness to him,                              | 353 | <i>ibid.</i>   |

7. The



# A T A B L E, &c.

7. <i>The First Letter of Cardinal Wolsey to K. Henry, about his Election to the Popedom, upon Adrian's Death,</i>	C.	H.
8. <i>The Second Letter of Cardinal Wolsey to the King, about the Succession to the Popedom,</i>	354	19
9. <i>The Third Letter of Cardinal Wolsey; giving an Account of the Election of Cardinal Medici to be Pope,</i>	355	ibid.
10. <i>A Remarkable Passage in Sir T. More's Utopia, left out in the latter Editions,</i>	356	20
11. <i>A Letter of the Pope's, upon his Captivity, to Cardinal Wolsey,</i>	357	29
12. <i>A Part of Cardinal Wolsey's Letter to the King, concerning his Marriage,</i>	358	34
13. <i>A Letter written by K. Henry the VIIIth, to Cardinal Wolsey, recalling him Home,</i>	ibid.	35
14. <i>A Letter from Rome, by Gardiner, to K. Henry, setting forth the Pope's Artifices,</i>	360	ibid.
15. <i>The Pope's Promise in the King's Affair,</i>	ibid.	41
16. <i>Some Account of the Proceedings of the University, in the Case of the Divorce, from Dr. Buckmaster's Book, MS. C. C. C.</i>	362	37
17. <i>Three Letters written by K. Henry to the University of Oxford, for their Opinion in the Cause of his Marriage,</i>	364	63
18. <i>Copy of the King's Letters to the Bishop of Rome,</i>	369	64
19. <i>A Letter of Gr. Cassali, from Compiègne,</i>	372	67
20. <i>A Representation made by the Convocation to the King, before the Submission,</i>	376	75
21. <i>A Letter by Magnus to Cromwell, concerning the Convocation at York,</i>	378	77
22. <i>A Protestation made by Warham, Archbishop of Canterbury, against all the Acts passed in the Parliament to the Prejudice of the Church,</i>	379	79
23. <i>A Letter of Boner's, upon his Reading the King's Appeal to the Pope,</i>	380	80
24. <i>Cranmer's Letter, for an Appeal to be made in his Name,</i>	381	82
25. <i>A Minute of a Letter, sent by the King to his Ambassador at Rome,</i>	390	84
26. <i>The Judgment of the Convocation of the Province of York, rejecting the Pope's Authority,</i>	391	86
27. <i>The Judgment of the University of Oxford, rejecting the Pope's Authority,</i>	396	92
28. <i>The Judgment of the Prior and Chapter of Worcester, concerning the Pope's Authority,</i>	397	ibid.
29. <i>An Order for Preaching, and Bidding of the Beads, in all Sermons to be made within this Realm,</i>	399	93
	402	94
	30.	<i>Instru-</i>

	C.	H.
30. <i>Instructions given by the King's Highness, to William Paget, whom his Highness sendeth at this Tyme unto the King of Pole, the Dukes of Pomeray, and of Pruce, and the Cities of Dant-sike, Stetin, and Connynburgh,</i>	406	ibid.
31. <i>Propositions to the King's Councell; marked in some Places on the Margin in King Henry's own Hand,</i>	415	97
32. <i>A Letter against the Pope's Authority, and his Followers, setting forth their Treasons,</i>	417	98
33. <i>A Proclamation against Seditious Preachers</i>	420	99
34. <i>A Letter of the Archbishop of York, setting forth his Zeal in the King's Service, and against the Pope's Authority,</i>	421	ibid.
35. <i>A Letter of Cromwell's to the King's Ambassador in France, full of Expostulations,</i>	424	101
36. <i>The Engagement sent over by the French King, to King Henry, promising that he would adhere to him, in condemning his First, and in justifying his Second Marriage,</i>	428	ibid.
37. <i>Cranmer's Letter to Cromwell; justifying himself, upon some Complaints made by Gardiner.</i>	431	105
38. <i>A Letter of Barlow's to Cromwell, complaining of the Bishop and Clergy of St. David's,</i>	434	106
39. <i>A Letter of Dr. Leigh's, concerning their Visitation at York,</i>	436	ibid.
40. <i>A Letter of Tonsill's, upon the King's Ordering the Bishops to send up their Bulls,</i>	437	ibid.
41. <i>A Letter of the Archbishop of York's, concerning the Suppressiion of the Monasteries,</i>	439	108
42. <i>Instructions for sending Barnes, and others to Germany,</i>	441	110
43. <i>The Smalcaldick League,</i>	443	113
44. <i>Propositions made to the King, by the German Princes,</i>	447	114
45. <i>The Answer of the King, to the Petitions and Articles lately addressed to his Highness, from John Frederike Duke of Saxe, Elector, &amp;c. and Philip Lantsgrave Van Hesse, in the Name of them, and all their Confederates,</i>	450	ibid.
46. <i>The Answer of the King's Ambassadors, made to the Duke of Saxony, and the Landgrave of Hesse,</i>	452	115
47. <i>A Letter writ to the King, by the Princes of the Smalcaldic League,</i>	454	116
48. <i>Cranmer's Letter to Cromwell, complaining of the Ill Treatment of the Ambassadors from Germany,</i>	456	ibid.



49.	<i>The Earl of Northumberland's Letter to Cromwell, denying any Contract, or Promise of Marriage, between Q. Anne and himself,</i>	C.	H.
		457	120
50.	<i>A Letter, giving Pace an Account of Propositions made to K. Henry, by Charles V.</i>	458	122
51.	<i>Instructions by Cardinal Pole, to one he sent to King Henry,</i>	460	125
52.	<i>A Letter to Pole, from the Bishop of Durham,</i>	464	126
53.	<i>A Letter of Pole's to Cromwell, justifying himself,</i>	469	129
54.	<i>A Letter of the Abbess of Godstow, complaining of Dr. London,</i>	474	132
55.	<i>A Letter to Bullinger, from one of Maidstone; giving an Account of an Image, which seems to be the Rood of Boxley in Kent,</i>	475	ibid.
56.	<i>A Consolatory Letter to Henry the VIIIth, from the Bishop of Durham, after the Death of Q. Jane,</i>	476	133
57.	<i>Injunctions given by Edwarde Archbushope of Yorke; to be observed within the Diocese of Yorke, by all the Clergie of the same, and others whom the sayde Injunctions do concerne,</i>	479	134
58.	<i>Injunctions given by the Byshope of Coventre and Lychefelde, throughe out his Diocesse,</i>	484	135
59.	<i>Injunctions given by the Byskop of Salysbury, throughout his Dioces,</i>	487	ibid.
60.	<i>An Omission in the Injunctions set forth by Cromwell in the King's Name, in the Ist. Vol. Hist. Reform. Coll. of Rec. p. 160.</i>	491	136
	<i>An Omission in Boner's Injunctions, Ist. Vol. Hist. Ref. Coll. Rec. p. 252.</i>	492	
61.	<i>The Petition of Gresham, Lord-Mayor of London, to the King, for the City-Hospitals,</i>	493	ibid.
62.	<i>A Part of a Proclamation, chiefly concerning Becket,</i>	494	138
63.	<i>An Original Letter of the King's, much to the same Purpose,</i>	496	139
64.	<i>The Design for the Endowment of Christ-Church in Canterbury,</i>	500	141
65.	<i>A Letter of the Archbishop of Canterbury to Cromwell, upon the New Foundation at Canterbury,</i>	501	ibid.
66.	<i>A Part of a Letter concerning the Debates of the Six Articles in the House of Lords,</i>	503	142
67.	<i>A Letter of the Visitors, sent to Examine the Abbot of Glaffenbury,</i>	504	145
68.	<i>Cromwell's Letter to the King, when he was committed to the Tower,</i>	505	146
69.	<i>Questions concerning the Sacraments,</i>	508	153

# A T A B L E, &c.

v

70. <i>An Answer to the former Queries; with some Remarks on them, in the King's Hand, written on the Margin,</i>	C.	H.
71. <i>Answers to these Queries,</i>	511	ibid.
72. <i>The Examination of Q. Katherine Howard,</i>	513	ibid.
73. <i>A Letter of Sir W. Paget's, of his Treating with the Admiral of France,</i>	515	154
74. <i>Bishop Thirlby's Letter, concerning the Duke of Norfolk, and his Son,</i>	517	155
75. <i>A Letter of the Duke of Norfolk's, after he had been examined in the Tower,</i>	531	167
	533	ibid.

## Collection of RECORDS, belonging to B O O K IV, V, VI.

1. <i>INSTRUCTIONS given by Luther to Melanchthon, 1534; of which, one Article was erroneously published by me, in my IId. Vol. and that being complained of, the whole is now published</i>	C.	H.
2. <i>The Lady Mary's Letter to the Lord Protector, and to the rest of the King's Majesty's Council, upon their suspecting that some of her Household had encouraged the Devonshire Rebellion,</i>	536	175
3. <i>A Letter of Christopher Mount's, concerning the Interim,</i>	538	189
4. <i>A Part of a Letter of Hooper's to Bullinger, giving an Account of the Cruelty of the Spaniards in the Netherlands,</i>	539	199
5. <i>The Oath of Supremacy, as it was made when the Bishops did Homage in K. Henry the VIIIth's Time. The last Words were struck out by King Edward the VIth,</i>	540	200
6. <i>A Letter of Peter Martyr's to Bullinger, of the State of the University of Oxford, in the Year 1550,</i>	542	203
7. <i>A Mandate, in K. Edward's Name, to the Officers of the Archbishop of Canterbury; requiring them to see, that the Articles of Religion should be subscribed,</i>	543	206
8. <i>The King's Mandate to the Bishop of Norwich, sent with the Articles to be subscribed by the Clergy,</i>	546	212
9. <i>The Mandate of the Visitors of the University of Cambridge, to the same Purpose,</i>	547	213
	549	214
		10. King



	C.	H.
10. <i>King Edward's Devise for the Succession,</i>	550	214
11. <i>The Council's Original Subscription, to Edward the VIth's Limitation of the Crown,</i>	551	215
12. <i>Articles and Instructions, annexed to the Commission, for taking Surrender of the Cathedral of Norwich,</i>	552	217
13. <i>An Original Letter of Q. Mary's to K. Philip, before he wrote to her,</i>	554	226
14. <i>Queen Mary's Letter to the Earl of Suffex, to take Care of Elections to the Parliament,</i>	ibid.	228
15. <i>Cardinal Pole's first Letter to Queen Mary,</i>	555	229
16. <i>The Queen's Answer to it,</i>	558	230
17. <i>Cardinal Pole's General Powers, for Reconciling England to the Church of Rome,</i>	559	ibid.
18. <i>A Letter of Cardinal Pole to the Bishop of Arras, upon K. Philip's Arrival in England, and his Marriage to the Queen,</i>	563	231
19. <i>A Letter from Cardinal Pole to the Cardinal de Monte, acknowledging the Pope's Favour, in sending him full Powers,</i>	564	ibid.
20. <i>A Breve, empowering Cardinal Pole to execute his Faculties with Relation to England, while he yet remained beyond Sea,</i>	565	ibid.
21. <i>A Second Breve, containing more Special Powers relating to the Abbey-Lands.</i>	566	232
22. <i>A Letter to Cardinal Pole, from Cardinal de Monte, full of high Civilities,</i>	568	ibid.
23. <i>A Letter from Card. Morone to Card. Pole, telling him how uneasy the Pope was, to see his going to England so long delayed; but that the Pope was resolv'd not to Recal him,</i>	ibid.	ibid.
24. <i>A Letter from Ormanet to Priuli, giving an Account of what pass'd in an Audience the Bishop of Arras gave him,</i>	570	233
25. <i>The Letter that the Bishop of Arras wrote to Cardinal Pole, upon that Audience,</i>	571	ibid.
26. <i>Cardinal Pole's Answer to the Bishop of Arras his Letter,</i>	572	234
27. <i>Cardinal Pole's Letter to K. Philip,</i>	573	ibid.
28. <i>A Letter of Card. Pole's to the Pope, giving Account of a Conference that he had with Charles the Vth, concerning the Church-Lands,</i>	574	235
29. <i>A Part of Mason's Letter to Q. Mary, concerning Cardinal Pole,</i>	577	236
30. <i>A Letter of Card. Pole's, to Philip the II<sup>d</sup>, complaining of the Delays that had been made, and desiring a speedy Admittance into England,</i>	578	ibid.
31. <i>The Lord Paget's and the Lord Hastings's Letter concerning Cardinal Pole,</i>	581	237

32. <i>An Original Letter of Mafon's, of a Preacher that preſſed the Reſtitution of Church-Lands,</i>	C. 583	H. 238
33. <i>Cardinal Pole's Commiſſion to the Biſhops, to Reconcile all in their Dioceſes to the Church of Rome,</i>	584	239
34. <i>Articles of ſuch Things as he to be put in Execution,</i>	587	ibid.
35. <i>The Proceſs and Condemnation of Biſhop Hooper, and the Order given for his Execution,</i>	590	240
36. <i>The Queen's Letter, ordering the Manner of Hooper's Execution,</i>	592	241
37. <i>A Letter of Biſhop Hooper's to Bullinger, written out of Priſon,</i>	593	ibid.
38. <i>A Letter of Mafon's, concerning a Treaty begun with France, and of the Affairs of the Empire,</i>	595	251
39. <i>A Tranſlation of Charles the Vth's Letters, Reſigning the Crown of Spain to K. Philip,</i>	597	252
40. <i>A Remembrance of thoſe Things, that your Highneſs's Pleaſure was I ſhould put in Writing: Written in Cardinal Pole's Hand,</i>	599	254
41. <i>Some Directions for the Queen's Council, left by K. Philip,</i>	600	255
42. <i>A Letter to the Ambaſſadors, concerning the Reſtitution of Calais,</i>	601	265
43. <i>A Letter of the Ambaſſadors, concerning Calais,</i>	603	266
44. <i>A Letter of Jewel's to P. Martyr, from Straſburgh, of the State of Affairs in England,</i>	607	272
45. <i>A Letter of Gualter's to Dr. Maſters, adviſing a Thorough Reformation,</i>	608	273
46. <i>A Letter of the Earl of Bedford's to Bullinger, from Venice,</i>	610	ibid.
47. <i>A Letter of Jewel's to P. Martyr, of the State he found Matters in, when he came to England,</i>	611	274
48. <i>A Letter of Jewel's to Bullinger, concerning the State of Things in the Beginning of this Reign,</i>	613	ibid.
49. <i>A Letter of Jewel's to P. Martyr, concerning the Diſputation with the Papiſts at Weſtminſter,</i>	614	275
50. <i>A Letter of Jewel's to P. Martyr, of the Debates in the Houſe of Lords; and of the State of the Universities; and concerning the Inclinations to the Smalcaldick League,</i>	617	ibid.
51. <i>A Letter of Jewel's to P. Martyr, of the State of Affairs both in England and Scotland,</i>	619	276
52. <i>A Letter of Jewel's to P. Martyr, before he went his Progreſs into the Weſtern Parts of England,</i>	620	ibid.
53. <i>A Declaration made by the Confederate Lords of Scotland, to the Queen of England; of their taking Arms againſt the Queen Dowager of Scotland, and the French,</i>	622	281
54. <i>A Diſcuſſion of the Matters of Scotland; in Sir W. Cecyl's Hand,</i>	627	286



	C.	H.
55. <i>The Bond of Affociation, with this Title, Ane Contract of the Lords and Barons, to defend the Liberty of the Evangell of Christ,</i>	631	287
56. <i>A Letter of Jewel's to P. Martyr, setting forth the Progress that Superstition had made in Queen Mary's Reign,</i>	632	288
57. <i>A Letter of Jewel's to P. Martyr, concerning the Earnestness of some about Vestments and Rituals,</i>	634	289
58. <i>A Letter of Jewel's to P. Martyr, full of sad Apprehensions,</i>	636	ibid.
59. <i>The Queen's Letter to the Emperor, concerning her Aversion to Marriage,</i>	637	ibid.
60. <i>A Letter of Bishop Jewel's to P. Martyr, concerning the Cross in the Queen's Chapel,</i>	638	290
61. <i>A Letter of Bishop Sands, expressing the Uneasiness he was in, by reason of the Crucifix in the Queen's Chapel,</i>	639	291
62. <i>A Letter of Dr. Sampson's to P. Martyr, setting forth his Reasons of not Accepting a Bishoprick,</i>	641	ibid.
63. <i>A Second Letter of Sampson's, expressing great Uneasiness that Matters were not carried on as he wished,</i>	643	292
64. <i>Archbishop Parker's Letter to Secretary Cecyl, pressing the Filling the Sees of York and Duresm, then vacant,</i>	645	293
65. <i>A Letter of Bishop Jewel's to P. Martyr, concerning the Council of Trent, the Lord Darnly's going to Scotland, with an Account of his Mother,</i>	646	294
Two I N S T R U M E N T S.		
66. <i>The First is, The Promise under the Great Seal of Francis the Second, to Maintain the Succession to the Crown of Scotland in the Family of Hamilton, in case Queen Mary should die without Children,</i>	648	295
<i>The Second is, The Promise made to the same Effect, by Henry the IId, K. of France, before Q. Mary was sent out of Scotland,</i>	694	
67. <i>Instructions to the Queen's Commissioners treating in Scotland,</i>	651	296
68. <i>The Commission of the Estates, to move Queen Elizabeth to take the Earl of Arran to her Husband,</i>	652	ibid.
69. <i>The Queens Majesties Answer, declared to Her Counsell, concerning the Requestes of the Lords of Scotlande,</i>	653	297
70. <i>A Letter of the English Ambassador, to Q. Mary of Scotland, for her Ratifying the Treaty of Leith,</i>	655	298
		71. A

71. <i>A Letter of Mary Queen of Scotland, delaying to Ratify the Treaty of Leith,</i>	C. 656	H. <i>ibid.</i>
72. <i>An Original Letter of the Ambassadors to the Queen, upon that Affair,</i>	657	299
73. <i>A Letter of Bishop Jewel's to Bullinger, chiefly concerning the Affairs of France, and the Queen espousing the Prince of Conde's Cause,</i>	660	300
74. <i>An Extract out of the Journal of the Lower-House of Convocation,</i>	662	302
75. <i>Bishop Horn's Letter to Gualter, concerning the Controversy about the Habits of the Clergy,</i>	665	307
76. <i>Bullinger's Letter to Bishop Horn, concerning that Question,</i>	666	308
77. <i>Bullinger's Answer to Humphreys and Sampson, on the same Subject,</i>	669	309
78. <i>Humphreys and Sampson's Letter to Bullinger, insisting on the Question,</i>	675	310
79. <i>A Paper of other Things complained of besides these Heads,</i>	678	312
80. <i>Bullinger's Answer to their Letter, declining to enter further into the Dispute,</i>	680	<i>ibid.</i>
81. <i>Bullinger and Gualter's Letter to the Earl of Bedford, pressing him to find a Temper in that Matter.</i>	681	<i>ibid.</i>
82. <i>Bullinger and Gualter's Letter to Bishop Grindal, and Bishop Horn, for quieting the Dispute,</i>	683	313
83. <i>A Letter of Bishop Grindal, and Bishop Horn, giving a full Account of their Sense of all the Matters complained of in the Church of England,</i>	685	<i>ibid.</i>
84. <i>A Letter of Jewel's to Bullinger, concerning the Debates in Parliament relating to the Succession, and the Heats in the Disputes about the Vestments,</i>	689	315
85. <i>A Letter of Jewel's to Bullinger, of the State Affairs were in, both in England, Ireland, Scotland, and the Netherlands,</i>	691	<i>ibid.</i>
86. <i>The End of a Letter written to Zurick, setting forth the Temper of some Bishops in these Matters,</i>	693	316
87. <i>Bullinger and Gualter's Letter to the Bishops of London, Winchester, and Norwich; interceding for Favour to those, whose Scruples were not satisfied in those Matters,</i>	694	<i>ibid.</i>
88. <i>A Part of a Letter of Jewel's to Bullinger, of the State of Affairs both in England and Scotland,</i>	695	317
89. <i>A Petition, with some Articles, offered by the Reformed in Scotland to their Queen:</i> <i>With the Queen's Answer to it,</i> <i>And there Reply upon it;</i>	696	319
90. <i>A Supplication to the Queen of Scotland,</i>	602	322



91. <i>A Letter of B. Parkhurst to Bullinger, concerning the Affairs of Scotland, and the Murder of Signior David,</i>	C.	H.
	704	322
92. <i>A Letter of B. Grindal's to Bullinger, giving an Account of the State of Affairs both in England and Scotland, and of the Killing of Signior David,</i>	705	323
93. <i>A Part of B. Grindal's Letter to Bullinger, of the Affairs of Scotland,</i>	707	324
94. <i>A Relation of Mary Queen of Scotland's Misfortunes, and of her last Will; in the Life of Cardinal Laurea, written by the Abbot of Pignerol his Secretary; printed at Bologna, 1599,</i>	710	327
95. <i>A Bond of Association, upon Mary Q. of Scotland's Resigning the Crown, in favour of her Son,</i>	712	323
96. <i>Bond to the King, and to the Earl of Murray, as Regent during his Infancy,</i>	713	ibid.
97. <i>A Declaration of the Causes, moving the Queen of England, to give Aid to the Defence of the People afflicted and oppressed in the Low-Countries,</i>	714	330

## An APPENDIX.

1. **C**orrections of some Mistakes in the Two First Volumes; sent me by Mr. Granger, in Devonshire, Pag. 729
2. *A Letter written to me by Anthony Wood, in Justification of his History of the University of Oxford: With Reflections on it; re-ferr'd to Alphabetically,* P. 733
3. *A Letter from me to Mr. Auzont; which was translated into French, upon his Procuring for me a Censure in Writing, made in Paris upon the First Volume of my History of the Reformation,* p. 736
4. *Corrections of the Two Volumes of the History of the Reformation,* p. 743
5. *Some Remarks, sent me by another Hand,* p. 758
6. *Observations and Corrections of the Two Volumes of the History, Collected by Mr. Strype,* p. 759

623913  
F I N I S.









UC SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY



D 000 339 013 5



